

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

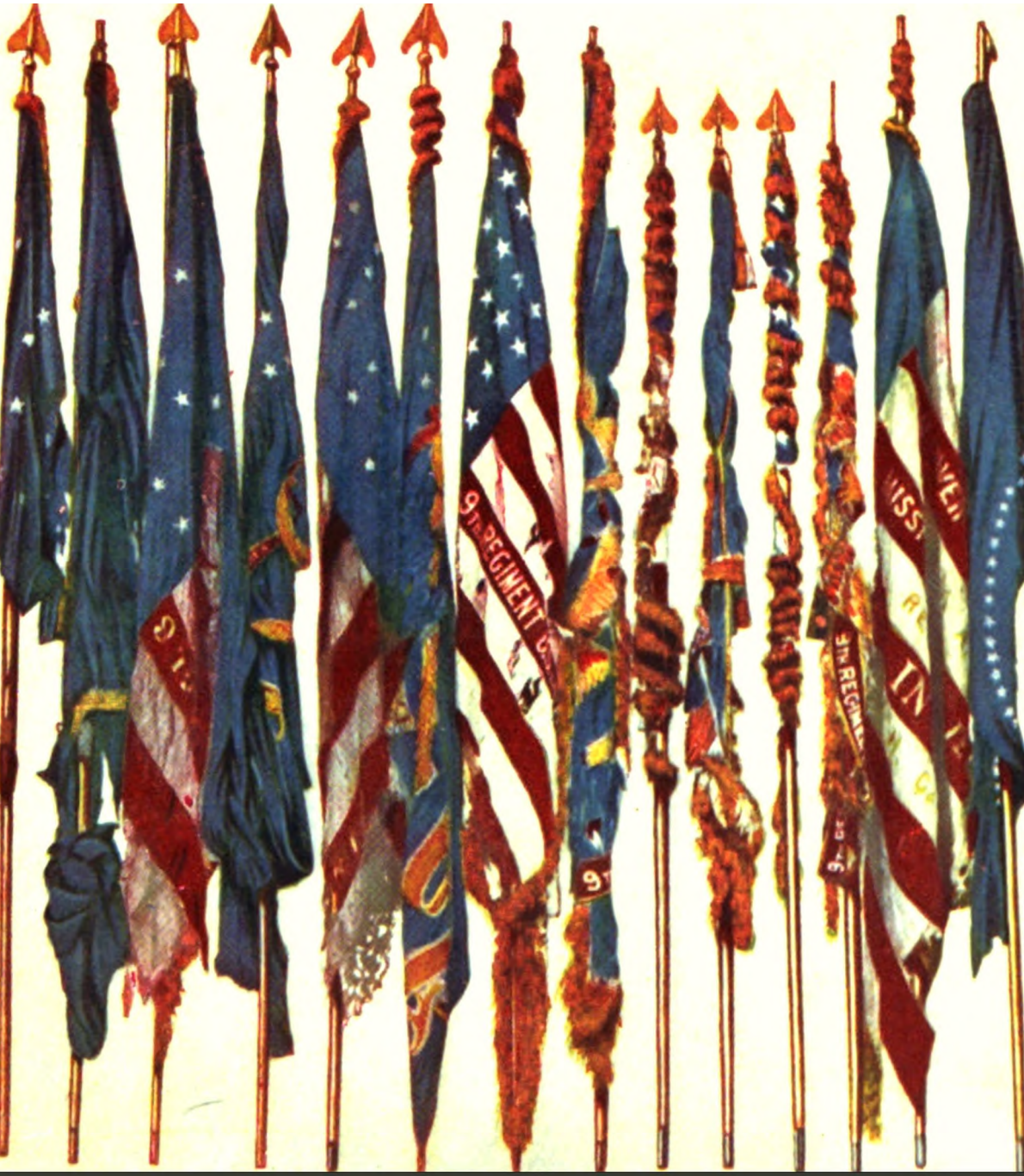
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



History of the Ninth U.S. Infantry, 1799-1909

Fred Radford Brown

Digitized by Google





Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE NINTH U. S. INFANTRY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE NINTH U. S. INFANTRY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Our old Colors carried in Civil War, Indian Campaigns, Santiago, Luzon, China, and Samar Campaigns.

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE NINTH U. S. INFANTRY

1799-1909

BY

CAPTAIN FRED R. BROWN

ADJUTANT, NINTH INFANTRY



CHICAGO

R. R. DONNELLEY & SONS CO.

1909

Digitized by Google

1504784

COPYRIGHTED, 1909
BY
THE ADJUTANT, NINTH INFANTRY

Digitized by Google

Dedicated

TO MEMBERS OF THE REGIMENT
PRESENT AND PAST
TO HONOR THE LIVING AND
REMEMBER THE DEAD

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

First organization and disbandment of the Ninth Infantry — Second organization of the Ninth Infantry — Service on the Niagara Frontier — Battle of Chippewa — Battle of Lundy's Lane — Battle of Fort Erie — Regiment disbanded at close of war. 1

CHAPTER II

Third organization of the Ninth Infantry — Expedition against and capture of Vera Cruz — Battle of Cerro Gordo — Arrival of Ninth Infantry at Puebla and organization of Scott's Army — Invasion of the Valley of Mexico — Advance to El Peñon — Movement around Lake Chalco — Battle of Contreras — Battle of Churubusco — Battle of Chapultepec — Death of Colonel Ransom, Ninth Infantry — Waiting for Treaty of Peace — Return to United States — Disbandment of regiment. . . 16

CHAPTER III

Fourth organization of the Ninth Infantry — Regiment transferred to Pacific Coast — Fights with hostile Indians at the Cascades and Connell's Prairie — Description of the Yakima country — Many changes of stations — Fight with Indians in Spokane country — Numerous affairs with Indians — Rescue of fugitive emigrants — Colonel Wright, Ninth Infantry, drowned — Company F goes to Alaska at time of purchase from Russia — Transfer of Regiment to Department of the Platte. 71

CHAPTER IV

Consolidation of Ninth and Twenty-Seventh Regiments of Infantry — Reminiscences by an ex-officer of the regiment now on the retired list — Many long marches — Duty at Indian Agencies — Black Hills Expedition — Big Horn Expedition — Powder River Expedition — Death of Crazy Horse — Many marches and changes of station — Riot duty at Chicago, Illinois — Regiment building Fort McKinney — Building telegraph lines — Extreme cold in Snake and White River cantonments — Building Fort Niobrara, Nebraska — Building roads — Duty at Crissfield, Kansas. 99

CHAPTER V

Regiment transferred to Arizona and New Mexico — Apache campaign — Apache Kid — Marches of companies — Indian Company — Nicknames — Reminiscences — Field training and practice marches — Change of station to Department of the East. 141

CHAPTER VI

Shoveling snow and cutting ice at Madison Barracks — Social affairs — Post Lyceum — Target practice — Practice marches, and field training — Riot duty at Chicago, Illinois — Reminiscences — "The days that are not, by one who was." 165

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

Campaign in Cuba — Battleship Maine lost — Ordered to Tampa, Florida — Duties at Tampa — Officers with regiment — On board transport bound for Cuba — Landing at Siboney — Advance on Santiago — Under fire — The Seventy-first New York Volunteers — Assault on San Juan Hill — Duty in the trenches — Losses — The surrender — Occupation of Santiago — Sickness — Homeward bound — Montauk Point — Return to Madison Barracks. 181

CHAPTER VIII

Preparations for Philippines — Recruiting and discharges — En route to San Francisco — On board transports — Officers present — Arrival at Manila — Captain Rockefeller disappears — Outpost duty — Morong Expedition — Lawton's Expedition into Cavite Province — Zapote River — Joins MacArthur — At San Fernando — Advance from San Fernando — Actions at Santa Rita, Porac, and Angeles — Night attacks — Advance from Angeles — Bamban — Tarlac and other stations — Guerrilla warfare — Death of Lieutenant Koehler — Building roads — Organizing schools and Civil Government — Surrender of Velasco and Macabulos — Miles of scouting — Summary of arms captured — Losses in action, etc. 230

CHAPTER IX

Regiment ordered to China — Preparations — Conditions in China — Officers and enlisted men on duty with regiment — arrival at Taku — Battle of Tien-tsin — Colonel Liscum killed — Heavy losses — Reinforcements — March to Pekin — Battles of Peitsang, Yang-tsun — Capture of Pekin — Relief of Legation — March through the Forbidden City — Governing Pekin and Tien-tsin — Expedition to Pa-ta-chow Temples — Organization of the "Military Order of the Dragon" — American troops leave China — Losses. 397

CHAPTER X

Back in Manila — Resumé of conditions in Philippine Islands — Volunteers relieved as usual during hostilities — Ordered to Samar — Operations against Lukban — Severe fights by scouting parties — Active work by all companies — Occupation of Balangiga — Massacre of Company C after terrible fight — Severe fight on the Gandara by Company E — Desperate fighting by scouting party under Captain Schoeffel — Capture of Lukban — Surrender of Samar insurgents — Cholera — Regiment returns to the United States — Back to its old stations — Welcomed by citizens in New York State — Roster of Officers — Losses during Samar campaign. 542

CHAPTER XI

Historical sketch of the Cuba Colors — Philippine Colors — China Colors. 625

CHAPTER XII

Duties from 1902 to 1904 inclusive — Rebuilding of the regiment — Garrison school — Duties at Fairs — Practice marches and target practice — Drill of composite company at Madison Square Garden and West Point — Unveiling of Hooker Monument at Boston — Reunion of the Society of Santiago at Detroit, Michigan — Colonel Robe retired — Manassas maneuvers — Erection of memorial to the regiment — Roster. . . . 634

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII

Again ordered to the Philippines—Discharges and re-enlistments—On board the Sherman — In quarantine — Company B relieved as Legation Guard at Pekin — Typhoons — Roster for 1905 — Practice marches and garrison schools—Deaths of Colonel Regan and Captain Ramsey — Roster for 1906. 654

CHAPTER XIV

Ordered back to the United States — Station at Fort Sam Houston, Texas — Target practice, field training and garrison school — Colonel Robertson retired — Roster 1907 — 200-mile practice march — Maneuvers at Leon Springs, Texas — Roster — Unusually long service of non-commissioned officers — Commendation by Inspector-General, Department of Texas — Social affairs. 670

CHAPTER XV

Records of the 249 former officers of the regiment — also many photographs of former officers. 680

CHAPTER XVI

Records and photographs of officers now in the Ninth Infantry. 753

CHAPTER XVII

Rosters of Field and Staff, Non-commissioned Staff, and Band and all companies — Full-page picture of each company 780

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

IT is said by a translater of Thucydides that the sources from which the ancient historian gathered his narrative are very dissimilar to those at the disposal of the modern historian. The first were meagre and oral; the latter are often overwhelming to the compiler by the very mass of materials. The authors of this compilation, therefore, have had no need to draw upon their imagination in order to depict events, or give eloquence to their characters. They have had access to considerable data and recorded evidence bearing upon their theme. No fact has been stated upon doubtful authority, and all important statements have been made in the language of official reports.

The title, "A History of the Ninth Regiment of Infantry, U. S. Army," indicates the scope of the work. The deepest and warmest acknowledgments are due Major-General Jesse M. Lee, U. S. Army, retired, Colonel Edgar B. Robertson, U. S. Army, retired, Major Alfred Morton, U. S. Army, retired, Major Charles R. Noyes, Ninth Infantry, and many other officers and enlisted men of the regiment for their countenance and aid in its preparation. They welcomed the undertaking with a prompt and graceful expression of cordial approbation. They furnished without reserve their stores of private information, personal recollections and authentic data. It cannot be undertaken to specify all other personal sources from which valuable aid has been received in the communication of manuscript facts, opinions, and explanations.

The task of the compilers has been performed in the midst of routine duties and under the disadvantage of inexperienced authorship. They are aware that they have not done justice to their subject, but they trust that the material they have been able to gather will be a means of bringing before the members of the old "Fighting Ninth," its traditions, its achievements, and its *esprit de corps* in such a light as to make us proud of our organization, and be the means of spurring us on to greater efforts to become more worthy of its glorious record.

That portion relating to the period prior to 1855 has been collected from many sources, and is far from being as complete as is desired, but the wish to publish to the regiment its already glorious history, of which we have records, impels us to merely sketch the history of the Ninth Infantry, prior to 1855, under its several former organizations.

Digitized by Google

The scarcity of detailed information is not indicative that such period was less glorious than that since 1855.

Owing to reduction of the army several times, the regiment, along with all those bearing a higher numerical designation, has three times been mustered out, but the old-time war records of the former organizations of the regiment still live, and must be chronicled in this book, if at all.

It is intended to continue the search and compilation of other data concerning the regiment for use in any revision of the history of the regiment, and any information of use should be sent to the Adjutant of the regiment.

In order to limit this history to one volume, it has been necessary to greatly condense that portion prior to 1898.

As the duties prior to 1898 consisted mainly of small expeditions of one or more companies, the detailed work of each compnay is shown during each year.

The period from 1898 to 1902 is covered very fully, and the regiment owes its thanks to Major C. R. Noyes for his accurate and complete preparation of that portion of the history.

To those now in the regiment, the portion relating to the Spanish-American War, Philippine Insurrection, and China Campaign, will be most interesting.

Though perhaps there may be some slight omissions and errors in the record of officers, it is believed to be a complete roster of officers who have served in the regiment. Owing to the number, the individual records have been much abbreviated, only the most essential information being given. This history could easily be expanded to several volumes, but at this time it is not considered advisable.

We regret that a photo of every former officer of the regiment could not be obtained, but the few which have been collected are given in hopes that any future revision may include many more.

The record of the old Twenty-seventh Infantry, which was consolidated with the Ninth Infantry, is not included in the narrative part of this history, as there is now another Twenty-seventh Infantry which should rightly include it in their history.

We have carefully preserved the colors of the Twenty-seventh Infantry, which were carried during the Civil War, as all its officers and men later became part of the Ninth Infantry.

It is a sad commentary on our lack of military policy to note the several increases in the army followed so soon by disbanding the regiments so organized. This was three times the unfortunate fate of the

Digitized by Google

Ninth Infantry, along with all others of higher numerical designation.

In the preparation of this history we have consulted and used with freedom the following works:

Bancroft's History of Mexico; History of the Mexican War, by General Cadmus M. Wilcox; Life of General Scott, by General Marcus J. Wright; Harper's Magazine, Vol. XI; Harper's Encyclopedia of United States History; Historial Register and Dictionary of the United States Army, by Heitman; Army Registers and Regimental Records; Hamersly's Army Register of the United States; Upton's Military Policy of the United States.

For the illustrations used in Chapter II, we are indebted to Wilcox's History of the Mexican War and to the Memoirs of General U. S. Grant.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

HISTORY OF THE NINTH U. S. INFANTRY

CHAPTER I

FIRST ORGANIZATION AND DISBANDMENT OF THE NINTH INFANTRY — SECOND ORGANIZATION OF THE NINTH INFANTRY — SERVICE ON THE NIAGARA FRONTIER — BATTLE OF CHIPPEWA — BATTLE OF LUNDY'S LANE — BATTLE OF FORT ERIE — REGIMENT DISBANDED AT CLOSE OF WAR.

UNDER the authority granted the President by the Act of July 16, 1798, to raise twelve additional regiments of infantry of ten companies each, the Ninth Infantry first came into existence in the army of the United States, in January, 1799, with Josiah Carville Hall, of Maryland, as Lieutenant-Colonel Commandant. The additional regiments authorized at this time were "to be enlisted for and during the continuance of the existing differences between the United States and the French Republic, unless sooner discharged." All of the officers were appointed from Maryland and an order of the War Department of January 5, 1800, directed that the regiment be recruited in that state. All of the officers were appointed and confirmed by the Senate, but it is probable that but few enlistments were made, as the Act of February 20, 1800, suspended enlistments for the new regiments. The difficulties with France having been settled without resort to arms, such officers and men as had been added to the army were disbanded under the Act of May 14, 1800.

The Ninth Infantry was therefore disbanded June 15, 1800.

This law made our military establishment consist of the staff, four regiments of infantry, and two regiments of artillerists and engineers, and two troops of light dragoons, numbering 293 officers, 9 cadets and 3,794 enlisted men; aggregate, 4,051.

Under the Act of January 11, 1812, the Ninth Infantry was again organized in March, 1812, with Simon Learned, of Massachusetts, as Colonel. The regiment was raised in Massachusetts, and though a part of the regular army, was accredited to that state.

Digitized by Google

The following officers belonged to the Ninth Regiment of Infantry during its first two periods of existence.

(Note: Name of state is place of appointment.)

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL COMMANDANT

Josiah C. Hall, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

COLONEL

Simon Learned, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; disbanded June 15, 1815.

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS

John L. Tuttle, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; died July 22, 1813.

Robert Carr, from Major Sixteenth Infantry, August 15, 1813; transferred Fifteenth Infantry, September 29, 1813.

Thomas Aspinwall, from Fifteenth Infantry, September 29, 1813, March 12, 1813; disbanded June 15, 1815.

MAJORS

David Hopkins, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

William D. Beall, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Thomas Aspinwall, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fifteenth Infantry, March 12, 1813.

Chester Lyman, from Captain Ninth Infantry, June 26, 1813; resigned July 6, 1814.

Henry Leavenworth, from Captain Twenty-fifth Infantry, August 15, 1813; transferred Second Infantry, May 17, 1815.

Turner Crooker, from Captain Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1814; disbanded June 15, 1815.

CAPTAINS

Thomas Beatty, Jr., Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Lloyd Beall, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded, June 15, 1800.

Girard Briscoe, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Rizin Davidge, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Isaac Spencer, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Jacob Norris, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Valentine Brothers, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

John W. Hackett, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Jonathan Hodgson, Maryland, March 3, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Richard Earle, Maryland, May 14, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Seth Bannister, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned May 15, 1813.

Elihu Jones, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned March 31, 1813.

Joseph Bucklin, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; died March 1, 1813.

John Nye, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned September 1, 1813.

Philip White, Massachusetts, April 9, 1812; resigned April 15, 1813.

Ebenezer Thompson, Massachusetts, April 29, 1812; resigned July 20, 1813.

Moses Hoit, Massachusetts, May 15, 1812; resigned September 15, 1813.

Isaac B. Barber, Massachusetts, May 26, 1812; resigned November 1, 1812.

Edmund Foster, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 13, 1813; resigned October 31, 1814.

Jared Ingersoll, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 16, 1813; resigned October 3, 1814.

Digitized by Google

Abraham F. Hull, transferred from Twenty-third Infantry April 15, 1813, April 14, 1812; killed in battle July 25, 1814.

David S. Townsend, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 13, 1813; disbanded June 15, 1815.

George Bender, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 13, 1813; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815.

James F. Norris, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 26, 1813; resigned June 15, 1815.

Thomas Harrison, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 15, 1813; transferred to Forty-second Infantry, June 10, 1814.

Samuel L. Allen, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 15, 1813; disbanded June 15, 1815.

William L. Foster, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 15, 1813; transferred to Fifth Infantry, May 17, 1815.

John Fowle, Jr., from First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, June 10, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry, May 17, 1815.

Ebenezer Childs, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 20, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry, May 17, 1815.

Loring Palmer, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1814; disbanded June 15, 1815.

David Perry, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815.

John H. Cranson, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 31, 1814; disbanded June 15, 1815.

William Browning, from First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 31, 1814, First Lieutenant, Second Infantry, May 17, 1815.

FIRST LIEUTENANTS

William Elliott, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

John B. Barnes, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Ninian Pinkney, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Levi Alexander, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Matthew Tilghman, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Henry C. Neale, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Aquilla Beale, Maryland, January 8, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

William Savin, Maryland, March 3, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Charles Clements, Maryland, March 3, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

John Thomson, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Robert Grover, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

William Warren, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned June 30, 1813.

John Reed, Jr., Massachusetts, April 29, 1812; resigned February 15, 1813.

Joseph Fuller, Massachusetts, May 11, 1812; resigned March 1, 1813.

Benjamin F. Greene, Massachusetts, March 20, 1813; resigned February 28, 1814.

Stephen Turner, Massachusetts, May 13, 1813; killed in battle July 25, 1814.

Aaron Lewis, Otis Fisher,
David Chandler, Joseph Gleason,
William Lyman, David Foote,
Edmund Badger.

Digitized by Google

SECOND LIEUTENANTS

John Adlum, Jr., Maryland, March 3, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.
George Peter, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.
Joseph Bentley, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.
Benjamin Nowland, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.
Skelton Felton, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned July 15, 1813.
Loton Smith, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned September 4, 1812.

ENSIGNS

Alexander Cooper, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

Enos Noland, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

Thomas Dent, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

Levi Hillary, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

William Swan, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

Lewis G. Ford, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

David Hughes, Maryland, January 8, 1799; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1799.

Elliot Claflin, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned April 1, 1813.

Edward Morton, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, July 15, 1813.

Otis Fisher, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, June 30, 1813.

Charles Foster, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 13, 1813.

Henry Willington, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 13, 1813.

Lewis Norris, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, April 16, 1813.

Henry Draper, Massachusetts, March 12, 1812; resigned November 25, 1812.

William Lyman, Massachusetts, April 23, 1812; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, June 26, 1813.

Joseph Gleason, Massachusetts, January 22, 1813; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 13, 1813.

Joshua Howard, Massachusetts, April 3, 1813; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, August 14, 1813.

Frederick A. Hildreth, Massachusetts, April 10, 1813; resigned November 1, 1813.

David Foote, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, June 29, 1813; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, November 23, 1813.

Adolphus Burghardt, Massachusetts, July 7, 1813; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, August 15, 1813.

Edmund Badger, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, August 30, 1813; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, April 5, 1814.

Digitized by Google

Jonas W. Colburn, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, September 29, 1813; resigned February 28, 1814.

Elisha Brimhall, Artificer, December 4, 1813; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 1, 1814.

Jonas V. Brigham, Massachusetts, March 30, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 1, 1814.

William M. Dyer, Rhode Island, March 30, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 1, 1814.

Benoni C. Allen, Quartermaster-Sergeant, Ninth Infantry, March 30, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 1, 1814.

Caleb Cushman, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, March 30, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, May 1, 1814.

Benjamin H. Scott, Massachusetts, April 15, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry May 1, 1814.

James G. Aiken, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, May 11, 1814; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1814.

Leonard Chapin, Massachusetts, June 30, 1814; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1814.

Charley Blake, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, June 30, 1814; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1814.

George W. Jacobs, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, July 12, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, July 20, 1814.

Joseph K. Jacobs, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, July 12, 1814; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1814.

Patrick O'Flyng, New York, July 31, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, July 31, 1814.

Thomas Loring, Sergeant Artillery, November 17, 1814; Third Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, January 1, 1815.

James Bartlett, Massachusetts, November 17, 1814; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, January 1, 1815.

Christopher Whitney, Sergeant Ninth Infantry, February 11, 1815; disbanded June 15, 1815.

SURGEONS

Robert Geddes, Maryland, July 12, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Joseph Lovell, Massachusetts, May 19, 1812; Hospital Surgeon, June 30, 1814.

Thomas G. Mower, from Surgeon's Mate, Ninth Infantry, June 30, 1814; transferred Sixth Infantry, May 17, 1815.

SURGEON'S MATES

Darden Brown, New York, March 3, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

Charles A. Beatty, Maryland, May 14, 1799; disbanded June 15, 1800.

James H. Bradford, Massachusetts, April 13, 1812; resigned May 19, 1814.

Daniel Cook, Massachusetts, April 13, 1812; resigned December 15, 1812.

Ebenezer S. Phelps, Massachusetts, July 27, 1814; disbanded June 15, 1815.

Although the regiment was authorized in January, 1812, owing to the slowness of recruiting for the regular regiments the Ninth Infantry appears to have joined the rendezvous at Burlington, Vermont, the latter part (about December) of 1812, where they were assigned to the

Digitized by Google

Second Brigade, Army of the North, under command of Brigadier-General John Chandler of Massachusetts. This brigade consisted of the Ninth, Twenty-first, and Twenty-fifth Infantry. General Dearborn had been placed in command of the Army of the North, and proceeded to concentrate his army at Sackett's Harbor and Buffalo. Accordingly General Chandler's Brigade marched from Burlington to Sackett's Harbor, where they arrived in April, 1813. After the capture of York or Toronto, by General Dearborn and Commodore Chauncey, in April, 1813, by about 1,700 men of Dearborn's army, this force was transferred, early in May, across Lake Ontario to a camp site on Four Mile Creek, four miles to the east of the Niagara River. The ships engaged in this expedition immediately engaged in transferring most of the remaining troops from Sackett's Harbor. During the expedition to York there were about 3,500 men still left at and in the vicinity of Sackett's Harbor. General Dearborn's force at Four Mile Creek, having been brought up to about 6,000 men, engaged in the capture of Fort George, which was held by about 1,400 British troops, and about 700 or 800 volunteers and Indians scattered at various posts along the Niagara. Although General Chandler's Brigade was not actively engaged in the capture of Fort George, it was apparently present. The British evacuated Fort George and the other posts along the Niagara after practically no resistance. In one of these encounters, a night attack, on June 6th, at Stoney Creek, attended by little loss on both sides, Generals Winder and Chandler had the misfortune to be taken prisoners. On June 24th, Colonel Boerstler, Fourteenth Infantry, believing himself to be surrounded by a superior force, surrendered with 542 men, of whom nearly 500 were regulars. On the 6th of July, General Dearborn was relieved, this honored veteran of the Revolution having voluntarily given up his command in consequence of ill health and infirmities.

While our army was engaged at Fort George, the weakness of the garrison at Sackett's Harbor induced the army under Sir George Prevost to attack that place, his object being to take possession of our naval depot and stores, and destroy the new ship "General Pike," then in process of construction. The invading force, from 900 to 1,200 strong, with a strong squadron consisting of six vessels, mounting ten or twelve guns each, and forty bateaux, left Kingston on the 27th of May, and landing on the 29th, was repulsed with a loss of 50 killed, and 211 wounded. Our casualties were, regulars 20 killed, 84 wounded and 26 missing; volunteers, 2 killed; militia 25 killed and wounded; total 157.

The battle of Sackett's Harbor, like every one that had preceded it, established the value and superiority of disciplined troops.

Digitized by Google

In his report to the secretary of war, General Brown of the militia, who, for this successful defense, was appointed Brigadier-General of the army, thus speaks of the conduct of our troops: "My orders were that the troops were to lie close and reserve their fire until the enemy had approached so near that every shot might hit its object. It is, however, impossible to execute such orders with raw troops, unaccustomed to subordination. My orders were, in this case, disobeyed; the whole line fired, and not without effect; but in the moment while I was contemplating this, to my utter astonishment, they rose from their cover and fled. Colonel Mills fell gallantly in brave, but vain endeavor to stop his men. I was, personally, more fortunate. Gathering together about one hundred militia, under the immediate command of Captain McNitt, we threw ourselves on the rear of the enemy's left flank, and, I trust, did some execution. It was at this last moment that the regulars under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Backus, Light Dragoons, first engaged the enemy; nor was it long before they defeated them. Hurrying to this point of action I found the battle still raging, but with obvious advantage to our side. The result of the action, so glorious for the officers and soldiers of the Regular Army, has already been communicated in my letter of the 29th."

While the first landing attempted by the British, on May 28, was taking place, nineteen small American vessels approached from the west and were met by the Indian allies of the British who dashed off in their canoes to meet the Americans, being reinforced by several boat loads of British soldiers. The American boats were under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Aspinwall, Ninth Infantry. Twelve of his smaller boats, with about seventy men were captured by the British and Indians. The other seven, under Colonel Aspinwall, with 100 men, being larger and swifter, reached Sackett's Harbor about nine o'clock that night (May 28th), and took part in the following day's battle. These men under Colonel Aspinwall were apparently a mixed detachment of reinforcements for Sackett's Harbor. General Wilkinson, in his memoirs stated that of the Ninth and Twenty-first Infantry there were about thirteen officers and 281 enlisted men. The total regular force at Sackett's Harbor was probably not more than 400, consisting of small detachments from the Ninth, Twenty-first, and Twenty-third Infantry regiments, the First Dragoons, and some light and heavy artillery. In addition to these there were about five hundred militia. The militia was posted on the left of the line in a strong position. On the right of the militia the Albany volunteers were stationed, and on their right, and separated from them by a thick wood, were the regulars. Major Swann,

Digitized by Google

Adjutant-General, states in his report: "About 400 of the regular troops sustained the heat of the action. These consisted chiefly of the First Regiment of Light Dragoons, some of the Ninth, Twenty-first, and a few of the Twenty-third Infantry, 3rd and Light Artillery."

The British reported one officer and twenty-six men killed, twelve officers and one hundred and eighty-three men wounded and three officers and thirteen men missing.

BATTLE OF CHRYSTLER'S FIELD

We next find the Ninth Infantry engaged in the campaign under General Wilkinson, which was inaugurated for the capture of Kingstown and Montreal. Kingstown was an important port and Montreal the chief commercial town of lower Canada. Wilkinson was ordered to concentrate at Sackett's Harbor early in October. General Wade Hampton was to co-operate with him from the foot of Lake Champlain. The regular troops along the Niagara were transferred by boat to Sackett's Harbor, with the exception of about 800 under Colonel Scott, who had been left behind to hold Fort George, and who later marched overland to Sackett's Harbor by way of Rochester and Utica. In these, operations of General Wilkinson two columns were engaged, one column, numbering 8,000 regulars, under General Wilkinson, rendezvoused at Sackett's Harbor and was to descend the St. Lawrence, while the other, about five thousand strong, under General Hampton, was to operate from the foot of Lake Champlain. After concentration at Sackett's Harbor, Wilkinson organized his army as follows: First Brigade, General Boyd: Fifth, Twelfth and Thirteenth Infantry; Second Brigade, General Brown: Sixth, Fifteenth and Twenty-second Infantry Third Brigade, General Covington: Ninth, Sixteenth and Twenty-fifth Infantry; Fourth Brigade, General Swartwout: Eleventh, Fourteenth and Twenty-first Infantry; Provisional Brigade, General Porter: three regiments of artillery and two of dragoons. Hampton's force, like Wilkinson's, was composed of regulars, or rather, recruits "who had been but a short time in service and who had not been exercised with that rigid discipline so essentially necessary to constitute the soldier. They had indeed been taught various evolutions, but a spirit of subordination was foreign to their views." The exploits of these two commands are quickly related. Crossing the frontier, Hampton was repulsed on the Chateaugay by a force of some 800 Canadian militia and Indians, of whom not more than 400 were engaged, after which he returned to Lake Champlain and Plattsburgh; Wilkinson began his descent of the St. Lawrence in November. When his expedition, which was borne by a flotilla of boats, arrived at a point four miles

Digitized by Google

below Ogdensburg, information reached him that the river was lined on the opposite shore with posts of musketry and artillery, and that a large force of British troops had arrived at Prescott. Wilkinson had already ordered Colonel Macomb with 1,200 of the best troops of the army to cross the river to oppose the British detachments on the Canadian side (November 7, 1813), and these were soon followed by riflemen under Lieutenant-Colonel Forsyth who did excellent service in the rear of Macomb. After a council of war, on November 8th, General Brown was at once ordered to cross the river with his brigade and some dragoons. On the 9th General Boyd and his brigade were detached to reinforce Brown, with orders to cover his march and to attack the pursuing enemy, if necessary, and to co-operate with the other commanders. Wilkinson now found himself in a perilous position. The British armed vessels being close upon his flotilla and the British land troops close upon the rear of Brown and Boyd. An attack upon the flotilla by British gunboats had been repulsed and they had fled up the river. About this time Boyd, upon resuming his march, was engaged in repelling a British attack upon his rear, the British being driven back out of the woods on the main line in the open fields of John Chrystler, a British militia captain then in the service. The British main line was covered by their gunboats and protected in part by a deep ravine. General Covington led his brigade against the British left near the river and the battle became general. For a time the Americans were successfully driving the British until, their ammunition becoming exhausted and being hard pressed by the British, they were slowly driven back. For five hours the conflict had been carried on in the midst of sleet and snow and victory had swayed between the belligerents like a pendulum. The American retreat was promising to be a rout, when the fugitives were met by 600 troops under Colonel Upham and Major Malcom, whom Wilkinson had sent up to the support of Boyd. These checked the flight, drove back the British and saved the American Army. Meanwhile Boyd had re-formed a portion of the army and under cover of darkness the Americans retired to their boats unmolested. Neither party had gained a victory, but the advantage lay with the British, who held the field. On the morning after the battle the flotilla with the gun boats and troops passed safely down the rapids and, three miles above Cornwall, they formed a junction with the forces under General Brown. A council of war (November 12, 1813) decided that "the attack on Montreal should be abandoned for the present season and the army near Cornwall be immediately crossed to the American shore for taking up winter quarters." This was done, and the army put into winter quarters at French Mills,

Digitized by Google

on the Salmon River, which empties into the St. Lawrence River near Cornwall. Among the casualties in the Ninth Infantry were the following:

Captain Edmund Foster, Ninth Infantry, wounded.

Captain David S. Townsend, Ninth Infantry, wounded and taken prisoner.

Heitman's Register states that the entire regiment took part.

The Americans lost in the battle, in killed and wounded, 339; the British lost 187.

In March the army, then in command of General Jacob Brown, moved toward the Niagara frontier where we next see the Ninth Infantry engaged.

OPERATIONS ALONG NIAGARA FRONTIER

It is a notable fact that the Ninth Infantry served under General Winfield Scott during the campaign on the northern frontier in the vicinity of Niagara River during the War of 1812, and, later, again served with him during the Mexican War in his advance on the City of Mexico.

At the outbreak of the war of 1812, General Scott was Lieutenant-Colonel, Second Artillery; in March, 1813, he was appointed Adjutant-General, with the rank of Colonel, and about the same time promoted to the colonelcy of his regiment. Notwithstanding his command of the regiment, he continued to perform staff duties. At this time General Dearborn was in command of the American forces at Fort Niagara, consisting of about 5,000 men. In May Colonel Scott, with his regiment, joined General Dearborn, and Scott became Chief of Staff.

In July, 1813, he resigned the office of Adjutant-General and was assigned to the command of twenty companies, or what was known as a double regiment.

On March 9, 1814, he was appointed to the rank of Brigadier-General, and ordered to join General Jacob Brown, the Commanding General of the United States Army, then moving toward the Niagara frontier. On the 24th General Brown marched to Sackett's Harbor, where Scott established a camp of instruction. On the assembling of the army at Buffalo, Scott was assigned to the command of the Ninth, Eleventh and Twenty-fifth Regiments of Infantry, with a part of the Twenty-second Infantry, and Captain Towson's battery of Artillery. In addition to this command there were at this time, at Buffalo, the commands of General Porter and E. W. Ripley. The whole force was placed in camp under General Scott's immediate command. In the latter part of June General Brown returned to Buffalo, and on the morning of July 3d Scott's

Digitized by Google

Brigade crossed the river and landed below Fort Erie, while General Ripley's Brigade landed a short distance above. Fort Erie was invested, attacked, and soon surrendered, and, on the morning of the 4th Scott's Brigade moved in advance in the direction of Chippewa. He was engaged for a distance of 15 miles in a running fight with the British forces under Marquis of Tweedale. Toward night the Marquis of Tweedale crossed the Chippewa River and joined the main British Army under General Riall. Scott then took position on a creek some two miles from Chippewa. To the east of his position was the Niagara River, and the road to Chippewa, while on the west were heavy woods; while running across the coming battlefield were two streams, the Chippewa River and Street's Creek. General Riall, the British Commander, was posted behind the Chippewa, flanked on one side by the blockhouse, and on the other by a heavy battery. Both of these streams were bridged on the road running along the Niagara River. On the morning of the 5th General Brown had determined to make the attack, but the enemy anticipating it made the first forward movement and there were a number of skirmishes. The Ninth Infantry was apparently not engaged in the earlier part of this battle, during which General Porter's command, after preliminary success, was driven back in considerable confusion. This was about 4 o'clock, and General Brown, seeing the advance of the British force, ordered the advance of Ripley's Brigade. The British Army was composed of the One-hundredth Regiment, under the Marquis of Tweedale; the First Royal Scots, under Lieutenant-Colonel Gordon; a portion of the Eighth, or King's Regiment; a detachment of the Royal Artillery; a detachment of the Royal Nineteenth Light Dragoons, and some Canadian Militia and Indians. These were supported by a heavy battery of nine guns, Scott crossed the bridge under fire of this battery, losing a number of men. After crossing, the commands of Majors Henry Leavenworth, Ninth Infantry, and John McNeil, Jr., formed a line in front, opposite the center and left of the enemy. General Scott had now advanced to within eighty paces of the enemy when he directed a charge by Major McNeil's command (Eleventh Infantry), supported by a corresponding charge by the Ninth Infantry, under Major Leavenworth, and a flanking fire from Towson's battery. The British broke and fled in great confusion. In the meantime, Major Jessup's command moved in to the left and attacked the enemy's right flank, driving the enemy into its intrenchments across the Chippewa. The British force engaged was about 2,100 men, and that of the Americans 1,900. The British losses in killed were 138, wounded 319, missing 46. The American loss was 60 killed, 248 wounded, and 19 missing. Among those wounded were

Digitized by Google

3rd Lieutenant Elisha Brimhall, and First Lieutenant Loring Palmer, Ninth Infantry. General Brown, in his official report, says: "Brigadier-General Scott is entitled to the highest praise our country can bestow; to him, more than to any other man, am I indebted for the victory of July 5th. His brigade covered itself with glory. Every officer and man of the Ninth, Twenty-second, Eleventh and Twenty-fifth Regiments, did his duty with a zeal and energy worthy of the American character. Two days after the battle of Chippewa General Scott forced a passage across the Chippewa, driving the enemy."

In the afternoon of July 25th, after receipt of information that about 1,000 British troops had crossed from Queenstown to Lewiston, a few miles below the Chippewa, General Brown determined to threaten the fort at the mouth of the Niagara, and General Scott's command was put in motion for this purpose. It consisted of four battalions under Colonel Hugh Brady, and the commands of Majors Jessup, Henry Leavenworth, Ninth Infantry, and McNeil, Captain Towson's Artillery, and Captain Harrison's Detachment of Cavalry. The whole force aggregated 1,300 men. General Scott's orders were to march on the fort, as information had been received that General Riall had divided his forces, sending 1,000 of them across the river. He, however, decided to move forward and give battle. After sending word to General Brown that the enemy was in his front he moved on, and was astonished to find, drawn up in line of battle, in Lundy's Lane, a larger force than he had fought at Chippewa; but he determined to give battle and rely upon reinforcements being rapidly sent to him. General Riall was rapidly receiving reinforcements unknown to General Brown. The battle opened late in the afternoon. The British lines, about 1,800 strong, posted on the ridge in Lundy's Lane, running at right angles with the river, was in front of Scott. The left of this line was on a road parallel to the river, with its face grown up with small timber, extending some 200 yards. Major Jessup's and Colonel Brady's commands were ordered to take advantage of this and turn the enemy's left from the concealed position which the brushwood afforded. The other infantry forces had been placed in line with detachments of cavalry on both sides and held as reserves. The British, outflanking Scott on the left, made a movement to attack on the flank and rear. This was repelled by Major McNeil with heavy losses. Jessup had succeeded in his movements while Brady, Leavenworth, and Towson were engaged in the front. Jessup had captured General Riall, and a number of other officers far in his front, and then resumed his line. At 9 o'clock the British right was driven back from the assault on Scott's flank, and

Digitized by Google

his left was turned and cut off. The center, posted on the ridge, held its place, supported by nine pieces of artillery. Another battalion of British troops was on its way as reinforcements, and but a short distance away, when General Brown arrived on the field in advance of the reserve. He thus describes in his report what occurred at the time of his arrival: "Apprehending that these corps were much exhausted, and knowing that they had suffered severely, I determined to interpose a new line with the advancing troops and thus disengage General Scott and hold his brigade in reserve. Orders were accordingly given to General Ripley. The enemy's artillery, at this moment, occupied a hill which gave him great advantage, and was the key to the whole position, which was supported by a line of infantry. To secure the victory it was necessary to carry this with artillery and seize the heights.

"The duty was assigned to Colonel Miller. He advanced steadily and gallantly to his object and carried the Heights with cannon. General Ripley brought up the Twenty-third to his support, and the enemy disappeared from before him. The enemy rallied his forces, and, as he believed, having received reinforcements, now attempted to drive us from our position and regain his artillery. Our line was unshaken, and the enemy repulsed. Two other attempts, having the same object, had the same issue. General Scott was again engaged in repelling the former of these, and the last I saw of him, on the field of battle, he was near the head of his column and giving to its march a direction that would have placed him on the enemy's right. Having been for some time wounded, and being a good deal exhausted by loss of blood, it became my wish to devolve the command on General Scott, and retire from the field; but, on inquiry, I had the misfortune to learn that he was disabled by wounds. I therefore kept my post, and had the satisfaction to see the enemy's last effort repulsed."

General Scott, though severely wounded, was not disabled at the time mentioned in General Brown's report. Having two horses killed under him he was at this time on foot, but was finally prostrated by his two wounds, one in the side, the other in the shoulder. The American loss, over one-third of those engaged, was 171 killed, 572 wounded, and 117 prisoners; that of the British, was 84 killed, 559 wounded, and 235 prisoners. Among the casualties of the Ninth Infantry, during this battle, were the following: Captain Abraham F. Hull, First Lieutenant Stephen Turner, Second Lieutenant Adolphus Burghardt, killed; Captain William L. Foster, Captain Fowle, Major Henry Leavenworth, First Lieutenant William Browning, First Lieutenant Otis Fisher, Second Lieutenant Caleb Cushman, Third

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant George W. Jacobs, Ensign Joseph J. Jacobs, wounded; First Lieutenant David Perry, taken prisoner. Generals Brown and Scott, both being disabled, General Ripley was sent to bring off the wounded and dead. The captured artillery, owing to want of horses and harness, was left on the field. The army now fell back to Chippewa and fortified the place.

It being learned that General Drummond was advancing on Chippewa with a large force, the place was evacuated, and the army retreated to the ferry near Black Rock (near Buffalo). A division, among which was the Ninth Infantry, was ordered to remain at Fort Erie, and repair the fort, and Brigadier-General Gaines was, by General Brown's orders, placed in command of the army. Very soon the British General, Drummond, appeared in front of Fort Erie and commenced a regular investment. Cannonading with the guns on August 13th, and continued at intervals, and on the 15th a heavy British column unsuccessfully assaulted Towson's battery, which was stationed at the northwest angle of the fort. The western angle was then attacked with a like result. The British eventually succeeded in obtaining possession of the exterior bastion of the old fort. Just at this time a number of cartridges in the buildings nearby exploded, killing many of the British and expelling them from the fort. The losses in these affairs were: British — killed 57; wounded, 209; missing, 539. Americans — killed, 17; wounded, 56; missing, 11. General Brown resumed command on September 2nd, and determined to relieve the siege by a sortie on the enemy's works. The investment had now lasted fifty days, and the British, during that time, had erected two batteries and were engaged on a third. The force was divided into three brigades, two of which were encamped out of range of the American cannon. At half past two p. m., September 17th, the American troops marched out and the action began. In less than half an hour the Americans had captured two of the batteries and two blockhouses. Very soon a third battery was abandoned, the cannon spiked and dismounted. General Drummond retired on the night of the 21st and took post in his intrenchments behind the Chippewa. The British losses in this investment were, in killed, wounded and prisoners, nearly 1,000, while the American loss was 511. Among the casualties of the Ninth Infantry during this, the action of September 17th, were the following: wounded, Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Aspinwall; Captain Eben Childs, who was also wounded on August 20th, at Fort Erie; Captain Jared Ingersoll.

Early in November the American Army took up winter quarters in Buffalo, and this brought to a close the war on the Niagara. The Treaty

Digitized by Google

of Peace was signed December 24th, 1814, and was ratified by the Senate February 17th, 1815.

It is worthy of note that the Ninth Infantry was not present during the early fighting on the Niagara frontier, which resulted in disaster to the American Army, but was present during the glorious campaign ending with Fort Erie.

In the reorganization under the Act of March 3, 1815, the Ninth Infantry, and all regiments of higher numerical designation, were disbanded, and no regiment bearing the designation Ninth Infantry existed until April, 1847, when the Ninth Infantry was again organized, it being one of the few regiments authorized by the Act of February 11, 1847.

The following were among the brevets conferred by the President during this war:

1. Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Aspinwall, Ninth Infantry, Brevet Colonel, Sept. 17, 1814. Distinguished and meritorious service in the sortie from Fort Erie.

2. Major Henry Leavenworth, Ninth Infantry, Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, July 5, 1814. Distinguished and meritorious services in the Battle of Chippewa.

3. Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Leavenworth, Brevet Colonel, July 25, 1814. Gallant conduct, battle of Niagara.

4. Captain Thomas J. Harrison, Ninth Infantry, Brevet Major, July 5, 1814. Gallant conduct; battle of Chippewa.

5. Captain Turner Crooker, Ninth Infantry, Brevet Major, July 4, 1814. Gallant conduct in repelling a charge of British Dragoons on the plains of Chippewa.

6. First Lieutenant Joseph Gleason, Ninth Infantry, Brevet Captain, August 15, 1814. Gallant conduct in the defence of Fort Erie.

7. Brevet Second Lieutenant Patrick O'Flyng, Ninth Infantry, Brevet First Lieutenant, September 17, 1814. Gallant conduct, sortie from Fort Erie.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II

THIRD ORGANIZATION OF THE NINTH INFANTRY — EXPEDITION AGAINST AND CAPTURE OF VERA CRUZ — BATTLE OF CERRO GORDO — ARRIVAL OF NINTH INFANTRY AT PUEBLA — ORGANIZATION OF SCOTT'S ARMY — INVASION OF THE VALLEY OF MEXICO — ADVANCE TO EL PEÑON — MOVEMENT AROUND LAKE CHALCO — BATTLE OF CONTREROS — BATTLE OF CHURUBUSCO — BATTLE OF CHAPULTEPEC — DEATH OF COLONEL RANSOM, NINTH INFANTRY — WAITING FOR TREATY OF PEACE — RETURN TO UNITED STATES — DISBANDMENT OF REGIMENT — MEXICAN WAR.

AFTER the outbreak of the Mexican War, the Ninth Infantry was, as already stated, again organized April, 1847, being recruited principally in Rhode Island and Massachusetts. The following officers belonged to the Ninth Infantry during this, its third period of existence:

COLONELS

Trueman B. Ransom, Virginia, April 9, 1847; killed at Chapultepec, September 13, 1847.

Jones M. Withers, Alabama, September 13, 1847; resigned May 23, 1848.

Henry L. Webb, Illinois, May 23, 1848; disbanded August 8, 1848.

LIEUTENANT COLONELS

Abner B. Thompson, Maine, April 9, 1847; resigned July 16, 1847.

Jeremiah Clemens, Alabama, July 16, 1847; disbanded July 20, 1848.

MAJORS

Thomas H. Seymour, Connecticut, April 9, 1847; promoted Lieutenant Colonel Twelfth Infantry; August 12, 1847.

Folliot T. Lally, Maine, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

William B. Taliaferro, Virginia, August 12, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

CAPTAINS

Andrew T. Palmer, Maine, April 9, 1847; promoted Major Fourteenth Infantry, September 8, 1847.

Daniel Bachelder, New Hampshire, April 9, 1847; resigned February 17, 1848.

Charles N. Bodfish, Maine, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Lorenzo Johnson, Connecticut, April 9, 1847; resigned December 4, 1847.

E. A. Kimball, Vermont, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Joseph S. Pitman, Rhode Island, April 9, 1847; disbanded July 21, 1848.

Theodore F. Rowe, New Hampshire, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

James W. Thompson, Maine, April 9, 1847; died September 25, 1847.

Nathaniel S. Webb, Connecticut, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

John S. Slocum, Rhode Island, First Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, Captain, September 25, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Digitized by Google

Charles J. Sprague, First Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, Adjutant; Captain, October 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

George Bowers, New Hampshire, First Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, Captain, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

John H. Jackson, New Hampshire, First Lieutenant April 9, 1847, Captain, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Albert Tracy, Maine, First Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, Captain, February 23, 1848; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Stephen Woodman, Maine, April 9, 1847; resigned October 9, 1847.

FIRST LIEUTENANTS

Lyman Bissel, Connecticut, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Justin Hodge, Connecticut, April 9, 1847; resigned May 6, 1848.

Alexander Morrow, Maine, April 9, 1847; transferred to Sixth Infantry, August 26, 1847.

Thomas J. Whipple, New Hampshire, April 9, 1847; resigned February 28, 1848.

James F. Bragg, Maine, April 19, 1847; died January 19, 1848.

Daniel H. Cram, New Hampshire, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, September 8, 1847; resigned December 4, 1847.

Asa A. Stoddard, Connecticut, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, September 8, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Thomas P. Pierce, New Hampshire, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, October 9, 1847; resigned March 16, 1848.

Thompson H. Crosby, Maine, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

John Glackin, Rhode Island, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Jesse A. Gove, New Hampshire, Second Lieutenant April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1847.

Alpheus T. Palmer, Maine, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, December 4, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Robert Hopkins, Vermont, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, January 19, 1848; disbanded August 26, 1848.

George W. May, Army, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, February 17, 1848; disbanded July 20, 1848.

Charles Simmons, Maine, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, February 23, 1848; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Levi Woodhouse, Connecticut, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, March 16, 1848.

Henry De Wolfe, Rhode Island, Second Lieutenant, April 9, 1847, First Lieutenant, May 6, 1848; disbanded August 9, 1848.

SECOND LIEUTENANTS

James P. Archer, Maryland, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 19, 1848.

Josiah P. Chadbourne, Army April 9, 1847; resigned November 4, 1847.

Richard C. Drum, Pennsylvania, April 9, 1847; transferred Fourth Artillery, March 8, 1848.

Charles F. Low, New Hampshire, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Digitized by Google

William A. Newman, Vermont, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Nathaniel F. Swett, Maine, April 9, 1847; resigned December 4, 1847; Second Lieutenant December 17, 1847; disbanded August 19, 1848.

Edward A. Whitten, Maine, April 9, 1847; resigned August 3, 1847.

John M. Hatheway, Connecticut, April 24, 1847; resigned March 31, 1848.

John McNab, Army, August 3, 1847; resigned August 26, 1848.

Gustavus F. Gardiner, Rhode Island, December 30, 1847; died March 16, 1848.

Nathaniel J. Gill, Massachusetts, December 30, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Thomas Grey, Army, December 30, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

John Bedell, New Hampshire, December 30, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Albert G. Barton, Maine, March 29, 1848; disbanded August 26, 1848.

Amos A. Billings, Maine, March 29, 1848; disbanded July 20, 1848.

Asa N. Wyman, Maine, March 29, 1848; disbanded July 20, 1848.

Thomas H. Gill, Massachusetts, March 24, 1848; disbanded August 26, 1848.

MAJOR AND SURGEON

Justin E. Stevens, Massachusettts April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

ASSISTANT SURGEONS

Francis L. Wheaton, Rhode Island, April 9, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1847.

John D. Walker, New Hampshire, Assistant Surgeon, April 9, 1847; resigned June 26, 1847.

Robert T. Spence, Maryland, July 22, 1847; disbanded August 26, 1848.

It is to be noted that the first Colonel was Trueman B. Ransom, who was killed in the assault upon Chapultepec. He was succeeded by Colonel Jones M. Withers, who resigned May 23, 1848, and he, by Colonel Henry L. Webb.

Following General Taylor's active operations in northern Mexico, preparations were made for an expedition under command of General Winfield Scott against the city of Mexico. General Taylor's work, therefore, was practically limited to holding possession of the country he had already occupied. This apparently became necessary for several reasons. First, the withdrawal of his regular troops for Scott's expedition against the capitol; secondly, the approaching expiration of his best volunteers' term of service; thirdly, Scott's advance against the capital so occupied the Mexicans that the American forces in the northern provinces were almost unmolested. The operations of General Scott up to the time of the arrival of the Ninth Infantry as a part of his command, will be briefly sketched. It appears from the official correspondence that Scott first submitted to the government a written exposition of his views, relative to a new line of operations on the 27th of October, 1846. In the memoranda, which he laid before the Secretary of War, he expressed the opinion that in consideration of Mexico's rejection of all overtures of peace, only

Digitized by Google

by the capture of the capitol could she be brought to terms, and that the most practicable way of effecting this would be by taking possession of Vera Cruz and San Juan de Ulúa. To accomplish the latter he deemed that 10,000 men were necessary, though 15,000 would be better, if they could be on the spot before the yellow fever came. Nevertheless, he was willing to attempt the capture of Vera Cruz with a smaller force. To reach the capital an army of more than 20,000 men would probably be needed. General Taylor, supported by the authorities in Washington, favored the movement on the City of Mexico from Monterey, and via San Luis Potosi, but General Scott had already formulated and determined on the movement which he made with such brilliant success.

On the 6th of March, 1847, General Scott's fleet of transports and men-of-war was concentrated near Vera Cruz, and bore a small, but well-disciplined force, of some 12,000 men, comprising the whole standing army of the United States — four regiments of artillery, eight of infantry, one of mounted riflemen, and detachments of dragoons, besides eight volunteer regiments on foot, and one of horse. Major General Scott commanded the whole, with Worth, fresh from the brilliant capture of Monterey, and the volunteer Patterson, as his brigadiers. With this force General Scott intended to capture Vera Cruz. It was the strongest place on this continent after Quebec, and was garrisoned by about 5,000 men, with about 90 guns mounted in the city, and in the castle, 128 guns of various calibres. Such was the faith of the Mexicans in the strength of the place that they made practically no provision for withstanding a siege and they also allowed women, children and non-combatants to remain in the town. General Scott made his landing about three miles south of Vera Cruz, utilizing for this purpose 67 boats, each capable of holding from 70 to 80 men, and into these 5,500 men were embarked and put ashore at about half past five in the afternoon of the 9th. During the night the debarkation of the whole force was effected without opposition. Once encamped on dry land the task of the besiegers was easy, and Scott found no difficulty in investing the place. The heat was intense and the water was scarce; but the patience of the army bore up against these trials, and on the evening of the 12th a line of troops, five miles long, encircled Vera Cruz. The capture of the city was accompanied by the usual bombardment, and the suffering of the defenders and non-combatants in the city. On the morning of the 26th, the firing ceased and negotiations for a surrender began. The surrender took place at ten o'clock on the morning of the 29th, and the American troops immediately afterward took possession of the city and the castle,

Digitized by Google

and General Worth was immediately installed as Governor. Immediate preparation was made for the advance toward the City of Mexico. It was learned that Santa Anna was advancing toward Vera Cruz, and was first discovered occupying the road at the mouth of the pass of Cerro Gordo, with a large force under command of Santa Anna in person. The American force was concentrated in front of Santa Anna on the 16th of April. After careful reconnaissance, General Scott issued his order of battle on the evening of the 17th. At daybreak on the 18th the battle began, and, after a series of brilliant assaults on the part of the regular troops, the Heights of Cerro Gordo were captured. While this was occurring the Americans, directing an assault against the Mexican right, met with a serious reverse. General Pillow, with the temporary command of the volunteer division of General Patterson, owing to the difficulties of the ground, though directed to make it as close as possible to the river, brought his men in front of the second Mexican battery. The volunteers pressed forward at first with enthusiasm, but, being enfiladed by the battery resting on the ravine, and being embarrassed by the difficulty of the ground, were soon thrown into confusion, and after sustaining a severe loss, were repulsed, many of the men fleeing to the highway and escaping to camp. In the meanwhile the center of the enemy had been pierced and the camp taken. Santa Anna, seeing that all was lost, had fled. The victory of the Americans was complete, and Scott, without hindrance, marched to Jalapa, and on the 20th entered the town in advance of Worth's division of regulars. The next step in advance was the capture of the formidable fortification of Perote, second only to San Juan de Ulúa. There serious opposition was expected. This, however, was in no condition to make serious resistance, and was accordingly abandoned by Gaona, who retired with his garrison. Worth had been ordered forward and took possession of the castle on the 22nd. Scott's further advance was temporarily embarrassed by learning, a few days later, that the greater portion of the expected new levies had been landed at Brazos Santiago with a view to aid Taylor, unfavorable reports of whose situation had been received at Washington. This placed him in a difficult position, as the term of service of the old volunteers was near its expiration, and the discharge of several regiments, viz., Tennessee Cavalry, the Third and Fourth Illinois Infantry, the First and Second Tennessee Infantry, the Georgia Infantry, and the Alabama Infantry, numbering about 3,000 men, was a serious consideration; few of these troops were willing to re-enlist, at which Scott expressed his regret, and, as a further advance from the coast would expose them to the necessity of returning to Vera Cruz at the most fatal season of the year, Scott,

Digitized by Google

on May 4th, from consideration of humanity, issued his order for them to embark at Vera Cruz for New Orleans, where, on their arrival, they were honorably mustered out of the service. In the meantime the Act of February 11, 1847, authorizing the raising of fresh troops, among which was the Ninth Infantry, had been passed, and it was the intention of the government to increase Scott's force to about 20,000 men. Scott determined to proceed with his present force as far as Puebla, which town he knew did not hope to resist his progress, and which, after some preliminary fighting, was occupied.

During the prolonged stay at Puebla the troops were daily drilled, but were given permission to visit the ancient city of Cholula, and the adjacent country. The first re-inforcements to arrive were 800 men, under Lieutenant-Colonel James McIntosh, escorting a train. They were delayed by an attack of the enemy near Jalapa, but being joined by Brigadier-General Cadwallader, with a portion of his brigade, and a field battery, the enemy were soon driven off. Major-General Gideon J. Pillow arrived next with 1,000 men, and, on August 6th, Brigadier-General Franklin Pierce joined with 2,500 men.[1] This increased the aggregate to 12,776, of which number 2,500 were sick and 600 were convalescent, too feeble for an ordinary day's duty. These convalescents, with an equal number of defectives, remained under Colonel Childs to garrison Puebla, leaving 10,300 for the movement on the capital.

The Mexican Army, organized to resist the Americans' approach, was supposed by General Scott to number — good, bad and indifferent — about 30,000. In advancing upon the city of Mexico, Scott had to temporarily sever connection with Vera Cruz.

The following was the organization of Scott's Army in its march from Puebla to the city of Mexico:

CORPS

COLONEL HARNEY'S BRIGADE

Detachment of First Light Dragoons, Captain James Kearny.

Detachment of Second Light Dragoons, Major Edwin Vose Sumner.

Detachment of Third Light Dragoons under Major Andrew Thomas McReynolds.

[1] Authorized strength: Infantry (old army) Company, 3 officers, 110 men; Regiment (ten companies), 34 officers, 1,104 men. Infantry and Voltigeurs (new army) Company (1 Captain, 1 First Lieutenant, 2 Second Lieutenants), 4 officers, 110 men.; Regiment (ten companies), 47 officers, 1,104 men.

Digitized by Google

I. *Brevet Major-General Worth's Division.*

1. Colonel John Garland's Brigade.

Second Regiment of Artillery serving as infantry.
Third Regiment of Artillery serving as infantry.
Fourth Regiment of Artillery.
Duncan's Field Battery.

2. Colonel Andrew Clark's Brigade.

Fifth, Sixth, and Eighth Regiments of Infantry.
A Light Battery.

II. *Brevet Major-General Twiggs' Division.*

1. Brevet Brigadier-General Persifer F. Smith's Brigade.

Rifle Regiment.
First Regiment of Artillery serving as infantry.
Third Regiment of Infantry.
Taylor's Light Battery.

2. Colonel Bennett Riley's Brigade.

Fourth Regiment of Artillery, serving as infantry.
First Regiment of Infantry.
Seventh Regiment of Infantry.

III. *Major General Gideon J. Pillow's Division.*

1. Brigadier General G. Cadwallader's Brigade.

Voltigeurs.
Eleventh and Fourteenth Infantry.
A Light Battery.

2. Brigadier General Franklin Pierce's Brigade.

Ninth, Twelfth, and Fifteenth Infantry.

IV. *Major-General John A. Quitman's Division.*

1. Brigadier-General Shields' Brigade.

New York Volunteers.
South Carolina Volunteers.

2. Lieutenant-Colonel Watson's Brigade.

A detachment of Second Pennsylvania Volunteers.
A detachment of United States Marines.

INVASION OF THE VALLEY OF MEXICO, AUGUST, 1847.

The arrival of General Pierce[1] with his brigade, consisting of the Ninth, Twelfth, and Fifteenth Regiments of Infantry, enabled Scott to begin

[1] President of United States from March 4, 1853 to March 4, 1857.

Digitized by Google

his long meditated march upon the capital. Leaving Colonel Childs behind, in command of Puebla, Scott set out from Puebla between the 7th and 10th of August "en echelon," leaving one short day's march between each of the four divisions, under Worth, Twiggs, Pillow, and Quitman, respectively. It is well to note here that the Ninth Infantry served in General Pierce's Brigade, of Pillow's Division, and all references to the commands of Pillow or Pierce is intended to include the Ninth Infantry unless otherwise stated. General Pillow's Division marched out of Puebla on August 10th. The divisions in succession made the same



distances, and encamped at the same places—the first night at Rio Prieto, the second at San Martin, the third at Rio Frio, the fourth descended into the valley, halting at different points — Twiggs', at Ayotla; Quitman's, known as the Volunteer Division, at the Hacienda of Buena Vista (five miles in rear); Worth's at Chalco (two or three miles to the left of the road), and Pillow's at Chimalpa (a mile or two beyond Chalco). The first day's march was only as far as the Rio Prieto, nine miles from Puebla, and so called for its blackish or indifferent water. A pretty, fertile valley extended far to the front, having Malinche off to the right, and two well-known, lofty snow mountains to the left. Halting the second night at San Martin after a march of twelve or fourteen miles, the troops were early on the road, which was more ascending; five or six miles beyond San Martin cultivated fields disappeared and chaparral bordered the sides. After several miles the road crossed a stream having a deep bed, with a rapid current, and spanned by a massive stone bridge, called Puente Tesmolucan. The army, without encountering serious resistance, descended into the valley, and halted within a few days' march of the National Capital. The valley in which the capital is located is over 7,500 feet above the sea level. Elliptical in outline and surrounded by

Digitized by Google

mountains, its surface nearly level, with a slight declivity toward the lake Texcoco, northeast of the capital. In this valley, remarkable for fertility and abounding in fine corn, wheat and other cereals and fruits, are five lakes, San Christobal and Zumpango being the smallest, and lying in a northerly direction; Texcoco, the largest, in the eastern; Chalco in the southeast, and Xochimilco in the south, a little east of south. It had occurred, at long intervals, that these lakes filled during the rainy season, and swollen by floods, shed from the surrounding mountains, have overflowed, the waters inundating even the capital itself; and, even when this does not happen, there is always, during the winter months, a large portion of the valley submerged, rendering high causeways, bordered by deep ditches, indispensable to approach the city. As Scott's Army approached from the East it was confronted by Peñon, an immense hill of volcanic lava, seven miles from the entrance to the city by the causeway. This hill, over 300 feet high, well fortified, commanded all the approaches to the causeway directly at its base. The water of Texcoco reached the causeway on the north side, and on the south the surface was inundated. Careful reconnaissances were made on the 12th and 13th by the American engineers, who reported that El Peñon could be taken, but at a great and disproportionate loss. General Scott accordingly decided to turn the strong eastern defence of the city by passing around the south of Lake Chalco and Xochimilco, at the foot of the hills and mountains, thereby maneuvering on hard ground, though much broken, to the south and southwest of the capital, which had been, more or less, under the view of the army since August 10th. Accordingly, by sudden inversion, Worth's Division, with Harney's Cavalry Brigade leading, the army took up the march on the 15th; Pillow's and Quitman's Divisions followed closely, and then Twiggs' Division, which was left until the next day, at Ayotla, in order to threaten the Peñon and Mexicalcingo, and deceive the enemy as long as practicable. In the march around Lake Chalco, Worth's Division bivouacked at a small village, Tetelco; Pillow's a short distance in rear at Chimalpa; Quitman's at Chalco, while Twiggs' remained still at Ayotla. On this route to the city was situated the pedregal, which is a field of volcanic rocks of very uneven surface. It was between the roads leading to the capital from San Augustin and Padierna. The reconnaissance of the pedregal was made by Captain Robert E. Lee, and Lieutenant Pierre G. T. Beauregard, who reported that there was a passage for wagons of only a mile, and that the remainder might be crossed by infantry carefully picking the way. The march was resumed on the 16th by all four divisions, Pillow's halting for the night at Tulancingo. The march was again resumed

Digitized by Google

on the 17th, Pillow's Division bivouacking at Xochimilco, four miles in rear of San Augustin.

San Augustin, known at the time of the Spanish conquest by the name of Tlalpam, became the depot, and may be regarded for the time as the base of the American Army. Situated at the foot of the mountains, twelve miles south of the city, it is sufficiently elevated above the level of the valleys to be above inundation, and is a healthy and pleasant residence. A fashionable resort, often the scene of social gayeties, it was crowded to excess the afternoon of the 17th of August, many wealthy and fashionable families from the city being of the number. They had gone there not for recreation only, but to escape from the scene of strife; and, unfortunately, suddenly found themselves in the midst of the invaders. Santa Anna and his Generals were greatly disappointed in not being attacked at the Peñon, and after ascertaining that Scott had commenced a turning movement around the lake, the Mexican forces were hastily marched to occupy the positions at San Angel, Churubusco, San Antonio, and Coyoacan. The several points now held by Santa Anna lay contiguous, and were connected with good roads by means of which his troops could act both promptly and advantageously.

THE BATTLE OF CONTRERAS, CALLED BY THE MEXICANS "THE BATTLE OF PADIERNA"

General Scott, on the night of the 18th, ordered a movement in the direction of Padierna; Worth's Division was directed to cover San Antonio; Quitman to hold San Augustin, and Pillow to march over the pedregal, while Twiggs was to cover and support Pillow's movement. Between twelve and one o'clock, the Mexican Colonel Barrierro, who had been dispatched to Zacatepetl to observe and report the movements of the Americans, reported to Santa Anna that the Americans were moving over the mountains, and Zacatepetl and the pedregal, the former being crossed by Twiggs' Division, the latter by Pillow's Division. A working party of five hundred men, under engineer officers, was detailed from Pillow's Division to make the road to Padierna practicable for artillery. Before the road was half finished Twiggs' Division passed Pillow's command, and its advance was fired upon by the Mexicans, General Pillow having received orders to push the work on the road as far as practicable without engaging the enemy, and in the event of the action becoming serious, Pillow was to support Twiggs with his whole division. When a portion of Twiggs' Division had reached the village of San Geronimo, a large force of the enemy came in sight. Pierce's Brigade was at once ordered to the front and was met by a heavy fire. General Pierce hav-

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

ing been disabled, Colonel T. B. Ransom, of the Ninth Infantry, was in command of the forces, which were conducted by Lieutenant Stevens, and moved to the right and front of Magruder's Battery. Ransom, uniting with the detachments from Twiggs' Division, took possession of Padierna, driving the Mexican General Mendoza. This advance of Ransom's was to divert the attention of Valencia from the brigades already over the pedregal, and near San Geronimo. After dark Colonel Ransom fell back from Padierna to Magruder's Battery, leaving there a few men of his brigade. It rained all night on the 19th, and the men lay in mud without fires. At three in the morning, the 20th of August, word was passed to march. At about this time Generals Smith's, Cadwallader's, and Riley's Brigades began the move, with the object of attaching Valencia in rear. It was so dark that every man had to touch his front file as he marched. The soldiers groped their way, stumbling over stones and brushwood, and did not gain the rear of the camp until daybreak. With the first ray of daylight, the firing had recommenced between the Mexican camp and Ransom's men, stationed in front, and Shields' Brigade at San Geronimo. Almost the same moment Riley began to ascend the heights in rear. The advance of Riley's, Smith's and Cadwallader's Brigades, over the last eight hundred yards, from the time they were discovered by the Mexicans, was made with a rush, driving the enemy from his guns, leaping into his camp and slaughtering all before them. The Mexicans were driven from their camp after a fight of only a quarter of an hour; and as they rushed down a ravine their own cavalry ran ever them, trampling down more men than the bayonets and balls had laid low. On the right, as they fled, Cadwallader's Brigade poured in a destructive volley; and Shields, throwing his troops across the road, obstructed their retreat and compelled the fugitives to yield themselves as prisoners of war. The only fight of any moment had taken place within the camp. There, for a few minutes, the Mexicans had fought desperately. To the exquisite delight of the assailants the first prize of victory was the guns O'Brien had abandoned at Buena Vista, which were regained by his own regiment. Twenty other guns and over one thousand prisoners, including eighty-eight officers, and four Generals, were likewise captured, and some fifteen hundred Mexicans killed and wounded. The American loss in killed, wounded, and missing, was about 100 men. General Smith's operations were assisted very materially by the diversion made on the pedregal in front of Valencia's Division. Early in the morning the Ninth Infantry, Colonel Ransom; four companies of the Twelfth Infantry, Major Wood; three companies of the Third Infantry, Captain Craig; a detachment of the Mounted Rifles

Digitized by Google

under Captain Sanderson, advanced, and two batteries on that part of the field opened fire, one under Captain Magruder, First Artillery, and the mountain howitzers, under Lieutenant Reno, of the ordnance, the commander, Lieutenant Callender, having been wounded the afternoon of the 19th. These troops displayed on the pedregal were the first to attract Valencia's attention, while General Smith's troops were getting into position, and, when he advanced, Ransom moved forward, and became warmly engaged, and not being restricted to making a mere diversion, contributed greatly to Valencia's defeat. The number of troops engaged were only about 4,500 rank and file on the American side, while the enemy had actually engaged on the spot 7,000, with at least 12,000 more hovering within sight and within striking distance, both on the 19th and the 20th.

BATTLE OF CHURUBUSCO

Leaving a detail to guard prisoners and captured property, pursuit of the panic-stricken enemy was ordered, Smith's Brigade leading with the Mounted Rifles and Engineer Company at its head. Near a large building between the battlefield and San Angel a few shots were exchanged with the Mexicans, who retreated with but little firing, the town being quickly abandoned. General Pillow joined these forces at San Angel and assumed command. At Coyoacan General Scott joined, having previously ordered his columns to halt there, and as he rode along, passing the different regiments and brigades, was cheered enthusiastically by the soldiers. Churubusco was over a mile in front of Coyoacan, two miles southeast of San Antonio, the former on the road to San Angel, the latter on that to San Augustin, each leading by Churubusco to the City, and a good wagon road connected Coyoacan and San Antonio. Churubusco is the name of a small village on the southern causeway, lying on a slightly elevated ground.

A central feature was the massive stone convent of San Pablo, nearly square, with crenelated walls for musketry and unfinished parapets, surrounded by an outer wall which constituted a regular field work, with embrasures and platforms for cannon, and especially strong towards the south. It was held by General Rincon with about 1,400 men and seven guns. Santa Anna, with his main army, sought refuge across the river, deploying a portion to the left and the rest behind the artificially elevated bank, which, with their rows of maguey, offered an excellent rampart. At the bridge, by which the highway crosses the river, was a scientifically constructed work, well bastioned and curtained with wet ditches, and platforms for heavy guns; but the line in

Digitized by Google

front was obstructed by the stalled trains, which served the enemy for a screen. The total strength of the defenders, at and behind Churubusco, was estimated at from 9,000 to 27,000. The American force engaged, at about 8,000. Santa Anna's plan was to let the enemy exhaust themselves by butting against the outworks of the capital. The victory of Padierna (or Contreras) had opened the way toward Tacubaya and to several intermediate roads unprotected by outworks and with weak inner defences. Scott was sufficiently well informed of this to avoid the isolated outworks of Churubusco, so far from the capital, especially as he did not need or intend to use the road which it protected. The acquisition of Churubusco was valueless, and the expenditure of time and blood upon it a waste. The task of engaging and carrying the convent was assigned to Twiggs' Division. Worth was left to pursue his advance along the southern road leading to the river line, defended by the main army, while General Pierce's and Shields' Brigades were directed against the forces behind the Churubusco River, in front and rear; this latter movement was the main effort of Scott, and its object was to turn the right flank of the enemy's reserve, but it was not undertaken with sufficient force, as it was confronted by the flower of the Mexican Army, of about 4,000 infantry, supported by 3,000 cavalry, with the advantage of position. Santa Anna responded, moreover, by a prompt counteradvance, directing the cavalry to outflank the Americans and compelling them to change the maneuver to a more direct attack. This broke against the firm lines of the Mexicans, who sent the columns back staggering in great disorder. They quickly formed anew, however, to charge again and again. But in vain; their opponents repulsed every effort and inflicted terrible havoc with their steady fire. Morgan, of the Fifteenth Infantry, fell, wounded.

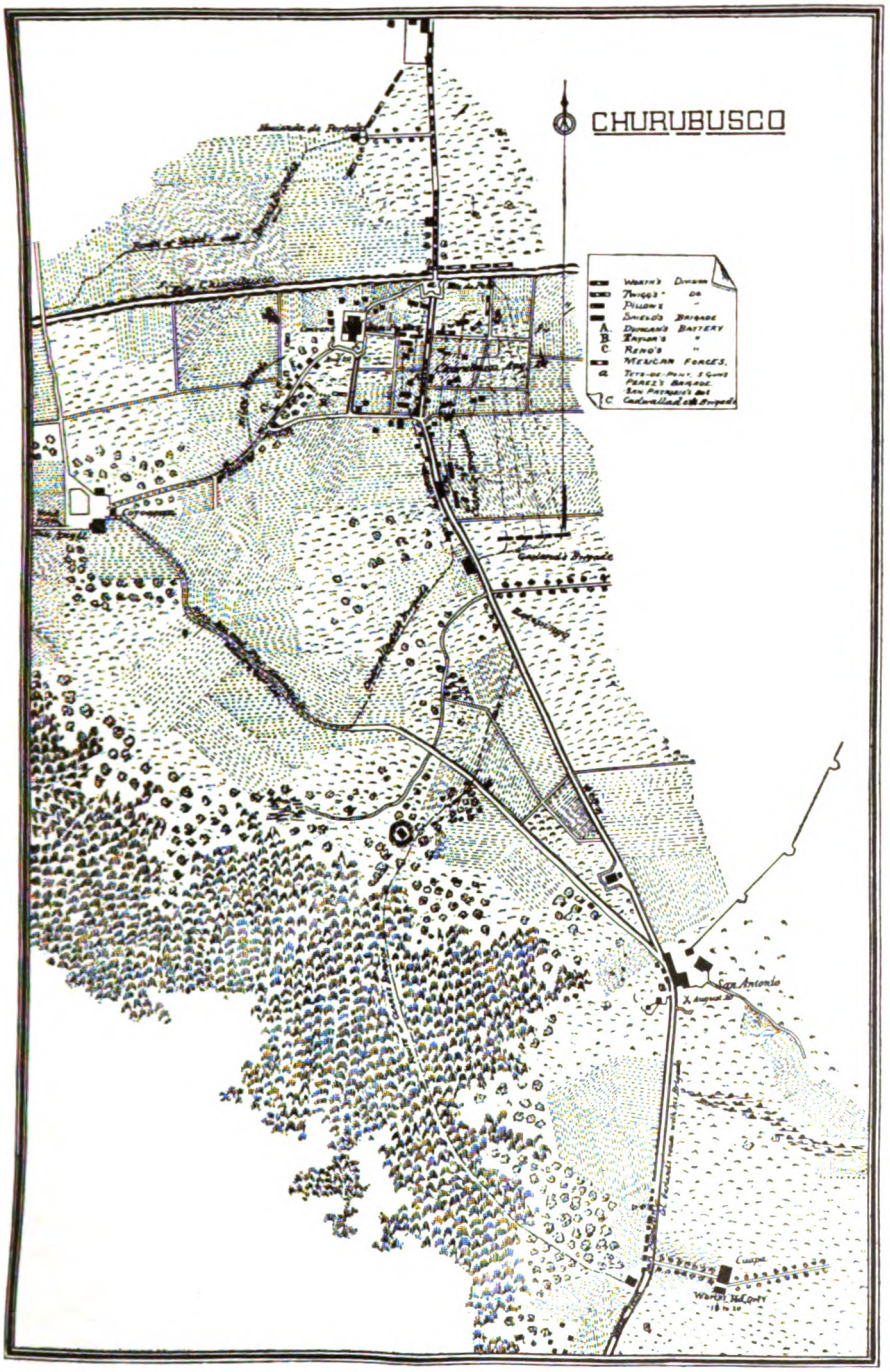
The New York Regiment suffered fearfully, and their leader, Colonel Burnett, was disabled. The palmettos of South Carolina, and the Ninth Infantry under Ransom, were as severely cut up, and after a while all sought shelter in and about a large barn near the causeway. From this point Shields called on volunteers for a last forlorn charge. They charged — not 400 in all — over the plain, down upon 4,000 Mexicans, securely posted under cover; at every step their ranks were thinned. Nearly half of this small band were prostrate. A few minutes more there would be no one left to bear the glorious flag, but at this very moment a deafening roar was heard in the direction of the bridge defences in front. Round shot and grape, rifle-balls and canister, came crashing down the causeway into the Mexican ranks, from their own battery. The capture of the "tête-de-pont" had been made by Worth's

Digitized by Google

two brigades, assisted by Pillow's remaining Brigade, under Cadwallader. The heaviest losses apparently being borne by the 4th, 5th, and 8th regiments of infantry, their movements on the "tête-de-pont" being over ditches filled with water and through fields of full-grown corn, regiments and companies became intermingled and much scattered. A slight reforming was made near the "tête-de-pont" when with a dash it was carried. Before Shields reached the causeway Worth's men had joined him, driving the Mexican horse into their infantry.

All along the causeway, and in the fields and swamp on either side, heaps of dead men and cattle, intermingled with broken ammunition carts, marked where the Americans shots had told. A gory track leading to the "tête-de-pont," groups of dead in the field to the left of Churubusco, over whose pale faces some stalks of scattered corn still waved, red blotches in the marsh next to the causeway, where the rich blood of soldiers of the Ninth Infantry and other regiments soaked the earth, showed where the fire of the heavy Mexican guns and thousands of infantry rifles had been most murderous. During this action of Shields, the Ninth Infantry, accompanied by a mountain howitzer battery, joined in the battle; the latter in position on the right of the Hacienda, threw spherical grape shot and cannister into the Mexican ranks formed on the road, the Ninth Infantry on the left, and the 12th and 15th on the right of the volunteers. The above-mentioned regiments, the South Carolinas, the New York, the Twelfth and Fifteenth Infantry on the right, and the Ninth Infantry on the left, joined in the pursuit on the turnpike toward the city, then in full view, and less than three miles distant. The "tête-de-pont" and convent had been carried, and the enemy was in flight from points along the main highway before Shields' men gained the road. The pursuit was continued to within two miles of the city. In the battle of Churubusco, among the many prisoners captured, was the San Patricio Battalion, composed of Irish deserters who sought in religious sympathy an excuse for becoming traitors. They were tried by a General Court Martial and sentenced to death, all but sixteen being executed. Many officers of various regiments are mentioned in the various reports for displaying great coolness and courage. Of the Ninth Infantry, Major Thomas H. Seymour (later Governor of Connecticut and Minister to Russia) was commended for great activity, skill and valor, by Colonel T. B. Ransom, who also complimented the Adjutant, Lieutenant C. J. Sprague, and Captains Bodfish, Kimball, Thompson, and Wood, the latter commanding a battalion of the Twelfth Infantry, and Lieutenants W. A. Newman and A. T. Palmer, both of whom were wounded. The battles of Contreras and

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Churubusco were fought on the same day, and were really one battle. General Scott states in his report "It has in a single day in many battles as often defeated 32,000 men, made about 3,000 prisoners, including eight generals, two of them ex-presidents, and 205 other officers killed and wounded, 4,000 of all ranks, beside the entire corps dispersed and dissolved; captured 37 pieces of ordnance, more than trebling our siege-train and field batteries, with a large number of small arms, and supplies of ammunition of every kind. These great results have overwhelmed the enemy. Our loss amounts to 1,053; 139, including 16 officers, were killed; 876, with sixty officers were wounded."

General Scott could easily have occupied the Mexican capital the same day, but, meanwhile, Mr. Nicholas P. Trist had arrived from Washington with instructions from the President to endeavor to make a treaty of peace, and both he and General Scott thought it best to await the turn of events, looking to that end. Commissioners were appointed on both sides in an attempt to settle the differences between the two republics. No progress having been made in their negotiations, Scott threatened to terminate the armistice on the 7th, principally on account of alleged violations of it by the Mexicans. At this time Worth's Division was bivouacked at Tacubaya, with Scott's headquarters there at the Bishop's Palace. Quitman's Division and Shields' Brigade at San Augustin. Twiggs' Division was quartered at San Angel, and Pillow's at Mixcoac. The armistice having been broken off, General Scott, on the afternoon of September 7th, issued the necessary orders for massing and disposing of his army. General Scott had determined to capture Molinos-del-Rey, the Mills of the King, under the impression that it contained a large quantity of powder and stores. This was assigned to Worth's Division, with Major Wright, Eighth Infantry designated to lead the forlorn hope and assault on the batteries, with a storming party of 500 men. Here 11 out of the 14 officers of Wright's party, and the bulk of his men, fell, killed or wounded. All of the latter who did not fly were bayoneted where they lay, by the Mexicans. Meanwhile the attacks on both flanks was progressing. There was no further halt, however. The remnants of the storming party gained the battery. A brief struggle, hand to hand, and the guns were seized, only to be recaptured in a short time by the Mexicans. Another charge by the Americans from the center and right resulted in the second capture of the disputed battery and now its deadly fire was turned upon the Mill. The attack had been similarly progressing successfully in other points. By this time the Mill had fallen. General Pillow, who on noticing that the battle had become serious, hastened to the relief before Scott had sent him orders.

Digitized by Google

Worth, after making a successful attack, had no alternative save to pick up his dead and wounded and fall back on Tacubaya in face of flaunting demonstrations from the Mexicans to whom he thus abandoned the field, and under the boom of the castle artillery, which sounded like the trumpet blast of victory. Indeed, Santa Anna assumed, and not without reason, that the objective point of the Americans was the fortress of Chapultepec and that his opportune arrival frustrated their plans and compelled them to retreat.

BATTLE OF CHAPULTEPEC

The end was now close at hand. Reconnaissances were carefully made, and the enemy's strength being gathered on the southern front of the city, behind newly constructed defenses, General Scott determined to assault Chapultepec on the west. Chapultepec, fortified by nature and art, is a picturesque mound, rising about 150 feet above the valley, and famed far back in dim tradition of Aztec migration, and later consecrated to royalty. The hill is nearly precipitous on the northern, eastern, and part of the southern sides, and declines gradually to the west to a cypress grove separating it from Molinos-del-Rey. On top of this mound or rock was a large building known as the Military School, where many cadets were quartered at the time. Grounds were enclosed by a wall. The Molinos-del-Rey building, previously captured by Scott, bounded it on the west and from these mills south to the main road from Tacubaya to the city, the wall was three-fourths of a mile long, twelve or fifteen feet high, though only of ordinary thickness, and it was not intended to be proof against cannon shot. The slopes were, moreover, provided with walls, and, on the west, with ditches, mines, and a midway redan. The castle was built of heavy stone masonry, the whole fortress being about nine hundred feet in length, one hundred feet in height, and presenting a splendid specimen of military architecture. The works were thoroughly armed and the garrison, among whom were some expert French gunners, was commanded by General Bravo. The whole hill was spotted with forts and outworks. To carry this strong post with the least loss of men Scott determined to batter it with heavy cannon. Accordingly, on the night of September 11th, four batteries of heavy cannon were erected on a hill between Tacubaya and Chapultepec.

On the morning of the 12th these batteries opened fire, every ball crashing through the castle and every shell tearing up the ramparts. The fire of the Mexicans was not less severe and this duel of great guns was kept up all day, and at night preparations were made for the assault

Digitized by Google

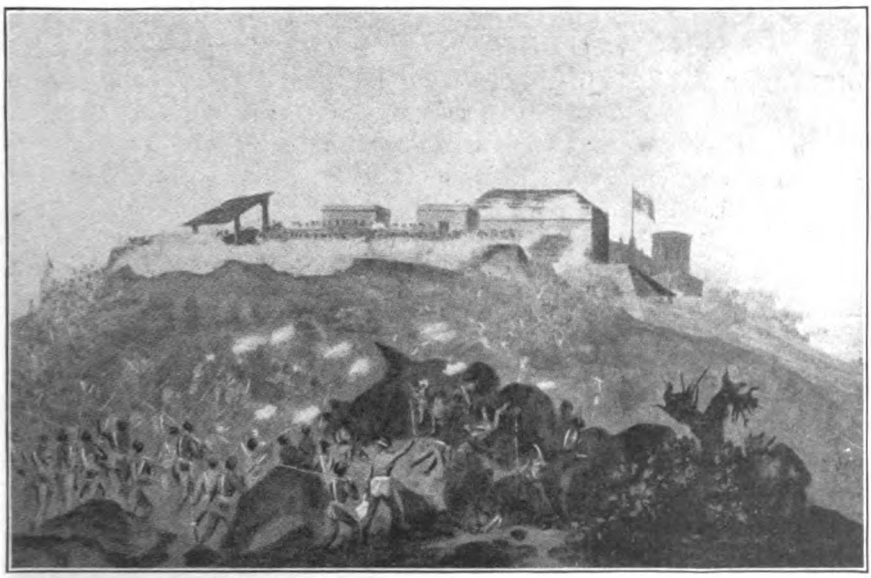
which was ordered to be made the next morning. At daybreak, on the 13th, the cannonnade recommenced, as well from the batteries planted against Chapultepec, as from Steptoe's guns, which were turned against the southern defenses of the city in order to divert the attention of the enemy. At 8 a. m. the firing from the former ceased and the attack commenced. Quitman advanced along the Tacubaya road, making a demonstration along the easterly part, while Pillow, from the Molinos-del-Rey, which he had occupied on the evening before, marched to assail the works on the west side. Both columns were preceded by a strong storming party furnished with scaling ladders. While the troops were advancing, the American Batteries kept up a continuous fire, over their heads, upon the works, to prevent reinforcements reaching the Mexicans. Pillow's column bore the brunt of the battle. It first carried a redoubt, and drove the Mexicans from shelter to shelter. Between the Molinos castle lay first an open space, then a grove thickly planted with trees; in the latter, Mexican sharpshooters had been posted, protected by an intrenchment on the border of the grove. Pillow sent a party of Voltigeurs to turn this works by a flank movement.

It was handsomely accomplished, and just as the Voltigeurs broke through the redan, Pillow, with the main body, charged it in front, and drove back the Mexicans. The grove gained, Pillow pressed forward to the foot of the rock, while the Mexican shot from the castle batteries, crashing through the trees, seemed even more terrible than it was, and the troops were becoming restless.

The Mexicans had retreated to a redoubt half way up the hill, being followed by the attacking parties of infantry, firing as they advanced. In a very few minutes the redoubt was gained, the garrison driven up the hill, and the Ninth Infantry, Fifteenth Infantry and the Voltigeurs in hot pursuit after them. Here, firing from the castle was very severe, Colonel Ransom, of the Ninth Infantry, was killed, and Pillow himself was wounded. Still the troops pressed on until the crest of the hill was gained. There some moments were lost owing to the delay in arrival of scaling ladders, during which two of Quitman's regiments, and Clark's Brigade reinforced the storming party. When the ladders came, numbers of men rushed forward with them, leaped into the ditch and planted them for the assault. But the Mexicans collected all their energy for this last moment. A tremendous fire dashed the foremost of the stormers in the ditch, killing Lieutenants Rogers and Smith, and clearing the ladders. Fresh men instantly manned them and gained a foothold on the parapet; a crowd of voltigeurs and infantry, shouting and cheering, pressed after their leaders, and swept down upon

Digitized by Google

the garrison with their bayonets. Maddened by the recollection of the murder of their wounded comrades at Molinos-del-Rey, the stormers at first showed no quarter. On every side the Mexicans were stabbed or shot down without mercy. Many flung themselves over the parapet and down the hillside, and were dashed to pieces against the rocks. Streams of blood flowed through the doors of the college, and every room and passage was a theatre of some deadly struggle.



Storming of Chapultepec. Pillow's Attack, September 13, 1847.

At length the officers succeeded in putting an end to the carnage, and the remaining Mexicans having surrendered, the Stars and Stripes were hoisted over the castle of Chapultepec by Major Seymour, Ninth Infantry. General Cadwallader states in his report that "The Mexican flag which floated over the fortress, and which had been three times shot down by our artillery, was lowered and handed to me by Major Thomas H. Seymour, of the Ninth Infantry . . . ." There were but 800 men in Chapultepec, while supporting it on the outside of the castle were about 5,000 Mexican soldiers, infantry and artillery; their cavalry present was between 4,000 and 5,000, giving an aggregate of at least 9,000 in the engagement. All of the American army, except Riley's Brigade, Steptoe's battery, and the garrison at Mixcoac, were engaged in the operations against Chapultepec and adjacent works. Deducting the

Digitized by Google

sick, and the necessary details would leave about 7,500 men employed by Scott in the assault and capture of this stronghold, which guarded so effectually all approaches to the capital from the west.

Bravo surrendered, together with four Generals and 100 other officers, a total number of prisoners captured on and around the hill of about 800. Pillow's loss for the whole day is given at 143. At one o'clock that night two parties left the citadel, and issued forth from the city. One was the remnant of the Mexican Army, which slunk silently and noiselessly through the northern gate, and fled to Guadeloupe Hidalgo; the other was a body of officers, who came under a white flag to propose terms of capitulation. Scott declined to bind himself to any terms except such as were imposed by honor and customary usages, and Worth hastened to affirm possession by advancing at dawn to the Alameda, while Quitman, after receiving a white flag from the citadel, and occupying it, marched to the central square and hoisted over the palace the Stars and Stripes, the first foreign colors to flaunt within Anáhuac's capital since Cortés planted his banner upon the ruins of Tenochtitlan. General Quitman was appointed Civil and Military Governor of the City of Mexico. Scott made his entry during the forenoon, at the head of a brilliant suite and an imposing force, midst a dense gathering of spectators who lined the streets and Azoteas and filled the balconies, in some of which were white flags and foreign colors, in protestation of peace and protection. Considerable sniping and firing occurred throughout the city for several days, but this was soon put down by General Scott. Under these instructions many houses were entered and armed bands killed or captured. Musketry and artillery were heard in many directions, and quite heavily at times during that and the next day, but finally ceased, order being entirely restored on the 16th. For several days after the 15th, a number of soldiers were assassinated during the night and their bodies brought to the Ayuntamiento building; at one time nine dead bodies were exposed, all of whom had been killed the night before, and, in general, the knife had been the instrument of death.

After the fall of the capital, Scott republished, on the 17th of September, with important additions, his orders of February 19th, declaring martial law. The next day he prescribed the distribution and quartering of the troops in the city. Soon after the Commanding General had completed his study of the revenue system he prepared an order fixing the amount of direct taxes, and the duties to be collected on the precious metals. This order was promulgated on the 31st of December, 1847, and the first step toward its execution was to despatch Colonel Withers, with the Ninth Infantry, to Pachuca, a mining town of great importance,

Digitized by Google

some 60 miles to the northeast; the next was the stationing of Cadwallader's Brigade at Toluca; a few weeks later a detachment was sent to Cuernavaca. Later Riley's Brigade was stationed at Tacubaya, Patterson's Division at San Angel, and a portion of Butler's at Molinos-del-Rey.

Considerable annoyance was caused by various guerilla parties. The United States military authorities finally adopted stringent measures to check depredations, and even shot a number who had violated their parole. After protracted negotiations by commissioners, a Treaty of Peace was officially announced by Minister La Rosa on the 6th of February, and later confirmed by the United States Senate. The United States Commissioners, on the 19th of June, officially notified the Secretary of State that the treaty was complete, and president Polk, two years and two months from the commencement of the war, issued his proclamation to the people, announcing that peace now reigned between the United States and Mexico. The preparations for the departure of the United States troops had begun about the middle of May, and on the exchange of ratifications of the Treaty of Peace being published by the General-in-Chief, the detachments at Toluca, Cuernavaca and Pachuca were retired. Patterson's Division left Mexico for Vera Cruz on the 30th of May; the other divisions departed in the first days of June, and, on the 12th of that month, the United States guards were relieved by Mexican troops, the United States flag was hauled down, and the Mexican hoisted upon the National palace and saluted by the artillery of both armies.

June 8, 1848, General Orders No. 2 were issued from the War Department, directing the Quartermaster's Department to take measures for the transportation of the volunteer regiments, battalions and companies, to points as near their homes as circumstances and the conveniences of the service would permit, the volunteers being the first to sail from Vera Cruz.

The *new* ten regiments — regulars — were to follow the volunteers; to be duly mustered, inspected, and the enlisted men paid and discharged as follows: the Third Dragoons at Jefferson Barracks; the Ninth Infantry at Fort Adams; the Tenth and Eleventh at Fort Hamilton; the Twelfth and Fourteenth at New Orleans; the Thirteenth at Mobile; the Fifteenth at Cincinnati; the Sixteenth at Newport Barracks, and the Voltigeurs at Fort McHenry.

Digitized by Google

The *old* regiments — permanent or regular army—were the first to cross the Rio Grande, and the last to sail from Vera Cruz. The following officers of the Ninth Infantry received brevets during this war:

Major Folliot T. Lally, Brevet Lieutenant Colonel, Paso Ovéjas, National Bridge, and Cerro Gordo.

Major Thomas H. Seymour, Brevet Colonel, Chapultepec.

Captain Charles M. Bodfish, Brevet Major, Contreras and Churubusco.

Captain Edgar T. Kimball, Brevet Major, Contreras and Churubusco.

Captain Theodore F. Rowe, Brevet Major, Puebla.

Captain Nathaniel S. Webb, Brevet Major, Chapultepec.

First Lieutenant George Bowers, Brevet Captain, Contreras and Churubusco.

First Lieutenant John H. Jackson, Brevet Captain, Contreras and Churubusco.

First Lieutenant Alexander Morrow, Brevet Captain, Chapultepec.

First Lieutenant John H. Slocum, Brevet Captain, Churubusco.

First Lieutenant Charles J. Sprague, Brevet Captain, Contreras and Churubusco.

First Lieutenant Albert Tracy, Brevet Captain, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant Thomas H. Crosby, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant Richard C. Drum, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant John Glackin, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant John M. Hatheway, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant William A. Newman, Brevet First Lieutenant, Contreras and Churubusco.

Second Lieutenant Alpheus T. Palmer, Brevet First Lieutenant, Contreras and Churubusco.

Second Lieutenant Thomas P. Pierce, Brevet First Lieutenant, Contreras and Churubusco.

Second Lieutenant Asa A. Stoddard, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

Second Lieutenant Levi Woodhouse, Brevet First Lieutenant, Chapultepec.

The following were among the casualties during the war:

Killed at Chapultepec, September 13, 1847, Colonel Truman B. Ransom, Ninth Infantry.

Wounded, First Lieutenant Charles J. Sprague, Ninth Infantry.

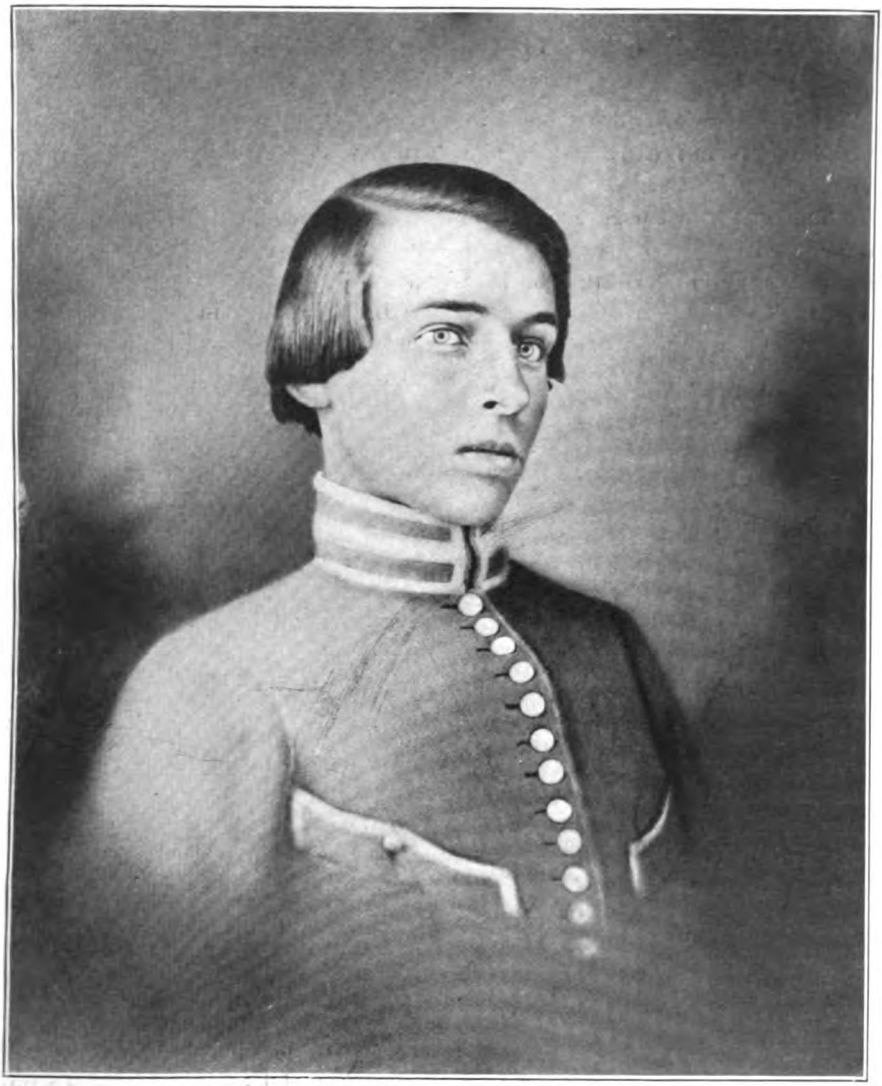
Wounded at Jalapa, Mexico, August 19, 1847, Major Folliot T. Lally, Ninth Infantry.

Wounded at Churubusco, August 20, 1847, Captain Lorenzo Johnson, Ninth Infantry; Second Lieutenant Daniel H. Cram, Ninth Infantry; Second Lieutenant William A. Newman, Ninth Infantry; Second Lieutenant Alpheus T. Palmer, Ninth Infantry.

Sixteen officers and eleven enlisted men of the regiment were mentioned by name in the report of Major General Pillow for meritorious conduct in the Battle of Chapultepec, among the former being General R. C. Drum, — now living on the retired list, — then a second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

In August, 1848, the Regiment was disbanded.

Digitized by Google



Nelson Viall, born in Connecticut. Appointed from Rhode Island; Captain Second Rhode Island Infantry, June 5, 1861; Major July 22, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel July 12, 1862; Colonel December 13, 1862; resigned January 25, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, Eleventh United States Coast Artillery, January 15, 1864; Brevet Colonel, and Brigadier-General volunteers, March 13, 1865, for faithful service during the war; honorably mustered out October 2, 1865.

Digitized by Google

RECOLLECTIONS OF THE MEXICAN WAR BY GENERAL NELSON VIALL

It was my fortune to be a member of the "Providence Artillery" of Rhode Island (now called the "United Train of Artillery") in the year 1846.

The writer of these recollections was then a strong, healthy, and well developed boy of 19; having been born in November, 1827. From my earliest boyhood I think I had an instinctive fondness for busy, lively, and exciting scenes; hence, naturally, I became a soldier.

These memories and incidents were jotted down without order or system, as they presented themselves to my boyish mind. I have also trusted somewhat to my memory, which was retentive in those far off and happy days. Doubtless I have made mistakes of minor importance, but few, I trust, as to matters of fact. Of one thing I am very positive; nothing whatever has been wilfully written which could wound the feelings of any.

There are but few now left who began the journey of life with me. Any of this number who still sojourn in our midst may find something in these unpretentious pages, familiar to their remembrances; and, possibly something which may revive the memory of some youthful incident, and of persons long forgotten.

Congress declared war against Mexico on May 13, 1846, and volunteers in large numbers enlisted to fight against her. About this period the movement of General Taylor, or "Old Rough and Ready," as his men called him, from Corpus Christi to the relief of Fort Brown on the Rio Grande river, was the theme of general conversation throughout the state. Meetings were called by the commanders of the various military companies, after the battles of "Palo Alto" and "Resaca-de-la-Palma," for the purpose of offering their services to the government.

The act passed by Congress to increase the strength of the army by adding ten additional regiments to be enlisted for the war, defined the "quota" of Rhode Island to be one company of infantry. Now there were four companies in process of organization at this time, but only one could be mustered into service.

In January, 1847, the Legislature of Rhode Island made an appropriation of $2,500.00 for volunteers for the Mexican War. To Captain Joseph S. Pitman and Lieutenant John S. Slocum was assigned the duty of preparing the company intended for the field. The Second-Lieutenancy was subsequently filled by the appointment of John Glackin of Woonsocket, R. I. George W. Guild was appointed First Sergeant.

Digitized by Google

Frequent changes were made in the "non-commissioned" officers as their various qualifications developed. The following is the "roster" after entering the valley of Mexico.

SERGEANTS

First, William H. White, Newport, R. I.
Second, John Viall, Providence, R. I.
Third, Albion C. Libby, Maine.
Fourth, Alpheus W. Randall, Providence, R. I.
Fifth, James E. Powell, Texas.

CORPORALS

First, Nelson Viall, Providence, R. I.
Second, George W. Guild, Providence, R. I.
Third, David K. Richmond, Providence, R. I.
Fourth, Henry Williams, Providence R. I.

MUSICIAN

George W. King, Johnston, R. I.

Early in the spring of 1847, our company took passage on the sloop from Providence to Fort Adams, Newport, R. I., where it was perfected in drill. Up to this time no other company of the "New England" regiment, to which we were to be attached, had been organized. Finally orders were received for us to proceed to Fort Columbus, New York harbor.

We returned to Providence and took the old "Stonington" route for New York. At Stonington we were delayed until next day, a heavy gale of wind preventing the steamer from leaving the dock. However, an incident occurred early in the evening which made the delay more tolerable.

It was discovered at "roll call" that one of our boys, Private F, was absent. After a diligent search he was found among the steerage passengers in very earnest conversation with a good looking woman, apparently about his own age. It seems that they had not met before in some years, but they were now evidently making up for lost time. His deep interest in the girl was the only excuse that he manfully offered for his absence from "roll call." Lieutenant Slocum was informed of the delinquency and was about to reprimand him when "F" pleaded: "Lieutenant, I am strongly attached to this lady, and at one time we were engaged to be married. Somehow we became separated, the fault was all mine, and we have not met for the past three years, until by chance I discovered her this evening among the passengers on board;

Digitized by Google

I now desire to fulfill the promise I made to her in the past, but how to do so in my present position I am at loss to know. Will you please advise me, Lieutenant, what I can do?"

Lieutenant Slocum alive to the gravity and importance of the peculiar case, conferred with Captain Pitman and it was decided by a unanimous vote that there should be a wedding, and at once. A joyous detail was sent on shore to procure a clergyman. After much delay, and during a lull in the storm, they arrived on board the steamer. The "knot" having been tied, hearty cheers and warm congratulations were extended to the happy pair; each man of the company no doubt feeling that an additional laundress in the company would be of material benefit, even in a sanitary point of view. A purse was made up to defray expenses by officers and men; a balance remaining on hand was invested in a set of jewelry for the bride. The captain of the steamer very kindly offered the bridal stateroom, into which at a late hour the gallant soldier boy and his blushing, happy wife were conducted by the joyous and merry company of "embryo warriors." Then all retired for the night amid hopes and fervent wishes that the fury of the gale would expend itself, and permit the boat to proceed on its route. The following day we arrived at Fort Columbus.

At this time the fort was garrisoned by a company of artillery of the regular army; all guard duty was performed by them.

During the evening, my first, I procured pen, ink and paper, seated myself comfortably upon the floor of the barracks and proceeded to write a letter home to the girl I left behind me, and the one, I am happy to say, who subsequently became my wife. A soap box with a candle stuck upon it formed the best means for correspondence I could devise for a desk. Being located upon the second floor, and my thoughts entirely absorbed and wholly oblivious of my surroundings, I heard nothing from below until a gruff voice from the foot of the stairs cried out, "Put out that light." My cheerful reply was "All right." Now I had just arrived at an extremely interesting point in my letter when I was again disturbed by a loud tread upon the stairs; the door was dashed open with a slam and the indignant Sergeant of the guard stood before me. "I ordered you to put out your light, did you not hear the taps?" I respectfully assured him that I had not. I had become thoroughly interested in my letter for home and everything else was in truth a blank to me. The kindly old Sergeant excused my breach of discipline; nevertheless I must say that I went to bed in the dark without concluding my letter to by best girl, and I fear with anything but the kindest of feelings for that Sergeant.

Digitized by Google

After a few days stay on Fort Columbus, our company embarked on the brig "Wilson Fuller" en route for Brazos Santiago, in Texas. Our passage was the most unpleasant one. The vessel was less than three hundred tons measurement. The men being placed in the hold, with but one hatchway for ventilation, and this had to serve also as a means of getting to and from our close quarters. This state of affairs rendered life on board this vessel quite unpleasant; as a matter of fact, we were too crowded, our company consisting of one hundred men, each and all of whom were hourly wishing for and anxiously looking forward to the completion of our voyage.

On April 28, 1847, we were heartily enjoying our freedom from the ship's hold on the sand hills of Brazos Santiago. On the 29th of April we marched to the mouth of the Rio Grande river, distance eight miles. The land on the route was low and marshy, the water brackish and unfit to drink. This is also true of the Rio Grande city, the water consumed there being taken from the river above the city and the flow of the tide, brought down the river and sold to consumers.

April 30th the company embarked on board the steamer "William McGee" for Camp Instruction, ten miles below Matamoras. Upon our arrival we were attached to the Eleventh Infantry, Colonel Ramsey commanding. Here for the first time the company was drilled in battalion movements. A more strict discipline was exacted and I began to feel that the Sergeant of the guard at Fort Columbus, New York, was not by any means the only martinet in the United States service.

By degrees the young recruits have the conceit taken out of them. It is a very necessary act and beneficial to the man. It requires time to make a soldier; old militia notions must be abandoned and the Articles of War and the army regulations must be thoroughly studied and assimilated in order to intelligibly construct or form a solid basis, upon which the very important and serious duties of the true soldier vitally depend.

The drawing together of the lines of discipline at Palo Alto caused some of our men to chafe and at last desert. Private Inman and Private Slocum on the 15th of May, left the company and were dropped from the roll. Brigadier-General Cadwallader commanded the post, which consisted of two thousand men of all arms.

During our stay we interchanged visits with the Massachusetts volunteers, commanded by Colonel Caleb Cushing, who occupied Matamoras.

On the 23rd of May we broke camp, pursuant to orders received to proceed to Vera Cruz. The Eleventh Regiment embarked on the steamer "Colonel Hunt" for Brazos Santiago, from which latter place we sailed

Digitized by Google

on the transport brig "Meteor" for Vera Cruz. A passage of seven days brought us to anchor under the lee of the castle of San Juan de Ulloa. Landing the command by means of surf boats was next in order. The troops were landed some two miles north of the city of Vera Cruz on the sandy beach, which shoaled so gradually that our boats containing, say one hundred men each, could not approach within a hundred yards of the shore when the keel would touch. A line attached to an anchor (previously thrown out) was then made fast and then the fun commenced. The surf was rolling high and swift, the men bravely jumped into the boiling surge and fiercely battled with the billows, to make the shore as best they can; many losing their footing in the struggle were rolled for yards up the beach before regaining their feet, and even then had to fly to escape the next pursuing roller.

We encamped on the beach within a short distance of the surf. While occupying this camp the men took a refreshing sea bath daily by companies, which was a great benefit as a sanitary measure.

On the morning of June 4th, at two o'clock, we struck our tents in obedience to orders from General Cadwallader, to march to the city of Puebla. Our sick were left in hospitals at Vera Cruz.

The march of nine miles to the town of Santa Fé was very fatiguing. Our bivouac for the night, and without a supply of water, was no doubt the first time many of us has been brought to a practical test, and a realizing sense of its great value to man and beast. The hot sun began to tell upon the health of the men; Captain Pitman's health was failing; he purchased a mare with a colt, some six weeks old, also an improvised saddle. The mare was of great assistance to him. There being a supply of water found, the column moved, at an early hour to Sopelota, a distance of eight miles, and where water was obtained in abundance. We encamped on the bank of a beautiful river at three o'clock P. M., and in a short time our men largely availed themselves of the privilege of a much needed bath in said river.

The Captain suffered much on this day's march from the effects of the blazing sun, and during the evening showed signs of mental derangement. He recovered, however, and moved with the column the following day. As we approached "Puente National" or the "National bridge," some thirty miles from Vera Cruz, the enemy's pickets of "lancers" were observed falling back, but closely watching our movements. As the advance of two companies of the U. S. Dragoons approached within range the Mexicans opened a sharp fire and retired to the naturally fortified heights commanding the bridge on both sides of the river.

Our mountain howitzer battery opened fire upon the enemy while

Digitized by Google

Colonel Ramsey directed a company of the Eleventh Infantry to cross the bridge and attack the heights. Captain Pitman and Lieutenant Slocum both urged the Colonel to send the R. I. Company on this duty. This he consented to do. Captain Joseph Hooker — "Fighting Joe Hooker," as his men in later years called him — of General Cadwallader's staff, charged across the bridge with the R. I. Company. We met with the barricade in the center of the bridge, which impeded our progress some moments. The company was now under fire for the first time, and its behaviour was excellent. Clearing the barricade, we crossed the bridge and charged the enemy's works on the heights. Captain Hooker followed with us until the steep hill and broken ground prevented his horse from advancing farther. Captain Pitman bravely led his company up the heights. At this time it had become quite dark; our fire had been reserved until we had nearly gained the summit, when the captain gave the command to charge battalion. Our men dashed forward and with a cheer gained the enemy's position, only to find they had fled. The Mexicans being well mounted, could keep up their fire until we were near to them, when they disappeared in the wooded country to the rear. We followed into the woods some distance, when a halt was made. On comparing notes as to our position, quite a difference of opinion existed as to the true course back to the old fort lately occupied by the enemy.

Lieutenant Slocum, having located the north star, we were soon out of the thicket, regaling ourselves on the provisions which the Mexicans were forced to leave in their hurried retreat. Cheer upon cheer was answered by the troops now crossing the bridge and occupying the town. This was done under fire of the enemy, who had not been dislodged from the fort approaching the bridge. They were, or seemed to be, very much demoralized by the fire from our howitzer battery. Our train was a large one, containing specie and clothing; this was pushed forward into "Park" as rapidly as possible. As morning approached, the enemy left the fort and retreated from view. At daylight the dead were buried and some thirty of our wounded were sent under escort of dragoons to Vera Cruz. This caused a delay of two days when we resumed our march for Puebla.

The enemy was posted in a very strong position a few miles above the National Bridge and opened a rather brisk fire upon the train as it approached. Their position being concealed, they were enabled to inflict much damage upon us. Many wagons of the train were abandoned, in consequence of all the animals attached to them having been killed. Our casualties here were not as heavy as at the bridge. Our company

Digitized by Google

had two wounded. Private Lines, whom Captain Pitman had detailed to lead his mustang, received a wound in the hand, which tore the back portion away and permanently disabled him.

After a sharp encounter with the Mexicans they were driven from their position. Our dead were hurriedly buried beside the road, the train closed up, the abandoned wagons fired, and the march resumed at once.

Our Captain Pitman had undergone a severe strain, his mind was badly affected and much of the time he was unfit for duty. On Lieutenant John S. Slocum devolved the command of the company during the frequent attacks of the Captain's malady. Slocum was a born soldier, loved by all who knew him, a strict disciplinarian, but blessed with the tact to exact perfect obedience without incurring a feeling of opposition. General Cadwallader became convinced that this mounted force of the enemy would occupy every pass and mountain top on our route to Puebla. The train extended for miles on the road, with a guard of four men to each wagon and was doubled up as far as practicable.

Upon our arrival at "Puente del Reys" or "Kings Bridge" we found that the enemy had taken a strong position. It was here determined to reduce the train, in consequence of the number of animals killed and broken down, thus enabling us to repel or make an attack more successfully. Large quantities of clothing were placed in the thatched roofs of houses and burned. "Kings Bridge" is a fine structure of eight arches each of forty feet span and built of stone. One of these arches the enemy subsequently destroyed, but "Yankee" ingenuity leveled the river bed, thus causing a uniform flow of water of about two feet in depth over the roadbed of stone. This was used by the natives after our army had evacuated the country, while the bridge with the broken arch stood as a monument of Mexican stupidity.

As we continued our march into the interior, the enemy would attack us at every pass in the mountains from which they could find an easy means of escape, when vigorously charged upon by infantry.

We passed the enemy's works at Cerro Gordo without annoyance, and arrived at Jalapa, where a halt of several days was made. Jalapa is situated on the grand route between the capital of the country and the seaport of Vera Cruz, and is about sixty miles west northwest of the latter. Situated at an elevation of nearly five thousand feet above the level of the sea, its climate may be said to be of the temperate region. The scenery of the surrounding country is indeed very beautiful, the snow-capped mountain Orizaba looms up in the distance, while the valleys produce a great variety of tropical fruits in abundance. During

Digitized by Google

the unhealthy season of the year the merchants and better class of Vera Cruz retire to Jalapa in order to avoid the Vomito.

The natives insist that this is actually the site of the original Paradise. An old Spanish officer says that "Jalapa is a piece of Heaven let down to earth." The argument is that Paradise must have been within the tropics in a region elevated far above the baleful heat and malaria of the low lands, in a climate where all plants will grow to the utmost perfection, and such indeed is Jalapa.

It was but a short march from Jalapa across the mountains to Perote. Passing over an elevation of ten thousand four hundred feet, the highest elevation that a stage coach had then ever reached, and from which a traveler can ofttimes enjoy the unique and magnificent sight of a thunder storm in the valley far below, while up on the mountains the sun shines in all its glory. On this short march one can see all, or nearly all, the vegetable kingdom of the world. And so accurately are the strata of vegetation adjusted to the strata of the atmosphere they inhabit as to lead one actually to suppose that a gardener had laid out the fields, one upon another, up the side of the mountain. As you go down the opposite side of the mountain a different panorama unfolds itself. It is said to be a fine grain growing country; the fields are fenced in by rows of the "Maguey" or "Century Plant," which furnishes the beverage called pulque in common use among the natives.

We soon arrived at the town of Perote, noted for its robbers. To the north stands the castle of San Carlos, a square fort with a Moat and glacis; it is built in the best style of fortifications of the last century, and designed as a depositary for silver and gold when it was not deemed prudent to forward the specie to the coast. At one time the accumulation was so great that it is said to have amounted to forty millions, weighing thirteen hundred tons, or a little short of the whole silver export for two years.

Colonel Ramsey encamped the Eleventh Infantry on the plains south of the castle. Sickness had become so prevalent in our company that one half of the men were unfit for duty. Albert Tripp, a Providence man, whose wife accompanied him as a laundress, died, and was buried near the castle wall. Mrs. Tripp had the sympathy of every member of the company. She had left Providence to share the dangers and hardships of the campaign with her husband. To have him sicken and die on the march well high broke the woman's heart. Mrs. Tripp remained at the castle when we resumed our march in obedience to an order that all laundresses should remain here, the mere fact that the women were obliged to ride on the wagons of their respective companies,

Digitized by Google

exposed to the fire of the enemy almost daily, made this order necessary. Mrs. Tripp found employment with the commanding officer of the garrison of Perote. Following the death of Tripp, was that of Sergeant Benjamin Dawley of Newport who was laid beside poor Tripp.

It was with joy we received orders to move from this place, and with a sad parting from our sick comrades resumed our march to Puebla los Angelo. Here we joined the army under the command of General Winfield Scott. A month was slowly passed occupied with drill, company and battalion movements.

About this time we began to doubt whether we should ever see, or join, our own regiment again, the Ninth New England. At length news was received that General Franklin Pierce would arrive the following day. The Rhode Island company seemed to feel very much as a child does when it is about to leave the arms of the nurse for those of its mother. We should now be identified with officers with whom we had a mutual and common interest, and we were pleased; Colonel Ransom's reputation had preceded him, and Company A of the Ninth Infantry very anxiously awaited the dawn of another day, when they were to march out of Puebla to meet their own regiment, not a company of which had been organized when the Rhode Island company first embarked for Mexico.

It was a very pleasant greeting as Colonel Ransom met Captain Pitman, Lieutenants Slocum and Glackin for the first time. We at once joined our regiment amid cheers and congratulations from the Eleventh Infantry, in which our men had strong and lasting attachments. We were assigned excellent quarters in this very beautiful city, where General Scott was organizing the army into four divisions and perfecting it by daily drill before advancing upon the capital.

In the early part of August, 1847, the army moved by divisions out of the city, Puebla, each division having its proper assignment of dragoons and light batteries. The army was in excellent condition and met with no opposition from the enemy on its march to the valley of Mexico. At the little town of Saint Martins, Sergeant John Viall became entirely unfit for duty, with an attack of inflammatory rheumatism. Many of our men were affected in health in consequence of the sudden change in temperature.

At Rio Frio we suffered much with the cold. The ascent of the Sierra Popocatepetl, though not fatiguing, called into requisition overcoats and blankets in order to keep comfortable. We were about nine thousand feet above the sea level among the clouds. The snow-capped peak of this mountain towered up on our left to the height of 17,852 feet,

Digitized by Google

about three and one-half miles high. We moved on and upward through the moving volume of misty vapor to the highest point of the national road. Suddenly as we turn an angle a most enchanting view meets our eye; at last the famed Valley of Mexico lies before and beneath us. Cities and villages are scattered here and there, with their brown domes and glittering crosses, interspersed with beautiful lakes. Long causeways or raised roads of stone built across the marshes, with their tall shady trees, intersected the valley in every direction. The first natural impulse of the beholder is to stop and feast the eye upon the magnificent panorama spread before him. As this grand scenery came into view long and hearty cheers were given by each command. The following from the pen of William G. Moseley, a Colonel of our Division, is a truthful pen picture of this glorious scenery.

"Dark frowning fortresses, the isolated and bleached ruins of ancient Aztec cities, bare, conical hills, half concealing, half disclosing some picturesque hamlet or hacienda with its lights and shadows. The constellated hills of Chapultepec, with its grand border of venerable cypresses, the favorite retreat in bygone days, and final resting place of the Montezumas, and finally in the center of this gorgeous circlet of Nature's diadem — the richest jewel of all — sits enthroned the peerless City of Mexico, the shrine of the Aztecs, the hills of Montezumas. Around and encircling this miniature world of Utopian beauty, but actual realities, runs a lofty, smooth outline of purplish mountains, like the richly wrought framework of a masterpiece of art. Looking down immediately before us was seen a long serpentine line, the advance division of the army. It seemed like some huge reptile gliding into the Garden of Eden to fascinate and destroy."

The reconnoissance of El Peñon had demonstrated the fact that this strong position was impregnable, simply because we had not the men to lose in the storming, to be able to take and hold the inner defenses of the city.

General Scott had only about eleven thousand men to attack the enemy, which numbered more than three to his one, while the city itself had a population of nearly two hundred thousand. The attitude of the two opposing forces was like that of two mail-clad warriors met in the shock of battle, coolly eyeing each other with searching scrutiny and thrusting with sword and lance. The Americans, although the weaker of the two, yet more agile, bold and skillful, were the assailants, and never in the history of war was there more need for daring, science and fortitude. With an opposing force three times our own behind strong central fortifications, with accurate knowledge of every foot of the coun-

Digitized by Google

try, and, above all, animated with the ardent, patriotic national pride of defending their beautiful capital, we had to conquer or suffer total annihilation. We had to cut loose from our base; we had no allies, the country was strange and unknown, and our supplies were limited.

On the 14th of August our division was at Chalco, on the lake of the same name. This place presented a singular maritime appearance in that elevated, mountainous region. Quite a fleet of small fishing and market boats had been seized and hauled on shore in anticipation of their use. It was a bold, hazardous move. Every step was terra incognita; many of the inhabitants fled at our approach, others kept a sullen taciturnity or gave incorrect information. The road, blind and obscure and but seldom used, ran along the shore of the two lakes where the ground was low, marshy, and subject now and then to overflow. It ran across the spurs of the Sierras that radiated into the valley. Occasionally it penetrated a defile between the abrupt shoulder of the hill and the lake, or led across a narrow causeway flanked on either side by *impracticable* marsh. Altogether it was a savage, forbidden way for an army with a train and heavily laden wagons. Still it was practicable. It had been overlooked by the ubiquitous Asmodeus of Mexican warcraft, Santa Anna.

The rapidity of our movements, marching and countermarching, before the eastern approaches of the city, had apparently perplexed him (Santa Anna) and made him unmindful of this weak, vulnerable point in his armor. It was the coup de guerre of the campaign, as it flanked the formidable skillfully constructed works of El Peñon and Mexicanzingo, rendering them powerless for defense, and at the same time letting down the Mexican from his conceited self security.

The reconnaissance was made with the utmost rapidity and secrecy, seconded by wide awake vigilance and precaution, to within a few miles from the village of San Augustine on the Acapulco road. The return to headquarters the same day was equally expeditious. The route was perfectly practicable, though rough, and capable of easy defense; therefore no time was lost in the forward movement of our division the next day.

None too soon had the advance been made, for we encountered obstructions at every assailable place. Here huge boulders detached from rocky spurs blocked up the narrow defile; there marshy tract was flooded by cutting the dykes; trees were felled where they could easily be thrown to cause delay. But no enemy displayed, no hostile shot was fired, although Alvarez, with his Pintos was supposed to be in the vicinity. We made the flank movement with perfect success and planted

Digitized by Google

our standard on the great southern highway at San Augustine as a base of operations, and all the myrmidons of Mexico could not shake us from that base. Our sword's point had touched the weak, vulnerable spot in our adversary's armor, and a vigorous thrust would send them home and close the conflict.

On the night of August 18, 1847, the Ninth New England regiment occupied the town of San Augustine. The enemy made a show of resistance. On our skirmish a captain and several men were killed. Santa Anna, who was present in person, withdrew his forces, falling back to Contreras. A melancholy duty devolved upon the writer at this place. A brother, Sergeant John Viall, previously alluded to in these pages, having become perfectly helpless from an attack of inflammatory rheumatism, and had occupied a baggage wagon with other sick ever since we left Rio Frio, had now become delirious. The long time that he had occupied the wagon, lying in one position, had chafed the skin from his back in many places, and he was in a serious condition. We removed him to the hospital here, still delirious, and without even a recogtion on his part. Duty compelled me to return to my company with a very sad heart. I recall this event as the most trying to me of any during the whole campaign. However, with rest and care he rallied and I was rejoiced at heart when he joined his regiment once more.

Our division, commanded by General Gideon Pillow, consisted of the Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Fourteenth, and Fifteenth regiments, a voltigeur, or rifle regiment, a battery commanded by Captain Magruder, and a howitzer battery by Lieutenant Callender. We moved early on the morning of the 19th of August and took a position immediately in front of the enemy, who was strongly intrenched at Contreras. I will use General Pillow's report here to describe the battle:

"Perceiving that the enemy was in large force on the opposite side of the valley, with heavy batteries of artillery commanding the road through a vast plain of broken volcanic stone and lava rent into deep chasms and fissures, effectually preventing any advance except under direct fire, I resolved to give him battle. For this purpose I ordered General Twiggs to advance with his finely disciplined division, and with one brigade to assault the enemy in front, with the other to turn his left flank and assail it in reverse. Captain Magruder's fine field battery and Lieutenant Callender's howitzer battery, both of which constitute a part of my division, were placed at the disposal of Brigadier-General Twiggs. This officer, in executing my order of attack, directed Brevet Brigadier-General Smith to move with his brigade on the enemy's front, while Colonel Riley with his brigade was ordered to turn his left and

Digitized by Google

assail him in the rear. To sustain these movements Brigadier-General Cadwallader was ordered to advance with his brigade and support Colonel Riley, and Brigadier-General Pierce with his command to support the column moving on the enemy's front. Under General Smith this last command was closely engaged with the enemy, as were also the batteries of Captain Magruder and Lieutenant Callender. Colonel Riley having now crossed the vast broken up plain of lava, passing the village on the right, while in the act of turning the enemy's left, was confronted with several thousand lancers who advanced to the charge, when a well directed fire from the brigade twice compelled them to fall back in disorder under cover of the artillery. About this time General Cadwallader had also crossed the plain when some five or six thousand of the enemy were observed moving rapidly from the direction of the capital to the field of action. Colonel Morgan with his large and fine regiment, which I had caused to be detached from the rear of Pierce's brigade, was now ordered to the support of Cadwallader by the direction of the General-in-Chief who had now arrived on the field.

"The General having discovered this large force moving on his right flank and to the rear, with decided military tact and promptitude, threw back his right wing and confronted the enemy with the intention to give him battle, notwithstanding his overwhelming force. This portion of the enemy's force moved steadily forward until a conflict seemed inevitable, when Colonel Morgan's regiment, having reached this part of the field, presented a front so formidable as to induce the enemy to change his purpose and draw off to the right and rear of his former position. During all this time the battle raged fiercely between the other portions of the two armies with a constant and destructive fire of artillery. Magruder's battery, from its prominent position, was much disabled by the enemy's shot, as were Callender's howitzers. A part of the enemy's artillery had been turned upon Riley's command while engaged with large bodies of lancers. But even these combined attacks could only delay the purpose of the gallant old veteran and his noble brigade.

"The General-in-Chief having arrived on the field, with General Shields' brigade of volunteers, consisting of the New York and South Carolina regiments, ordered them to move up to the support of the forces under General Cadwallader, but it had now grown so late in the evening that General Shields did not get into position until after dark.

"Night having come on, but not until entirely dark, this fierce conflict was suspended, to be renewed on the morrow. The battle all this day was conducted under my immediate orders and within my view.

"A short time before sunset, having previously engaged in the fight all

Digitized by Google

the forces at my disposal, my staff and self started to cross the plain to join in the terrible struggle on the immediate field of action. During the night General Smith with the forces present was to renew the struggle at daylight and complete the original order of attack. Before dark, however, the enemy had placed two pieces of artillery on the height nearly west of Cadwallader's position, which had opened several discharges upon his forces. General Smith just before daylight moved a portion of his forces up the ravine to the rear of the enemy's position so as to be in easy turning distance of his left flank, leaving Colonel Ransom with the Ninth and Twelfth Infantry to make a strong diversion in front.

"The day being sufficiently advanced, the order was given by General Smith for the general assault. General Smith's command upon the left, and Colonel Riley with his brigade upon the right, supported by General Cadwallader with his command, moved up with the utmost gallantry under the furious fire from the enemy's batteries, which were immediately carried. A large number of prisoners were taken, including four Generals, with 23 out of the original 28 pieces of artillery, and a large amount of ammunition and public property.

"The retreating enemy was compelled to pass thorough a severe fire both from the assaulting forces and Cadwallader's brigade, as well as Shields' command, which had remained at the position occupied by the former General the previous night, with the purpose of covering the movements upon the battery. The force of the enemy engaged at this place, including the reinforcements of the preceding evening, constituted a force of about 16,000 men, 5,000 of whom were cavalry. The whole was under the immediate command of General Santa Anna, in person, assisted by Generals Valencia, Salas, Blanco, Mendoza, Gracia and others. The last four mentioned were taken prisoners.

Our force consisted of my division, Pillow's, Generals Twiggs' and Shields' commands, amounting to about 4,500 men. The loss of the enemy as near as I can ascertain was between 1,500 and 2,000 killed and wounded: 800 prisoners, including the four generals previously mentioned, four Colonels, thirty Captains and many officers of inferior grades.

"Brigadier-General Pierce, though badly injured by the fall of his horse while gallantly leading his brigade into the thickest of the battle on the 19th, did not quit the field but continued in command of his brigade, two regiments of which, the Ninth and the Twelfth Infantry, under the immediate command of the gallant Colonel Ransom and Lieutenant-Colonel Bonham on the 19th and Captain Woods on the 20th, assailed the enemy's works in front at daylight with great intrepidity and con-

Digitized by Google

tributed much to the glorious consummation of the work so handsomely commenced on the preceding day.

"The commanders of regiments and inferior officers all behaved with gallantry no less distinguished, though in subordinate positions to those named above as commanding divisions and brigades.

"Having myself crossed the plain and reached this bloody theater, as the last scene of the conflict was closing, as soon as suitable, dispositions were made to secure the fruits of the victory.

"I resolved upon pursuing the discomfited enemy, in which I found that Generals Twiggs and Smith had already anticipated me by having commenced the movement. I had moved rapidly forward in execution of this purpose until I reached the town of Coyoacan, where the command was halted to await the arrival of the General-in-Chief, who, I was informed, was close at hand. Upon his arrival the important fact was ascertained that the enemy's forces at San Antonio, having perceived that the great battle had been lost, and the total defeat and rout of their forces at Contreras, by which their rear was open to assault, had abandoned the work at San Antonio and had fallen back upon their strong intrenchments in rear at Churubusco.

"At this point the Ninth New England was detached and reported to Brigadier-General Shields for duty. With a desire to be accurate I copy from a report of this officer to the Commander-in-Chief as our brigade commanded by General Pierce was placed under his immediate command to accomplish a definite purpose."

General Shields says, "I moved off with the remainder of my force and joined the positions of the Second and Third divisions already enroute on the main road. On this march we were joined by the General-in-Chief, who assumed command of the whole, and the march continued uninterruptedly, until we arrived before Churubusco.

"Here the enemy was found strongly fortified and posted with his main force, probably 25,000 men.

"The engagement was commenced by the Second division under Twiggs: soon joined by the First under Worth, and was becoming general when I was detached by the Commander-in-Chief, with my two regiments and Pierce's brigade, the Ninth, Twelfth and Fifteenth, with the mountain howitzer battery, and ordered to gain a position if possible to attack the enemy's rear and intercept his retreat. Leaving Coyoacan by a left hand road, and advancing about a mile upon it, I moved thence with my command towards the right, through a heavy corn field, and gained an open but swampy field, in which is situated the hacienda de los Portales. On the edge of this field, beyond the hacienda, I discovered

Digitized by Google

the road by which the enemy must retire from Churubusco, and found his reserve of about 4,000 infantry already occupied it just in the rear of the town.

"As my command arrived I established the right upon a point recommended by Captain Robert E. Lee, engineer officer, in whose skill and judgment I had the utmost confidence, and commenced a movement to the left, to flank the enemy on the right, and throw my troops between him and the city. But finding his right supported by a heavy body of cavalry some 3,000 strong and seeing, too, that with his infantry he answered to my movements, by a corresponding one towards his right flank, gaining ground faster than I could, owing to the heavy mud and swamp through which I had to operate, I withdrew the men to the cover of the hacienda and determined to attack him upon his front.

"I selected the Palmetto regiment as the base of my line, and this gallant regiment moved forward firmly and rapidly under a fire of musketry as terrible perhaps as any which soldiers ever faced.

"The New York Twelfth and Fifteenth deployed gallantly on the right, and the Ninth New England on the left and the whole advanced, opening their fire as they came up and moving steadily forward.

"The enemy began to waver and when my order to 'charge' was given, the men rushed upon and scattered his broken ranks.

"As we reached the road the advance of Worth's command appeared, driving the enemy from his stronghold of Churubusco. I took command of the front and continued in pursuit until passed by Colonel Harney with his cavalry, who followed the routed foe into the very gates of the city.

"In this terrible battle in which a strongly fortified enemy fought behind its works under the walls of its capital, our loss was necessarily severe. This loss, I regret to say, has fallen most severely on my command. In the two regiments of my brigade, numbering about 600 in the fight, the loss is reported as 240 killed and wounded.

"In this last engagement my command captured 380, including six officers. Of this number 42 had deserted from the American army during the war and at their head was found the notorious Reily, who had fought against our troops at Monterey and elsewhere.

"A detailed report of the loss, as also the prisoners captured by the command, accompany this report. Pierce's brigade under my command in this action lost a considerable number in killed and wounded, among the latter the gallant Colonel G. W. Morgan of the Fifteenth. This command having joined its division immediately after the action I have

Digitized by Google

received no official report of its loss. I will here leave the gallant Shields and his report to refer to an incident of the battle:

"The capture of forty-two deserters who, under the command of Reily, had been forced to abandon their heavy battery by Worth's command, and in their retreat towards the city found themselves entirely surrounded.

"Through the instigation of the Mexican clergy, while our army lay intrenched opposite Matamoras, and before war had actually commenced, a number had deserted, Reily being among the number. These men were tried by the general court-martial and thirty of the number were found guilty of desertion after war had been declared and were sentenced to be hung. This sentence was carried into effect by General Harney on the 13th of September, at the town of Miscode, where a gallows was erected in plain view of the castle of Chapultepec.

"It was said by those who witnessed the execution that some of the condemned men requested Colonel Harney to await the result of the battle, which was then going on, as they felt sure of our defeat; then retaliation would be visited upon our prisoners. This request was granted, and these thirty perjured wretches stood in government wagons under the long gallows with the ropes around their necks, and as mid-day approached they watched eagerly the result of the storming of the castle.

"At last the American Flag waved from the cupola of Chapultepec; then Colonel Harney gave the command for the teamsters to drive out, thus launching thirty perjured comrades into eternity.

"The bodies remained on the gallows five days and were visited by me three days after we entered the city of Mexico. An armistice had been agreed upon from the 20th of August until the 8th of September which, by its terms, provided that neither army should strengthen its position.

"In fact the armistice was broken within three days after the battle of Churubusco by the enemy, who had kept their foundry at Molino del Rey in full blast, turning out brass field-pieces to replace those lost.

"The bells of the churches and convents were seized upon for this purpose. General Scott, learning this, directed General Worth to move on the 8th of September, attack the works, and destroy the foundry.

"Worth's division found the enemy in strong force at Casa Mata and the foundry, and after a desperate effort Pierce's brigade was sent to his support. As we approached the works the guns of the castle of Chapultepec, which had previously been directed upon Worth's column, now opened upon us. As we advanced at double quick, it was found to be the best policy to close with the enemy, who was contesting every

Digitized by Google

inch of the ground, hand to hand, with Worth's division, thus being relieved from the galling fire from the castle which, continued, would have been fatal to their own troops as to ours. After the object had been accomplished we withdrew, leaving Molino del Rey on fire, and in ruins, and Casa Mata, an entrenchment with a ditch, was blown up. It is now known that General Leon held Molino del Rey, and General Rangel, assisted by General Perry, the fort of Casa Mata, and General Ramirez the center of artillery.

"Three thousand two hundred and fifty-one Americans met four times that number, and took 800 prisoners and 52 commissioned officers. It was subsequently learned that Santa Anna superintended the arrangements in person. From the 8th of September until the 11th our regiment occupied the town of Piedad, and as General Pillow's division took the most prominent part in reducing the castle of Chapultepec, I will again refer to his report of the battle."

HEADQUARTERS THIRD DIVISION U. S. ARMY, SEPTEMBER 18, 1847.
CAPTAIN:

"On the morning of the 12th instant, at three o'clock A. M., I moved with my command, consisting of the field battery of Captain Magruder, the voltigeur regiment, the Ninth, Eleventh, Fourteenth and Fifteenth regiments of infantry, the Twelfth Regiment, constituting a part of the garrison at Mixcoac, and the mountain howitzer, and rocket battery from Tacubaya, to the battle-field of the 8th instant, where my dispositions were made to take possession of Molino del Rey. Having organized a force for this purpose, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert, at daylight his command moved steadily and in beautiful order under a hot fire of shot and shell from Chapultepec and seized the mills. I ordered General Cadwallader with his brigade to hold possession of this position, and to defend the approaches, which unite at this place, from the city of Mexico and from Santa Fe.

"In a short time afterwards an immense force of lancers with a considerable force of infantry made their appearance in the valley above me, and moved forward in the direction of my position until almost within reach of my field pieces. With General Pierce's brigade, Magruder's battery amd Major Sumner's fine command of dragoons, that officer having now reported to me for duty, I made every arrangement for their reception.

"Having thus executed the order of the General-in-Chief to take possession of the mills, to hold them, and from this position defend the batteries intended to be opened preparatory to the assault on Chapultepec, and

Digitized by Google

not to provoke a general engagement with the enemy. I did not under my orders feel myself at liberty to become the assailant, and the enemy regarding 'Prudence as the better part of valor,' did not think proper to assail me. At night I drew my whole force down to the mills, immediately under the fire, and almost under the walls of Chapultepec, while the enemy advanced from the valley and occupied the position which I had held during the day close in my rear. Being now almost completely enveloped by the enemy, with Chapultepec and its strong garrison immediately in my front, and the enemy's large force of lancers and infantry in close approximation to my rear, and on my left flank, my command was compelled to lay on its arms during the night. Early on the morning on the 13th Captain McKenzie, Second Artillery, reported to me for duty with a command of 260 rank and file from the First Division. At daylight the cannonade, which had ceased at dark on the previous day, was resumed and kept up on both sides until about 8 o'clock. In the meantime I was actively engaged in making the necessary preparations for storming Chapultepec. With this view I placed two pieces of Magruder's field battery inside the extensive row of buildings, of which the mills were a part, to clear a sand-bag breastwork, which the enemy had constructed outside the main wall surrounding Chapultepec, and so as to command a breach in the wall.

"I had also passed the howitzer battery through the houses and walls of the mills, and placed it in battery so as to aid me in driving the enemy from a strong intrenchment extending nearly across the front of the forest and commanding my only approach to Chapultepec.

"While these batteries were admirably served under Captain Magruder and Lieutenant Reno, I placed four companies of the voltigeurs under command of Lieutenant-Colonel J. E. Johnston in position, with instructions that upon the cessation of the artillery fire they should advance by rapid movement on the outside and under cover of the main wall and to enter the enclosure at the breach.

"At the same time I placed four other companies of voltiguers under command of Colonel Andrews, at a narrow gateway opening from the rear of the mills, with orders to advance in front to unite with Colonel Johnston's command to deploy as skirmishers and by a simultaneous movement upon the enemy's flank and front, to drive him from his intrenchments and the large trees behind which he had taken shelter.

"I had placed the Ninth and Fifteenth regiments of infantry in positions to advance as close supports to the storming forces, and if necessary, become a part of it. I ordered Colonel Andrews as soon as the regiment of voltigeurs had cleared the intrenchments and woods, to

Digitized by Google

form in rear of McKenzie's as a support or assaulting force, according to the exigencies of the moment. Having completed these dispositions for the assault, while a heavy cannonade was going on, Brigadier-General Cadwallader was directed to the proper executions of my orders. All being now ready and eager for the conflict, I ordered the batteries of my division silenced, and the command to advance, the General-in-Chief having silenced the heavy batteries.

"The voltigeurs having driven the enemy from the woods, rapidly pursued him until he retreated into the interior fortifications. Close in their rear followed the Ninth and Fifteenth regiments with equal impetuosity, until these three regiments occupied the exterior works around the summit of Chapultepec, Captain McKenzie's command had not yet come up; the Fifth, Sixth, and Eighth infantry of Worth's division ordered forward as a reserve, advanced their position and formed.

"Captain McKenzie's command was soon in position with ladders and the works were almost instantly carried and the Mexican flag torn from the castle by the gallant Major Seymour of the Ninth regiment and the American run up in its place. To the voltigeurs belongs the honor of having first planted its colors upon the parapet.

"The color bearer having been shot down, the colors were immediately seized by the gallant and fearless Captain Barnard, who scaled the parapet and unfurled the flag under the terrible fire, from which he received two wounds. The chief honor of this victory is due to the voltigeurs and the Ninth and Fifteenth regiments of infantry, who drove the enemy from its exterior intrenchments and positions, took possession of, and enveloped the crest of the counterscarp, and held this position under the heavy fire of grape, canister and round shot from the enemy's artillery, eleven pieces in number, and a very superior force of small arms until the arrival of the ladders; and to Captain McKenzie's command, who brought up the ladders, and with the corps already mentioned, so gallantly stormed and carried the main works.

The gallant Colonel Ransom of the Ninth Infantry fell dead from a shot in the forehead while at the head of his command, waving his sword and leading his splendid regiment up the heights to the summit of Chapultepec. I had myself been a witness to his heroic conduct until a moment before, when I was cut down by his side. My heart bleeds with anguish at the loss of so gallant an officer. The command of his regiment devolved upon Major Seymour, who faltered not, but with his command scaled the parapet entered the citadel, sword in hand, and himself struck the Mexican flag from the walls.

"Having carried Chapultepec, and being unable to proceed with my

Digitized by Google

command, the General-in-Chief ordered it forward under Generals Quitman and Worth and my entire division except the Fifteenth Infantry (which was left to garrison Chapultepec and to guard the prisoners by order of the General-in-Chief) actively participated in the subsequent achievements of our army resulting in the capture and possession of the City of Mexico.

"In carrying the strong works the enemy sustained very heavy loss; the grounds around and the works upon Chapultepec, and every avenue of retreat from it was literally strewed with his dead.

"At one place fifty dead bodies were counted in one heap, but no means are left me of ascertaining his loss with accuracy.

"Several hundred were gathered up by the men and buried while policing the yard of Chapultepec. Among the killed were General Perez and Colonel Cano of the engineers, and General Saldana was wounded. We took about 800 prisoners among whom were Major-General Bravo, Brigadier-Generals Monterde, Nonega, Doramentes and Soldana; also three Colonels, seven Lieutenant-Colonels, forty Captains, twenty-four First-Lieutenants and twenty-seven Second-Lieutenants.

"General Bravo communicated to me through Midshipman Rogers there were upwards of 6,000 men in the works and surrounding grounds.

"The killed, wounded and prisoners, agreeable to the best estimate I can form, were about 1,800; an immense number of the enemy were seen to escape over the wall on the north and west side of Chapultepec. My own force actually engaged in storming the works did not exceed 1,000 men.

"My total loss in killed, wounded and missing from my proper division during the days of operations is 143, a return of which is appended hereto. I transmit herewith Brigadier-General Pierce's report of the operation of his brigade on the 8th instant."

"List of officers and non-commissioned officers not mentioned in my report who have been recommended to my favorable notice:

Captain J. S. Pitman, Ninth Infantry.
Captain Webb, Ninth Infantry.
Captain Kimball, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant and Adjutant Sprague, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Bowers, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant J. S. Slocum, Ninth Infantry
Lieutenant J. Glackin, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Tracey, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Jackson, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Woodhouse, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Dunn, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Stoddard, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Pierce, Ninth Infantry.
Lieutenant Crosby, Ninth Infantry.
Sergeant Major Fairbanks, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant White, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Billings, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Atkinson, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Pike, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Miller, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Clark, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Stone, Ninth Infantry.
First Sergeant Willard, Ninth Infantry.

GIDEON J. PILLOW, Major-General, U. S. A."

Our stay in the castle was very brief, I captured a Colonel's horse within the bomb proof. A beautiful animal with saddle and bridle trimmings of solid silver. My comrades were congratulating me upon my good fortune, when the voice of Lieutenant Slocum was heard. "Company A fall in." Alas, my visions of future pleasure with that mustang and his magnificent trappings was soon changed to the stern reality that we were to follow the enemy, who had fallen back and occupied the gates of the City of Mexico. Major Seymour having assumed command of the Ninth regiment after the fall of Colonel Ransom, moved out of the castle and engaged the enemy on the avenue leading to the Belen Gate. Through the center of this avenue ran the aqueduct which supplied the city with water.

It is built of solid mason work, arched and eight feet wide by fifteen feet high. The arches were used as a cover by the enemy, but were equally as beneficial to us when they were forced back.

The afternoon of the 13th was devoted to work of carrying the gates of Belen and Dan Cosme. A number of our men had fallen at Chapultepec and the first man wounded of our company at the gate of Belen was Drummer George W. King of Johnston, R. I. A piece of shell struck his drum, passing through it and carrying away a portion of his knee. His feelings of pain seemed to be equally divided between his knee and the loss of his drum. Captain Pitman, Lieutenants Slocum and Glackin behaved in a most gallant manner.

Much depended upon regimental commanders in this battle, as the troops moved by flank up the avenue on either side of the aqueduct. The enemy had a battery, which was located at the gate of Belen,

Digitized by Google

sweeping the avenue to the base of the heights of Chapultepec, a distance of two miles, while on the right and left of the gate a cross fire of artillery made the arches of the aqueduct anything but a comfortable cover, the land on both sides being interspersed with lakes and marshes, made it impossible to attack it in any other manner.

The engagement continued until night, the enemy still holding the city gate. Our men laid down after the firing had ceased, in the avenue and arches of the aqueduct, hungry and exhausted. The only water to quench our thirst was obtained from the canal on either side of the avenue into which the enemy's dead men and horses had been thrown to make room for our troops to occupy the ground for the night. The water supply of the aqueduct had been cut soon after the occupation of Chapultepec. We lay upon our arms within two hundred yards of the gate, expecting to renew the battle at day-break.

As the thin streak of dawn showed itself over the mountain range, we were on the alert, expecting the batteries to open. A movement of our command developed the fact that the enemy had retired during the night. Our men exhibited the wildest enthusiasm, such cheers and greetings I never witnessed before. The citizens made some slight resistance from the house-tops and church steeples, but Reno's mountain howitzer battery was taken to the tops of their houses, mounted, and opened a fire which they had little expected, and in a few hours the city was in the peaceful possession of our army.

The Ninth Regiment was assigned quarters in the Carmelite convent, the monks being permitted to retain limited quarters in the church connected with the institution, where daily worship continued during the five months of its occupancy by the Ninth Infantry.

Here to my great joy my brother, Sergeant John Viall, rejoined his company, but being unable to walk as yet. His recovery was gradual; fully two months expired before he was finally reported as fit for duty. Here also our wounded in the previous battles were returned to their regiments.

After a careful examination of the strength of our regiment it was found that it had lost by its casualties, one-half its numbers. It was, therefore, ordered to reduce the number of companies from ten to five.

Aside from our usual routine of garrison duty, passes were granted to visit various points of interest through the city and adjoining country. A description of the central portion of the city of Mexico is herewith presented:

The plaza, or great square of the city, is fronted on the north by the cathedral and Archbishop's palace, to the south of which lies the museum

Digitized by Google

and market, on the east by the National palace, on the west by the Parian, or public bazaar, where every article of male or female dress in vogue among the people, is kept made for sale.

Every interval of this square not occupied by these massive buildings is filled with arcades under which are small fancy stalls of flowers, books, cutlery and jewelry, while above these is the famous Mexican Palais Royal or the great resort for gamblers. Here the national game of monte is played by all creeds and conditions; from the President down to the lowest classes. Even the clergy dressed in their vestments, surplices and cowls, coolly enter the public gaming rooms and indulge in the game. A Mexican would laugh at the idea of playing unless money were put up.

The view from the lofty towers of catherdral is beautiful, this edifice, though imposing, is far from realizing the purity of the gothic style that several of the other churches of the republic can boast. It covers an area of five hundred feet in depth by four hundred feet in front, and the magnificence of its proportions and the splendor of its decorations excites the admiration of all who behold it. As a simple specimen of its enormous wealth in the interior, the main altar and choir is surrounded by a railing five feet high and two hundred feet in circumference, of massive thickness and composed of solid gold and silver, and mounted at short intervals with silver statues of saints and apostles, which are for holding wax tapers during services. The altar itself is of pure silver wrought and chased in the most beautiful style and covered with a profusion of weighty vessels of gold and silver of countless value. Above in a miniature temple is the figure of the Virgin of Remedios wearing a dress covered with diamonds and precious stones whose lowest value is estimated at three millions of dollars.

The National Museum dedicated to the preservation of the parsimonious fragments of Mexican art and history, which have been recovered from wrecks of the past, is a splendid suite of apartments containing portraits of the viceroys and old Mexican monarchs, fragments of thrones and old armor; by far the most interesting relics are the suits of mail of Cortez and Alvarez, both plain and simple harnesses of steel. A genuine likeness of Cortez in his vice-regal suit is likewise among the portraits portraying the characteristic dignity and firmness of the martial bigot, who committed the most horrible indignities upon his helpless captives.

Among the multitude that throng the vicinity of the Parian or bazaar, gossiping among its numerous shops are the Evangelistas or professional letter writers who attract no inconsiderable attention from the curious

Digitized by Google

stranger. Seated on a low portable stool on the edge of the pavement, a board across their knees for a writing desk, on which is ink and various kinds of colored paper, these grave learned and confidential scribes are ever to be found at their post ready to indite missives of business or sentiment as the humor of the applicant requires. Poetry or prose, a billet-doux or sonnet, an elegy or epitaph, is equally in their line and all or any executed with an expedition commensurate with the necessity of the case. Their clerkly apparel of sable frocks and slouched hats, the intellectual, sympathizing, sentimental expression of countenance their pantomimic tact, ready apprehension and quiet tones, all conspire to win their way at once to the confidence of such as feel dependent on their craft. Should the matter to be communicated be one of distress, the Evangelista can scarce proceed for his sympathy; should it be a blushing narrative of passion the insinuating delicacy of his glances reassures and sustains the timid narrator; if rage or disdain be the theme, it is easy to interpret from his flashing eye and rapid chirography how fully embarked he feels in the service of his employer.

The Ninth Infantry remained about five months in the valley of Mexico. A portion of the time, the Rhode Island company was quartered at the hacienda of San Borgia, three miles from the City of Mexico, for the protection of the proprietor Señor Prethil, who was much annoyed by guerillas and convicts, the latter recently set at liberty without restraint. This planter furnished one division of the army with beef, and also milk for its hospital. His estate contained 2,400 acres of land dotted here and there with small villages and inhabitants of which were largely in his employ.

The Mexican Army having been disbanded, caused the most turbulent element of it to organize into guerilla bands who robbed indiscriminately whenever an opportunity offered.

At Real del Monte, eighty miles north of the capital, was an English settlement engaged in mining gold and silver. After the capitulation they were required to pay the tax (formerly paid to Mexico) to the military government established by General Winfield Scott. The proprietors requested the General to send troops for their protection. The Ninth Infantry with one light battery, and one company of cavalry were sent to Pachuca for that purpose.

While garrisoned at Pachuca the regiment was increased by one company of recruits. Lieutenant John S. Slocum having been promoted to a Captaincy for gallantry in the various battles around the capital, was assigned to the command of it. It was my good furtune to be appointed as a Sergeant and to be transferred to Captain Slocum's

Digitized by Google

company, E. Although the duty devolving upon me of instruction and drill was more arduous with new recruits, I was proud of the promotion and also of the pleasing fact that I was to be with Captain Slocum, for whom I had entertained for years a feeling of the greatest love and respect.

We spent more than six months at Pachuca. Meantime many changes in the field and staff officers had taken place:

Colonel J. M. Withers and Lieutenant-Colonel Jere Clemence of Alabama were assigned to the Ninth Regiment: Major F. T. Lally of Maine remained with the Ninth until it was mustered out of service at Fort Adams, Rhode Island, in August, 1848. During the larger portion of our stay at Pachuca, I was on detached duty with the regimental Quartermaster, Lieutenant Justin Hodge of Connecticut, who placed me in charge of the post bakery.

Bands of guerillas infested the country roads in every direction making it necessary to furnish an escort for the miners' train to and from the City of Mexico.

One guerilla chief, a priest named Padre Jaruta, had some 200 followers and their rendezvous was located at the mountains about twenty miles distant from our post. It became known to the Colonel that the wily priest was increasing the number of his band with the view to attack the escort which was soon to leave Pachuca for the capital with the product of the mines. His plan was to attack the train when well on its way to the city, and if successful to return with the two guns captured and attack the post..

The Colonel determined to make a night attack upon the robbers' stronghold in the mountains. Every animal that it was possible to procure, mule or horse, was pressed into service for the expedition. Captain Slocum, full of ardor and vigilance, called at the Quartermaster's department and made known the object of his visit. I was the lucky owner of two horses, one of which I rode that night, and the other was loaned to my old friend and comrade, Corporal David K. Richmond.

Within two hours the column was ready to move. The company of dragoons took the right, then came the infantry mounted, some on mules from the wagon train and others on mustangs: all selected with an eye to their being able to undergo a twenty mile ride. As the column approached the bandits' rendezvous near one o'clock in the morning their picket fired two shots. The Colonel at once ordered a charge, and had the band waited to have offered battle they must all have been captured.

A half dozen prisoners, quite a large number of horses and equipments were captured. In the court yard was a fire, around which from

Digitized by Google

appearances; they had been carousing when our approach was signaled by their pickets. Cards and money were found on the tables in the building where they were gambling when the alarm was given. Their horses being picketed outside the enclosure made it easy for them to escape in the darkness of the night. A large number of fighting cocks were captured and many souvenirs of this noted guerralla chief were secured by our men, after which the command returned to Pachuca. There is no doubt that we met many of the band on the road as meek spectators of 'Los diablos Americanos,' for, having divested himself of all weapons, a Mexican is at once transformed into a most polite and cringing fellow, the very embodiment of low, vile treachery.

There are but few who do not possess an escopete or carbine or lance. This raid caused Padre Jaruta, the robber chief, to change his base; our garrison was never annoyed again by him after this grand stampede.

The fall of the City of Mexico practically ended the war, which had lasted less than two years, Congress having declared war May 13, 1846, and General Scott's little army — only 6,000 men — triumphantly entered the capital of Mexico September 14, 1847, and hoisted the Stars and Stripes over the ancient palace or so-called Halls of the Montezumas.

Looking back to those stirring and exciting days, I think that it may truthfully be termed a unique war, as being perhaps the only war recorded in history in which all the victories were on one side. For our troops gained every battle, and gained it in every instance against a much larger force. Another thing: it is an historical fact that the admission of Texas to the Union led to war with the United States, because the boundry was disputed and Mexico haughtily declined to treat with the United States on the subject. The admission of Texas was popular at the South as it enlarged the slave holding territory, while for the same reason many at the North opposed it.

As one result of the war, there were added to the American Union the territory of New Mexico, Arizona, Utah, Colorado, Nevada and California. Aside from this, a large moneyed consideration was paid to Mexico, and the Rio Grande river was established as the boundary line between the two republics. The state of Texas with its two hundred and sixty thousand square miles of territory, remained in the Union.

Another result was that it educated many of the officers who fought in it, or were connected with it (such men as Grant, Lee, Sherman, Stonewall Jackson, and Johnston) for the awful battle fields of a later date, as nearly every prominent officer in both armies in our Civil War, served in the war with Mexico. Our treaty of peace was signed with Mexico in February, 1848.

Digitized by Google

My memories of the tragic horrors of war and evidence of the merciless inhumanity of enraged men to each other are about closed. Nothing of importance occurred until the order was received to break camp and march back to Vera Cruz, from which point we took a steamer for New Orleans and there embarked on the bark "Maid of Orleans" for New York. From thence to Fort Adams, R. I. where the regiment was mustered out of the service of the United States in August, 1848.

The war department credit Rhode Island with furnishing 183 men in the war. This includes Company A of the Ninth Regiment, and with all who joined the navy and regular army. Of the 100 men who left the state at the call of the United States Government to fill the bill passed by Congress adding 10 regiments to the regular army, there are but six survivors that can be found. The company participated in the following battles: Contreras, Churubusco, Molino del Rey, Chapultepec and Garita Belen, or the gate of the City of Mexico; not to mention a large number of skirmishes over the route of 270 miles from Vera Cruz to the capital. Of the officers I regret to say that all have passed away. The gallant Captain John S. Slocum, an officer endowed with rare military qualities, meeting death while leading the Second Rhode Island regiment at the battle of Bull Run; while Pitman and Glackin, broken in health by the hardships of the campaign, are no more.

It has frequently been said that this war was waged in the interest of slavery, by the Southern States. I herewith attach a statement embodied in a speech made by the Hon. Robert Klotz, M. C., of Pennsylvania on March 6, 1883, showing the excess of troops furnished by the free states over that of the slave states.

The following table exhibits the relative forces enlisted from the free states during the Mexican War, and is compiled from tables published in Executive Document No. 24, House of Representatives, 31st Congress, first session. And Executive Document No. 38, 30th Congress, second session.

Whole number of Volunteers and Regulars in the war, 100,454 men.

Free States.	Volunteers.	Regulars.
California	571	
Connecticut		281
Illinois	6123	1133
Indiana	4585	1478
Iowa	838	293
Maine		672
Massachusetts	1057	1499
Michigan	1103	821

Digitized by Google

	Volunteers.	Regulars.
New Jersey	425	440
New Hampshire		239
New York	2396	8650
Ohio	5536	2321
Pennsylvania	2503	4369
Rhode Island		183
Vermont		391
Wisconsin	146	517
Remustered	844	
Naval Force		5000
	26127	28287
		26127
		54414

Taking the aggregate, including the navy, at 105,454 men, and deducting enlistments as above, 54,414, leaves for enlistments in the slave states 51,049, showing a preponderance of 3,374 in favor of the free states.

The few remaining survivors of the Mexican War feel commendable pride in the part each took in bringing about this grand result; and on the the 19th of July the Ninth New England Regiment, with the Massachusetts Volunteers, meet at Nantasket Beach to fight their battles over again.

I deeply regret to say that for the past few years these enjoyable reunions have been growing fewer and the attendance smaller. Old Father Time is gradually crowding us, one by one, to the grave. Now, 1903, all, or nearly all are gone, and the survivors are too feeble to travel. All that remains is the cherished, venerated and loving memory.

Another emanation resulting from our war with Mexico is the Soldiers' Home. This home is situated a few miles north of Washington, D. C., and contains 502 acres of land, a most beautiful retreat where the aged and invalid soldiers of the regular army can pass their days in peace and comfort. The nucleus of the fund to erect the Home was levied upon the City of Mexico as a punishment for having permitted guerillas to fire upon the American troops as they entered the city. One hundred thousand dollars was paid to General Winfield Scott and applied to this purpose.

The Soldiers' Home was founded in 1851, not long after the close of the Mexican War, and was suggested by General Scott. The money received by the Government from fines, forfeitures of pay, etc., of the

Digitized by Google

soldiers is devoted to the support of the home. The fund is further augmented by levying a tax[1] of 12½ cents a month on the pay of all enlisted men of the Regular Army. The Government also holds more than a million dollars accruing from forfeitures of pay of deserters from the army and from money of deceased soldiers, which has remained unclaimed for three years. As soon as the complicated army accounts can be adjusted this great sum will be turned over to the home. Soldiers of the regular army who have served faithfully for twenty years or who have been disabled in service, are entitled to a residence in the home for the remainder of their lives. There are over six hundred inmates who are not subject to any strict regulations, but are well fed and clothed, tenderly cared for while sick, and who spend their time very comfortably and in a pleasant manner. The institution is directed by a superintendent and various officials and is under the supervision of a board of high army officers.

Here these simple war reminiscences of mine come to a close. To my younger friends as well as those of my own advanced age, they may serve to awaken thoughts, memories, and facts of by-gone days, and enable them to contrast the men and incidents of to-day and then. And if they find something herein to amuse, or call up a pleasant remembrance I shall assuredly feel gratified. I bespeak only a lenient criticism, a kindly recollection, and a generous thought to our past brotherly intercourse.

Our country has passed through the most momentous years of its history since the Mexican War. Its course through all vicissitudes shows the protecting care of God over the American people, and gives confidence that under His guidance a people which have evinced such intense energy and widsom in disaster, and cool quiet moderation in success, will continue to maintain and uphold to the death the national resolve that "The government of the people, by the people, and for the people" shall not perish from the earth. Time's uses are almost ended, and all, or nearly all that is blissful now are the kindly memories of the past and the blessed joyful hopes of the future.

I respectfully beg to state in concluding, that it has been my most sincere and earnest wish in recording the foregoing recollections, to offend no one, nor set down aught in malice.

Our lives are like the autumn leaves,
Which tremble in the moon's pale ray;
Their hold is frail, their date is brief,
Restless, and soon to pass away.

[1]This has since been discontinued.

Digitized by Google

General R. C. Drum, United States Army, Retired, now living, who was a Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, during the Mexican War states as follows:

"The Ninth Infantry, raised in New England for the Mexican War, was composed almost entirely of New England men. I think I was the only officer in it not from that section.

"The rank and file surpassed anything I have ever seen in service, and the officers generally were capable and gallant gentlemen.

"Colonel Ransom was unquestionably the most brilliant man in action I have ever seen and had the power of inspiring those under him.

"He was admirable as a tactician, soldierly in bearing, excessively strict in relation to all duties to be performed, and brave much beyond the average commander.

"The regiment was in every action in the Valley of Mexico and played in all a conspicuous part.

"In the assault on Chapultepec it was the first on the hill, and to cross the moat, and one of the officers, hauled down the Mexican flag from the Castle."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III

FOURTH ORGANIZATION OF THE NINTH INFANTRY — REGIMENT TRANSFERRED TO PACIFIC COAST — FIGHTS WITH HOSTILE INDIANS AT THE CASCADES AND CONNELL'S PRAIRIE — DESCRIPTION OF THE YAKIMA COUNTRY — MANY CHANGES OF STATIONS — FIGHT WITH INDIANS IN SPOKANE COUNTRY — NUMEROUS AFFAIRS WITH INDIANS — RESCUE OF FUGITIVE EMIGRANTS — COLONEL WRIGHT NINTH INFANTRY, DROWNED — COMPANY F GOES TO ALASKA AT TIME OF PURCHASE FROM RUSSIA — TRANSFER OF REGIMENT TO DEPARTMENT OF THE PLATTE.

UNDER authority of the Act of March 3rd, 1855, the Ninth Infantry was again organized. Lieutenant-Colonel George Wright, Fourth Infantry, was appointed Colonel, Captain Silas Casey, Second Infantry Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captains Edward Steptoe, Third Artillery, and Robert S. Garnett, First Cavalry, Majors. The headquarters of the regiment were established at Fortress Monroe, Virginia, March 26th, 1855, and recruiting rendezvous were opened by officers of the regiment in Maine, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, Ohio and Tennessee. Companies A, F, and G were organized in May; B, H, and I in June, D and K in August, E in September and C in November, 1855. The Ninth and Tenth Infantry were uniformed as other regiments of infantry, with the exception of the knapsack straps and waist belts, which were like those of the French Chasseurs-a-pied. They were also furnished with bugles instead of drums.

The regiment left Fortress Monroe by steamer, December the 15th, 1855, and reached Aspinwall December the 24th. It crossed the Isthmus of Panama by rail, and embarked on the steamships Oregon and Golden Age on the afternoon of that day.

The following interesting contribution by Colonel E. J. Harvie, one of the oldest living ex-officers of the Ninth Infantry, is given as illustrative of the early organization and service of the present regiment.

Colonel Harvie states as follows:

"In response to your pleasant letter of the 28 ult., received by me yesterday, I feel that I cannot ignore your request, and will write what I can of the dear old regiment. Understand, I have very little faith in the memory of other people, after a lapse of fifty years or more, and have still less respect for my own. I give you what occurs to me as I write, and ask you to make allowances for an old man who does not hanker

Digitized by Google

after notoriety. My life is behind me. I see little in the future to attract or interest me.

"I had just passed my twentieth birthday, and gotten through College when I was commissioned Second Lieutenant in the Ninth United States Infantry. I was put on recruiting service, and in charge of, say, two-hundred recruits was ordered to Fort Monroe, Va., where the Ninth Infantry was organized. The regiment was there about six months when, in December, 1855, orders came to go by sea, via the Isthmus of Panama to San Francisco. Field officers: George Wright, Colonel, commanding regiment; Silas Casey, Lieutenant-Colonel of Regiment; Edward Steptoe, Senior Major of regiment; Robert Garnett, Junior Major of regiment. In my judgment, then as now the equal of any infantry officers of their grade at that time in the United States Army.

"The regiment embarked early in December, all ten companies on the steamship St. Louis, very much crowded. Arrived at Aspinwall in about ten days' and crossed on the railroad, Colonel Tuttle the engineer in charge. At Panama the regiment was divided. Six companies, under Colonel Wright, boarded the steamer Golden Age, Commodore Watkins commanding, and four companies under Lieutenant-Colonel Casey on board the John L. Stephens, (I forget the Commander), and both ships left the Isthmus for San Francisco.

"The only incident I can recall during the voyage was a dinner give by the Commodore to the officers of the regiment. Lieutenant McKibben being called on for a toast promptly responded. 'Commodore Watkins worthy of the age in which he lives.' It gave the young lieutenant a send-off, and he received the congratulations of every one.

"We reached San Francisco Christmas day, or the day before, and remained in the harbor two or three days; then off to Oregon and Puget Sound. Six companies, under Colonel Wright, landed at Fort Vancouver and the other four, under Lieutenant-Colonel Casey, went around to Puget Sound and were distributed, I think, at Steilacoom, Port Townsend and Bellingham Bay — I say 'think' because I am not certain where they located.

"Colonel Wright remained at Fort Vancouver, and afterward assumed command at Fort Dalles.

"While at Vancouver the Columbia River Indians went on the war-path. Lieutenant Sheridan, of the Fourth Infantry, was first sent up the river to the Cascades, afterwards reinforced by two or more companies of the Ninth Infantry — Captain Winder's company, the command I belonged to being one of them. While there Lieutenant Sheridan, commanding, and I were sent out on a scout. It was the first time I had

Digitized by Google

ever been under fire. I got used to that sort of music, later, during the Confederate War. While we were at the Cascades, Major Lugenbeel, our senior Captain, christian name Pinkney, built a blockhouse, called critically, 'Pinkney's folly.'

"The six companies were stationed, three at Fort Dalles (Colonel Wright), two at Simcoe (Major Garnett) and one at Fort Walla Walla (Major Steptoe); companies of cavalry and artillery were also at Walla Walla.

"In 1857, if my memory serves me, the Nez Perces Indians and some other tribes, the leading spirit being Kamiakin, became restive and gave trouble. Colonel (Bvt.) Steptoe was ordered to organize a command and bring the Indians to subjection. Not having sufficient force to accomplish this he returned with his command to Walla Walla. Colonel Wright then took the field with a much larger force and did bring the Indians to terms. General Clark, with his accomplished Adjutant-General, Major W. W. Mackall, came up from San Francisco and superintended the fitting out of the expedition himself. On one of the marches I remember stopping at a spring, and a bottle was found in it. It was supposed to have been filled with poison and left there by the Indians — An Irish sergeant, hearing the discussion, touched his hat to one of the officers, and added 'You may try it on me, Captain.'

"When that campaign was ended the troops returned to the posts they had left. Not long after I was promoted to First-Lieutenant and sent to Captain English's company at Fort Steilacoom, and soon after was made Post-Adjutant, Post-Quartermaster and Post-Commissary by order of Lieutenant Colonel Casey.

"I neglected to say that one of the companies of the Ninth Infantry, stationed at Simcoe, was commanded by Captain Bowman. One day he started for Fort Dalles and was not afterwards heard of. It was supposed the wolves attacked and killed him. He was survived by his wife and daughter. Lieutenant Henry Douglas married the daughter.

"Lieutenant Philip Owen, just above me on the list of Second-Lieutenants, was married to the daughter of Colonel Wright in 1857, I think, and I was complimented by an invitation to act as 'best man.'

"While at Steilacoom the trouble with the English at Bellingham Bay occurred. General Harney ordered Captain George Pickett with his company to occupy that post. For a time things looked squally, but they subsequently quieted down when General Scott was ordered out to the Pacific Coast by the United States Government.

"In the summer of 1860 I applied for a leave of absence to visit my home and people in Virginia. Before my leave expired the 'war'

Digitized by Google

broke out, and I sent in my resignation; it was promptly accepted, after which I was immediately commissioned Captain of Infantry C. S. A., and was soon after assigned to the staff, and continued on that duty all through the war.

"I hope I have not said too much about myself. I did not see how I could say less and say intelligently what I have endeavored to tell you. Please understand I did not volunteer this letter; you requested it, and I did not think I could decline what you asked of me.

"For officers of the Ninth Infantry who distinguished themselves during the war between the States, I must refer you to the military annals of that time. I can give you four names — the others had commands, but I was in Tennessee for the last two years of the war, and knew very little of the 'Army of Northern Virginia.' The names of four officers who resigned their commissions in the Ninth United States Infantry in 1861, to go South, and subsequently became distinguished in the war are Major, afterward General R. S. Garnett, who was in command at Cheat Mountain, and was killed there; Captain, afterwards General Charles S. Winder, who stood high in the estimation of Stonewall Jackson, killed at the battle of Cedar Mountain, Va., August 9, 1862. His commission as Major-General was received just after his death; Captain, afterwards General George Pickett, who led the famous charge at Gettysburg. He died several years after the war in Norfolk, Va.; and Captain, afterwards General James Archer, of Maryland, whose command I do not know; but he stood high in the army of Northern Virginia.

"Permit me to end my letter by referring briefly to General Jos. E. Johnston. He came to live in Washington some years after the war. I was a constant visitor at his house, and always a welcome guest. On one occasion, not long before his death, he talked freely of the Dalton-Atlanta campaign. Taking advantage of a lull in the conversation, I said, 'General, the highest compliment I ever had paid me came from yourself; when recovering from wounds you received before Richmond, you were again given a command and sent south, with headquarters at Chattanooga. You immediately wrote the Adjutant-General in Richmond, and asked to have me rejoin your staff.' (I was then on General Lee's Staff.) His reply, quick and forceful was, 'Not equal yours to me, Sir, when you left General Lee's staff for mine.' "

As partially indicating the character of the work of the regiment during this period, the following extracts from an article by Major Eben Swift, in the Centennial of the U. S. Military Academy, are given:

"On the Pacific slope the Indians were a cruel, craven and degraded lot, and no high standard was set up, so far as faith and mercy are con-

Digitized by Google

cerned, by the white settlers. As the Indians were not confined to reservations prior to 1857 the whites naturally took the best land in sight, thus placing their claims in opposition to those of the Indians, who also subsisted largely by agriculture.

"Several bands of white men, calling themselves volunteers, whose real purpose was plunder and murder, kept up a state of terror and committed many black crimes.

"Upon the army fell the unworthy task of punishing the Indians for their faults, while the white miscreants hid beneath the giant's robe of American citizenship, like the paltry thieves they were.

"Governor Isaac I. Stevens made many treaties with the Indians of the Northwest, and in 1857 a tract as large as New England, with Indiana added, was nominally ceded to the Government, at an average price of 4 cents per acre. The Indians were gradually concentrated by force and persuasion, but it was years before the treaties were finally carried out. Steven's policy has had many critics, and a General of the army has characterized him as a fatal blunderer. He simply followed the well-defined policy of the Government and does not deserve such harsh judgment.

"During the period now under consideration there were about 50 engagements between the troops and the Indians, divided in almost equal proportion between California, Oregon, and Washington. . . . .

"A war between the Yakimas and the Klikatats was conducted by Brevet Major Gabriel R. Rains, Fourth Infantry, and Colonel George Wright brought it to a conclusion. The serious incident of this war was the engagement at Simcoe Valley, Oregon, in which a detachment of 100 men of the Fourth Infantry was forced to retreat with a loss of nearly one-fourth of the command.

"In May, 1858, Lieutenant-Colonel Steptoe, with a command of three troops of the First Dragoons, and one company of the Ninth Infantry (159 men in all), while on a scout to arrest some depredators, was surrounded and attacked by an overwhelming force of Spokanes, Pelouses, Coeur d'Alenes, Yakimas, and smaller tribes. The commanding officer concluded to retrace his steps and assigned the duty of flanking the column to Brevet Captain Oliver H. P. Taylor and Lieutenant William P. Gaston, First Dragoons. Both of these fine officers were killed.

"Taylor had already distinguished himself on a number of occasions, while Gaston had only recently joined. The command made a night march of 75 miles, and owed its escape largely to the Nez Perce Indians at the Snake River, where the pursuit was stopped and the troops assisted across.

Digitized by Google

"A punitive expedition was then organized by Colonel George Wright, Ninth Infantry, in September. The Indians were completely routed in three engagements, great herds of their horses were captured and shot, their winter stores of provisions were burned. It was at the outset of this expedition, at the Cascades of the Columbia, that Philip Henry Sheridan, then a subaltern of the Fourth Infantry, first won his spurs and was especially mentioned in orders.

"Wright had shown energy and ability in the Florida and Mexican wars, and three years before in this same field of operations.

"His services in keeping California in the Union, and his death at sea while actively on duty, are a part of another story.

"Part of the Spokane expedition just noticed consisted of a side scout by Major Robert S. Garnett, Ninth Infantry, which resulted in the capture and execution of some of the murderers of the white miners. A hostile camp was charged at three o'clock in the morning on August 15, 1858, in which Lieutenant Jesse K. Allen, Ninth Infantry, was killed. . . .

"In 1855–1858 the Indians in the Puget Sound district went on the war path and were subdued by troops under Lieutenant Colonel Silas Casey, Ninth Infantry. Lieutenant W. A. Slaughter, Fourth Infantry, was killed in an attack on his camp at Brannan's Prairie, December 4, 1855. Lieutenant August V. Kautz, Fourth Infantry, was wounded at Brannan's Prairie, and was again wounded a few months later on the White River. Lieutenant Horatio Gates Gibson, Third Artillery, was severely wounded at Hungry Hill, October 31, 1855.

"In July, 1859, some depredations were committed by Klamath Indians in northern California, which were settled by the Klamath chief, bringing in the heads of three of the culprits and promising to get the others. As this event is noticed in the report of the Secretary of War for that year, with apparent approval, it may be taken as a satisfactory way of settling such an affair in those days."

Prior to the arrival of the Ninth Infantry, at their new stations in Washington Territory, there had been considerable trouble between the Indians and settlers.

In October, 1855, the Yakima Indian War broke out and an expedition under the command of Major Haller had been sent out from the Dalles of the Columbia to chastise them, but the expedition had not been successful; in fact, it had been driven back, losing a number of men and two mountain howitzers.

A second expedition, under Major Rains, Fourth Infantry, then commanding the district, was sent out from Dalles, October 30, 1855, to retrieve this disaster. This command was composed of a small body

Digitized by Google

of regular troops and a regiment of Oregon mounted volunteers under the command of Colonal James W. Nesmith. The whole force was under Major Rains, who, in order that he might rank Nesmith, had been made a Brigadier-General, under an appointment from the Governor of Washington Territory.

Owing to the slow progress of the expedition and the selection of the longer of two routes to its objective point, nothing was accomplished beyond several slight skirmishes with the Indians, who easily escaped to the Okenagan country, taking with them their families and stock.

The failure of the Haller expedition, from lack of a sufficient force, and of the Rains expedition from the incompetency of its Commander was a great mortification to the officers and men connected with them, and, taken together, had a marked effect upon the Indian situation in Oregon and Washington Territories at that particular time.

Besides it led to further complications and troubles, for it had begun to dawn upon the Indians that the whites wanted to come in and dispossess them of their lands and homes, and the failures of Haller and Rains fostered the belief with the Indians that they could successfully resist the pressure of civilization.

General P. H. Sheridan, in his memoirs, gives the following interesting account of operations in this vicinity while serving there as a Lieutenant in the Fourth Infantry, but temporarily detached for service with a detachment of dragoons.

"Acting under these influences, the Spokanes, Walla Wallas, Umatillas, and Nez Perces cast their lot with the hostiles, and all the savage inhabitants of the region east of the Cascade Range became involved in a dispute as to whether the Indians or the Government should possess certain sections of the country, which finally culminated in the war of 1856. Partly to meet the situation that was approaching the Ninth Infantry had been sent out from the Atlantic coast to Washington Territory, and, upon its arrival at Fort Vancouver, encamped in front of the officers' quarters, on the beautiful parade ground of that post, and set about preparations for the coming campaign. The Commander, Colonel George Wright, who had been promoted to the colonelcy of the regiment upon its organization the previous year, had seen much active duty since his graduation, over thirty years before, serving with credit in the Florida and Mexican Wars. For the three years previous to his assignment to the Ninth Infantry he had been stationed on the Pacific Coast, and the experience he had acquired, added to his excellent soldierly qualities, was of much benefit in the active campaign in which, during the following years, he was to participate. . . . .

Digitized by Google

"Colonel Wright took command of the district in place of Rains, and had been at Vancouver but a short time before he realized that it would be necessary to fight the confederated tribes east of the Cascade Range of mountains in order to disabuse them of the idea that they were sufficiently strong to cope with the power of the Government.

"He therefore at once set about the work of organizing and equipping his troops for a start in the early spring against the hostile Indians, intending to make the objective point of his expedition the heart of the Spokane country, on the Upper Columbia River, as the head and front of the confederation was represented in the person of the old Cammiackan, Chief of the Spokanes.

"The regiment[1] moved from Fort Vancouver by boat, March 25, 1856, and landed at the small town called Dalles, below the mouth of the Des Chutes River, at the eastern base of the Cascade Range, and just a little above where the Columbia River enters those mountains. This rendezvous was to be the immediate point of departure, and all the troops composing the expedition were concentrated here.

"On the morning of March 26 the movement began, but the column had only reached Five Mile Creek when the Yakimas, joined by many young warriors — free lances — from other tribes, made a sudden and unexpected attack at the Cascades of the Columbia, midway between Vancouver and the Dalles, killed several citizens, women and children, and took possession of the Portage by besieging the settlers in their cabins at the Upper Cascades, and those who sought shelter at the Middle Cascades, in the old military blockhouse which had been built some years before as a place of refuge under just such circumstances.

"These points held out, and were not captured, but the landing at the lower Cascades fell completely into the hands of the savages. Straggling settlers from the Lower Cascades made their way down to Fort Vancouver, distant about 36 miles, which they reached that night, and communicated the condition of affairs. As the necessity for early relief to the settlers and the re-establishment of communication with the Dalles were apparent, all the force that could be spared was ordered out, and in consequence I immediately received instructions to go with my detachment of dragoons, numbering about forty effective men, to the relief of the middle blockhouse, which really meant to retake the Cascades. . . . .

"When the Indians attacked the people at the Cascades, on the 26th,

[1] General Sheridan is slightly in error here. The detailed operations by months will show the exact movements and companies engaged. The entire regiment was engaged but at various times, and operating from different points.

Digitized by Google

word was sent to Colonel Wright, who had already got out from the Dalles a few miles on his expedition to the Spokane country. He immediately turned his column back, and soon after I had landed and communicated with the beleaguered blockhouse the advance of his command arrived under Lieutenant-Colonel Edward J. Steptoe. I reported to Steptoe, and related what had occurred during the past thirty-six hours, gave him a description of the festivities that were going on at the lower Cascades, and also communicated the intelligence that the Yakimas had been joined by the Cascade Indians when the place was first attacked. . . . .

"The Cascade Indians were much frightened and demoralized at the turn events had taken, for the Yakimas, at the approach of Steptoe, had abandoned them, as predicted, and fled to the mountains.

"The chief and head men said they had nothing to do with the capture of the Cascades, with the murder of the men at the upper landing, nor with the massacre of the men, women and children near the block house, and put all the blame on the Yakimas and their allies."

This proved to be a falsehood, as all the Indians guns showed the stains of burnt powder. Their arms were at once taken from them and a guard placed over the women, children and very old men. Thirteen of the principal miscreants were taken across the river and placed under a strong guard. The following day Lieutenant Sheridan turned his prisoners over to Colonel Wright, who had them sent to the upper landing of the Cascades, where, after a trial by a military commission, nine of them were sentenced to death and duly hanged. General Sheridan further states that he was afterwards informed "that in the absence of the usual mechanical apparatus used on such occasions, a tree with a convenient limb under which two empty barrels were placed, one on top of the other, furnished a rude but certain substitute. In executing the sentence each Indian in turn was made to stand on the top of the top barrel, and after the noose was adjusted the lower barrel was knocked away, and the necessary drop thus obtained. In this way the whole nine were punished. Just before death they all acknowledged their guilt by confessing their participation in the massacre at the blockhouse, and met their doom with the stoicism of their race."

Several days after the events related above it was reported that the family of Spencer, a very influential, peaceable Chinook chief, was missing. He had been taken by Colonel Wright, as an interpreter and mediator with the Spokanes and other hostile tribes against which the campaign was directed. He was a good reliable Indian, and, on leaving to join Colonel Wright, took his family along, to remain with relatives and

Digitized by Google

friends at Fort Dalles until the return of the expedition; and for some unknown reason this family had started to return to Vancouver. After thorough search they were discovered between the upper and lower landing, in a small open space about a mile from the road, all dead — strangled to death with bits of rope.

"The party consisted of the mother, two youths, three girls, and a baby.

"They had all been killed by white men who had probably met the innocent creatures somewhere near the blockhouse, driven them from the road into the timber, where the cruel murders were committed without provocation, and for no other purpose than the gratification of the inordinate hatred of the Indian that has often existed on the frontier, and which on more than one occasion has failed to distinguish friend from foe. . . . .

"The perpetrators were citizens living near the middle blockhouse, whose wives and children had been killed a few days before by the hostiles, but who well knew that these unoffending creatures had had nothing to do with those murders."

Colonel Wright's campaign continued during the summer and into the early winter, and the detailed monthly operations and reference to the map will show clearly the remarkable activity of the regiment during their entire stay on the Pacific Coast. Extended operations were made into the Spokane country, Four lakes, Coeur d'Alene Mission, and into many other districts, each one involving extended marches often aggregating hundreds of miles. In May, 1858, it will be seen that one scouting party of 25 men, after a six-hour battle against 1,000 Indians the preceding day, started that night on a forced march back to the post, and in 20 to 24 hours covered about 85 miles, arriving at two o'clock in the afternoon.

Numerous incidents such as related above could be related, but lack of space compels us to limit the narrative to a brief statement as to the military events without attempting to make a story of it.

Headquarters, Band and Companies A, B, E, F, I, and K on steamship Oregon; Companies C, D, G, and H on steamship Golden Age, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Casey. The Oregon, with Headquarters, etc., sailed from Panama December 26, 1855, and arrived at San Francisco January 12, 1856. Sailed from there January 16, 1856, and arrived at Fort Vancouver, Washington Territory, January 21, 1856, where Headquarters, etc., took station. The battalion, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Casey, arrived at San Francisco, California, January 15, 1856, and sailed January 17, 1856, arriving at Fort Vancouver

Digitized by Google



MAP OF PORTION OF THEATRE OF OPERATIONS OF THE NINTH INFANTRY, 1856-61.
SCALE, 1 INCH = 50 MILES.

Digitized by Google

January 22, 1856, where Companies C and G took station. Lieutenant Colonel Casey, with Companies D and H sailed for Fort Steilacoom, Washington Territory, January 27, 1856, and arrived and took station there January 30, 1856.

FEBRUARY, 1856

Company D marched from Fort Steilacoom, Washington Territory, February 13, 1856, and arrived at Puyallup River February 15. Left Puyallup River February 28, and arrived at Fernells Prairie February 29. Private Chas. Kehl, Company D, while on post near Lemmons Prairie, February 29, killed "Kanasket," an Indian chief. Company H left Fort Steilacoom February 21, and arrived at Muckleshoot Prairie February 28, both companies operating against Indians.

MARCH, 1856

Headquarters with Companies A, E, F, and I left Fort Vancouver March 8, and arrived at Fort Dalles, Oregon, March 10. Left Fort Dalles March 26, with an expedition for Fort Walla Walla, Washington Territory, under command of Colonel George Wright, Ninth Infantry. Camped 6 miles from Fort Dalles, and countermarched the next morning for the Cascades. Arrived there at daybreak of March 28, and engaged, hostile Indians, routing them with a loss of three warriors. One private, Company E, killed, and one private, Company A, wounded.

Companies C and G left Fort Vancouver March 10, and arrived at Fort Dalles March 11.

Company C left Fort Dalles March 31st, and arrived at the Cascades same day.

Companies B and K left Fort Vancouver by steamer March 11, and arrived at Fort Steilacoom, Washington Territory March 14th; left Fort Steilacoom March 20, and arrived at Thomas Ferry, Washington Territory March 25 Companies D and H left Fernells Prairie, and arrived at Connells Prairie March 15, and engaged a party of hostile Indians the same day, near White River, in which affair one private, Company H, was killed and two privates wounded. Both companies scouting until the 30th inst.

APRIL, 1856

The Headquarters and Companies A and C left the Cascades and arrived at Fort Dalles April 24. Left Fort Dalles with the Yakima Expedition April 28, and arrived at Klikatat River April 30. Company I left the Cascades and arrived at Fort Vancouver April 5. Companies B and K, under Captain Dent, surprised Nelson's Camp April 25, both companies scouting during the month. Company D was on a scout to

Digitized by Google

Boise Creek and White River from April 1 to 4. Company H left Muckleshoot Prairie April 6, and arrived at Fort Steilacoom April 7.

MAY, 1856

The Headquarters and Companies A and C left Klikatat River May 2, arrived at Na-chess River, May 9. Company B left Thomas Ferry, White River, May 26, enroute for Colonel Wright's command in the Yakima country, and arrived at Chehalis River May 31. Company D was scouting during the month. Company E erecting buildings, etc., at Fort Dalles. Company F left Cascades May 16th, arrived at Fort Dalles May 17th. Company I left Fort Vancouver May 15, arrived at Fort Dalles May 17th. Companies F, G, and I, under Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Steptoe, left Fort Dalles May 23, arrived Yakima River, 29th. Company H — detachments of the company were scouting during the month, and one under command of Second Lieutenant D. B. McKibbin, from the 1st to 9th inst., killed 3 Indians and took 16 prisoners. Company K constantly scouting until the 25th inst., when the company left Muckleshoot Prairie and arrived at Cowlitz River 31st inst.

JUNE, 1856

The Headquarters and Companies A, B, C, and K left Na-chess River 18th inst., and arrived at Camp on Upper Yakima River, near Snoqualamie Pass, June 24. Companies F, G, and I remained at Na-chess River under command of Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Steptoe. Companies B and K left White River May 25, arrived at Na-chess River, June 13th. Company D left Muckleshoot Prairie 24, arrived at Fort Steilacoom 25th inst.

JULY, 1856

The Headquarters and Companies A, B, C, and K left Camp on Yakima River, 3rd inst., and arrived at Wenatchee River 6th inst.

The country between the Yakima and Wenatchee Rivers is composed of an almost impassable range of mountains, whose summits were, in the middle of the present month — July — covered with snow. The expedition experienced much difficulty in making the passage at this range, the trail being so narrow in many places as to admit of only one man passing at a time, and in others, while winding around a precipice the trail was frequently found impassable for mules, the loose earth and stones having given way and rolled down the precipice, beneath the tread of the men. This caused considerable delay as the pick axe and spade had to be brought into requisition in order to get the animals over. However, owing to the energetic determination and patient endurance

Digitized by Google

of the officers and men of the command, the expedition arrived at the Wenatchee River without the loss of a single man or animal. The country passed over was hitherto unknown to the whites and deemed by the Indians impracticable for military operations — At the Wenatchee River 500 of the hostile Indians surrendered unconditionally. The expedition left the Wenatchee River July 9th in company with the Indians, and arrived at the Yakima River July 12th. The Wenatchee River is as large as the Yakima. Company A left Yakima River on the 16th for Fort Dalles, where it arrived on the 21st. The Headquarters and Companies B and K left Yakima River on the 21st and arrived at To-pon-ish Creek on the 28th. Companies D, E, F, G and H no change. Company I marched to Wenass Creek en route to the Yakima River on the 31st inst.

August, 1856

The Headquarters and Companies A, C, E, and H stationary. Company B left To-pon-ish Creek August 8th and arrived at Fort Dalles August 12th. Left Fort Dalles August 13th to make a wagon road to Fort Simcoe, Washington Territory, on which work it was engaged at the end of the month. Company D left Fort Steilacoom, Washington Territory, August 21st on brig "George Emory" for Bellingham Bay, Washington Territory where it arrived August 26th. Companies F and G left Na-chess River August 5th and arrived at Fort Simcoe, Washington Territory, August 8th. Company I left Wenass Creek August 1st and arrived at Yakima River same day. Company K left To-pon-ish Creek August 10th and arrived at Salmon Falls, Yakima River, August 31st, en route to Walla Walla.

September, 1856

Company B left the Simcoe Mountains September 15th and arrived at Fort Dalles September 17th. Company C left Yakima River September 16th and arrived at Fort Simcoe September 18th. Company H. left Fort Steilacoom September 2nd and arrived at Muckleshoot Prairie September 3rd. Company I left Yakima River Sept 10th and arrived at Fort Simcoe September 13th. Company K left camp near Salmon Falls, Yakima River, September 1st and arrived at Fort Walla Walla, an abandoned Hudson Bay Company's Station September 7th.

October, 1856

The Colonel commanding the Regiment and Columbia River District, and the Regimental Quartermaster, with Company A, left Fort Dalles

Digitized by Google

October 5th and arrived at Fort Walla Walla October 17th. Company F left Fort Simcoe October 9th and arrived at Fort Dalles October 12th.

NOVEMBER, 1856

The Colonel, Regimental Quartermaster and Company A left Fort Walla Walla November 1st and arrived at Fort Dalles November 9th.

Company A remained at Fort Dalles.

The Colonel and Regimental Quartermaster arrived at Fort Vancouver November 12th.

The Headquarters left Fort Vancouver November 28th and arrived at Fort Dalles November 29th.

Company H left Muckleshoot Prairie November 4th and arrived at Fort Steilacoom November 6th.

DECEMBER, 1856 to MARCH, 1857.

The regiment has been stationary in quarters the weather being too cold for field operations.

APRIL, 1857

Company A left Fort Dalles April 20th and arrived at Fort Vancouver April 21st; left Fort Vancouver April 23rd and arrived at Fort Dalles April 25th.

Company B left Fort Dalles April 15th and arrived at Fort Hoskins, Oregon, April 18th. Company K left Fort Walla Walla April 16th and arrived at Fort Dalles April 25th.

MAY, 1857

Company B left Fort Hoskins May 1st and arrived at Fort Dalles May 4th. Company E left Fort Dalles May 12th and arrived at Fort Walla Walla May 25th. Company F left Fort Simcoe May 30th, en route to Fort Dalles and arrived at Snow Mountain May 31st.

JUNE, 1857

Company F, en route for Bellingham Bay, arrived there June 21st and was detailed as escort to the Commission to run the boundary line between Washington Territory and the British Possessions.

AUGUST, 1857

Company F left camp near Bellingham Bay August 4th and encamped on Semiahmoo Bay near Port Roberts, Washington Territory, August 5th.

Digitized by Google

Company B left Fort Dalles August 1st and arrived at Fort Walla Walla August 10th.

Company H left Post on Muckleshoot Prairie August 7th and arrived at Fort Steilacoom August 8th.

May, 1858

Company B left Fort Walla Walla May 16th, en route to the mouth of Palouse River, with a reinforcement and provisions to Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Steptoe and were ordered from that point by forced marches to join the Colonel at or near Red Wolf Crossing, at Snake River, which they did on the 20th, and returned to the post on the 22nd.

Company E, 3 sergeants, 2 corporals, 1 bugler and 19 privates formed a portion of a command which left Fort Walla Walla May 6th and marched 150 miles north and west into the Spokane country. About 8 o'clock on the morning of the 17th the command was attacked by about 1,000 Indians. The action was very warm for six hours. After that the fire abated but was continued until dark. On the night following the action, a forced march was commenced and in twenty to twenty-four hours, eighty to eighty-five miles were made without anything to eat. The company reached the post May 22nd about 2 P. M.

June, 1858

Company A marched from Fort Dalles June 10th and proceeded to Klikatat blockhouse, 25 miles, as an escort to the Fort Simcoe supply train and to look after a band of marauding Indians. The main body of the company returned to the post on the 12th. 19 men of the company proceeded with the train to Fort Simcoe, returning on the 16th.

August, 1858

Company B left Fort Walla Walla on the 15th on an expedition against the Northern Indians, and arrived in camp on Four Lakes, August 31st.

Company E, 43 rank and file, left Fort Walla Walla August 15th on an expedition against Northern Indians and arrived at Four Lakes August 31st.

Companies C, G, and I left Fort Simcoe August 10th, forming part of an expedition under Major Garnett against hostile Indians north of Fort Simcoe.

September, 1858

Companies B and E were engaged during the month in two affairs with Indians. One on the 1st, near Four Lakes, Washington Territory which continued five hours. The second on the Spokane plain, on the

Digitized by Google

5th, lasting seven hours. In both the enemy was signally defeated and routed at all points. The companies left Four Lakes September 5th, and marched northerly to Coeur d'Alene Mission. From thence, on the 18th to camp on Palouse River. Total distance marched during the month, 209¾ miles

Companies I and C left camp on En-ti-al-kwa River September 1st, and continued their march towards the north until September 10th. The companies arrived at Fort Simcoe September 23d, having marched, since August 10th, about 550 miles, including a scout of three days duration east of the Columbia River.

Company G left camp on En-ti-al-kwa River September 1st, and marched down said river to near its mouth. The same evening the company was mounted on mules on saddles and pack saddles and started on a scout, marching all that night. Joining the command again in three days it marched with it to a point on Okinakane River and thence to Fort Simcoe, arriving on the 23rd, having marched, since August 10th, about 597 miles.

OCTOBER, 1858

Companies B and E left camp on Palouse River October 1st, crossed Snake River same day and camped at Fort Taylor, Washington Territory. Leaving Fort Taylor October 4th they arrived at Fort Walla Walla October 5th, having marched 65 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1858

On the 10th Second Lieutenant J. B. S. Alexander, with the First Sergeant and 13 privates, Company G mounted, started on a scout, marching to the Columbia River, near Priests Rapids, and returning to Fort Simcoe on the 18th.

MAY, 1859

Companies A and K left Fort Dalles, en route to Colville Depot, May 14th, and arrived at Fort Walla Walla May 27. Distance marched, 172½ miles.

Companies C and I left Fort Simcoe May 28th, en route to Okinakane Valley.

Company G left Fort Simcoe May 11th, and arrived at Fort Dalles May 15th.

JUNE, 1859

Regimental Headquarters, Staff and Band, left Fort Dalles, Oregon, June the 15th, and arrived at Fort Walla Walla June the 17th. Companies A and K left Fort Walla Walla June the 1st, and arrived in Colville Valley June the 20th. Distance, 210½ miles.

Digitized by Google

SAN JUAN BOUNDARY

The San Juan boundary question was a question at issue for twenty-five years between England and the United States concerning their respective claims to the San Juan or Haro Archipelago, in the Gulf of Georgia, on the Pacific Coast, covering an area of three hundred square miles.

The possession of this group, owing to its commanding the straits between British Columbia and the United States, led to constant disputes between the two countries, owing to the uncertain interpretation of the Treaty of Washington, June 12, 1846, respecting the boundaries.

In negotiating the treaty of 1846, by which the 49th parallel, from the Rocky Mountains to the sea, was made the boundary, the course of the line through the channel which divides Vancouver Island from the mainland was not defined.

The Americans contended for the Canal de Haro, the British for the Rosario Strait. On July 27, 1859, Company D, 9th Infantry, was sent from Fort Bellingham to occupy San Juan Island, and on August 10, 1859, Company H, Ninth Infantry, was sent to reinforce it.

In November, 1859, both companies were withdrawn.

The Island of San Juan was again occupied at "Camp Pickett" by Company D, Ninth Infantry, only to be withdrawn on July 24, 1861, being replaced by Company H, which arrived same date.

Company H was again withdrawn on November 16, 1861.

At first, for a time, hostilities were imminent between the American and British forces, the Americans being greatly outnumbered.

To avoid conflict it was decided that both nations occupy the island of San Juan at opposite ends.

The matter, by a second Treaty of Washington, was referred for arbitration to the Emperor of Germany, who decided in favor of the United States, October 1872.

The Islands were evacuated by the British on November 22, 1873.

JULY, 1860

Regimental Headquarters, Staff and Band, transferred from Fort Walla Walla to Fort Vancouver July the 20th. Company F left camp on Semiahmoo Bay, 49° N. lat., July the 16th, and arrived at Fort Steilacoom July the 18th.

OCTOBER, 1860

Company B with Company E, First Dragoons, detachments from Company I, First Dragoons and Company E, Ninth Infantry, left Fort

Digitized by Google

Walla Walla October the 11th, under the command of Captain F. T. Dent, Ninth Infantry, for the rescue of the fugitive emigrants from the massacre of the 9th and 10th of September, 1860, and arrived in camp on Spring Branch, Oregon Trail, on the return march, October the 31st. Distance, 292 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1860

Captain Dent's command left camp on Spring Branch, Oregon Trail, November the 1st, and arrived at Fort Walla Walla, November the 7th. Distance, 128 miles.

MARCH, 1861

Company I left Fort Colville March the 20th, and arrived at Columbia River, Latitude N. 49°, March the 22nd. Distance, 63 miles.

APRIL, 1861

Company I left camp on Columbia River April the 3rd, arrived Fort Colville April the 6th.

MAY, 1861

A detachment of two commissioned officers and one hundred rank and file, selected from Companies A, B, C, E, I and K, were detailed to do service as escort to the Walla Walla and Fort Benton Wagon-Road Expedition, under command of First-Lieutenant John Mullen, Second Artillery.

JUNE, 1861

Company B left Fort Walla Walla June the 21st, arrived at Fort Hoskins, Oregon, June the 27th. Company E left Fort Walla Walla June the 6th, arrived at Fort Dalles June the 16th. Left Fort Dalles June the 17th and proceeded by steamer to Fort Vancouver. Arrived the same evening and continued down the river, and left on steamer Cortes for San Francisco, California, where it arrived June the 20th and went into camp June the 22nd. Company G left Fort Dalles, June the 10th, arrived at Fort Vancouver same day. Company I left Fort Colville June the 26th, and camped on Rock Creek, Washington Territory, June the 30th. Distance, 104 miles.

During the years 1860, 1861, the following Captains and Lieutenants served with the regiment:

Captains:

Pinkney Lugenbeel
D. Woodruff
Frederick T. Dent
J. J. Archer
G. S. Pickett
Crawford Fletcher
C. S. Winder
Henry M. Black
T. C. English
J. W. Fraser

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenants:

James Van Voast
Hugh B. Fleming
Lyman Bissell
Henry Douglas
G. W. Carr
William Meyers
J. C. Howard
Phillip A. Owen
Charles R. Wood
E. J. Harvie

Second Lieutenants:

Charles A. Reynolds
William B. Hughes
D. B. McKibben
Elisha E. Camp
N. Wickliffe
P. J. Quattlebaum
James W. Forsyth
R. H. Anderson
J. B. S. Alexander
C. G. Harker

Brevet Second Lieutenants:

J. J. Upham

JULY, 1861

Company D left San Juan Island, July 24th, arrived at Fort Steilacoom July 26th. Company H left Fort Steilacoom July 22nd, and arrived at San Juan Island July 24th. Company I left camp on Rock Creek, Washington Territory July 1st, and arrived at Snake River July 5th, Fort Dalles July 7th, Oregon City July 8th, and Fort Yamhill, Oregon, July 12th, to which post the company had been assigned. Company K left Fort Colville July 10th, and arrived at Fort Dalles July 28th

AUGUST, 1861

Company K left Fort Dalles August 23rd, and arrived at Fort Cascades same day.

SEPTEMBER, 1861

Company E left Camp Sumner, California, September 9th, and embarked on United States Steamship Active, and arrived at San Pedro, California, on the 11th. Marching from that point, on the 12th, it arrived at Camp at San Bernardino, California, on the 16th. Distance marched, 85 miles.

OCTOBER, 1861

Company E left for the Eastern States October 21st.

NOVEMBER, 1861

Company A left Fort Colville November 19th, and arrived at Fort Walla Walla November 30th. Distance marched, 211 miles. Company B left Fort Hoskins, Oregon, November 6th, arrived at Fort Vancouver November 9th. Left Fort Vancouver November 19th, and

Digitized by Google

arrived at Camp Wright Presidio, at San Francisco, California, November 24th. Company C left Fort Colville November 19th, and arrived at Fort Walla Walla November 30th. Distance marched, 211 miles. Company D left Fort Steilacoom, November 16th, arrived at Camp Wright November 24th. Company F left Fort Steilacoom November 16th, arrived at Camp Wright November 24th. Company G left Fort Vancouver November 8th, arrived at Camp Wright November 14th. Company H left San Juan Island November 16th, arrived at Camp Wright November 24th. Company I left Fort Yamhill, Oregon, November 12th, arrived at Camp Wright November 24th. Company K left Fort Cascades November 6th, arrived at Camp Wright November 14th. The Regimental Headquarters were transferred to San Francisco, California, November 25.

DECEMBER, 1861

Companies A and C left Fort Walla Walla December 2nd, arrived at Fort Vancouver December 9th. Company K moved from Camp Wright to Fort Point, California, December 28th.

JANUARY, 1862

Company E — 26 privates were transferred to the Fourth Infantry, January 27. The officers, non-commissioned officers, and musicians, were ordered to the Pacific Coast to join their regiment.

FEBRUARY, 1862

Company C left Fort Vancouver February 14th, and arrived at San Juan Island February 17th. Company E left Washington, D. C., February 2nd, and arrived at New York same day. Embarked on steamship Northern Light February 11th. Arrived at Aspinwall and crossed the Isthmus of Panama, February 20th, and embarked on steamship Golden Gate, for San Francisco.

MARCH, 1862

Company E arrived at San Francisco, California, and took post at the Presidio, March 7.

AUGUST, 1862

The Headquarters were transferred from San Francisco to the Presidio, August 1, 1862.

Seventy-six enlisted men returned from detached service, having served as escort to the Fort Benton Wagon-Road Expedition for the past fifteen months.

Digitized by Google

SEPTEMBER, 1862

Company G left Presidio September 13th, and arrived at Alcatraz Island the same day.

MARCH, 1863

Company I transferred from Presidio to Fort Point, California. Company K transferred from Fort Point to Presidio, California.

APRIL, 1863

Company K transferred from Presidio to Alcatraz Island, April 16th.

JULY, 1863

Company I transferred from Fort Point to Presidio July 10th.

OCTOBER, 1863

Company H transferred from Presidio to Point San Jose October 13th. Company I transferred from Presidio to Fort Point October 29th.

JULY, 1864

Company F transferred from Presidio to Alcatraz Island July 28th.

OCTOBER, 1864

Company E transferred from Presidio to San Francisco, for duty, as Provost Guard, October 3rd.

NOVEMBER, 1864

Company B transferred from Presidio to Camp Reynolds, Angel Island, November 14th.

JANUARY, 1865

Company E transferred from San Francisco to Fort Point. Company I transferred from Fort Point to San Francisco, Provost Guard.

MAY, 1865

Company F transferred from San Francisco to Alcatraz Island May 25th. Company G transferred from San Francisco to Point San Jose May 13th. Company H left Point San Jose May 13th, arrived at San Francisco same date. Left San Francisco, and arrived at Alcatraz Island May 25th.

JULY, 1865

On the 30th of the month the regiment lost its Colonel, George Wright, Brigadier-General, United States Volunteers, and Brevet Brig-

Digitized by Google

adier-General, U. S. A., who was drowned at sea by the wreck of the steamer Brother Jonathan, while en route to assume command of the Department of the Columbia. General Wright's service had been long and varied. He graduated at the Military Academy in 1822, and had served with distinction in many parts of the country. He had received the Brevet of Major for meritorious conduct in the Florida War, and the Brevets of Lieutenant-Colonel, and Colonel for gallant conduct in battle in the Mexican War. In 1858, in Washington Territory, he subdued the Indians and brought about a peace that it is believed has never been broken. Not the least valuable of his services was rendered on the Pacific Coast during the War of the Rebellion, where, by his conduct of affairs, he was largely instrumental in preserving California to the Union. The Regimental Orders, announcing his death, after reciting his military record, continue as follows: "Placed in command of the immense Department of the Pacific shortly after the outbreak of the recent Rebellion, he, by his wisdom, so managed the great interests under his control that the burden of the war was scarcely felt within its borders. Deaf alike to the goadings of rebellious spirits and the frenzied appeals of timid loyalists, he pursued his course with firmness and moderation to the glorious result. Without bloodshed he accomplished the work of the statesman and soldier, protected the honor of his country's flag, and preserved peace."

General Wright was succeeded by Colonel John H. King, Brevet Major-General, U. S. A., who assumed command of the regiment in December, 1866.

August, 1865

Company B transferred from Angel Island to Point San Jose August the 26th. Company G transferred from Point San Jose to Presidio August the 26th.

September, 1865

Companies E and I transferred from Fort Point to the Presidio.

Companies F, H and K transferred from Alcatraz Island to the Presidio September the 28th.

October, 1865

Company A left Cape Disappointment October the 11th, arrived Presidio, San Francisco, California, October the 15th. Company C left San Juan Island October the 11th, arrived Presidio October 15th. Company D left Fort Vancouver October 2nd, arrived Presidio October 6th.

Digitized by Google

November, 1865

Company D left the Presidio November the 7th, arrived at Drum Barracks, California, November the 9th. Company E left Presidio November the 6th, on steamer Del Norte, arrived at Fort Humboldt, California, November the 8th. Company F left Presidio November the 11th, arrived at Fort Churchill, Nevada, November the 23rd. Marched 180 miles. Company G left Presidio on steamer Del Norte November the 6th, arrived at Camp Lincoln, California, November the 11th. Company H left Presidio November the 4th, arrived at Fort McGarry, Nevada, November the 25th. Marched 270 miles. Company I left Presidio November the 11th, for Camp Ruby, Nevada, arrived at Sink of Carson River, Nevada, November the 30th. Marched 225 miles. Company K left Presidio November the 6th, arrived at Camp Iaqua, California, November the 10th.

December, 1865

Company I left Sink of Carson River December the 1st, arrived at Camp Ruby, Nevada, December the 13th. Marched 245 miles.

The following extract copy of a letter from Major Morton, U. S. Army, retired, contains interesting matter of the Civil War period:

"During my service in the California Volunteers I became acquainted with several of the officers of the Ninth -- Black, Van Voast, English, Owen, Fleming, Yard, Munson, McMichael, Emory and Jordon, all of whom have 'crossed the Divide' excepting General Van Voast, now living in Cincinnati, Ohio, and Jordon. Three captains of the Ninth became field officers of California Volunteers, viz., Black, Colonel of Sixth California Volunteers; C. O. Wood, Lieutenant-Colonel of the Eighth California Volunteers, and W. H. Jordon, Major of the Eighth California Volunteers. Van Voast was to have been appointed Colonel of the Eighth California Volunteers, but the appointment was revoked. I think I was the first, of the new appointments made after the close of the Civil War, to join the regiment. The regiment was then widely scattered through the Departments of the Pacific and I was immediately ordered to Camp McGarry, in northeastern Nevada, to relieve Captain Mears from command of his company and the post. I made the journey in company with Captain D. Perry and Lieutenant T. McGregor, Company F, First Cavalry, a horseback ride of about 400 miles from Sacramento, California. The regiment at this time was commanded by Major A. W. Bowman, General Wright having been lost at sea in July, 1865, and General King had not then joined."

Digitized by Google

March, 1866

Company K left Camp Iaqua, California, March the 27th, en route to Fort Gaston, California, and arrived at Mad River, March the 31st.

April, 1866

Company A left Presidio April 5th, arrived and took post at Fort Wright, California, April the 13th. Distance marched, 70 miles.

Company B left Point San Jose, California, April 14th, arrived at Lone Pine, near Camp Independence, California, April 30th, Distance marched, 300 miles. Company C left Presidio April 27th, en route to Fort Bidwell, California. Company E left Fort Humboldt, California, April 12th, arrived at Fort Gaston, California, April 15th, marched 60 miles. Company K left Mad River, April 2nd, arrived at Fort Gaston, California, April 5th. Marched 80 miles.

May, 1866

Company B left Lone Pine April 30th, arrived Camp Independence, California, May 1. Marched 10 miles. Company C arrived at Fort Bidwell, California May 28th.

August, 1866

A detachment of 6 enlisted men, Company D, under command of Second Lieutenant J. R. Hardenbergh, was engaged in a fight with hostile Indians July 29th near Camp Cady, California, in which 3 men were killed and one wounded. Captain P. A. Owen, with the balance of his company D, left Drum Barracks, California, August 8th, for Camp Cady, California, a distance of 151½ miles, and on August 17th had a scout after the Indians, of 30 miles, and on the 19th another of the same distance. The Company returned to Drum Barracks August 27th.

November, 1866

Company D left Drum Barracks November 14th, arrived Camp Cady, California. November 23rd. Marched 151½ miles.

December, 1866

Colonel John H. King assumed command of the regiment December 15th. Regimental Headquarters left Point San Jose, and arrived at Angel Island December 10th.

Digitized by Google

JANUARY, 1867

Company D left Camp Cady, January 6th and located Camp El Dorado, Arizona, on the west bank of the Colorado River, ¼ mile above El Dorado Cañon, January 15th. Distance marched, 180 miles.

FEBRUARY, 1867

A detachment of 14 men, Company C, under command of Captain S. Munson, Ninth Infantry, left Camp Bidwell, California, February 12th, in pursuit of a party of hostile Indians and overtook them and had an engagement about 50 miles east of Camp Bidwell. Killed 5 Indians, and took one woman and one child prisoners, and captured seven horses. No casualties in the detachment. Returned to Camp Bidwell February 17th.

JULY, 1867

Company F left Fort Churchill, Nevada, July 12th, arrived Fort Point, California, July 21st. Marched 184 miles.

AUGUST, 1867

Company D left Camp El Dorado, Arizona, August 24th, arrived Camp Mojave August 25th. Marched 60 miles. Company H left Camp McGarry, Nevada, August 31st.

SEPTEMBER, 1867

Company F left Fort Point, California, September 25th, en route to Sitka, Alaska. Company H arrived at Fort Churchhill, Nevada, September, 14th. Distance marched 274 miles.

OCTOBER, 1867

Company F arrived at Sitka, Alaska, October 10th, to assist in taking over Alaska after its purchase from Russia.

MAY, 1868

A party composed of Second-Lieutenant H. De Lany, 31 men, Company C, Ninth Infantry, and some Cavalry, under command of Captain S. Munson, Ninth Infantry, left Camp Bidwell April 28th to scout after hostile Indians in Oregon. On May 1st had an engagement with Indians in Warner Valley, Oregon, in which Lieutenant De Lany, and one private, Eighth Cavalry were severely wounded and the post guide killed. Several Indians were killed and wounded. Returned to Camp Bidwell May 2nd.

Digitized by Google

JUNE, 1868

Company D left Camp Mojave June 1st, en route to Angel Island, arrived at Drum Barracks, California, June 20th. Distance marched, 290 miles.

JULY, 1868

Company D arrived at Angel Island.

APRIL, 1869

Company I left Camp Ruby, Nevada, April 13th, arrived Camp Halleck, Nevada, April 18th. Marched 100 miles.

MAY, 1869

Company A left Camp Wright, California, May 25th, en route to Angel Island, and arrived at Geiserville, Californa, May 31st. Distance marched, 122 miles. Company E left Camp Gaston, California, May 18th. arrived at Camp Humboldt California May 21st. Distance marched 52 miles. Arrived Angel Island California, May 27th.

JUNE, 1869

Company A left Geiserville. California, June 1st, arrived at Angel Island June 2d. Left Angel Island June 7th, and arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, June 16th.

Company B left Camp Independence, California, June 10th, arrived Angel Island June 26th.

Company C left Camp Bidwell, California, May 25th, arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, June 16th.

Company D left Angel Island June 7th, arrived Fort Sedgwick, Colorado, June 13th.

Company E left Angel Island June 7th, arrived Fort Kearney, Nebraska, June 14th.

Company F left Angel Island, June 7th, arrived Plum Creek, Nebraska, June 14th.

Company G left Camp Lincoln, California, June 11th, arrived Angel Island, June 17th.

Company H left Fort Churchill, Nevada, June 7th, arrived Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, June 13th.

Company I left Camp Halleck, Nevada, June 5th, arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming June 12th.

Company K left Camp Gaston, California, and arrived at Angel Island, June 17th.

Digitized by Google

JULY, 1869

Regimental Headquarters left Angel Island July 3rd, arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, July 7th.

Company B left Angel Island, July 2nd, arrived Fort Sedgwick, Colorado, July 7th.

Company G left Angel Island, July 1st, arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, July 5th.

Company K left Angel Island, June 30th, arrived North Platte, Nebraska, July 5th.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV

CONSOLIDATION OF NINTH AND TWENTY-SEVENTH REGIMENTS OF INFANTRY — REMINISCENCES BY AN EX-OFFICER OF THE REGIMENT NOW ON THE RETIRED LIST — MANY LONG MARCHES — DUTY AT INDIAN AGENCIES — BLACK HILLS EXPEDITION — BIG HORN EXPEDITION — POWDER RIVER EXPEDITION — DEATH OF CRAZY HORSE — MANY MARCHES AND CHANGES OF STATION — RIOT DUTY AT CHICAGO, ILL. — REGIMENT BUILDING FORT MCKINNEY — BUILDING TELEGRAPH LINES — EXTREME COLD IN SNAKE AND WHITE RIVER CANTONMENTS — BUILDING FORT NIOBRARA, NEB. — BUILDING ROADS — DUTY AT CRISSFIELD, KANSAS.

As ordered by General Order 37, Series 1869, Department Platte, the consolidation of the Ninth and Twenty-seventh Regiments of Infantry was effected as follows:

Non-Commissioned Staff and Bands, July 9, 1869, at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming.

Companies A, Ninth, and B, Twenty-seventh, becoming A, Ninth, June 20, 1869, at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska.

Companies B, Ninth, and A, Twenty-seventh, becoming B, Ninth, July 8, 1869, at Fort Sedgwick, Colorado.

Companies C, Ninth, and F, Twenty-seventh, becoming C, Ninth, June 20, 1869, at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska.

Companies D, Ninth, and K, Twenty-seventh, becoming D, Ninth, June 22, 1869, at Fort Sedgwick, Colorado.

Companies E, Ninth, and C, Twenty-seventh, becoming E, Ninth, June 22, 1869, at Fort Kearney, Nebraska.

Companies F, Ninth, and I, Twenty-seventh, becoming F, Ninth, June 21, 1869, at Plum Creek, Nebraska.

Companies G, Ninth, and G, Twenty-seventh, becoming G, Ninth, July 7, 1869, at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming.

Companies I, Ninth, and H, Twenty-seventh, becoming H, Ninth, June 13, 1869, at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming.

Companies H, Ninth, and D, Twenty-seventh, becoming I, Ninth, June 21, 1869, at Sidney Barracks, Nebraska.

Companies K, Ninth, and E, Twenty-seventh, becoming K, Ninth, July 11, 1869, at North Platte, Nebraska.

Digitized by Google

OCTOBER, 1869

Company F left Plum Creek, Nebraska, 16th inst. Arrived Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 17th inst. Company I left Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 16th inst. Arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, same day.

APRIL, 1870

Company G left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 20th. Arrived Camp Douglas, Utah, 21st.

Company I left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 20th. Arrived Fort Bridger, Wyoming, 21st.

JUNE, 1870

Company G left Camp Douglas, Utah, 25th. Arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 27th.

JULY, 1870

Company I left Fort Bridger, Wyoming, July 25th. Arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 26th.

SEPTEMBER, 1870

Companies B and D left Fort Sedgwick, Colorado, 2nd. Arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 3rd. Rail, 136 miles. Company K left No. Platte Nebraska, 16th. Arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 17th. Rail, 291 miles.

OCTOBER, 1870

Company F left Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 8th. Arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 11th, 105 miles.

APRIL, 1871

Company H left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, April 13th. Marched 26 miles and camped at Cheyenne Pass. Left Camp on the 14th. Arrived Fort Sanders, Wyoming, same day.

MAY, 1871

Company C left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 10th, and proceeded by rail to Grand Island, Nebraska. On the 11th, with Company E, Second Cavalry, it proceeded to Prairie Creek, 9 miles. On the 13th to No. Loup River, 12 miles. While in camp on Loup River detachments from the company scouted as far as the Pawnee Reservation, 60 miles N. E. on Oak and Turkey Creeks. Built two bridges. Average distance travelled on each scout, 25 to 30 miles. Company E left Fort Kearney, Nebraska, 17th. Arrived Camp Cameron on Republican River, Nebraska, 19th. Marched 47 miles.

Digitized by Google

OCTOBER, 1871

Companies A and K left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 10th. Arrived Chicago, Illinois, 11th. Performed patrol and guard duties till 24th. Arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 25th. Company E left Camp Cameron, Nebraska, 12th. Arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 14th. Marched 47 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1871

Company A left Omaha Barracks 28th. Arrived Fort McPherson, Nebraska, 29th. Rail, 289 miles. Company C left Camp on No. Loup River 13th. Arrived Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 15th. Company K left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 13th. Arrived Fort Fred Steele, Wyoming. Rail, 710 miles.

Before bidding adieu to 1871 let us give some of the personal reminiscences of an ex-officer, now living, who served with the regiment for nearly thirty years:

"In 1871 the field officers of the Ninth Infantry were Colonel John H. King, Lieutenant-Colonel Luther P. Bradley, and Major Edwin F. Townsend.

Probably no regiment was ever more highly favored with abler field officers than the Ninth Infantry at that time. They were splendid types of the old-time officer.

General King was a Lieutenant in the Regular Army in 1837; in the Seminole Wars in Florida, in the Mexican War, and commanded a regular brigade in the Civil War. He was the second Colonel of the Ninth Infantry, succeeding the lamented General Wright. He was an ideal Colonel, a man of great dignity, of fine tact and judgment, and of the kindliest attributes of character throughout, and, while exacting of his officers, he was always considerate; and as to the enlisted men there is not one who survives that does not revere his memory. He was known as "Iron Bull" whenever forceful action became necessary.

The Lieutenant-Colonel, General Bradley, now living, was one of the most gallant and distinguished officers that ever commanded a regiment or brigade in the Civil War. He was of magnificent bearing, a natural-born soldier, a strict disciplinarian, and, like King, considerate to his officers and men. His example was always an inspiration to those under his command. He was known as "Grey Eagle," from his prominent beak and piercing eye.

Major Townsend, now living as a retired Brigadier-General, was one of the finest tacticians in the army, a model soldier, whose heart was ever

Digitized by Google

overflowing with kindness to all who were brought in contact with him, either officially or personally.

This trio of field officers has never been and never will be surpassed in our army.

Adverting to these old times it was a custom in the regiment for all the officers to meet at General King's office at guard-mounting. These meetings were called "matinees." General King and his Adjutant were in the same room where the officers assembled, and many little duties affecting the regiment and the post were talked over, and, unnecessary to say, General King always gave the decision. These "matinees" were generally most pleasant for all, as when the office work was completed the older officers indulged in reminiscences, going back to the Seminole, Mexican and Civil Wars, and the Indian Campaigns in which the regiment had taken part. Also, if there had been any remissness on the part of any officer, as appearing at guard-mounting with a light-colored necktie, any little defect about the uniform, or mistakes in routine duties, etc., the matter was remarked for the benefit of all concerned, and the lesson was well remembered. General King used to say that if you started guard-mounting right, the command would run quite well during the day.

One of the Regimental Staff was the ideal, revered and lamented Adjutant, Leonard Hay, who was Adjutant of the regiment for about thirteen years. Hay's personality was one of the most remarkable ever known in the army. He was a walking encyclopedia of every circular, order and decision that affected the office administration of a regiment or a post. When he became Captain of Company K, the "Cat-Birds" of the Ninth Infantry, he drew to him the warmest attachment of every man of his company. In illustration, an old soldier of his company said, "There was not a man in the company who would not be willing to lay down in the road and let Captain Hay walk over his neck if he wanted to." When his company was disorganized by lopping off "I" and "K" companies of the regiment, the blow almost broke his heart; he soon after retired for disability. Hay's reminiscences were always interesting. One is recalled that when he was advanced from the grade of enlisted man to that of Second Lieutenant, at San Francisco, he reported at his post late at night, found his Captain, was taken care of until morning, and then reported to his Commanding Officer, whom, it is believed, was known as Major Updegraff, called by the army humorist, Derby, "Up-to-Snuff." The Commanding Officer asked Lieutenant Hay why he had not reported immediately upon arrival the night before. Lieutenant Hay replied: "I did not wish to disturb the Commanding

Digitized by Google

Officer and thought he might be asleep." Thereupon the Major severely admonished him, saying: "Young man, I don't know what your future may be, but impress this maxim upon your heart and mind and never forget it, THE COMMANDING OFFICER NEVER SLEEPS!"

Another member of the Regimental Staff was the Quartermaster, Alfred Morton, who served for thirteen years as Regimental Quartermaster. As a Regimental and Post Quartermaster, he possessed fine administrative ability, and was fully alive to the duties of his position, and looked out for the interest of the Government and comfort of the Command. He was of most genial personality, and is now living at an advanced age on the retired list as a Major. Had he the good fortune to have been born a few years later he would deservedly adorn the retired list of the army as a Brigadier-General. When retired, January 16, 1898, before the flood of promotions struck the army, he received from the officers of his regiment a beautiful loving cup as a testimonial, showing that, though *retired*, he would ever be on the *active* list in the hearts of his old regiment.

The Captains at that time (1871) consisted of:

W. H. Jordan	Company A
John D. Devin	Company B
Samuel Munson	Company C
Philip A. Owen	Company D
Edwin Pollock	Company E
George B. Russell	Company F
Thomas B. Burrowes	Company G
Andrew S. Burt	Company H
Frederick Mears	Company I
Campbell D. Emory	Company K

Of these Captains but two survive: Jordan, a retired Colonel, and Andrew S. Burt, a retired Brigadier-General.

It is a gratifying fact that the high esprit de corps of the regiment in those days still has vitality in modern days *in the Ninth Infantry.*

Lieutenants and Captains were necessarily charged with the gravest responsibilities, often having independent commands calling for action fraught with important consequences. How well they met all those duties the records of the Ninth Infantry will show. There were no "grand-stand plays" and nobody to witness them if there were. There was but little, if any, self-seeking on the part of officers. Service with troops then counted largely to an officer's credit, and good Captains were not taken away from their companies to go to school. They were

Digitized by Google

generally live, active teachers, by example and precept, and "stuck by the colors."

Captains served from nineteen to twenty-six years without promotion. Lieutenants from eight to sixteen years. This "marking time" did not abate zealous performance of duty in the slightest. Frequently there were three officers present with a company, and scarcely ever less than two. The result was that efficiency and contentment in the line, and among officers seemed to be more pronounced than now. Officers of to-day know more of *books*, but those of the 70s, 80s and 90s were generally more proficient in *practical military duties*. There are better *scholars* to-day, but not a whit better *soldiers*. The Lieutenants and Captains did not all expect to become Generals, but were proud to know and to do their duties as Lieutenants and Captains, and were not hunting for details away from their commands.

We had in those olden days such Colonels as King, Miles, Ruger, Gibbon, Stanley, Morrow, Bradley and others. The Regular Army of 1898, in Cuba, was the result of the work of those Colonels and their subordinates. Our army was then essentially American, and not a patchwork of foreign fads."

JANUARY, 1872

Company A left Fort McPherson, Nebraska, 19th inst., arrived Omaha Barracks, 20th inst. Rail, 289 miles.

MAY, 1872

Company B left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 7th, arrived Camp on Red Willow, Nebraska, 18th.

Company C left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 17th, arrived Camp Vincent, Nebraska, 22d.

Company G left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 3rd, arrived Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, same date.

NOVEMBER, 1872

Company B left Camp on Red Willow, Nebraska, 4th, arrived Fort McPherson, Nebraska, 8th. Distance marched, 70 miles, thence by rail, on same date, to Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, where it arrived 9th. Rail, 277 miles.

Company C left Camp Vincent, Nebraska, marched 40 miles to Grand Island, Nebraska, and by rail to Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 154 miles, arriving November 3d.

Digitized by Google

MAY, 1873

Companies A and E left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 24th, proceeding by rail to Yankton, Dakota. Embarking on steamer Western, on 26th, for Fort Rice, Dakota, arrived Fort Sully, Dakota, 31st.

Companies D, F, and I left Fort Russell, Wyoming, and Company H Fort Sanders, Wyoming, 21st, and proceeded by rail to Yankton, Dakota where they embarked on steamer Western, on 26th, for Fort Rice, Dakota, arrived Fort Sully, Dakota, 31st. All of above-named companies were for duty with Yellowstone Expedition.

JUNE, 1873

Companies A, D, E, F, H, and I left Fort Sully, May 31st, arrived Fort Rice, Dakota, June 4th. Left Fort Rice, Dakota, June 20th, arrived Muddy Creek, Dakota, 28th. Distance marched, 92 miles.

Company C left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 9th, and proceeded by rail to Grand Island, Nebraska, 154 miles, and thence marched north 41 miles, and established Camp Canby, Nebraska.

Company G left Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, June 20th, and arrived Camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, same date. Rail, 102 miles.

JULY, 1873

Companies A, D, E, F, H, and I left Camp No. 8, near Muddy Creek, Dakota, July 1st. Reached Yellowstone River, about 135 miles from its mouth, July 15th. Crossed the river on steamer Key West 25th inst. Continued the march toward Mussel Shell River July 26th. Total distance marched during the month, 295½ miles, making 23 camps, and laying over eight days.

AUGUST, 1873

Companies A, D, E, F, H, and I left Camp No. 31 on Yellowstone River August 2d, and arrived at Camp No. 44, on Yellowstone River, opposite Pompey's Pillar, August. 15. Distance marched, 196 miles. Pompey's Pillar is a rocky butte on the south bank of the river, less than 100 feet high, isolated and not discernible until fairly come upon. Marched on the 16th for Mussel Shell River, which was reached on the 19th. Distance 65 miles. Marched along the Mussel Shell River, crossing it 16 times, and reached the Big Bend on the 25th. Distance 77 miles. On the 26 started on the return march for the Yellowstone River, arriving on the 31st. Distance 69 miles. Estimated distance marched during the month, 407 miles, making 27 camps, and laying over four days.

Digitized by Google

SEPTEMBER, 1873

Companies A, D, E, F, H, and I left Camp No. 58 on 1st inst., and marched an easterly course, along the Yellowstone River, until the 9th, making 127 miles, and went into Camp No. 67 on the River bank. On the 13th were relieved from duty with the expedition, and embarked on steamer Josephine, arrived Fort Sully Dakota, September 30, 1873.

OCTOBER, 1873

Companies A, D, E, F, H, and I arrived at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska. Distance traveled by steamer 571 miles.

Company C left Camp Canby, Nebraska, 15th inst., marched to Grand Island, Nebraska, 40 miles, and thence proceeded by rail to Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 154 miles, arriving on the 18th inst.

FEBRUARY, 1874

Company B left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 15th, arrived Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 16th. Marched 4 miles. Rail, 414 miles.

MARCH, 1874

Company B left Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 10th inst., arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 10th. Rail, 102 miles.

Company C left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 9th inst., proceeded by rail to Grand Island, Nebraska, 154 miles. Left Grand Island, Nebraska, March 19th, and marched to Dannebrog, Nebraska, 20 miles, 20th. Marched to Gillespie's Creek, 24 miles, March 21st. Marched to Davis Ranch, 14 miles, 22nd, Marched to Dane Creek, 14 miles; 23d, marched to Camp Ruggles, Nebraska, 13 miles.

MAY, 1874

Company K left Fort Fred, Steele, Wyoming, 2d inst., and proceeded by rail to Medicine Bow Station, U. P. R. R., 45 miles.

JUNE, 1874

Companies A, D, F, and I left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 22d inst., enroute to Red Cloud, and Spotted Tail Agencies; arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 23d. Rail, 516 miles.

Company K left Medicine Bow, Wyoming, 24th, arrived Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, same date. Rail, 134 miles.

Digitized by Google

JULY, 1874

Companies A, D, F, G, I, and K left camp at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 1st inst., and arrived at Fort Laramie, Wyoming, 5th inst. Left Fort Laramie 9th inst., and arrived Red Cloud Agency (Camp Robinson, Nebraska), 12th inst.

Companies A and I took station here, having marched 165 miles.

Companies D, F, G, and K left Red Cloud Agency 13th, arrived Spotted Tail Agency 15th, and took station. Distance marched, 211 miles.

AUGUST, 1874

Headquarters with Companies E and H left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, 10th inst., arrived at Camp near Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 11th. Rail, 516 miles. Left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, with Company B, 13th, arrived Fort Laramie, Wyoming, 19th. Distance marched, 88 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1874

Company B left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, 13th, as escort to a train for Red Cloud and Spotted Tail Agencies. Returned to post 25th. Marched 258 miles.

Companies D, F, and G left Spotted Tail Agency 9th, arrived at site of permanent post, on Beaver Creek (Camp Sheridan), same day. Distance 12 miles. Since that date have been employed in building log huts for winter quarters.

Company H left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, 5th, as escort to log train to Laramie Peak. Returned to post 9th. Marched 90 miles. Left Fort Laramie 16th, as escort to train for Agencies. Returned to post 28th. Marched 250 miles.

Company K left Spotted Tail Agency, and arrived Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, same date. Twelve miles.

OCTOBER, 1874

Company B — A detachment of 25 men under command of First Lieutenant W. E. Hofman, 9th Infantry, left Fort Laramie 16th for Laramie Peak. Returned to post 21st; 95 miles.

Companies D and G left Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, 23d, arrived Camp Robinson, Nebraska, 24th; 45 miles.

Company E left Fort Laramie September 29th, as escort to a train for Camp Sheridan, Nebraska. Returned to post October 10th. Marched 250 miles.

Digitized by Google

NOVEMBER, 1874

Company B left Fort Laramie October 26th, as escort to a train for Camp Robinson, Nebraska. Returned to post November 1st; 150 miles.

Company C — A commissioned officer and 25 men of company left post on No. Loup River, Nebraska, November 2d, on a scout to Niobrara River. Returned to post 21st. Total distance marched, 521 miles.

Company E — A detachment of 16 men left Fort Laramie 3d for Laramie Peak. Returned to post 8th; 90 miles. The company left Fort Laramie 16th, as escort to train for Camp Sheridan, Nebraska. Returned to post 27th; 250 miles.

Company H left Fort Laramie 5th, escort for train to Camp Robinson, Nebraska. Returned to post 12th; 160 miles.

Company G — Lieutenant Carpenter and 10 men left Camp Robinson, Nebraska, 13th, escort to Prof. Marsh of Yale College. Returned to post 25th.

FEBRUARY, 1875

Detachments of 16 men each, of Companies B and E, left Fort Laramie on 1st and 9th for Laramie Peak. Returned to post on the 6th and 13th; 95 miles each.

Company H left Fort Laramie 13th, escort to train for Camp Sheridan. Returned to post 24th; 250 miles.

MARCH, 1875

Company C — Lieutenant DeLany, with 9 men, left post 28th on scout up No. Loup River. Returned to post 30th; 50 miles.

Company E — A detachment of 10 men left post 14th, escort to Paymaster to Camps Robinson and Sheridan. Returned 24th; 250 miles.

APRIL, 1875

Companies A, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties during the month.

A detachment of 16 men from Company B, commanded by First Lieutenant, M. C. Foote, 9th Infantry, left post April 23, 1875, as escort to the timber train to and from Laramie Peak, Wyoming. Returned April 27th. Distance marched, 95 miles.

Company C, 41 strong, and 2 officers left Fort Hartzuff, Nebraska, April 20th, 1875, and proceeded to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, arriving at following places at dates mentioned:

Johnson's Ranch, twenty miles, April 20th.

Digitized by Google

Bubes Ranch, twenty miles, April 21st.
South Loup, sixteen miles, April 22nd.
Prairie Creek, fifteen miles, April 23rd.
Grand Island, six miles, April 24th, and took train to Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, three hundred and sixty-five miles, April 25th.
At Fort D. A. Russell, April 26th.
Lodge Pole Creek, fifteen miles, April 27th.
Bear Springs, twenty-two miles, April 28th.
Kelly's Ranch, eighteen miles, April 29th.
Owens' Ranch, sixteen miles, April 30th.

MAY, 1875

CAMP ROBINSON, NEBRASKA

Companies A, D, G, and I, Ninth Infantry, performed the usual garrison duty during the month.

CAMP ON CHEYENNE RIVER, WYOMING

Companies C and H left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, May 7, 1875, in pursuance to Special Orders, 10, Headquarters District of Black Hills as part of the Geological Surveying Expedition in command of Lieutenant-Colonel R. I. Dodge, Twenty-third Infantry, and returned to camp on Cheyenne River, Wyoming, one hundred and forty-three miles; performed the duty of escorting and guard during month.

FORT LARAMIE, WYOMING

Companies B and E performed the usual garrison duty during month, with the exception that Company B left post May 24, 1875, as guard, to supply train en route to Fort Sheridan, Nebraska, returning to Fort Laramie, May 19, 1875. Distance traveled, two hundred and fifty miles. Part of Company E, on similar duty to Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, left post May 5, 1875, and returned May 16, 1875. Distance traveled, one hundred and sixty miles.

CAMP SHERIDAN, NEBRASKA

Companies F and K performed the usual garrison duty during month.

JUNE, 1875

Companies A, B, D, F, G, I, and K performed the usual garrison duty during month. Company C marched from Cheyenne River to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, and return. Distance, three hundred and eighty-five miles.

Digitized by Google

Company E — Detachment of 11 men left post as escort to Wagon Train to Bridge's Ferry, and remainder of company performed usual garrison duty during month.

Company H marched from South Fork of Cheyenne River, Wyoming, to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, and return. Distance marched three-hundred and ten miles.

JULY, 1875

Companies A. B, D, F, G, I, and K performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations during month.

Companies C and H performed usual camp duty with Black Hills Geological Surveying Expedition, July 12th; moved from Camp Harney, Dakota, to Spring Creek, Dakota, distance 29 miles.

Company E left post July 6, 1875, en route to camp Robinson, Nebraska, as escort to supply train; returned to Fort Laramie, July 14, 1875. Distance marched, twenty-nine miles.

The following order and letters are given as indicative of some of the duties performed on the Black Hill Expedition.

Headquarters Black Hills Expedition, Near Fort Laramie, May 24, 1875.

General Orders, No. 2.

1. The following is announced as the arrangement of the column in line.

Right 2nd Cavalry, Companies C and I.
Center 3rd Cavalry, Companies A, H, I, and K.
Left, Ninth Infantry, Companies H and C.

2. Reveille will be sounded at four forty-five (4:45) A. M. General, five forty-five (5:45). Assembly six fifteen (6:15). Surgeons call five (5:00) P. M. Stable call one-half (½) hour before sunset.

3. The leading company of cavalry will be the pioneer company and the picket and camp guard for the day. The Company commander is ex-officio officer of the day, the other officers of the company officers of the guard. On the march it will be followed immediately by the pioneer wagon, and headquarters, and scientific ambulances; the cavalry force follow these; the infantry, artillery, Headquarters wagons company wagons, regular train and traders wagons follow in succession. The company on guard, and in advance one day, will be rear guard the next day and bring up everything.

The cattle herd will march on flanks or rear of column; it will be in direct charge of the Commissary Sergeant. The officer in charge of the rear guard will detail each morning a non-commissioned officer and six

Digitized by Google

(6) men to report to the Commissary Sergeant to guard and assist in driving the herd.

On arrival at position designated for camp, the commanding officer of leading company will throw out pickets on all prominent points, so as to command thoroughly all the approaches to camp.

One officer and one half of the company will be in saddle as guard over the herd until it is brought in at stable call. No horse or mule will be turned loose, each animal must be secured by hobbles, side lines, or lariats.

Each cavalry company will be responsible for its own horses after stable call. Two (2) non-commissioned officers, and six (6) men will be detailed from each company as stable guard; one (1) non-commissioned officer will be required to be awake at all times during the night; the sentinels may form a running guard, one over the picket line at a time.

The Adjutant will make a detail each day of two (2) non-commissioned officers and eighteen (18) men from the infantry companies as Headquarters and main guard, the guard will be under general control of the officer of the day.

When the animals have been brought in at stable call all the pickets will be drawn in. The guard company will then be divided into three reliefs and posted with the infantry guard so as to protect entirely the outside line of camp. In addition to the regular guard each company commander will detail one (1) non-commissioned officer and six (6) men as guard for his own animals and herd; these men will be armed only with pistols and will ride in and among the herd until it is brought in.

4. The Quartermaster will keep careful watch of his herd, and will detail from twelve (12) to twenty (20) teamsters to be with and among the herd while grazing; these men will be mounted and unarmed, and, in case of alarm, will drive the herd at once to the corral.

By command of Lieutenant-Colonel Dodge, Twenty-third Infantry:

M. C. FOOTE,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, Adjutant.

CAMP NEAR FRENCH CREEK, D. T.,
August 10, 1875.

CAPTAIN EDWIN POLLOCK, Ninth Infantry, Commanding,
CAPTAIN:

I leave Lieutenant Hall with his company to keep general guard of the miners here until you arrive. It appears from the statement of the miners that General Crook gave permission to six men (to be selected by the miners themselves) to remain here in charge of the Gulch, tools,

Digitized by Google

etc., until he could get a more definite commission from higher authority. This is probably the truth and General Crook's designs in giving this permission should not be frustrated by either you or I. If it is a lie it is a very shallow one, and sure to be found out shortly. These men will be allowed to remain near the town (Custers) until you hear from General Crook on the subject. They are not to be arrested or molested in any way, but must neither mine nor prospect.

There is another class of men who, though perfectly willing to obey the order, cannot do so from having lost their stock, or some other reason. I have required all these to register their names with Lieutenant Hall. They have permission to remain at the town, neither mining nor prospecting, until you have opportunity to send them out. They will not be arrested now, in any way be treated as violators of the law or proclamation, but you will send them in to the nearest post as comfortably, and as soon as possible. I am told that there is a number of skulkers on Castle Creek, and probably elsewhere. On capturing them I recommend that you disarm, confine and send them in under guard. They deserve no special consideration beyond that demanded by humanity. You may possibly need the services of Lieutenant Hall for a short time to post your command as to the roads and means of getting at the fastness in which the skulkers will hide. You can keep him until towards the end of the month. I will then send him orders. If you have no pack trains I recommend you organizing some at once. It will be impossible to hunt the skulkers with wagons.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
R. I. DODGE,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-third Infantry,
Commanding Black Hills Expedition.

HEADQUARTERS BLACK HILLS EXPEDITION.
CAMP BRADLEY, W. T., FOOT OF INYAN KARA
August 25, 1875.

CAPTAIN E. POLLOCK, Ninth Infantry.
CAPTAIN:

As I shall by 5th of September cut loose from any permanency of camp, and all likelihood of communication with you, I have concluded that the best way to render the assistance that General Crook wished me to give you is to turn over a company to you. This mail will therefore bring an order to Lieutenant C. T. Hall, relieving him from duty with this expedition and directing him to report to you.

Digitized by Google

Captain Burt will be at Indian Spring, at the head of Spaulding Creek, on the 1st or 2nd of September, with supplies. Lieutenant Hall will then have forty-five days rations from 1st September. I have directed him to send up the wagons left with him, which belong to the Fort Laramie train, and for which Lieutenant Trout is responsible; in their stead I will send him three wagons and teams belonging to the depot, and for which Lieutenant Trout has not receipted. These teams will bring down the rations. My command has been so stalled, and has got so much game, that I find myself with more beef cattle than I need. If therefore you will send up a party to drive them to your camp, I can spare you any number you need under fifty. Captain A. can come up with these wagons. This party is directed to make the march to you in two days. The unloaded wagons can return to camp at Indian Spring at the same time. I will send the three teams with rations, so as to reach you by the 4th September.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient Servant,
R. I. DODGE,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-third Infantry,
Commanding, Black Hills Expedition.

AUGUST, 1875

CAMP ROBINSON, NEBRASKA

Companies A, D, G, and I performed the usual garrison duty during month.

FORT LARAMIE, WYOMING

Company B performed the usual garrison duty.

CAMP JENNEY, DAKOTA

Companies C and H performed usual garrison duty and escorting trains to and from Camp Jenney, Dakota, to Fort Laramie, Wyoming Distance traveled by Company C, 209 miles, distance traveled by Company H, 273 miles.

CAMP ON FRENCH CREEK, DAKOTA

Company E performed usual garrison duty and escorting to Fort Laramie and return. Distance traveled, 205 miles.

CAMP SHERIDAN, NEBRASKA

Companies F and K performed usual garrison duty during month.

Digitized by Google

September, 1875

Companies A, D, F, G, I and K performed usual garrison duty at their respective stations. Companies B, C, and H performed the usual garrison duty at Fort Laramie, Wyoming, as follows: Company B, during entire month; companies C and H arrived from Headquarters Black Hills Expedition, September 13, 1875. Distance traveled by Company H, 170 miles; distance traveled by Company C, 188 miles. Company E performed usual garrison duty at Camp G. H. Collins, Black Hills, Dakota, during month. A detachment of 16 men proceeded to Fort Laramie, Dakota, as escort to supply train, and returned September 16, 1875. Distance traveled, 307 miles.

October, 1875

Companies A, D, F, G, I and K performed usual garrison duties at their respective stations. Companies B, C, E, and H stationed at Fort Laramie, Wyoming; Companies C and H performed usual garrison duty during month, as did Company B, until October 24th, when it escorted a wagon train to Black Hills, Dakota, Company E, temporarily at post from Camp G. H. Collins, Dakota, escorting supply train from that station. Distance traveled by Company E during month, 150 miles.

November, 1875

FORT LARAMIE, WYOMING TERRITORY

Companies C, E, F, G and H performed usual garrison duty during month. Companies C and H at this station during the entire month, and part thereof at Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, by Company F; part at Camp Robinson, Nebraska, by Company G, and part at Camp G. H. Collins by Company E; Company F changed station from Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, Company G changed station from Camp Robinson, Nebraska, and Company E rejoined post from Camp G. H. Collins; Company F marched during the month 115 miles; Company G 76 miles, and Company E 320 miles.

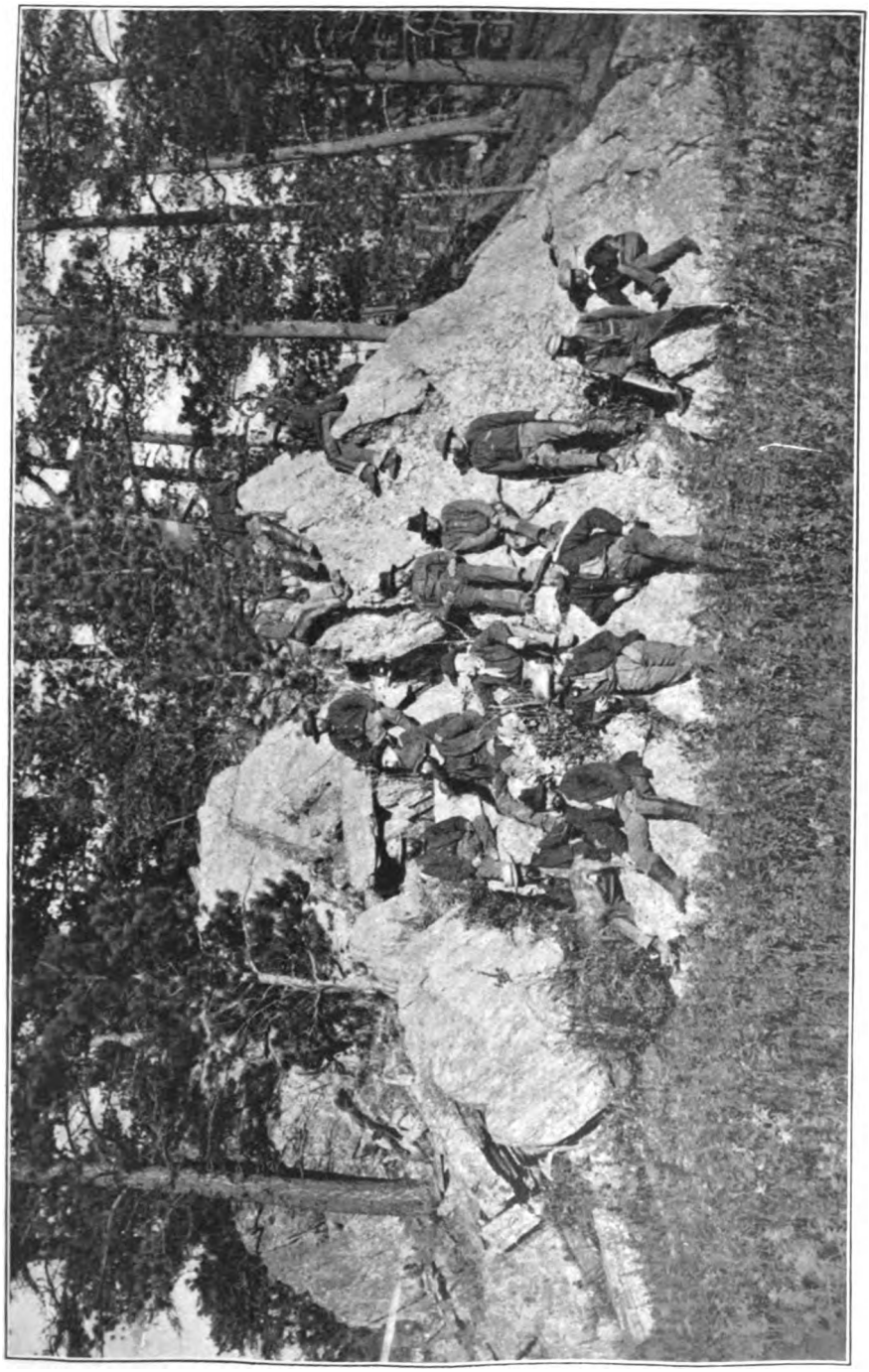
CAMP SHERIDAN, NEBRASKA

Companies B and H performed usual garrison duties during month, the latter company during entire month and the former since November 18th, changing station from Fort Laramie, Wyoming, marching 125 miles.

CAMP ROBINSON, NEBRASKA

Companies A, D, and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month.

Digitized by Google



An Officers' Group in Black Hills

Digitized by Google

DECEMBER, 1875

All the companies performed the usual garrison duties during month at their respective stations.

FEBRUARY, 1876

Companies A. B, C, D, E, F, G, H and I performed usual garrison duty at their respective stations. Company K left Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, February 6th, for Fort Robinson, Nebraska, where they took post. Total distance marched 45 miles.

MARCH AND APRIL, 1876

All the companies performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

MAY, 1876

Companies A, B, D, E, I and K performed garrison and escort duties during month at their respective stations. Company F left post on May 8th, under command of First-Lieutenant W. W. Rogers, Ninth Infantry, to scout the country between the post and Custer City, with Company K, Second Cavalry. The company returned from Custer City via Camp Robinson, Nebraska, on the 29th of May. Distance marched, 418 miles. Companies C, G, and H left Fort Laramie, May 22nd, and marched 87½ miles to Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, to join the Big Horn and Yellowstone Expedition under command of Brigadier-General Crook. Arrived at Fort Fetterman May 27th, and left for Sioux Country May 29th, as part of the Expedition and camped on the Wind River May 31st, 53½ miles from Fort Fetterman. Total distance marched, 141 miles.

JUNE, 1876

Companies A, B, E, and F performed ordinary garrison duty during month at their respective stations. Company D left Camp Robinson, Nebraska, June 10th, to establish a camp at the Crossing of Running Water, on the Fort Laramie Road; arrived at Crossing and made camp on June 11th. Distance marched, thirty miles. On the 20th Camp was moved to the "Springs" in the White River Cañon, 16 miles from Crossing. Total distance marched, 46 miles. Company I left Camp Robinson, June 31, 1876, en route for Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, and arrived and took post at latter station June 4th. Distance marched. 45 miles. Companies C, G, and H (Big Horn Expedition) left camp on Wind River June 1st, and arrived at Tongue River, near mouth of Prairie Dog Creek, June 7th. Distance 13 miles. June 9th, while in camp, Indians made

Digitized by Google

an attack from opposite side of river, but were soon driven off. June 11th, marched to Goose Creek, 17 miles, and remained until June 16th. June 17th, marched down Rosebud Creek about 5 miles, when at 8:30 A. M. command engaged a body of hostile Sioux Indians. The fight was of a desultory nature and lasted about four hours, when Indians were driven off. No casualties. June 18th, marched back towards supply camp on Goose Creek and arrived June 19th, distance 42 miles. Total distance marched by Companies G and H during month, 256 miles. June 21st, Company C, as escort to wagon train, left Goose Creek en route for Camp Fetterman, Wyoming, where it arrived June 27th. Total distance marched by Company C during month, 420 miles.

JULY, 1876

Companies A, B, E, F, I and K performed usual garrison duties at their respective stations. Company D left Camp on Niobrara River and marched to Camp Robinson, Nebraska, a distance of 16 miles, and took post July 20th, 1876. Companies C, G and H, with the Big Horn Expedition, occupied camps on Goose Creek, Wyoming, from July 1st to 27th, 1876. Camps on South Fork of Tongue River from July 27th to thirty-first, 1876. Distance marched during month, 24 miles.

AUGUST, 1876

Companies A, B, D, F, I and K performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations. Company E left Fort Laramie, Washington Territory, August 16th, as escort to supply train to and from Red Cañon, Washington Territory, and returned August 28, 1876. Distance marched 228 miles. Companies C, G, and H in the field with the Big Horn and Yellowstone Expeditions left Camp on Goose Creek, Washington Territory, August 5th and marched north, crossing and recrossing the Tongue, Rosebud and Powder Rivers, and camping thereon until the 17th, when they reached the Yellowstone, went into camp and remained there until the 24th of August. Left camp on the Yellowstone, August 24th, marched up Powder River, 37 miles from that point, crossed the country toward the Little Missouri River arriving at Beaver Creek August 31, 1876. Total distance marched during the month 377 miles.

Digitized by Google

POWDER RIVER EXPEDITION

Contributed by an "old timer" who served over 30 years in the Regiment.

Companies A, B, D, E, F, I and K, took part, E company being detached at Powder River, where a depot of supplies was established, and which afterwards became Cantonment Reno, a garrison post later transferred to Fort McKinney on the Powder River, 52 miles North and since abandoned.

While the troops on the Summer Expedition had short rations, half rations, quarter rations, and no rations, supplemented by horse-meat or broken down cavalry horses, and pony veal from the Indian villages, this Expedition had a surfeit of all kinds of rations and special stores to such an extent that one Lieutenant of the Ninth Infantry had half of his valise filled with chocolates. The expedition had the further luxury of a field post trader whose principal stock consisted of 12 barrels of whiskey of various grades for officers, civilians, and privates, and all drawn out of the same barrels. This supply, however, became exhausted or was frozen up, owing to the rigorous weather. The records will show all the details of the movements and the miles marched, etc., but the intense cold was almost without parallel. The creeks were frozen solid, sage brush had to be gathered and long marches made in snow ankle to knee-deep.

On November 25, 1876, the cavalry attacked the Cheyenne village in the mountains, some 30 miles southwest of the crossing of Crazy Women's Fork. The camp and the greater part of the ponies were captured by the cavalry, but the Indians were dispersed through the mountains.

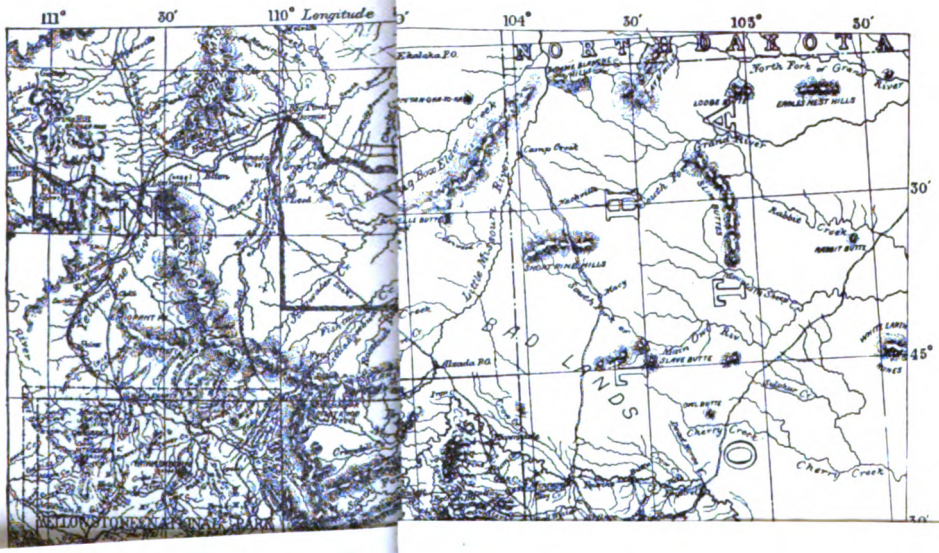
The infantry, including the six companies of the Ninth, was ordered to reinforce the cavalry, and made one of the hardest forced marches over the mountains and in the snow, and in the severest cold ever experienced by troops.

An officer of the regiment, Lieutenant DeLany, took part with the cavalry in command of the Indian Scouts, and rendered most efficient and distinguished service.

The command then moved towards the Black Hills, along the head waters of the Belle Fourche. The creeks were frozen to the bottom, and wood was practically out of the question. The thermometer was reported to be 50° below zero, and under these conditions the command spent Christmas day and Christmas night.

The expedition resulted in the early surrender of the hostile Cheyenne Indians in the North at Red Cloud Agency.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

At the end of two months of this kind of campaigning, the command returned to Fort Laramie, and the troops were sent to their various stations, and from that time on the Indians came in squads, bands, and tribes, and surrendered at the various agencies there and in the North, and this was the end of the Indian wars with the great hostile tribes of the Sioux and Northern Indians in the far West.

Immediately after this winter expedition an officer of the Ninth Infantry, who is now living, was appointed Indian Agent at what was then called the Spotted Tail Agency at Camp Sheridan, Nebraska.

Crazy Horse came from Red Cloud to Spotted Tail Agency and gave himself up to Major Dan Burke, 14th Infantry, and to this officer of the Ninth Infantry. Orders were issued by the District Commander of Camps Robinson and Sheridan to bring Crazy Horse to Red Cloud Agency, Camp Robinson. This officer of the Ninth Infantry went by himself, unaccompanied by any soldiers, but accompanied by some of the leading men of the Sioux and several of Crazy Horse's immediate friends, and took Crazy Horse to Camp Robinson. Crazy Horse was delivered by this officer to the Commanding Officer at Camp Robinson and that night was killed. This officer of the Ninth, having given his word to the Indians that Crazy Horse would be unharmed and allowed to state his case, was placed in a very peculiar position. He, nevertheless, left Camp Robinson on the second day and drove back to Camp Sheridan, about 40 miles, with his wife and daughter, without military escort except Indians, not knowing what the followers of Crazy Horse might do en route, and resumed his duties as Indian Agent. That night suspicious movements were heard about the house and it was found that his quarters were being guarded by some of the friends of Crazy Horse and other Indians. They said: "We are here to protect you and your family because we know that you were not responsible for the death of Crazy Horse."

While the killing of Crazy Horse deprived the warlike Sioux of their greatest leader and bravest war chief, the history of his untimely end is one of the most pathetic chapters in all the annals of Indian warfare. The officer concerned rarely refers to it, and regards it as one of the saddest reminiscences of his active military life of over forty-five years. He once gave the story in a Military Lyceum essay, but declined to consent to its publication.

As partially indicating the character of the work of the regiment during this period, the following extracts from an article by Major Eben Swift in the Centennial of the U. S. Military Academy, are given:

Digitized by Google

"On February 7, 1876, authority was received to proceed against the non-agency Indians of the plains, principally represented by the small bands of Sitting Bull and Crazy Horse. Neither of them was supposed to be of great importance. Sitting Bull was accredited with 30 or 40 lodges, Crazy Horse with 100 to 200 warriors; but to accept these figures it was unfortunately necessary to take the statements of the civilians of the Interior Department, who had full charge of the Indians and who persistently declared that they kept track of their wards. The army was expecting to have a rather easy time of it. As a matter of fact, over 28,000 Indians were absent from their agencies.

"General George Crook, having fought every tribe of Indians on the Pacific coast, was in command of the department of the Platte, the northern line of which ran through the middle of the buffalo country claimed by the Sioux, Cheyenne and Arapaho. On March 1st, the General headed an expedition from Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, into the Powder River country. On March 17th a detachment of this command, under Colonel J. J. Reynolds, Third Cavalry, captured and destroyed Crazy Horse's village of 105 lodges near the mouth of the Little Powder River in Montana. The command was marching and fighting for thirty-six hours, and most of the officers and men were frost-bitten. The limit of endurance was nearly reached, and the pony herd got away, which furnished many people with an excuse for forgetting whatever good service the command performed.

This Crazy Horse was a pretty big Indian. A few years before while looking for a chance to show what sort of stuff he was made of, he walked into Fort Laramie and killed a soldier on the parade ground. That gave him a good start, and now great numbers of the young bloods from the agencies gathered about him and Sitting Bull. The frequent military expeditions into the Black Hills, and the rush of miners into the same region gave them fair warning that they would soon have to fight for their hunting grounds.

"The loss of his village was a heavy blow to Crazy Horse, but he came up smiling again in a few months.

"The army made rather unusual preparations, chiefly due to the fact that the troubled district was within the domain of two military departments, neither of which desired to be outpointed by the other in the approaching campaign. No one dreamed that owing to the anomalous policy of our Government we were ignorantly going to fight two-thirds of our bacon-picking Sioux, Cheyenne, and Arapaho, who were confidently reported as drawing their regular rations at the various agencies provided for that purpose.

Digitized by Google

"In the spring three columns took the field, one of which was commanded by General George Crook, another by General John Gibbon; General George A. Custer and the Seventh Cavalry was with the third column.

"On June 17, Crook, with 1,000 men, had a fight with Crazy Horse on Rosebud Creek and got a little the worst of it. Much to his chagrin the General found himself confronted by a superior force, who were not backward in offering him battle. Their village was only 8 or 10 miles away, but he could not take it, and found it best to withdraw and wait for more men. . . . .

"A week later Custer, at the head of five troops of the Seventh Cavalry, consumed with an overmastering fear lest a single Indian should escape, rode gaily at the combined force of Crazy Horse and Sitting Bull, encamped on the little Big Horn. It was a great deed of arms, and will not be forgotten as long as our race continues to be inspired by acts of honor and duty. . . . .

"Of the manner of their death not a thing is known beyond the story of the field itself. The skirmish lines were well kept and each officer and man seems to have stood well up to his work. Meanwhile, a couple of miles away, the balance of the regiment, under Major Marcus A. Reno, was having a hard struggle to escape the same fate. . . . .

"These events caused strenuous measures to be taken. General Sheridan, by stripping every post from Manitoba to Texas, put 3,500 men in the field. The army was placed in charge of the Indian Agencies and soon made the discovery that 28,000 Indians were absent without leave. Troops of cavalry were filled up to 100 men by enlisting raw recruits, who were rushed to the front. They were dubbed 'Custer Avengers' and perhaps it was fortunate that they were not required at once on the skirmish line.

"The Indians found it impossible to keep together in large bodies, and broke up into smaller bands. As Crazy Horse went south toward the Black Hills — the Pah-sap-pa of the savages, the mysterious land of gold which caused all the trouble — Crook struck after him, although it was necessary to go 200 miles on two and a half day's bacon and hardtack. In the march some troops lost nearly all their horses, many of which had to be butchered for food, and the command was in about as bad shape as possible without going to pieces, when an advanced party of 150 men of the Third Cavalry, under Colonel Anson Mills, ran upon Roman Nose's village of 40 lodges at Slim Buttes on September 14th. A fortunate capture of ponies and putrid dried buffalo eked out the food for a few days. Crazy Horse was near at hand and came up in royal

Digitized by Google

style, but, after some lively skirmishing and several attempts to run off the herds, he drew off. It was on this day that Lieutenant Frederick Schwatka, Third Cavalry, with 25 men, coming upon the village in the dim light of the early day, not knowing but that, like Custer, he was tackling the entire Sioux nation, and rather thinking he was, yet went ahead and made his charge.

"On November 16th Crook again left Fetterman on his third campaign of the year with a fresh command. On the 24th a detachment under General Ranald S. Mackenzie, Fourth Cavalry, struck Dull Knife's village of Cheyennes on the north fork of the Powder River in Wyoming. A large village was destroyed and a herd of ponies was captured. The suffering of the Indians was terrible; large numbers of them froze to death in the mountains. Lieutenant John A. McKinney, Fourth Cavalry, was killed. He was a brilliant young officer, handsome, popular, full of ambition, with everything in his favor except luck, if it be not luck to stop a bullet at the head of a charging troop and to leave a name as one who learned his lesson well.

"Through these campaigns we cannot fail to be struck by the magnanimity of General Crook, on two occasions, in giving first to Reynolds, and to Mackenzie the chance to get all the credit of the campaign; he did the same in Arizona.

"The Indian Agencies now being in the hands of the army, the hostiles were deprived of a base of supplies, the buffalo did not afford a sure or sufficient commissary, and ammunition could not be manufactured, so that the armies of the great chiefs had to break up into small bands, which scattered for subsistence. Most of them surrendered at odd times during the winter and spring. Sitting Bull took his followers across the border. Crazy Horse surrendered and was quiet for a time, but peace did not suit his turbulent spirit and he met his death at the end of an infantry bayonet while resisting arrest at Fort Robinson. . . . .

"In July, 1881, Major D. H. Brotherton, Seventh Infantry, received the surrender of the last of the hostiles under Sitting Bull. They could not survive the extermination of the buffalo.

"Sitting Bull lived quietly for about nine years, and was killed by Indian police during the troubles immediately preceding the uprising of 1890.

"With the surrender of these Indians there ended a period of fifteen years of conflict on the plains, which was almost entirely in the military command of General Philip H. Sheridan. More than 400 skirmishes, combats, and battles had been fought; more than 1,000 officers and men had been killed and wounded. The country filled with aggressive

Digitized by Google

settlers, and the Indians, even the proudest, bravest, and cleanest of them, became cowed, degraded and starved. This condition afforded an opportunity for the 'Messiah craze' to take a start, ably abetted, it is to be feared, by educated Indians. The belief of the Indians that they were about to be delivered from the white people by supernatural means was general in 1890. Only a few, however, were bold enough to openly defy the authorities. Among the Sioux most of the unruly spirits gathered into the band of Big Foot, so it was thought advisable to disarm them, and an order to that effect was issued. They escaped from their first captor and after a while fell into the hands of General James W. Forsyth and the Seventh Cavalry. In the attempt to disarm the Indians a desperate conflict occurred in which 146 Indians were killed and 33 wounded, as well as 60 officers and men. General Forsyth and his command were at once subjected to the same class of criticism so freely bestowed after the Little Big Horn disaster, but the best authority was satisfied with the troops and their handling.

"Lieutenant Edward W. Casey, Twenty-second Infantry, while riding toward the hostile camp of Brule Sioux, probably with the intention of emulating the previous exploit of Gatewood in Geronimo's camp, was killed by a murderous Brule Indian. The Indian was acquitted on the ground that it was an act of war, and the fellow was congratulated by an enthusiastic audience, so we are told. We should like to know what would happen to an American soldier tried for shooting an enemy in the back. In the death of Casey the Indians lost one of their best friends, who had done much for them and who, by his ability and intelligence, was capable of much more."

September, 1876

Companies A, B, D, I and K performed ordinary garrison and escort duties during the month at their respective stations. Company E left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, September 27, 1876, en route to take post at cantonment, Reno, on Powder River, Wyoming camp on Wagonhound Creek, Wyoming, September 30, 1876. Distance marched, 67 miles. Companies C, G and H were on duty during the month with the Big Horn and Yellowstone Expeditions under command of Brigadier-General Crook. The companies left camp on Beaver Creek September 1st, and marched 92 miles to the Heart River which was reached September 5th, 1876, leaving September 6th, arriving September 9th on Rabbit Creek, Slim Buttes, where a Sioux village was captured by the expedition. An attack was made on the troops by Indians about 4:00 P. M. September 9th, during which Private Robert Fitz Henery, Company H,

Digitized by Google

received a flesh wound in the thigh. September 10th and 11th, marched 36 miles to branch of Owl Creek; September 12th, 36 miles to branch of Belle Fourche River; September 13th, four miles to Belle Fourche River; September 14th to 30th the command marched 97½ miles to camp on French Creek, Black Hills, Dakota. Half rations were issued to the command September 5th and 6th, quarter rations September 7th, and from the 8th to the 15th inclusive, the command subsisted on horse-meat and dried meat captured in the Indian village.

October, 1876

Companies A, D, F, and K performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations. Companies B and I left Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, October 31st, en route to join Powder River Expedition at Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, Company E left Wagonhound Creek, Wyoming, and marched to cantonment Reno, Wyoming, 103 miles, where it arrived October 13th, 1876. Companies C, G and H, in the field with the Big Horn and Yellowstone Expeditions under command of Brigadier-General Crook, left camp on French Creek, in Black Hills of Dakota, October 2nd, and arrived October 24th at Camp Robinson where Company G took post. Companies C and H proceeded to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, and took post. Distance marched, by Company G during month, 103 miles, and by Companies C and H, 176 miles.

November, 1876

Headquarters, Field Staff and Band, and Company H left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, en route to Sidney Barracks, Montana, November 3rd, 1876, arrived there November 8, 1876, and took post. Companies B and I left Dead Horse Creek, Wyoming, November 1, 1876, to join Powder River Expedition, arriving at Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, November 9, 1876. Companies A, D, and K left Camp Robinson, Nebraska, November 1, 1876, and marched via Fort Laramie, Wyoming, being there joined by Company F, to join the Powder River Expedition at Fort Fetterman, Wyoming arriving November 9, 1876, in conjunction with the balance of the troops composing the Powder River Expedition under command of Brigadier-General Crook. These companies left camp at Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, November 14th, and marched 90 miles to old Fort Reno, Wyoming, arriving there November 18, 1876, thence continued the march November 22nd, and arrived same day at Crazy Woman's Fork and made camp. Total distance marched during month, 340 miles. Companies C, E and G performed usual garrison and escort duties during the month at their respective stations.

Digitized by Google

DECEMBER, 1876

Companies A, B, D, F, I and K, in the field with the Powder River Expedition under command of Brigadier-General Crook, U. S. A., left camp on Crazy Woman's Fork, Wyoming, arriving at Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, December 29, 1876; left Fort Fetterman, Wyoming, and arrived at La Bonte Creek, December 31st. Total distance marched during month, 256 miles. Companies C, E, G and H performed usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

JANUARY, 1877

Headquarters and Company H left Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, January 10th, and proceeded to Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, arriving January 11th and taking post. Companies A, B, D, F, I and K, on duty in the field with the Powder River Expedition under command of Brigadier-General Crook, left camp at La Bonte Creek, Wyoming, January 1st, arrived at Cheyenne, Wyoming, where the expedition disbanded on January 6, 1877. Companies of the Ninth Infantry on duty therewith taking station as follows: Company A at North Platte, Nebraska, having marched 157 miles and traveled by rail 233 miles during the month. Companies B, D, F, I and K at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, having traveled 516 miles by rail and marched 157 miles during the month. Companies C, E and G, performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

JULY, 1877

Companies A, C, E and G performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

Companies B, D, F, I and K left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, July 25, 1877, and marched to Omaha, 3 miles, thence proceeded by rail to Chicago, Illinois, 516 miles, arriving August 26, 1877, doing duty balance of the month guarding public property endangered by the strike of the railroad employees.

AUGUST, 1877

Companies A, C, E, and G performed the usual garrison duties during the month.

Companies B, D, F, H and I left Chicago, Illinois, August 19th and arrived at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, August 20, 1877, Company K left Chicago, Illinois, August 20th and arrived at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, August 21, 1877. Distance by rail, 492 miles. Companies B, D, F and K left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, August 29, 1877, marched to Omaha,

Digitized by Google

Nebraska, four miles and thence proceeded by rail to the following posts for temporary duty as follows:

Company B to Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, 518 miles, arrived August 31, 1877.

Company D to Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, 517 miles, arrived August 31, 1877.

Company F to Fort McPherson, Nebraska, 285 miles, arrived August 30, 1877.

Company I to Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, 414 miles, arrived August 30, 1877.

Company K to Fort Sanders, Wyoming, 570 miles, arrived August 31, 1877.

NOVEMBER, 1877

The following changes of station were made by companies of the regiment during the month: Company A, November 4th, left North Platte, proceeded to and took post at Fort McPherson, Nebraska. Distance traveled by rail 16 miles. Company B November 3rd left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, and marched 2 miles to Cheyenne, Wyoming, thence proceeded by rail 516 miles to Omaha; marched 3 miles to Omaha Barracks, arriving and taking post November 4th. Company C November 14th left Fort Laramie, Wyoming, and marched to Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, 90 miles, arriving and taking post at latter station November 18th. Company D, left Cheyenne, Wyoming, November 7th, and proceeded to and took post at Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, arriving November 8th. Distance by rail 112 miles. Company F's station changed from Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, to Fort McPherson, Nebraska, where company was on duty during month. Company G November 4th, left Camp Robinson, Nebraska, and marched 120 miles to Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, thence proceeded by rail 412 miles to Omaha, Nebraska, thence marched 3 miles to Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, arriving and taking post November 11th.

MAY, 1878

Companies A, D, and G performed the usual garrison and escort duties during the month. Company C left Camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, May 20, 1878, for Fort Laramie, Wyoming for duty in summer camp on Little Missouri River, Wyoming, and arrived at Fort Laramie, Wyoming, May 25, 1878. Distance marched, 88 miles. Company E left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, May 4, 1878, en route to Clear Fork, Wyoming for purpose of preparing mill site and erecting sawmill, and arrived at Clear Fork, May 7, 1878. Distance marched, 49.51 miles. Company F left Fort McPherson, Nebraska, May 13, 1878, en route to

Digitized by Google

Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, at which place it arrived on the 14th inst., having traveled by rail 277 miles and marched 10 miles. Total distance 287 miles. Companies B, H and I, under command of Major E. F. Townsend, Ninth Infantry, left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, May 18, 1878, en route to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, for duty in summer camp on Little Missouri River, Wyoming arriving at Fort Laramie, May 25, 1878, having traveled 516 miles by rail and marched 91.36 miles. Total distance 607.36 miles. Company K left Fort Sanders, Wyoming, May 16, 1878, en route to Camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, at which place it arrived the same day. Distance by rail 51 miles.

JUNE, 1878

Companies A, D, F, G, and K performed the usual garrison duty at their respective stations during the month. Company E left camp at Clear Fork, Wyoming, June 7, 1878, en route to Fort McKinney, Wyoming, arriving there June 9, 1878. Distance marched, 51 miles. Companies B, C, H and I left camp near Fort Laramie, Wyoming, June 1, 1878, en route to Little Missouri River, there to establish summer camp. Companies C, H, and I arrived there at June 26, 1878, after a march of 240 miles, and Company D arrived June 9, 1878, after having marched 257 miles.

JULY, 1878

Companies A, B, D, F, G, H and K performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations and camps during the month. Company C left camp on Little Missouri River, Wyoming, July 1, 1878, as escort to supply train en route to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, arriving at that post July 12, 1878, returning left Fort Laramie, July 17th, and arrived at camp 10 miles from Belle Fourche River, Wyoming, July 30, 1878. Total distance marched 470 miles. Company E left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, July 15, 1878, en route to site of new post on Clear Fork, Wyoming, at which place it arrived July 18, 1878. Distance marched, 51 miles. Company I, from July 1st to 25th, assisted in establishing the camp on Little Missouri River, Dakota, and performed the usual camp duties during the month. July 25, 1878, the company moved camp five miles up the right bank of the Little Missouri River, Dakota, and began the construction of the telegraph line to Deadwood City, Dakota.

AUGUST, 1878

Companies A, D, E, F, G and K performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations during the month. Company B has been doing duty with General Bradley's command during the month, nineteen

Digitized by Google

days of that time on detached service engaged in the construction of military telegraph line from Camp Devin on the Missouri River, Montana to Deadwood, Dakota. Distance marched during the month, 40 miles. Company C was engaged in cutting and setting telegraph poles from August 12th to 24th. August 25th, left camp 10 miles from Belle Fourche and marched to Camp Devin, four miles. Company H remained in camp on the Little Missouri River, Wyoming, from August 1st to 15th, performing the usual camp duties and assisting in building a telegraph line between the camp and the Belle Fourche, Wyoming, August 16th, left camp on the Little Missouri River, Wyoming, en route to permanent camp on Hay Creek, Wyoming, escorting a supply train, arriving August 17th, where the company has been stationed since. Total distance marched during the month, 34 miles. Company I returned to summer camp on the Little Missouri River, Wyoming, August 1, 1878, where it remained until the 10th, when it marched en route for Hay Creek, arriving there on the 11th. Distance 34 miles. During the month the company assisted in building the above-mentioned telegraph line and performed the usual camp duties. Total distance marched, 39 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1878

Companies A, D, E, and F performed the usual garrison duty during the month. Company B has been doing duty with Lieutenant-Colonel Bradley's command in the field during the month. Left camp on Redwater, Wyoming, on the 22nd inst., en route to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, and camped on headwaters of the Niobrara, Wyoming, September 30th. Distance marched, 148 miles. Company C was engaged from September 8th to 15th in cutting and setting telegraph poles; after completing the line to Deadwood the company returned to Camp Devin, Wyoming, on Redwater, Wyoming, left Camp Devin en route for Fort Laramie September 22nd, and reached Running Water September 30th. Marched a distance of 152 miles during the month. Company G remained at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, until September 13, 1878, when it proceeded to camp in the field near Sidney, Nebraska, arriving there September 14th. Distance traveled by rail 412 miles. Company H left permanent camp and proceeded to Centennial Valley, Dakota, September 2, 1878, to work on telegraph line, returning to permanent camp September 10, 1878. Distance 41 miles. The company left permanent camp en route to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, September 22, 1878, arriving at Running Water, September 30, 1878. Distance 150¾ miles. Total distance marched during the month, 191¾ miles. Company I remained in camp from 1st to 8th of September at Hay Creek, Wyoming, on which date it moved

Digitized by Google

eight miles to Redwater, where it remained until the 22nd inst., when it marched en route for Fort Laramie, Wyoming, arriving at Running Water, Wyoming, the 30th inst. Total distance marched during the month, 155 miles. Company K remained at camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, until September 12th, on which date the company proceeded by rail to Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, and went into camp near Sidney Barracks, where the company (being mounted) remained in readiness to operate against Indians at a moment's notice. Distance traveled by rail 105 miles.

OCTOBER, 1878

Companies A, E, and F performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company B camped on Niobrara River, Wyoming, October 1, 1878, and proceeded to Sidney Barracks, arriving there October 26th. Distance marched, 142 miles; by rail 103 miles. Company C left camp on Running Water, Wyoming, October 1, 1878, and arrived at Fish Creek, October 31, 1878. Marched 181 miles during the month. Company D left Sidney Barracks October 31, 1878, and took the train for Rock Creek, Wyoming, en route for Fort McKinney. Company G proceeded from camp near Sidney Barracks October 15th, by rail to Omaha Barracks, arriving there October 16th; one Corporal and six privates, as mounted Infantry, remained in the field in Major Thornburgh's command. Company H left Running Water, Wyoming, October 1, 1878, arriving at Omaha Barracks October 27th. Distance marched, 135½ miles, by rail 516 miles. Company I left camp on Running Water, Wyoming, October 1, 1878, arriving at Fort McPherson, Nebraska, October 27th. Total distance marched, 150 miles, by rail 240 miles. Company K left camp near Sidney Barracks, Nebraska, October 4, 1878, arriving at Cheyenne Depot October 29th.

NOVEMBER, 1878

Companies B, G, H, and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company A left Fort McPherson, Nebraska, October 30, 1878, arriving at Fort McKinney, Wyoming, November 15, 1878. Company C left Fish Creek November 3rd, and marched to Fort Hartsuff. Total distance 34 miles. Company D left Rock Creek, Washington Territory, November 2nd, and marched to Fort McKinney, Washington Territory, 223½ miles, arriving November and taking post. Company E left Fort McKinney, Washington Territory, November 22nd, en route to Cheyenne Depot, Washington Territory, marched to and arrived at Camp No. 9 November 30, 1878. Distance 190 miles. Company F left Omaha Barracks, Nebraska, and arrived at Fort

Digitized by Google

McKinney, Washington Territory, November 15, 1878, marching from Rock Creek to Fort McKinney. Distance 217 miles. Company K left Cheyenne Depot, Washington Territory, November 1, 1878, arriving at Fort McKinney November 15, 1878. Total distance marched, 230 miles.

DECEMBER, 1878

Companies A, B, D, G, H and I performed usual garrison duties during the month. Company C—Captain Munson and Lieutenant Norris with 3 Sergeants and 13 privates proceeded on a scout to the Niobrara River, returning December 21, 1878. Distance marched, 250 miles. Company E left Camp No. 9, December 1, 1878, arrived and took post at Cheyenne Depot December 3rd. Distance by marching and by rail 110 miles. Company F ran sawmill in Canon near Fort McKinney Washington Territory, during month. Company K guarded and worked sawmill, cutting logs, etc., to complete post.

JANUARY, 1878

Companies A, B, C, D, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company F ran sawmill in Canon near Fort McKinney, Washington Territory, during the month. Company K guarded and worked sawmill, providing lumber to complete post.

FEBRUARY, 1878

Companies B, D, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company A engaged in moving sawmill and getting out lumber for same. Company C Lieutenant Capron, Ninth Infantry, and 20 enlisted men on scout to Niobrara River returned February 24th. Distance marched, 288 miles. Company F chopped logs for sawmill. Company K guarded and worked sawmill for completion of post.

MARCH, 1879

Companies A, B, C, D, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties. Company F chopped logs for sawmill during the month. Company K guarded and worked sawmill during the month.

APRIL, 1879

Companies B, C, E, G, and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Companies A and D engaged in building new post at Fort McKinney, Washington Territory. Company F at sawmill. Company H, left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, April 11th for Hastings, Nebraska, and returned to Omaha, Nebraska, April 18th. Distance by rail 338 miles. Company K guarded and worked sawmill.

Digitized by Google

MAY, 1879

Companies A, B, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company C—Captain Munson, and Lieutenant Norris, with 20 enlisted men proceeded on scout to Niobrara River, returning May 15th, 1879. Distance marched, 288 miles. Company D employed in building post and doing garrison duty. Company F employed in running sawmill, during the month. Company K engaged in guarding and working sawmill during the month.

JUNE, 1879

Companies A, B, C, G, H and I performed the usual garrison and escort duties during the month. Company D employed in building post and in garrison duties. Company E, a detachment of 4 men, left camp June 6, 1879, as escort to Lieutenant-Colonel W. B. Royall, A. A. Inspector-General, Department of the Platte, to and from Fort McKinney, Washington Territory, returned June 27th. Distance marched, 650 miles. Company F ran sawmill during the month. Company K engaged in guarding and working saw mill.

JULY, 1879

Companies A, B, D, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company C — Captain Munson, Ninth Infantry, with 20 enlisted men on scout to Niobrara River, returned July 17th. Distance marched, 222 miles. Company F ran sawmill during the month. Company K guarded and worked sawmill during the month.

AUGUST, 1879

Companies A, B, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison and escort duties during the month. Company C, Lieutenant Capron, with 2 non-commissioned officers and 10 privates on scout to Niobrara River for the purpose of exploring from its mouth to the mouth of the Minne Chaduza. Company D employed in building post and performing regular garrison duties. Company F ran sawmill during the month. Company K guarded and worked sawmill.

SEPTEMBER, 1879

Companies A, B, E, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company C First-Lieutenant Capron, with 2 non-commissioned officers and 10 privates returned September 7th from scout. Distance marched, 472 miles. Company D built post and per-

Digitized by Google

formed garrison duties. Company F employed in running sawmill. Company K, from September 1st to 7th, stationed in canon of Big Horn Mountains, adjacent to Fort McKinney, Washington Territory. On September 8th the company marched 3½ miles to Fort McKinney, and took station. September 9th to 30th the company engaged in working sawmill, and performing garrison duties.

OCTOBER, 1879

Companies A, B, C, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during the month. Company D built post and performed usual garrison duties. Companies F and K proceeded from sawmill near Fort McKinney, Wyoming, to Rawlins, Wyoming, marched from Fort McKinney to Rock Creek, Wyoming, arriving October 15th. Distance marched, 234 miles. From Rock Creek to Rawlins, Wyoming, by rail 90 miles, arrived October 17, 1879, where they went into camp awaiting orders. Distance traveled, 324 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1879

Companies A, B, C, D, G, H and I performed usual garrison duties. A detachment of 1 non-commissioned officer and 6 privates from Company E left camp November 11, 1879, as escort to Major Tower, Paymaster U. S. A., to Fort McKinney, Wyoming, and return. Company F was ordered from camp near Rawlins, Wyoming, to proceed to Snake River, Wyoming, and marched from that place November 5, 1879, arriving at Snake River November 7, 1879. Distance traveled, 65 miles. Company K in camp at Rawlins, Wyoming, from November 1st to 4th. On November 5th the company marched to Sulphur Springs, 21 miles, and thence to Snake River, where it went into camp. Distance marched, 67 miles.

DECEMBER, 1879

Companies B, C, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A and D constructing new post and performing usual garrison duties. A detachment of 1 non-commissioned officer and 6 privates from Company E left camp November 11th, escort to Major Tower, Paymaster, U. S. A., to Fort McKinney, Wyoming, returned December 9, 1879. Distance traveled, 645 miles. Company F, in camp on Snake River, Wyoming, engaged in furnishing escorts to supply trains en route to White River Ute Agency, Colorado, constructed huts and corral for Quartermaster horses, and guarded Quartermaster stores. Company K, on Snake River, Wyoming, escorted trains, built quarters, stables and corral, received, issued, and guarded forage for the expedition.

Digitized by Google

JANUARY, 1880

Companies B, C, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties. Company A engaged in constructing post and in usual garrison duties during the month. Company D engaged in building post and in the usual garrison duties. Company F remained in camp during the month, constructing commissary storehouse, getting out logs for building bridge, and performing the regular garrison duties. Company K remained at station on Snake River, building commissary storehouse and guard-house, receiving, issuing and guarding forage for the expedition and cutting logs for bridges. Heavy snows during month. Last three days, mercury at twenty-six degrees below zero.

FEBRUARY, 1880

Companies B, C, E, G, H, and I performed usual garrison and escort duties at their respective stations during month. Companies A and D constructed post and performed regular garrison duties during month. Company F, in camp on Snake River, Wyoming, engaged in fatigue work, cutting logs for construction of bridge across Snake River, Wyoming, and performing the usual garrison duties. Severe cold weather with frequent storms of wind and snow. Company K, from January 31st to February 29th, engaged in building huts, cutting logs for Bear and Snake River bridges, and helping to build same, receiving and issuing forage for Snake River and White River cantonments. The weather during the month was cold, accompanied by heavy snow falls, the thermometer ranging from 15 to 18 degrees below zero at night.

MARCH, 1880

Companies B, C, E, G, and H performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A and D constructed post and performed the regular garrison duties. Company F, in camp on Snake River, Wyoming, cut logs for construction of bridge across Snake River and performed the regular garrison duties. Company I performed the usual garrison duties at Fort McPherson, Nebraska, from March 1 to 29th. On March 29th the company left Fort McPherson, Nebraska, en route for Fort Sidney, Nebraska, leaving one commissioned officer, one non-commissioned officer and 14 privates behind. Arrived at Fort Sidney March 30th. Distance traveled by rail 141 miles. Company K cut logs for Bear and Snake River bridges and helped to build same, received and issued forage for Snake and White River cantonments. Severe cold weather during the month; mercury ranged from 28 to 42 degrees below zero.

Digitized by Google

APRIL, 1880

Companies C, E, G, H, and I performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A and D engaged in constructing post and performing the regular garrison duties. Company B left Fort Sidney, Nebraska, April 1, en route to the site of the new post, Fort Niobrara, Nebraska, arriving there April 22, 1880, distance by rail during month, 260 miles, distance marched 200 miles. Companies F and K were engaged in building bridges across Snake River, Four, and Six-mile Creeks, repairing roads and doing necessary guard duties.

MAY, 1880

Companies C and I performed the usual garrison and escort duties. Companies A and D engaged in constructing post and performing the regular garrison duties. Company B engaged in construction of post during month. Company E — Sergeant Louder, Corporal Hodson, and 12 privates of Company E left camp May 2, 1880, as escort to Major W. Wham, Paymaster U. S. A., to Fort Niobrara, Nebraska, and returned on the 25th day of May, 1880. Distance 790 miles. Companies F and K remained in camp on Snake River, Wyoming, engaged in construction of Quartermaster, and Commissary storehouses, repairing White River wagon road and general routine duties. Companies G and H proceeded to Omaha, Nebraska, May 22, 1880, remaining there until May 23, 1880, and returned to Fort Omaha, Nebraska.

JUNE, 1880

Companies A, C, D, E, G, H and I performed usual garrison duties. Company B engaged in construction of new post during month. Company F, in camp on Snake River, performed regular routine duty. Company K engaged in repairing bridges and roads between Rawlins and White River and doing necessary guard and fatigue duty.

JULY, 1880

Companies A, C, D, H and I performed the usual garrison duties during month. Company B engaged in constructing new post (Fort Niobrara) during month. Company E left camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, July 8, 1880, en route to Camp Sheridan, Nebraska; arrived and took post July 19th, 1880. Distance traveled, 224 miles. Company F left camp on Snake River, July 4, 1880, proceeded to Rawlins, Wyoming, arriving there July 4, 1880. Distance marched, 65 miles. Proceeded by rail to Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, arriving there July

Digitized by Google

5, 1880. Distance by rail 195 miles, total distance 260 miles. Company G left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, July 7, 1880, en route to Fort Robinson, Nebraska, arriving there July 13th. Distance traveled, 414 miles, distance marched, 120 miles, total distance 534 miles. Company K left camp on Snake River, Wyoming, July 1, 1880, arriving at Rawlins, Wyoming, July 4, 1880. Distance marched, 65 miles. Proceeded by rail to Fort Omaha, Nebraska, arriving there July 6. Total distance 778 miles.

AUGUST, 1880

Companies A, C, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed usual garrison duties. Company B engaged in construction of buildings for new post at Fort Niobrara.

SEPTEMBER, 1880

Companies A, C, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed usual garrison duties. Company B engaged in construction of buildings for new post at Fort Niobrara.

OCTOBER, 1880

Companies B, C, E, F, G and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A and D left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, October, 28th, arriving at Antelope Springs, October 31st. Distance marched, 89 miles. Company H left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, October 7, 1880, for station at Fort McKinney, arriving October 26, 1880. By rail 627 miles; by marching 227 miles. Company I left Sidney, Nebraska, October, 1880, arriving at Rock Creek Station, Wyoming, same date. Distance by rail 213 miles. Left Rock Creek Station, Wyoming, October 12th, en route to Fort McKinney, Wyoming, arriving there October 26, 1880. Distance marched, 227 miles, total distance 440 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1880

Companies C, E, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Company A arrived at its station, Camp Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, November 7th from Fort McKinney, Wyoming. Distance marched, 227 miles, and distance traveled by rail, 95 miles. Company B moved from camp occupied by garrison engaged in work of building new post of Fort Niobrara, Nebraska, on the 24th, into the permanent barracks. Company D left Antelope Springs, Wyoming, November 1, 1880, en route to Fort Omaha, Nebraska, marched 130 miles, traveled by rail 622 miles, arrived at Fort Omaha, Nebraska, November 9, 1880, and there performed regular garrison duties, and drilled four times a week. Company F left camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, November 1, 1880, and pro-

Digitized by Google

ceeded by rail to Fort Sidney, Nebraska, arriving there same date. Distance by rail, 102 miles.

December, 1880

All the companies of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

May, 1881

Companies A, B, D, F, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Company C left Fort Hartsuff Nebraska, May 9th, 1881, arriving at Fort Omaha, Nebraska, May 13. Total distance 228 miles. Company E left Camp Sheridan, Nebraska, May 3, 1881, en route to Fort Robinson, Nebraska, arriving there and taking station, May 4, 1881. Distance traveled 45 miles.

June, 1881

Companies A, B, C, D, F, G, H, I and K performed usual garrison duties during month. Company E left Camp Robinson, Nebraska, en route for camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming. Distance traveled 130 miles.

July, 1881

Companies B, C, D, F, G, H, I and K performed usual garrison duties. Company A left camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, July 10, 1881, arriving and taking post at Fort McKinney, Wyoming, July 24, 1881. Distance marched, 300 miles. Average daily march 20 miles. Company E left Chug Water, Wyoming, July 1, 1881, marched to and arrived at camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, July 2, 1881. Distance traveled, 46 miles.

August, 1881, to March, 1882

Companies B, C, D, E, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Company A left post March 29, 1882, to French Creek, 7 miles, and engaged in cutting logs for building purposes at Fort McKinney, Wyoming. Company F consisting of 19 men, commanded by First Lieutenant W. B. Pease, Ninth Infantry, left the post at Fort Sidney, Nebraska, and proceeded by way of the U. P. R. R. to Omaha, Nebraska, arriving thereat March 11, 1882. Left camp near Omaha, Nebraska, March 21, for Fort Sidney, Nebraska, arriving thereat March 22, 1882. While in camp near Omaha, Nebraska, the company furnished the necessary guard on the Willow Springs Distillery.

Digitized by Google

April, 1882

Company A returned from French Creek, Wyoming, to its proper station, Fort McKinney, Wyoming, resuming the usual garrison duties April 20, 1882. Companies B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties.

July, 1882

Companies A, B, C, D, E, F, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Company G left Fort Robinson, Nebraska, July 10, en route to Spring Canon, repairing roads, returning to Fort Robinson July 18, 1882.

August, 1882

Companies A, B, D, F, G and H performed the usual garrison duties. Pursuant to G. O. 14, c. s. Headquarters Department of the Platte, the following changes of station were made during the month. Regimental Headquarters, Staff, N. C. Staff, Band and Company C left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, for Fort Robinson, Nebraska, August 10, 1882, arrived and took station August 11, 1882. Distance traveled, 327 miles. Company E left camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, August 8, 1882, marching to and taking station at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, same day. Distance 1 mile. Company I left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, for Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, August 11, 1882, arriving August 21, 1882. Distance marched, 227 miles, distance by rail 102 miles. Company K left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, for Fort McKinney, Wyoming, August 23, 1882, arriving at Little Cheyenne, Wyoming, August 31, 1882. Distance by rail 626 miles, distance marched, 119 miles.

September, 1882

Companies A, B, C, E, G, H and I performed the usual garrison duties. Regimental Headquarters and Band left Fort Niobrara, Nebraska, for Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, September 26, 1882, arrived and took post September 28, 1882. Distance traveled, 755 miles. Company D left Fort Omaha, Nebraska, for Fort Douglas, Utah, September 19, 1882, arrived September 20, 1882. Distance traveled, 1,070 miles. Company F left Fort Sidney Nebraska, for Fort Douglas, Utah, September 19, 1882, and arrived and took post September 20, 1882. Distance 647 miles. Company K continued the march from Cheyenne, Wyoming, arriving at Fort McKinney, Wyoming, September 5, 1882. Distance marched, 109 miles.

Digitized by Google

OCTOBER, 1882, TO MARCH, 1883

Companies A, B, C, E, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies D and F left Fort Douglas, Utah, October 25, 1882, proceeded by rail to Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, arriving and taking post October 26, 1882. Distance traveled, 556 miles. Company G left Fort Robinson, Nebraska, October 9, 1882, arrived and took post at Fort Fred Steele, Wyoming, October, 16, 1882. Distance marched, 120 miles, traveled by rail 281 miles; total distance 401 miles.

APRIL, 1883

Companies A, D, E, F, H and K performed usual garrison duties. Companies B and C left Fort Niobrara, Nebraska, April 3, 1883, arrived at Fort Bridger, Wyoming, April 5, 1883. Distance marched, 15 miles, distance traveled by rail, 1,136 miles. Company G left Fort Fred Steele, Wyoming, April 4, 1883, arriving at Fort Bridger, Wyoming, April 5, 1883. Distance marched, 11 miles, distance traveled by rail, 209 miles.

MAY, 1883

Companies B, C, D, E, F, G, I and K performed usual garrison duties. Companies A and H left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, May 21, 1883, arrived at Horseshoe, Wyoming, May 31, 1883, en route to Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming. Distance marched, 180 miles.

JUNE, 1883

Companies D, E, F, G, I and K performed usual garrison duties. Companies A and H left Horseshoe, Wyoming, June 1, 1883, arrived and took station at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, June 7, 1883. Distance marched, 108 miles. Companies B and C, as part of a battalion under command of Major I. D. De Russy, Fourth Infantry, left Fort Bridger, Wyoming, June 8, 1883, and were employed repairing wagon roads from Carter Station, Wyoming, to Fort Thornburgh, Utah. In Camp No. 9, June 30, 1883. Distance 60 miles from Fort Bridger, Wyoming.

JULY, 1883

Companies A, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies B and C repaired wagon road from Carter Station to Fort Thornburgh, Utah. Present Camp No. 11 (July 31, 1883) 70 miles from Fort Bridger, Wyoming. Company F left camp at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming. Sergeant Wiggs Pederson, Company C, was accidentally killed July 26, 1883, by a falling tree, while at work on the road.

Digitized by Google

AUGUST, 1883

Companies A, D, E, F, G, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies B and C having completed work on the road from Carter's Station, Wyoming, to Fort Thornburgh, Utah, rejoined station at Fort Bridger, Wyoming, and resumed usual garrison duties.

SEPTEMBER, 1883, TO JANUARY, 1884

All companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations. Private Gustave A. Osborn, Company A, Ninth Infantry, died from exposure on the night of December 17–18, 1883; body found January 12, 1884.

MAY, 1884, TO JUNE, 1885, INCLUSIVE

All companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations. A detachment of Company G, consisting of 3 non-commissioned officers, 1 musician, and 11 privates, under the command of Captain A. Morton, Ninth Infantry, proceeded on May 10, 1884, to Green River City, Wyoming, for the purpose of escorting Indian Agent Mr. Elisha Davis to the Uintah Agency. The snow in the mountains being too deep to cross in wagons, the detachment returned to its post May 15, 1884. Distance marched, 130 miles.

JULY, 1885

Companies B, C, G, H and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A, D, E, F and I left port D. A. Russell, Wyoming, July 11, en route to Crissfield, Kansas, arriving there July 13th. Distance traveled, 830 miles. This assembling of troops was because of a threatened uprising of the Southern Cheyenne Indians.

AUGUST, 1885

Companies H and K performed the usual garrison duties. Companies A, D, E, F and I left camp at Crissfield, Kansas, August 6th, and arrived at Fort D. A. Russell August 8th. After arrival they performed the regular garrison duties. Distance traveled, 830 miles. Companies B, C and G left Fort Bridger, Wyoming, August 21st, and went into camp one mile west of post. They took up line of march next day, and arrived at Camp Murray, Utah, August 29th. Distance marched, 105 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1885

Companies D, E, F and I performed the usual garrison duties. Company A left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, September 4, arriving at

Digitized by Google

Evanstown, Wyoming, September 5, and went into camp. Distance traveled, 443 miles. Company B left Camp Murray, Utah, September 8th, arriving at Evanstown, Wyoming, September 9. Companies C and G left Camp Murray, Utah, arriving at Rock Springs, Wyoming, September 9th. Companies A, B, C and G remained in camp the balance of month, doing guard and picket duty. Company H left Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, September 2nd, arriving at Pine Bluff, Wyoming, September 4th. They remained there drilling and receiving instruction until September 21st, and then marched back to Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, arriving there September 23d. Distance marched, 92 miles. Company K left Fort McKinney, Wyoming, September 1st, arriving at Fort D. A. Russell, Wyoming, September 17th, where they remained performing the usual garrison duties.

October, 1885, to June, 1886

Companies D, G, E, F, H, I and K performed the usual garrison duties. Company K left camp at Evanstown, Wyoming, October 19th, 1885, arriving at Fort D. A. Russell, October 20, 1885. Distance traveled, 443 miles. Company C left camp at Rock Spring, Wyoming, October 19, 1885, arriving at Fort D. A. Russell, October, 20, 1885. Distance traveled 315 miles. Company G left camp at Rock Springs, Wyoming, arriving at Fort Bridger, Wyoming, October 22, 1885. Companies A, C and G remained at their stations, performing their usual garrison duties.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V

REGIMENT TRANSFERRED TO ARIZONA AND NEW MEXICO — APACHE CAMPAIGN — APACHE KID — MARCHES OF COMPANIES — INDIAN COMPANY — NICKNAMES — REMINISCENCES — FIELD TRAINING AND PRACTICE MARCHES — CHANGE OF STATION TO DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST.

THE detailed records[1] show that the bulk of the regiment served in Arizona from the latter part of July, 1886, until the latter part 1891 and first part of 1892, something over five years.

The Headquarters and four companies were transferred to Madison Barracks, New York, in October, 1891, Companies B, C, E and H following in May, 1892.

In the latter half of 1886 and first part of 1887 several companies served in New Mexico. Company E took station at San Diego Barracks, California, in January, 1887.

The service in 1886 was during troublesome Indian times among the warlike Apaches, and had more or less reference to General Miles' forceful and phenomenally successful campaign, which resulted in the capture of the cruel and blood-thirsty bands of roving Apaches, who, with unspeakable atrocities, were terrorizing Southern Arizona — notably under the wily Geronimo.

Companies G and A, under Captains Morton and Bowman, participated in arresting and disarming the disaffected Chiricauhua Apaches at Fort Apache, Arizona, August 29, 1886.

After restoration of peace, precautionary and preventive measures were taken against further trouble and to suppress incipient outbreaks of disaffected small bands. This, at times, involved much marching and hard service, and frequent changes of stations among the companies in Arizona. The operations were almost entirely by single companies.

During the tour of the regiment in the Department of Arizona the companies were much scattered and the record shows service of one or more companies at the following stations and camps:

IN ARIZONA

Forts Apache, Thomas, McDowell, Huachuca, Verde, Mojave, Whipple Barracks, San Carlos, Nogales (sometimes incorrectly called "No-*hag*-les"), and camps on White and Black Rivers.

[1]Contributed by an "old-timer" of the Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

IN NEW MEXICO

Forts Wingate and Union; Camps San Augustine Plains, Silver City, Deming, Separ, Clarendon, Cloverdale, Horse Spring, Datil Creek, Sycamore Creek, and Nigrita River.

IN CALIFORNIA

San Diego Barracks and Camp Pacific Beach.

At many of the foregoing stations, and at all of the camps the companies were engaged in arduous service, scouting expeditions, covering passes and trails, preventing disorders on the border line between Arizona and Mexico, intercepting renegades from the "storm center" of San Carlos, and guarding Indian prisoners on their way to confinement in prisons and penitentiaries — one of the most notable instances being that of a desperate gang, some of whom attempted to escape while being conducted to the railroad; but the cool judgment and prompt action of Captain Morton landed them safely at destination "behind the bars." The foregoing work was mainly in arid sections not inaptly described as places where frequently one "must *climb* for water and *dig* for wood."

The companies usually occupied stations in rotation. San Carlos was probably the most disagreeable one, owing to heat, frequent and blinding dust storms, many bad Indians made wild and desperate by native fire-water ("Tiz-win"), and a general lack of almost every possible comfort of life. Companies A, F, G and K were stationed there under about the hardest and most trying conditions of field service when officers and men were under constant strain and of necessity always on the *qui vive*.

The writer recalls in one or two instances, when seated at meals in the mess tent, that the severed ears of some renegade Indian outlaws were unwrapped and exhibited as conclusive evidence of the death of the miscreants entitling the daring white and Indian scouts to the promised reward. Apache Kid and his few desperate followers were a terror on the border. They had first mutinied as scouts and had tried to kill the army Indian agent, Captain Pierce, and the noted guide, Al Seber, severely wounding the latter. They were soon apprehended, tried by court-martial and finally sentenced to imprisonment in California. Owing to some legal technicality or opinion they were sent back to Arizona, tried by the Civil Court, sentenced to imprisonment, and though handcuffed and on their way to prison under a fearless sheriff and one or more deputies, they sprang upon this guard with the ferocity of tigers, disarmed them and killed them with their own weapons, and

Digitized by Google

escaped to the mountains. After a few years of atrocious murders Kid and the few with him were finally exterminated.

Forts McDowell and Mojave were considered the hottest posts in the United States. Company D was stationed at the former for nearly three years. Companies C and A successively garrisoned the latter. Colonel Hough, the regimental Commander, stated that Fort Mojave, then commanded by Captain Bowman, was "the neatest and best administered post he had seen in the regiment; that Captain B was King in his bailiwick, and had wrought wonders in protecting the poverty stricken Indians in that vicinity, and had made them industrious and prosperous." This is one of the many object lessons of the advance of Indians under military control. Geronimo's band of so-called Apache prisoners at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, is another object lesson of similar character — in marked contrast to many of the old-time methods of the Indian Bureau which hastened "Lo, the poor Indian," to his wretched doom.

While in the Department of Arizona the actual marches of the various companies aggregate 7041 miles. (The F. S. and Band, stationed at Whipple Barracks, marched 102 miles.)

The different stations occupied aggregate 49; and the changes from one station to another aggregate 58.

Companies I and K were skeletonized in 1890.

An Apache Indian Company was enlisted at San Carlos in May, 1891, as Company I. Up to and including December 25, 1891, this company marched 802 miles, exceeding by 33 miles the next best record (of Company H). At times this Indian Company easily marched from 20 to 25 miles per day. On a forced march it is probable that most of these Indians could have doubled this distance daily. As foot Indians, many of these Apaches were simply phenomenal. This Indian Company (I) was transferred to the Eleventh Infantry at Fort Huachuca in January 1892.

As indicating the severity of service, discomforts, and exhausting climatic conditions in Arizona from 1886 to 1891, the regiment lost:

Five Captains by retirement for disability, (one of whom died soon after); Two Captains by death, and one First Lieutenant by retirement for disability:

In addition to the above, one Colonel retired for length of service on his own application; one Colonel retired for age (64).

Two First Lieutenants and one Second Lieutenant resigned.

Three First Lieutenants and two Second Lieutenants transferred.

One First Lieutenant dismissed.

Digitized by Google

Of the 10 Captains on the active list who came out of Arizona with the regiment in 1891–2, only four (4) are now living.

Much of the service of the companies was in conjunction with the Fourth and Tenth Cavalry, and the Twenty-fourth Infantry. The demands of duty in garrison and field occupied the time of officers and men who "stuck by their colors," and "society" did not interrupt nor impair military efficiency as in modern days. Company officers were in close touch with their men; loyal attachment was mutual, due to long and hard service together. Captains and many Lieutenants had been on duty with *their own companies* for years. The cavalry service was hard and the infantry had no easy job.

Now and then, but not often, a man would re-enlist in the other branch of the service. At Fort Thomas a fine colored cavalry soldier re-enlisted in the Twenty-fourth Infantry. His gallant cavalry Captain (now a distinguished retired Brigadier-General) remonstrated in no mild terms with this soldier for leaving his troop and "taking on" with the "doughs." To this the soldier replied, "O, Sir, I likes de Captain, I likes de non-coms, I likes de troop de best kind, but de fact is dat I'ze been in de troop so long in Arizona dat I'ze *awful tired of walkin'*. It's holdin' de horse by de tail goin' down de mountain and pullin' him up on t'other side, and mighty little levels whar de cavalryman can ride."

As a rule the cavalry had more field service, while the infantry occasionally got "a lift" on wagons where the conditions were favorable.

In the days of useful and strenuous service in the West and Southwest, when there weren't so many "paper and book soldiers," many officers were given nicknames by their men, and by Indians too, usually illustrating personal peculiarities. In the regiment there were several "Bills" known as "Grizzly Bill" (a noted hunter); "Red Bill," of florid complexion; "Bunion Bill" from his "nobby feet"; "Ready Bill," a "rough diamond," who could turn his hand to anything in line or staff; at 69 he can probably do more efficient work than half the officers on the active list; "The Count," from his immaculate dress and uniform courteous dignity; "Fighting Andy," of versatile talents, who never evaded a "scrap," professional or personal; "Little Big Man," of small stature, but with the voice of Stentor; and "Big Nose," the tallest officer was known as "Shorty"; the mild and moral exemplar among Lieutenants as "Sinful"; "Calico Jack," the last to join as "Johnnie Come-Lately"; "The Farmer"; "The Old Man"; "Left Oblique," and one as "Crummie," who resigned many years ago. The Chaplain was always known as "Holy Jo."

When the Medical Department insisted upon the "handle" of mili-

Digitized by Google

tary titles, the men would refer to them as "*Major* doctors," "*Captain* doctors," etc. Those of junior rank and the contract surgeons were called "Pills." In modern days, coincident with the disappearance of "hospital stewards," these lower grades are the only ones known or addressed as "Doctors." The dignified and austere "Medical Director" of the old days was known as "Medicine Bear."

Speaking of cognomens, etc., when "Left Oblique" joined Company A at Vancouver Barracks in '61 or '62, he complained to his Company Commander that the men were calling him names. Major Lugenbeel said, "What do they call you, Mr. Mears?" "Vinegar Jack" and "Johnny Come-Lately," replied Mr. Mears. "Pooh! Pooh! Mr. Mears, they call me 'Old Blind Pinkey.'"

Such it is to be damned with an epithet.

Most of the older officers of the regiment — now retired — will recognize to whom these pseudonyms apply.

In the 70's nearly all the Captains and Lieutenants then in the regiment had had service throughout the Civil War.

At one station, in the then wilds of Nebraska, a senior First Lieutenant of mediocre scholastic attainments fell temporarily in command, owing to the absence of the dear old captain, "Uncle John." One of the Second Lieutenants, of distinguished war service, at times a little erratic, was somewhat free and familiar with the First Lieutenant "K. O." A well-known wit among the officers advised the latter to "call down" the presuming Second Lieutenant, and insist in a written personal notice to the derelict that full respect be paid to the "K. O." The latter was somewhat perplexed, as the Second Lieutenant had seen far more service than the "K. O." He finally wrote a note of admonition to the former, couched about as follows:

Sir:

"Your *undo* familiarity must stop. I want you to understand that there is but *one* commanding officer in this here camp and I am *it*." Thereafter this "K. O." was called "IT," and on January 1, 1871, he was "lost in the shuffle" and was "eliminated" with one year's pay.

A year or two prior to service in Arizona there was an able and distinguished field officer of the regiment, whose confidence, however, in his ability to drill a battalion or regiment was only equaled by his liability to tactical mistakes. After congratulating himself, so the story goes, upon what he regarded as a fine drill, he persistently questioned, over the chess board, a discreet Lieutenant and expert driller: "Well, Mr. ——–, what do the *warriors* say of my drill?" The Lieutenant tried to politely evade answering, but the field officer was so insistent that

Digitized by Google

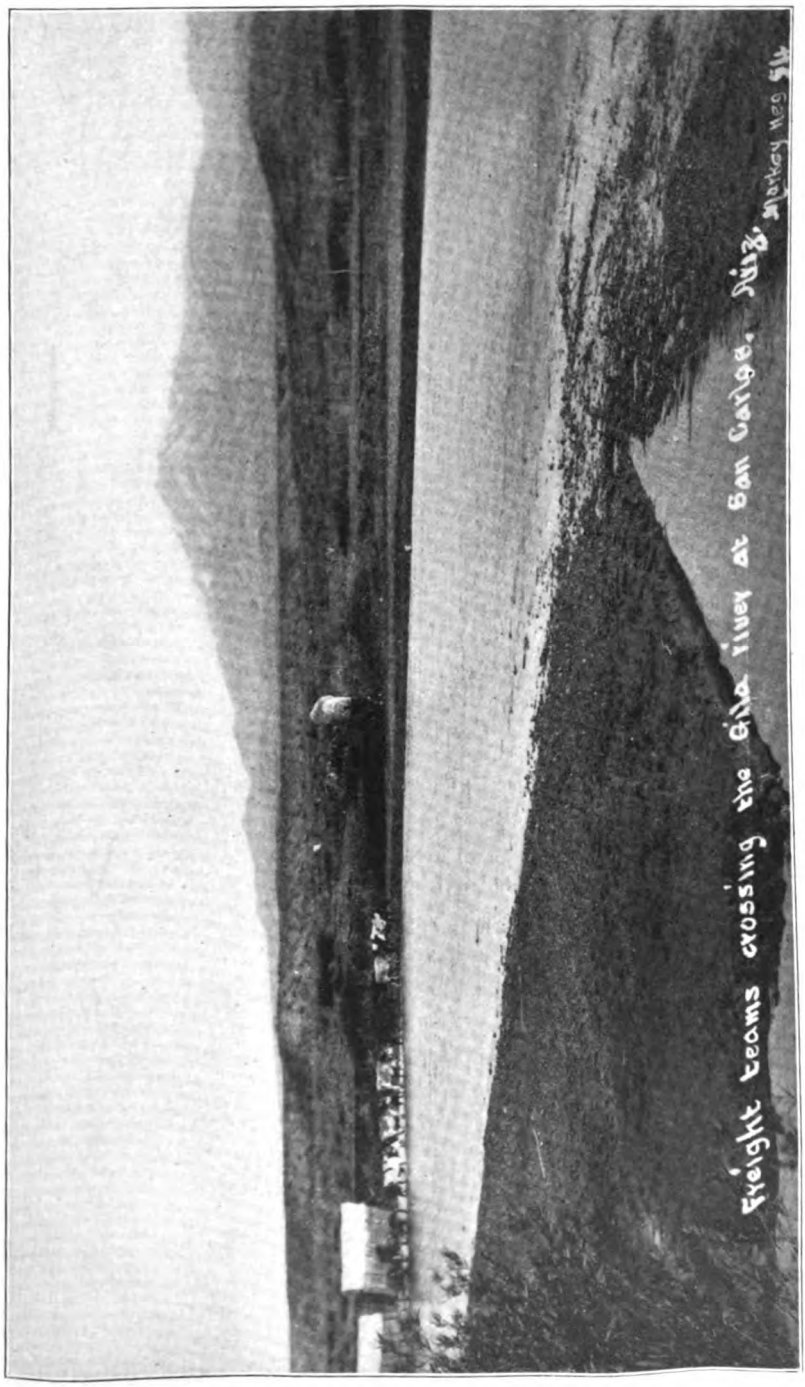
he finally said, "Well, ——— do you *want* me to tell you?" The response was, "Certainly! What *do* the fellows say of my drill?" "All right," replied the Lieutenant; "yesterday the officer of the day and the depot Quartermaster were watching your drill. The officer of the day offered to wager a bottle of wine that out of the first *ten* commands *five* would be tactically wrong. The Quartermaster said, 'If you will make it *six*, I'll go you!' The officer of the day agreed. They got the book, and *they say the officer of the day won and had two to spare.*" This ended the conversation and the game of chess proceeded to a finish. It is evident that even some good embryo Generals may at times fail as drill masters.

Without reflecting upon the old-time band of the regiment, when the chief musician had one or two sets of twins in his family, this field officer when en route to his new station, upon joining, stopped over at Regimental Headquarters. The courteous Adjutant gave him a serenade. Upon the conclusion of the playing the Adjutant asked the field officer, "Well, sir, what do you think of our band?" After a little hesitation the latter replied, "Oh, Mr. Adjutant, I have heard *worse*." This remark resulted in additional band-practice for a month or more.

In illustration of what a good soldier may attain, the following reminiscence may be of interest to aspiring young men in the regiment.

In 1879 the writer was Adjutant under that prince of Colonels, John H. King. Thomas M. Moody, a beardless boy of clear eye, splendid face and frank speech, applied for enlistment. The Adjutant discouraged him because of his youthful appearance. On his second application the Colonel saw him, and after questioning him in his kind fatherly way, directed that he be attached on probation and to see what soldiers had to do. In a few days he was enlisted and sent to Company D, at Fort McKinney, Wyoming, on the remote frontier. This young soldier cheerfully, intelligently and efficiently, took his full share of hard service, and in spare moments industriously improved his time by close study. He thus became self-educated in most English branches, and upon the expiration of his five years' enlistment he was one of the best Sergeants in the regiment. With a furlough of three months he decided to re-enlist, and upon the recommendation of his Captain and the then Adjutant, Lieutenant Robertson, he was appointed Sergeant-Major, an advancement almost beyond his modest ambition. He was encouraged by his old Captain to fit himself for a commission. He exclaimed that he had never thought of attaining that. In fact there seemed but little chance for him because he had no influence with "the powers that be" outside of the regiment. By assiduous application

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

and kind help of the Adjutant he had been less than two years in Arizona when he creditably passed the two required examinations and was commissioned Second Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, much to the delight of his old comrades in Company D — a fitting reward for high merit and strict devotion to duty. Since then his course has been onward and upward, filling most creditably many responsible positions requiring tact, energy and ability of the highest order. He is now finishing a detail of four years as Paymaster, and is regarded as one of the best in the corps.

One incident of the many illustrating his high character is well worth relating. Moody had become a Captain in the Sixteenth Infantry and during active times in the Philippines was stationed with his fine company of over a hundred men at Calumpit in Northern Luzon. The writer, who was temporarily on duty there forwarding supplies to General Lawton's Command, was invited by Captain Moody to a soldier's dinner of the simple and substantial ration, with tin plates, tin cups, and no extras as to crockery, etc. However, Captain Moody had gotten a piece of ice and two bottles of that beverage known as "Canteen beer," a delicacy which, under the conditions at Calumpit, would have been tempting to the most devout and rabid member of the W. C. T. U. The refreshing and foaming liquid was served in a quart tin cup. The writer said to Captain Moody, "Where is your cup of beer?" He replied, "Well, Major, you must excuse me. I am sorry to have you drink alone, but when you were Captain of my old company you wrote me a letter congratulating me upon my promotion to a Lieutenancy, and in that letter you advised me to beware of drink and gambling, to indulge in neither. Now, Major, I have acted on your advice, and so you will have to drink alone."

The writer greatly enjoyed the dinner *and the beer*, but he has never ceased to admire, beyond words, Captain Moody's constant adherence to his splendid resolution. He would have done so, however, independent of the writer's advice.

In 1894 the Ninth Infantry reported to General Miles from Madison Barracks to aid in suppressing the riots in Chicago during the great railroad strike, known as the Pullman strike. The appearance of the regiment, its splendid equipment, military bearing, discipline and superb demeanor of officers and men, attracted general attention and comment as a model military organization.

In concluding these lengthy reminiscences it may be remarked that the long service of the Ninth Infantry and other regiments in the West and Southwest, when Captains and Lieutenants were in command at

Digitized by Google

isolated stations, and on scouts and expeditions by detachment and company on the outposts of civilization developed such a high sense of responsibility, such marked self-reliance, and such ready initiative under sudden and trying conditions, that when the Spanish War of 1898 came on we had probably the finest little army of officers and men that ever marched and fought. This fact was fully attested in Cuba, where it is said the battles were mainly fought and won by the officers and men of regiments and companies who knew what to do *and did it* without waiting for the mapped-out plans and special directions of Generals. This is further attested by subsequent service in the Philippines.

These conditions have evolved our best officers for practical and successful field work in time of war, and will best safeguard this nation in any perils to come. * * *

JULY, 1886

The Ninth Infantry concentrated at Cheyenne Depot, Wyoming, July 20th, and left the following morning for the Department of Arizona. The regiment took station at the following places respectively:

	By Rail Miles	Distance Marched Miles
F. S. and Band, and Company F, to Whipple Barracks, Arizona.	1,038	60
Companies A and G to Fort Apache, Arizona	891	88
Companies B and D to Fort Thomas, Arizona	1,442	69
Companies C, E and I to Fort Wingate, New Mexico	787	5
Company H to camp at Clarendon, New Mexico	787	5
Company K to Fort Verde, Arizona	1,038	91

The F. S. and Band and Company F arrived at their station July 30th. Companies C, E and I arrived at their station, July 25th. Company K arrived at its station July 31st.

AUGUST, 1886

Company A left camp on North Fork, White River, August 1st, and marched three miles to Fort Apache, Arizona, and took station. On the 29th inst. it participated in disarming and subsequent confinement of the Chiricauhua Indians. Companies C and I left Fort Wingate, New Mexico, August 29th, arriving and going into camp at San Augustine Plains, New Mexico, August 31st; distance marched, 25 miles; distance traveled by rail, 253 miles. Company E left Fort Wingate, Mew Mexico, August 29th, and arrived at Silver City, New Mexico, August 30th. Distance marched, three miles; distance traveled by rail, 539 miles. Company H left Albuquerque, New Mexico, August 1st, and arrived at Separ, New

Digitized by Google

Mexico, August 2nd; it left Separ August 6th, and arrived at camp at Cloverdale, New Mexico August 10th. Distance marched, 74 miles; distance traveled by rail, 270 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties during the month.

September, 1886

Company C left camp on San Augustine Plains, New Mexico, September 1st, and on the 4th went into camp at Horse Springs, New Mexico, from which place they marched on the 18th to Datil Creek, New Mexico, arriving on the 19th, and leaving on the 26th for Fort Wingate, New Mexico, where they arrived September 28th. Distance marched, 121 miles; distance traveled by rail, 251 miles. Company D left Fort Thomas, Arizona, September 3rd, to guard well-known passes and to watch for hostile Indians. Returned to Fort Thomas September 24th. Distance traveled, 147 miles. Company E left Silver City, New Mexico, September 1st, arriving at Fort Wingate, September 27th. Distance marched, 34 miles; distance traveled by rail, 533 miles. Company H left Cloverdale, New Mexico, September 18th, arriving at Deming, New Mexico, September 30th. Distance marched, 216 miles; distance traveled by rail, 39 miles. Company I left camp at San Augustine Plains, New Mexico, September 1st, and arrived at Fort Wingate, New Mexico, September 28th. Distance marched, 125 miles; distance traveled by rail, 253 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

October, 1886

Company C left Fort Wingate, New Mexico, October 9th, and arrived at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, October 12th. Distance marched, 45 miles; distance traveled by rail, 312 miles. Company H left Deming, New Mexico, October 1st, and arrived at Fort Union, New Mexico, October 2nd. Distance traveled by rail, 406 miles; distance marched, 9 miles. Company I left Fort Wingate October 8th, and arrived at Fort Union, New Mexico, October 9th. Distance marched, 9 miles; distance traveled by rail, 301 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

November, 1886

Company C left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, November 15th, for Fort Mojave, Arizona, where they arrived November 18th. Distance marched, 30 miles; distance traveled by rail, 193 miles, and by boat, 27 miles.

Digitized by Google

JANUARY, 1887

Company E left Fort Wingate, New Mexico, January 7th, and arrived at San Diego Barracks, California, January 9th. Distance marched, 3 miles; distance traveled by rail, 953 miles. All other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

FEBRUARY, 1887

Companies H and I left Fort Union, New Mexico, February 5th, and arrived at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, February 7th. Distance marched, 9 miles; distance traveled by rail, 607 miles. Company K left Fort Verde, Arizona, February 7th, and arrived at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, February 9th. Distance marched, 41 miles.

MARCH, 1887

Company D left Fort Thomas, Arizona, March 19th, for Nogales, Arizona, arriving March 31st. Distance marched, 203 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

APRIL, 1887

Company A left Fort Apache, Arizona, April 6th, for temporary duty at San Carlos, Arizona, arriving April 11th. Distance marched, 79 miles; The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

JULY, 1887

Company A left San Carlos, Arizona, July 15th, arriving at Fort Mojave, July 30th. Distance marched, 175 miles, distance traveled by rail 322 miles and by steamboat 22 miles. Company B left Fort Thomas, Arizona, July 11th, and marched to Ash Creek, Arizona, arriving July 15th. Distance marched, 44 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

AUGUST, 1887

Company C left Fort Mojave July 31st, arriving at Fort Apache, Arizona, August 8th. Distance marched, 90 miles, distance traveled by steamboat, 22 miles, and by rail, 319 miles. Company F left Whipple Barracks August 4, arriving at San Carlos, Arizona, August 20th. Distance marched, 176 miles; distance traveled by rail, 258 miles. Company G left Fort Apache, Arizona, August 6th, and arrived at San Carlos, Arizona, August 10th. Distance marched, 75 miles.

Digitized by Google

SEPTEMBER, 1887

Company B left Ash Creek, Arizona, September 21st, and marched to Fort Thomas, Arizona, arriving September 23rd. Distance marched, 44 miles. The other organizations performed the usual garrison duties.

OCTOBER, 1887

Company D left Nogales, Arizona, October 20th, for Fort McDowell, Arizona, arriving October 22nd. Distance marched, 30 miles, distance traveled by rail, 258 miles. Company G left San Carlos, Arizona, October 22nd, for Fort Bowie, Arizona, arriving October 28th. Distance marched, 111 miles.

FEBRUARY, 1888

Company C left Fort Apache, Arizona, February 13th, arriving at Black River Crossing, Arizona, the 14th inst. Distance marched, 20 miles.

MARCH, 1888

Company C left Black River Crossing March 14th, arriving at Fort Apache the same day. Distance marched, 20 miles.

APRIL, 1888

Company K left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, April 4th, arriving at San Carlos, Arizona, April 19th. Distance marched, 240 miles.

MAY, 1888

Company F left San Carlos, Arizona, May 1st, arriving at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, May 14th. Distance marched, 244 miles.

JUNE, 1888

Company B left Fort Thomas June 15th, arriving at Whipple Barracks June 30th. Distance marched, 236 miles. Company C left Fort Apache, Arizona, June 19th, arriving at Whipple Barracks June 28th, 1888.

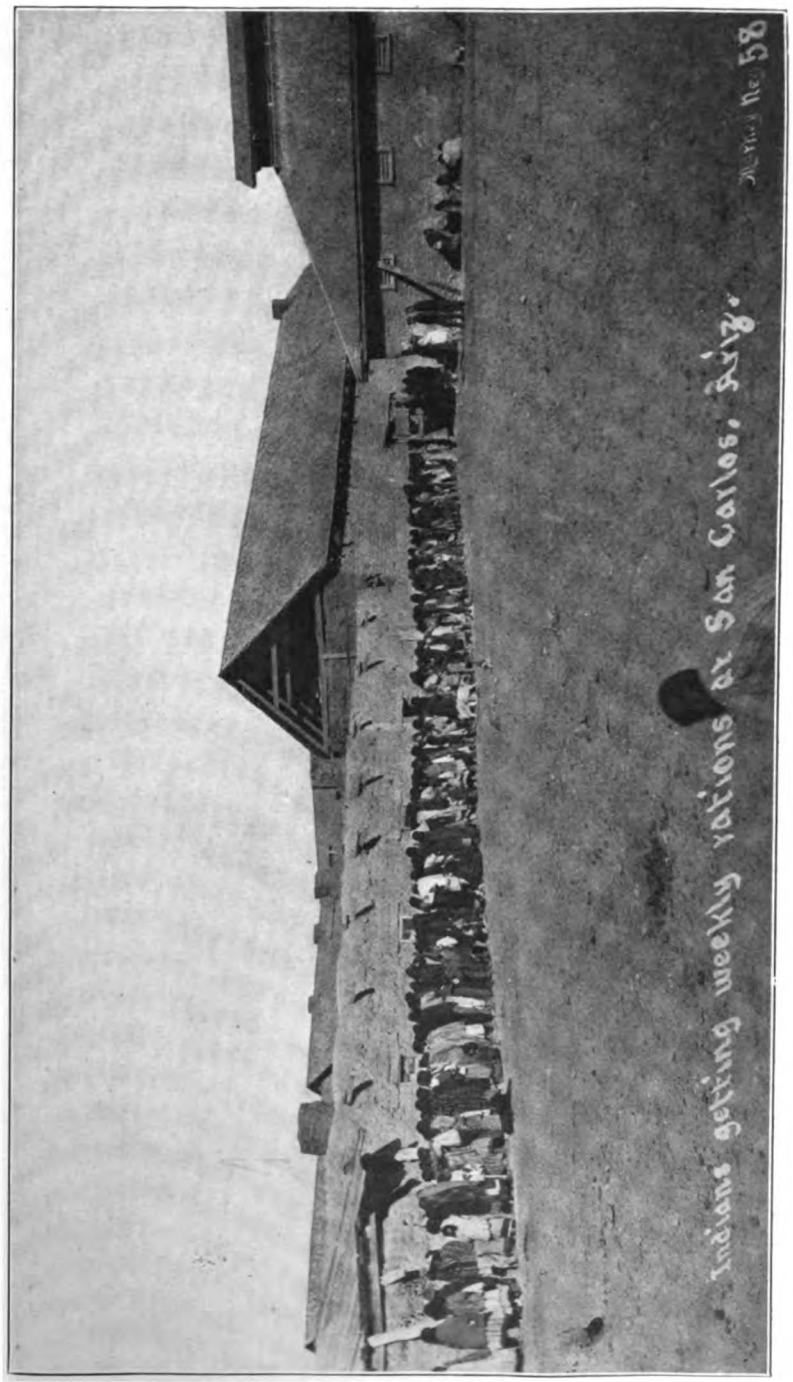
JULY, 1888

Company B left Fort Verde, Arizona, July 1st, from Whipple Barracks, arriving July 3rd. Distance marched, 47 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1888

Company K left San Carlos, Arizona, September 18th, en route to Fort Wingate, New Mexico., arriving at Fort Apache, Arizona, September 24th. Detached at Fort Apache, Arizona, on account of sickness

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

among enlisted men. Distance marched, 81 miles. Second Lieutenant E. Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, with 34 enlisted men of Company E, went into camp at Pacific Beach, San Diego, California, for purpose of instruction. Distance marched 11 miles. Companies B, C, F, G, H and I engaged in the usual drills and practice marches during the month.

October, 1888

Company K left Fort Apache, Arizona, for Fort Wingate, New Mexico. Distance marched, 167 miles. Companies B, C, F, H and I made practice marches aggregating 120 miles during the month, and drilled at digging trenches, pitching tents, etc., as a preparation for a 30 days' scout. Company E remained in camp at Pacific Beach, San Diego, California, under instruction. Practice marches aggregated 222 miles.

November, 1888

Company E left camp at Pacific Beach, California, and returned to San Diego Barracks, California, November, 30th. Distance marched, 11 miles.

December, 1888.

Company G left Fort Bowie, Arizona, December 7th, arriving at Fort Huachuca, Arizona, December 12th; distance marched, 85 miles. Company H left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, December 4th, arriving at Fort Verde, Arizona, December 5th. Distance marched, 47 miles.

January, 1889, to July, 1889

The different organizations of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

August, 1889

Company E went into camp at Pacific Beach, San Diego, California, under command of Second Lieutenant Edmund Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, from August 3rd, to August 13th, pursuant to instructions from Headquarters Department of Arizona, dated July 29, 1889. The other organizations of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

September, 1889

A detachment of eight men of Company A, under command of Second Lieutenant M. L. Hersey, Ninth Infantry, left Fort Mojave, Arizona, (mounted) on September 4th, and marched to Peach Springs, Arizona returning September 19th. Companies B, C, F and I were exercised

Digitized by Google

in marching in heavy marching order with advance and rear-guard formation, making and breaking camp, pitching tents, grand guard, outpost and picket duties; throwing up field works; and signalling with heliograph, flags and torches. A detachment of 10 men of Company E, under the command of Second Lieutenant Edmund Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, left San Diego Barracks, California, September 7th, for a practice march of 10 days duration. They returned September 16th, having marched a distance of 109 miles. Company G made daily practice marches in the vicinity of Huachuca, Arizona, from September 11th, to September 27th, commencing with 4 miles a day and gradually increasing the distance to 20 miles per day. The other companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

October, 1889

Companies B, C, F and I, in heavy marching order, were instructed in the advance and rear-guard formation, making and breaking camp, digging trenches and rifle-pits, grand guard, outpost and picket duties. 28 men of Company B, under the command of Captain Jesse M. Lee, Ninth Infantry, pursuant to Orders No. 103, Current Series, Fort McDowell, Arizona, left the post on October 7th for a 20 days' tour of instruction in field service, practice marches, military signalling, etc., marching to North Bridge, a distance of 82 miles. They returned October 26th, having marched a total distance of 164 miles. Company E, under the command of Second Lieutenant E. Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, pursuant to Orders 39, Current Series, San Diego Barracks, California. left post on the 1st of October for a practice march to Campo California. They returned October 8th, having marched a total distance of 113 miles. On October 14th a detachment of 11 men of Company F, under the command of Second Lieutenant Edmund Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, left post on a practice march in the direction of Julian, California, in pursuance to Orders 32, Current Series, San Diego Barracks, California. They returned October 22nd, having marched a total distance of 119 miles. A detachment of 15 men of Company H, commanded by Sergeant Perkins, Company H, Ninth Infantry, left post October 2nd for a 7 days' practice march to Oak Creek. They returned October 8th, having marched a total distance of 63 miles. A detachment of 28 men, under the command of First Lieutenant A. S. McNutt, Ninth Infantry, left post October 22nd, pursuant to Orders No. 107, Current Series, Fort Verde, Arizona, for instruction in field service. They returned October 28th, having marched a total distance of 47

Digitized by Google

miles. The other companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

November, 1889, to April, 1890

The different organizations of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

May, 1890

The different organizations of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations. From May 1st to 15th detachments from the companies stationed at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, participated in the General Department heliograph practice, pursuant to General Order 2, Current Series, Department of Arizona, as follows: Detachment of 8 enlisted men, under charge of First Lieutenant L. D. Tyson, Ninth Infantry, at post. Detachment of 5 enlisted men, under charge of Second Lieutenant G. B. Duncan, Ninth Infantry, at Baker's Butte, Arizona. Detachment of 6 enlisted men, under charge of Second Lieutenant C. W. Fenton, Ninth Infantry, at Bald Mountain, Arizona. A detachment of 3 enlisted men of Company F, and 4 enlisted men of Company D, under charge of Second Lieutenant E. Wittenmyer, Ninth Infantry, participated in the same practice at Mount Reno, Arizona. A detachment of 2 enlisted men of Company G, under the charge of Second Lieutenant F. H. Albright, Ninth Infantry, performed the same duty at Cochise Stronghold, Arizona. A detachment of 5 enlisted men, under charge of Sergeant A. J. Robinson, Company H, Ninth Infantry, participated in the practice at Squaw Peak, Arizona.

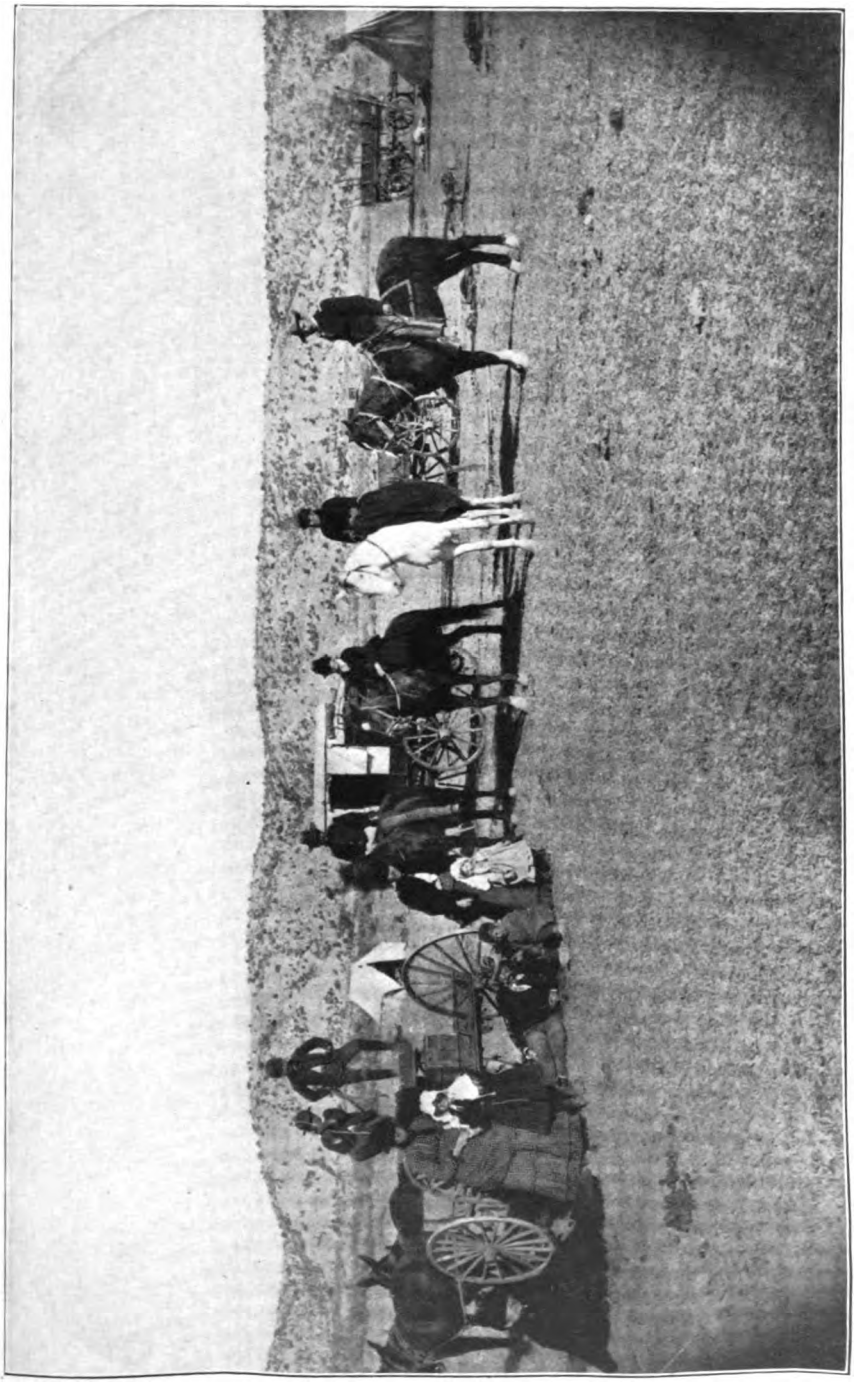
June, 1890

Pursuant to General Order 13, Headquarters Dept. of Arizona, dated June 17, 1890, Companies A and H en route to take station at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, and Company D assigned to Fort Huachuca, Arizona. The companies of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

July, 1890

Company A arrived and took station at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, on July 2nd, from detached service at Fort Mojave, Arizona. Company D on detached service at Fort McDowell, Arizona, since June 20th, having been assigned to station at Fort Huachuca, Arizona. Company H arrived and took station at Whipple Barracks, Arizona,

Digitized by Google



Camp at Peck's Lake near Fort Verde, 1887

Digitized by Google



Company E, Ninth Infantry, 1891. Captain Hay commanding.

Digitized by Google

July 17, from detached service at Fort Verde, Arizona. The companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

AUGUST, 1890

Company D arrived and took station at Fort Huachuca, Arizona, August 13th, 1890, from detached service at Fort McDowell, Arizona, in compliance with General Order 13, Current Series, Department Arizona. The companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

SEPTEMBER, 1890

On 19th inst. Companies A, B, C, F, H, and the Band, Ninth Infantry, made a practice march as a battalion, in light marching order, to Point of Rocks, pitching camp and returning to post same day. Total distance marched, 10½ miles. Company E participated in practice marches daily from September 22d to 26th, inclusive. Total distance marched, 45 miles. The station of Company K was changed from Fort Wingate, New Mexico, to Whipple Barracks, Arizona, in compliance with Special Order 74, Current Series, Headquarters Division of the Pacific. Companies D and G performed the usual garrison duties during the month at their respective stations.

OCTOBER, 1890

Companies A, B, C, F, H, and Band, Ninth Infantry, participated in practice marches in light marching order, and were drilled in advance and rear-guard formation, pitching camp, grand guard-mounting, and outpost duty on the following dates: October 15th, marched to Willow Creek. Total distance marched, 14 miles. October 30th marched to Government Springs. Total distance marched, 18 miles. thus aggregating 32 miles. Company E was practiced in marching with blanket bags and blankets rolled on the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 7th and 8th inst. Total distance marched, 63½ miles. Companies D and G performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

NOVEMBER, 1890

Companies A and F left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, and took station at Fort Wingate, New Mexico. The first named company left November 24th, and arrived November 26th, pursuant to telegraphic instructions from Headquarters Department, Arizona, dated November 24th. The latter named company left November 25th, and arrived November 26th, pursuant to Orders No. 201, Whipple Barracks, Arizona, dated November 24th. Pursuant to Orders No. 46, San Diego

Digitized by Google

Barracks, California, November 11th, a detachment of 13 enlisted men from Company E made a practice march in the direction of Julian, California. Detachment left post November 12th, and returned November 21st. Total distance marched, 110 miles. The other companies performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

December, 1890, to February, 1891

The various organizations of the regiment performed the usual garrison duties at their respective stations.

March, 1891

Companies A and F left Fort Wingate, New Mexico, March 10th, and took station at Whipple Barracks, Arizona, on March 11th, pursuant to Paragraph 3, Special Orders No. 19, Headquarters Department of Arizona, February 12th.

April, 1891

On the 16th of April, Companies A, B, C, F, and H were practiced in marching in heavy marching order, making and breaking camp and battalion maneuvers. Total distance marched, about 3½ miles.

May, 1891

Pursuant to instructions from Headquarters Department of Arizona, 55 enlisted men of Company I, Ninth Infantry (Indians), enlisted at San Carlos, Arizona; left that post for their station, Whipple Barracks, Arizona, under command of First Lieutenant A. L. McNutt, Ninth Infantry, May 1st, and marched to Coyote Holes, distance 13 miles; May 2nd, from Coyote Holes to Gerald's Ranch on Pinal Creek, distance 19 miles, May 3rd, from Gerald's Ranch to Robertson's Ranch on Salt River, crossing distance 25 miles; May 4th, from Robertson's Ranch to Tobe Klein's Ranch on Touto Creek, distance 18 miles; May 5th, from Klein's Ranch to Hardt's Ranch, distance 21 miles; May 6th, from Hardt's Ranch to Payson, distance 22 miles; May 7th, from Payson to Pine, distance 18 miles; May 8th, from Pine to Water Holes on Mogallon Mountains, distance 8 miles (broken wagon caused delay); May 9th, from Water Holes to Clear Creek, distance 26 miles; May 10th from Clear Creek to Fort Verde, distance 10 miles; May 11th, from Fort Verde to Ash Creek, distance 20 miles; May 12th, from Ash Creek to Whipple Barracks, distance 23 miles. Total distance marched, 223 miles.

Digitized by Google

OCTOBER, 1891

Pursuant to General Orders No. 77, Adjutant General's Office, and Special Orders No. 110, Current Series, Department of Arizona, Headquarters, Major Richard Comba, Band, Companies A and F, Ninth Infantry, left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, 8:30 P. M., October 2nd, for their new station, Madison Barracks, New York, Total distance traveled, 2,573 miles. Companies D and G left Fort Huachuca, Arizona, and marched 7 miles to Huachuca Siding, thence to Sackett's Harbor, New York, total by rail, 2,535 miles. Total distance traveled, 2,542 miles. These three companies joined Headquarters and companies from Whipple Barracks, at Albuquerque, from which point the command traveled together, arriving at Madison Barracks, on October 9th. Pursuant to Special Orders No. 112, Current Series, Headquarters Department of Arizona, Company E, Ninth Infantry, left San Diego Barracks, California, for Fort Wingate, New Mexico, October 5th, traveling by rail, and arrived at the latter station October 7th, distance traveled, 807 miles.

NOVEMBER, 1891

Pursuant to Special Orders No. 132, Current Series, Headquarters Department of Arizona, Company I (Indians), under command of Second Lieutenant William G. Elliot, Ninth Infantry, left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, November 23rd, and marched to Lunx Creek, distance 7 miles (broken wagon caused delay); 24th, marched to Bower's Ranch, distance 12 miles; 25th, marched to Antelope, distance 19 miles; 26th, marched to foot of Black Cañon, distance 18 miles; 27th, marched to Gibson's New River station, distance 28 miles; 28th, marched to Dry Camp, foot of mountain, Salt River Desert, distance 17 miles; 29th, marched to Phoenix, distance 18 miles; 30th, marched to Houston's, on Utale Ditch, distance 17 miles. Total distance marched, including November 30th, 125 miles. The march has so far been made without any serious hitches.

DECEMBER, 1891

Company I (Indians), Ninth Infantry, en route from Whipple Barracks to Fort Huachuca, Arizona, since November 23rd, 1891, pursuant to Special Orders, No. 132, Department of Arizona, period November 23 - 30, 1891, accounted for on Regimental Returns for month of November. December 1st, left Houston's, on Utale Ditch, and encamped Mexican Ranch, marched 18 miles; December 2nd, encamped Florence, marched 25 miles; December 3rd, encamped Little Cottonwood Ranch, marched 15 miles; December 4th, encamped Riverside, marched 15 miles; December 5th, encamped Dripping Sponges, marched 12 miles; December

Digitized by Google

6th, encamped summit of Pinal Mountains, marched 15 miles; December 7th, encamped Redlands, near Globe, marched 10 miles; December 8th, encamped Gibson's, marched 12 miles; December 9th, encamped San Carlos, Indian Agency, marched 20 miles; December 10 – 17th, the entire company was on a week's furlough, each man given 10 days' rations, and all arms and ammunition stored away; December 17th, all men present as ordered, at Retreat; December 17 – 20th, military camp established and the company drilled daily; also took part in dress parade — object lesson for the blanket Indians; December 20th, left camp at San Carlos and encamped head of Yuma Ditch, marched 10 miles; December 21st, encamped Fowler's Camp, marched 13 miles; December 22nd, encamped Fort Thomas, marched 12 miles; December 23rd, encamped Wham's Station, marched 18 miles; December 24th, encamped Shot Gun Smith's, marched 14 miles; December 25th, Fort Grant, marched 12 miles; December 25 – 30th, in camp at Fort Grant, Arizona. Total distance marched since December 1st, 221 miles, and since departure from Whipple Barracks, Arizona, November 23rd, 346 miles.

JANUARY, 1892

Pursuant to Special Orders, No. 132, Headquarters Department of Arizona, Series 1891, the enlisted men (Indians) of Company I, Ninth Infantry, were, January 19th, transferred to Company I, Eleventh Infantry. Station of Company I, Ninth Infantry, changed to Madison Barracks, New York.

In August, 1888, Colonel Mason was retired, and was succeeded by Colonel Alfred L. Hough, who retained command until April, 1890, when he was retired. He was succeeded by Colonel Charles G. Bartlett. In October, 1891, the Headquarters and Companies A, D, F and G were transferred to the Department of the East, Companies B, C, E and H following in May, 1892.

During the month the different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties.

MAY, 1892

During the month the different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties. Pursuant to Company A, Ninth Infantry, left post May 3rd, for their newstation, Fort Ontario, N. Y., traveling by rail, distance 72 miles. Companies B and C, Ninth Infantry, left Whipple Barracks, Arizona, May 11th for their new station, Madison Barracks, N. Y., total distance 2,637 miles, arriving at Madison Barracks, N. Y., March 17th. Company H, Ninth

Digitized by Google

Infantry, left Whipple Barracks, May 11th, for their new station, Plattsburgh Barracks, N. Y., total distance 2,870 miles, arriving at Plattsburgh Barracks, May 17th. Company E, Ninth Infantry, left Fort Wingate, May 11th, for their new station, Madison Barracks, marching to Wingate Station, New Mexico, distance three miles; by rail, 2,278 miles, arriving at Madison Barracks, May 17th. Companies F and G, Ninth Infantry, left post May 31st, for target practice at Fort Niagara, New York.

JUNE, 1892

During the month the different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties. Companies F and G, Ninth Infantry, having completed their target practice at Fort Niagara, New York, rejoined from that post June 24th.

JULY, 1892

During the month the different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties. Pursuant to Special Order No. 63, Current Series, Headquarters Department of the East, Companies D and E, Ninth Infantry, left Madison Barracks, New York, July 1st for target practice at Fort Niagara, New York. Pursuant to Order No. 66, Current Series, Fort Ontario, New York, Company E, Ninth Infantry, having completed its target practice, left Fort Niagara, New York, for its station, Madison Barracks, New York, arriving at the latter post July 9th. Distance traveled by rail, going and coming, 450 miles. Pursuant to Order No. 68, Fort Niagara, New York, Company D, Ninth Infantry, having completed its target practice, left Fort Niagara, New York, for its station at Madison Barracks, New York, arriving at the latter post July 16th. Distance traveled by rail, going and coming, 450 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1892

During the month the different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties. Company H, Ninth Infantry, at Plattsburgh Barracks, New York, had in addition to their regular duties, practice marches as follows: September 20th, 13 miles; September 27th, 12 miles; total distance marched, 25 miles.

OCTOBER, 1892

The different companies of the regiment performed during the month at their respective stations the usual garrison duties. Field, Staff, and

Digitized by Google

Band, except Regimental Quartermaster, who left in advance, October, 8th, in charge of public property, Companies B, C, D, E, F, G, Ninth Infantry, consisting of 13 officers and 265 enlisted men, left Madison Barracks, New York, October 10th for New York City, New York, to participate in the Columbus celebration, October 12th, arriving at Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 10th. Left Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 13th, rejoining at Madison Barracks, New York, same date. Total distance traveled by rail, going and returning, 682 miles. Company A, Ninth Infantry, consisting of 1 officer and 43 enlisted men, left Fort Ontario, New York, October 9th, for New York City, New York, to participate in the Columbus celebration, October 12th, arriving at Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 10th. Left Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 13, rejoining at Fort Ontario, New York, October 14th. Total distance traveled by rail, going and returning, 632 miles. Company H, Ninth Infantry, consisting of 2 officers and 39 enlisted men, left Plattsburgh Barracks, New York, October 9th for New York City, New York, to participate in the Columbus celebration October 12th, arriving at Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 10th. Left Governor's Island, New York Harbor, October 13th, rejoining at Plattsburgh Barracks, New York, October 14th. Total distance traveled by rail, going and returning, 628 miles. The company had practice marches as follows: October 25th, 4 miles; October 28th, 4 miles. Total distance marched, 8 miles. The regiment was in camp at Governor's Island, New York Harbor, from date of arrival, October 10th, until date of departure, October 13th, taking part on October 12th, in the Columbus celebration parade, New York City, New York, marching about 5 miles, leaving camp and returning to by boat.

STRENGTH

	Officers		Enlisted Men	
	Present	Absent	Present	Absent
December 31, 1886	18	17	439	21
December 31, 1887	20	15	394	16
December 31, 1888	20	15	377	14
December 31, 1889	23	10	401	14
December 31, 1890	19	14	347	52
December 31, 1891	14	21	435	27
December 31, 1892	14	21	409	36

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI

SHOVELING SNOW AND CUTTING ICE AT MADISON BARRACKS — SOCIAL AFFAIRS — POST LYCEUM — TARGET PRACTICE — PRACTICE MARCHES AND FIELD TRAINING — RIOT DUTY AT CHICAGO, ILL.— REMINISCENCES — "THE DAYS THAT ARE NOT BY ONE WHO WAS."

1892–1898

THE Ninth Infantry served in northern New York for the six years preceding the Spanish-American War, the Headquarters and most of the companies being at Madison Barracks. Company A (Bowman) was at Fort Ontario for a year and six months, and was succeeded there by Company G (Regan) for about a year, the latter returning to Madison Barracks when Fort Ontario was discontinued as a garrisoned post. Company H (Foote) served at Plattsburgh Barracks for two years, at the beginning of the period mentioned, and then joined at Madison Barracks. Companies I and K were not organized but existed as skeleton companies, so called. When Indians were included in the army, the regimental Indians constituted Company I, which had station at Fort Barrancas, Florida, Fort McPherson, Georgia, and elsewhere.

The garrison at Madison Barracks originally comprised Headquarters, the Band, and six companies, B, C, D, E, F and G, and later, when additional buildings were constructed, the entire regiment, as then organized. It was a period of enlargement of the post. The old post dated back to the first half of the nineteenth century, was compactly laid out, and substantially built of stone. There was a small grassy parade, with barracks and quarters on three sides, and a charming outlook northward across Black River Bay, and westward to the waters of the great lake Ontario. It was a situation where there were beautiful land and water views, and, in the long twilight of summer evenings changing colors in the western, and northwestern atmosphere along a distant, low, horizon. The summer months were cool and delightful, breezy by day when the waters of the bay danced and sparkled, and quiet at night. Occasionally the sound of the nine o'clock evening gun at Kingston, Canada, thirty miles away, was wafted across the waters to this American post. But the rigors of winter were severe and prolonged, with deep snow and zero temperature. The bay was frozen from December until April, and the thick ice provided a highway for teams and heavily-loaded sleds. An association of

Digitized by Google

horse owners in the county laid out a kite-shaped mile racing track on the ice when it was in its best condition each winter, by leveling the snow with road scrapers, and had trotting races for three days. In April the thick ice would become honey-combed by the increasing warmth of the sun, and under favorable conditions of quiet air for several days and then a strong wind, would break up and entirely disappear in a night under the action of the waves, causing the belief among some of the inhabitants that it became water-logged and sunk.

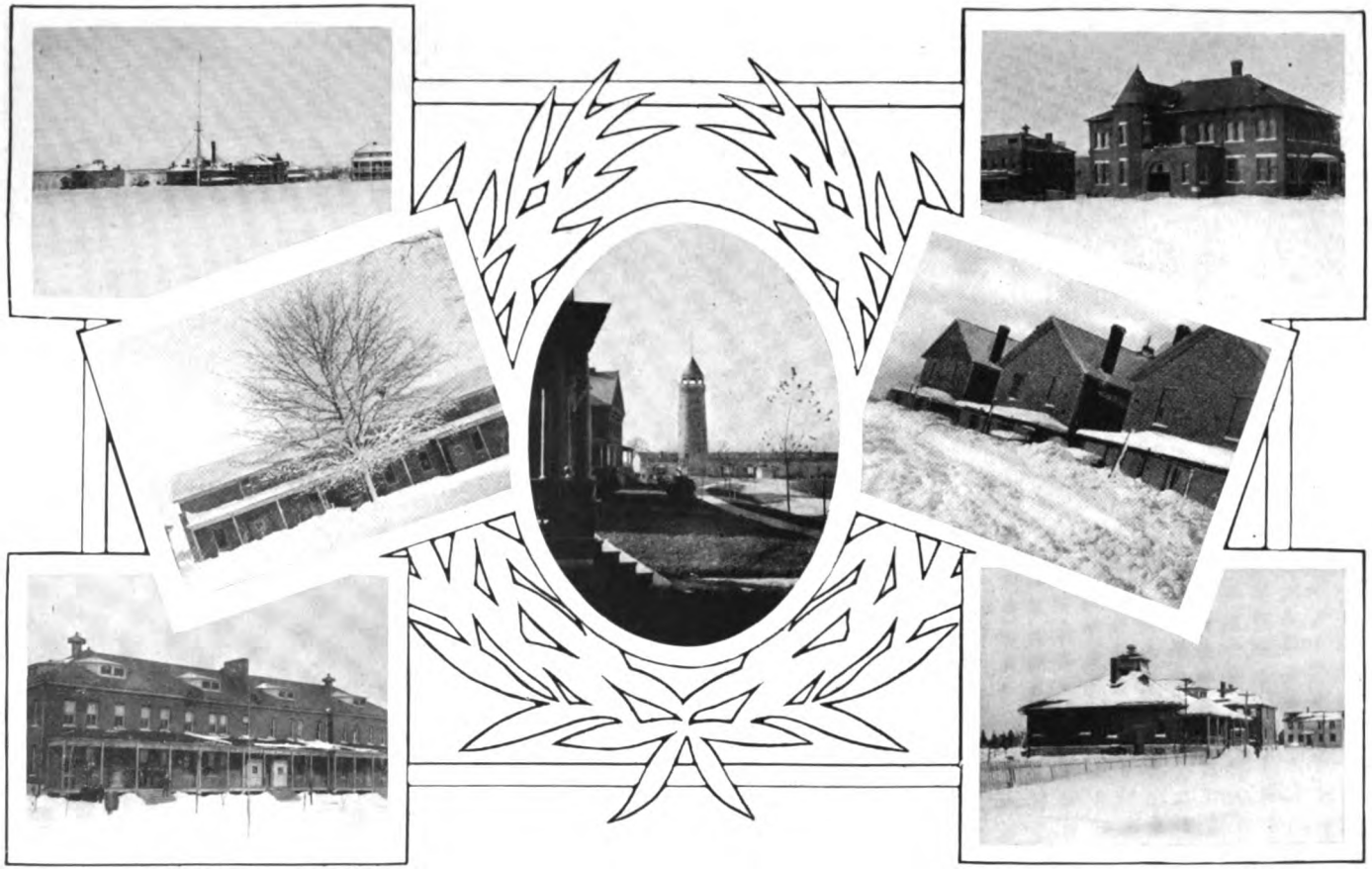
In summer the troops drilled and paraded, listened to evening band concerts, joined in summer games and enjoyed boating and fishing. In winter their instruction was confined to what could be given in barracks, and their guard-duty was often performed under severest conditions of storm and cold. Clearing the walks of heavy snow-drifts was an almost constant labor, and filling the ice-houses with a store for summer use, was a regular occupation for the month of February. Winter sports were enjoyed to the fullest by those who knew how to find pleasure in them.

Target practice received due attention every year, the range instruction being given on rented ground and at Fort Niagara in the earlier years, and later at Stony Point, sixteen miles from Madison Barracks, when the government purchased a suitable plot on bluffs overlooking the lake.

A large building was completed about 1893, in the new part of the post, for a general mess, and that system of messing the companies was then adopted. The post exchange store, and the canteen were in full operation and rendered considerable profits for the benefit of the mess. The canteen was usually a quiet and orderly club for the enlisted men, and, notwithstanding its beneficial influence, an occasional drunkard who had partaken too freely of Sackett Harbor's more firey beverages returned to barracks to disturb the peace of a quiet-loving garrison. Military life seemed to be attractive to men who had served once, and reenlistments were frequent. There were many "old soldiers" in the regiment. Once only was the regiment called out for active duty. That was a period of ten days in 1904, when rioting in Chicago demanded a display of military force. On two or three occasions the regiment was sent away to participate in parades; once in New York City, at the dedication of Grant's Tomb.

The social affairs of the officers and men were almost wholly confined to the garrison people. But in summer the officers entertained family guests, the delightful climate of that season and the beauty of the location attracting many visitors. On rare occasions the officers or men gave

Digitized by Google



View at Madison Barracks, New York, looking nearly north towards Black River.

Officers' quarters (old stone sets), Madison Barracks, New York.

Barracks at Madison Barracks, New York.

Summer at Madison Barracks, New York.

"Beautiful ice and snow" at Madison Barracks, New York.

Digitized by Google

a large reception or ball to which guests were invited from Watertown and other cities within reach, including military representatives from the Canadian forces at Kingston. The social interchanges with Watertown, eleven miles away, were cordial and enjoyable, but the means of travel were not such as to admit of close social relations. The isolation and long winters were conducive to small entertainments at home.

In those days the higher officers and veterans among the enlisted men had experiences to tell of frontier service and Indian fighting, and among the officers, many of the grade of Captain, and all higher grade, dated back to the Civil War. Systematic instruction in the operations of war was in its infancy. Occasional short-practice marches were about all of a practical nature that were undertaken.

The "Post Lyceum" was in vogue for winter, and every officer was required to select a topic and write an essay, all officers being assembled to listen to reading on appointed dates. Once the Colonel propounded questions relative to historical military events, chiefly operations in the Civil War, and assigned officers to discuss the affirmative and negative views in each case.

At long intervals some international question assumed sufficient importance to call forth large headlines in the newspapers, causing for a brief period excitement, and hope of war among the younger men.

In general it may be said the Ninth Infantry, in common with other regiments at their respective posts in the United States, was preparing itself by the daily round of its garrison duties, by its careful attention to target-firing, and by its ever strengthening and perfecting discipline, for the part it was to take in the campaign of Santiago de Cuba, a dependable unit in the little army sent to face Spain's array. Luzon, — Samar were unknown names; the Philippines and Tientsin were as remote in thought as they were geographically.

January, to May, 1893

Headquarters, staff and band, and Companies B, C, D, E, F, G, I and K were stationed at Madison Barracks, New York; Company A, at Fort Ontario, New York, and Company H, at Plattsburgh Barracks, New York.

The different companies of the regiment performed at their respective stations the usual garrison duties.

June, 1893

Pursuant to Special Order 104, Current Series, Department of the East, Companies C, G, and E, Ninth Infantry, left Madison Barracks,

Digitized by Google

June 9th, for target practice at Fort Niagara, New York, arriving there the same day.

Pursuant to Special Order 41, Current Series, Fort Niagara, New York, Companies C, E, and G, Ninth Infantry, having completed their target practice, left Fort Niagara, New York, arriving Madison Barracks, New York, June 30th. Total distance traveled by rail, 450 miles

JULY, 1893

Pursuant to Special Order 111, Current Series, Department of the East, Company F, Ninth Infantry, left Madison Barracks, New York, July 9th, for target practice at Fort Niagara, New York, arriving there the same day.

Pursuant to Special Order 104, Current Series, Department of the East, Companies B and D, Ninth Infantry, left post at 5:30 A. M., July 6th, for target practice, Fort Niagara, New York, and having completed their practice returned to their proper station, Madison Barracks, New York arriving at 7 P. M. July 7th, having traveled a total distance by rail of 450 miles.

Company I, Ninth Infantry, took station at Fort Barrancas, Florida.

AUGUST, 1893

Company F completed their annual target practice at Fort Niagara, and, in compliance with Special Order 170, Department of the East, remained at Fort Niagara until completion of the Department Rifle Competition.

Company I left Fort Barrancas, Florida, about 3:45 P. M., August 12th (on account of proximity of yellow fever), per Post Order 106, Fort Barrancas, Florida, August 11th, arriving at Fort McPherson, Georgia, at about 12:00 M., 13th inst., since which time it has been encamped on the reservation. Distance traveled, about 340 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1893

Company F, on detached service at Fort Niagara, New York, in connection with the Department Rifle Competition, in compliance with special Order 170, Department of the East, and having completed said duty left for its proper station, Madison Barracks, New York, on the 5th inst., arriving the same date. Total distance traveled, 218 miles by rail and 7 by water.

OCTOBER, 1893

During the month the different companies performed at their stations the usual garrison duties.

Digitized by Google

Company A, in compliance with Special Order 211, Current Series, Department of the East, changed station with Company G, October 3, 1893, arriving at Madison Barracks, New York, same date. Distance traveled by rail, 72 miles.

Company G, in compliance with Paragraph 5, Current Series, Department of the East, changed station with Company A October 3, 1893, arriving at Fort Ontario, New York, same date. Distance traveled by rail, 72 miles.

DECEMBER, 1893

No change.

The following named officers served with the regiment during the year:

Colonel Charles G. Bartlett
Lieutenant Colonel Jacob Kline
Major Richard Comba

Captains

Alpheus H. Bowman	Charles M. Rockefeller
W. L. Carpenter	John A. Baldwin
Edgar B. Robertson	Thomas S. McCaleb
James Regan	Morris C. Foote
Alfred Morton	Jesse M. Lee

First Lieutenants

Charles R. Noyes	Frank L. Dodds
John P. Finley	Andre W. Brewster
George Palmer	Wendell L. Simpson
Carl Reichmann	John Baxter, Jr.
Robert H. Anderson	Albert S. McNutt
Lawrence D. Tyson	Frank D. Ramsey

Second Lieutenants

Ambrose I. Moriarity	George B. Duncan
William G. Elliot	Charles C. Clark
Edmund Wittenmyer	Arthur W. Yates
Frank H. Albright	Francis H. Schoeffel
Mark L. Hersey	William A. Campbell

APRIL, 1894

That portion of the regiment comprising the garrison at Madison Barracks, New York (field and staff, N. C. S. and band, and Companies A, B, C, D, E and F), made a practice march to Brownsville, New York, and return April 26th. Distance marched, 16 miles.

Digitized by Google

MAY, 1894

The same organizations made practice march to Glen Park, New York, and return. Distance 23 miles; and a practice march to Belleville, New York, distance marched 25 miles.

JUNE, 1894

Pursuant to Special Order 105, Current Series, Headquarters Department of the East, Company H left Plattsburgh Barracks, New York, at 5:15 A. M., June 7th, and proceeded by rail to Madison Barracks, New York, where it arrived and took station at 6:30 P. M., same date. Distance traveled, 204 miles.

JULY, 1894

Pursuant to Special Order 144, Current Series, Department of the East, seven companies of this regiment, mustering 21 officers and 313 enlisted men, left post, July 18th, to take station at Fort Sheridan, Illinois. The regiment was augmented by Company G, 2 officers and 53 enlisted men at Syracuse, New York. Total strength, 23 officers and 366 enlisted men. Upon reaching Toledo, Ohio, the commanding officer, Colonel Charles G. Bartlett, Ninth Infantry, telegraphed to the Commanding-General, Department of the Missouri, and received instructions at Elkhart, Indiana, to repair to the Lake Front Park, Chicago, Illinois, and report to Colonel R. E. A. Crofton, Fifteenth Infantry, commanding United States forces. Arrived at the camp July 9th; remained in camp until the 19th, when in compliance with Special Order No. 73, Headquarters Department of Missouri, July 18th, returned with seven companies of the regiment to their post, arriving July 21st. Company G left the command at Oswego, New York, July 20th, to return to its proper station, Fort Ontario, New York.

The command while in Chicago was employed in making arrests and guarding property. The behavior of the men during the whole trip deserves special commendation.

AUGUST, 1894

The usual garrison duties were performed during the month of August. Companies A, E and B were engaged in target practice from August 13th to 31st.

SEPTEMBER, 1894

The usual garrison duties were performed during the month of September.

Companies C, D, F and H were engaged in their annual target practice, commencing September 11th.

Digitized by Google

OCTOBER, 1894

The usual garrison duties were performed during the month of October. Companies C, D, F and H completed their annual target practice October 18th.

NOVEMBER, 1894

The usual garrison duties were performed during the month of November. Company G left Fort Ontario, New York, November 20th, and joined this station the same date.

List of officers who served with the regiment for the year 1894:

Colonel Charles G. Bartlett
Lieutenant-Colonel Jacob Kline
Major Ezra P. Ewers

Captains

A. H. Bowman
Alfred Morton
Edgar B. Robertson
James Regan
William L. Carpenter
Charles M. Rockefeller
John A. Baldwin
Thomas S. McCaleb
Morris C. Foote
Jesse M. Lee

First Lieutenants

Charles R. Noyes
John P. Finley
George Palmer
Carl Reichmann
Robert H. Anderson
Lawrence D. Tyson
Frank L. Dodds.
Andre W. Brewster
Wendell L. Simpson
John Baxter, Jr.
Albert S. McNutt.
Frank De W. Ramsey

Second Lieutenants

William A. Campbell
Thomas W. Connell
Hugh D. Wise
Frank H. Albright
Louis B. Lawton
Charles C. Clark
Arthur W. Yates
Francis H. Schoeffel
Mark L. Hersey

TRANSFERRED

First Lieutenant Edmund Wittenmyer.

From Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, promoted and assigned to the Fifteenth Infantry, to date from November 27, 1894.

Digitized by Google

1895

The usual garrison duties were performed during the year 1895.

The following changes in the commissioned personnel were effected in 1895:

Gain

First Lieutenant B. P. Schenck
Second Lieutenant Thomas W. Darrah
Second Lieutenant T. F. Dwyer
Second Lieutenant L. H. Lewis

Loss

Second Lieutenant Frank H. Albright
Second Lieutenant Mark L. Hersey

JULY, 1896

The usual garrison duties were performed during the month, and, in addition, the regiment, in compliance with General Order No. 24, Current Series, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, and Special Order No. 142, Current Series. Headquarters Department of the East, left Madison Barracks, New York, at 7:00 A. M., July 14th, en route for Oswego, New York, arriving there (Fort Ontario, New York), at 11:15 same day, and pitched camp. Took part in the Centennial celebration, July 15th.

Broke camp at 1:30 P. M., July 17th, and returned to proper station, reaching there 5:00 P. M., same date.

Total distance traveled by rail, 150 miles. Companies C, E, F and G in camp at target practice at Stony Point, New York.

Left post in light marching order at 8:00 A. M., July 17th; reached destination at 3:15 P. M. same date. Total distance marched, 16 miles.

AUGUST, 1896

During the month the troops have, in addition to the regular garrison duties, been engaged as follows: Companies C, E, F and G returned to post from target range, August 13th, having completed their annual target practice. Companies A, B, D and H left post for their annual target practice August 4th, per Special Order No. 120, Current Series, post. The location of the target range is 16 miles west of the post and is reached in one day's march.

SEPTEMBER, 1896

Companies A, B, D and H rejoined post from target range September 7th. Companies C, E, F, and G, commanded by Captain Morton, left post for target range September 1st, for purpose of instruction in bat-

Digitized by Google

talion extended order drill and outpost drill, returning to post September 13th.

The following changes occurred in the commissioned personnel of the regiment for 1896.

Gain

Colonel William J. Lyster
First Lieutenant John M. Sigworth
First Lieutenant Edwin V. Bookmiller
Second Lieutenant Benjamin F. Hartshorne
Second Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers

Loss

First Lieutenant Albert S. McNutt
First Lieutenant Lawrence D. Tyson

April, 1897

Pursuant to Special Order No. 46, Madison Barracks 'New York, April 1897, in compliance with Special Order No 89, Department of the East, Current Series, Major E. P. Ewers and battalion consisting of the band, and Companies A, C, F and G, Ninth Infantry, left Madison Barracks, New York, at 6:15 P. M., arriving April 15th, and proceeded by rail to Governors Island, New York, arriving at 8:50 A. M., April 25th. Distance traveled, 344 miles. The battalion participated in the parade incident to the dedication of the Grant Monument, April 27th. Distance marched, 7 miles. The battalion left Governors Island, New York Harbor, at 4:00 P. M., and arrived at Madison Barracks at 6:15 A. M., April 30th. Distance traveled by rail, 344 miles.

July, 1897

Pursuant to Special Order, No. 85, post, July 6th, the First battalion, consisting of Companies A, B, D and H, Ninth Infantry, under command of Captain Alfred Morton, Ninth Infantry, left post at 8:00 A. M., July 7th, and marched to the rifle range, Stony Point, New York, arriving at 5:00 P. M. same date. The command went into camp for target practice. Total distance marched, 16 miles.

August, 1897

Pursuant to telegraphic instructions from Headquarters, Department of the East, August 16th, and Special Order No. 109, post, August 21st, the Band, Ninth Infantry, under command of First Lieutenant Wendell L. Simpson, Adjutant Ninth Infantry, left post at 7:45 A. M., August 23rd, and proceeded by rail to Fort Porter, New York, to attend

Digitized by Google

encampment of the G. A. R., arriving at 6:00 P. M. same date. Left Fort Porter 9:00 A. M., August 27th, and returned to Madison Barracks, New York, arriving at 7:30 P. M. same date. Total distance traveled, 470 miles.

Pursuant to Special Order No. 102, post, August 6th, a battalion of the Ninth Infantry, consisting of companies C, E, F, and G, Ninth Infantry, under command of Captain Jesse M. Lee, Ninth Infantry, left post August 17th, and marched to the rifle range, Stony Point, New York, arriving at 3:30 P. M. same date. The command went into camp for annual target practice. Total distance marched, 16 miles.

SEPTEMBER, 1897

Companies C, E, F, and G, Ninth Infantry, under command of Captain Jesse M. Lee, Ninth Infantry, returned from annual target practice at Stony Point, New York, at 1:15 P. M., July 7th. Total distance marched, 16 miles.

September 29th, the regiment participated in night operations on an extended scale, including advance and rear guard formation, and outpost duty in time of war. Left post at 6:20 P. M. in light marching order, returning at 12:15 A. M., September 15th. Distance marched, 14 miles.

The following changes occurred in the personnel of the regiment for 1897:

Gain

Colonel W. H. Powell
Lieutenant-Colonel E. P. Ewers
Major George W. Davis
First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel
Second Lieutenant Warren S. Barlow
Second Lieutenant Fred L. Munson
Second Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler

The following from a former officer of the regiment, now living on the retired list, is given as a relief from the dry statistics chronicling the work of the regiment:

"Thinking that perhaps the book might want a touch of humor, I inclose a reminiscence or two concerning my two first Captains, wonderful men both, — Rockefeller and Carpenter.

"Up to a few years ago the rank of Captain was an exalted office almost beyond human attainment. If a Lieutenant became a Captain before the age of forty-five, it was a matter of grave concern whether

Digitized by Google

he had had sufficient experience to assume the responsibility of signing a morning report correctly; and the older Captains were of the fixed belief that if such a breach of precedent occurred more than once in a generation the service 'would go to the devil.'

"My Captains were both older than my father, and I had for them that respect due their rank, years, attainments and ability. Captain Rockefeller was a widely read man, a keen reasoner, and a shrewd antagonist either in fun or earnest. Captain Carpenter was a student as well as soldier, a man of national reputation as an entomologist and ornithologist; both were martinets as far as their Second Lieutenant was concerned, which is one reason why I revere their memory.

"Captain Carpenter had a son, a mischievous elf, Marsh, who thought to perplex his father by submitting for identification a rare egg of about the size and color of a robin's egg but curiously splotched with brown spots — applied by Master Marsh with both a paint brush and malice aforethought. Now the Captain knew eggs and he knew Marsh; therefore he first 'licked' Marsh, and then made Marsh lick the egg and replace it in the nest. This anecdote is retold to illustrate the erudition, the insight, the kindness of heart of that grand gentleman.

"Captain Rockefeller's prismatic genius permitted him to bend his energies to the acquirement of many accomplishments both useful and pleasurable. Among the latter was an almost infinite knowledge of the game of draughts or checkers, and thereby arose the only opportunity that I ever had to score on the Captain. He would beat me outrageously, and then allow me an occasional game so that he might encourage me to accept another beating — which, of course, I did.

"One day, after an exceptionally severe gruelling, I, in my admiration of his prowess, asked him why he did not sometime tackle the automatic checker-player in the Eden Musee, to which he replied, 'Mr. Man, I have beaten that thing to a standstill.' I said nothing, I couldn't; he was my Captain; but I thought what I dared not say, for I had played the automaton repeatedly and had found it a bit tougher than the Captain — if possible, for it had apparently no heart, whereas the Captain would occasionally feel sorry for me — as indicated above.

"I went to town and bribed the local champion to come to my quarters on a certain evening when I knew the Captain would drop in. The Captain beat him seven straight!

"The next winter, being in New York, I again tackled the automaton with the usual result. At our next sitting I casually mentioned to Captain Rockefeller that I had played the automaton. 'So? How did you come out?' 'Well, Captain, we played seven games of which two

Digitized by Google

were draws, and he won two.' Now I knew that the captain knew I was lying, and I also knew that he could not afford to cast the first stone; it would weaken his position. So I followed up with 'You know that thing answers questions by means of a numbered dial and a reference book.' 'Yes, I know, what of it?' 'O, nothing much, only I asked if it was ever beaten before.' 'What was the answer?' 'Well, Captain, the answer was, "no."' 'So?' 'Yes, Captain, and I said that I knew a man who claims to have beaten it repeatedly, and, much to my surprise, it made answer.' 'What was it?' '"Tell him he is a d— liar!"' Well, the good old Captain laughed and let me beat him a bit more often, and occasionally dropped the 'Mister,' but never when on duty until after I had received my baptism of fire."

THE DAYS THAT ARE NOT BY ONE WHO WAS

Noyes is at his desk figuring how to put every Second Lieutenant on duty as recorder of two boards at once; Dodds bobs in and out with his cheerful "howdy," to everybody, his stogy burning, and a request for another "board," — always a burning question for Second Lieutenants; while, ranged about the room sit Morton, Lee, Bowman, Foote, Regan, Carpenter, Rockefeller, Baldwin, Robertson, and McCaleb. A dozen or more Lieutenants are visible but not audible. There are no chairs for them except that Palmer and Baxter are temporarily resting on the edges of two seats, which are promptly vacated as Major Ewers beams into the room as advance guard to Colonel Kline, following with his little pipe and big pouch.

When seats are resumed the conversation again becomes general, — on the part of those who have since become Generals, the Lieutenants being a clever lot of listeners, an exception developing later, but only temporarily.

Stories are told of the old times, that is, of days prior to everything that a Second Lieutenant knows anything about except by hearsay. The Rosebud Campaign is the most recent of permissible reminiscences.

To these accounts the subalterns give anxious and careful ear, for they constitute the traditions of the old Ninth Infantry, traditions that here now inspire many a young man to give his life, if need be, and opportunity come, that these traditions live unsullied. Prodigious feats are mentioned casually, and never by the performer. Carpenter asks Foote how it felt to go without food that time he dug his way out of Libby and footed it two hundred miles to Old Glory, — and food. Foote laughingly replies that he wanted *for* food, he did not *want* food because he could not wait to take on weight nor could he afford to burden him-

Digitized by Google

self. Regan says to Carpenter, "Bill, do you remember that grizzly that got a piece of you out in Nevada in '68?" Carpenter replies, "It seems to me that I did have some such experience, but, Regan, you are wrong about the date, for it must have been in '66 because I remember wishing, when I was frozen in the Rosebud Expedition, that I had died ten years before, and that was in '76, for your Jamie was born that year, also a few others. Baldwin enlivens the occasion by turning on Rockefeller with, "Say, you promised to tell me concerning that reconnaissance you made at Fort Blakely, down there in Alabama, that time you had that close shave, you know, when you were shot in the head." Says Rockefeller, "Baldwin, that was no close shave, that was a hair-cut, and I beat the barber." Thus is dismissed, as trivial, an act in which information was obtained that led to the capture of Fort Blakely, and for which then Lieutenant Rockefeller was presented with what corresponds to the Victoria Cross — The Medal of Honor. Morton asks Lee — Morton knows all about it, but wants us to hear it — to tell about those crooked contractors who tried to gouge Uncle Sam in that bacon deal up on the Missouri River (Lee happens to be the man who *secured convictions in scores* of cases of gigantic fraud). "Well, I don't exactly recall, but I am reminded about that queer occurrence with a nest of Indian agents in the territory" — but that particular story must go over, for Simpson rushes in wanting to know if that mess council is ready to convene; — exeunt two Captains and one Second Lieutenant, whereupon Palmer and Baxter take seats.

After an interval of silence Major Ewers leaves to look at a new horse, while Colonel Kline and Major Morton adjourn to the club to settle a little difference of opinion as to who won that last rubber of cribbage yesterday. Therefore Anderson, Brewster and Ramsey, who has just come in to distribute canteen and club bills, and who is as welcome as that circumstance could permit, take seats; Sigworth, Bookmiller, Schoeffel, Tommy, Hugh Wise, Lewis, Hartshorne, and the rest of us are promoted to a perch on the old desk or on the window-sill.

The story-telling is about to begin, Lee in the chair. Everybody being properly adjusted, Lee *our* Lee, since, our General, looks over his glasses with that benign expression, looks out the window for needless inspiration, and sees Sergeant Brather instructing a squad of prisoners in the art of weeding onions. At this moment in comes Sergeant White, a witness before the Summary Court in the case of the United States versus Private Kelly. The Summary Court, as aforesaid, having before convening adjourned to the club. The Adjutant despatches Hoyle, that same Hoyle who was nearly despatched in China with Liscum,

Digitized by Google

to the club where Hoyle's illustrious namesake is being invoked to settle a point of some importance; the Sergeant meanwhile pacing the hall with patience and determination. Before the story gets a chance muttered imprecations are heard outside, and there goes Sergeant Casey commanding an escort of honor for a pay-day remnant, which remnant he turns over, "by order of the company Commander," to the paternal care of Sergeant Winter, who puts it in cold storage.

By this time Lee has had inspiration for forty-seven stories; and, after getting the proper clutch on his cane, he begins on the original; but a knock at the door reveals Corporal McInerny with a clothing schedule in hand, which means that Hugh will never hear this story, for Lee never repeats and poor Hugh must go to see that good old Sergeant Kidd gets a number-three blouse. But there is here a diversion, for Hugh tries to prevail upon Tommy to accompany him, explaining that he wants Tommy's help in about five minutes on those kites which he hopes to fly this morning — going up himself on the string as a visual proof that there will be absolutely no danger — but Tommy is firm; he oves Hugh, but he purposes to hear this yarn — little does Tommy dream of honest old Bumpus and the last test. Pending Hugh's plea McInerny waits impassively, giving little indication that he is the man who is to bring about the surrender of Santiago by Toral. You see, it is this way: McInerny is among the first at the top of the hill, he and Edgar Koehler on his horse; in the distance is descried a fleeing horseman; it is Linares. McInerny gets him on the second shot, eight hundred yards, the command thereby devolving upon Toral.

Lee smiles quizzically, we smile anticipatively, and he prefaces his remarks by saying that when he looked out the window half an hour ago he saw old Brather in the onion-patch,— which "reminds me —," and he is off on a riotous description of a political "spread" that he attended out in Indiana when Scott was defeated in '52. We see the rustic table. We smell the viands temptingly arrayed by Lee's magic. We are fellow-guests (as is also the Commanding Officer, who knows what is on, and, like the picture he is, frames himself in the doorway, motioning us to keep our seats); we bow our heads while Lee impersonates — while Lee *is* the old pioneer politician saying grace. He blesses the occasion, he joins with Providence and the assembled company in admiration of the hostess who is seen directing a bevy of beautiful assistants, to each of whom due praise is rendered; he implores divine guidance for the use to which we shall put the strength derived from this food, whereupon we grow ravenous; he extols each "separate component," dwelling at length upon the perfection of each until he arrives

Digitized by Google

at his deadly enemy, the onions, which he also "blesses"—, but we collapse, though not with hunger, for the point of his wit promotes pandemonium, and hilarity routs restraint.

While convalescence is setting in Lee hurries off to non-commissioned-officers' school, and a Second Lieutenant presumes to occupy the coveted chair, though he rattles around perceptibly and appears to have something on his mind. In fact, while on his last trick of guard duty he composed a "new one," all his own, and now, noting that the "K. O." has retreated, and that the room is half depleted of Captains, he determines to spring it "pro bono publico."

He brings to bear all his fund of mimicry; florid rhetoric rolls from him; he holds his point well poised for the thrust; interest focuses upon him, and at last he hurls his shaft. One of the remaining Captains looks out the window and remarks something about a frost, another sleeps peacefully in his chair, and Anderson corrects the Army Register to date.

Hark! We hear Kimball, or is it Moriarity blowing drill-call? As we prepare to leave, the youngest Captain present, Baldwin, Robertson, or McCaleb, addresses the Second Lieutenant, who thought to tell a story, as follows: "Mr. Young, speaking for my seniors here present, and for myself, we wish to thank you for that venerable alleged story, now defunct, you have just told; for, not having heard it in twenty years, you have refreshed us and reminded us of our long-past green and verdant youth." The Lieutenant sees no necessity of the redundancy "verdant," but shows awakening consciousness by saying nothing. In the hallway his tormentor becomes his mentor, and proceeds to tell, sympathetically, that things really happened to a youngster when he joined along back in the early '70's; but that it looks now as if there were a tendency toward too much encouragement of familiarity.

On the way to the barracks, the Lieutenants being alone, Palmer and Brewster bring history down to somewhere near date by spinning a few about New Mexico and Arizona prior to Geronimo's activity — nothing having transpired since his captivity.

Such are the old days; such is the old system of inculcating proper respect for rank; such is Lee, the inimitable; great to us then, and great to the country and to us since; and such is the Ninth,— the old Ninth, — *our* Ninth.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

CAMPAIGN IN CUBA — BATTLESHIP "MAINE" LOST — ORDERED TO TAMPA, FLORIDA — DUTIES AT TAMPA — OFFICERS WITH REGIMENT — ON BOARD TRANSPORTS BOUND FOR CUBA — LANDING AT SIBONEY — ADVANCE ON SANTIAGO — UNDER FIRE — THE SEVENTY-FIRST NEW YORK VOLUNTEERS — ASSAULT ON SAN JUAN HILL — DUTY IN THE TRENCHES — LOSSES — THE SURRENDER — OCCUPATION OF SANTIAGO — SICKNESS — HOMEWARD BOUND — MONTAUK POINT — RETURN TO MADISON BARRACKS.

I. CAMPAIGN IN CUBA

Events in the forepart of 1898 moved steadily on to a declaration of war with Spain. They aroused the deepest interest in the minds of all persons in the military service, and the thoughts of each turned upon that view of the impending conflict, which, from his own standpoint, presented itself. Field officers of the army, and many of the captains were of long service, and had participated in the campaigns of the Civil War, 35 years before. Their minds were filled with a sense of the labor, the strain and the responsibilities of war, having full knowledge of these elements from their experience, and realizing that they must necessarily shoulder them with advancement to larger commands. The younger Captains and the senior Lieutenants had for a number of years been students of war, had revolved in their minds the theory, and were eager to try in practice what was set forth with so much precision in the books. They were ambitious to excel and looked forward to achieving distinction and advancement by the worth of their deeds. The enthusiasm and excitement of the youngest members of the regimental groups gave the crowning touch to the spirit of expectation which pervaded all military garrisons. It bade fair to carry many of the young men on to brilliant exploits. This enthusiasm also prevailed among the enlisted men. The older soldiers realized the thoroughness of their training; they possessed a confidence in themselves and their weapons, which many seasons of target practice, and the experience of camp life and marches in the western territories had given them. They were trained in obedience to their officers, and were eager to follow them wherever they led; and the American spirit of individual confidence and initiative was latent in them to carry them on to victory when their officers fell.

The Ninth Infantry shared these characteristics in common with the army at large, and believed it was quite as ready as any regiment

Digitized by Google

for the outcome of the events which were viewed and discussed with so much interest. Its early history entitled it to first consideration. It had seen no active service in the Civil War, but remained on the Pacific Coast throughout that struggle. The heading "Ninth Infantry" is the only one that does not appear on the tablet bearing the names of the dead heroes of the regular army, which encircles the Battle Monument at West Point. It was therefore "first for service." Its location at an eastern station, Madison Barracks, New York, also gave every expectation of its being among the first to be ordered on field duty. These considerations added to the zest of the discussions which the successive events called for. The news of the disaster to the battleship Maine, in the harbor of Havana, caused a profound sensation combined with sadness. The news was first received by telephone from a friend in the nearby city of Watertown, New York, was confirmed by the newspaper accounts later in the day, and received official recognition by a telegraphic message from the Adjutant-General, Department of the East, dated February 17, 1898, conveying instructions from the War Department to display the flag at half-mast until further orders, as a mark of respect to the dead.[1] The flag was restored to the head of the mast on the 20th.[2] This mute appeal to the sympathies of the garrison called forth a letter from the enlisted men requesting that the officer in charge of the Post Exchange be authorized to receive contributions for the erection of a monument to the memory of the unfortunates, and instructions were given in accordance with this request.[3]

The records of the regiment prior to the orders and telegrams for the movement to Tampa, Florida, and the records of the post of Madison Barracks, of corresponding date, give little hint of preparation for war. The files of official correspondence and orders are surprisingly free of papers relating to the subject.

An inquiry as to the number and kind of pack-saddles on hand at the post,[4] a letter of instructions directing especial care of batteries, magazines, and ammunition;[5] correspondence concerning the transfer of a few men to one of the newly organized artillery regiments; the receipt of a map of Cuba,[6] one or two telegrams respecting travel rations, and instructions from the Quartermaster-General in regard to expendi-

[1] Madison Barracks, N. Y. L. R. No. 254, February 18, 1898.
[2] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 259, February 20, 1898.
[3] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 274, February 23, 1898.
[4] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 27, January 6, 1898.
[5] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 261, February 21, 1898.
[6] Regimental L. R. No. 46, March 11, 1898.

Digitized by Google

tures from the appropriation for the national defense,[7] comprise all the matter of record bearing on probable war. On the other hand, many routine subjects took their place in the usual course as though no break in the customary garrison life was anticipated. The Adjutant-General requested a list of officers suitable for detail at institutions of learning,[8] the usual papers relative to contracts for post supplies were transmitted, and the post commander conforming to the requirements of an order from Headquarters Department of the East,[9] prepared a thorough course of instruction in out-of-door exercises covering the whole period of the year suitable for such.[10] This meagreness of correspondence and orders with post and regimental commanders was an indication of the state of thorough preparedness in which a regiment of regulars was constantly found. Little was done because there was little to do.

The stations of the Ninth Infantry, for six years prior to the declaration of war, were in New York State, and April 1st, 1898, found the entire regiment garrisoning Madison Barracks on the shore of the Black River Bay, close by the village of Sackett's Harbor, New York, a charming location, from which Lake Ontario is in full view toward the west. A spur of the Rome, Watertown and Ogdensburg R. R. connects the village with the main line at Watertown, New York, and from that city the railroad routes lead to the New York Central R. R. at Syracuse, and Utica, and to the railroad lines northward. The movement of the regiment from this station by rail had already been necessary on several occasions during its sojourn there. Both the railroad company and the regiment were capable of making arrangements quickly for a sudden move. Finally on Sunday, April 16th, about retreat, the order to proceed to Tampa, Florida, to form a part of the large force of regulars concentrating at that place, was received by telegraph, and last steps of preparation were taken at once. The telegraphic order read as follows:[11]

Official Telegram.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST,
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW YORK CITY,
April 16, 1898.

Commanding Officer, Madison Barracks,
Sackett's Harbor, N. Y.:

Under instructions from the Secretary of War and the Major-General commanding the army, the Headquarters, band and companies of the

[7] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 513, April 8, 1898.
[8] Regimental, L. R. No. 34, February 26, 1898.
[9] G. O. No. 5, H. Q. D. E., March 17, 1898.
[10] G. O. No. 14, Madison Barracks, March 31, 1898.
[11] Madison Barracks, L. R. No. 559, April 16, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Ninth Infantry at Madison Barracks, are relieved from duty at that post and will proceed on Tuesday the 19th inst. to Tampa, Florida, for duty at that place. All transportation will accompany the troops. One officer, and from each company two men, will be left in charge of the post. The necessities of transportation at post will be provided by hired transportation through the Quartermaster's Department. A medical officer and hospital corps men will be designated from these Headquarters to accompany the command. The troops will carry thirty days' field rations and will take along the necessary camp and field equipage, tentage and field allowance of camp and garrison equipment, and also all available ammunition. All soldiers in confinement under sentences of general and summary courts martial will be released and restored to duty. The Quartermaster's Department will furnish the necessary transportation under the directions of the Chief Quartermaster of the department. Acknowledge receipt and report action.



Lieutenant-Colonel E. P. Ewers, Ninth Infantry, Madison Barracks, 1898. (Now Brigadier-General.)

By command of MAJOR-GENERAL MERRITT;
M. BARBER, Assistant Adjutant-General.

An order was issued by the Post Commander the same day to carry into effect the instructions contained in this telegram.[12]

From the regimental returns,[13] and post morning reports,[14] the roster of the officers of the regiment, and the strength of the companies is found to have been, at the date of the movement, as follows:

Colonel William H. Powell, commanding regiment and post of Madison Barracks.

[12] G. O. No. 16, Madison Barracks, N. Y., April 16, 1898.
[13] Regimental Returns, March, 1898, and April, 1898.
[14] Consolidated Morning Reports Madison Barracks, N. Y. April, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Colonel Ezra P. Ewers, with regiment.

Major William H. Boyle, with regiment.

Captain Jesse M. Lee, commanding Company C.

Captain Alpheus H. Bowman, commanding Company A.

Captain Morris C. Foote, commanding Company H.

Captain James Regan, commanding Company G.

Captain William L. Carpenter (Company I), sick in quarters, and unable to accompany regiment.[15]

Captain Charles M. Rockefeller (Company B), on detached service at Dennison University, Granville, Ohio.

Captain John A. Baldwin (Company K), on detached service with the National Guard of Arizona at Phoenix, Arizona.

Captain Edgar B. Robertson, commanding Company E.

Captain Thomas S. McCaleb, commanding Company F.

Captain George Palmer, commanding Company D.

First Lieutenant Frank L. Dodds (Company I), on detached service, Acting Judge Advocate Department of the Gulf.

First Lieutenant Charles R. Noyes (Company C), on detached service at Iowa Wesleyan University, Mount Pleasant, Iowa.

First Lieutenant Robert H. Anderson, with Company H.

First Lieutenant Wendell L. Simpson, Regimental Adjutant, with regiment.

First Lieutenant John P. Finley, Regimental Quartermaster, Post Quartermaster, and ordered to remain at post upon departure of regiment.

First Lieutenant Carl Reichmann (Company F), on detached service, Adjutant-General's Office, Washington, D. C.

First Lieutenant Andre W. Brewster, commanding Company B.

First Lieutenant Frank De W. Ramsey (Company K), attached to, and on duty with Company C.

First Lieutenant John M. Sigworth, with Company A.

First Lieutenant Edwin V. Bookmiller, with Company G.

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel, with Company E.

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier (Company D), on detached service at Wentworth Military Academy, Lexington, Missouri.

Second Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates (Company D), on sick leave.

Second Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, with Company B.

Second Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell, with Company C.

Second Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise, with Company E, and Signal Officer.

[15] Madison Barracks L. R. No. 567 (from Surgeon), April 17, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Second Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler (Company K), Acting Regimental Quartermaster.

Second Lieutenant Thomas W. Darrah (Company A), on detached service at Infantry and Cavalry School, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

Second Lieutenant Thomas F. Dwyer (Company F), on detached service at Infantry and Cavalry School, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

Second Lieutenant Louis H. Lewis, with Company G.

Second Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers, with Company H.

Second Lieutenant Fred L. Munson (Company I), attached to, and on duty with Company D.

Attached: Second Lieutenant Warren S. Barlow, Fifteenth Infantry (additional Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, to April 15, 1898), attached to, and on duty with Company F.

ENLISTED STRENGTH

	Present	Absent	Total
N. C. Staff and Band	26	0	26
Company A	55	3	58
Company B	56	2	58
Company C	58	1	59
Company D	55	2	57
Company E	55	2	57
Company F	56	1	57
Company G	54	2	56
Company H	59	2	61
Total	474	15	489

Companies I and K not organized.

Authorized strength of 8 organized companies including the band, each 64, total 512

Authorized strength of N. C. staff and N. C. officers 5

Authorized strength of regiment[16] 517

Number of recruits required 28

Major Henry S. Kilbourne, Surgeon U. S. A., who was on duty at Madison Barracks, was ordered to accompany the command, taking hospital corps men and a complete equipment of supplies. One surgeon (Captain Clarke) and a sufficient number of hospital corps men were left at the post, the sick in hospital, and two men of each company, as guard for public property, also remained. The actual strength of the command marching out on April 19th was 26 officers, 457 enlisted men[17] including the surgeon, 4 hospital corps men, and Lieutenant Barlow, Fifteenth Infantry, attached.

[16] Regimental, L. R. No. 66, April 7, 1898, A. G. O., April 4, 1898.

[17] L. S. No. 41 (telegram to A. G.), April 19, 1898.

Digitized by Google

The command was provided with one day's cooked rations, 3 days' travel rations, and 30 days' field rations in bulk, and the necessary tentage and camp utensils; it took all ammunition then at the post, also all transportation (wagons and mules), and a gatling gun with its ammunition. The mounted officers' horses were also shipped. The uniform of the command was the usual blue uniform with campaign hats and leggings; equipment, heavy marching order, knapsacks packed with shelter tent half, overcoat, dark blue flannel shirt, blanket, suit of underclothes, pair of shoes, pair of stockings, towel, brush and comb, and soap. In addition the companies carried extra clothing boxes, each man having in them a blouse, pair of trousers, forage cap, suit of underclothes, and two pairs of stockings.[18] This additional clothing was for storage at a sub-depot to be immediately available upon the close of a campaign.

Reveille of the 19th of April ushered in a memorable day, a day of going forth to war. The preparations of the two preceding days had progressed so smoothly that very little remained to do beyond saying fond farewells, and forming up to march away. The regiment was organized as two battalions, Lieutenant-Colonel Ewers commanding the first, Major Boyle the second. Colonel Powell commanded the regiment. As it marched forth the men presented a fine appearance; they were rugged and strong, well disciplined and well equipped. It would have been hard to believe that the ranks would show great gaps from disease, as well as bullets, in a few months of absence.



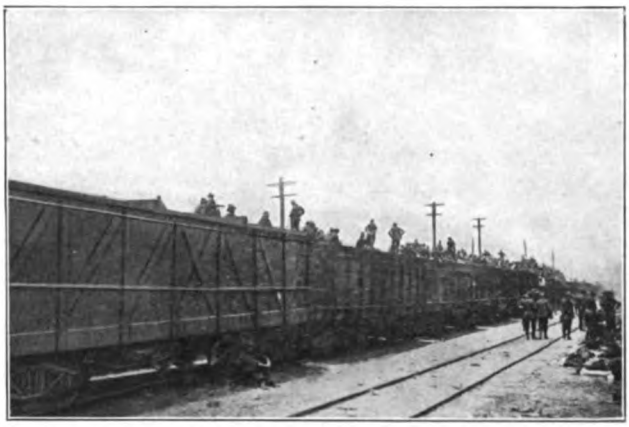
Camp of Ninth Infantry, Tampa, Florida, May, 1898.

The village people assembled at the railroad station to cheer and bid godspeed. The train was ready and embarkation occupied but a few minutes. Then, at 11:30 A. M., the start was made, the

[18] L. S. No. 49, April 24, 1898. (Report to A. A. A. G., First Provisional Brigade.)

Digitized by Google

locomotives tugging at the heavy train as it ascended the slight grade and rounded the curve through the cut to the open country just beyond. The weather was cold at Sackett's Harbor. The ice, which forms two feet thick in winter, had disappeared from the bay a few days before; a severe snow-storm overtook the travelers before they had progressed many miles on their journey. But twenty-four hours later at Philadelphia the warmth of April days in that latitude asserted itself, and finally, in the far south, journeying was uncomfortable from the heat. The route was via the Rome, Watertown and Ogdensburg R. R. to Utica, the West Shore R. R. to Jersey City, the Pennsylvania R. R. to Washington, which place was reached the afternoon of April 20, thence via Savannah to Tampa.



Troops arriving at Port Tampa, June 7, 1898.

The regiment was the first to pass over this route and great enthusiasm was manifested at all the cities and towns through which they passed. The air "Dixie," by the band, called forth hearty responses in all southern towns, and cheers for the blue-coated soldiers were unstinted. The news of the declaration of war with Spain reached the regiment while en route, and all of the command were impressed with its significance, realizing that the concentration at Tampa meant more than a mere maneuver for practice or political effect. The regiment arrived at its destination April 22nd, disembarked at once, marched about 2 miles and went into camp in a pine grove at Tampa Heights. Two other regiments had arrived in advance of it and were already settled in camp. The Ninth Infantry was at once incorporated in the First Provisional Brigade,[19] which was commanded at that date by Colonel Melville A. Cochran, Sixth Infantry.

On April 23, 1898, the day following the arrival of the Ninth Infantry at Tampa, General Orders No. 25, Headquarters of the army, constituting the infantry troops at Tampa, an Independent Division

[19] L. R. No. 76, April 23, 1898.

Digitized by Google

was issued from the Adjutant-General's office, at Washington. The regiment then, for a while, formed a part of the First Provisional Brigade, Second Independent Division, Colonel Cochran, and later Colonel Alfred T. Smith, commanding the Brigade, and Brigadier-General James F. Wade, commanding the Division.[20] A few days later the President directed the organization of seven Army Corps,[21] and on May 16th Major General William R. Shafter was assigned to the command of the Fifth Army Corps at Tampa, Florida.[22] From about May 3rd to May 27th, the Ninth Infantry was in the Second Brigade of the Independent Infantry Division, but after the organization of the corps it was incorporated in the Third Brigade of the First Division, being united with the Thirteenth and Twenty-fourth Regiments. The command of the brigade fell to Colonel Alfred T. Smith, Thirteenth Infantry, who, however, retained the command a few days only. The commander of the division was Brigadier-General Jacob F. Kent.



Battle exercises at Tampa.

While serving under General Wade's command drills were at first conducted daily under instructions previously issued by the Brigade Commander, First Provisional Brigade.[23] They were instituted not only for instruction but to inure the men to marching and exerting themselves in a tropical climate. The work was, however, rather severe for troops coming from the rigorous climate of the northern states, and unprovided as yet with clothing suited to the tropics.

The Division Commander, desiring to preserve the exceptionally good health of the command, addressed the Brigade Commander, requesting that the military training of his command be arranged with a

[20] G. O. No. 5, Headquarters U. S. Troops, Tampa, Florida, April 30, 1898.
[21] G. O. No. 36, A. G. O., May 7, 1898.
[22] G. O. No. 46, A. G. O., May 16, 1898.
[23] G. O. No. 3, First Provisional Brigade, April 25, 1898.

Digitized by Google

view to the climatic conditions, and advised that fatigues, drills and all duties requiring excessive physical exertion should be reduced to the minimum compatible with efficiency, and that if practice marches were deemed expedient the men should not be required to carry packs of any kind. Recruits were to be sufficiently instructed to bring them rapidly to a state of efficiency, but without too much exposure.[24]



Colonel W. H. Powell, Ninth Infantry.

The whole question of recruits was, however, a subject of much concern to regimental commanders. The act of Congress, approved April 26, 1898, for the better organization of the line of the army authorized the President, in his discretion, upon declaration of war, to increase the enlisted strength of each company of infantry to 106 men and to establish a third battalion for each regiment by manning the skeleton companies I and K, and organizing two additional companies, L and M. Companies I and K had been skeletonized to such a degree that they were practically non-existent. The officers were assigned, but there were no enlisted men, and no records were kept except as appeared in monthly regimental returns. Even the books and forms for records and reports were not at hand.[25]

The problem presenting itself to the Regimental Commander, upon receipt of orders from the War Department, which were issued immediately after the approval of the act,[26] was to enlist, clothe, equip and train 42 men for each of the eight organized companies of his regiment and 106 men for each of the four unorganized companies — a total of 860. It appeared a great undertaking to be accomplished on the verge of an active campaign, and misgivings were felt as to the consequences if the regiment were to enter on the campaign before the men were brought

[24] Letter from Headquarters U. S. forces, Tampa, May 18, 1898.
[25] L. S. No. 66, May 4, 1898.
[26] G. O. No. 27, A. G. O., April 27, 1898.

Digitized by Google

well under discipline, and trained in the use of their arms. Colonel Powell entered on the undertaking with his customary energy. Absent officers, whose duties were such as to give them some opportunity for the work, were appointed special regimental recruiting officers, under proper authority;[27] an application was made, without result, however, to send two other officers on recruiting duty;[28] provision was made for the increase of the organized companies,[29] for officering,[30] and instituting the records[31] of the new companies, and for sheltering and drilling the recruits upon their arrival at camp.[32] A few recruits were received from Captain Finley who enlisted them at Madison Barracks, New York. These were assigned to organized companies where they were equipped and trained. But before the undertaking had progressed far, it assumed a much better phase, as far as the efficiency of the regiment was concerned, under telegraphic instructions from the Adjutant-General's office of May 12th,[33] directing that recruits for infantry regiments be sent to Fort McPherson, Georgia, and that an officer and two men from each regiment be sent there to receive and equip them. Orders were issued accordingly,[34] and the very vexatious subject was removed from the immediate attention of regimental commanders, and others, whose energies were being directed to preparations for active field service.



Transports at Port Tampa, May 14, 1898.

[27] O. No. 11, May 5, 1898. L. S. No. 69, May 6, 1898. L. S. No. 70, May 10, 1898. L. S. No. 76, May 20, 1898.

[28] L. S. No. 90, May 30, 1898.

[29] Circular No. 3, May 5, 1898.

[30] Order No. 14, May 7, 1898.

[31] L. S. No. 66, May 4, 1898.

[32] Order No. 21, May 15, 1898. Order No. 29, May 25, 1898.

[33] L. R. No. 154, May 13, 1898.

[34] Order No. 23, May 16, 1898.

Digitized by Google

During the latter part of May there was general expectation in camp that the Fifth Army Corps would be launched on an expedition against the Spanish forces in Cuba within a very short time. A large number of steamships had been assembled at Port Tampa and fitted out as transports; fourteen days' field rations had been issued in bulk to the companies, and recruits had, as far as practicable, been equipped. Very few recruits had arrived in camp for the Ninth Infantry. All of them were assigned to the organized companies and were completely equipped from surplus stores at hand. None were sent back to Fort McPherson. On June 1st the order to be in readiness to go aboard the transports was received from Corps Headquarters. It prescribed 500 rounds of ammunition per man; ten days' travel rations in addition to the 14 days' field rations on hand; minimum allowance of baggage; 60 days' field rations for the entire command, to be provided by the Chief Commissary; all recruits and extra baggage to be left in camp, an officer of each regiment in charge.[35] The last requirement was modified as to the Ninth Infantry at least; the officer and recruits were taken, one reliable man of each company, and one experienced non-commissioned officer were left.



Packing wagons to move. Tampa, Florida.

However, the order to move was not immediately forthcoming, and in the interim Colonel Powell issued a memorandum respecting equipment, in which he prescribed that the blanket roll be worn, and packed knapsacks be carried on wagons; mosquito-bars were to be baled and carried with the company baggage. The blanket roll was to consist of one blanket, one poncho, shelter pole and pins rolled in a shelter tent and encased in a pair of brown canvas fatigue trousers.[36] The last novel feature was adopted to cover the glistening white shelter

[35] Memorandum of orders Fifth Corps, June 1, 1898.

[36] Memorandum June 3, 1898.

Digitized by Google

tent, which would betray a marching column to the enemy at a long distance. It was a practical remedy of value, but added a pound or two to the weight, which, even as it was, proved to be too much for tropical service.

June 5th the order for embarkation of the troops was issued from Corps Headquarters, organizations to proceed to Port Tampa, 13 miles away, by train, and go aboard the ships in the following order: Light Artillery Battalion, Second Division Fifth Corps, Third, Second and First Brigades in succession, First Division, First, Second, and Third Brigades, Cavalry Division, Provisional Division.[37] Under this order the Ninth Infantry in the Third Brigade, First Division, was to be among the last to go, so on June 6th there was nothing for the regiment to do except to get the horses of the field and staff officers on board. On that day the regiment was deprived of its Colonel, he being assigned to the command of the brigade.[38] Certain changes were made necessary in the regiment to rearrange command of battalions and to replace the Adjutant and Acting Quartermaster who were taken by Colonel Powell for his brigade staff.



Ninth Infantry at Tampa drawing thirty days' rations, pursuant to orders to move.

A number of officers had either joined or been ordered way during the weeks of camp life at Tampa, and the roster of the regiment at date of going aboard the transport, which remained practically the same until the entry into Santiago, five weeks later, was as follows:

Colonel Powell, detached, commanding Third Brigade to June 11th; then detached and ordered to report before an army retiring board at Tampa.[39]

[37] Memorandum of orders, Fifth Corps, June 5, 1898.
[38] L. R. No. 235, June 6, 1898.
[39] Par. 4, S. O. No. 133, A. G. O., June 7, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Colonel Ewers, commanding regiment, (commanding Third Brigade July 1st to 10th).

Major Boyle, commanding First Battalion (commanding regiment July 1st to 10th).

Captain Lee, detached; ordered to report to the Commanding General U. S. A. at Washington, per telegraphic instructions.[40]



Captain J. M. Lee, Ninth Infantry, at Tampa, Florida, 1898.



Captains Regan and Robertson, Ninth Infantry, 1898.

Captain Bowman, commanding Second Battalion.

Captain Foote, commanding Company H. (commanding First Battalion July 1st to 10th).

Captain Regan, commanding Company G.

Captain Robertson, commanding Company E.

Captain McCaleb, commanding Company F.

Captain Palmer, detached, receiving and equipping recruits at Fort McPherson, Georgia.[41]

Lieutenant Noyes, joined from detached service May 29th, commanding Company C.[42]

[40] Order No. 21, May 14, 1898.

[41] Par. 1, Order No. 23, May 16, 1898.

[42] Par. 29, S. O. No. 118, A. G. O., May 20, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Anderson, commanding Company A to June 24th, then absent, sick.

Lieutenant Simpson, detached, Acting Assistant Adjutant-General, Third Brigade.

Lieutenant Brewster, commanding Company B.

Lieutenant Ramsey, detached, Acting Chief Commissary April 27th,[43] and, later, Assistant to Chief Commissary of expedition.

Lieutenant Sigworth, commanding Company D.

Lieutenant Bookmiller, Acting Regimental Adjutant.

Lieutenant Schoeffel, with Company E to June 24th, commanding Company A after that date.

Lieutenant Lawton, Acting Regimental Quartermaster.

Lieutenant Connell, with Company C.

Lieutenant Wise, with Company E, and signal officer.

Lieutenant Koehler, detached, Quartermaster Third Brigade.

Lieutenant Darrah, joined from detached service April 25th, with Company A.[44]

Lieutenant Dwyer, joined from detached service April 24th, with Company F.

Lieutenant Lewis, with Company G, and Acting Engineer Officer.[45]

Lieutenant Rethers, with Company H (commanding company July 1st, to 10th).

Lieutenant Munson, detached, commanding guard, Headquarters First Division.[46]

Second Lieutenant Harold Hammond joined May 26th, upon graduation from the U. S. M. A., with Company B, to June 30th, then absent sick.

Second Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn joined May 24th, upon graduation from the U. S. M. A., with Company C.

Lieutenant Barlow, Fifteenth Infantry, attached, with Company D.

Chaplain Dwight Galloupe, attached May 8th,[47] with regiment to about June 30th, then absent sick.

Acting Assistant Surgeon William W. Calhoun, attached June 3rd,[48] with regiment.

[43] G. O. No. 4, Headquarters U. S. Troops, Tampa, April 27, 1898.

[44] S. O. No. 17, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, April 21, 1898.

[45] O. No. 3, April 26, 1898.

[46] S. O. No. 4, Headquarters, First Division Fifth Army Corps, June 7, 1898.

[47] S. O. No. 7, Headquarters U. S. Forces, Tampa, May 8, 1898.

[48] S. O. No. 9, Headquarters Fifth Army Corps, June 3, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Major Kilbourne, Surgeon, detached May 31st,[49] Chief Surgeon Second Division 8th Army Corps.

No change occurred in the status of the officers of the regiment not named above, being absent on detached service and absent sick, except in the case of Lieutenant Frazier, who joined from detached service July 9th, during the siege of Santiago. Lieutenants Simpson, Ramsey, Koehler, and Munson, noted above as detached, were with the expedition, Lieutenants Simpson and Koehler, as staff officers of the brigade, being practically with the regiment.

The operation of transferring the corps 13 miles, by a single track, to Port Tampa was necessarily somewhat prolonged.

In the afternoon of the 6th the corps commander directed that the movement go on continuously through the night, and the division commander, General Kent, in transmitting those instructions, notified his brigade commanders that the last regiment of General Lawton's Division was under orders to move at 9:30 P. M., and it was understood the First Division would follow without further orders. However, the difficulties must have been greater than anticipated, for it was not until the afternoon of the 7th that the First Division began to move. Every regiment had to transport to the train the 24 days' rations in its possession, the company kitchens, and the men's knapsacks. These had to be transported by wagon a mile or two over sandy roads. The blanket rolls were carried by the men. Every government wagon and team was at work, and by evening of the 7th their 24 hours of labor had well nigh exhausted them. Ninth Infantry officers, sitting in camp that beautiful evening listening to the crack of the whips and calls of the drivers as they urged on their teams, wondered if the regiment's turn would come before daylight. They possessed their souls in patience, however, thinking that if the night passed a move by daylight would be so much the better, and believing that everything was going forward systematically and as rapidly as possible. Suddenly, about 10 o'clock, came the well-remembered "hurry" order that set everything in a turmoil — "The expedition would sail in the morning; everybody who was not aboard by daylight would be left." It came as a memorandum message, conveyed by a mounted staff officer, who hurried on to other regiments. It was received as a kind of "Sauve, qui peut" command and with that spirit, and a determination not to be left, everyone worked rapidly. Just what orders were given by the brigade and regimental commanders is not a matter of record, but the staff were equal to the occasion. One went to the railroad, secured a train and held on to it. Others impressed

[49] S. O. No. 6, Headquarters Fifth Army Corps, May 31, 1898.

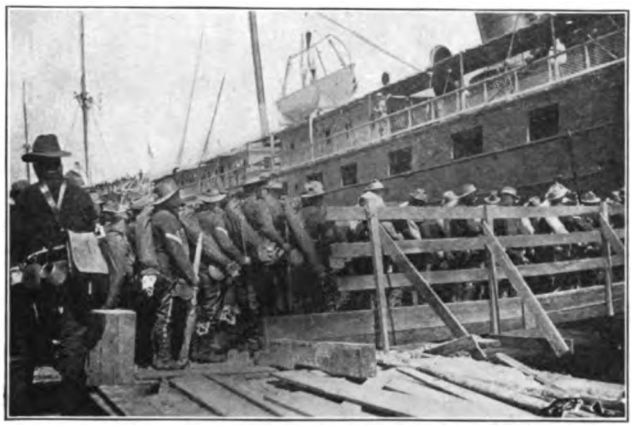
Digitized by Google



Officers, Ninth Infantry, Tampa, Florida, 1898.

Digitized by Google

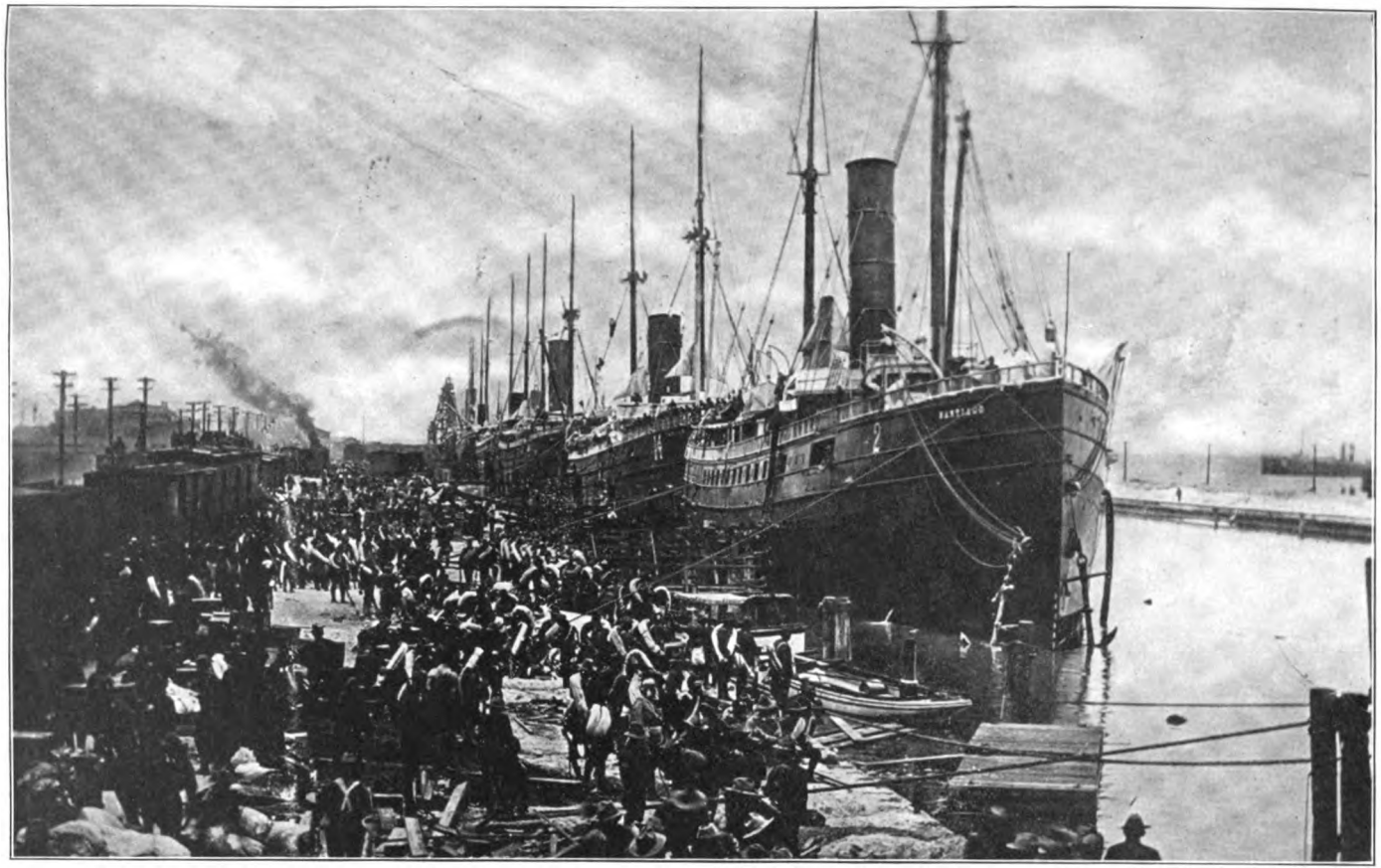
wagons, gathering up everything that passed, regardless of protestations. As fast as the wagons were loaded they were sent off to the train under guard, and brought back for more rations or baggage — none escaped. By three o'clock A. M. the last loads were away, and the regiment ready to march off, the tents and surplus baggage to be left to the care of a small guard which was to remain. The records affirm that the regiment left camp at 3:20 A. M., marched to Ybor City, arriving at 3:45 A. M.; left Ybor City by rail at 4:10 A. M.; moved on board the transport Santiago at 10 A. M. Distance traveled 13 miles. Although not on board by daylight they were in time and there was reason to believe that some of their friends who had started some hours in advance were beaten in the race.



Ninth Infantry embarking on Steamship Santiago, at Port Tampa, Florida, June, 1898.

The transport Santiago, to which the Ninth Infantry was assigned, was a Ward line steamship chartered for this service, and fitted up with wooden bunks on the lower deck. She furnished bunk space for the entire regiment, and for one battalion of the Tenth Infantry in addition. Brigade and Division Headquarters and the personnel of the First Division hospital were also placed on board. Crowding into lower decks for transport across the sea was a new experience for the regiment, and the discomfort from the torrid heat was hard to bear. Furthermore, notwithstanding the rush to get aboard, there was a delay of several days in sailing, due to uncertain knowledge as to the location of the Spanish cruisers, or a wild report of Spanish ships lying in wait just beyond the horizon. The ship remained at the dock with the rest of the fleet until June 10th, when she was ordered into the stream. She lay there until the 13th, when the supply of fresh water was replenished, and at 4 P. M. she followed on after other ships to the lower bay, arriving there at 6:30 P. M., and anchoring near Egbert Key. By noon the following day the entire fleet of transports was at anchor, and

Digitized by Google



Ninth Infantry leaving Port Tampa, Florida, on transport Santiago.

Digitized by Google

awaited the signal from the naval convoy to proceed to sea. The "Santiago" was numbered 2, and was ordered to take second place in the column, following the gunboat Helena. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon, June 14th, the movement began, the Helena leading, transport Miama next, and Santiago following in her proper place. Passsing out through the narrow entrance the Helena turned southward, and a little later slowed to half speed, allowing two other columns led by other ships of the navy to form up abreast, at a considerable interval. Navy ships took their places as scouts, far out on the flanks, and at nightfall the Fifth Army Corps was at sea steaming southward, bound for some port known only to the few. Not an officer or man of the Ninth Infantry knew the destination.

The transport flotilla experienced good weather on its journey to Cuba, and the health of the men was, generally, all that could be wished for. There were no facilities on the Santiago for cooking except boiling coffee, and the command was subsisted for the first ten days, beginning June 8th, on the travel rations, and thereafter on such portions of the field ration as could be eaten uncooked. Once or twice small messes of beans and bacon were cooked in the ship's galley. The discomfort arising from these conditions was considerably aggravated by the unpalatableness of the canned roast beef which constituted a part of the travel rations. This article of food would doubtless have been nourishing and agreeable if it could have been picked over, seasoned by cooks, and then served hot; but when turned out cold from the cans it was sloppy, greasy, and decidedly unattractive; so much so that the men were frequently nauseated by it and had to throw it away.

The favorable weather was a great boon. Hatches and port holes were kept open, giving an abundance of fresh air on the lower decks. The men were stowed away below in tiers of bunks as closely placed as they could be, with small passageways. At sea the air was cooler than at the Port Tampa dock, and there was not such an ever-present desire to drink water. When some of the components of the travel ration were exhausted it became necessary to get rations from the hold, and the efforts of the companies to secure their own lots resulted in the greatest confusion. Each company delved in the mass and threw to one side what did not belong to it. Other necessary articles from the hold were a few mess utensils in which to cook some of the parts of the field ration. The ship's galley was utilized throughout the day by the companies, in succession, in preparing small messes of beans and bacon.

The officers' accommodations in staterooms and saloon were ample. There was also shaded deck space above which gave comfortable loung-

Digitized by Google

ing place and opportunity to assemble in the evening for songs and discussions. The ship was one of the best of the fleet, and the regiment was fortunate in being assigned to it. Signalling between the ships was kept up constantly conveying messages to and from commanding officers and in communication with the ships of the navy. The latter were provided with electric search-lights which made a brilliant display in the night signalling. Among the young officers an interesting topic of conversation was the possible destination of the command, and maps were scanned with great frequency. In the evening of the 15th of June the lighthouse near the Dry Tortugas was sighted, and it was expected that a stop would be made at Key West toward early morning, but such did not prove to be the case. At daylight Key West was far off on the port side; the battleship Indiana, and a number of smaller ships and torpedo boats had joined the convoy, and the course was eastward. The possibility of passing around the west end of Cuba to a southern port was eliminated from the discussions. By night, on the 16th, the fleet was east of the longitude of Matanzas and Cardenas, so the chance of landing at either one of those places for operations against Havana was removed. The next most probable landing was the north coast of Cuba, directly north of Santiago. The coast was in view occasionally, as the fleet steamed slowly, along but no approach was made to it, and by night of the 18th Santiago itself appeared to be the most probable destination. And yet, instead of taking a course southeasterly, at this time, the leading gunboats kept on their way nearly due east, and the conjecture arose that Porto Rico was the destination. It was learned, however, that Grand Inagua Island had been assigned as a place of rendezvous and refuge in case of dispersion by a storm, and on the morning of the 19th it was sighted ahead. There was no occasion to delay there, and a change of the course due south left no doubt as to the destination. The easternmost cape of Cuba was sighted in the afternoon, a mountainous promontory, remaining in view until dark. Late at night the cape was rounded, and those who had followed the course of the fleet on their maps had bright anticipations of disembarking the following day, stretching themselves on dry land, and getting cooked food. What discouragement would have been theirs if the truth had been known — that for six days yet they were to roll about in the waves of that tempestuous south coast. It was the fate of the Ninth Infantry to be the last to land.

Morro Castle came in view about 11 A. M. June 20th. The Commanding General's ship steamed away for a conference with the navy. The fleet rolled in the waves under a scorching sun all day waiting for orders. None came until 5 P. M., when the leading naval ships started, with

Digitized by Google

orders to proceed due south at six miles an hour. The scattered transports closed up and took their places in column. There was a beautiful display of sunset colors, and as darkness came on, the high mountains of the coast, which had towered magnificently through the day, vanished from view. The movement was thought to be a strategic maneuver to deceive the enemy as to the place where a landing was contemplated, and the opinion was entertained that early morn would find the fleet back again near the coast at the precise point where the landing would be made. But all were disappointed at daybreak to discover that the ships were lying quietly many miles off the shore. At nine o'clock they moved in nearer, arriving at their resting-place of the day before at eleven. The fleet spent the day there, and at night proceeded to sea a second time, the heavens wonderfully beautiful again at the sunset hour, and the high, green mountain range stretching grandly to the right and left. The music of the band gave a romantic turn to the thoughts, and the scene was one to be long impressed on the minds of all beholders.



Moro Castle in sight. June 20, 1898.

As darkness came on a naval despatch boat swung by and instructions were shouted through a megaphone as to the movements of the vessels during the night. The instructions were apparently not conveyed with sufficient distinctness, for the Santiago arrived at daybreak, at Daiquiri, in company with many of the transports which had been ordered there to unload, whereas she should have gone with a second column to the west of Santiago, twenty miles away, joining in a diversion. The scenes at Daiquiri were exciting. Buildings were on fire, the smaller guns on the naval ships were shelling the shore, and troops were hastening into small boats to be towed ashore by the launches. The troops on the Santiago were momentarily expecting orders when the ship's captain was informed he had misunderstood his instructions and was

Digitized by Google

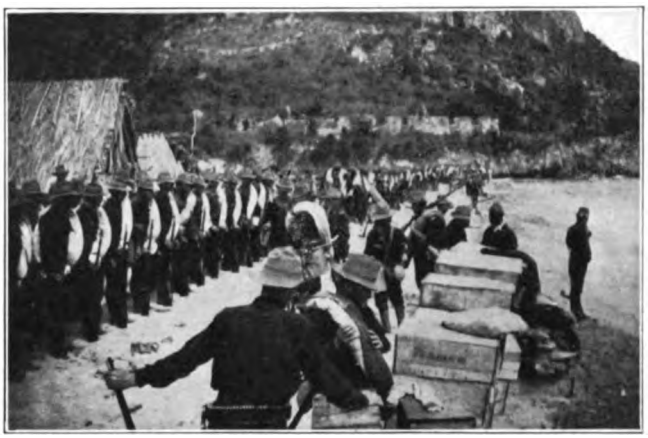
directed to proceed at once to the flotilla to the west of Santiago. A short delay was made to receive on board Colonel Charles A. Wikoff, Twenty-Second Infantry, who had been assigned to the command of the Third Brigade vice Colonel Powell relieved before the departure from Tampa. The command had been exercised in the interim by Lieutenant-Colonel William S. Worth, Thirteenth Infantry, the senior officer. Colonel Wikoff having come abroad alone he accepted Colonel Powell's staff as his own, and the two officers acted as Adjutant-General and Chief Quartermaster respectively, until the brigade received another permanent commander a few weeks later.

As the Santiago steamed westward there was much interest manifested, by all on board in the coast, and in the parts of the drama taken by the several ships of the navy. An excellent opportunity was offered to see each ship of the blockading squadron. But this interest came near resulting in disaster, for the captain steered a course too near the coast and, as the entrance to the Bay of Santiago was passed, a battery of five-inch guns within the entrance opened on the ship, firing two shots. Fortunately they did not take effect. The aim was a trifle too high. Such, however, was the baptism in war which the regiment received. During this day, June 22nd, the ship lay quietly a few miles from shore in company with several others. Among them was the City of Washington having a schooner in tow, which excited considerable curiosity. Whatever her cargo was she was a nuisance to the City of Washington, compelling constant steaming about to keep the tow line taut, and many were the gibes cast at her soldiers for their uneasiness. In the afternoon the sea calmed and many of the men were permitted to swim about the sides of the ship. The quiet atmosphere, and the sounds of sport and laughter were peaceful, and strangely in contrast with the warlike scenes of the morning. One poor fellow was at the point of death, however, on board the ship, having been ill with pneumonia for a number of days.[50] He died during the night while the ship was steaming slowly out to sea as usual, receiving the last rites of the church, with burial in the depths of the ocean the following morning. Many of the men by this time were showing the effects of their long confinement on insufficient rations, and the faces of some had a wan and despairing look, which appealed to the sympathies of their officers, but no remedy could be applied. Strong and eager warriors were exasperated at being compelled to remain inactive so long, imagining that their brothers in arms in the more fortunate regiments at Daiquiri were doing valiant work against the enemy.

[50] Private Frank Losse, Company B, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

The 23rd and 24th days of the month passed without change in the situation. There was some encouragement, however, on the 24th, when a navy despatch boat in passing called out the news that the disembarkation was progressing without resistance. That boat had no orders, however. But during the night orders were delivered, for at daylight on the 25th the few transports with which the Santiago had been staying had all disappeared. The Santiago was alone, probably overlooked in the darkness. Finally at about 9 A. M. the impatience of all on board was relieved by the arrival of a despatch boat with orders to proceed to Siboney and disembark.



Ninth Infantry forming on shore at Siboney after landing.

Daiquiri, at which a considerable portion of the Fifth Corps had been landed, was a short distance east of Siboney, the latter about ten miles east of Santiago. The leading troops had advanced from Daiquiri through Siboney, opening that point as a landing place, and the Cavalry Division had encountered the enemy at Las Guasimas. The Ninth Infantry began disembarking at 3 P. M., June 25th, carrying blanket rolls and three days' rations in the haversacks. A guard was left on board in charge of the remaining baggage. Siboney was a hamlet located on a small open bay, a mere cove in the rocky coast, having at its head a rapidly shelving gravel beach. The ocean rollers came in without hinderance, and in case of a storm it would have been impracticable to have got ashore; but good weather prevailed and the landing was accomplished without serious accident. This place was established as the first base ashore, or rather it was made the landing place of rations, for no base, properly speaking, was established, and the barest necessities of the expedition were taken from the ships. A beginning was made in getting the Ninth Infantry mess outfits, knapsacks and rations off the ship, but orders stopped the work, and finally the guard was brought

Digitized by Google

away, leaving all property to whatever fate might befall it. Shelter tents were pitched on a hillside near the village. The dead and wounded from the Las Guasimas fight were being brought in as the regiment came ashore, and on the following day the funeral of Captain Capron, of the Rough Riders, took place. Officers and men of the regiment listened to accounts of the fight which were given them by the wounded, with eager interest. The scenes and incidents connected with bringing ashore the rations, cavalry horses, hospital supplies and ammunition were enacted day and night in view of the camp. Companies of the regiment were detailed to work in the surf in aid of these operations. The navy's small boats and launches and their search-lights at night were indispensable aids to the work. June 27th the regiment broke camp and marched with the brigade toward Santiago, closing up on the other brigades of the division. A broken bridge or some other obstruction in the road delayed the advance just as the regiment was starting, and it was diverted to the trail over the hills, the same that had been taken by the



Ninth Infantry landing at Siboney, June 25, 1898.



Ninth Infantry landing at Siboney, Cuba, June 25, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Rough Riders. Climbing the steep trail, loaded with blanket rolls, rations in haversacks, and belts full of ammunition, was very exhausting in the torrid heat, and progress was exceedingly slow. The evidences of the marching and fighting a few days before, along this same trail were seen, but the forest and jungle were so dense that little could be made out to the right or left, and it was difficult to conceive how the Rough Riders had been able to advance or fight through it. Four miles from Siboney the regiment halted and camped on a bit of open ground just beyond where the mountain trail and the road reunited. The place was known as Sevilla, but there were no buildings except those of a ruined plantation.



Ninth Infantry preparing to leave bivouac and move forward July 1, 1898. Cuba.

The problem of rationing the command now asserted itself and for two or three days all the transportation that had been brought ashore was used in forwarding the necessary subsistence from Siboney. Rumors were heard that some regiments nearer the front had suffered from lack of rations, but the Ninth Infantry was sufficiently supplied. The tropical rains drenched the camp, and the heat was intense, but the men were all right and had regained strength and good spirits since getting ashore. The Thirteenth Infantry was camped across the road, and the Twenty-fourth close by, giving opportunity for interchange of visits and renewal of old acquaintance. On the 28th of June the contingent of Cuban troops, said to be 3,000 or 4,000 strong, which had been brought by our transports from some point on the coast west of Santiago, were marched by the camp, along the road, advancing to the front. They were a motley column of half-clothed blacks and mulattos, equipped with a variety of firearms, who were to be given an opportunity to show their prowess in fighting for their liberty.

Rapidity of movement and energy characterized the advance on Santiago, and the march was usually taken up before the time when it

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

was expected rather than after. What seemed to some to be essentials of preparation were not permitted to interfere with the onward course of the army. Notice was given on the 30th that the brigade would go forward on the following day, but, instead, at 4 P. M. that day the "General" was heard in the camps, one after the other, finally reaching the Ninth Infantry. Blanket rolls were promptly made, and the regiment took its place in the column following the Thirteenth Infantry, the Twenty-fourth being the last of the brigade. Slowly the long column moved forward, halting frequently. At sunset a turn in the road gave a view from a crest along the valley, in front, to what appeared to be the suburbs of the city four or five miles away. The Signal Corps had their balloon high in air a mile or two on, and the moral effect at that time was good. It gave a realization of the diverse engines of war which were being employed; it renewed confidence in American enterprise and ingenuity, and it impressed imaginative persons with the idea that accurate information was coming to commanders of what was in their front, and what must be done to meet the conditions. The march of the regiment was continued very slowly and interruptedly until nearly ten o'clock, the last part of the way being through the bivouacs of troops on the side of the road, indicating that the brigade was pushing its way to the front for a leading position in the battle which was imminent. Bivouac for the night was made in a cramped ground which had been previously occupied, and rations were distributed from a small supply deposited there for the purpose. The men then lay down for a few hours' sleep, some with restless thoughts of what the morrow might bring forth, others to sleep soundly, each according to his temperament.



Ninth Infantry halted in an opening in the trail below El Pozo to strip for action.

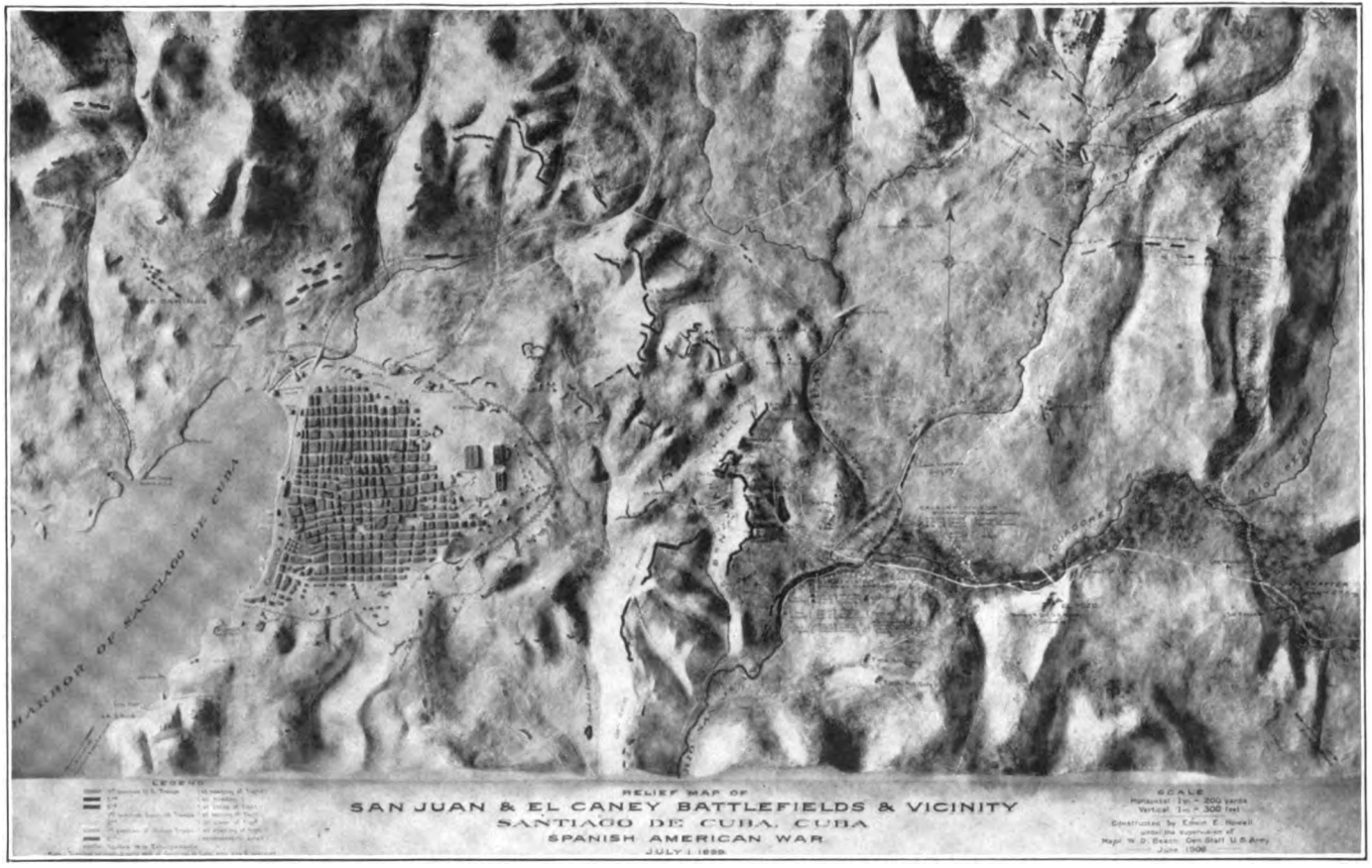
A camp interpretation of the rumors afloat at Sevilla had given

Digitized by Google

general expectation that on July 1st the Second Division, under General Lawton, would attack El Caney, the enemy's stronghold on their left flank, and that the main frontal attack would take place at a later day. So when the first guns were heard, soon after sunrise, away off on the right of the Americans, it was generally understood that the battle had opened at El Caney, but there was little anticipation in the 9th Infantry that the First Division would become engaged, or that the regiment would soon come under fire. But the guns on the right were a signal in effect, if not by pre-arrangement, for the First Division to go forward against the defences in its front on the direct line of approach to the City of Santiago. The Ninth Infantry was soon under arms, and, still carrying their blanket rolls and rations, marched from camp in column, following the Thirteenth Infantry as before. The road was narrow, muddy in places from the recent rains, and bordered on both sides by the densest jungle. The sun streamed down with almost overpowering heat. The guns of Grimes' battery at El Pozo, a mile or less ahead, were soon heard, and return fire from the enemy's batteries was distinguished. A little later a few companies of Cuban troops came hurrying back along the road in single file — not straggling, but moving to the rear under orders, and wasting no time in the maneuver. They were carrying a few wounded men. The regiment halted, and drew to one side along the road to allow them to pass. Some of the men inquired banteringly if they were not going the wrong way; their replies were in Spanish.

The balloon was passed about this time — not high in air, but well above the tree-tops. The Gatling gun battery was just limbering up to go forward. A favorite Sergeant of the Ninth Infantry, and several men were members of the gun detachment, having been detailed with it when the Gatling gun, brought from Madison Barracks, had been turned in with others to form the battery at Tampa. He was seen for a minute and stated that the battery had already been in action and one or two men had been wounded. The road followed the course of a small stream called the Aguadores River, crossing it four times. At the second crossing a halt was again made, and the regiment well closed up. The battery at El Pozo was then in sight up the hillside, a short distance to the left. It had ceased firing for a time, but began again just as orders were received for the regiment to move forward. The line of fire was directly over and in the direction of the road along the course of the stream, and its shells were soon flying over the heads of the advancing brigade; the return fire of the enemy's guns also came overhead, the smoky powder used by our battery indicating clearly its location. This was perhaps for-

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

tunate in a way, as the enemy's artillery was directed more on the battery than on the roadway below along which the column of infantry, hidden in the dense undergrowth, was advancing. The enemy's infantry fire was beginning to be felt, however, and one or two men were wounded. Wounded men from the front were coming back, and a number of saddle-horses, and a loaded pack-mule were hurriedly led to the rear crowding along the narrow way. These animals were probably the mounts of the field and staff officers of the Seventy-first New York Volunteers, which was the rear regiment of the leading brigade (Hawkins') in Kent's Division, immediately preceding the Thirteenth Infantry. General Kent's Second Brigade (Pearson's), was the third in column. At this moment the Ninth Infantry was ordered to form line to the left and lay off blanket rolls. They were piled up by companies and a man of each company left in charge. The field and staff horses were also to the rear. Then the regiment advanced again, but had gone only a short distance when it formed line to the left a second time, and, under instructions, each company detailed scouts to push their way through the brush up the hill on the left side of the road. The enemy's bullets were dropping in among the men here, and the regiment was moved a few paces back across the road into the bed of the stream to get protection under the bank. It was impossible to tell, on account of the high, dense growth of chaparral, from what direction the fire was coming, but from the fact that the scouts were to go up the hill to the left it was supposed the fire was from that side. However, the regiment had scarcely moved into its position before an order was shouted to get back on the road and move forward. Major Sharp, General Kent's Adjutant General, was seen ahead calling out and waving his hand to come on. There was immediate response by the regiment, and shortly the head of



Trail leading from foot of El Pozo Hill to the ford. This is the trail through which Wikoff's Brigade passed. The Seventy-first New York stopped here.

Digitized by Google

the column reached General Kent standing at the juncture of a side path to the left, and was by him turned into the path. This path lead away from the road before the latter crossed the Aguadores for the fourth time, the second and third crossings being near together at El Pozo. It kept near the foot of the hill toward which, as previously stated, the regiment had faced just after removing the packs, and curving to the right proceeded straight on for a half mile or so to a crossing of the San Juan River, several hundred yards down stream from where the main road crossed. The Seventy-first Infantry, which had been the first regiment to turn into this path, was lying along this path, on one side and the other, incurring losses from the enemy's fire but doing nothing. An officer of the Seventy-first, in speaking of this matter sometime afterwards, stated to a Ninth Infantry officer that when their field and staff horses were started to the rear it was done in this narrow path, hurriedly, and caused a slight stampede, but the break was quickly stopped by the officers of the regiment, and General Kent sent orders to lie down, which was done, The regiment was not bunched or in disorder, but appeared to be in an irregular double line of skirmishers, along the path, facing the right, as though the enemy were in that direction. At this time, also, the Second Battalion of the Ninth Infantry was delayed and became for a while separated from the First Battalion. The regimental Commanders' report of the part taken by the regiment in the battle, recounts these circumstances and the subsequent movements as follows:[51]

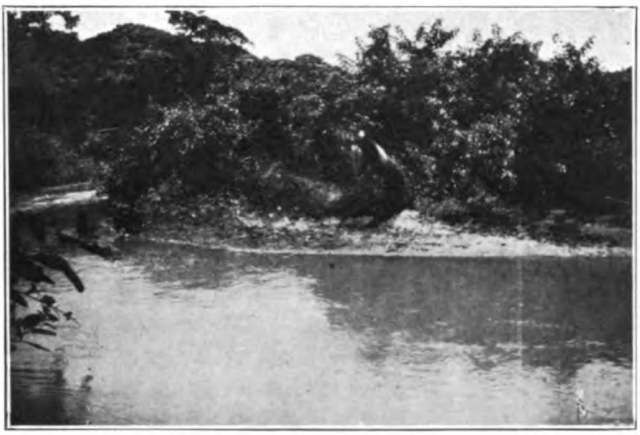
"The regiment came under fire of the enemy's batteries about 9:30 A. M., and a few minutes later under the fire of his small arms. About this time the regiment halted, faced to the left, and the blanket rolls were removed and placed by the roadside. The battle was now well on, as several men in the regiment were hit, and the wounded from the organizations which preceded us were coming along the road. Just before reaching the lane-road the First Battalion of the regiment received orders to line up on the left of the road and send out scouts, but the order was no sooner given than countermanded. This order was also given to the Second Battalion. The regiment again moved forward, but during this halt the Twenty-fourth Infantry continued its march, and one of its battalions came alongside the Second Battalion of my regiment, the two battalions marching side by side until they came to the junction of the lane with the main or Aguadores road. Major Bowman, commanding battalion, reports that at that point they met General Kent, Division Commander, and he ordered the Second Battalion of the regiment to halt to allow the First Battalion of the Twenty-

[51] L. S. No. 127, 1898 (supplementary report).

Digitized by Google

fourth Infantry to pass into the lane-road. This caused considerable distance between the battalions. The march of the regiment was also impeded by the Seventy-first New York Volunteers, which were halted in and alongside of the road, thereby blocking the way to the crossing of the San Juan River. After crossing the River the First Battalion of my regiment was closed up on the Thirteenth Infantry, and orders were sent to the rear to hurry forward the Second Battalion.

"The Second Battalion of the regiment, following the First Battalion of the Twenty-fourth Infantry, as already referred to, passed through the Seventy-first New York Volunteers, squatted on each side of the path, and, finding the Twenty-fourth Infantry halted and in position on the right of the path, the Second Battalion halted, but had no sooner done so than it received orders to cross the ford and join the First Battalion of the regiment on the right bank of the San Juan River. It was about twenty-five yards from this crossing to the spot where Second Lieutenant Lewis was killed, while with Captain Regan at the head of the company. The forward movement of the regiment was somewhat retarded in consequence of the delay of the Second Battalion, the First being under fire of the enemy and returning it all this time. Soon after the regiment was thus united, Colonel Wikoff was killed, and Lieutenant-Colonel Worth was wounded. The wounding of Lieutenant-Colonel Liscum [52] was not known for some time after. In fact, as it was afterwards ascertained, my regiment and the two other regiments of the brigade, the Third, moved forward to the assault of San Juan Hill without a brigade Commander, Lieutenant-Colonel Ewers [53] not realizing that he was the



The Ford at the bend where the Ninth, Thirteenth and Twenty-fourth Infantry lost heavily. July 12, 1898.

[52] Lieutenant-Colonel Emerson H. Liscum; Lieutenant-Colonel Twenty-fourth Infantry at that time, commanding that regiment; promoted Colonel Ninth Infantry in 1899.

[53] This report is made by Major Boyle who became regimental commander upon Lieutenant-Colonel Ewers assuming command of the Third Brigade.

Digitized by Google

senior officer until after the hill had been carried. There was some little confusion at the ford on account of the rapid change of brigade commanders, but through my efforts and those of the other subordinate commanders, and the splendid initiative of company commanders, the Third Brigade moved forward to the assault, passing over the level or open space, about 500 yards, under heavy fire in an unbroken line. The direction of the assault would have brought my regiment on the hill at the blockhouse, known as Fort San Juan, but a slight change of direction to the left, ordered by me and promptly executed by the regiment, prevented congestion at that point and brought the regiment so that it occupied the hill from the blockhouse to the end of the crest, thus securing a commanding frontal position, in a word, the key-point to the whole line, which it held tenaciously to the surrender. This was in accordance with the orders of General Kent and Hawkins to me—



San Juan Hill, looking from the ford in the Bloody Angle, Cuba, 1898.

"that this particular position must be held at all hazard." The discipline of the regiment was excellent, and this was in evidence from the first moment it came under fire again during the assault, and its splendid control of fire in the trenches."

A noticeable feature of the battle at the San Juan crossing was the utter impossibility of stopping the firing there after the troops had once opened. Some order must have been given, probably for the purpose of straightening out the battalions, and a trumpet singal to cease firing was taken up among all the companies which occupied the ground, there being then at that point a confused mass of the Thirteenth, Ninth and Twenty-fourth Infantry; but the trumpet calls had no effect. The men were in the fight to stay; a rain of bullets from the hill was assailing them and nothing could stop their firing. On the other hand, the desire to get at the enemy, and to get a place in which to fire back without hitting our

Digitized by Google

own men, caused the mass to work itself forward little by little through the tall grass, until without orders all of that first lot of men finally stood up and walked on straight for the hill, firing as they went, many of them falling in the tall grass never to rise again. The Ninth Infantry, as an organization, did not go forward with that first group; a few men only joined it, chiefly on the left, where one company, having become somewhat separated from the others, and observing a forward movement a portion of it went forward, heading for a point two or three hundred yards to the left of the blockhouse. The whole regiment advanced a few minutes later, and, reaching the crest of the hill, joined in the volley firing against the retreating Spaniards.



The assault on San Juan Hill during the Battle, July 1, 1898.

The exultation at achieving success was uppermost in the minds of all at this moment, but the men were so exhausted from the prolonged exertion in the unwonted heat that all dropped to the ground on the steep hillside as soon as there were no more Spaniards in sight to fire upon. Still the bullets continued to sing over the heads of the prostrate companies from the enemy's next defensive line, about six hundred yards away, and General Hawkins, walking along the line, called the officers and men to their senses, commanding them to get back to the crest where they could see to the front, return the fire, and resist a counter-attack. There was no counter-attack, however, the firing continued in a desultory way throughout the afternoon, and ceased at nightfall. After dark two companies were sent forward a short distance to establish outposts and detachments were told off from the companies to go back for the blanket rolls and get the intrenching tools. Many of the blanket rolls were lost. Each company had brought ashore from the ship two or three shovels, picks, and axes, and these, having been left with the packs, were now brought up and used to great advantage constructing a hasty entrenchment along the crest. Details of men worked all night,

Digitized by Google

for the ground was rocky, but by morning there was fair protection for the whole line. The reverse slope of the hill was very steep and gave good protection for such portion of the regiment as served as support to the firing line. It also offered a suitable place for cooking, and there was sheltered ground at the foot of the hill for the sick and wounded. The firing opened at dawn on the second of July, continuing throughout the day, and again on the third until about 10 o'clock, when it ceased under orders, General Shafter believing a conference might bring about a surrender of the Spanish forces. The two companies, which had been put forward as outposts during the night of the first, were left there all day on the second, lying between the two fires unable to do anything, and two men received wounds in that location. At nightfall two other companies were sent forward to replace the first two.



Trenches of Ninth Infantry during truce, July 9, 1898.

Soon after this change had been made a heavy fusillade took place between the opposing lines, which seemed to presage a determined counter-attack, but the firing ceased without any such movement, and it was attributed generally to a nervous apprehension on both sides, set aflame by a single shot from a startled sentinel. Considerable fear was entertained during the fusillade for the advance companies, but they escaped without injury, most of the men having moved back into the trenches as the firing began. The enemy's artillery produced little effect on the Ninth Infantry, few shells striking in its vicinity. There was one gun that threw large projectiles that shrieked as they flew over, and were spoken of as "those stoves," but none of them fell in the lines. About 8:00 A. M. July 3rd the sound of the naval engagement between the blockading squadron and the ships of Admiral Cervera's fleet, issuing from Santiago harbor, was heard, but the cause of the firing was not known until the following day. The announcement of the news called forth cheers and enthusiasm, and gave confidence in the final

Digitized by Google

favorable outcome of the siege of the city. The truce, which began about 10 A. M. July 3rd, continued until the 10th. The going and coming of the white flag and the meetings between the lines were in plain view from the Ninth Infantry trenches, and news of just what was transpiring came quite accurately to the beholders. Deep interest centered in every interchange of communications. During this period some improvements were made in the trenches, the steep hillside was partially terraced, and paths were cut from the base to the crest. The companies were sent in succession to bathe in the San Juan River, about five hundred yards to the rear; but this was stopped when it became known that other commands, located further down the stream, were dependent upon it for drinking water. Many of the canteens were sent more than a mile to a spring, or to clear pools near the river. Rations were barely sufficient to keep the men in condition. The Chief Commissary of the division labored day and night bringing up the essential parts, having pack trains for the work, the roads being in such condition from heavy rains as to be impassable for loaded wagons. At no time was any supply of rations accumulated at the front. It was a constant strain to meet immediate demands, and often the tinkle of the bell-mare's bell at night relieved the anxious company Commander who knew then that the necessary hard tack and bacon were coming up in the nick of time for breakfast. Considerable hardship was experienced from having no cooking utensils for company cooking. Every man had to go for water, gather wood, and build his own small fire on which to boil coffee and fry bacon. Six camp kettles, six galvanized iron buckets, and six large pans in each company would have been a great help in providing the cooked food, and would have done not a little toward preserving the health of the men; but these articles had been left on the ships, and



Wreck of the "Riena Mercedes," in Santiago harbor. Moro Castle in the distance. July 31, 1898.

Digitized by Google



OFFICERS OF THE NINTH INFANTRY ON SAN JUAN HILL, JULY, 1898.

Left to right: Lieutenant Welborn, Lieutenant Noyes, Captain Bowman, Captain Robertson, Lieutenant-Colonel Ewers, Major Boyle, Lieutenant Bookmiller, Lieutenant Schoeffel, Lieutenant Rethers, Captain Foote, Captain McCaleb, Lieutenant Koehler, Lieutenant Connell.

Digitized by Google

could not be obtained. The consequence was that each man had to give about six hours a day to preparing his food, and when sickness overtook him he would not, or could not, exert himself to do it properly, and he suffered accordingly. As the exposure, the drinking water, and the climatic conditions generally were beginning to have a deleterious effect, the number of men appearing on sick report gradually increased. The most prevalent disease was malarial fever, or a mild form of yellow fever, attended with bowel troubles.



News that the Spaniards had offered to surrender. Waving the flag. July 14, 1898.

On July 10th, negotiations for a surrender having apparently failed, notification was received to prepare for a renewal of the firing and for an advance on the enemy's lines. Rations and ammunition were issued out, and advance scouts with axes to cut wire entanglements were told off in each company. About 3 P. M., word was received that the artillery would begin firing at 4:00, and the regiment was to advance in line at the termination thereof, upon issuance of orders. The artillery opened a little later than the appointed hour, and sharp-shooters fired at the line of intrenchments in their front. This was continued until dark and then ceased. No order was received to go forward. The following morning firing began and continued in a desultory way until about noon when it ceased and was not again resumed. The battle and siege were over. The surrender took place on the 14th of July. The losses of the regiment in this battle and siege were 1 officer, and 4 enlisted men killed, 27 enlisted men wounded.[54] Following is a list of the killed and wounded:[55]

KILLED

Officer.

Second Lieutenant Louis H. Lewis, with Company G (near ford).

[54] Trimonthly Field Return, July 10, 1898.

[55] Return of casualities, August 29, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Company A.

Private De Forest A. Spicer, Private William Walker.

Company B.

Private Thomas Longway.

Company E.

Corporal John Joyce (near ford).

WOUNDED

Company B.

Corporal Thomas F. O'Reilly, Private Louis E. Caulfield.

Company C.

Sergeant John W. Lattimore (on road); Private Fred J. Dunford (July 2); Private Charles T. Henry (near ford); Private John T. Leary; Private Arthur McAllister; Private James J. Quirk (July 2nd); Private Nelson E. Tryon.

Company D.

Corporal Edward Gorman; Private Clarence L. Adams; Private Jeff D. Miller; Private Philip H. Schermerhorn (died July 12th); Private Walter A. Weichert.

Company E.

Private Henry H. Conover (near ford); Private Francis Craig (at ford).

Company F.

Corporal Oscar F. Winters (July 2nd); Private George Fargo.

Company G.

Sergeant Patrick Welsh (on hill); Private Fred Gremm; Private Louis Kalber; Private Thomas Rogan (of Battery M, Fourth Artillery, attached to Company G, Ninth Infantry).[56]

Company H.

Corporal Albert C. Gardner (near ford); Corporal Christian Weaver; Private William Barber; Private Frank Colliton (July 2nd); Private David H. Smith (July 2nd).

The Ninth Infantry was designated as the first regiment of the United States forces to march into and occupy the city of Santiago after the capitulation.

The document in which the terms of capitulation were set forth, as finally agreed upon between General Shafter and the Commanding

[56] This man was assigned to the regiment from recruiting station prior to departure from Tampa. Under instructions from A. G. O., received a few days after assignment, he was dropped from regimental rolls and taken up as deserter from Battery M, Fourth Artillery. Pending trial the regiment departed to Cuba and he accompanied it.

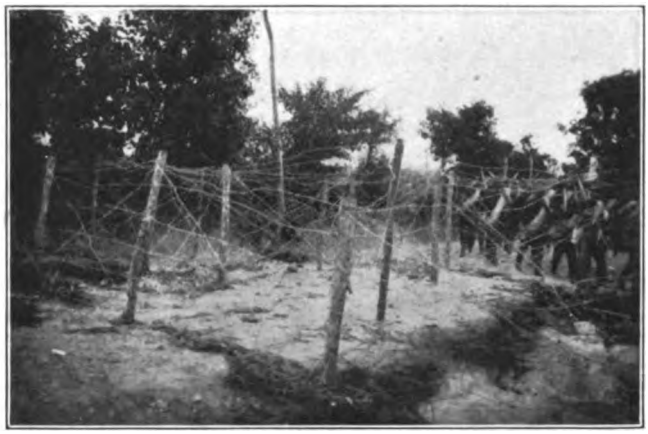
Digitized by Google

General of the Spanish forces, General Toral, was signed by the commissioners representing those officers, late in the afternoon July 16, 1898. The formal ceremony of the surrender and the raising of the United States flag over the municipal building in the city took place the following day. At daybreak the regiment had already been informed of the duty it was to perform, and, after eating breakfast, broke camp, made blanket rolls, brushed up as well as possible after its two weeks of duty in the trenches, and about 9:00 A. M. fell in to march to the city.



Ninth Infantry entering Santiago July 17, 1898, as escort to the colors at the flag-raising. San Juan in distance.

Passing down from the hill into the road the column halted for a few minutes while the surrender was formally made at the "Surrender tree," then marched on slowly, passing Spanish troops which had come out as escort to General Toral, and were about to lay down their arms. The Spanish outer trenches were observed with interest; then the buildings in which the troops had been quartered along the road on the outskirts of the city; then stronger entrenchments with barbed-wire entangle-



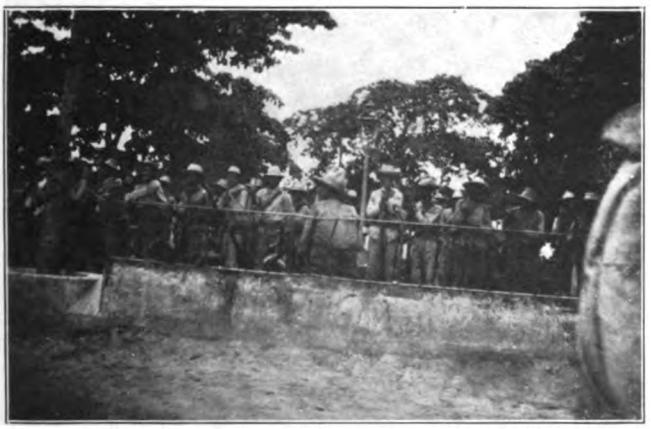
A Spanish entanglement on Santiago Road, July 17, 1898.

Digitized by Google

ments and barricades in the streets; then a large building on the right, used as a hospital, which had been prominently in view during the siege, and where groups of wounded Spanish officers and soldiers were seen; then the people of the city, many of whom were just returning with their bundles of valuables from El Caney, to which place thousands had withdrawn when further bombardment of the city by our ships and batteries was threatened; then, here and there, were seen women and children whose emaciated and dying condition showed plainly the straits to which the city had been put for food. Many of the Spanish soldiers were pale and thin, indicating the ravages of disease in their ranks. The bearded Anglo-Saxons, Teutons and Celts of an American regiment offered a strong contrast to the swarthy, beardless Spaniards, and many of them stood in open-mouthed wonder as the regiment moved proudly on. At last the narrow streets and continuous walls of the compact city were reached, and it was not much



Cathedral of Santiago. July 17, 1898. Ninth Infantry waiting for ceremony of raising the flag.



Spanish prisoners of war waiting to give up their arms. Santiago, July 17, 1898.

Digitized by Google

further to the plaza, the cathedral, and the palace. At the plaza the regiment was formed, facing the "palace" or municipal building, and awaited the hour of twelve. As the hands of the clock in the cathedral tower approached that hour, General Shafter and his officers came out from the palace and stood in the plaza facing the building, which was a low structure; and as the clock sounded the hour the American flag was raised by two of the General's aides, the battalions of the Ninth Infantry stood at "present," and the Sixth Cavalry Band, which had been noted for its excellent music at Tampa, played the "Star Spangled Banner." Afterwards the band played Sousa's "Stars and Stripes Forever" grandly, and the feeling of patriotic enthusiasm was at a high pitch. There was no wild hurrahing, however; the Americans present were soldiers in ranks, and the crowds in the balconies of the club buildings surrounding the plaza, and in the elevated way in front of the cathedral, were Spaniards or their friends who were sore at heart at seeing their own flag replaced by the American.

Two troops of the Second Cavalry, mounted, which had acted as escort to General Shafter, were also in attendance at this ceremony.

Upon the completion of the ceremony the regiment was marched to the old theatre, "Teatro de la Reina," which had been in disuse for some time, and quartered there. Details were at once made to guard the public buildings of the city, the prison, the residences of certain Spanish civil and military officials, the hospitals and the docks. One company was designated to furnish guards for Spanish ships in the harbor which had been used as transports. The navy also claimed the right of guarding and controlling them, and sent a detachment of sailors under an officer for the purpose. For a time there was a little conflict and irritation, but the matter was finally settled, and the company of infantry was withdrawn, returning to the old theatre about July 20th.

The effective strength of the regiment was by this time greatly reduced by sickness, and there was much difficulty in supplying the required guards. Men were frequently taken with chills while on duty and had to be relieved, and the hospital portion of the theatre was filled to overflowing with prostrate men, some of whom were delirious with fever, and all so weak as to be scarcely able to move. Among the companies many other men were either on sick report, or weak and feverish, and quite unable to do their duty properly.

The morning reports of the regiment showed from four to nine men present sick after the wounded were sent away, up to July 13th. On the 14th the number jumped to seventeen, and remained at about that figure until July 19th, when it advanced to twenty-eight, and on

Digitized by Google

July 20th made a big jump again to one officer and seventy-eight enlisted men. The following day the figures were 1 officer and 92 men, and on the 22nd, 132 enlisted men were sick out of a total present of 433. These were men totally unfit for duty, most of them prostrate and unable to move. Of those reported for duty a large proportion had suffered from chills and fever, and were exceedingly weak, but had been reported for duty as soon as they had recovered sufficiently from the paroxysms to stand on their feet and carry a rifle. Every man made a brave effort to do his full duty, but almost all at one time or another succumbed to the disease. The first death occurred on July 21st, the next on July 30th, and two more on August 2nd. The disease was usually diagnosed as pernicious malarial fever. It was possibly a light form of yellow fever contracted from the bites of mosquitos while in the trenches, but, at the time, suspicion was cast on the old theatre as a hotbed of yellow-fever germs. Severe chills, high fever, disordered condition of the stomach, causing vomiting and wrenching, and severe pains in the head, accompanied by complete prostration, were the effects of the disease. Officers and men suffered alike; it would be fair to estimate the number who escaped entirely at not more than five per cent.

As soon as the city was occupied by the United States troops the obstructions at the entrance to the harbor were removed and the transports came to the docks and unloaded the company baggage and supplies of all kinds. Among the first ships to come in was the Texas, the Red Cross Society's ship. The food supplies and hospital delicacies which she soon placed within reach were thoroughly appreciated. The Santiago came to the dock about July 20th, and afforded the officers of the regiment the luxury of a valise and a roll of bedding, and the men their knapsacks, company mess boxes and cooking utensils.

One of the most gratefully appreciated aids to health and comfort at this time was a ship-load of ice which some benevolent person sent from the coast of Maine. It must have been loaded and forwarded long before the precise needs of the army could be anticipated, or even the conditions under which service was to be performed were known; but it spoke volumes for the foresight and benevolence of the giver, and the fever-stricken officers and men who shared the boon will carry heartfelt appreciation of the act as long as memory remains.

On July 20th and 22nd, respectively, Major Lee and Colonel Powell, rejoined from the United States, bringing a certain increment of health, strength and energy, which aided prodigiously in carrying the regiment through the crisis which it had reached from disease. Colonel Powell had successfully fought off retirement. Major Lee received an appoint-

Digitized by Google

ment as Colonel of one of the "immune" regiments, upon his arrival at Washington in May, but subsequently resigned, and having been promoted Major of the Ninth Infantry, under the law of April 26th, rejoined with his new rank. Several officers were compelled to leave the regiment at this time and return to the United States on account of sickness, and others were detached for staff duty. Lieutenant-Colonel Ewers was ordered to Guantanamo to receive the surrender of the Spanish troops at that place, and did not again rejoin the regiment. Lieutenant Frazier accompanied him on this duty.

On August 2nd and 3rd the regiment was relieved from duty in Santiago by Colonel Hood's regiment of "immunes" (2nd United States Volunteers), and marched out of the city to a camp on high ground near entrenchments which had been occupied during the siege by United States Troops, facing others of the Spanish forces at a very short distance. The camp was just where the two lines of entrenchments had come closest together, a considerable distance to the right of the location originally occupied by the regiment. A sense of restfulness then came over all, for then, for the first time, had the officers and men been withdrawn from active work and allowed to contemplate the scene of their fighting and hardships in an atmosphere of peace. The natural scenery of the surrounding hills and valleys was charming, and the range of mountains on one side, and the city on the other, sliding down to the bay, was a fair boundary to the view. All the country was clothed in brilliant green, and the groves of palms here and there added to the tropical aspect of the scene. At sunset the trumpet calls from the various camps, scattered wherever suitable ground could be found, were wafted to the ears, while occasional music from the bands that had been held intact gave an increased charm to the surroundings.

And yet the sickness of the men continued. The ground itself, although elevated, was wet with the rains, and the air was heavy with the scent of mouldering shrubs and grass. The rank growth covered hilltops as well as ravines. Every morning at an early hour the measured funeral march of trumpets, and the final taps over the grave of some deceased soldier were heard from one direction or another, far or near, until orders were issued that burials should take place without those accompaniments — their frequency having a depressing effect on the numerous patients.

During the week, August 2nd to 8th, information came quite positively and definitely that strong efforts were being made to have the entire Fifth Corps returned to the United States. Each rumor was hailed with delight and the anticipations of seeing the native land, and breathing

Digitized by Google

the cool fresh breezes of the north, buoyed up the sick. The order was received August 8th. A memorandum from regimental Headquarters on that day[57] directed that preparations be made to go aboard a transport on the following day, but the embarkation was delayed one day longer and took place on the 10th.[58] The memorandum announced that all tentage would be left standing and directed that all old or soiled clothing that could be spared should be piled to be burned; the idea being to be as free as possible from danger of carrying the germs of yellow fever on board ship or to the United States. The haversacks which had become filthy from bacon grease were also burned. A few men who had been exposed, as was then supposed, to yellow fever, by contact with well established cases, were ordered to remain behind and a large number that had been sent to the hospital were too sick to be moved. The total strength of the regiment to go aboard the transport was fifteen officers, 323 enlisted men.[59]

The three-mile march to the docks of the city was a severe ordeal for most of those who were nominally able to do duty and who were included in the number to go aboard the transport, but the expectation of soon breathing sea air and the certainty of being en route home gave strength for the march. The regiment left camp at 8:00 A. M., arrived at the dock soon after nine, left the dock on a transfer boat at 10:00 A. M.,[60] steamed out through the harbor and entrance, past the sunken Merrimac, the gunboat Reina Mercedes, and Morro Castle, to the open sea, arriving alongside the great steamship St. Louis, then under the control of the navy, to which ship the regiment had been assigned. It was an easy matter to find accommodations for all. During the day the Tenth Infantry and one battalion of the Seventy-first New York Volunteers arrived, the latter showing every sign of having suffered extremely from disease, and at 9:30 P. M. the ship sailed.[61] It was a beautiful moonlight evening, and Morro Castle was in full view on the high rock towering overhead as the ship got under way, but the St. Louis was an ocean greyhound and the castle was soon lost in the gloom of the fading shore.

The course of the ship was around the east end of the Island of Cuba and nearly due north to Montauk Point. On the 11th and 12th of August the warming influence of the Gulf stream was felt in the air, but on the

[57] Memorandum August 8, 1898; in regimental order-book.
[58] Trimonthly Field Return of Ninth Infantry, dated August 10, 1898.
[59] Consolidated Morning Report, August 11, 1898.
[60] Trimonthly Field Return, August 10, 1898.
[61] Trimonthly Field Return, August 20, 1898.

Digitized by Google

13th there was a distinct change in the temperature, and the regiment, being then clothed in khaki uniform which had been issued in the city of Santiago, felt the effects of the chilliness, and one of the very sick succumbed to his disease and was buried the night of the 13th, a few hours before the home shores were sighted. This death, which was believed to have been caused by yellow fever, caused quarantining of the ship, and the entire command on board was required, the following day, August 15th, to go through a disinfecting barge, the men disrobing and bathing while all articles of clothing and baggage were subjected to steam pressure and disinfectants. New blue clothing, underclothing, and blankets, were issued throughout, gratis, by the Quartermaster Department, and the warmth of the garments was fully appreciated.

The regiment reached the shore at sunset, and soon after dark was marched about two miles to a detention camp where it was placed in tents. Forty-four men were too sick to march and were carried to the General Hospital in the camp, leaving 277 [62] present on the morning of August 16th. On August 21st the regiment was released from quarantine and marched, at 2:00 P. M., to the main part of Camp Wikoff, about a mile distant. There officers and men were permitted to see their relatives and friends, some of whom came long distances to greet them. Everything was done to strengthen and encourage the sick, benefices of all kinds were heaped upon them. Fruits, vegetables, milk and eggs, wines and cakes were brought in abundance. Strangers vied with one another to do some beneficial act for the returned soldiers. It was the same among all the returning regiments, which were equally afflicted with tropical diseases. But the fever had too strong a hold to be easily eradicated. Men were carried to the hospital daily, numbers were allowed to go to their homes on furlough to receive there the kind care of their relatives, and deaths were reported from time to time at the hospital. Several of the officers were granted sick leaves. On the other hand, Major Boyle and Captain Palmer rejoined, four New Lieutenants reported for duty and about 200 recruits arrived from Fort McPherson, Madison Barracks, and other points, adding new blood and muscle to the wasted regiment, — the beginnings of re-establishment for future campaigns.

The regiment received orders early in September to return to its former station, Madison Barracks, New York, and proceeded there on September 10th and 11th, leaving Montauk Point at 7:00 P. M., September 10th, arriving at Madison Barracks 6:30 P. M., September 11th.

An ovation was given the returning heroes all along the line of travel

[62] Consolidated Morning Report.

Digitized by Google



Remains of Ninth Infantry at Montauk Point, Long Island, after return from Santiago, following termination of Spanish War.

Digitized by Google

in northern New York, the people of Utica making a special effort to hold them en route for a grand reception, but finally yielding to the exigencies of the travel orders, and detaining the train only long enough to serve at the railroad station an elaborate luncheon. At Sackett's Harbor the familiar chimes in the Presbyterian Church rang out a most pleasing welcome, and just at dark the remnant of the old regiment marched into the post-home again.

The ill effects of the Cuban diseases were felt in the regiment for many months after its return. Twenty-six men were discharged for disability during the period from the close of the campaign to the date of departure of the regiment to the Philippines in March 1899,[63] ninety-one were transferred out as being physically unfit for further service in the tropics.[64] While en route to Manila nineteen were left in hospital at San Francisco and eleven at Honolulu, unable to proceed,[65] and four were left absent sick at other places in the United States — all in consequence of the fevers contracted in Cuba.

Following is a list of names of the men who died of disease during the Cuban campaign, and in the months immediately following:

DIED OF DISEASE

Officer

Captain William L. Carpenter[66]

Non-commissioned Staff and Band

Private Charles A. Ostermann

Company A

Corporal Walter A. Jarvis
Private Peter Henninger
Private George H. Myers
Private Thomas Nolan
Private Frank J. Stannard
Private Harrison D. Dewey
Private John Killgallen
Private Thomas Nilan
Private Richard O'Shea
Private James C. Webster

Company B

Corporal Thomas Barkley
Private John W. Clark
Private Joseph P. Grunninger
Private Frank Losse
Private Elmer Van Brocklin
Private Samuel E. Cook.
Private Oliver Longway.
Private James McGowan

[63] Regimental Returns, July 1898 to March 1899.

[64] Regimental Returns, March, 1899.

[65] Regimental returns March and April, 1899.

[66] Captain Carpenter, a highly respected officer of the regiment, died at Madison Barracks, N. Y., July 14, 1898, of disease contracted in the line of duty prior to the outbreak of the war.

Digitized by Google

Company C

Sergeant William H. True
Private Charles W. Morrow
Private Melville B. Huffman
Private Richard M. Requa

Company D

Private Myron Cherry
Private Samuel Dumas
Private Charles H. McCutchin

Company E

Corporal Edward Callanan
Private John F. Howard
Private Samuel G Miller

Company F

Private Clifford J. Houghton
Private John Murphy
Private Adison Witcher

Company G

Corporal Clark Spalsburg
Private Frank McGowan
Private John W. Ecker
Private Andrew Thornton

Company H

Musician Willian J. Gough
Private John B. Kane
Private Henry J. Barnes
Private David H. Smith

Company I

Sergeant Frederick Kaiser

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII

PREPARATIONS FOR PHILIPPINES — RECRUITING AND DISCHARGES — EN ROUTE TO SAN FRANCISCO — ON BOARD TRANSPORTS — OFFICERS PRESENT — ARRIVAL AT MANILA — CAPTAIN ROCKEFELLER DISAPPEARS — OUTPOST DUTY — MORONG EXPEDITION — LAWTON'S EXPEDITION INTO CAVITE PROVINCE — ZAPOTE RIVER — JOINS MACARTHUR — AT SAN FERNANDO — ADVANCE FROM SAN FERNANDO — ACTION AT SANTA RITA, PORAC, AND ANGELES — NIGHT ATTACKS — ADVANCE FROM ANGELES — BAMBAN — TARLAC AND OTHER STATIONS — GUERILLA WARFARE — DEATH OF LIEUTENANT KOEHLER — BUILDING ROADS — ORGANIZING SCHOOLS AND CIVIL GOVERNMENT — SURRENDER OF VELASCO AND MACABULOS — MILES OF SCOUTING — SUMMARY OF ARMS CAPTURED — LOSSES IN ACTION, ETC.

II. CAMPAIGNS IN LUZON.

THE Ninth Infantry returned to Madison Barracks, New York, on September 11, 1898, arriving from Montauk Point at 6 P. M. that day.[67]

The authorized organization and strength of the regiment, under the provisions of the Act of Congress, approved April 26, 1898, and General Orders No. 27, Adjutant General's Office, Series 1898, had become 1 Colonel, 1 Lieutenant-Colonel, 2 Majors, 12 Captains, 14 First Lieutenants, 12 Second Lieutenants, and 3 battalions of 4 companies each — the authorized enlisted strength of each company, 106, authorized total of the regiment, 42 officers, 1,277 enlisted men.

The number that actually arrived at Madison Barracks after the Cuban campaign was 18 officers, 363 enlisted men. Eighteen officers and 279 other enlisted men were absent on detached service, with leave, or sick.[68] Of those arriving, 4 officers and about 200 recruits had joined at Montauk Point. The old regiment was therefore merely a nucleus around which to gather the new strength.

The four skeleton companies, I, K, L and M had never been organized except so far as to assign officers and two or three experienced men of the regiment as non-commissioned officers, and the organized companies had never had their complement of men. About 600 men were required to fill these vacancies and, as time disclosed, over 300 more were necessary to take the places of men who were too debilitated by the Cuban campaign to again participate in tropical service.

[67] Post Return, September, 1898.

[68] Consolidated Morning Report, Madison Barracks, Sept. 12, 1898.

Digitized by Google

Special regimental recruiting was instituted at Rochester,[69] Syracuse, and Utica,[70] and the Adjutant-General's Office directed that recruits be sent to the regiment from the general recruiting stations in New England and from New York and Philadelphia. About 400 men were enlisted by the regimental recruiting officers at Madison Barracks, Oswego, Rochester, Syracuse, Utica, and neighboring towns. The others came chiefly from New England. During the five months, October 1898 to February 1899, inclusive, 951 men were received by enlistment, and 87 by re-enlistment.[71] The process of clothing, equipping and training this

[69] Orders No. 87, Series 1898, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

[70] Order No. 89, Series 1898, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

[71] Following is a table of enlistments prepared from regimental records for this period:

Regimental Recruiting in New York State:	
Madison Barracks	55
Fort Ontario, Oswego	17
Rochester	127
Syracuse	127
Utica	55
Auburn	3
Geneva	8
Medina	8
Olean	6
Elmira	6
Hornellsville	1
General Recruiting Service in New England:	
Boston, Mass.	152
Worcester, Mass.	83
Springfield, Mass.	71
Providence, R. I.	40
New Haven, Conn	24
Portland, Me.	18
Fall River, Mass.	17
North Adams, Mass.	2
General Recruiting Service at Large:	
New York City, N. Y.	46
Albany, N. Y.	7
Kingston, N. Y.	16
Philadelphia, Pa	55
Fort Logan, Col.	14
San Francisco, Cal.	13
Mobile, Ala	12
Kansas City, Mo.	12
Cleveland, Ohio	11
Indianapolis, Ind.	8
Los Angeles, Cal.	7
Wilmington, Del.	6
Washington, D. C.	6
Pottsville, Pa.	6
Springfield, Ill	5
Sacramento, Cal.	4
Pittsburg, Pa	4
St. Louis, Mo.	3
Milwaukee, Wis.	3
Galveston, Tex.	2
Warren, Pa., Oil City, Pa., Fort Crook, Neb., Fort Robinson, Neb., Lincoln, Neb., Patterson, N. J., Trenton, N. J., Fort Monroe, Va., Des Moines, Ia., Richmond, Va., Baltimore, Md	1 each

Digitized by Google

large number of men entailed a vast amount of work. Madison Barracks provided inadequate accommodations for the increased strength, and all available space was used as dormitories. The Post Commander, Colonel Powell, reported the necessity for further accommodations,[72] and recommended the construction of temporary buildings. The possibility of hiring buildings in Watertown was also enquired into. Finally one company, Company C, was sent to Fort Ontario at Oswego to regarrison that post, which had been abandoned for several years, the company taking station there on December 19, 1898.

During this period of rehabilitation of the regiment, General Order No. 40, Series 1898, from the Adjutant-General's Office, authorizing the discharge, upon their individual application, of men who had enlisted during the war, caused the discharge of a number of men, some of whom immediately re-enlisted. It was pecuniarily advantageous to the men, even though they fully intended to continue in service, to take their discharge and immediately re-enlist, as they thus secured travel pay to place of former enlistment, and for a new period of six months the higher clothing allowance granted during the first six months of an enlistment.

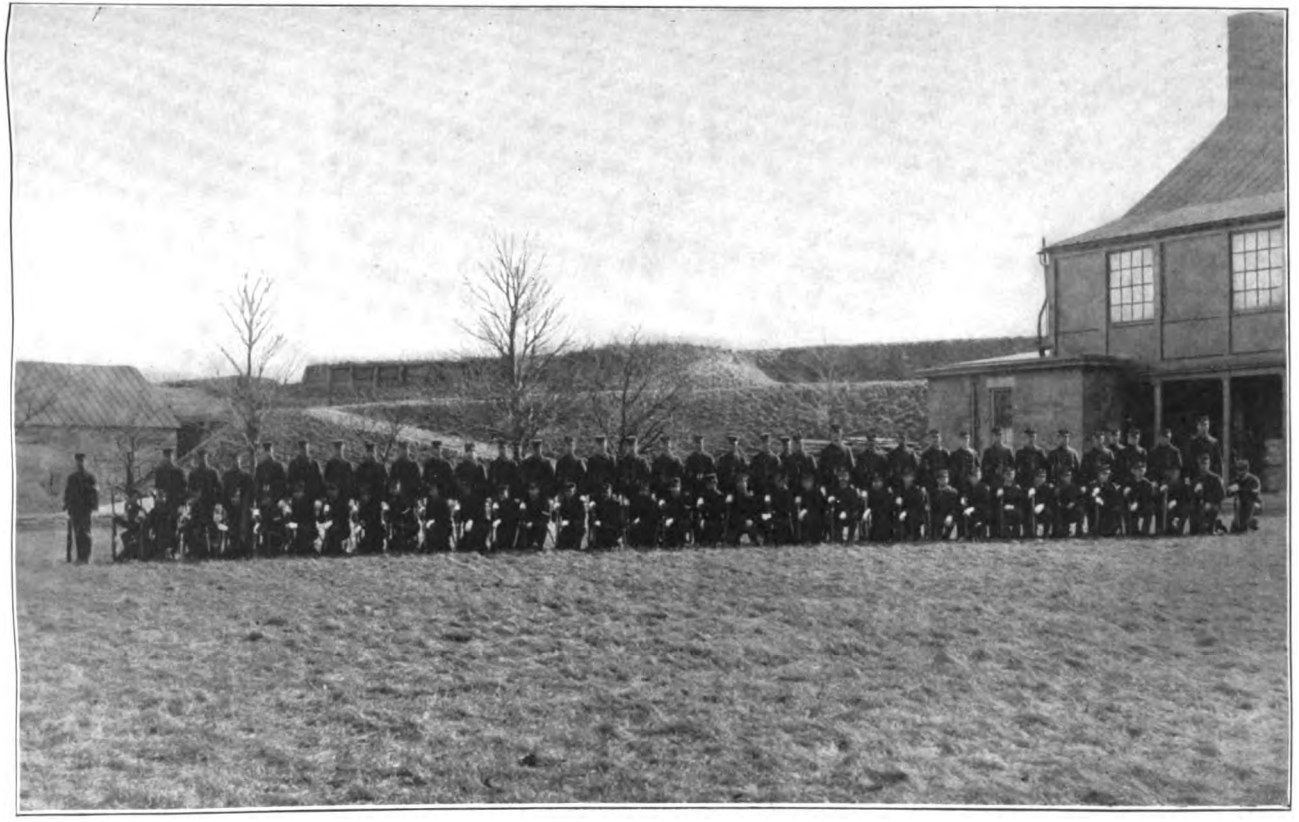
In this period also several officers were ordered to New York City, temporarily, to appear before an examining board for promotion, several were subpœnaed as witnesses before a court of inquiry on the behavior of the Seventy-first New York Volunteers at the Battle of San Juan Hill, and several were called in March, 1898, to Washington to testify before the so-called "Beef Board," which was investigating allegations in respect to the unfitness of certain articles of food during operations in Cuba and Porto Rico.

In the midst of the work with the recruits the news of the outbreak of hostilities between our forces and the Insurgents in the Philippine Islands February 4th, 1899, was received, and the question if the Ninth Infantry would be included in the reinforcement for our army in that distant region became uppermost. The seriousness of the Philippine insurrection was, however, at this time not so apparent as it became a few weeks later, and as six other regiments had already been forwarded to the Philippines, namely the Twentieth and Twenty-second via San Francisco, and the Third, Fourth, Twelfth, and Seventeenth via Suez, the need of more troops was thought to be somewhat remote. The impression that the Ninth Infantry would not be sent soon to the Philippines gained support from a telegram received February 17, 1899,[73] from Headquarters Department of the East, announcing that the regi-

[72] L. S. 301 and 311, Madison Barracks, 1898.

[73] L. R. 307 — 1899, Post (Madison Barracks).

Digitized by Google



Company C, Ninth Infantry. 1899.

Digitized by Google

ment was ordered to the Department of California for permanent change of station, the movement to begin as soon as the regiment was fairly prepared. Two days later the Department Commander desired to be informed on what date the regiment would be ready to move, and March 7, 1899, was set and accepted.[74] On February 25th General Shafter, commanding Department of California, telegraphed for the names of the field officers of the regiment, with a view to making assignments to station,[75] and on February 28th, by Paragraph 7, Special Order No. 49, from Headquarters Department of the East, the regiment, pursuant to instructions from the War Department, was relieved from duty in the Department, and ordered to proceed by rail on March 7, 1899, to stations as follows:

Headquarters, staff, band, and Companies C, G and M to Angel Island.

Companies B, E, F and L to the Presidio of San Francisco, Company H to Alcatraz, Companies D and K to Benicia Barracks, and Companies A and I to Vancouver Barracks.

In accordance with this order the heavy baggage of the companies was promptly packed up, and some of it loaded on cars to go by freight. The first carloads had been forwarded, getting as far as Watertown, when the issuance of General Order No. 35, from Headquarters of the army, March 3, 1899, made a radical change in the destination and future service of the regiment. Therein the Sixth Artillery, Sixth Infantry, Ninth Infantry, Thirteenth Infantry, Sixteenth Infantry, and Twenty-first Infantry were ordered to be put in readiness for service in the Philippines and to move in accordance with instructions to be issued later. The cars at Watertown were recalled, baggage was removed and re-marked, and some of it was held out altogether as information had also been received that the families of officers and enlisted men, most of whom had prepared to go to California, would not be permitted to accompany the troops to the Philippines. The Ninth Infantry was the first of this set of regiments to receive instructions to move, and March 17, 1899, was the date set for departure from Madison Barracks and Fort Ontario. The arrangements made by the Quartermaster's Department with the railroad companies for the transportation of the regiment were very complete and satisfactory. Six trains, of nine or ten cars each, were provided, each company having a car for its heavy baggage and three sleeping-cars, tourist grade, for the men, while an additional baggage-car for each train was devoted to rations and to the

[74] L. R. 347 — 1899, Post (Madison Barracks).

[75] L. R. 344, Post (Madison Barracks).

Digitized by Google

facilities for making coffee and heating the canned components of the travel ration. Two companies were assigned to each train; the trains were to be run through intact to San Francisco. The hours of departure were arranged as follows:

First section, Company H from Madison Barracks at 6:30 A. M., and Company C from Fort Ontario at 8 A. M., uniting at Syracuse.

Second section, Companies A and L at 8:30 A. M.

Third section, Companies F and I at 10:30 A. M.

Fourth section, Companies B and E at 12:30 P. M.

Fifth section, Companies K and D at 2:30 P. M.

Sixth section, Headquarters, Band and Companies G and M at 4:00 P. M.

At almost the last minute changes in the personnel of the regiment were made which caused some confusion, and in individual cases not a little hardship. These changes arose as follows:

On March 10th the Surgeon of the post, under instructions from the post commander, submitted a report in writing as to the physical condition of certain officers who had served in Cuba and were still suffering from malarial fever, and recommended that four, viz., Lieutenants Ramsey, Sigworth, Bookmiller, and Koehler, be assigned to light duty in the United States for six months to fit them for tropical service. This recommendation was forwarded, the post commander concurring, and, later, instructions were received directing that those officers remain at Madison Barracks. One of the officers, Lieutenant Koehler, was Adjutant of the regiment, and another, Lieutenant Ramsey was Quartermaster. The absence of the Adjutant and the Quartermaster at this time, protested against most strenuously by the officers themselves, was a source of considerable inconvenience and confusion. A large quantity of khaki uniform and summer underwear arrived from the Quartermaster's Clothing Depot for issue to the regiment even while the company baggage was being loaded for departure. This was issued to the companies in bulk, and tumbled aboard the trains wherever space could be found without opportunity to check it off or transfer it properly to the new Quartermaster.

On the 16th of March, the day preceding the departure, seventy-four men at Madison Barracks were transferred to the general service in compliance with instructions from Headquarters of the Army, being incapacitated by sickness for tropical service, or being married, or having but a few months to serve before completion of their enlistments. An attempt was made to unload the personal baggage belonging to those men, but in several instances it was impossible to get out their lockers,

Digitized by Google

and the latter were taken on to the Philippines, not being recovered by the men for six months or more. The order for transferring out sick and married men did not reach the Fort Ontario company, and they were taken to San Francisco where several of the sick were left in the General Hospital.

The railroad routes over which the several sections traveled were as follows:

Companies C and H, Captain Noyes commanding; via New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; New York, Chicago and St. Louis to Chicago; Chicago, Rock Island and Pacific to Pueblo; Denver and Rio Grande to Odgen; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Companies A and L, Captain Anderson commanding; via New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; New York, Chicago and St. Louis to Chicago; Chicago, Burlington and Quincy to Denver; Denver and Rio Grande to Odgen; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Companies F and I, Captain McCaleb commanding; via New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; Lake Shore and Michigan Southern to Chicago; Chicago, Milwaukee and St. Paul to Omaha; Union Pacific to Ogden; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Companies B and E, Captain Rockefeller commanding; via New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; Lake Shore and Michigan Southern to Chicago; Chicago and Northwestern to Omaha; Union Pacific to Ogden; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Companies D and K, Captain Baldwin commanding; via New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; Lake Shore and Michigan Southern to Chicago; Chicago, Burlington and Quincy to Omaha; Chicago, Rock Island and Pacific to Denver; Denver and Rio Grande to Odgen; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Headquarters, Band, Companies G and M, Colonel Powell commanding; via New New York Central to Syracuse and Buffalo; Lake Shore and Michigan Southern to Chicago; Chicago and Northwestern to Omaha; Union Pacific to Ogden; Southern Pacific to San Francisco.

Troops could not have been more comfortably transported. The journey occupied about five and a half days, the various sections arriving at Oakland Pier in the afternoon of March 22nd, and during the night 22nd to 23rd, not, however, in the same order in which despatched, the different routes causing slight differences of time on the journey.

Colonel Powell had received, a day or two before departure from Madison Barracks, the order from the Adjutant-General's Office announcing the Act of Congress approved March 2nd, 1899, by which the army was increased and the regimental organization slightly altered, and the

Digitized by Google

General Order of March 9th, 1899, prescribing the strength of regiments. While on the train March 18th, he issued Order No. 62, reorganizing the regiment to meet the law, which now required a third Major, Captains as Adjutant and Quartermaster respectively, a First Lieutenant as Commissary, and a First Lieutenant for each battalion as Adjutant. It also prescribed, in addition to the Non-Commissioned Staff formerly authorized, a Commissary Sergeant and three battalion Sergeant-Majors, and established a band as a separate organization with chief and principal musician, Drum-Major, Sergeants, Corporals, a cook, and privates. Formerly the band had been authorized by regulations and assembled from the companies, but had not been constituted by law a separate organization. Colonel Powell's order honorably relieved Lieutenants Koehler and Ramsey from their offices as Adjutant and Quartermaster, and made the following announcement as to the personnel of the field and staff:

Colonel, William H. Powell
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ezra P. Ewers.
Major—Jesse M. Lee, assigned to First Battalion.
Morris C. Foote, assigned to Second Battalion.
(Vacancy), assigned to Third Battalion.
Adjutant, to be named later.
Quartermaster, to be named later.
Commissary, First Lieutenant John M. Sigworth.
Battalion Staff —
Adjutant First Battalion, First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers.
Adjutant Second Battalion, First Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler.
Adjutant Third Battalion, First Lieutenant Edwin V. Bookmiller.
The companies were assigned to Battalions as follows:
First Battalion, Companies F, G, L and M.
Second Battalion, Companies B, C, E and I.
Third Battalion, Companies K, D, A and H.

and in consequence of the absence of the Majors of the regiment, Captains were assigned to the command of the battalions, — Captain Regan to the First, Captain Rockefeller to the Second, and Captain Raldwin to the Third. Captain Finley, who had but recently been relieved as Quartermaster in consequence of promotion to Captain, was reappointed to that office, under the new law, as soon as the regiment arrived at Oakland. The office of Adjutant was not filled; Lieutenant Rethers acted as Adjutant during the overland journey and Lieutenant Nicklin during the journey to the Philippines. The reorganization order just mentioned was the last formal written order issued by Colonel Powell.

Digitized by Google

His physical infirmities had so far incapacitated him that he concluded to apply for leave of absence and retirement, and his service with the regiment terminated at San Francisco. The command of the regiment then fell to Captain James Regan who was the senior officer present. He proceeded on board the chartered transport City of Puebla with the Headquarters and band, and companies A, F, G, I, L and M. The remaining six companies were assigned to the chartered transport Zealandia, and as the ship was not ready to sail the assigned companies were temporarily quartered at the Presidio and at Angel Island. Just prior to the sailing of the Puebla recruits were sent to the regiment from the Presidio to fill up the companies to 112 men each, under instructions from the Adjutant-General's Office, Washington, but few were sent to the Zealandia companies, probably for the lack of space aboard that ship. The City of Puebla sailed on March 24th, 1899, and the Zealandia on March 28th, Captain Regan commanding on the Puebla and Captain Rockefeller on the Zealandia.

From the regimental returns for March and contemporaneous data the roster of the officers at the time of embarkation is found to have been as follows:

Colonel William H. Powell, absent with leave.

Lieutenant-Colonel Ezra P. Ewers, on detached service as Brigadier-General of Volunteers at San Luis, Cuba.

Major Jesse M. Lee, on detached service at Washington, D. C. (reported in person to the Major-General commanding the army).

Major Morris C. Foote, absent with leave on Surgeon's certificate of disability.

Major (vacancy).

Captain James Regan (Company G), commanding regiment and troops on steamship City of Puebla.

Captain Charles M. Rockefeller (Company B), commanding troops on steamship Zealandia.

Captain John A. Baldwin, commanding Company K, and battalion of three companies on steamship Zealandia.

Captain Edgar B. Robertson (Company E), on detached service as Major and Quartermaster United States Volunteers at Havana, Cuba.

Captain Thomas S. McCaleb, commanding Company F, and a battalion of three companies (F, G, I) on steamship City of Puebla.

Captain George Palmer, commanding Company D, and battalion of three companies on steamship Zealandia.

Captain Frank L. Dodds (Company L), on detached service, Acting Judge Advocate Department of the Gulf.

Digitized by Google

Captain Charles R. Noyes, commanding Company C (steamship Zealandia).

Captain Robert H. Anderson, commanding Company A, and battalion of three companies (A, M, L) on steamship City of Puebla.

Captain George P. Ahern, commanding Company M. (steamship City of Puebla).

Captain Frederick L. Palmer, commanding Company I (steamship City of Puebla).

Captain John P. Finley, Regimental Quartermaster, (steamship City of Puebla).

Captain (vacancy), Regimental Adjutant.

Captain (vacancy), Company H.

First Lieutenant André W. Brewster (Company B), on detached service, Captain and Assistant Quartermaster United States Volunteers, United States Army Transport Burnside.

First Lieutenant Frank De W. Ramsey (Company K), on detached service Madison Barracks, New York, incapacitated for tropical service.

First Lieutenant John M. Sigworth, Regimental Commissary, on detached service at Madison Barracks, New York, incapacitated for tropical service.

First Lieutenant Edwin V. Bookmiller, Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, on detached service at Madison Barracks, New York, incapacitated for tropical service.

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E (steamship Zealandia).

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier (Company D), on detached service, A. D. C. on staff on Brigadier-General Ezra P. Ewers, United States Volunteers, San Luis, Cuba.

First Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates (Company A), commanding Company H (steamship Zealandia).

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, with Company I (steamship City of Puebla).

First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell (Company C), on detached service, A. D. C. on staff of Brigadier-General Henry T. Douglas, United States Volunteers, Havana, Cuba.

First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise (Company H), on detached service, Captain and Assistant Adjutant-General, United States Volunteers, Havana, Cuba.

First Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler, Battalion Adjutant Second Battalion, on detached service at Madison Barracks, New York, incapacitated for tropical service.

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant Thomas F. Dwyer, with Company F (steamship City of Puebla).

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers, Battalion Adjutant First Battalion (steamship Zealandia).

First Lieutenant (vacancy), Company G.

First Lieutenant (vacancy), Company L.

First Lieutenant (vacancy), Company M.

Second Lieutenant Fred L. Munson, with Company I (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant Harold Hammond, with Company C (steamship Zealandia).

Second Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, with Company L (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel, commanding Company B (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant Benjamin P. Nicklin (Company E), Acting Regimental Adjutant (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant William K. Naylor, with Company G (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson, with Company M (steamship City of Puebla).

Second Lieutenant Harry F. Dalton, with Company D (steamship Zealandia).

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, with Company K (steamship Zealandia).

Second Lieutenant (vacancy), Company A.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy), Company F.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy), Company H.

The absence of the field officers, and of all the regimental staff except the Quartermaster, as well as many other officers, left the regiment somewhat handicapped for active service. Commendable zeal was shown, however, by the absent officers to rejoin the regiment, and four succeeded in getting back a few weeks after the arrival at Manila, viz., Lieutenants Ramsey, Frazier, Connell and Wise. Others arrived during the progress of the compaign in succeeding months.

The enlisted strength of the regiment at entering on this tropical service was as follows:

	Present	Absent	Total
N. C. S. and Band (Puebla)	26	0	26
Company A (Puebla)	108	0	108
Company B (Zealandia)	91	3	94

Digitized by Google

	Present	Absent	Total
Company C (Zealandia)	78	20[76]	98
Company D (Zealandia)	96	3	99
Company E (Zealandia)	96	1	97
Company F (Puebla)	107	1	108
Company G (Puebla)	111	1	112
Company H (Zealandia)	95	5	100
Company I (Puebla)	110	0	110
Company K (Zealandia)	94	3	97
Company L (Puebla)	107	2	109
Company M (Puebla)	109	0	109
Total	1,228	39	1,267

The surgeons ordered to accompany the regiment were:

Captain Henry C. Fisher (steamship City of Puebla).

Captain William F. Lewis (steamship Zealandia).

Acting Assistant Surgeon Charles J. Fitzgerald (steamship City of Puebla).

Acting Assistant Surgeon Henry W. Eliot (steamship Zealandia).

A few officers of other regiments, en route to join in the Philippines, were furnished accommodations on the ships by the Quartermaster's Department.

At the hours of sailing there were the usual crowds at the docks, waving a farewell and wishing "bon voyage." A number of tearful wives and sweethearts were there, separating for an unknown period, and by a great distance so that they could hope for no ready assistance in case of need. The Philippines then seemed even out of the world — to cross the Pacific, to go to the farthest corner of the earth, to travel around the globe were the rarest of experiences. Saying good-bye in those days seemed like saying good-bye forever, and the wives in turning from the departing ship knew that for nearly three months no word could come back to them except such letters as might be mailed at Honolulu, and the imagination conjured up numerous vicissitudes of the voyage, and of service in the unknown tropics which brought hearts almost to despair. Happily, in later times, the return of absent ones, and more intimate acquaintance with the conditions in the Philippines by personal experience have removed to a great extent the dread of separation.

The journey to the Philippines was made via Honolulu, where the ships delayed a few days, men and officers having opportunity to visit places of interest and see something of the life of that unique city. The command on the Puebla was supplied with khaki uniform while in

[76] Sixteen absent sick, left at Presidio and Honolulu en route.

Digitized by Google

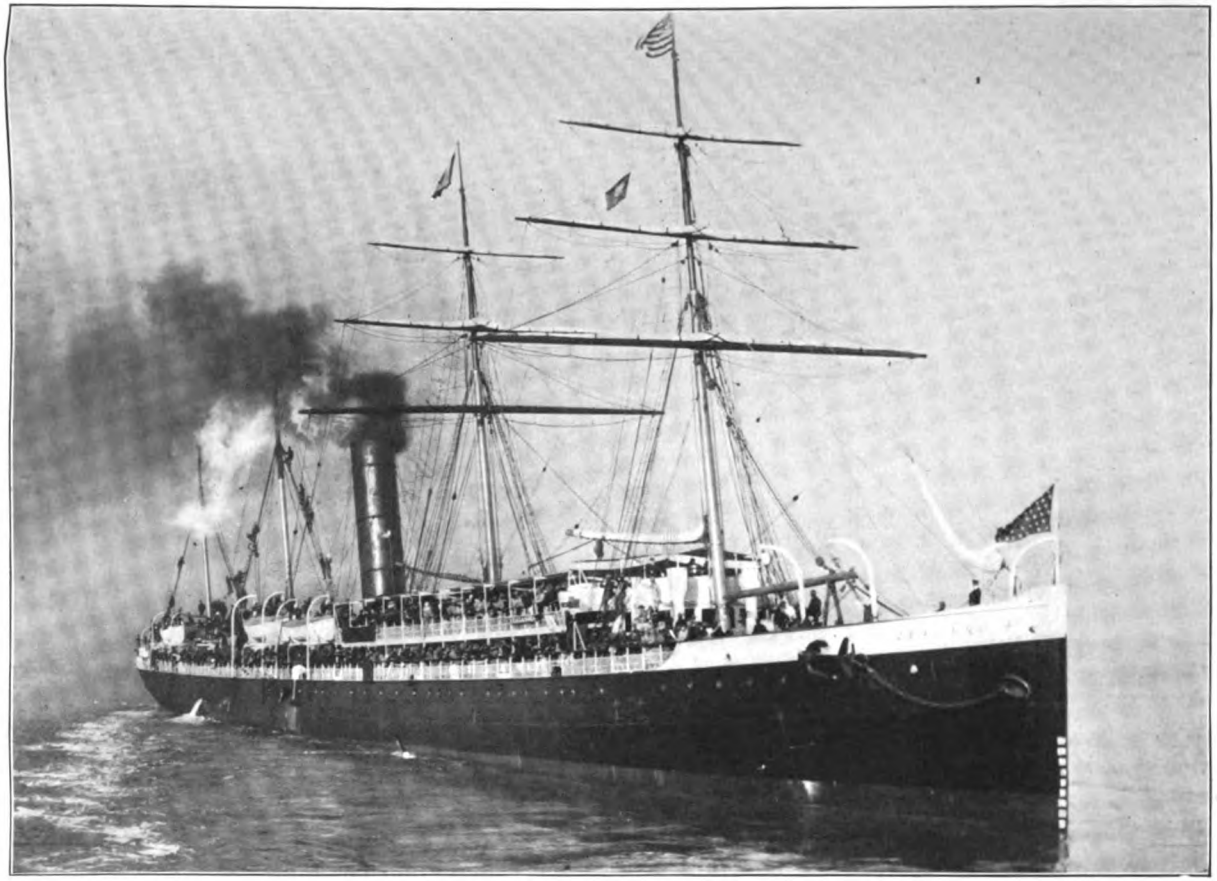
that port, advantage being taken of the delay to bring up the boxes of clothing from the hold of the ship and spread them out on the dock to facilitate the issue. The Zealandia command was unable to accomplish this, not having the clothing at hand. The latter ship found the City of Puebla in port upon arrival and a few careless soldiers who had failed to return to the Puebla in time for her departure from San Francisco, but had boarded the Zealandia, rejoined their companies. Another ship in port was the liner Río de Janeiro, bound for San Francisco. This ship carried letters to the home folks.

The City of Puebla continued her voyage on April 6th, and the Zealandia about noon April 8th. Rough seas were experienced for two or three days after leaving port, as had also been the case leaving San Francisco, but thereafter the sea was smooth, and the voyage in every way a successful one. Much of the time the water was without a ripple, the long, smooth swells giving slow and steady motion to join with the onward movement. Drills and instruction occupied some hours each day, but the monotony of confinement in so limited a space as the decks of a ship, and the warm atmosphere of southern seas, induced idleness of a most languid sort. The view of an active volcano in the midst of the Pacific at the extreme north of the group of islands known as the Ladrones, was the only break in the endless horizon from the time the Hawaiian Islands disappeared, until the northern end of Luzon was sighted sixteen days later.

When finally the bay of Manila was entered every mind was full of expectation as to events and alive with interest in the new surroundings. The first topic of inquiry was the progress of our arms against the insurrection. It was almost expected that in the month which had elapsed since news had been within reach the insurgent army had been surrounded and captured, and Aguinaldo's government broken up and scattered to the winds. But such was not the case. On the other hand, there had been dogged fighting as General MacArthur's Division advanced northward, and the battles from Malolos to Calumpit were being fought on the very day the Ninth Infantry arrived in port. There had been severe losses too; Colonels Egbert and Stotsenburg, Lieutenants Gregg and Krayenbuhl had been killed, and the faithful volunteers who were entitled under their enlistment contract to be returned to the United States had fought valiantly and lost heavily.

The City of Puebla arrived April 23, 1899, and the Zealandia three days later. The troops were immediately disembarked and placed in bivouac on the Luneta camping ground. Some haste in debarkation, which appeared to have been unnecessary, caused companies to be taken

Digitized by Google



Ninth Infantry en route to the Philippines, 1899.

Digitized by Google

ashore without rations or cooking utensils and there was some hardship endured in consequence. The Zealandia got to her anchorage about nine o'clock A. M.; it was two miles to the landing dock; the transfer was to be made in cascos; the commanding officer went ashore to report and returned with instructions to get the troops ashore at once; the cascos would be out in an hour. So they were, and most of the troops were ashore promptly and could have gone into a fight then and there if they had been wanted, but there was no such demand on their services and some of the hungry and loitering soldiers wished that time had been taken on board to get out the mess boxes and rations. Fortunately their comrades of the Puebla were already on the camp ground, and invited them, or some of them at least, to supper, and Brown looked out for the officers. (Who will ever forget Brown's hospitality?) The cascos or the steam launches failed to return to the ship promptly for the two or three companies remaining on board, and by the time they were landed it was dark and the usual downpour of tropical rain drenched them as they came to camp. Shelter tents were put up alongside the others and all slept in the mud and water as best they could, happy however, at being on land again.



Philippine casco unloading the transport. 1899.

On April 26, 1899, in the morning, before the Zealandia companies arrived, the Headquarters and Band, and companies A and I were moved to the Nipa Barracks on the Exposition Grounds in Ermita about a mile from the Luneta, and were put on patrol and guard within the lines, and on an interior line of defence on the south side of the city.

The Zealandia companies were still unprovided with khaki clothing Their blue uniforms were almost unbearable in the tropical heat, and the Quartermaster made great efforts to have his ships unloaded but with out avail. Finally, on the second day, April 28th, he secured the necessary khaki uniform from the Quartermaster's Supply Depot in the

Digitized by Google

city and made his issues as expeditiously as possible, without regard to the exact formalities of method. The blouses were unprovided with buttons, through some eccentricity of the Quartermaster Department, and it was necessary to pin or tie them together as best could be done. In the midst of this operation Captain Regan hastened into camp with orders from General Hughes, Provost Marshal General of Manila, for one battalion to march at five o'clock P. M. to Caloocan, north of the city, about seven miles from camp (General Hall's line) and a second battalion to go to a position on the line up the Pasig River at Pateros, 12 miles distant, facing the enemy on the south side (General Ovenshine's line). Staff officers were to be on hand at that hour to conduct the battalions.[77] Captain Rockefeller was placed in command of the battalion for Caloocan, comprising companies F, G, L and M, and Captain Baldwin of the battalion for the south line, comprising companies B, C, E and K. The former was the first battalion as organized by Colonel Powell's order of March 18th, to which Captain Rockefeller was now assigned, and the latter the second Battalion except that K company was substituted for I, the latter company being on duty at Nipa Barracks, and not being at hand for prompt movement. Captain Baldwin was now assigned to the command of the second battalion and Captain McCaleb to the third.[78] The policy up to this time had been to assign the Captains to battalions according to rank in the order of their number, first, second, and third, and this policy caused the change of Captain Rockefeller from the second to the first and Captain Baldwin from the third to the second, when Captain Regan took command of the regiment. Captain



The cemetery at Caloocan, Philippine Islands, May 29, 1899. This wall was used as a defense in the Battle of Caloocan and was a bloody part of the field.

[77] L. R. 112-1899.

[78] Orders No. 69 and 79, 1899.

Digitized by Google

Regan received an official copy of a telegram from the Adjutant-General upon his arrival at Manila, informing him of his promotion to the grade of Major to fill the original vacancy in the Ninth Infantry, occurring under the law of March 2, 1899, and his command of the regiment was thereafter exercised in the grade of Major.

Companies D and H joined A and I at the Nipa Barracks on the day, April 29, 1899, following the departure of the First and Second Battalions to the firing line. These latter battalions marched out at about the appointed hour, 5 P. M., April 28th, having staff officers to conduct them, and provided with caribou carts to haul the kitchen ranges, field desks, rations and extra ammunition, the men carrying their blanket rolls.



Section of Battery E, First Artillery on left of Company H, Ninth Infantry. Caloocan, Philippine Islands, June 1, 1899.

The First Battalion arrived at Caloocan at about 8:45 P. M., April 28th, and was at once put on the line, relieving outposts of the First California Volunteers, which regiment was withdrawn. Within an hour thereafter Captain Rockefeller, in an effort to inspect the line of outposts, either from confusion due to the darkness, or as a consequence of mental aberration due to the heat and fatigue of the march, disappeared from the command, never to be seen again. His absence first caused uneasiness about midnight, and was reported by Captain George P. Ahern, the senior officer with the first battalion, the following morning. Later a full report of the circumstances was called for by the Regimental Commander and was submitted by Captain George Palmer, who was assigned to the command of the First Battalion May 13, 1899. The report in full is given herewith.

Digitized by Google

SAN FERNANDO, P. I., July 9, 1899.

The Regimental Adjutant, Ninth U. S. Infantry,
San Fernando, P. I.

Sir:

I have the honor to submit the following report relative to the disappearance of Captain Charles M. Rockefeller, Ninth U. S. Infantry, on the night of April 28, 1899.

Late on the afternoon of the day in question the First Battalion, Ninth U. S. Infantry, under command of Captain Rockefeller, and consisting of Companies F (Dwyer), G (Naylor), L (Welborn) and M (Ahern) left the Luneta in Manila and marched to the trenches between La Loma Church and Caloocan, there taking station, relieving the First California Volunteers about 8:45 P. M.

Companies M, L and G were placed on the line consecutively from right to left, and outposts sent out immediately, Company F proceeding a little later to Caloocan.

Such was the state of affairs when about 9:30 P. M. Captain Rockefeller started out to visit the pickets, alone. The start was made from M Company line.

The following statements fix Captain Rockefeller's subsequent movements up to the time of his disappearance:

Private James Barrett, Company M, Ninth Infantry, states:

"I went on guard about 9:00 o'clock. My post was on the left of the ravine, No.—over 200 yards in front of my company. My post consisted of a Corporal and three other men. I was about 20 yards to the left of the other men of my post. Captain Rockefeller came up to visit me about 9:45 P. M. He asked me my orders. I told him. He asked me if my piece was loaded and I told him yes, but not my magazine. He told me to load my magazine. When he left me he turned toward the line of trenches and went in that direction about 50 yards, and the next I knew of him — about ten minutes afterwards — I heard him calling 'picket' four or five times on my right front. From his voice I could tell he was moving. I heard nothing of him after that. I supposed there were other pickets around us. I didn't even know the position of my company in the battalion after being placed in the trenches."

Private Thomas F. Keenan, Company M, Ninth Infantry:

"I was posted on No. 1 between 9 and 10 o'clock. My post was beyond ravine about 200 yards in front of company. I was about 20 yards in front of my Corporal and other men. Captain Rockefeller came there about half an hour after I was posted, from the direction of the trenches. He talked with Corporal Ross and then went back towards

Digitized by Google

the trenches. I heard him again in about 20 minutes talking to Corporal Ross. Then he came to me and asked me if my piece was loaded. I told him no, and he told me to load it and not to go to sleep. Then he started straight in my front calling 'picket.' He began calling when about 50 yards in my front, and continued to call for about ten minutes, when I did not hear him any more. He seemed about 200 yards away when I heard him last. I did not know but there were other pickets out there. I knew that the Fourth Infantry pickets were 150 yards to my right."

Corporal John Ross, Company M, Ninth Infantry:

"I was Corporal of No. 1 post. Was posted soon after arriving on line, relieving First California Volunteer pickets. I was sitting between the two posts, Nos. 1 and 2, when Captain Rockefeller came out about three-quarters of an hour after I was posted. The first I heard of him I heard some one calling 'picket' in my rear. I went over there and challenged. I was answered 'officer.' I advanced him and found it to be Captain Rockefeller. He said something about running against wire and getting tangled up and getting wet. He went in the direction of sentinels, and I began explaining their position. He said that he knew where they were. He then went straight to the front and about ten paces to the left of No. 1. When he got about 200 yards I heard him calling 'picket.' He called about four or five times. I answered him and told him that the Fourth Infantry pickets were more to the right. Saw him when I answered him. There was a longer pause before he called again, but he did call three or four times afterwards, and seemed to be continuing in the same direction. I supposed that he had turned towards La Loma Church which was in the center of the Fourth Infantry line. It was a very clear night, and I could see quite a distance."

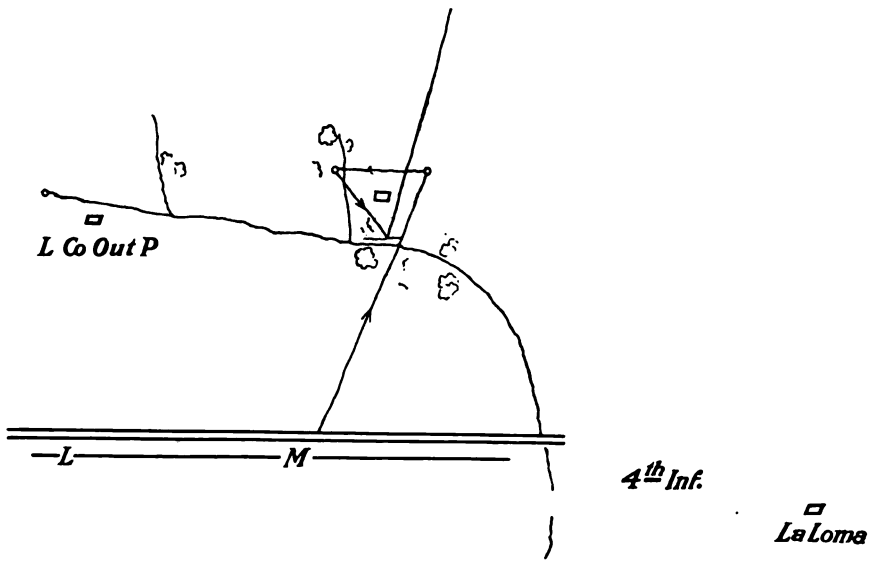
Corporal William E. Lyman, Company M, Ninth Infantry:

"I was on outpost duty that night. Shortly after we were posted Captain Rockefeller came around to visit pickets. I was sleeping with the other Corporals, and the first I knew of Captain Rockefeller was Corporal Ross challenging him from the rear. He talked to Corporal Ross and then visited No. 1, and then went back towards camp, and after about fifteen minutes returned again. I heard him talking to Corporal Ross about the barbed-wire fence and other things. He then started straight to the front across our picket line, and when about 100 yards in front began to call 'picket.' Corporal Ross answered him and told him that the M Company pickets are here. I did not hear him answer Corporal Ross. I heard him call several times after Corporal Ross answered him. It was not a very clear night, but could distinguish a man moving a hundred yards away."

Digitized by Google

Sergeant George M. Gumry, Company M, Ninth Infantry:

"I was Sergeant of the guard. After I posted the pickets and was coming back I met Captain Rockefeller, who called me to him and asked me if I was Sergeant of the guard, and to show him the location of the pickets and asked me to go with him and show him. I showed him picket No. 1 and told him that was the right picket of our battalion. He said very well; then I said, shall I show you picket No. 2? He said never mind, I can find them myself. I waited until he got through with picket No. 1. After that he went towards No. 2 calling 'Picket' several times. I then went back to my company. It was rather a cloudy night, and I could not see a man more than twenty paces away."



The above, from a sketch of the ground made by Lieutenant Welborn, shows the route traveled by Captain Rockefeller from the time he left M company line to visit the pickets until he passed beyond our lines. Captain Rockefeller, not having returned after a reasonable time, Captain Ahern, the next in command, sent to the Fourth Infantry to ascertain if Captain Rockefeller had gone there. Their outposts knew nothing about him. A patrol was then sent out by the Fourth Infantry (they being familiar with the ground), but nothing was seen or heard of him.

Early the next morning two companies were sent to the front in line of skirmishers, and the country thoroughly searched for a distance of two miles; men were required to wade through every hole of water,

Digitized by Google

and every place that could possibly conceal the body of a man, was examined. No trace whatever was found. Later in the day another search was made and continued for about four miles to the front. At a distance of about one and a half to two miles from our lines, and near a small pit, a small piece of paper was found bearing his name, date, size of hat, and two Spanish words relating to the hat. It proved to be a slip of paper from a hat which he had recently purchased in Manila. No further trace was found.

It is the opinion of some that Captain Rockefeller was more or less affected by the intense heat of the afternoon, and the fatigue of the march from the Luneta — he having walked the entire distance.

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEORGE PALMER,
Captain Ninth Infantry,
Commanding First Battalion.

This untoward event cast a gloom over the regiment. Hopes were cherished for a long time that insurgent officers and soldiers rather than irresponsible persons were his captors and that in due time he would be returned to our lines. No authoritative information was ever received of him, however, although reports were sometimes made by returned captives of having seen his name, or some trace of him, in insurgent localities. His promotion as Major dated March 16, 1899, and he was assigned to the Sixth Infantry, but at the date of his disappearance, April 28, 1899, information of the promotion had not been received and he was still borne on the rolls of the Ninth Infantry.

The Second Battalion arrived at Pateros between one and two o'clock A. M., April 29th, after a twelve-mile march, and relieved companies of the First Washington Volunteers which then took their position at Taguig and Pasig. The experiences of this battalion in their first day on the firing line were also doleful. The town of Pateros had been burned during the events which led to its capture a few weeks previous, and the inhabitants had fled. The enemy's lines were a mile to the south, and the dogs and pigs and chickens, which had been left by the fleeing inhabitants, and then chased out of town by the incoming soldiers, were scattered about in the bamboo thickets and the rice paddies between the lines. Their noise and obscured movements induced undue agitation among the outposts and led to firing, both in the afternoon and during the night, with tragic results. Extracts from the report of Captain Baldwin on these events are quoted:

"On the afternoon of April 29, 1899, the outposts reported that they had fired on some insurgents, in the bamboo thicket across the river,

Digitized by Google

wounding two. I ordered Lieutenant Schoeffel with Company B, Ninth Infantry, to cross the river and drive out any enemy there and bring in any wounded. Lieutenant Schoeffel swam the river, followed by a large number of his company. The river is deep and current is quite swift, but not very wide. Some ten men who could not swim proceeded to cross on a raft, which, when in midstream, swamped. Corporal William L. Higgins and Private Harris W. Mallory were drowned. These men lost their lives in the discharge of duty....

"On the evening of April 29, 1899, while Company C, Ninth Infantry, was on the firing line on the river, engaged in repelling what at the time was believed to be an attack, Private James Lynch, Company C, Ninth Infantry, was wounded in the abdomen. He afterwards died at First Reserve Hospital. Subsequent investigations and conclusions justifies the belief and statement that he was wounded from a cross-fire from one of the other companies. A patrol was out at the time of the firing, and being fired on by Company E, Ninth Infantry, returned the fire and it is possible that in this way Private Lynch was wounded."

The battalion at Pateros continued its outpost duty until June 8th, the battalion at Caloocan until May 14th, and a portion of that command for a month longer; the battalion at Nipa Barracks was intact until May 7th, when companies A and I were sent to join the Third Battalion at Caloocan, and the remaining two companies, D and H, left on May 14th. Headquarters and the Band remained at Nipa Barracks until June 17th. On May 19th Major Regan appointed Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant of the regiment, and he went from Pateros to Manila to assume the duties on May 22nd.

During this period the Quartermaster had succeeded in getting the regimental baggage unloaded from the transports and stored. The only available place for storage at the time was the casements along the river front in the walled city, a very damp and unsatisfactory place, but the best that could be obtained. Tentage, clothing, books, records, and all the heavy baggage were put there, being drenched with rain in the process. Much of the baggage was damaged in consequence, and some ruined. Many things were lost, responsible men of the several companies not being available to look after their property. This was a common experience of other regiments arriving about that time, the multifarious duties of Quartermasters in supplying commands on the firing line giving little opportunity to care for the baggage at the rear. It was unfortunate that the heavy baggage of commands was carried to the Philippines at all, but in those early days the general supposition was that the insurrection would not last long and the

Digitized by Google

regiments would soon enter on the usual garrison life and require all their baggage.

General Orders of June 1, 1899, from Headquarters Department of the Pacific and Eight Army Corps, assigned the regiment to the First Division, General Lawton, and his order of June 7th assigned it to the Third Brigade, being united with the Twenty-first Infantry, First Colorado Volunteer Infantry and First Wyoming Volunteer Infantry. This assignment was nominal, however, the service of the battalions being in other commands, and was annulled about ten days later, when the regiment went to the Second Division.

Portions of the regiment took part in three expeditions in May and June, 1899, prior to the transfer of the regiment to the Second Division. They were General (then Major) Kobbe's Expedition to Arayat, the Morong Expedition, and the Advance on the south line from San Pedro Macati, on June 10, 1899.

Major Kobbe's Expedition was made in May, 1899. He was given command of a column comprising Light Battery E, First Artillery, the Seventeenth United States Infantry, and one battalion (Third Battalion, Companies A, D, H and I), Ninth Infantry. It was mobilized at Calumpit, and marched to Arayat, meeting General Lawton's Command as the latter returned from San Isidro.

Companies A and I, having gone to the Ninth Infantry line near Caloocan on May 7th, were moved to the railroad station at Caloocan on May 14th, from there to the Bagbag River by rail on the 15th, and thence by marching to Calumpit. Companies D and H were sent from the Nipa Barracks, Manila, by train, to the Bagbag River, and thence by marching to Calumpit on May 14th. The battalion was thus united there on the 15th. Captain McCaleb was in command.

The expedition marched from Calumpit May 17, 1899, encountered the enemy at San Luis at 2:00 P. M., and was under fire for about an hour, the enemy making slight opposition. It then continued via Candaba to Arayat, where it arrived May 21st, meeting General Lawton's column. Rations were sent up the Rio Grande under the protection of this column for General Lawton's command, but the latter had foraged on the country so successfully that nothing was needed. The return march was made at once to Calumpit, and from there the battalion was sent back to Caloocan by rail, arriving May 27th.

The daily marches from Calumpit to Arayat and return were as follows:

May 17th, Calumpit to San Luis, about twelve miles.

May 18, San Luis to Candaba, about eight miles.

Digitized by Google

May 21st, Candaba to Arayat, about nine miles.
May 22nd, Arayat to Candaba, about nine miles.
May 24th, Candaba to Apalit, about seventeen miles.
May 25th, Apalit to Calumpit, about three miles.

The expedition accomplished no important results. It appears to have been originated by the Department Commander to fulfil his intention to have a column from the Second Division co-operate with General Lawton's command, but the latter was able to meet successfully, without assistance, all conditions that came up.

An occasion arose at Candaba for a display of heroism by three men in saving the life of a fourth who had fallen into the river and would have been drowned but for the efforts of his comrades. Lieutenant Yates recommended the men for certificates of merit in a letter of which the following is an extract:

"Private Cotton (Company H), while washing his clothes, slipped and fell at a most dangerous point of the stream. Unable to swim, and caught by the under current, he was carried beneath the surface. Private Olm, fully dressed, and aware of the danger, immediately jumped in after him, and, seized by the throat, was also carried under.

Corporal Lavier, also fully dressed, followed, and his struggles also becoming desperate, was also followed by Sergeant Gorman, Company D. The combined efforts of the three men resulted in the saving of all four lives, and while Private Olm has been recommended for promotion to Corporal, I believe that the other two are deserving of certificates of merit."

Following is a list of the Ninth Infantry officers on this expedition:

Captain McCaleb	Captain Anderson
Captain Frederick L. Palmer	Lieutenant Yates
Lieutenant Lawton	Lieutenant Munson
Lieutenant Nicklin	Lieutenant Dalton

The Morong Expedition took place in the first week of June, 1899.

The following account of the expedition was written by Captain Hugh D. Wise, Ninth Infantry, who participated in it, as a First Lieutenant, commanding Company H:

"General Lawton's Expedition to the Province of Morong, while not conspicuous for its importance nor remarkable for any great amount of hard or brilliant fighting, is nevertheless a striking example of the tremendous will and persistence of the American soldier, and of his wonderful physical power and endurance, also as an example of the great mobility and wariness of the insurgents. On these accounts it is of

Digitized by Google

much more importance, and its record of far greater value than other considerations would indicate.

For some time previous to the formation of this expedition the insurgent, General Pio del Pilar, one of the most clever and skilful, and one of the best fighters of the insurgent leaders, had been causing considerable trouble in the territory in the vicinity of Manila and Laguna de Bay. His force was estimated variably from two thousand to five thousand armed men, in addition to a much larger force of men armed only with hand weapons.

The purpose of this expedition was to drive the insurgents from the towns of Cainta, Taytay and Antipolo into the Morong Peninsula and then either capturing or destroying them.[79] The general plan of the expedition was to attack the insurgents at these places mentioned, and to force them into the Morong Peninsular where they were to be assailed by a force which would be landed below them, and advanced on their rear, from the South, while they were still being pressed from the North by the original attacking force.[80] The army gunboats on the Laguna de Bay were to co-operate by protecting the landing of troops and by shelling the insurgent works where accessible. Two columns were organized for the expedition. Brigadier General Robert H. Hall's column consisted of Troop I, Fourth United States Cavalry (mounted), one squadron of Fourth United States Cavalry (dismounted), two battalions of Fourth United States Infantry, one battalion of the Ninth United States Infantry, six companies of the First Colorado Volunteer Infantry, eleven companies of the Second Oregon Volunteer Infantry, one battalion of the Wyoming Volunteer Infantry, a provisional battery of mountain artillery. Total strength of this column, 102 officers and 2,474 men. Colonel Wholley's column consisted of the First North Dakota Volunteer Infantry, eight companies of the First Washington Volunteer Infantry, one battalion of the Twelfth United States Infantry, one platoon of Light Battery D, Sixth United States Artillery.

General Hall's column assembled near the Pumping Station the night of June 2nd. Colonel Wholley's column assembled at Pasig. The morning of June 3rd, Hall's column advanced across the Mariquina Valley, encountered the insurgents and began pressing them back toward the Morong Peninsular. The afternoon of the same day Wholley's column advanced on Cainta and took it. The eight companies of the Washington Regiment were then withdrawn and marched to Pasig where they were embarked for Morong, which place they took the morning of June

[79] Report of the War Dept., 1899, vol. 1, part 5, p. 289.
[80] Report of the War Dept., 1899, vol. i, part 5, p. 293.

Digitized by Google

4th. Hall's column met resistance in the mountains near Taytay. The morning of June 4th it entered Antipolo with little resistance. It then marched toward Morong. The other column, now under Lieutenant Colonel Truemann, First North Dakota Volunteer Infantry, marched toward the same place via west side of the peninsular. Hall's column bivouacked at Teresa that night, and arrived in Morong about 11 A. M. the morning of June 5th. June 6th the column moved towards Binangonan, leaving the dismounted squadron of the Fourth Cavalry as garrison in Morong. At Binangonan the two columns met. June 7th they moved back through Taytay and Cainta and returned to their former positions.

To give in detail the part taken by the battalion of the Ninth Infantry it has been necessary to give first the general description of the expedition and then what now follows:

May 31st, Captain T. S. McCaleb, commanding the two battalions on the line at Caloocan, received orders to send four companies to the 'deposito' at dark, June 2nd, to join the force that would move the following morning against the insurgents under Pilar. Captain McCaleb obtained permission to personally command this battalion. Two companies were selected from each battalion on the line, leaving the others to extend their lines and cover the front thus vacated.

Company A, First Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates, Company F, Second Lieutenant Thomas F. Dwyer, Company G, First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell, and Company H, First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise, were selected. First Lieutenant B. P. Nicklin, Fourth Infantry, Battalion Adjutant, First Lieutenant W. K. Naylor, Eighteenth Infantry Battalion Quartermaster (both these officers had just received their promotion orders but, notwithstanding, accompanied the expedition). The provisional battalion's strength was 8 officers and 360 men.

Utmost secrecy was imposed and no one except the officers was notified until after supper, June 2nd. The battalion was formed just before dark, and marched from camp, leaving tents standing. Pursuant to instructions the men carried only canteens, one meal in haversack, and two hundred rounds of ammunition. Not even blankets or ponchos were allowed. Three days' rations and ammunition followed in wagons.

A circuitous route, skirting the city of Manila, was taken, the battalion arriving about one A. M., June 3rd, at the rendezvous between the 'deposito' and the Pumping Station. Here arms were stacked and the men lay down behind the stacks. The command was awakened without trumpets at about three A. M., and about half an hour later moved forward. The Ninth Infantry battalion was rear guard for the column.

Digitized by Google

About daylight the column crossed the Mariquina River and debouched through a defile upon the plain near Santalan.

The head of the column halted in the middle of this plain and the brigade formed in mass, facing north. The troop of mounted cavalry trotted forward and skirted the border of the plain, reconnoitering. This continued for several hours and, in the meantime, the brigade sat in the rice paddies under the terrific heat of the sun. Much time was lost trying to find a crossing over some ravines, and still more before boards were gotten forward to make a crossing. In the meantime the troops, exposed to the hot sun, suffered tortures. At about half past eleven, while trying to effect the crossing, the head of the column was fired on. The Brigade changed front to the east. The dismounted squadron of the Fourth Cavalry and the Oregon Regiment were deployed forward. The mountain battery, which had succeeded in crossing the ravine, went into action and the rest of the brigade, in support, drew up closer. The Fourth Infantry battalions were moved forward and to the right. At first the firing was sharp on both sides but the insurgents did not make the stand that they should have made in their splendid position on the hill above us. After a fight of about ten minutes they broke and ran before our advance line as it forced its way steadily up the hill towards them.

Various estimates were made as to the number of insurgents in this skirmish. Of these probably the more conservative, which placed their number at from 500 to 700, would be the safest. The retreating insurgents fled along the crest of the ridge towards the south. The organizations were at once assembled and pushed forward in pursuit. The Ninth Infantry battalion was relieved from duty as rear guard, and moved up toward the head of the column, and was assigned the duty of guarding and helping forward Hawthorne's Mountain Battery. The column pressed forward over the trail in pursuit at the fastest possible rate. The trail lay through the mountains, and was rough, hilly, and cut across by numerous deep cuts and ravines. It was a fearfully hot day, and the troops had practically no rest. Nevertheless they never slackened the pace, apparently forgetting their fatigue and the heat in their eagerness in the pursuit of the enemy. While during most of the day there was a more or less desultory resistance to the advance, and a consequent inconsiderable running fight along the trail, there was no stand of any consequence made by the enemy until about 5 o'clock. At about this time the head of the column arrived at a point where the trail led through a narrow cut which opened upon a clear knoll surrounded by hills that commanded it. Upon these hills, within easy range of the

Digitized by Google

exit of the cut, the insurgents had taken their position, and, as the point of the advance guard emerged from the defile, it found itself in a veritable hornet's nest. The roughness of the ground and the dense jungle made it so that the only practicable way to attack the insurgent position was to rush the troops through the defile, in column, and to deploy in the open in plain view of them. A sharp fight took place here, in which the Fourth Cavalry squadron and the Oregon Regiment played the principal part. While it was going on, and while the Ninth Infantry battalion was waiting to get through the defile, which was congested with the troops ahead of it, Lieutenant Hawthorne went into action with his battery on a little projecting spur to the right of the trail, from which position he could see the enemy ahead. Companies A and G had passed this point, Company H was just passing it, and Company E had not reached it when a body of the insurgents, hitherto unseen, to the left and rear of the battery, opened a hot fire upon it. Lieutenant Wise moved his company at once to the rear, and deployed to the right and opened fire. Lieutenant Connell, seeing this, conformed to the movement. The battalion commander hurried back from the head of the battalion, and, seeing the situation, directed the two companies to assault the hill on which the insurgents were in position. The assault was made and the hill carried, after which the companies were assembled and again took their places in the column, the advance of which was still blocked by the congestion in the cut. The bivouac that night was on the scene of the fight. The men were suffering greatly from fatigue and hunger, and there was no supper that night.

At 5 A. M. the next morning, June 4th, the advance was resumed. Soon after starting a considerable force of the enemy was discovered in the front, and the column was deployed and moved toward Antipolo, where stiff resistance was expected. The line was so disposed as to concentrate upon Antipolo as a center. This advance in line, over rough, jungled hills, would have been most laborious and exhausting even for fresh troops, but for these men, weary and weak from lack of food, it was truly wonderful. This day was as hot as the preceding day. Nothing but the indomitable will of the American soldier carried that line forward. The town was entered without resistance, Pilar with his force having evacuated it. The column was again formed, and took up the march towards Taytay, but, when near that place, the other column (Colonel Truemann's) was met, it having entered Taytay and passed through it without resistance. The column was halted here, and, the wagons having come through Taytay, rations were issued, and time was given to make coffee. About 3 P. M. Hall's column took up the march

Digitized by Google

back through Antipolo and thence to Teresa, where it arrived and went into bivouac, about 7 P. M., in a rice-field. The insurgent force, which it was expected would be encountered at Teresa, had also fled. The morning of June 5th the march was resumed toward Morong, which place was reached, without opposition en route, at about 11:30 A. M., and found the First Washington Volunteers in possession of the town, they having been landed from boats on the lake, and taken the town the day before. At Morong the troops were cantonned in native houses, and given an opportunity to rest. The next morning, June 6th, rations were received by cascoes from Manila, and the march was taken up toward Binangonan. The sick and disabled, of whom there were now a large number, were sent in to Manila on the cascoes. It was a frightfully hot day, and men dropped out by scores all along the route. The bivouac was made that night in a rice-field at Binangonan. It rained hard that night, and it was a weary night for the troops who had neither blankets nor ponchos.

Our bedraggled column started at daybreak for Angona, where it was hoped to meet the enemy in considerable force. At that place the insurgents had mounted in emplacements on the shore one or two large breech-loading guns that they had taken from the wrecks of the Spanish warships in Manila Bay. These guns had been a menace to our little lake gunboats, and one of them, a few days before, had hit the Napindan. It was expected that the insurgents would make a stout fight to protect them, but he had other ideas about the safety of his guns, so he hid the guns and skipped out.

The Ninth Infantry battalion was advance guard with the mounted cavalry troop ahead. Upon approaching Angona every precaution was taken and preparation was made for the fight, but, when we entered the place, nothing of the enemy was found except his abandoned entrenchments — once more he had given us the slip. An hour or so was consumed in hunting for the guns and destroying the emplacements. The march was resumed, and, passing through Taytay, we completed the loop, arriving at Santalan about half past one o'clock. The next morning our battalion returned to its position on the lines at Caloocan, weary, footsore, and with the most perfect confidence in the insurgent's ability to take care of themselves by keeping out of danger's way."

The expedition into Cavite Province June 10-22, 1899, starting from San Pedro Macati, under the command of Major-General Henry W. Lawton, U. S. Volunteers, was participated in by two battalions of the regiment commanded by Captain John A. Baldwin, Ninth Infantry. The affairs of the regiment, in the way of supplies, etc., were at this time administered from Nipa Barracks, Manila. General Otis, in his

Digitized by Google

report of August 31, 1899, to the Adjutant-General of the army, thus stated the necessity for, and the purpose of the expedition:

"The enemy had become again boldly demonstrative at the south, and it became necessary to throw him back once more. He had entrenched himself very strongly in the vicinity of Paranaque and near Taguig, also in front of San Pedro Macati, the center of our line. On June 7th General Lawton was instructed to concentrate a force of 4,000 men, approximately, in the vicinity of the last-named town, to be placed under the immediate supervision of Generals Wheaton and Ovenshine, move the same to the front and center in two columns, disperse the enemy in the immediate front, and then, swinging these columns to the right and left, place them in rear, if possible, of his strong positions on our flanks."

The purpose of enveloping the enemy's flanks, after piercing the center of his position, was unsuccessful. Combats at various parts of the line finally resulted in an advance of the whole command towards the right, on Paranaque, instead, followed, on June 13th, by the battles at Zapote River, and operations further south from there. The following account of the part taken by the Ninth Infantry in this campaign was written by Captain Frederick L. Palmer, Ninth Infantry, who participated in the expedition:

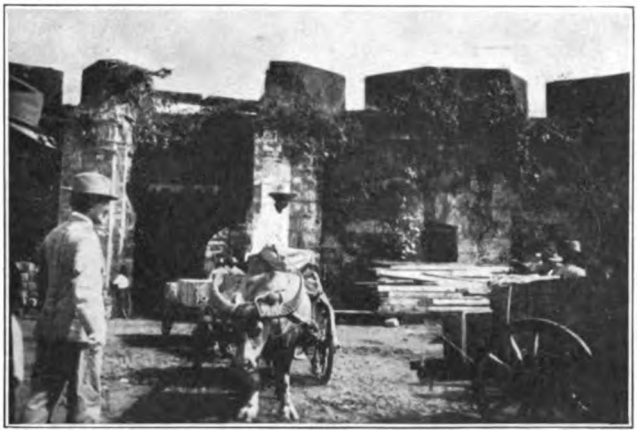
"On June 8, 1899, Captain T. S. McCaleb, Ninth Infantry, commanding the camp of two battalions of the Ninth Infantry at Caloocan, near Manila, P. I., was ordered to send one battalion of these companies, via Manila, to join an expedition under Major-General H. W. Lawton, U. S. Volunteers, for special service. The companies designated for this duty by Captain McCaleb were D, I, L, and M, the other companies present, A, F, G, and H, having just returned from the expedition, under General Hall, to Morong Province. This battalion, although a provisional battalion, of which two companies were from the First, and the other two from the Third Battalions of the Ninth Infantry, was, on account of the relative rank of its commander after junction with the other battalion to take part in this expedition, officially designated as the First Battalion, in the report rendered of its operations.

Captain George Palmer, commanding the First Battalion of the regiment, was designated to command this battalion. The tentage of the companies was ordered to be left standing at Caloocan, and all property except rations, necessary cooking utensils, and a few tools, besides the equipment carried by the men, was ordered left in camp under charge of the sick and a guard left there for the purpose. The men carried on their persons the rifle, belt with 100 rounds of cartridges, and

Digitized by Google

a poncho, besides the haversack and mess kit, and canteen; 100 rounds of ammunition were also carried by each man in his haversack. Such property as was taken, rations, etc., was loaded on carts drawn by caribou driven by Chinese.

The battalion left Caloocan at about 6 o'clock P. M., and, delighted at the change from the inaction of the camp, and at the prospect of "active service," marched gaily along, with songs, jokes, and general hilarity of spirit. About 8 o'clock P. M. the battalion arrived at Nipa Barracks, Malate, Manila, the headquarters of the regiment, where it remained for the night, camping in the vacant barracks there.



Buffalo cart at the landing on the Pasig.

At about 6:30 o'clock A. M., on the 9th, the battalion marched for San Pedro Macati, where it arrived at about 8 o'clock A. M. and bivouacked for the day. It was there joined by the Second Battalion of the regiment, from Pateros, under command of Captain John A. Baldwin, Ninth Infantry, who, as the senior officer present, was assigned to command of the two battalions, and Captain George P. Ahern, Ninth Infantry, was placed in command of the Second Battalion, formerly Baldwin's.

The troops assembled at San Pedro Macati for this expedition were under command of Major General H. W. Lawton, U. S. Volunteers, who organized them into two provisional brigades, of which the First consisted of the two battalions (8 companies) of the Ninth Infantry, 8 companies of the Twenty-first Infantry, 6 companies of the First Colorado Volunteer Regiment of Infantry, Troop A (dismounted) of the Nevada Volunteer Cavalry, and the detachments of artillery, giving a total strength of about 2,000 men for the brigade, which was under command of Brigadier-General Loyd Wheaton, U. S. Volunteers.

As other forms of transportation were considered impracticable, Chinese "coolies" had been authorized by the Commanding General

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

and 53 were attached to the battalions of the Ninth Infantry, 6 being assigned to each company as "burden" and "litter" bearers, the remaining 5 being for use of the Hospital Corps. All supplies, utensils, etc., which had been brought and which could not be carried by the bearers, were left here under charge of the Company Quartermaster Sergeants, and such men as were found to be in such physical condition as to unfit them to accompany their companies.

The day passed pleasantly in the necessary preparations for the morrow, and in renewing acquaintances with old friends found, by both officers and men, among the 4,000 troops gathered here. All sought rest early, as the march was to begin at 5 o'clock next morning. But due to a long and heavy rain during the night, and to the absence of protection therefrom, not much refreshing rest could be obtained.

The battalions of the Ninth Infantry, as formed about 4:30 o'clock A. M. on the 9th of June, consisted of 15 line and two medical officers attached, with 673 enlisted men, a detachment of 7 men of the Hospital Corps, and the 53 "coolies" before mentioned, as follows:

Captain John A. Baldwin, Ninth Infantry, commanding the First and Second Battalions, Ninth Infantry, in the field.

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, Ninth Infantry, Acting Adjutant.

FIRST BATTALION

Captain George Palmer, Ninth Infantry, commanding, with 330 enlisted men.

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers, Ninth Infantry, Acting Battalion Adjutant.

Company I, commanded by Captain Frederick L. Palmer, Ninth Infantry.

Company L, commanded by First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, Ninth Infantry.

Company M, commanded by Second Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson, Ninth Infantry.

Company D, commanded by Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr., Ninth Infantry.

First Lieutenant and Assistant Surgeon Edward W. Pinkham, U. S. A., attached.

SECOND BATTALION

Captain George P. Ahern, Ninth Infantry, commanding, with 343 enlisted men.

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, Ninth Infantry, Acting Battalion Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

Company C, commanded by Captain Frank De W. Ramsey, Ninth Infantry, First Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel, Ninth Infantry.

Company E, commanded by First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel, Ninth Infantry.

Company B, commanded by First Lieutenant Fred L. Munson, Ninth Infantry.

Company K, commanded by First Lieutenant Harold Hammond, Ninth Infantry,

Acting Assistant Surgeon Henry W. Eliot, Contract Surgeon, attached.

The march was taken up about 5 o'clock A. M., and was eastward, about a mile, to Guadaloupe Church, thence south. Due to the length of the column the march was slow, and events taking place in front were not visible to those in rear. At about 7 o'clock the battalions of the Ninth Infantry were halted beside the road to allow troops in rear (the Second Brigade) to pass on, presumably to their positions in the line about to be formed, as already firing of the scouts in advance could be heard. At this time it was noticed that the Thirteenth Infantry was equipped with the khaki blouses, and carried a heavy blanket roll, containing shelter half, poles, pins, etc., in marked contrast to the men of the Ninth Infantry, who wore the dark blue flannel shirt without blouse, and carried, for the purpose of shelter, only the poncho. Yet, as was discovered very shortly afterward, even this was too great a weight for the soldier to carry in the scorching sun, already beginning to make itself felt; for, with the two days' rations and 100 rounds of ammunition in the haversacks, besides rifle, belt and cartridges, canteens, etc., each man of the Ninth Infantry was carrying about 30 pounds, too much to struggle along and fight with over the uneven country, and through the tall, wiry, tangled grass which covered this tract, well called "El Desierto."

About 7:30 A. M. the march was resumed, the Second (Ahern's) Battalion in the lead, following the artillery, which was preceded by the First Colorado Regiment. Soon the march was turned off towards the left, and led over ridges, gullies, on mere trails or through the grass, and, with the increasing heat of the sun, began to tell on the men, who were, however, inspired by the sound of the firing to their front and right front, to a desire to themselves get into action, now seemingly beginning in earnest. Soon after skirmish line was formed, and advanced for some distance. But the insurgents gave way before the fire of the Colorados, aided by the artillery, and column was again formed as easier for marching, and the advance was continued.

Digitized by Google

try
ıad
ı in
ıey
ing
,nd
to
to
: it
ın,
ire
ıge
ıg,
ed.
f a
'ge
.d)
ile
he

.y,
ıd
:rs
ed
y,
en
ed
on
ed
t,
rs
.h
ıe
d
es

..
e
s-
t-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The greater part of the men in the companies of the Ninth Infantry at this time were men in their first enlistment; and, although they had been in Luzon for about six weeks at this time, few, if any, had been in any serious action. It was, therefore, with mingled feelings that they listened, as they plodded along on their hard march, to the increasing firing in the front, saw the dead Filipinos in the trenches passed, and witnessed their wounded comrades being brought by on their way to the hospitals in rear. While this acted perhaps to sober them, and to bring on a sort of realization of the seriousness of the occasion, yet it also acted as a tonic to make them forget the fatigue, the scorching sun, the emptiness of their canteens, and to inspire them with a fierce desire to get into position to aid in crushing the enemy and extorting revenge for their fallen comrades. And so, silent, but grim, they swung along, waiting orders and opportunity. Not for long were these delayed. Soon instructions were received to deploy, and to hasten to the crest of a ridge rising to the front, but in an oblique direction, necessitating a large swing to the right. This was executed promptly by the leading (Second) Battalion, which came onto the ridge on the right of the artillery, while the leading Company, I, of the rear battalion came up on the left of the guns.

As the crest was reached the enemy was seen, about 800 yards away, on a similar ridge across the low ground between. Generals Lawton and Wheaton, mounted on their horses, were near and calling to the officers to hurry and open fire at once. At this instant the insurgents opened a very heavy fire though it was of short duration. Our fire, infantry, and artillery were too much for them to stand; they began to flee. Then came the order for the charge; down the slope, through the high tangled grass, constantly tripping the careless or unwary, and amid a confusion of organizations, due to the swing to the right which had to be continued during the charge also. But all pressed forward as rapidly as they might, regardless of comrades or as to who the officers were under whose orders they found themselves at the moment. All the companies of the Ninth Infantry present (eight) took part in this charge though, due to the distance to be traversed by it in the deployment, Company M had failed to arrive on the ridge in time to take part in the firing, while Companies L and D had been held in reserve.[81]

The firing on Guadaloupe Ridge had begun about 9 o'clock A. M., and lasted perhaps twenty minutes before the charge began. The charge was continued for only a short time, as the insurgents had disappeared from view, and the difficulties of the ground, with their pre-

[81] L. R. 322 — 1899. (Report of Captain George Palmer.)

Digitized by Google

vious continued exertions for several hours and the intense heat from the sun, together with the rapid pace of the charge, caused many men to be unable to keep up with the general line, and they began to fall out. In the engagement mentioned three privates of the Ninth Infantry had been wounded, viz., Barney Gonyea, Company C, Joseph F. Beavers, Company K, and Arthur Prager, Company I, the latter seriously from a gunshot wound near the left eye.

At about 10 o'clock the First Provisional Brigade was ordered to halt and await further instructions.[82] This halt was utilized in an attempt to procure water for the men, who had none in their canteens, but none could be found. Those who had been unable to keep up with the line again rejoined their companies, and all strove to gather together their strength for whatever might next be required of them.

About 11:30 o'clock orders to advance again were received, the skirmish line was re-formed and its forward movement resumed, the orders requiring it to be directed on the dome of the Paranaque Church, which was then visible. This involved a considerable swing of the line to the right, and made it difficult for the men of the Ninth Infantry to keep up with those to their right (the Twenty-first Infantry) who had less change of direction to make. In spite of this, and of the now terrific heat, and of absence of drinking water, the men made brave efforts to keep up, though in very many cases in vain. Ponchos were thrown aside to lighten the weight carried, and in an effort to stay on the line. Rations followed, then the mess kits, then the haversacks, and they struggled on. But even after thus lightening the loads many were unable to withstand the heat and fatigue, and, in fear of sunstroke while suffering from heat exhaustion, many fell out to seek shade and water to enable them to recuperate. When about 12:30 P. M., fresh water and shade were reached by the general line, a halt was ordered for the First Brigade, and the Second halted there also, though a little later. Here it was found that two officers and more than 300 men (one Battalion Commander says about 80 per cent of his battalion) were not with their organizations in the Ninth Infantry. Many of these joined, as did the officers, at this halt, which lasted till about 3 o'clock, and during this time lunch and fresh water were procured, with the result that all were much refreshed and invigorated for further endeavors.

On resuming the march the Second Battalion (Ahern's) was again in the lead. Almost immediately after starting it was necessary to cross a small stream with very steep banks on both sides, and the bottom of

[82] See Report of General Lawton, dated October 9, 1899, in Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 5, p. 272.

Digitized by Google

which was filled with round, slippery rocks of considerable size. The crossing had to be made in single file, and each man got at least one foot wet. The water thus carried up the opposite slope made it so slippery in addition to its steepness that each man had to be assisted by others already on top in order to get up the bank. This made the crossing a very slow operation, and caused great loss of distance after reaching the opposite side. Every effort was made by all to get across as rapidly as possible and to close up, but this effort, coming after these which had gone before, was very trying. For these reasons the Second Battalion was considerably in advance of the First, the Battalion Commander of which remained at the crossing in order to hasten the companies yet to cross.

At about 4 o'clock[83] the Division Headquarters and staff, with escort, were fired on at the ford of a small stream or "estero" near and to the east of Las Piñas. The escort was deployed, followed by the Colorado Regiment, and advanced, flanking and routing the insurgents in their front. Then another band of insurgents in skirmish line was discovered on the left flank of the line of the Colorado Regiment. Just at this moment the head of the Second Battalion of the Ninth Infantry reached the ford, Captain Ramsey's Company C being the first. Captain Baldwin, commanding both battalions, and his Adjutant, Lieutenant Lawton, were present here, as was also the Battalion Commander, Captain Ahern and his Adjutant, Lieutenant Brown. Company C was quickly thrown across the ford and deployed to the left, being followed rapidly by the other companies of the battalion, which were successively deployed on the right on the line, and it advanced by rushes, firing rapidly and well, the officers exposing themselves gallantly and encouraging and directing their men in manner which obtained for them the special commendation and recommendation of the Battalion Commander in his report. A battery of two 1.65-inch Hotchkiss mountain guns assisted in this attack, and when the line had advanced to within about 300 yards of the insurgents the latter broke and fled, and the line was then halted.

Meanwhile, Company I, the leading company of the First (rear) Battalion, while approaching the ford ahead of the other companies and alone, came under the fire directed at the ford. The movements of troops on the other side could be partially discerned through the bamboo trees fringing both banks of the stream, and these movements indicated the direction of the enemy. This company was, therefore, deployed to

[83] See General Lawton's Report October 9, 1899, in report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 5, p. 272.

Digitized by Google

the left and advanced, firing, to correspond with the movements of the battalion on the opposite side, and swinging to the right so as to approach the stream, so as to cross and join the line there if practicable. On reaching the banks this was found impracticable. And, as no enemy could be seen, and the present position might lead to firing into our own troops while advancing, the front was changed to a line perpendicular to the stream. The Battalion Commander (First Battalion), coming up just then, ordered this company withdrawn to the road, which was done. On reaching the road, however, a Division Staff Officer directed that it again deploy, strengthened by another company, M, and again occupy the same ground to prevent the insurgents escaping to our rear. When all firing had ceased this temporary battalion of two companies, under command of Captain F. L. Palmer, was withdrawn to the road, and followed the other companies which had gone on ahead, thus remaining together till the bivouac for the night was reached.

During this engagement three men of the Ninth Infantry were wounded, viz., Privates DeForest V. Hutchinson, Company B (who died on the 13th), Brayton Bretch, Company C, and August F. Porczeng, also of Company C. While consulting with the Division Commander Captain Baldwin had his horse shot and killed.

At dark a halt was made and the whole command bivouacked for the night in the open. To add to the discomfort of the wearied men after all the other trials of this hard day, no fresh (non-saline) water was to be found here for drinking or cooking; rations were short, and a drizzling rain fell nearly all night. In spite of all this so wearied were they that sound and refreshing sleep came to nearly all whom duty did not keep awake.

On the morning of June 11th the march was resumed at daylight and Las Pinas was entered without opposition. The troops then went into bivouac, and the remainder of the day and the 12th were spent in recuperation, collecting stragglers and abandoned property, and obtaining rations forwarded from Manila. Captain Ahern, having been detailed on special duty in Manila, left on the 12th, Captain F. L. Palmer, Ninth Infantry, relieving him in command of the Second Battalion, and being relieved in command of Company I by Second Lieutenant H. F. Dalton, Ninth Infantry, who had joined the command at Las Pinas from detached service for examination for promotion.

On the 13th heavy firing was heard all through the forenoon from the naval vessels in the bay opposite Bacoor and vicinity, and it was rumored that General Lawton, with some troops, had gone toward Bacoor to reconnoitre, as it was believed that the insurgents had retreated there.

Digitized by Google

Toward noon the firing increased, and all within hearing prepared for an expected call to participate in the coming action. The men of the Ninth Infantry were just getting their dinner when the summons came for one battalion to report to General Lawton at once. The First (George Palmer's) Battalion was the one ordered out, and it proceeded quickly along the road to Bacoor for a mile and a half until General Lawton was met. He directed it to cross the intervening lagoons and canals (or esteros) and to proceed along the beach of the bay (of Manila) southward. After thus proceeding for a half a mile the battalion came upon and re-enforced two companies of the Twenty-first Infantry, which were withdrawn shortly afterward, they having been engaged for many hours and having run short of ammunition. Here also was found a body of sailors and marines who had been landed to take part, for the navy, in the attack. Skirmish line was formed, and the shelter of a natural bank along the beach was utilized as an entrenchment from behind which fire was opened up on the insurgents, located about six hundred yards distant to the right and front. Company L, under command of Lieutenant Welborn, was detached by Major Edwards, of the Division Staff, and sent to take a position on the right of Patten's Battalion of the Fourteenth Infantry to fill a gap between this battalion and that of the rest of the battalion of the Ninth Infantry, which was moved forward shortly to the left and front to connect with this (L) company. Meanwhile, the remaining (Second) Battalion of the Ninth Infantry had been waiting impatiently at their bivouac for the expected orders which should enable it to join in the action now going on so fiercely, to judge from the firing all could so plainly hear. Though not under orders, all officers and men had gathered at their places and equipped themselves so as to be ready to fall in at an instant's notice; then, restraining their eagerness as best they might, all sought shelter from the fierce rays of the scorching sun, and lay reposing for future exertions and watching for any sign of orders. So all were ready when, at about 2:30 P. M., the Adjutant-General of the division rode up and asked for the Commanding Officer. With a sigh of relief that the suspense was over, and a subdued murmur of enthusiasm that their turn had come, the men without waiting for orders, fell in ranks at their proper places and were prepared for the movement by their officers. As a result of this the command was, within a couple of minutes from the arrival of the orders, on its way to comply with them.[84] The orders were to proceed along the road toward Bacoor (south) and report to General Wheaton in person who would direct the further employment of these troops. About a mile

[84] L. R. 822 — 1899, Headquarters Ninth Infantry (Report of Captain Baldwin).

Digitized by Google

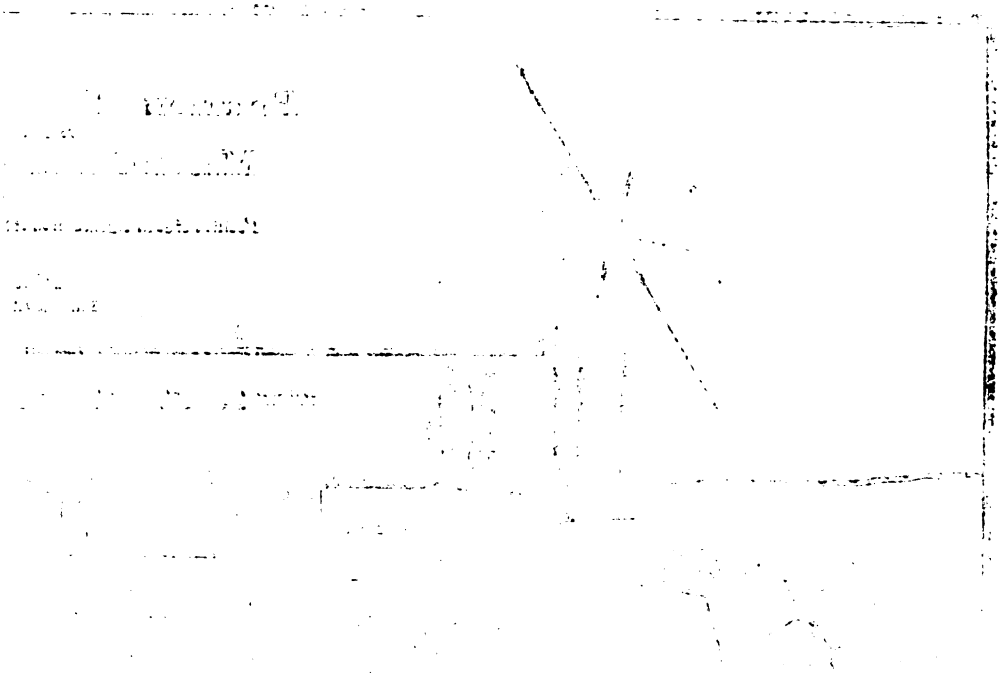
and a half from the bivouac he was met, and in person guided the battalion to the beach, proceeding along dikes, between rice-fields, through lagoons and small streams, all of which were forded except the last, which was both too wide and too deep at this point, and boats (native) were hastily collected to ferry the troops across. As only eleven men could be carried at a time in these boats there was delay which caused straggling after crossing. Every effort was made to hasten the crossing and to forward the men, as crossed, along the beach to the place where they were needed, a half mile or so southward. All during the passage from the road to the beach the troops were under long range fire from the trenches at the Zapote River, though doubtless, this fire was not directed at them, and there were no casualties.

Company C, the leading company, was crossed first, and sent on ahead to report to officers of the Division Staff known to be present and to have the necessary orders. Company B was the next to follow, but, as the troops were needed at once, Captain Baldwin directed that the remainder of this company be not waited for, and sent the Battalion Commander, with Lieutenant Munson and the half company already crossed, to the front, saying that he, in person, would see to getting the rest across the ferry. While proceeding along the beach this company met one of the companies of the Twenty-first Infantry (Mullay's) which was being withdrawn, exhausted by its long engagement and out of ammunition. Under orders of Major Starr of the Division Staff, who guided it in person, this portion of Company B proceeded inland till it joined the sailors (4 officers and about 80 men) from the Helena and Monadnock, under command of Lieutenant Edward Moale, Jr., United States Navy. Here a halt was made, during which it was discovered that the company next on the left of the general line, and about three hundred yards distant, was apparently taking position with a view to opening fire on the sailors, who were dressed in white clothing and might be mistaken for the white-clothed Filipinos who were, in swift alternation, "amigos" and insurgents. Quickly the men of company B, conspicuous by their dark blue shirts and, therefore, easily distinguishable as American troops, mingled with the sailors and got in front of them, hallooing and waving their hats, thereby convincing these troops of the true status of affairs and, perhaps, preventing a sad disaster.

The remaining two and a half companies of the battalion, under orders of General Wheaton, had meanwhile been withdrawn to the Bacoor road, instead of being ferried to the beach, and had advanced along the road and over the hastily-repaired bridge over the Zapote River, after

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

which they had formed line of skirmishers and advanced, under personal command of Captain Baldwin.

All firing had, apparently, ceased by the time Company B joined the sailors, probably at four o'clock or shortly after, and, after some delay, the sailors started to return to the shore on their way to rejoin their vessels, and Company B moved forward to the road leading to Bacoor, through the village called La Ronque, coming into this road at about a mile and a quarter south of the Zapote Bridge. Here it found itself on the right of the First (Captain George Palmer's) Battalion. All insurgents seemed to have disappeared, and shortly orders were received to form and return to the bivouac for the night. As the companies were being formed a terrific fire was opened on our troops, and apparently from very short range. As promptly as possible the men were deployed along the road, and the fire was returned, although no enemy could be seen and their direction could only be guessed at from watching the bullets striking about. The troops of the battalions in question were on a village street fenced in on each side by heavy bamboo fences in front of the houses, which were among a thick grove of bamboo trees. The fire ceased as suddenly as it had begun, and the troops were moved southward along the road toward Bacoor, the skirmish line being marched by the right flank. It overtook a detachment of the Twenty-first Infantry, under Lieutenant W. M. Morrow, who had been sent to reconnoitre this road, and whose appearance had, probably, drawn the fire referred to. A side road was soon discovered leading, apparently, to the open in rear of the houses on the east side of the road, and through this opening Captain F. L. Palmer led part of Company B to see if anything could be seen of the insurgents. They were discovered about three hundred yards distant, standing behind an L-shaped dike or mound, one side of which faced north and the other to the west, and parallel to the main road. As soon as our troops were seen the insurgents opened fire, which was returned. All troops on the road quickly broke through the bamboo fences and got onto the line in the open immediately beyond the bamboo, where they joined in the fire which caused the insurgents to leave their trench and flee toward Imus, through the woods.

Captain F. L. Palmer relates that, during this fire and while the insurgents were seen fleeing through the woods, the last insurgent seen by him, jumping up on top of the embankment, and, coolly raising his rifle, fired deliberately at the attacking line; and then, after waving his arms mockingly, as if bidding the Americans "au revoir," slowly walked along the bank to its end, and disappeared, apparently unharmed in

Digitized by Google

spite of the rain of bullets falling about him. As a piece of cool bravado it was magnificent.

The line advanced to this embankment at the charge, which, doubtless, hastened the flight of the remaining insurgents, and was then halted, the artillery firing a few shells into the woods in the direction of the fleeing enemy. During this time a sharp-shooter, apparently in the direction of Bacoor, opened fire on the troops, and beings, seemingly Filipinos, dressed in white, were discovered moving about among the bushes in this direction. Some of the men asked permission to open fire on them which Captain F. L. Palmer, the senior officer in this vicinity, gave. While this fire was going on (probably twenty shots were fired in all by four or five men) a Staff Officer rode up hastily and ordered it stopped, saying it was the marines we were firing on. Captain Palmer ordered the fire stopped, which was done, but replied that these could not be the marines, as he had seen them start for their vessel at least an hour before. This view of the case was verified by Captain Palmer later, and reported on by him, as the result of a conversation with Lieutenant Moale (United States Navy) who had been in command of the marines (or sailors) at the time in question. He authorized Captain Palmer to state, on his authority, that the marines (or sailors) had returned direct to their vessels after parting from Captain Palmer, and had not returned nor been ashore when the later firing took place, though they had heard it while on their way to their vessels.

All resistance having ceased, and dusk coming on, all troops were withdrawn to the road, reformed, and marched back to the place designated as the bivouac for the night, near a stone bridge half a mile south of the bridge at the Zapote River, and just outside of the "barrio" called La Ronque. Here the rolls were called, all absentees accounted for, rations, such as were at hand, or were brought from Las Pinas, were obtained, and all soon sought rest from the exertions of the day, which had been severe by reason of the water and mud through which the troops had had to force their way, part of the time under fire. But rest was impossible as at about ten o'clock rain set in and flooded all out of their improvised beds, forcing them to stand, or lie in pools of water. Fuel was obtained, and with some difficulty fires were made and kept up through the night, by means of which, aided by their ponchos, the men could keep at least partially dry. About four o'clock the rain ceased, and all sought belated slumber.

The casualties for this day, in the Ninth Infantry, were as follows:

Killed: Private Alfred A. Mahoney, Company I, gunshot wound in head.

Digitized by Google

Wounded: Private George L. DeForest, Company B, gunshot, left shoulder.

Private George Clamphfer, Company B, accidental thrust in the eye from muzzle of rifle, causing loss of eye.

Private Daniel O'Neil, Company L, slight gunshot wound in thigh.

Private Arthur S. Odin, Company I, serious gunshot wound in left arm, in spite of which he remained on the firing line, firing until the action was over; for this gallantry he was, later, recommended for Certificate of Merit.

First Sergeant Romeo T. Perry, Company C, contused wound on back. He continued in action.

At nine o'clock in the morning, on June 14th, orders were received by the Second (Captain F. L. Palmer's) Battalion to proceed to Bacoor and report to General Lawton, who was then there with his cavalry escort. Battalion arrived there at about 9:45 A. M., and was placed as garrison and Provost Guard of Bacoor, with one company, as an outpost, to guard the bridge south of Bacoor on the road to Imus and to Cavite Viejo. On the afternoon of the 15th a battalion of the Fourth Infantry relieved this battalion, which then, under command of Captain Baldwin, Lieutenant Brown, Acting Adjutant, proceeded by Casco to Manila, Captain F. L. Palmer returning to command of Company I, then at bridge north of Bacoor.

On the 18th Company I was sent to Bacoor to relieve the battalion of the Fourth Infantry, while Company M, under command of Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel, was sent to guard the bridge south of Bacoor.

General Wheaton, meanwhile, had been placed in command of the troops at Imus, and the battalion of the Ninth Infantry assigned to General Ovenshine's Brigade. On the afternoon of the 19th heavy firing of artillery was heard at Bacoor, coming from the direction of Imus. As a telegraph station had been established at Bacoor, Captain F. L. Palmer reported this fact to General Ovenshine's Headquarters. Later telegrams began to arrive telling of the engagement of Major Bubb's Battalion, Fourth Infantry, between Imus and Das Marinas. About eight o'clock P. M. the wounded from this action arrived at Bacoor, whence they were taken by steam launch, to hospitals in Manila.

In response to request from General Wheaton for re-enforcements for the expedition to be made toward Das Marinas next day (the 20th), General Ovenshine had the two companies of the Ninth Infantry at Bacoor relieved by Company L, Ninth Infantry, on the night of the 19th, and at twelve o'clock, midnight, these companies marched for Imus, arriving at 1:30 A. M. on the 20th, and Captain F. L. Palmer reported to

Digitized by Google

General Wheaton, as ordered. These companies were ordered to bivouac for the night, and to proceed with the expedition at five o'clock that morning. General Wheaton's request had been misunderstood, as he had asked for the whole battalion of the Ninth, and, on further request, the other two companies were sent forward to join him, not arriving, however, until after the expedition had started from Imus. They joined the column on the road to Das Marinas at about eight o'clock A. M. Captain George Palmer resumed command of the whole battalion. On leaving Imus on the morning of the 20th the two companies of the Ninth Infantry were ordered to act as escort for the reserve artillery, and so were near the rear of the column; though under fire from long range a great part of the time they had no active part in the day's action, though at one state of it they, with the other companies which had meantime come up, were deployed on the right of the Das Marinas road with a view to repelling an anticipated flank attack in that direction. The action having ended with the flight of the insurgents from Das Marinas the troops were halted from about one to three o'clock P. M. for a rest, after which they were ordered to return toward Imus, the battalion of the Ninth Infantry bivouacking for the night about four miles back from their most advanced point in the native village. Next morning, the 21st, they returned to Imus, and, on the 22nd, thence to Bacoor, where they embarked for Manila.

Due to the shallowness of the water near the shore at Bacoor, and to the state of the tide, it was necessary for all to wade out as far as possible, and until the water was deep enough for the row-boats, into which the men then clambered, and were rowed to the steam launches on which they were carried to Manila. The embarkation, under these circumstances, was a matter of great delicacy and some danger, as climbing out of water waist-deep, or more, into small boats was very liable to cause them to overturn, with danger to the men, loaded down as they were with rifle, ammunition and equipments. And, indeed, in spite of all precautions taken, one man, Private Michael Sullivan of Company M, was drowned through the upsetting of a boat.

The battalion arrived at Manila at about seven o'clock P. M. on the 22nd, and marched through a drenching rain to the Nipa Barracks, where it remained until the morning of the 24th, when it proceeded by rail to San Fernando de Pampanga, and there became a part of the command of Major-General MacArthur, United States Volunteers.

General MacArthur's advance northward, with the Second Division Eighth Army Corps, reached San Fernando de Pampanga on May 5th, 1899. His division was composed almost entirely of volunteer

Digitized by Google

regiments which were entitled to their discharge, and after the successes which resulted in the capture of San Fernando, General Otis formulated plans for relieving them. Their exhausted condition resulting from 90 days of constant service against the enemy, marching, fighting, and even resting in extended order, ever ready for combat, gave further reason for replacing them at once.

The Ninth Infantry was selected as one of the regiments to be placed on that front, and, accordingly, the two battalions operating with General Lawton's command in the advance of June 10–22, 1899, were ordered to be returned to Manila. Captain Baldwin's Battalion, the Second, Companies B, C, E and K, was relieved June 15th, and proceeded from Bacoor to the Nipa Barracks at Manila. The composite battalion, comprising companies D, H, L and M, commanded by Captain George Palmer, was ordered to remain with General Lawton a few days longer in consequence of the advance to and beyond Imus, which, upon General Lawton's recommendation, was authorized by General Otis with a view to pushing the enemy a little more after his defeat at Zapote River. That battalion was not relieved until June 22nd. Captain Baldwin's Battalion was transferred to Manila by cascoes the night of June 15th, arriving there June 16th, and bivouacking at Nipa Barracks. The expectation in his command was that the battalion would return at once to its former station at Pateros, but General Otis' plan for the transfer of the regiment to the Second Division was about to be put in operation, and a determined attack by the insurgents at San Fernando on the night of June 16th, doubtless hurried the movement of Regimental Headquarters and the two available battalions, Baldwin's at Nipa Barracks and McCaleb's at Caloocan, to General MacArthur's line. Major Regan received the order in the afternoon of the 17th and Headquarters, the Band, and Baldwin's Battalion embarked on the train at 6 P. M. that day. McCaleb's Battalion embarked the same eveing at Caloocan, and the trains proceeded northward during the night. The bridge at the Bagbag River, which had been temporarily repaired for the passage of cars, was now receiving more permanent repairs, the broken span being raised, and the traffic was temporarily interrupted. Disembarkation was necessary, the command being ferried over the river, or crawling over the bridge, and resuming the cars on the opposite shore. It was imperative to proceed without delay, so most of the baggage and rations were left on the south bank of the river to be brought on at a later day. The officers were astonished to observe what long stretches of track were apparently unprotected, and it was generally remarked then and afterward that an active and energetic enemy would have found means to

Digitized by Google

have broken the line at many places, and seriously interfered with provisioning and re-enforcing the San Fernando troops. But never during the progress of the northern campaign did the insurgents interfere seriously with the long line of communication and supply.



An officer's quarters at San Fernando, Philippine Islands.

The two battalions and Regimental Headquarters arrived at San Fernando at about 1 A. M., June 18, 1899, and piled out of the cars for a few hours' sleep on the ground at the railroad station. Two companies, A and H, were sent at once, however, to occupy a portion of the outpost line. Early in the day, 18th, Major Regan having reported to General McArthur, vacant houses on the south side of the river were assigned to the regiment, and it moved into place. It was assigned to the First Brigade, which was then commanded by Brigadier-General Frederick Funston, U. S. Volunteers, and on June 23rd was ordered to relieve the Twentieth Kansas U. S. Volunteers, on the outpost line. That regiment was then sent to



Colonel E. H. Liscum, Ninth Infantry, San Fernando, Philippine Islands. August 1, 1899.

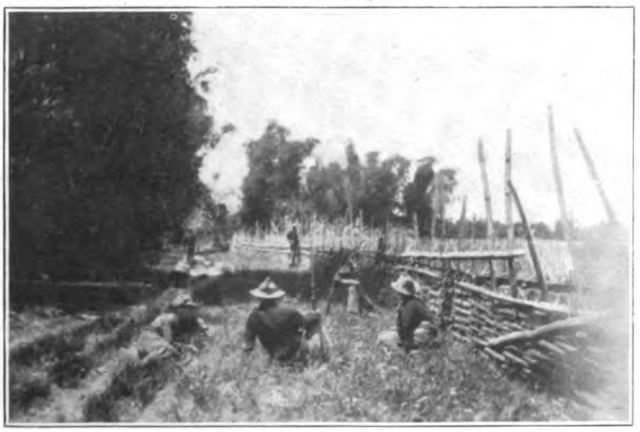
Digitized by Google

Manila, and shortly after returned to the United States to be mustered out.

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum, who had been promoted Colonel of the regiment upon the retirement of Colonel Powell, April 25, 1899, arrived at Manila about the middle of June, and joined the regiment at San Fernando on June 24th. He arrived there with Captain Palmer's Battalion which traveled to San Fernando from Manila by train on that date. Colonel Liscum retained command of the regiment until July 15, 1899, when he was assigned to the command of the First Brigade, vice Brigadier-General Funston relieved to go to the United States. Major Regan resumed command of the regiment temporarily. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge arrived from the United States, and reported for duty August 4th, relieving Major Regan, who was returned to the command of his battalion, the First. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge remained in command during the advance



Ninth Infantry in action at San Fernando, Philippine Islands.



Ninth Infantry Outpost at San Fernando, Philippine Islands, June 1, 1899.

Digitized by Google

against the enemy on August 9, 1899, and several weeks subsequently.

The tour of duty on the line at San Fernando from June 18th to August 9th was exceedingly trying on account of the drenching rains. There were frequent night alarms requiring the entire regiment to take position at the line of outposts, but no casualties occurred in the Ninth Infantry. One battalion of the regiment, the Second, Companies B, C, E and I, commanded at first by Captain Baldwin, then by Captain Anderson, June 28th to July 6th, and later, upon the promotion of Captain Baldwin, by Captain Noyes, July 18th —August 19th, had station at Santo Tomas until August 8th, two miles south of San Fernando, guarding the railroad, and outposting the San Fernando position toward the south.[85]



Ninth Infantry in action at San Fernando, Philippine Islands.

Whenever the regiment was turned out on account of night firing, the battalions at San Fernando were formed, marched rapidly to designated places and placed on the firing line or in support, as circumstances required. The firing was usually heavy for half an hour or possibly an hour, then became desultory, and terminated altogether in another half hour. These alarms amounted to nothing more than outposts affairs, and need not have disturbed the main body if the number of troops had been great enough to push the outposts further out and give sufficient supports, but the whole command was, from paucity of numbers, practically lying on their arms, as had been the case during the whole of the advance of the Second Division.

About the middle of July continuous and heavy rains flooded the country and put an effectual stop to night firing for the time being, but, from the same cause, the duty in the trenches became the more wearing.

[85] L. R. 383, Headquarters, Ninth Infantry, July 2, 1899.

Digitized by Google

The sick report increased as a consequence of these trying conditions, the figures reaching 116 present sick, and 117 absent sick on July 30th.[86] As a result of the rains nearly all the houses in the town, occupied by officers and men, were surrounded by water two or three feet deep, and the good sense of the natives in building their houses on stilts was evident. The river was filled to the brim, and considerable driftwood came down against the railroad bridge; but by constant attention the bridge was kept safe, and there was very little interruption to railroad communication with Manila. The total rainfall in the month of July is stated to have been 46 inches.

The Regimental Commander was ordered at the end of June to furnish a detachment of 35 men for duty on the gunboat Laguna de Bay, replacing men of the volunteer regiments. This boat, which was of light draft and adapted for river service, had been purchased by the government, made bullet-proof with sheet iron, equipped with machine guns, and was used in the esteros of Manila Bay, and up the rivers as far as she could be sent. A considerable part of her service was in the Rio Grande, the Pasig and the Laguna de Bay. The detachment left San Fernando for Manila on July 1, 1899,[87] and remained on board until June the following year, being relieved when the regiment was ordered to China.

The advance of General MacArthur's line from San Fernando to Calulut on August 9, 1899, was made with a view to going on to Angeles a few days later, and getting possession of that place, which was regarded of strategic importance, preparatory to an extended northward movement, both on the railroad (General MacArthur's Advance) and along a flank line of operations, starting at San Isidro (General Lawton's Advance). This extended movement was made in October, November, December, 1899, and resulted in the dispersion of the enemy's forces in the north, occupation of all northern Luzon, and, practically, completion of the campaign in that district.

The entire regiment took part in the advance of August 9th. The roster of the officers, which had changed considerably since arrival in the Philippines, and the strength of companies, was, at this date, as follows.[88]

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum, on special duty commanding First Brigade, Second Division, Eighth Army Corps.

Lieutenant Colonel Charles A. Coolidge, commanding regiment.

Major Jesse M. Lee, detached service; en route to join regiment.

[86] Consolidated Morning Report Ninth Infantry, July 30, 1899.

[87] Paragraph 2, Regimental Order No. 111, June 29, 1899.

[88] Regimental Returns, July and August, 1899, and contemporaneous data.

Digitized by Google

Major Morris C. Foote, detached service; general recruiting in United States.

Major James Regan, Acting Lieutenant-Colonel of regiment.

Captain Edgar B. Robertson, Company E, Quartermaster United States Volunteers in United States.

Captain Thomas S. McCaleb, Company F, commanding Third Battalion.

Captain George Palmer, Company D, commanding First Battalion.

Captain Frank L. Dodds, Company L, detached service; en route to join regiment.

Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant, commanding Second Battalion (temporarily).

Captain Robert H. Anderson, commanding Company A.

Captain George P. Ahern, Company M, detached service — Manila.

Captain Frederick L. Palmer, commanding Company I.

Captain John P. Finley, Quartermaster, absent sick in Manila

Captain André W. Brewster, Company G, detached service, Quartermaster U. S. Volunteers. On transport Burnside.

Captain Frank De W. Ramsey, commanding Company C.

Captain Mark L. Hersey, Company H, detached service, in United States.

Captain (vacancy) Company B.

Captain (vacancy) Company K.

First Lieutenant John M. Sigworth, Commissary, detached service, general recruiting in United States.

First Lieutenant Edwin V. Bookmiller, Company C, detached service, general recruiting, in United States.

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E.

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier, commanding Company D.

First Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates, Company A, absent sick in United States.

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, Company I, commanding Company G.

First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell, Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, with battalion.

First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise, commanding Company H.

First Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler, Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion, detached service, in United states.

First Lieutenant Thomas F. Dwyer, commanding Company F.

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers, Company L, detached service, in Manila.

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant Benjamin M. Hartshorne, unassigned, detached service, general recruiting in United States.

First Lieutenant Fred L. Munson, commanding Company B.

First Lieutenant Harold Hammond, commanding Company K.

First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion, with battalion.

First Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel, sick in Second Division Field Hospital.

First Lieutenant (vacancy) Company G.

Second Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson, Company M, absent sick, in Manila.

Second Lieutenant Harry F. Dalton, Company D, Acting Quartermaster and Commissary, with regiment.

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, with First Battalion.

Second Lieutenant Reuben Smith, commanding Company L.

Second Lieutenant Joseph B. Morse, Company I, absent sick, in Manila.[89]

Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron, Company C, Acting Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion.

Second Lieutenant George W. Wallace, unassigned, en route to join regiment.

Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr., Company A, Acting Regimental Adjutant.

Second Lieutenant Charles S. Foster, commanding Company M.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy) Company B.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy) Company E.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy) Company F.

STRENGTH OF COMPANIES

	Present	Absent	Total
N. C. S. and Band	27	0	27
Company A	82	18	100
Company B	88	10	98
Company C	81	15	96
Company D	78	25	103
Company E	84	13	97
Company F	81	19	100
Company G	83	23	106
Company H	80	14	94
Company I	82	26	108
Company K	86	11	97
Company L	82	20	102
Company M	84	18	102
Total	1,018	212	1,230

[89] Lieutenant Morse was sent to the First Reserve Hospital, Manila, from Santo Tomas on August third, and died there August 15, 1899, of typhoid fever.

Digitized by Google

Of the number present, 77 were reported sick, 34 were Quartermaster Sergeants and Cooks, 42 were on special duty, and 18 were in arrest and confinement. Some of these were reported for duty on the eve of battle, and the effective strength for the firing line was therefore about 900.

The preliminary instructions for the advance were issued on August 6th, but no precise information of the movement was then given out. Ammunition to the extent of 150 rounds per man was issued, 50 of the rounds to be carried in the haversacks, with one day's cooked rations. The battalion at Santo Tomas was ordered to San Fernando, all baggage being placed on cars at the railroad station. This work was done in a heavy rainstorm, and was about completed when an order was received suspending the movement. The rain was so heavy and continuous that a delay was unavoidable. The postponement was for one day at first, and then for a second day, the weather continuing bad on August 7th; but on the 8th the sun was bright and the air still, and specific orders were given for the movement forward the following morning.

The Second Battalion was relieved by a troop of the Fourth Cavalry (Captain Wheeler's), marched to San Fernando at 11:30 P. M., and bivouacked at the railroad station. At 2:30 A. M. the men were roused quietly, the three battalions formed at their several places in the town, and marched to the firing line. The order issued by Colonel Liscum for his brigade, Ninth and Twelfth Infantry, which was to extend from the railroad westward, while the Second Brigade, commanded by General Wheaton extended eastward, read as follows:

HEADQUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE, SECOND DIVISION,
EIGHTH ARMY CORPS,
SAN FERNANDO, P. I., August 8, 1899.

Ninth Infantry right resting on railroad, extending to the sugar-house and on across open field just west of the sugar-house, through the line of bamboo and along the sunken road, or slightly in advance thereof, so that the left of the left battalion will connect with the cossack post at the right of the Twelfth Infantry on second stream near the artillery.

One company of each battalion will be in the support, disposed of as Regimental and Battalion Commanders direct. Each man will carry 150 rounds of ammunition on his person, one days' rations.

The Regimental Commander is charged with keeping up his line of communication with such animals and conveyances as he has at his disposal.

Digitized by Google

Initial dressing-stations will be at that point on the present line occupied by the Ninth Infantry — where the sunken road running west from the railroad ends — at the "point of the woods."

A Hospital car will follow up the line on the railroad as far as possible.

Every man in the command available will accompany it, excepting two cooks from each company.

The convalescents will do guard duty at Regimental Headquarters, store houses, and in charge of quarters of each battalion.

The Sixteenth Infantry will do provost duty in the city.

One officer from each regiment will be left back to push forward supplies and ammunition.

There will be a car of reserve ammunition on the railroad, and another car at the railroad station where ammunition can be obtained on memorandum receipts.

Distances will be kept as nearly as possible as follows:

Between men, one (1) pace.

Between companies, twenty (20) paces.

Between battalions, thirty (30) paces.

Between regiments, fifty (50) paces.

The left battalion of the Ninth Infantry will be fifty paces from the battery. The guide will be right throughout the movement to the sixty-ninth kilometer post — the objective at Calulut, and on a line running east and west from that point.

The command will move from San Fernando at 3:00 A. M., August 9th, under the regimental and battalion commanders. Captain Noyes' Battalion will take the center of the line and Captain McCaleb's the left. If the support of the first battalion — now on outpost — take position followed by the Second and Third Battalions, dropping off on the right into line of skirmishers, Captain McCaleb, proceeding past the Second, would find himself at the designated point, viz., the Twelfth Infantry cossack post.

General MacArthur will start the forward movement by a signal from the railroad, his position throughout the movement; and this signal will be passed on to the left.

The armored train will open fire at 5:00 A. M. It will probably be fifteen minutes thereafter before the signal to advance will be given.

Brigade Commander will be with left battalion, Ninth Infantry.

Respectfully,

(Signed) E. V. SMITH,

Captain Fourth United States Infantry

Acting Assistant Adjutant-General.

Digitized by Google

The battalions were correctly posted on the line in due time by Major Regan, which on the left proved to be a difficult operation, and awaited the dawn of day. At the first rays of light the bugle calls of the waking enemy and the voices of officers shouting their commands could be heard, so still was the air. No sign was given of the waiting, crouching line, however, until full daylight. Then, at five o'clock, the field gun on the armored car boomed the signal of the opening fray. Its fire continued at regular intervals, and the fire of the Gatlings and the Hotchkiss revolving gun added a lively rattle.

The line of skirmishers took up the fire and from end to end there was a roar of musketry. The enemy's fire was weak; the strong insurgent command which had attacked the town on June 16th was, doubtless, much reduced under the necessity of stringing it along the railroad northward for supplies, and to find suitable quarters during the heavy rains. At 5:15 A. M. the armored car advanced on the railroad and word was passed from one Battalion Commander to the next on his left to move forward. The advance was initiated likewise in the Second Brigade on the right of the railroad. The resistance of the enemy was inconsiderable except at isolated points, his trenches were gained, and the advance went forward. Here and there portions of the line met a heavy fire for a few minutes, and there were a number of casualties resulting, but the chief obstacles to the movement were the deep mud of the rice-fields, the bamboo thickets, and the fields of tall, thick sugar-cane. The men carried only their ponchos, and the usual accoutrement of light marching order, the load being reduced to the smallest weight possible, but the labor in struggling through mud and bamboo was enough to prostrate a number and exhaust all. A halt was made by General MacArthur on the railroad at the end of about two hours, and the extreme flanks of the line given opportunity to regain their alignment. The position of the furthest battalion could only be judged by the sound of their firing, for intervening bamboo thickets and sugar-cane cut off extended view in any direction. In about an hour, when the firing indicated that the flanks were well up, the advance was renewed, and by noon the six or seven miles to Calulut had been covered. At that place the enemy made a short stand and offered resistance, but was easily driven out.

The reports of this advance made by company and battalion commanders give a good description of the events of the day along the whole of the Ninth Infantry front, and full extracts are here quoted:

Captain Dodds (for Captain Palmer) commanding:

"I was not there in command of the battalion; and this report is

Digitized by Google

made from information obtained from the Battalion Adjutant, and from reports of the company commanders, which reports are forwarded herewith:

"The battalion was composed of companies G, F, M and L, and the following officers were with the battalion: Captain George Palmer, commanding battalion; First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, Battalion Adjutant; First Lieutenant E. W. Pinkham, Assistant Surgeon; First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, commanding Company G; First Lieutenant Thomas F. Dwyer, commanding Company F; Second Lieutenant Charles S. Foster, commanding Company M; Second Lieutenant Reuben Smith, commanding Company L; and Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, who was with the battalion but not attached to either company, and who made himself very valuable by assisting wherever his services were most needed.

"The battalion formed in line of skirmish at one pace interval, with the right resting on the railroad. The companies occupied the following positions:

"Company G on the right, next Company M, and on the left Company L. Company F was held in reserve and kept about one hundred and fifty yards in the rear of the left of the battalion. About 5:30 A. M. the Division Commander gave the order to the Battalion Commander to advance. The battalion made several short halts to wait for the armored train to move forward. After crossing the insurgents' trenches a long halt was made to allow the troops on the right of the railroad to catch up with us. After they had done so the move forward was begun. The Division Commander directed that they move forward slowly so as to allow the Third Battalion, Ninth Infantry, to catch up and connect with the other two battalions. The advance was continued to the outskirts of Sindalon where the whole line halted.

"The companies of the battalion were subjected to a scattering fire during the move, but at no time was the fire heavy.

"No captures of arms or ammunition were made during the advance. One Remington rifle was found in the afternoon by a member of Company F in a hut in Sindalon; and while on outpost duty that night an insurgent sentinel with rifle and ammunition was captured by Corporal Kalber, Company G, a separate report of which has been made by Corporal Kalber's Company Commander.

"Early in the advance Private George H. P. Strauch, Company G, was seriously wounded in the neck.

"Captain Palmer was overcome by the heat and sent back to San Fernando from near Sindalon."

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Lawton, commanding Company G:

"The Company was deployed in line of skirmishers in front of our trenches north of San Fernando, right resting on the railroad, ready to advance at 5:30 A. M. I was informed that my company was the base company of General Liscum's Brigade. Promptly at 5:30 A. M. the armored car opened fire, moving forward at a slow pace to which we accommodated our rate of advance. The trenches in my front were found vacated, my company having, perhaps, better ground to advance over was continually ahead of the other companies to my left. We advanced slowly to the outskirts of Sindalon, an apparent suburb of Calulut. The conduct of the men was admirable; I had informed them that not a shot would be fired in the company unless by my order and then only by volley, expecting constantly to meet some opposition worth a reasonable expenditure of ammunition. I did not reply to the scattered fire of the enemy, and not a shot was fired in this company during the advance from start to finish. Private George H. P. Strauch was wounded in the neck seriously."

Lieutenant Foster, commanding Company M:

"Before daylight the company took position as second company to the left of the railroad track, in the rice-fields, in front of our outpost trenches, formed in line of skirmishers with one pace interval.

"Soon after daylight received the word to advance together with other troops composing the line.

"Our advance to the enemy's first trenches was made across an open rice-field. The enemy's fire was quite heavy, and several times, in going across the field the men were compelled to halt and seek shelter behind the ridges. After passing enemy's first line of trenches a considerable halt was made to allow other troops to come up. After the advance was again started the company kept its place in line, pushing steadily on with a few slight brushes with the enemy till Calulut was reached.

"The advance was made under great difficulties, being impeded by bamboo thickets, cane-fields, swamps, creeks and muddy rice-fields. The men were completely exhausted from their exertions. The company was greatly handicapped in the lack of non-commissioned officers with it, there being but one Sergeant and three or four Corporals present.

"The company had no casualties, and made no captures of men or ordnance."

Lieutenant R. Smith, commanding Company L:

"At daybreak the company took its position in front of the Ninth Infantry intrenchments and moved off in line of skirmishers with the other companies soon afterwards. The advance was made toward

Digitized by Google

Calulut, which was reached about noon, a long halt having been held about a thousand yards from Calulut for the purpose of resting the men.

"The advance was made with great difficulty on account of the rice paddies, cane-fields, swamps and bamboo thickets, which had to be passed over and through. The company was twice under heavy fire at about six hundred yards from the enemy. The discipline was good and although no arms or ammunition were captured there is reason to believe that this company wounded several insurgents, as they were found in its front.

"The company remained two days at Calulut, which is six miles from Fernando, and then went to Santa Rita which is about six miles from Calulut."

Lieutenant Dwyer, commanding Company F:

"The company was designated by the Battalion Commander, Captain George Palmer, Ninth Infantry, to act as reserve to battalion and directed to keep a distance of one hundred and fifty yards in rear of firing line of said battalion. When the battalion was deployed along line of trenches, about one mile north of San Fernando, with its right resting on railroad, the company took its position as directed and directly in rear of Company L, the left company of the firing line, first battalion, in which position it followed firing line throughout the forenoon until the arrival of line near Calulut. Twice when the firing directly in front became heaviest the company re-enforced the firing line, but afterward resumed its position as reserve. Great difficulty was at times experienced in keeping the formation as line of skirmishers, due to nature of country, such as cane-fields and mud knee-deep.

"At no time was the part of the line, in rear of which the company was, subjected to more than a scattering fire. Advance by company was commenced about 5:15 A. M.; arrived near Calulut about twelve M.; casualties, none; Prisoners, none; fell out, due to exhaustion, three; rifles captured, one (Remington)."

Captain Noyes, commanding Second Battalion:

"The Second Battalion comprised companies B, C, E and I of the regiment. The officers of the battalion were Captain F. L. Palmer, commanding Company I; Captain F. De W. Ramsey, commanding Company C; First Lieutenant F. H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E; First Lieutenant F. L. Munson, commanding Company B; Second Lieutenant W. H. Waldron, Acting Battalion Adjutant; Acting Assistant Surgeon H. W. Elliot, United States Army, and a detachment of the Hospital Corps were on duty with the battalion. Up to the night of August 8th the battalion was on duty at Santo Tomas, two miles south

Digitized by Google

of San Fernando. It marched to San Fernando that night and bivouacked until 2:30 A. M. The Ninth line was then formed, and joining the Third Battalion of the regiment marched to the outposts northwest of San Fernando, taking its position with the other battalions, the First on the right, the Second next, and the Third on the left, in skirmish line with one yard interval, Companies B, C and E and one platoon of Company I being in the firing line, the remaining platoon of Company I in reserve. Company E was on the right with orders to keep the dress toward and interval from the left company of the First Battalion. The other companies were to take the alignment and interval from the right. Company C was on the left, but temporarily cut off from the battalion by a creek and bamboo thicket.

"The movement forward against the enemy's trenches took place at daylight, following a bombardment for about ten minutes by the armored train on the railroad. The battalion came under fire of the insurgents immediately, but advanced steadily, returned the fire with company volleys, and, when within five hundred yards of their line, advanced by alternate company rushes. At the termination of this part of the advance Company C joined Company B on its right, the platoon of Company I falling back into the reserve. The enemy was driven from his position. The ground was very wet and soft, making the marching and rushing very difficult and exhausting.

"The battalion continued to advance, guiding on the First Battalion, and meeting with occasional, but slight resistance. After about two hours of the forward movement the line halted and rested, the troops on the extreme right and left being apparently more or less seriously engaged and thus retarded. After about an hour the line moved forward, and the Second Battalion found great difficulty in pushing through extensive fields of high sugar-cane, the ground being frequently very wet and soft. In passing through these fields, and through some bamboo thickets and rough ground at the crossing of a stream, the right of the battalion lost touch with the First Battalion. This was, however, re-established without great difficulty. But in doing so, and, as appears from the report of the Company Commander, Company B, while acting under instructions from the Regimental Commander, the second company in line lost touch with the right company, and an interval of several hundred yards occurred. The Battalion Commander at once went to work to re-establish the line, and hurrying to the left found the three companies. Company I was put into the interval in the line, and all three companies closed to the right and advanced. Considerable distance had, however, been lost, and this was recovered with difficulty on account of the nature

Digitized by Google

of the country described above, the extreme heat, and the exhaustion of the men, a number of whom were obliged to fall out. The Battalion Commander going ahead at this time found the exact position of the advancing line, which was just coming in contact with the enemy at Calulut, returned and brought up the three companies. They were then in column of files, and while advancing along a road near the left flank of Company E, came under a severe fire from the front and left. They were quickly deployed to the left into the field, and with excellent volleys, under Captain Ramsey's immediate control, drove the enemy from their position. The men were too exhausted to follow, but immediately after got in touch with Company E, which was near at hand on the outskirts of the village of Calulut. The line rested at this point for about two hours, then advanced into the village and bivouacked.

" Private Richard Keenan, Company C, received a flesh wound in the leg, during the last firing by the enemy. No other casualties occurred.

" The excellent control of fire exercised by the Company Commanders, and their volley firing is worthy of special mention and commendation."

Lieutenant F. H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E:

"The company was deployed in position at the Point of Woods before daylight, awaiting for the signal for the advance.

" After a few minutes shelling of the woods and positions of the enemy the advance was ordered and the company moved eagerly forward, answering with excellent volleys the sharp firing to which it was subjected. The advance was made by rushes over rice and corn-fields, and the enemy in our front soon left his trenches.

" The company was on the right of the battalion with instructions to connect to the right, towards the railroad, with other troops. It advanced steadily across rice-fields, and through sugar-cane fields, which, owing to their softness, severely tried the strength of the men, especially as they were weighted down by 100 rounds extra ammunition carried in the haversacks. These latter were in several cases torn from the straps and lost in consequence of this overloading of an article designated for carrying a limited quantity of food.

" After advancing about seven miles across the country the company which had lost touch with the troops on its left, owing to the broken and wooded country, was fired on by the enemy from the village of Sindalon, from which they were driven. The company rested at this town for the day and night. It suffered no casualties, but several men were completely worn out by the fatigue and had to go to the hospital. One Remington rifle was captured and turned into the Brigade Commander. The men of the company behaved admirably, answering promptly and

Digitized by Google

eagerly all calls made on them. It is difficult to pick out any for conspicuous notice, yet I desire to recommend that Corporal Timothy O'Conner, Company E, be awarded a certificate of merit for the gallant and energetic way he has behaved at the battles of Guadaloupe Ridge and ford at Las Pinas, June 10th, Zapote River, June 13th, and during the recent advance."

Lieutenant Munson, commanding Company B:

"I left San Fernando about three A. M., and an hour later I was deployed in line of squads facing the north and about two miles north of the city. Company E of the Second Battalion was on my right, and a platoon of Company I was on my left. About 5:15 A. M. I advanced with the line under a small fire from the enemy who were about eight hundred yards to our front. I was now in line of skirmishers. I soon received orders to return the fire by company volleys, and also to advance by alternate rushes with the companies by my flanks. The first line of the enemy's trenches was reached shortly after six A. M. At this place one of my men found a Remington rifle. I destroyed it, owing to the lack of transportation necessary to carry it. From this time on my left was covered by Company C, Second Battalion, Company I having been withdrawn and held in support. About 10 A. M. the right of my company was marching on a road which ran nearly parallel to our advance. At this point the Regimental Commander came up and directed me to halt my company and send out a Corporal and five men to patrol the road for a short distance in order to learn its general direction and also the course of a creek which ran near it. The Battalion Commander came up at the time, and I was ordered to move by the right flank and connect with Company E. At Sindalon, we encountered the enemy again, but it did not check our advance, and a little before noon we bivouacked at Calulut. This whole movement was exceptionally hard on the men, not only on account of the nearly inaccessible rice and cane-fields we were obliged to cross, but particularly on account of the heavy loads each man was required to carry.

"Owing to the heavy weight carried in my haversacks the canvas in three of them tore away from the straps, which rendered them useless and they were consequently lost. I wish to take the opportunity to suggest that the haversack should not be used for the purpose of carrying extra ammunition, and that the troops be provided with leather pouches or bags in its place. I think a pouch or bag preferable to an extra belt, as when the belt is new it is rather difficult to extract the cartridges rapidly, while if the belt is old much ammunition will fall out and be lost. The men themselves much prefer the pouch for the reasons above stated.

Digitized by Google

"I lost but two men on this movement, both from fatigue."

Captain Ramsey, commanding Company C:

"The position of the company, was, on the firing line, on the left of the battalion. Its first position in line was on the left of a stream which separated it from the other companies. Soon after the advance began the company encountered the enemy's fire. It replied by volleys and continued to advance, and swinging to the right I was able to deliver an oblique fire upon the trenches in front of the other companies. After crossing the first line of trenches we encountered the fire of small parties of the enemy, but the advance was steadily maintained until the line halted at a sugar-mill. Upon leaving there we again found the enemy upon a road running nearly parallel with our front. From the road I advanced, keeping touch with Company B on my right. The touch with other companies on the right had been lost. Both B and C companies, however, kept moving forward, inclining to the right. Hearing heavy firing to the front we hurried the pace, and met a direct and diagonal fire on our front and from the left. I advanced into a rice-field with such men as were at hand, and our fire drove the enemy from his position, 300 or 400 yards away. Volley firing at longer range from a more advanced position drove him from a new one. Our entire advance of about 7 miles had been very trying to the men, and they were too exhausted to pursue. This firing closed the active work of the day. During the advance Cook Hervey and Private Donahue captured an insurgent soldier with his mauser rifle, C 1665. The rifle has been turned in to Brigade Headquarters. Private Keenan was wounded in the last engagement of the day. For gallantry in action I have the honor to recommend that a certificate of merit be awarded to First Sergeant James N. Bean, Company C, Ninth Infantry. He commanded the First Platoon of the company, and in the actions of the day, as well as in those of June 10th, at Guadeloupe Ridge and the ford near Las Pinas and the battle of Zapote River on June 13th, he gave exhibition of courage and bravery which deserves more than ordinary duty well done. Our men were required to carry 100 rounds of ammunition in the haversack. This method is very hard on the men and extra belts should be provided.

Captain F. L. Palmer, commanding Company I:

"The company bivouacked by the railroad track near San Fernando until 2:30 o'clock A. M., when battalion was formed and marched to trenches northwest of San Fernando, distance about two miles. Company I, being ordered in reserve, moved about 800 yards in rear of the battalion, reaching its position about 4:15 o'clock A. M. About 4:45 A. M. one platoon under Sergeant John Bleier was ordered to the front

Digitized by Google

onto the line. About 5:15 A. M. when the line opened fire and began to move forward, gradually closing on the line as it advanced, after marching about 1,000 yards I was joined by the first platoon, and the entire company continued to advance through sugar-cane fields and cultivated land, through mud knee-deep, and under heavy fire aimed at the firing line in our front. After marching about two miles the company halted for about an hour for rest, being then about 200 yards in rear of the battalion which was also resting. About 9:30 A. M. the forward movement was resumed through muddy cane-fields until it reached a road (which I presume to be a road from San Fernando to Calulut) where enemy was being engaged by Company B. The Battalion Commander then directed to move the company to the right to form a skirmish line connecting with Company E, and on its left; I started, with no guide but the distant firing, and after about three quarters of an hour's march through heavy mud and sugar-cane I joined E Company which was at rest, and formed on its left. The Battalion Commander having joined us the companies present moved forward about a mile through water and mud onto a road leading into Calulut. The firing was heard about 500 yards away on right of this road. The companies proceeded along this road towards the firing, Company I being in the lead. When about 200 yards in rear of the First Battalion, which was to our right front, fire was opened on us from our front and our left. The company was formed in line of skirmishers across the road and to its left, and fire was opened upon the enemy, then about 500 yards away. The firing was heavy on both sides, though it lasted but a few minutes, the enemy breaking, but stopping occasionally to fire while getting away. Fire having ceased the company marched under direction of the Battalion Commander into the town of Calulut, where we were later assigned to position, and went into bivouac on main road of the town and near the railroad.

"There were no casualties in the company on this date. The men of the company were completely exhausted by the heat and difficult marching of the day, only two men falling out through exhaustion. I have no special recommendation to make as a result of this day's action."

Captain McCaleb, commanding Third Battalion:

"In compliance with directions received the night of the 8th the Battalion was in line on the Bacolor Road by 3 o'clock A. M., near its quarters, and here awaited the arrival of the Second Battalion, on the left of which it was ordered to take position in the intended line of battle. Shortly after 3 A. M. the Second Battalion came up, together with Major James Regan, Ninth Infantry, who assumed command of the united force,

Digitized by Google

and proceeded with it to the vicinity of the Ninth Infantry outpost. My battalion crossed the stream at the extreme left of the Ninth Infantry outposts (right), following Company C of the Second Battalion, and was placed in position in the line under the direction of Major Regan, with Companies A, H and K as skirmishers at one pace interval, and Company D in reserve in rear of Company K on the left. Owing to the marshy condition of the ground and height of the sugar-cane, covering much of the area over which the deployment was made, considerable difficulty was encountered in forming the line, and the left company was barely in position before the artillery opened. The line faced approximately northwest, in the general direction indicated by the railroad. The alignment to the right, and direction of the attack, threw the left of the battalion somewhat in advance of the Twelfth Infantry cossack post.

"The advance was commenced, extending from right to left, shortly after daybreak, the commanding officer of my right company, Captain Anderson, having instructions to keep in touch with the left company of the Second Battalion. From the reports of scouting parties I judged the outposts of the enemy to be about twelve hundred yards distant. Our line moved forward with the right company, separated from the remainder of the battalion by a bamboo thicket extending towards the point of attack; the ground for several hundred yards in our front being clear, except for fencing, which the men quickly levelled. About seven hundred yards from the enemy's works we entered a cane-field of considerable extent, and the advance was necessarily slow. After penetrating this we emerged into open ground under a hot fire from the insurgent position, less than four hundred yards distant, the most intense resistance apparently coming from an advanced position in our right front. After clearing the cane-field the line was halted behind some rice dykes, which furnished good cover in the prone position, and the enemy's fire was shortly subdued by our own. On observing the slackening of the enemy's fire, our fire was stopped, and the line advanced within two hundred yards of the enemy's main line. As soon as this movement commenced the enemy's fire increased again, but our men, each with nearly two hundred rounds of ammunition and his day's rations, moved steadily forward in line, at a walk. The ground was too marshy, and the burdens too heavy to advance by rushes at an increased gait, but the steady advance with checks seemed to be effective, and the enemy were observed quitting their trenches. The next halt was made with the left company and the right company forming a crotchet to the front, the right taking position behind the reverse side of the advanced work of the enemy.

Digitized by Google

Fire was opened, and what remained of the enemy's fire was soon silenced. After "cease firing" was sounded a few of the enemy were seen to get away, some with wounded. After waiting for some minutes until the fire of the right company ceased, the advance to the works was made in a leisurely way without further opposition. In the trenches were found one dead, and one seriously wounded native, with bloody indication of the casualties; also one Remington rifle which was destroyed. The battalion after a short rest, with the Twelfth Infantry Battalion on the left, continued the movement forward, with practically but little further opposition from the insurgents, though the cane-field, swamp, creeks, and bamboo thickets encountered caused much difficulty in preserving the line and keeping in touch to the right. About 11:30 A. M. we halted, by direction of the Regimental Commander, at a road perpendicular to our route, where the Twelfth Infantry Battalion soon joined us. After resting at this point about an hour the battalion was moved by the flank to the right a short distance, and connected with the Second Battalion. The accompanying reports of companies show A Company: No casualties; two prisoners; three Remington rifles, Caliber 45; 20 rounds ammunition, 1 cartridge belt captured. H Company: killed, one; wounded, one. K Company: killed, one; wounded, one. L Company: killed, one; wounded, three, with five prisoners captured. Total killed, three. Wounded, five, three slight. Captured from the enemy, seven prisoners, four Remington rifles, one cartridge belt, twenty rounds of ammunition.

"But two halts were made in the advance on the enemy's works, both after obtaining a clear and unobstructed view, from position affording shelter, the first under four hundred yards, the second under two hundred from the enemy's position. The steady advance of this battalion, without being exposed to the enemy's fire at short range, and preserving an excellent alignment through the marshy ground, afforded great pride and gratification. The nature of the duties required constant and unusual efforts on the part of the officers. Lieutenant T. W. Connell was of great assistance as Adjutant, and Captain R. H. Anderson, Lieutenants Joseph Frazier, H. D. Wise, and Harold Hammond, handled their respective companies well. My attention was attracted on several occasions by the quiet and forceful conduct of First Sergeant Frank Newton, Company K, Ninth Infantry, in encouraging the men of his company, notably when Private Munson was killed in his immediate front."

Reports of Company A, H, K and D are herewith enclosed:

Captain Anderson, commanding Company A.

Digitized by Google

"My company deployed in the cane-field just in front of the Twelfth Infantry cossack posts, with instructions to keep in touch with C Company of the Second Battalion on the right. When I had advanced about 800 yards I received a very hot fire at short range from the woods in my front and left. I then made a partial change of direction to the left, which placed my company at right angles to H company, assisted in driving the enemy from their position. When the forward movement was resumed I regained my position in regards to C Company, and maintained it until we reached the San Fernando and Calulut Road. I was then ordered by the Regimental Commander to move up the road with the view of finding and connecting with Captain Noyes' Command, which I finally located about three quarters of a mile in a canefield to my right; but I did not connect with him, for in so doing I would have become separated from my own command as he was moving in the direction of the railroad.

"There were no casualties in my company. Two prisoners, three Remington rifles, calibre 45, about 20 rounds of Remington ammunition and one cartridge belt were captured. I expended about 75 rounds of ammunition per man."

First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise, commanding Company H:

"The company formed in front of quarters at 3 A. M. and took its place as right center company Third battalion immediately. Battalion left at 3:30 A. M. About 4 A. M. deployed 'on right into line of squads' in canefield in front, about five hundred yards, of right of Twelfth Infantry line of outposts, forming line of skirmishers as soon as the squads got on the line.

"Considerable difficulty was encountered in making this deployment on account of the cane which was very much higher than a man's head, and very thick and also on account of the mud and darkness.

"The line moved forward about three hundred yards, coming out of the cane into an open rice-field. Here the men were allowed to sit on the rice paddies, and the line remained there until about 5:15 A. M. (daylight) when the artillery opened.

"The battalion then moved by the left flank about five hundred yards, forming line of skirmishers in a rice-field across a deep ditch from our former position. Then moved forward in line of skirmishers with one yard interval. Soon after commencing the advance the enemy opened a light fire upon us. The advance was through a deep rice-field for about five hundred yards, then about two hundred yards through a corn field. At this point Company A (Captain Anderson) had gotten on the other side of a bamboo-fringed ditch which ran diagonally towards the front.

Digitized by Google

As A Company was thus separated my company became the guide which was 'right.' At the edge of the corn-field just mentioned the company was met with a sharp fire from a small detached earthwork about three hundred yards in front. I ordered lie down and fired about six volleys and then resumed the advance when I saw the enemy break from there. I should judge there were in and around that work about fifty insurgents, but they made a very poor stand. On account of the mud the advance had to be exasperatingly slow, for the men sunk to their knees at every step. Arriving at the earthwork where the enemy had been we met a very heavy fire from a line of trenches about four hundred yards in front. I ordered the men to kneel behind (that is, in front, proper) this earthwork and opened fire first by company volleys and then at will.

"The position of the company was such that the right platoon could not see the enemy and I, therefore, ordered that platoon to move to the left and fill the intervals between the men of the left platoon. The fire here from the enemy was very intense but very poorly aimed and very high (a perfect shower of leaves and twigs were falling from the trees above us). In about five minutes the enemy's fire slackened considerably, and I directed a portion of the company to pull out some dry bamboo brush which had been laid in the ditch of the work and which prevented our crossing. About this time A Company came across the ditch, which had separated us, and formed in the edge of the bamboo at right angles to my company and cross-fired with us upon the enemy's position. Almost immediately the insurgents began to run to their right behind their trenches. About this time Corporal Charles J. Lavier, Jr., of my company was struck through the left arm and abdomen, dying about fifteen minutes later. At the time that he was struck he was behaving in a most gallant manner, passing along his section directing the fire and examining the sights. Soon after the enemy began to retire the command 'cease firing' was given by the Battalion Commander, and the advance made to the enemy's works without opposition. We rested at that point for some time and resumed the advance which, though exceedingly difficult, on account of the wet rice-fields and thick cane, was not opposed by the enemy. We reached Calulut about 11:30 A. M., where the men had dinner and later moved to the other side of the town where we bivouacked.

"Effective strength on leaving San Fernando: Officer 1, enlisted men 67.

"Effective strength of company at 6:00 P.M., Calulut. Officers 1, enlisted men 59.

Digitized by Google

Casualties:

" Killed:

"Lavier, Charles J. Jr., Corporal. Rifle wound through left arm and abdomen.

" Wounded:

" Palmer, Russie A., Private. Right breast, ricochet, very slight.

" Fell out from heat, exhaustion and sickness: Enlisted men, 7.

" Ammunition expended about three thousand rounds.

" The men of the company behaved, almost without exception, in a most creditable manner and always responded cheerfully to any requirements made of them. Under fire they were cool and deliberate.

" All of the non-commissioned officers were energetic and set good example for the men, controlling them and holding them in good line on very difficult ground and under trying circumstances. I would call special attention to First Sergeant Frank Spang, whose example to the men and whose energy in assisting me were of inestimable value."

Lieutenant Hammond, commanding Company K:

"The company left San Fernando about 3:15 A. M., July 9th, with an effective strength of seventy-five men, and together with the other companies, A, D, and H, of the Third Battalion, proceeded about one and one half miles northwest, and took position on the extreme left of the line assumed by the Ninth Infantry, D Company being in reserve in rear. The formation assumed was a line of skirmishers at one yard interval and was adhered to throughout the whole of the advance.

" At 5:20 A. M. the order was given to advance, artillery fire on our right and left having commenced five minutes earlier. For about twenty minutes the advance was not opposed, then the enemy, who was entrenched immediately in front of and perpendicular to the line of advance, opened fire on the advancing line. After advancing some distance under this fire the command to "halt" was given and a few volleys were fired in the direction of the enemy, a cane-field hiding them from view.

" Again the advance was resumed and continued for fully five hundred yards, most of the distance through a dense cane-field, until the line was halted at the edge of the cane-field, the enemy's trenches being in full view across a rice-field, and about two hundred yards away. Here our line again opened fire and the enemy's fire, which had never ceased since it began, continued. After a sharp exchange for several minutes the insurgents began to desert their trenches and move by their right flank in large numbers, some carrying dead or wounded on their backs. In their flight an excellent opportunity was offered to do more execution

Digitized by Google

than while they were in the trenches, for now their whole trunks were exposed, but this opportunity was lost by the command 'cease firing' being given, which the men reluctantly but promptly obeyed, though firing still continued on the right.

"We then advanced across the open field and found the trenches deserted, evidently in great haste, and but two badly wounded insurgents, one of whom died before his wound could be dressed, and a Remington rifle, which was destroyed, were found.

"After a half hour's rest the advance was again resumed and continued without resistance till 11:15, when an hour's rest and lunch revived the now weary and hungry men. About 12:15 P. M. the battalion again formed in line of skirmishers, as before, moved by the right flank, entered the town of Calulut and bivouacked for the night.

"On the march the men carried two hundred rounds of ammunition, one day's rations and poncho. The casualties in Company K were Private Munson, shot through the heart, and Cook Lessinger slightly wounded in right arm, the ball first passing through the butt of his rifle.

"Although the fields were, as a rule, well nigh impassable, but only three men fell out from exhaustion, in the company. None but words of highest praise can be given to the men for their prompt and cheerful obedience and coolness and courage under fire, especially as our advance under fire was made without firing in return."

Lieutenant Frazier, commanding Company D:

"In pursuance with instructions received at 9:00 P. M., August 8, 1899, the company, with two hundred rounds of ammunition per man and one day's rations, left San Fernando at 3:00 A. M., August 9, 1899. The company acting as the reserve of the Third Battalion encountered the enemy about two and a half miles north, drove them back and continued on the advance to Calulut and bivouacked for the night, capturing five prisoners.

Casualties:

"Killed in Action:

"Private George S. Wells, shot back of right shoulder.

"Wounded:

"Private James Linton, hit in left thigh, slight.

"Private John J. Woods, hit in right forearm, serious.

"Sergeant Edward Gorman, contused wound by spent ball in right groin."

A necessary corollary of the advance on the railroad to Calulut and from that place to Angeles was a pushing out of the flank holdings east

Digitized by Google

and west of the railroad, especially toward the west where the insurgents were understood to be in considerable strength within a few miles of San Fernando. The places which became objectives in this operation were, toward the west, Santa Rita and Guagua. The latter place was on an estero of Manila Bay and was at one time looked to as a possible secondary base in case the railroad was at any time seriously interrupted. There was a well-paved road from San Fernando to Guagua, by way of Bacolor, and from the latter place a road, in bad condition, to Santa Rita, which was about three miles northwest of Guagua. The troops remaining at San Fernando after the advance were, however, only sufficient to garrison the town and protect the railroad in that vicinity. The command organized for the expedition to Santa Rita was, therefore, taken from the troops which had reached Calulut on August 9th, and comprised the Ninth Infantry from the First Brigade and a detached battalion of the Twenty-second Infantry from the Second Brigade, commanded by Major John A. Baldwin, who had been recently promoted from the Ninth Infantry. The movement was ordered on August 10th to take place the following day. The co-operation of the Thirty-sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, which had operated on August 9th westward from San Fernando to Bacolor, Dolores and San Antonio, and was occupying those places, was arranged for should necessity arise for additional troops. General MacArthur himself proceeded to San Fernando early in the morning of the 11th and thence to San Antonio, taking a small cavalry escort, two field guns of Andrews' battery (Light Battery E, First Artillery) and two gatling guns. Meeting the column from Calulut by arrangement he had personal charge of the expedition from that point.

The march of the Ninth Infantry and the battalion of the Twenty-second was conducted by a staff officer and native guides, by the shortest way across country and along paths to the Bacolor-Angeles Road, and then on that road to San Antonio. No wagon transportation was necessary, for communication was to be established with San Fernando via Bacolor. The road was found in a horrible condition from the heavy rains. The men carried one day's rations and one hundred and fifty rounds of ammunition per man. Arriving in the vicinity of Santa Rita preparation was made for deployment and attack if resistance were made, but the enemy had already departed and the troops entered without deployment. The town was found to be pretty generally occupied by its inhabitants, the priest and a number of the prominent men being in their houses. The troops took quarters in the convent and in vacated houses near the plaza. Telegraphic communication with San Fernando via Bacolor was es-

Digitized by Google

tablished within an hour or two after arrival, and orders were given to Lieutenant Dalton, acting Quartermaster and Commissary, then at San Fernando, to get out necessary supplies. Rations which had been put en route from San Fernando early in the day arrived before dark.

The following day, August 12, 1899, the Second Battalion, still commanded by Captain Noyes, was ordered on a reconnaissance to Porac, seven miles away. The orders for that trip were conveyed by Major-General MacArthur, verbally, about eleven o'clock A. M., and directed a reconnaissance to ascertain if the enemy were still in Porac, the battalion to move out as soon as the men should finish their dinner. A gatling gun under Lieutenant Bridges, Twenty-second Infantry, and a detachment of mounted scouts under Lieutenant Wooten, corps of engineers, were attached to the battalion. The march of seven miles was made slowly, the difficulties of the movements of an advance guard and flankers in the tropical grass, rice paddies, and thickets delaying the column, and contact with the enemy's outposts on the crest of a hill near the town was not attained until 5:30 P. M.; the town itself was in a valley and hidden from view. Shortly prior to this, firing had been heard a half mile or so to the left, which proved to have been called forth from an outpost of the enemy by a small detachment of mounted officers and men of the Thirty-sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, headed by the ever-active Colonel Bell. The extent of the enemy's line demonstrated his presence in considerable force, which, being ascertained, the battalion, after driving in the outpost, withdrew and returned to Santa Rita. Two men of the battalion were wounded in this encounter, viz., Private James Brown, Company E, arm, slight; Private Henry Shierloh, Company I, foot, severe.



Outpost of Ninth Infantry on the Porac Road, Santa Rita, Philippine Islands, September 18, 1899. This is the road over which Wheeler's advance was made against Porac, September 28, 1899.

Digitized by Google

On August 15, 1899, the force at Santa Rita was reduced one half, the battalion of the Twenty-second Infantry and the First Battalion, Ninth Infantry (Captain Dodd's), also the artillery, with the exception of a mountain gun, being returned to San Fernando. General MacArthur also returned to San Fernando with his staff, leaving Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge in command at Santa Rita. Two days later, August 17th, companies G and L, under command of Captain Dodds, which had gone to San Fernando, were sent from that place to Guagua to take possession of and occupy the town which was done without resistance. Captain Anderson was detached from his company, A, and ordered to San Fernando to command the two companies, F and M, remaining there. The regiment had stations as thus arranged for the remainder of the month of August, and until September 28th. At no time in this period, however, was there any permanency given to the stations. Orders for a movement against Porac were expected from day to day, and the regimental depot (Quartermaster's and Commissary's) was maintained at San Fernando.

Brigadier-General Joseph Wheeler, United States Volunteers, was assigned to the command of the First Brigade on September 1st, relieving Colonel Liscum, who returned to duty as commanding officer of the regiment September 6th. On this date Colonel Liscum assigned Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge to command of the First Battalion, relieving Captain Dodds, and Captain Peter C. Harris, who had joined the regiment by promotion a few days previous, was appointed Quartermaster, vice Captain Finley incapacitated by sickness for further service, at that time, in the tropics. Captain Finley remained sick in the First Reserve Hospital, Manila, for several months and was finally returned to the United States to recuperate his health. Captain Noyes returned to duty as Adjutant of the regiment on August 19, 1899, the command of the Second Battalion falling to Captain F. L. Palmer, then to Captain Ramsey, and on September 1st was given to Major Regan. Captain Ramsey was detached from the regiment on September 1st for duty as Chief Commissary, First Division, Eighth Army Corps, Major-General Lawton having sought his services for the arduous campaign northward from San Isidro. Lieutenant Wise was detached August 27th, having been appointed Major Forty-seventh Infantry, United States Volunteers. At General Wheeler's request he was assigned to duty as acting aide-de-camp until the arrival of the Forty-seventh from the United States. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge took station at Guagua September 6th, the day following the arrival of Colonel Liscum at Santa Rita. The regiment was so short of officers at this time, 21 being absent, that Colonel

Digitized by Google

Liscum made a special report on the subject, giving a list of those present and those absent, stating the duty of each, and showing that three second Lieutenants, with less than six months' experience, were commanding companies, only one company was commanded by a Captain, no officer was available for appointment as Commissary, nor to fill a vacancy in the office of Battalion Adjutant, and two of the First Lieutenants commanding companies had but little experience as officers. He pointed out that ninety per cent of the enlisted men were recruits, and hoped that absent officers would be ordered to join.[90] The scarcity of officers was a common hardship in all regular regiments, due to the sickness resulting from the Cuban campaign of the previous year, and to the requirements of the War Department for officers for the new volunteers' regiments, and General MacArthur, who could see no remedy for the conditions, expressed the opinion that Regimental Commanders might have to look to their non-commissioned officers to have command of companies in the line of battle, assigning officers to command of two companies for administration.

The service of the regiment at Santa Rita and Guagua gave more intimate acquaintance with the life and occupation of the Filipino people in small towns than had heretofore been possible, for the people had remained and continued their usual avocations. The church at Santa Rita was open for the use of worshippers and the people went daily into the fields to cultivate rice. Large quantities of sugar which had been stored in the vicinity were hauled to Guagua and shipped to Manila. The market-place at Guagua exhibited much of the activity of times of peace. Pursuant to instructions an effort was made to institute civil government and to open the schools, but owing to the fears of the principal men that they would suffer death at the hands of the insurgents if they showed any interest in American constructive efforts, but little progress could be made. It was necessary at this very time to maintain strong outposts and be on the alert against attacks. A determined attack was made on the night of September 9th at both Guagua and Santa Rita, and a number of other night alarms, during that month, called the garrisons to arms. The only casualties, however, while at these stations, occurred in a suprise of an outpost at Guagua October 3, 1899. The account of the affair as reported by a board of officers was to the following effect:

[90] L. S. September 11, 1899. The men received in the United States in the reestablishment of the regiment were classed as recruits; 224 recruits, were received from the United States while the regiment was at Santa Rita. See R. O. No. 160, 162, 167, 169, 173, 183, 185.

Digitized by Google

The outpost took station at noon and consisted of one Corporal and three privates posted on the Guagua — San Antonio Road. Just before going out the commanding officer, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, called the Corporal to his quarters and personally instructed him that he had information that a large body of insurrectors were in front of the outposts; that he, the Corporal, was to exercise especial vigilance, require the men to keep on their belts continuously, and their rifles immediately at hand. These instructions were repeated by the Corporal to the other members of the outpost, and he also caused them to fill the magazine of their rifles. At about 3:45 P. M. one member of this guard, the sentinel, was sitting on a stool in the road. The remaining three members were on a bench parallel to the road, about three paces in rear of the sentinel. A large number of people passed continuously on a path between the bench and sentinel, those with bundles being stopped by the sentinel for examination. The rifles of the three men on the bench were immediately to their left and rear. At the hour named, 3:45 P. M., there were seen approaching Guagua, at a distance of about 100 yards, a file of seven or eight men, but no particular attention was paid to them, as it was not unusual for such a number of men dressed in white to be passing at the same time. As these men marched along the path, passing between the sentinel and the bench, one of them, slightly in advance of the others, stopped suddenly, unsheathed immediately a bolo, hidden on his person, and stabbed the sentinel from his right and rear near the heart. The sentry had his gun in his lap at the time. The other members of the guard jumped for their guns which were in reach of the nearest who grabbed his rifle, but it was immediately seized by two natives who wrested it from him. Being thus unarmed he escaped, jumping into and swimming a river. The second man, Private Arthur W. Chambers, Company L, Ninth Infantry, was killed. The Corporal made a struggle to reach his rifle but was seized by several natives and was unable to reach it. He, then, also escaped, jumped over a fence, and through some paddy fields, running into Guagua and notifying the commanding officer, who immediately ordered a company to the scene and followed in person. Every effort was made to discover the murderers, but without success. The body of the sentinel, Private Joseph F. Campbell, Company L, Ninth Infantry, was found lying on the ground.[91]

The next operation in which the regiment joined was the assault and capture of Porac, September 28, 1899. For this movement the two San Fernando companies, F and M, were marched to Santa Rita on

[91] L. R. 820 — 1899. (Report of Board of Officers.)

Digitized by Google

the 27th, and the Second and Third Battalions were prepared to go forward the following morning. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, with Companies G and L, was to remain at Guagua. Major Regan was given command of Santa Rita, having Companies F and M, two companies of of the Twenty-fourth Infantry, and a troop of the Fourth Cavalry as his command. Captain Anderson was assigned temporarily to command of the Second Battalion.

The march to Porac and attack of that place was made under the direction of Brigadier-General Wheeler, the troops from Santa Rita uniting with the Thirty-Sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, which had approached on another road from their stations at Bacolor, Dolores and San Antonio. General McArthur was present in person, accompanying the Thirty-sixth Infantry from Bacolor. The engagement was a spirited one while driving in the first line, but no serious resistance was afterwards met, notwithstanding expectations of a severe fight on account of great natural strength of position at the river. Colonel Liscum and the Battalion Commanders remaining mounted, were conspicuous figures in the assault and encouraged men and officers by their personal gallantry. The following quotations from the reports of Battalion and Company Commanders give in detail an account of the part taken by the Ninth Infantry.

Captain Anderson, commanding Second Battalion:

"The Second Battalion, consisting of Companies B, C, E and I left Santa Rita, P. I., about 5:15 A. M., September 28, 1899. When the column had advanced about two miles from the bridge on west Porac road, I was informed by staff officers that small bands of armed natives were seen to the left of the road. I immediately directed Captain Palmer to form his company as advance guard, putting flankers on each side of the road. Owing to the thick cane-fields on both flanks, the forward movement was necessarily a slow one. This formation was maintained until we arrived at the junction of the east and west Porac roads, when Companies B, C and E were deployed to the right of the road, and I Company held in support. After advancing a short distance in the direction of Porac, the enemy opened fire from his line of works. Company E, under the command of Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel advanced steadily, firing as they advanced, until at a distance of less than fifty yards from the enemy's position. At this point the command 'charge' was given, which was promptly responded to by the men, which resulted in driving the enemy from their position and through the town. After crossing the Porac River, the command advanced to a point about one and one-half miles north of the city, where it halted and outposts were

Digitized by Google

established. The company was relieved from outpost duty about 2 P. M. by the First Battalion. To the best of my knowledge and belief Companies E and I, Ninth Infantry, were the first organizations to reach Porac; the latter company being in support did not fire a single shot during the entire day. Companies B and C connected with the Thirty-sixth Regiment Volunteers."

Captain F. L. Palmer, commanding Company I:

"Company was formed at 5 o'clock A. M. and marched to bridge in Santa Rita, where it halted and awaited formation of column of which it was to be advance guard. Column moved to bridge on west Porac Road, starting at 5:15 A. M. Upon passing this bridge advance guard formation was taken, no flankers being sent out, however, until after marching about three miles, when some insurgents were reported discovered on left flank; company was formed in line of skirmishers on road and advanced by the flank along road. As no fire developed flankers were sent out and the company resumed the march in advance guard formation until about seven miles from Santa Rita, where it was deployed to right of road in line of skirmishers, its left resting on road. From this point the company became reserve company of the Second Battalion, Ninth Infantry, advancing and continually closing upon Company E, which was directly in its front during the action which began about 9:30. On reaching the trenches of the enemy, which had been evacuated, the company was proceeding down a bluff behind trenches, when an order erroneously understood caused me to withdraw it to top of bluff. There I became convinced that the order had been erroneously transmitted to me, it having been for two men to go back to a certain mango tree instead of for the company to go back. Orders were given at once by Regimental Commander for company to advance, which was done promptly, the company following immediately behind Company E, through southern portion of Porac to the river, and across into main part of town, where we arrived about 10:30 A. M. I and E Companies were then deployed, and marched northward through town to outskirts, where Company I was held to guard against return of enemy until about 1 P. M., when it was withdrawn to the church in the town where it bivouacked for the night.

"There were with the company in this action 2 officers and 73 enlisted men. Casualties were two: Private Thomas F. McCarthy, gunshot wound in neck, severe; Corporal Henry Morray, contused wound in back right shoulder, both occurring about 10 o'clock A. M. while company was in reserve, and during first part of attack. I was temporarily overcome by heat at about 11 A. M. while advancing through Porac in rear

Digitized by Google

of church, and Second Lieutenant F. R. Lang, Ninth Infantry, commanded company during my absence of about an hour.

"My special attention was attracted throughout the action of the 28th to the excellent conduct of the enlisted men of the company, without known exception, a majority of whom are men in their first enlistment, and many of them recruits who had just joined, under the trying conditions of being in reserve and under heavy fire while themselves unable to fire a shot."

Lieutenant Munson, commanding Company B:

"The company left Santa Rita at 5:20 A. M. on the 28th; its position in column was the right center of the leading battalion. At about 8:45 A. M., and when within a thousand yards from the town of Porac, I was ordered by the Battalion Commander to deploy my company in line of skirmishers and move to the right and endeavor to connect with the left of the Thirty-sixth Volunteer Infantry. After extending as far to the right as I could without losing touch with Company C, which was on my left, I was ordered to fire a few volleys at the enemy which was located in a bamboo thicket about four hundred yards to my front. Our fire was evidently effective, as, after the third volley, it was no longer returned. After waiting about twenty minutes for orders to advance and receiving none, I pushed forward, and passed through the line of bamboos that was in our front, and was much surprised to see that a battalion of the Thirty-sixth Volunteer Infantry had completely covered our front. They had evidently taken up this position soon after we had ceased firing but ran a great risk in not first informing me of their intention. I now ordered Lieutenant Waldron, who was on my left, to move his company to the left until he reached an open field, then move to the right, and endeavor to join the balance of the battalion which I thought was somewhere in our left front. Passing across a sunken road I happened to see some of our troops at the farther end of it. I joined them with my company, and found them to be a part of our artillery detachment. Pushing on farther to the front I found Colonel Liscum, the Regimental Commander, and after reporting to him I was ordered to place my company along the left of the road and await further orders. At three P. M. I was ordered to move the company back into the town and quarter it in the convent. . . . .

"My only casualty was one man overcome from heat. Too much cannot be said of the splendid behavior of the men while under fire."

Lieutenant Waldron, commanding Company C:

"The company was formed at Santa Rita, and took its position as left center company of the battalion, marched over a fairly good road

Digitized by Google

a distance of seven and a half miles, and, when about 1,000 yards from the enemy's line of works, deployed as skirmishers on the right side of the west Porac Road, and proceeded to move forward with the line, and when within 800 yards of the enemy he opened fire from breastworks, which was promptly returned by volley-firing. One large cane-field in the line of advance was very difficult to pass through. When within 200 yards of the enemy's position the fire of the right platoon of the company was masked by a detachment of the Thirty-sixth United States Volunteer Infantry coming in its immediate front. While passing through the dense cane the company lost touch with the companies on the left, and became separated from them. By this time the other two companies had entered the town and were pressing forward. The company joined the battalion some minutes later. The company was quartered in the Porac Convent where dinner was cooked, and remained there until 5 P. M., when it was detailed on outpost duty, being relieved at daylight on the morning of September 29th.

One prisoner and one Remington rifle was captured by company.

Lieutenant F. H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E:

"The company formed the rear company of the battalion on the march from Santa Rita until the deployment was made, when it formed on the left of the battalion passing through the ranks of I Company, which passed from advance guard to reserve company. E Company deployed in a large open field nearly level, and advanced at once towards the line of bamboo in which it was supposed were the enemy's trenches.

"The company at once opened fire and advanced steadily, halting occasionally to volley the bamboo. The first line of bamboo was passed and there the enemy was developed about 600 yards in our front. The company continued to advance, occasionally halting to fire two or three volleys, until within 100 yards of the enemy's trenches, when it charged with a cheer, driving out the insurgents who had maintained their position until we were within less than 50 yards of them. The company passed rapidly over the trenches, the advance men firing rapidly at the insurgents clambering down the steep hillside and running through the brush. We continued to advance rapidly through the town until we reached the crest of the river, killing some men, capturing others, and taking some rifles. On reaching the street parallel to the river, the company moved by column right, and then seeing more insurgents to the left, that part which had changed direction was directed to move by the left flank and with a rush reached the river bank. Without hesitation the men scrambled down the bank and forded the stream, though subjected to a strong cross-fire delivered from behind barricades and en-

Digitized by Google

trenchments on the other bank, driving the enemy out through the town into the fields and hills beyond, thus being the first company in the town and across the river.

"The pursuit was continued about one and one-half miles beyond the town where the company was halted and line of outposts established. Though our advance had been rapid, yet the flight of the insurgents had been precipitate and we were unable to catch up with them, though firing at separate groups and squads.

"The company captured 4 prisoners and 3 rifles — 1 Mauser and 2 Remingtons.

"The action of the men of the company was admirable throughout, and was especially noticeable in the men recently assigned to the company, and who had not been under fire previous to this action. They behaved with coolness and steadiness equal to that of their more tried companions.

"The company rested in Porac during the rest of the day and night, having quarters assigned in the church."

Captain McCaleb, commanding Third Battalion:

"The battalion left Santa Rita at 5 o'clock A. M., forming the rear of a column consisting of two battalions, Ninth Infantry, a detachment of engineers, and artillery detachment with two guns. On arriving near the point of junction of the eastern and western roads from Santa Rita to Porac, about a mile from the latter place, deployment was made to the front on the left of the road, Companies H, A, and D, in line from right to left, and Company K, held in column of files on the left, during the advance, to cover the left flank which otherwise would have been exposed. The battalion was moved forward in the formation until the point of the advance guard and the road to the right was reached. Here a halt was made to await the deployment of the Second Battalion. On receiving a signal to advance the line moved steadily forward in face of a fire from the enemy, opened at about 1,200 yards distance, our lines being kneeled occasionally, and firing by volleys to keep down the enemy's fire. The command passed over to the enemy's position and without cover of any kind. Immediately beyond the hostile line as first observed, our line, which had advanced with much precision, suddenly encountered rough declivities and rock, marshy and otherwise broken country, bordering the Porac River. An imperative delay was caused after crossing the river in reforming the line before continuing the advance, as reports had come that the strongest position of the enemy was in the hills beyond the river. After the advance was resumed orders were received to move the battalion on the Porac-Dolores Road,

Digitized by Google

and the line was promptly drawn in to the right. Near the river numbers of natives were found seeking shelter in a sugar-house, and two others captured in the vicinity, apparently insurgents. They were left under guard and action subsequently reported. One Remington rifle was captured by Company K. Casualties: One private, Company D, slightly wounded in foot. The command behaved finely throughout. Officers present: Captain Sigworth, Lieutenants Frazier, Gibson, Hammond, Brown and Smith with companies, and Lieutenant Connell, Battalion Adjutant. My attention was on several occasions attracted by the efficient work of First Sergeant Wesley Bickhart, Company H, on the advance and after crossing the river."



Several thousand Macabebes and Amigos who were caught during the north advance and passed out through the lines.

Lieutenant Gibson, commanding Company H:

"The company left Santa Rita, P. I., at 5:30 A. M., being the leading company of the battalion under command of Captain McCaleb. Marching up the west road to Porac to within about three hundred yards of what is known as the 'big tree,' the company was deployed just to the left of the road at about 8:45 A. M.; the deployment being perpendicular to the course of the east road to Porac at its conjunction with the west road to Porac, and at about 1,000 yards from the position of the enemy in front. The other companies being deployed, and the command to advance being given by the battalion commander, H Company moved forward, firing volleys at the position of the enemy as indicated by the smoke from their rifles. The enemy deserted their trenches when our forces were about 400 yards from them. H Company continued its advance in line of skirmishers over the trenches, down the hillside, and across the river, where a short halt was made. It then continued the advance through the southwestern portion of the town of Porac without encountering resistance, and continued on until reach-

Digitized by Google

ing the northwestern limits of the town. It was there halted about 10:30 A. M., and remained until ordered into quarters. Two men were found concealed in a sugar-house just before the company crossed the Porac River, and were taken prisoners and turned over to Major Wise, of General Wheeler's Staff. These prisoners were not found with arms in their possession and persisted in the statement that they had none, yet, from the circumstances of the case, there is no reasonable doubt that they were insurgents. No arms were captured."

Lieutentant Allen Smith, Jr., commanding Company A:

"My company was deployed thirty paces to the right of H Company in line of skirmishers, with one pace interval. Soon after the deploying the enemy disclosed their position by firing with black powder a number of scattering shots at one thousand yards directly in our front and about northwest of us.

"We advanced across the open, halting several times and firing volleys, either by platoon or company. When within a couple of hundred yards of the enemy's works their firing ceased. They had been firing from a sunken road. I found some difficulty in getting the men up the farther side of this depression and was delayed sometime before I could again form my line and move forward. Due to this delay I lost touch with the company on my right, but pushed forward into a low stretch of wet and muddy rice paddies. I halted here for fear of getting in front of the right of the battalion. With my glasses I could see about sixty insurgents, led by a man on a white horse, ascending a hill about eighteen hundred yards to our front. Off to our right, about four hundred yards, in an adjoining rice-field, I saw some thirty natives with guns rapidly making their way towards the foot-hills. I swung the company in that direction and opened fire. By order of Captain McCaleb I next moved by the right flank, crossed the Porac River, entered the town of Porac, formed the company and again moved forward. After advancing about two hundred yards we again marched by the right flank and assembled on the road. I captured two prisoners and turned them over to the regimental Adjutant. I had no casualties.

"The men conducted themselves most creditably, keeping a splendid line under quite severe fire.

"That afternoon and night my company was on outpost northwest of the town."

Lieutenant Frazier, commanding Company D.:

"The company fully equipped, 150 round of ammunition and one day's rations carried per man, left Santa Rita, P. I., at 5 A. M., September 28, 1899, and proceeded by marching to Porac, P. I. The company

Digitized by Google

occupied a position on the firing line on the left of the battalion, and encountered the enemy's outposts about two miles from the town. After an engagement of about one-half an hour proceeded to Porac without further resistance. Distance about 8 miles. Casualties: Private William Horan, hit in left heel by spent ball, slight. No prisoners or arms captured."

Captain Sigworth, commanding Company K.:

"As we approached Porac, the enemy having been located at about 1,200 yards in our front, the battalion commander deployed companies A, D and H in line of skirmishers at one pace interval and thirty paces between companies, and moved forward. I at once formed my company in single file, at one pace distance, and moved forward, keeping one hundred paces in rear of the left flank of the line of skirmishers, as previously ordered. We received a few shots from the left front, at long range, to which I did not reply as I did not consider it judicious to disclose our formation at so early a stage, and the enemy fled from that position of the field early in the engagement. My company did no firing until in the river valley, when two volleys were fired at fleeing insurgents. Having crossed the river my battalion commander gave me general instructions to cover the left, and I moved westward, about a mile across the rice-fields, until stopped by an aide sent out by General Wheeler. The men all behaved splendidly under fire, notwithstanding that there are a number of recruits in the company.

"Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown rendered valuable services throughout the day."

Porac was not permanently occupied after its capture, but the command was marched on the following day to Angeles, which had already been captured and occupied by other regiments of the division, arriving there about noon. Distance marched about 7 miles. The two battalions Ninth Infantry were assigned quarters in abandoned native houses, and two days later given better accommodations near the center of the town. On October 5th the band was forwarded to Angeles from San Fernando; two companies of the First Battalion arrived from Guagua, under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, and the other two companies of that battalion from Santa Rita, under Major Regan. The railroad, which was destroyed by the insurgents prior to the advance of August 9th, had been rebuilt from San Fernando to Angeles in September by the Quartermaster's Department, and the companies from Guagua and Santa Rita were transported by train from San Fernando. The regiment was, therefore, once more united, and, in accordance with General Orders No. 153, Headquarters of the Army, dated August 21, 1899,

Digitized by Google

which was received early in October, the companies were reassigned in battalions — A, B, C, and D constituting the First Battalion, E, F, G and H the Second, and I, K, L and M the Third. The Battalion Commanders were Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Major Regan, and Captain McCaleb.[92] The regimental depot was transferred from San Fernando to Angeles about the middle of October.

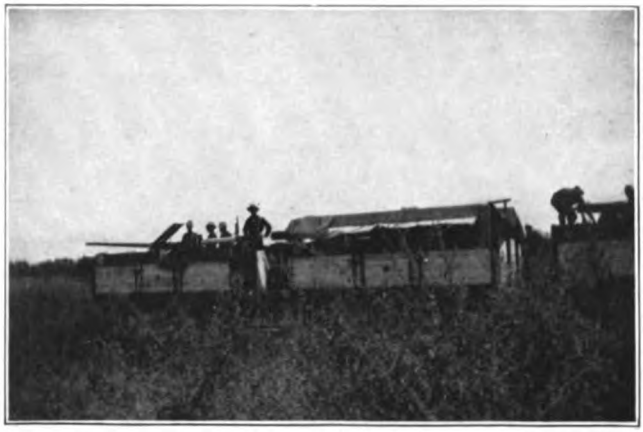


The lookout up the tree at the Mabalacat road and railroad crossing.
This man is within six hundred yards of the enemy and his duty is a dangerous one. Angeles, Philippine Islands, October 21, 1899.

At Angeles General MacArthur's Division once more faced a strong body of insurgents, and outpost duty continued to be as unremitting as at San Fernando and Santa Rita. The weather was very much improved, however, the rainy season having passed. There was firing along the outposts almost every night during the first half of the month, and on October 11th and 16th there were night attacks of considerable force, that of the 16th being a determined attack on all sides by a large number of insurgent troops. The Ninth Infantry line was on the north side of the town, running west from the railroad track. The regiment also supplied a strong detached post at the railroad bridge northeast of the city, supporting field guns at that place, alternating in this duty with the Twelfth Infantry. The line connected with the Seventeenth Infantry on the right and the Twelfth Infantry on the left. The front was about 1,200 yards, occupied by five posts, No. 1, at the intersection of the Mabalacat Road and the railroad, 25 men — this post acting as a support to the detached post at the railroad bridge; No. 2, about 300 yards to the left, on the road, 8 men; No. 3, 300 yards further, 8 men; No. 4, 300 yards further, 8 men; No. 5, 300 yards further, 16 men. Each post was sheltered by a small earthwork. The usual tactics were pursued at Angeles in strengthening the line on the outbreak of

[92] General Order No. 6, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, October 5, 1899.

Digitized by Google



The armored train.
Angeles, Philippine Islands, October 21, 1899. These cars protected with boiler plate and armed with three-inch naval quick-firing guns, played an important part in the northern advance of General MacArthur's Division.

firing, as had been in vogue at San Fernando. The insurgent line was even nearer the town than at San Fernando so that bullets and shell usually flew through the streets and penetrated the Nipa shacks during an attack. Brigadier-General Wheeler mentions in his reports the following engagements or outpost firing during the month, at Angeles, viz., before daylight, October 10th, at 10 A. M.; October 10th, 4 P. M.; October 10th, 3:40 A. M.; October 11th, 4:40 A. M.; October 12th, 9:45 P. M.; October 12th to 12:20 A. M.; October 13th, 11:30 P. M.; October 13th, 2 A. M.; October 15th, 2:30 A. M. to 6:30 A. M.; October 16th, 5:45 P. M.; October 16th, and scattering shots on October 17th, 18th, 19th and 20th.[93]

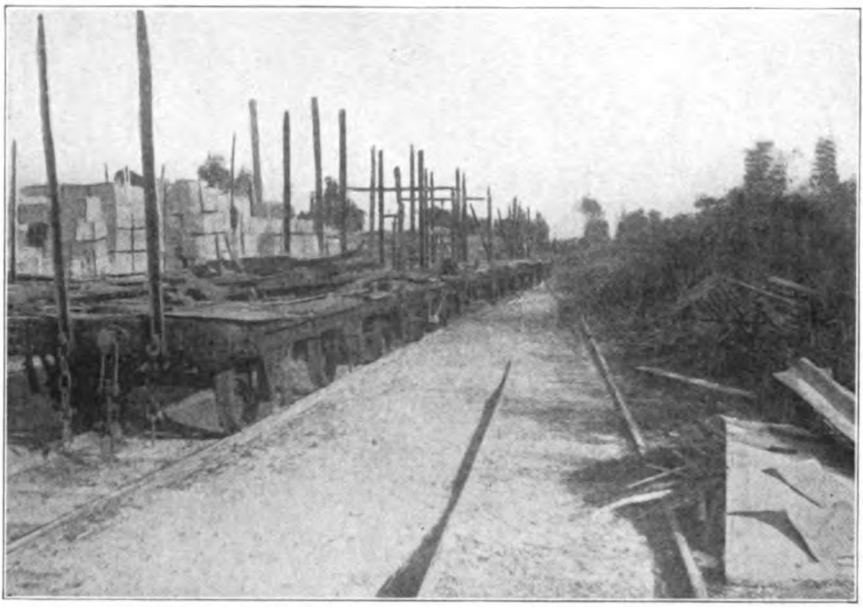


The church at Angeles, Philippine Islands, October 21, 1899. This church was used as the Second Division Hospital. The tower was used as a lookout. In the tower was a fine high-power telescope under charge of a signal detachment. From there could be seen the country for many miles around and the insurgents in our front could be watched with accuracy.

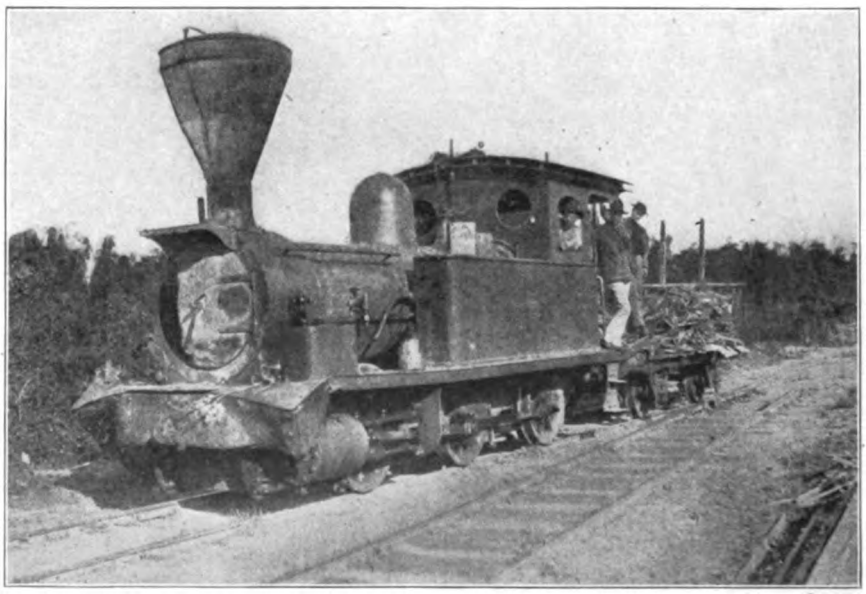
The attack on October 11th

[93] In Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 238.

Digitized by Google



MacArthur's division supplied by such rolling stock during northern advance.



A patched-up engine used to haul supplies for MacArthur's troops.

Digitized by Google

(before daylight) was attended by the following casualities in the regiment:

Wounded: Corporal John W. Lattimore, Company C, in foot, slight. Hit while on duty in office at Headquarters of First Brigade.[94]

Private Axel Skogsberg, Company F, by piece of United States shell, on outer side right thigh, severe. (Exploded while artillery was in position behind infantry.)

Private Christopher E. Whitesides, Company F, gunshot below left nipple, slight.

Private Frank W. Schork, Company L, gunshot, left forearm, slight. Shot while in quarters, sick.

Private John F. McGraw, Company L, gunshot, left upper-arm, slight. Shot while en route with company to re-enforce outpost.[95]

During the firing of October 13th (before midnight) Private Leslie E. Cleland, Company L, received a severe gunshot wound in right-upper arm while on outpost.[96]

On October 16th (between 2:30 A. M. and daylight) the following men were wounded:

Private George K. Webster, Company D.

Private John Kelley, Company H.

Private Charles S. Wilson, Company I.

Private Albert Durand, Company I.[97]

The attack on October 16th was the last aggressive effort of the insurgents in northern Luzon. About 3,500 men were supposed to have been brought into action on this occasion, and the line extended around three sides of the town — east, north and west, General Wheeler's. report[98] gave numerous particulars of the engagement, and the following extracts are quoted as showing the part taken by the Ninth Infantry:

"At 2:30 this morning, October 16th, the enemy opened a warm fire with small arms, which was principally directed against the bridge guard of 100 men, the enemy's fire coming from both the right and the left of the railroad, the enemy on the left or west of the railroad being very near the railroad, and those on the right or east of the railroad extending to about 400 yards from the railroad.

"I reached the front at 2:40 A. M., at which time the enemy opened with artillery. They had one rapid-fire gun at a point about 45° east of north from the south end of the bridge, and about 1,800 yards dis-

[94] Reported by General Wheeler.
[95] Return of Casualties, October 11, 1899.
[96] Return of Casualties, October 13, 1899.
[97] Return of Casualties, October 16, 1899.
[98] Report of the War Department for 1900; vol. i, part 8, p. 220.

Digitized by Google

tant from the bridge. They also had a 3-inch gun and also what appeared to be a rapid-fire gun a short distance to the left or west of the railroad. They also had another gun farther to the west. I took the bearing of the location of this gun yesterday from a point on the river about 400 yards west of the bridge, and from that point the gun was about 80° west of north. This gun had evidently been moved nearer to our line, as its missiles reached points half a mile or more farther in than they did the previous night. This morning I took the bearing of the location of this gun on the parapet of our intrenchment of the Ninth Infantry outpost, which is located on the road from the cemetery to the telegraph station, and about 475 yards southerly from the telegraph station. A shell cut a furrow through the crest of this intrenchment, and the direction of the furrow indicated that the gun was stationed 50° north of west from this point.

"At the same time that the artillery opened, 2:40 A. M., a warm fire was directed upon the Seventeenth Infantry outpost on the Mabalacat Road, commanded by First Lieutenant Frank J. Morrow, the firing being small arms, mostly Remingtons, and from a rapid-fire gun the missiles from which were solid steel shot 1 inch in diameter and 2⅝ inches in length, with a thin brass jacket. Several of these went over the heads of the Seventeenth Infantry, and were afterwards found in the field between their position and the town. The fire upon this post was repeated about 4 o'clock. Lieutenant Morrow was not able to return this fire to advantage, and he did not reply.

"Lieutenant L. B. Lawton, Ninth Infantry, who was in command of the 100 men at the bridge, did not reply to the enemy's fire until the artillery opened at 2:40 A. M., after which he returned the fire with vigor, directing his shots as far as possible to the flashes of the enemy.

"At 2:45 A. M. I dispatched as follows:

" 'OUTPOST ON RAILROAD, 2:45 A.M., 16th.

" 'GENERAL MACARTHUR:

" 'All of the artillery is from the enemy, and most of the small arms.

" 'WHEELER.' "

"The enemy in front of the bridge guard seemed to be in considerable force, and the sound of several trumpets could be heard to the left of the railroad, and the fire from this point seemed to remain unabated for nearly an hour. I ordered the armored car to the front, which opened fire very promptly.

"The fire continued, extending to our left until it was quite warm to the west and southwest of the cemetery, and soon was heard in front of the outpost on the Porac Road.

Digitized by Google

"When this movement of the enemy became apparent I sent my aide, Lieutenant Bolles, with an orderly, with instructions that in case the enemy was in force to notify me, and at the same time, in my name, to order Colonel Liscum to send one battalion of the Ninth Infantry to that point. The firing was quite heavy, but Captain Robert K. Evans, commanding battalion, Twelfth Infantry, and Lieutenant Frederick S. Wild, who was using the gatling gun, and 83 men in the cemetery, with excellent effect, and Lieutenant Alfred T. Smith, who commanded outpost on Porac Road, assured Lieutenant Bolles that there was no need for re-enforcements, and he so notified me. . . . . .

"At 3:25 A. M. two 3.2-inch guns, under Lieutenant Hamilton, reached the front and took their places in the embrasures near the bridge, and, together with the guns in the armored car, promptly directed a fire upon the various points from which the enemy's fire emanated, covering a field of fire for nearly a mile above and nearly a mile below the bridge.

"The six-pound gun in the armored car was fired twice. The gatling gun in the car fired about 1,800 shots. These guns were commanded by Lieutenant Charles H. Bridges.

"The 3.2-inch guns, under Lieutenant Hamilton, fired 32 shrapnels and 13 shells. . . . .

"At about 5 A. M. warm firing was directed against all the troops on our right. That upon Lieutenant Lawton's line came from a point down the river and east of the railroad, a cloud of smoke showing clearly the location of the enemy. The fire was directed against the right of Lieutenant Lawton's line. It was replied to by the gatling gun, under Lieutenant Bridges, in the armored car, one 3.2-inch gun, under Lieutenant Hamilton, and the infantry, under Lieutenant Lawton. This firing seemed also directed upon the post of the Seventeenth Infantry on the Mabalacat Road, which had been re-enforced early in the action by Captain Daniel H. Brush, Lieutenant Morrow still commanding the outpost. These officers were now able to return the fire, which they did with effect. There appeared to be other forces of insurgents firing upon this post from down the Mabalacat Road, but all these attacking parties were driven off by a well-directed fire of three or four hundred shots.

"For the first time during the series of night attacks the enemy's line was extended around and across the Magalang Road so as to confront and to even fire upon the right of the outpost on this road.

"This force was repulsed by Lieutenant Robert C. Davis and Lieutenant Robert O. Van Horn, with a fire of about 3,600 shots.

Digitized by Google

"Lieutenant Lawton averaged about 24 shots per man, his total shots being 2,400.

"The following soldiers of the Ninth Infantry were wounded: Private George K. Webster, Company D; Private John Kelley, Company H; Private Charles C. Wilson, Company I; Private Albert Durand, Company I.

"Private George K. Webster, of Company D, Ninth Infantry, was wounded while the company was formed in the street and held as a reserve, at about 4 A. M. The shot came from a southwesterly direction.

"Private John Kelley, Company H, Ninth Infantry, was wounded about 3 A. M., while the company was being deployed in the field, directly in front of the road which runs from the cemetery to the Ninth Infantry Post, on the railroad where it crosses the Mabalacat Road. The bullet came from a northerly direction.

"Privates Wilson and Durand, of Company I, of the Ninth Infantry, were wounded by a projectile 1½ inches in diameter by 3½ inches in length, the entire loaded projectile being 6½ inches in length. The brass jacket, which was afterwards found, showed it to have been made in Connecticut. It is supposed to be either a Hotchkiss or Nordenfeldt. These men were on post behind a trench at a point 475 yards southerly from the Ninth Infantry Post, which is stationed at the point where the Mabalacat Road crosses the railroad. The furrow made by the shell in the crest of the breastworks indicated that the shell came from a gun which was 5° north of west from the trench.[99]....

"It was hoped that by withholding our fire the enemy would approach so that, notwithstanding the darkness, the figures could be discerned sufficiently to make our fire effective. The enemy did so approach at two points, and their position was located at other points by the flashes from their guns. Full advantage was taken of such opportunities. The reports of the officers on the firing line showed that we fired over 11,744 shots from our magazine rifles, 3,300 from a gatling gun, and 47 shots from our artillery.

"The enemy was very lavish in their expenditure of ammunition. As far as I could learn all officers on the line reported the insurgent fire as very much greater than ours, and officers at other points on the line estimated the volume of the enemy's fire at three or four times ours.

"It is very evident that the insurgents had made very careful and complete preparation. They sent up signal lights and frequently sounded trumpets at different parts of their line.

[99] Report here gives names of Seventeenth Infantry men wounded. List of Ninth Infantry wounded agrees with Return of Casualties, October 16, 1899.

Digitized by Google

"The insurgent forces above and below the bridge commenced their fire simultaneously, and it soon spread so as to be directed into the town from three sides.

"The distance from their extreme left to their extreme right was about 3¾ miles. The line was not continuous, there being several large gaps or intervals."

During the tour of service at Angeles, as formerly at San Fernando, and later at Tarlac, the band maintained its good musical reputation, and furnished concerts regularly. It was so quartered in the town that in the enemy's attacks it came under fire. On the advance from San Fernando to Calulut several of its members were detached as hospital assistants and were active on the field of battle.



The Outpost at the railroad bridge, Angeles, Philippine Islands, October 21, 1899. This was the extreme advanced position. It was strongly intrenched and was held by one company of the Ninth Infantry and a platoon of Andrews' battery of three, two-inch guns, supported by the armored car.

The regiment furnished alternately with the Twelfth Infantry a train guard to protect the railroad train between Angeles and San Fernando. No special incident occurred in this service, the duty not falling to the Ninth Infantry on the one occasion that the train was derailed and fired upon by the insurgents.

There were so many recruits who had never received instructions in firing that authority was given to institute target practice. Targets were placed in front of the outposts, the line of fire being toward the enemy. This impudence was resented, and the fire was returned, resulting in combats, sometimes involving the use of a field gun.

A large percentage of the small arms ammunition was found to be defective, rendering all that the regiment had open to suspicion. The cause of deterioration was believed to be the long exposure to dampness, amounting to even immersion, during the outpost duty in the rainy season

Digitized by Google

at San Fernando and Santa Rita. This ammunition was carefully gone over, and boxes and packages showing any sign of having been wet were returned to the Ordnance Depot, new ammunition being issued to replace it.[100]

A new emergency ration was issued to the regiment to be tested. It was given trial by companies going on outpost, and company commanders submitted reports. The opinions of the men themselves as to its palatability were sought, and although by some it was regarded as agreeable and satisfactory, in many cases it was unfavorably reported upon.

Notwithstanding precautions in boiling the water and protecting men as far as possible from tropical diseases, the sick report increased, and reached as high as 28 per cent before leaving Angeles, with a tendency at that time to continue increasing. Extra vigilance was enjoined on company commanders, and their attention directed to the water supply, the sinks, mess, grounds, bathing, etc.[101]

On October 9th, all regimental property which had been used at San Fernando and afterwards stored there, including enlisted men's lockers and a considerable quantity of officers baggage, was shipped under the supervision of the Quartermaster, Captain Harris, to Manila. The knapsacks, kitchen outfits and field desks had already been forwarded to Angeles. Good storehouses were obtained in Manila, and all property not required on campaign was placed there under small guard.[102]

Captain Harris then established his clothing depot and ammunition supply at Angeles.

The Adjutant at this time thoroughly organized his office for facilitating business under any conditions of campaigning that might arise. One field desk was equipped with stationery and blanks, a file of General Orders, Adjutant General's Office, and General Orders Department Pacific and Eighth Army Corps, Army Regulations, Court Martial manual, Consolidated Field Morning Report, candles and matches. This was designated the First Section, and from it could be supplied all that Headquarters and companies on the firing line needed while advancing, that is, for a period of several days, and until company field desks could be brought up. It was designated to supply immediate needs of the regiment, corresponding to the rations in the haversack. The Second Section comprised three field desks, with Headquarters and band record books, a typewriter and a box with all files of orders of the current and preceding year, to be brought up with company field desks and

[100] Circular, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, October 20, 1899.
[101] General Order No. 10, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, 1899.
[102] Circular, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, October 8, 1899.

Digitized by Google

kitchens. The Third Section comprised a large desk, tables, chairs, all other boxes of records and a box of band music remaining with the Quartermaster's Depot, and advancing with it to stations of some permanence.

While the Second Division was halting at Angeles the expeditionary force under General Lawton began its advance, and in October pushed northward on a line 20 or 30 miles east of the railroad, based on San Isidro and Calumpit. General MacArthur anticipated a long campaign in conjunction with General Lawton's expedition, and gave orders to equip for three months' hard work. Colonel Liscum's order on the subject of clothing for the campaign directed that each man should wear campaign hat, dark blue shirt, undershirt, khaki trousers, drawers, stockings, russet shoes, and leggings. In addition each man was to carry one undershirt, one pair drawers, two pairs stockings and one poncho. The Quartermaster was directed to have in bulk, for each man, one blue shirt, one undershirt, two pairs khaki trousers, one pair drawers, three pairs stockings, two pairs russet shoes, two pairs leggings, and one poncho. Personal effects of enlisted men other than the above were ordered to be packed in knapsacks and stored by the Quartermaster in Angeles in the event of an order to move. Battalion commanders were charged with seeing that rifles and all other equipment were in good and serviceable condition, and the Adjutant was charged with carrying blank forms and stationery. Experience had shown that with a little care and foresight enough of the most common forms such as ration returns, clothing schedules, etc., could be kept at hand for use of a regiment in an ordinary campaign movement, and company commanders were cautioned to use such forms for the sake of accuracy and for the convenience of all concerned.[103]

The first step by the Second Division toward bringing the northern campaign to a close was made on November 5th, when a command under Colonel J. H. Smith, composed chiefly of the Seventeenth Infantry, was ordered to advance on Magalang, northeast of Angeles. The Ninth Infantry, in common with all the remaining troops at Angeles, deployed on the outpost line, taking their positions before daylight and holding them throughout the day. There was no firing, however, in the front. The command under Colonel Smith brushed away the insurgent line on the northeast side of the city, and overcame all opposition, encountering no force sufficient to delay the movement, which continued to Magalang where that regiment halted. At night the usual outposts around Angeles were established and the main body returned to their quarters. Two days later two companies of the regiment, Companies L and M, strength-

[103] General Order No. 7, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, 1899.

Digitized by Google

ened to 75 rifles each, by detachment from Company K, and, under command of Captain McCaleb, convoyed a Seventeenth Infantry supply train half way to Magalang, returning from the half-way point the same day, after turning the train over to a Seventeenth Infantry escort. The orders for the main advance from Angeles were issued November 7, 1899, and the movement was made to Mabalacat on the 8th, the advance of the Ninth and Twelfth Infantry along the railroad being combined with operations of the Thirty-Sixth Infantry from Porac and the Seventeenth Infantry from Magalang, toward the same objective. General MacArthur's memorandum for the distribution of the troops assigned the Ninth Infantry as follows:

"Two companies, Ninth Infantry, on extreme right to operate against trench on Mabalacat Road. Two companies same battalion, Ninth Infantry, on right of Mabalacat Road deployed. One battalion, Ninth Infantry, on right of Mabalacat Road and railroad bridge, deployed along the bank of the Abacan River to the east of the railroad track.

"One battalion, Ninth Infantry, to reserve in column of fours on Mabalacat Road."[104]

Colonel Liscum's orders for the movement read as follows:

HEADQUARTERS NINTH INFANTRY,
ANGELES, P. I., November 7, 1899.

General Orders No. 11:

A forward movement will be made to-morrow the 8th inst.

All preparations will be conducted without delay.

The battalions will be formed for the movement at an hour to-morrow morning to be designated later.

Each man will go equipped and carry on his person a poncho, 150 rounds of ammunition, and cooked rations for dinner and supper to-morrow.

Each company will have two bull carts on which will be carried whatever extra ammunition there is now in the companies, and four (4) full boxes beside, which the ordnance officer of the regiment will issue this afternoon. Carry two full boxes on each bull cart. Also carry on the bull carts two days' rations, company cooking utensils, two axes, one spade, one pick, one blanket for each man, if on hand, and forage for the bulls for five days, this being issued by the Quartermaster.

"Each company will gather together the knapsacks and all surplus property in one place, under shelter in their company street, to be left

[104] General MacArthur's report. (In Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 39.)

Digitized by Google

in charge of one effective man. These men, with the men who are too sick to go forward, will constitute the guard left back. The property thus gathered up will be collected and stored in the buildings at Regimental Headquarters by the Quartermaster after the departure of the regiment.

"Each company commander will furnish the Quartermaster a list of all men comprising the guard, and sick in quarters left behind, and leave rations for them to include the 10th inst.

"The Quartermaster will remain here in charge of regimental property. The Adjutant, Quartermaster and Commissary will designate the men in their departments who will necessarily remain with their property and records.

"The guard, orderly, and messenger of Company A, Ninth Infantry, now at Regimental Headquarters, will be relieved by a guard from the band at 5:30 P. M. to-day.

"The company on outpost and the extra men with it will proceed with their preparations for the movement at once, a few men at a time coming in from the line to pack their personal effects. This work must be concluded by 5 P. M. to-day.

The regimental surgeon will make necessary preparations in his department, gathering and packing surplus stores so that the Quartermaster can take charge of them and store them properly, the surgeon arranging with the Quartermaster to this end.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Signed) C. R. NOYES,
Captain Ninth Infantry, Adjutant.

HEADQUARTERS NINTH INFANTRY,
ANGELES, P. I., November 7, 1899.

General Orders No. 12:

INSTRUCTIONS FOR ADVANCE FROM ANGELES

1. The First Brigade is the Ninth Infantry, the Twelfth Infantry, Light Battery E, Second Platoon, Light Battery K, First Platoon.

2. The First Brigade advances from Angeles on Mabalacat.

3. Co-operation of the Seventeenth Infantry on the right and Thirty-Sixth Infantry on the left.

4. Division commander will be on the railroad which will be the guide.

OPERATIONS OF THE NINTH INFANTRY

Two companies of the Ninth Infantry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, will go to the extreme right, conducted by Major Brown, to make a flank attack which is expected to draw the insurgents from the

Digitized by Google

trenches on the Mabalacat Road. Companies C and D will be the two companies to go with Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge. They will march at 4:15 A. M. His movement will begin at 6 A. M. by his watch, which must agree with Adjutant-General's time.

There will be nearly a mile from his left to the right of the other two companies of the First Battalion, and in the interval one platoon of Captain Andrew's Battery will be in position. This battery will have as its support one platoon of Company B, under Lieutenant Wallace. Lieutenant Wallace, with his platoon, will join the battery in time to march at 4:15 A. M.

The remaining company of the First Battalion, A, and the remaining platoon of Company B, will be under command of Captain Brewster. This company and platoon will be in extended order, keeping touch toward the left and on the right of the Mabalacat River. It will advance to the attack upon orders from the regimental commander. It might possibly be called upon to co-operate with the two companies under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge.

The Second Battalion will be formed on the outpost line, at the bridge, in extended order, touching the railroad and extending to Mabalacat Road, and in the advance will keep touch towards the railroad. It may be assembled to march on the Mabalacat Road in column of fours if the circumstances permit. The battalion must be in position at 5:30 A. M.

The Third Battalion will be in reserve. It will march on the Mabalacat Road starting out. One platoon of Light Battery E, Captain Andrew's Battery, will be with Third Battalion.

All outposts will be withdrawn any time after 4 A. M.

The center will advance by order of division commander when the trench on Mabalacat Road has been cleared by the flank movement of Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge's companies, or if General Liscum sees that the insurgents leave he may go forward.

Great care must be exercised in approaching Mabalacat not to fire into the column from Magalang, or the West.

The wagon train will be on the Mabalacat Road. Ambulances lead, then engineer wagon, then ammunition wagon.

If the advance is made in column of fours, on Mabalacat, any time after the trenches have been carried, there will be an advance guard.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Signed) C. R. NOYES.
Captain Ninth Infantry, Adjutant.

The severe engagement of October 16th caused the presumption

Digitized by Google

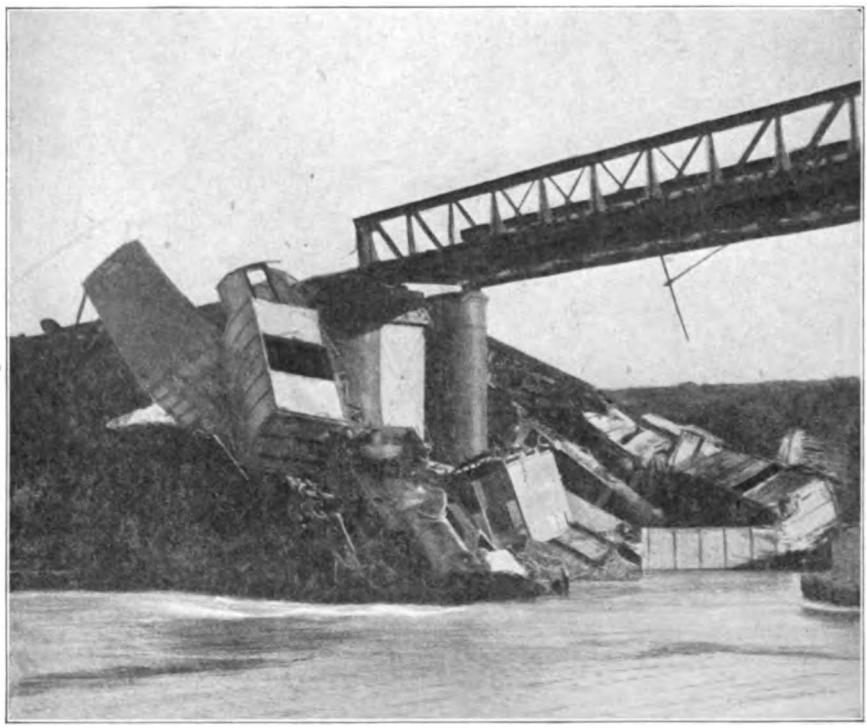
among those who had no other sources of information that the enemy had a strong force in front of Angeles, and considerable fighting on the advance was anticipated. But when daylight arrived, November 9th, and the movement began by Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge's advance on the extreme right, the waiting lines listened in vain for sounds of firing. Colonel Liscum, finally observing Coolidge's men getting well forward, gave the order for the right of the deployed line of skirmishers to advance, the movement being taken up from right to left. Down the men went into the river, up the other side, through the tangled, high grass and bamboo thickets, finally to and across the enemy's intrenchments — all empty. The enemy had fled. An inkling of this state of affairs had been conveyed to regimental commanders soon after midnight of the previous night, when General MacArthur called them to his Headquarters and informed them of a visit from Colonel Bell who, with his regiment, had already marched into Mabalacat and was holding the town. General MacArthur expressed the hope, however, that some of the enemy remained in front and would stay long enough to get some punishment.

When it was discovered that the insurgents had fled the regiment was assembled on the road and marched to Mabalacat. There it was assigned a location in the northeastern part of the town, occupying houses which had been abandoned by the inhabitants. The outpost line established by the Thirty-Sixth Infantry was occupied, and steps were taken to clean up, the insurgent troops having left the place in a filthy condition. On leaving Angeles it was given out that the command would not go beyond Mabalacat at once, and efforts were put forth to make the place a suitable abiding place for the time being, but the day after arrival the intention of going forward as soon as rations could be gotten up was made known, and stiff fighting was in prospect if the insurgents made any stand at their excellent intrenchments along the Paruao River. The position at that river, just south of Bamban, was known to be a strong one. The transportation of rations from Angeles to Mabalacat had to be by wagon train and bull carts, the railroad having been destroyed. The Bamban railroad bridge ahead was also known to be destroyed, and at intervals through the day, November 9th, the destruction of cars and locomotives, as they were run off into the stream at the north end of the bridge, was heard.

Heavy tropical rains began again while at Mabalacat, after a cessation of the rainy season for several weeks, and the roads became difficult for wagons getting up rations. However, on the evening of November 10th, the order was made for an advance against the enemy's position

Digitized by Google

the following morning. Regimental commanders were directed to report to General MacArthur at daybreak to go forward and reconnoitre the ground upon which deployment would be made about two miles north. Colonel Liscum and the Adjutant joined in this reconnaissance. Colonel Bell pointed out the hilltop to the left along which he was to deploy two battalions of his regiment, while the third, by a detour crossing the river



End of bridge over Paruao River near Bamban. Engines and cars destroyed by insurgents just prior to battle of Bamban to prevent capture by Americans.

further up to the left, would come in on the right flank of the enemy's intrenchments. Two battalions of the Ninth Infantry and two of the Twelfth were to deploy in the front and move forward when the flank attack was well closed in. One battalion each of the Ninth and Twelfth Infantry were to remain in reserve at Mabalacat. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge's battalion, First Battalion, was designated from the Ninth Infantry, and he, as senior officer, took charge there when the regiments moved out. The Seventeenth Infantry, under Colonel Smith, was to advance on another road a mile or two to the right, getting on the left

Digitized by Google

flank and rear of the Bamban position. His regiment was advanced at an early hour. Colonel Bell's regiment also moved out early. Upon completion of the reconnoissance, it then being about 8 A. M., Colonel Liscum, under instructions from General MacArthur, sent word to his battalions to move forward on the road. The Twelfth Infantry battalions were at the same time brought forward on the railroad. The battalions were deployed as soon as they came up to General MacArthur, and the men lay down awaiting orders to go forward. Their view of the front was limited by fields of sugar-cane and bamboo thickets along the bank of the river. At 9 A. M. a gun of Captain Andrew's Battery E, First Artillery, gave the signal for opening the engagement. Colonel Bell's battalions, to the left and rear from their elevated position, opened a heavy fire on the intrenchments, rather as a diversion than for effective work, a Colt's automatic gun joining the roar of musketry very cheerily. This was kept up for twenty minutes or half an hour. Then the Ninth and Twelfth were ordered forward. The Ninth Infantry line plunged into the cane-fields ahead of it — a perfect line of skirmishers at two-pace intervals, but nothing could more effectually disorganize such a line. The cane stands twice as high as a man, and the rows and hills close together; the leaves are so numerous as to cut off the view beyond a dozen steps, and they are sharp-edged and cutting. The rustling, as men force their way through, drowns all calls and other sounds. Men by their shouts, in an effort to keep alignment thereby, confuse the orders of their officers and non-commissioned officers, and at the end of a hundred yards all control has been lost. It is almost impossible to make men move straight forward because of the density and cutting effect of the sharp-edged leaves, and the tendency is to swerve to the right or left, wandering far from the true position. At the end of five hundred yards companies and their officers are separated, groups of men from different companies are confused; there are wide gaps in the line, and if the men then emerge in the face of the enemy they are in bad form for further advance. On the occasion of the affair at Bamban the men found themselves, after passing through the cane, in bamboo thickets and a tangle of tropical vines on the crest of the high bank of the Paruao river. They picked their way down to the water's edge, jumped into the stream, which was about waist-deep, waded to the farther side, and then looked about for their comrades and company officers. At this time they would have been under fire from the enemy's trenches at 100 yards distance, but again the enemy had fled. Colonel Bell's flanking battalion on the left, and cheers of the men as they emerged on the right, had been too much for the Filipinos. There were no casualties in the Ninth Infantry;

Digitized by Google

not a shot was fired in the regiment, and few were received from the enemy. His strong position at the Paruao River had been yielded up ingloriously. As a matter of fact, Aguinaldo's Army made its last effort in the night attack of October 16th, at Angeles. That failure, and the rapid movement of General Lawton's Cavalry far off to the east, dispersing the bands there and cutting off supplies, as well as giving a threat of closing all avenues of escape, had the effect of first dispersing the insurgent government and making fugitives of Aguinaldo and his officials and then of demoralizing and scattering the army. From Bamban the further movement northward was a race to catch up with some of the fleeing detachments and save as much of the railroad as possible from destruction, but in this race the Ninth Infantry took no part, for it was detached at Bamban and assigned the duty of guarding the depot which was temporarily established there, and escorting trains of supplies, moving on to Tarlac later, however, as a final Headquarters station.

Bamban was a small town of little importance. It had been occupied by a considerable number of insurgents and required much cleaning up to render it habitable. The rain came down in torrents. The chief Quartermaster of the division had assembled a large number of bull carts, and his trains began hauling rations from Angeles, which were for a few days stored in the church. General MacArthur's advancing troops found the railroad intact from Bamban to Tarlac, 16 miles, and three miles further, being broken at a place where the Tarlac River, overflowing its bank, had cut a new channel for part of its water toward the Chico, eastward, and washed out the track for about half a mile. The rains were so severe during the two weeks immediately following the occupation of Mabalacat that the roads from Angeles northward, over which rations had to be transported, were almost impassable, and the Paruao River south of Bamban, and the Cut Cut River, three miles north, were at times unfordable. The good track from Bamban to Tarlac therefore afforded the surest means of getting rations forward from the former place. Colonel Liscum was accordingly ordered to have the wreck at Bamban bridge, in which there were 11 locomotives and about 40 cars, examined to see if any could be got out for use. He was also directed to assemble natives to be worked in relays pushing cars on the track. These matters were promptly attended to, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge at Mabalacat, and Captain Harris at Angeles being called upon to assist in getting men and send them forward as quickly as possible. Considerable success was attained, nearly two hundred men being located. Colonel Liscum found that one box-car in the bridge wreck could be put on the track without much difficulty and

Digitized by Google

possibly, also, one locomotive. He assigned Lieutenant Koehler, who had rejoined the regiment from the United States about the time it reached Angeles, in charge of a working party, with Lieutenant Hammond as his assistant. The bridge was about a mile south of the Bamban railroad station. The wreck had been produced by laying tracks to the side at the north abutment, and jumping the locomotives and cars off the high bank. The bridge was not injured at that end, but piers at the south end were destroyed and one or two spans had fallen to the bed of the stream. The wrecked cars piled up in such a way as to leave one of them on its side practically uninjured, not far below the level of the track, and the locomotive had, apparently, failed to go off the bank, or had been purposely run against the end of the bridge to knock the span from the abutment. It had struck with great force, was injured at the forward buffer and careened slightly, but otherwise seemed to be all right. It was, however, a small engine, and apparently an old one. Lieutenant Koehler and his men began their work early in the morning, November 12, 1899, but the work progressed slowly because all had to be accomplished without tools or apparatus. The car was raised by the use of improvised levers, and by blocking up little by little. When the car was finally righted and placed on the rails it still had to be worked across a stretch of road-bed about 200 yards long, from which the rails and many of the cross ties had been removed, an especially tedious process for the reason that the open space was on a curve. The locomotive was similarly got on the rails on the following day, but as Lieutenant Ferguson, Corps of Engineers, with engineer soldiers, had repaired the break, using rails from a siding at Bamban, there was no delay after the engine was righted and moved up on the track. Progress was reported to General MacArthur from time to time by wire, and there was great exultation when, on the afternoon of the 14th, two locomotive engineers, enlisted men of the regiment, got up steam and brought the engine to the railroad, the whistle sounding loudly the good news that she was ready for service. She was christened the "General Liscum." The importance of the work accomplished lay in the necessity of having some sort of transportation for rations other than bull carts and escort wagons, the roads being impassable from heavy rain. General MacArthur's desire was to push troops forward as rapidly as possible, and his advance had already, on November 13th, reached Tarlac, 16 miles away. At that place another damaged locomotive was found, also a number of burned cars of which the running gear and iron frames were serviceable. On the morning of November 15, 1899, the Tarlac engine brought a train of these running gears to Bamban,

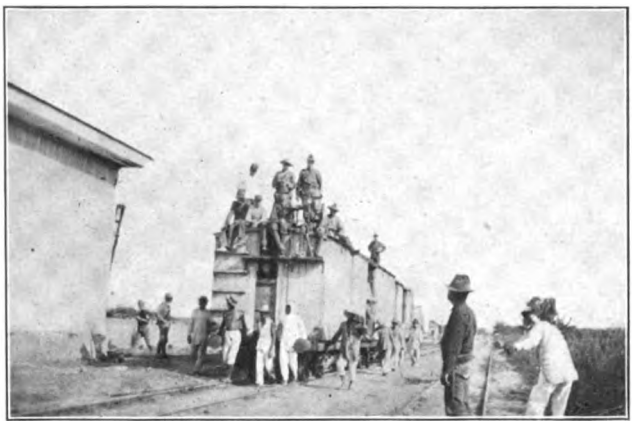
Digitized by Google

but was not in condition to take them back loaded, and the "General Liscum," that day, hauled forward the first trainload of rations. She was the main reliance for motive power on the section of road between Bamban and Tarlac for the following 23 days, and was capable of making four trips a day with loaded cars.[105] General MacArthur's supreme interest, at this time in getting rations forward, and his appreciation of the service rendered by Lieutenant Koehler and his men are told in the following telegrams:

MURCIA, November 13th.

GENERAL LISCUM, BAMBAN:

In reply to your message informing me of Littell's arrival with the bull carts, no stores or supplies of any kind are to be sent forward from Bamban until I give special orders in the premises. I gave Captain Stevens a carefully prepared memorandum on this subject, and if Littell will apply to him by wire whenever he is in doubt, there will be no possibility of misunderstanding. What I want is to get everything forward from Mabalacat to Bamban as quickly as possible, and there after supplies are to be forwarded from Angeles to Bamban as rapidly as possible, making a large depot at Bamban, from which I shall draw as I need them. Stevens and Logan understand this perfectly. . . . .



Freight car of supplies for troops. The insurgents had destroyed the bridges as they fell back before the American advance.

If you have a railroad man in your regiment, have him examine the engine and see what is necessary to put it in order, and if the work can be done by sending mechanics from Manila. If we can by any means get that engine on the track, and into running condition, it will be of incalculable value. Have this attended to immediately and let me hear your report at Tarlac as quickly as possible. The box-car itself is worth

[105] Report of Captain Steere, Thirty-sixth Infantry, in charge of railroad. (In report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 430.)

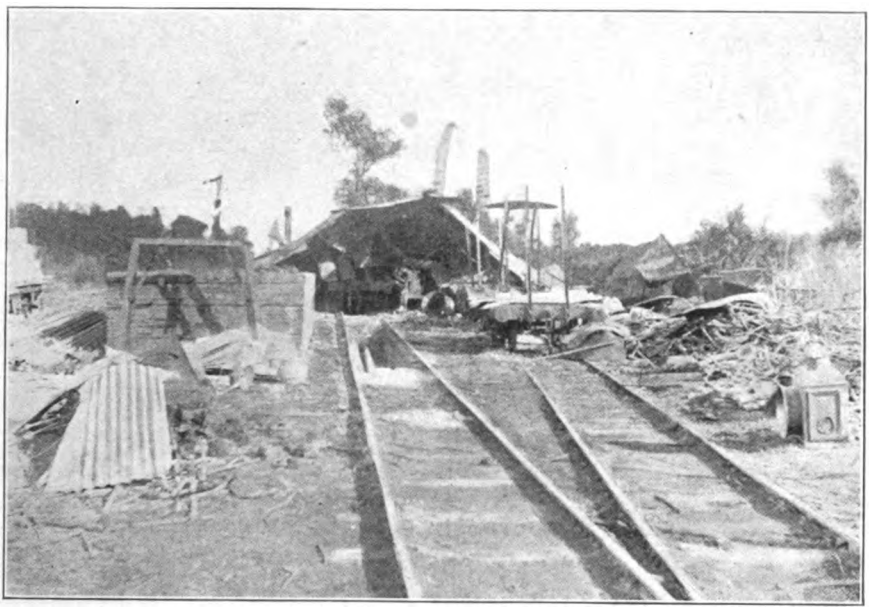
Digitized by Google

its weight in gold at most, and if you can get it on the rail this side of the bridge by to-morrow night, it will be a fine piece of work.

MacArthur.
Tarlac, November 13th.

General Liscum:

We have found a large number of burned cars here that can be used, with flooring, to carry freight, the motive power being natives for pushers. Please organize at Bamban 100 men for this purpose. There



Rolling stock patched up and used by United States Army.
Manila—Dagupan R. R., 1899

will be at all stations relays of natives in bunches of 100 at Bamban, Capas, Murcia and Tarlac, and the whole line will be operated by an officer I shall set (select) at this end of the line. The men will be paid the ordinary Quartermaster wages which is fixed at $10 a month Mex., and a ration, or if they are employed by the day, 50 cents Mex. It is important to open this line at once, as it is absolutely out of the question to supply the command by wagon. I therefore wish you would give this matter your personal attention and be able to furnish the pushers to-morrow if required. If you get the locomotives on the track, and running, this of course settles the whole question and will make it possi-

Digitized by Google

ble for us to go on to the front with great rapidity. You can therefore understand how eagerly I shall wait for your final report on the possibility of using the locomotive. Until it is known definitely that we can use the locomotive, every possible effort will be made to open the push line. Acknowledge receipt.

MACARTHUR,
Major-General.

(Received at Bamban 1:30 P. M., 13th.)

TARLAC, November 13th.

GENERAL LISCUM:

The division commander desires to know what stores have arrived at Bamban thus far.

ALVORD,
A. A. G.

(Received at Bamban 5:20 P. M., 13th.)

TARLAC, November 13th.

GENERAL LISCUM:

It is very important that you should report what stores have been recently received at Bamban from Angeles. The General also desires to know where Captain Stevens is.

ALVORD,
A. A. G.

(Received at Bamban 6:45 P. M., 13th.)

TARLAC, November 13th.

COMMANDING OFFICER:

The division commander wants to know where Captain Stevens, Chief Quartermaster, is. If at your station please request him to report at once to these Headquarters what stores are now at Bamban.

Acknowledge receipt.

ALVORD,
A. A. G.

(Received at Bamban 7:11 P. M., 13th.)

TARLAC, November 13th.

GENERAL LISCUM:

General MacArthur wishes you to inform him at once whether you get his despatches as to what stores have been received thus far at Bamban. The welfare of the whole command is depending on your promptly answering his inquiry in this matter.

ALVORD,
A. A. G.[106]

(Received at Bamban 10 P. M., 13th.)

[106] The telegrams enquiring about number of rations at Bamban were promptly answered, but the earlier replies apparently miscarried. The final reply stated as follows:

Digitized by Google

BAMBAN, November 13, 1899.

MAJOR ALVORD, Tarlac:

Have received two despatches as to stores thus far received at Bamban. First was answered as soon as inventory was made and was as follows: Rations: 30,000 meat, corned beef and bacon; 18,000 hard bread, 20,000 beans, 16,000 coffee, 18,000 sugar, 18,750 salt, 8,000 candles, 3,000 soap, 18,000 pepper, 7,000 tomatoes. Ammunition: 201,000 rounds, calibre 30; 10 boxes B. L. R., calibre 3.2; 30 boxes shrapnel, calibre 3.2; 1 box percussion primers; 4 boxes, calibre 1.65 mountain Hotchkiss; 2 boxes revolver, calibre 38. Your second telegram was received half hour after sending the above, and was answered at once, referring to this (first). I send an officer to the telegraph office with this.

LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, November 14th.

GENERAL LISCUM:

It is not necessary for your regiment to do any more work on the cars Anything they can do on the locomotive will be useful. There will be skilled men on the train in the morning to examine your locomotive and they will see if it can be used. I understand there is a break in the road between the locomotive and the main line coming this way, if so, will you tell me precisely how many rails will be needed to fill it, assuming the rails to be 20 feet long? I want this information immediately so I can send rails down in the morning on the first train that goes down. I appreciate Lieutenant Koehler's work very much and also what the men of your regiment have done, and I hope you will tell Lieutenant Koehler so and let the men know in some appropriate way. Hold your car-pushers together and keep them together until we have determined about this locomotive business, but do not need the 35 natives whom Captain Harris thinks he can get from a town near Mabalacat, but have him keep his eyes on them so he can get them in case we need them. If you have not got native rations in abundance, have Captain Logan bring them. We will have to feed a good many men and there is nothing in the country to feed them on as far as I can find out.

MACARTHUR,
Major-General.

TARLAC, November 15, 1899, 8:20 P. M.

GENERAL SCHWAN, Chief of Staff, Manila:

The trip of the train from here to Bamban has been entirely successful. The round trip was made in ten hours, and 20,000 rations brought forward, a quantity of medical supplies and some miscellaneous stores. The train was taken down by engine No. 30, recovered here, and brought back by 29, recovered at Bamban; 29 is in better condition than 30. Two others of the engines here, it is expected, will be able to go under

Digitized by Google

their own steam some time to-morrow. It has been raining constantly now for more than twenty-four hours, at times a perfect deluge. I should say something like ten inches had fallen in the last twenty-four hours, and the storm still continues. The road between Bamban and this point is of such a character that in view of this rain it would have been impossible to supply this command by wagon, but we are now insured a constant supply and the possibility of establishing a large depot. If I can get the pile-driver quickly, that I telegraphed for to-day, so as to get across the washout just ahead, I can get to Bayambang in great style, the road to which point I am satisfied is still intact.

MACARTHUR.[107]



Preparations of General MacArthur's Division to move forward from Tarlac, Philippine Islands, November 17, 1899. The pack-mule trains and the coolie-bearer trains assembling in front of Division Headquarters. The large house in center (Division Headquarters) was the Insurgent Government Building and Aguinaldo's Headquarters and later Headquarters, Ninth Infantry.

The success of the American troops in recovering damaged rolling stock and making the undestroyed links of railroad serve their purpose for supply was so marked that the insurgents were said to have declared that "there was no use in destroying the locomotives, the Americans were so smart they were able to build new locomotives of bamboo." Certainly the poor dilapidated machines that hauled the first lots of rations were not much to boast of in appearance; they were wonderful examples of what ingenious Americans could make use of to serve their purposes.

On the afternoon of the day Bamban was captured General MacArthur ordered Colonel Liscum to send one company of the Ninth Infantry to Capas, the next station north, the company to follow General Wheeler's column which was to move forward early in the morning,

[107] General MacArthur's Report. (In Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 53.)

Digitized by Google

November 12th. Company K (Captain Sigworth commanding) was designated, and it left Bamban at 6 A. M., reaching Capas a few hours later, and occupying the place as guard for the station and the railroad bridge over the Cut Cut River, two miles south of the station. The regiment therefore had Headquarters and two battalions (except Company K) at Bamban, and the First Battalion, under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, at Mabalacat, during the time the work was done on the wrecked locomotive. At 8:25 A. M., November 14th, Colonel Liscum received a telegram from the division commander's Adjutant-General, directing him to move two companies from Mabalacat to Bamban when all stores at the former place had been sent on to Bamban. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge was ordered to designate the two companies, to be ready to move at short notice, and B and D companies were designated. They marched from Mabalacat at daylight on November 15th, but the Paruao River being unfordable on account of heavy rain, they were unable to proceed beyond there that day. In the meantime (5:30 P. M., 14th) Colonel Liscum received information from the division commander that the Twenty-fifth Infantry had been ordered to move to the front, from San Fernando, and place two companies at Mabalacat and Headquarters, and six companies at Bamban, relieving the Ninth Infantry, The new stations of the Ninth Infantry were to be 2 companies at Capas, 2 companies at Murcia, the next railroad station north of Capas, and Headquarters and eight companies at Tarlac. The movement was to be made as promptly as possible. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge was notified, B and D companies were designated for station at Capas, Headquarters First Batallion and companies A and C for Murcia. Company K was directed to be prepared to go forward with the regiment from Capas to Tarlac, and, under further instructions from the division commander, companies E and F were to remain at Bamban until the Cut Cut River lowered and the roads became passable for the regimental carts. The remainder of the regiment was to march on the railroad track, the baggage pertaining to go forward by railroad train on the first available trip.

At 1:45 A. M. on the 16th, a telegram from Colonel Burt, commanding Twenty-fifth Infantry, announced that he had reached Mabalacat and expected to get his six companies to Bamban by daylight. The leading company succeeded in getting there about the hour expected by improvising some means of clambering up the broken pier and picking their way over the bridge, the Paruao River being still unfordable. Without waiting for further troops Colonel Liscum, with his Headquarters and companies G, H, I, L and M, started on the march to Tarlac

Digitized by Google

(6 A. M., November 16th, 1899). At the bridge, over the Cut Cut River, Colonel Liscum and the mounted officers were obliged to send back their horses, the river being unfordable, and the railroad bridge not floored. The day was one of the most suitable for marching that the climate afforded; the sun being clouded, and although the atmosphere was hot and sultry there were no serious cases of heat prostration, and the command arrived at Tarlac in good condition about 3 P. M., reporting to the division commander. The latter's further forward movement with the Thirty-sixth Infantry, and one battalion of the Seventeenth, was made the next day, followed a few days later by the remainder of the Seventeenth Infantry, the Twelfth Infantry, and General Wheeler's Headquarters, leaving Colonel Liscum in command at Tarlac. The dates of the movements of the other companies of the Ninth Infantry proceeding to their stations were as follows:



Pack train leaving Tarlac, Philippine Islands, November 17, 1899.

November 16th, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Headquarters First Battalion, and Companies A, B, C and D, Mabalacat to Paruao River, 3 miles.

November 17th, Companies B and D, Paruao River to Capas, 5 miles; Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Headquarters First Battalion, and Companies A and C to Murcia, 10 miles. Company K, Capas to Tarlac, 11 miles.

November 19th, Company F, Bamban to Tarlac with regimental horses, 16 miles.

November 22nd, Company E, Bamban to Marcia, 9 miles and November 23rd, Murcia to Tarlac, 7 miles, escorting Ninth Infantry wagons and carts.

The departure of Company E from Bamban was delayed by the Chief Quartermaster, who made use of the Ninth Infantry transportation, under instructions from General Wheeler, to aid him in forwarding

Digitized by Google

rations and supplies from Angeles to Bamban matter which led to considerable telegraphic correspondence, and some concern to Colonel Liscum, who regarded his orders imperative to get the companies to their respective stations promptly. The arrival of Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge and his two companies at Murcia relieved two companies of the Twelfth Infantry, which moved on to Tarlac, and thence northward a day or two later.

The first duties of the Tarlac companies were in transporting rations and baggage of the command, which had hurried northward across



Total destruction of railroad by the insurgents, in Philippines. 1899.

the great washout in the railroad track three miles north of Tarlac, and reconstructing the road-bed and track there. Instructions for this service were issued by General Wheeler, who was then at Tarlac, and the work accomplished was thus described on the regimental returns for November, the preparation of this portion of the record of events receiving Colonel Liscum's personal attention. "Work done by the regiment * * * At the washout of the railroad north of Tarlac companies F, G, H, I, K, L and M, November 18th — 22nd, as follows: Company F, building road, raising tracks and transporting rations across the water 15 hours, about 10 hours in water; Company G, building road, raising tracks, transporting baggage for Twelfth and Seventeenth Infan-

Digitized by Google

try, etc., 26 hours, about 20 hours in water; Company H, raising tracks and transporting rations 15 hours, about 10 hours in water; Company I, carrying materials, lifting tracks, etc., 5 hours, about 4 hours in water; Company K, building road-bed 6 hours, about 3 hours in water; Company L, raising tracks 12 hours, about 12 hours in water; Company M, carrying materials, lifting tracks, etc., 5 hours, about 4 hours in water. All this time the water was from knee to neck-deep."

The railroad construction was done under the direction of Captain Sibert, Corps of Engineers, assisted by Lieutenant Koehler, Ninth



Completing railroad bridge over river near Tarlac.

Infantry, who was ordered by Brigadier-General Wheeler to report to Captain Sibert.

On November 21st Company K was assigned to duty as provost guard at Tarlac. On the same date Companies I and M marched to Gerona, 8 miles north, to relieve companies of the Twelfth Infantry, and guard the railroad. Two days later Company M was brought back four and a half miles to El Bendio, which was at the north end of the washout, to guard the supplies accumulated there and protect the railroad working parties. The stations of the companies remained as thus assigned during the remainder of the month of November, 1899.

Digitized by Google

The regiment now entered on a long period of scouting and patrolling, garrisoning and guarding towns, ferreting out insurgents and arms, fostering civil government and establishing peace and order generally. The status was not, however, simply reconstruction following a war — it was still war. The insurgent army had been broken into fragments, and Aguinaldo and his high civil officials were fugitives, but his council of war of about November 12, 1899, had voted to continue resistance by guerilla warfare. The American forces therefore found themselves at all places watched by organized bands which were intangible but ever threatening. The attitude of the people everywhere was ostensibly that of friendship, frankness and peace, but was really enmity, deceit and war. In the midst of the garrisons passing to and fro with the native peasantry in their daily occupations, but showing no sign of their military character, were the soldiers and officers of the enemy's armed forces, their rifles and ammunition hidden, but near at hand. The men of influence and wealth, the native priests, the educated officials, and office employees living in the towns, maintaining friendly relations with the American officers, were informing the enemy, collecting the funds and provisions for the maintenance of the guerrillas, and controlling the masses by intimidation and by holding up false hopes of eventual freedom from American control.

An adequate appreciation of the watchfulness, the constant activity, and unending investigations, inquiries and interviews entailed by these conditions, can not be conveyed by a summarization or by a description of principal events. A chronological statement of occurrences, with occasional notes of explanation and extracts from reports, is therefore adopted as the best way to tell the story.

The regimental commander retained control of the companies notwithstanding their dispersion to widely separated stations. Orders for their movements were given by him, orders from higher authority were conveyed through him, and the reports of station commanders were made to him. He acted, therefore in the capacity of a subdistrict commander. He was in telegraphic communication with all stations, also with Brigade and Division Headquarters, and as a large part of the correspondence was conducted by telegraph, the files of telegrams received and sent at the Headquarters of the regiment, which are very complete, constitute one of the chief sources of information in preparation of the chronological statement which follows. Another prolific source is the "Record of Events" on regimental returns which Colonel Liscum insisted should give in detail the scouting trips, marches, and expeditions of all detachments. All other sources, such as orders, letters received and sent, and special reports, are also consulted.

Digitized by Google

The roster of the officers of the regiment at the beginning of the scouting period, November, 1899, was as follows:

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum (Tarlac), commanding regiment.

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles A. Coolidge (Murcia), commanding First Battalion.

Major Jesse M. Lee (Manila, or in the field with Major-General Lawton), on detached service as Acting Judge Advocate, First Division Eighth Army Corps since August 15, 1899.

Major Morris C. Foote, United States, on detached service, general recruiting, at Boston, Massachusetts.

Major James Regan (Tarlac), commanding Second Battalion.

Captain Thomas S. McCaleb (Tarlac), commanding Third Battalion Company (F).

Captain George Palmer (Manila, or Corregidor Island), absent sick since August 9, 1899 (Company D).

Captain Frank L. Dodds (Bautista), on detached service as Acting Judge Advocate Second Division Eighth Army Corps (Company L).

Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant (Tarlac), with regiment.

Captain Robert H. Anderson (Manila or Corregidor Island), absent sick since October 19, 1899 (Company A).

Captain George P. Ahern (Manila), on detached service, Court of Claims, since June, 13, 1899 (Company M).

Captain Frederick L. Palmer (Gerona), commanding Company I.

Captain John P. Finley (United States), absent sick since July, 1899; sailed from Manila October 30, 1899 (Company B).

Captain André W. Brewster (Capas), commanding Company B since October 26, 1899 (Company G).

Captain Frank DeW. Ramsey (Manila, or in the field with Major-General Lawton), on detached service as Chief Commissary First Division Eighth Army Corps since September 1, 1899 (Company C).

Captain Mark L. Hersey (United States), on detached service, general recruiting, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

Captain Peter C. Harris, Quartermaster (Angeles), with regiment.

Captain John M. Sigworth (Tarlac), commanding Company K.

Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller (United States), on detached service. Department of California since September 6, 1899 (Company E).

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel (Tarlac), commanding Company E.

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier (Capas), commanding Company D.

First Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates (United States), absent sick since June, 1899 (Company A).

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton (Tarlac), commanding Company H (Company I).

First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell, battallion Adjutant (Tarlac), Adjutant Third Battalion.

First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise (Paniqui), on detached service, Major Forty-seventh United States Volunteers. Acting A. D. C. to Brigadier-General Joseph Wheeler, United States Volunteers, since September 1, 1899.

First Lieutenant Edgar F. Koehler, battalion Adjutant (Tarlac), Adjutant Second Battalion.

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers (Manila), on detached service, office of Collector of Customs, since July, 1899, (Company B).

First Lieutenant Benjamin M. Hartshorne (en route to join), on detached service as Quartermaster and Commissary, Transport City of Sidney (Company K).

First Lieutenant Fred L. Munson, Commissary (Tarlac), with regiment.

First Lieutenant Harold Hammond (Tarlac), commanding Company G.

First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, battalion Adjutant (Murcia), Adjutant First Battalion.

First Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel (El Bendio), commanding Company M.

First Lieutenant William K. Naylor (Tarlac), commanding Company F.

First Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson (Tarlac), commanding Company L.

First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus (Murcia), commanding Company C. Joined regiment at Angeles October 20, 1899, on promotion from Twenty-first Infantry.

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown (Tarlac), with company K.

Second Lieutenant Rueben Smith (Tarlac), with company L.

Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang (Gerona), with Company I. Joined regiment at Santa Rita August 30, 1899.

Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron (Murcia), with company C.

Second Lieutenant George W. Wallace (Tarlac), with Company E. Joined regiment at Santa Rita September 5, 1899.

Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr. (Murcia), with Company A.

Second Lieutenant Charles S. Foster, (United States), absent sick since October, 1899.

Digitized by Google

Second Lieutenant Willis P. Coleman (Tarlac), with Company G. Joined regiment at Angeles November 7, 1899.

Second Lieutenant, vacancy (Company B),

Second Lieutenant, vacancy (Company D).

Second Lieutenant, vacancy (Company F).

Second Lieutenant, vacancy (Company M).

STATIONS AND STRENGTH OF COMPANIES, NOVEMBER 30, 1899

Regimental Headquarters, field and staff, Tarlac.

First Battalion Headquarters, field and staff, Murcia.

Second Battalion Headquarters, field and staff, Tarlac.

Third Battalion Headquarters, field and staff, Tarlac.

	Present	Absent	Total
N. C. S. and Band, Tarlac and Angeles	28	0	28
Company A, Murcia	81	34	115
Company B, Capas	75	40	115
Company C, Murcia	82	30	112
Company D, Capas	77	39	116
Company E, Tarlac	79	39	118
Company F, Tarlac	84	31	115
Company G, Tarlac	84	26	110
Company H, Tarlac	86	29	115
Company I, Gerona	75	45	120
Company K, Tarlac	87	25	112
Company L, Tarlac	77	38	115
Company M, El Bendio	72	41	113
Total	987	417	1404

Of the absentees 103 were on detached service, not all, however, detached from the regiment; 1 with leave, 4 without leave, 302 sick, 7 in confinement.

Of those present 32 were on special duty, 78 sick, and 6 in confinement, leaving, after deducting the band, about 850 for the firing line.

The first scouting parties were sent out from Bamban, and the chronological statement begins with them. The distance marched is stated in each case when known.

November 13. Scout from Bamban westward. Lieutenant Connell and one platoon of Company G. Followed trails, inspected houses for arms; found none (5 miles).

November 15. Scout from Bamban eastward. Lieutenant Connell and detachment of Company L (7 miles).

November 22. Acting Assistant Surgeon Barney attacked by 3 Filipinos with arms while riding from Capas to Murcia. Killed one with revolver, others fled; was slightly wounded in right hip, horse shot in neck.

Digitized by Google

Tarlac garrison furnishing guards for train between Tarlac and Bamban.

November 23. The Quartermaster began forwarding the men's knapsacks from Angeles, continuing as transportation facilities were given.

November 25. Private Harry O. Lee, Company B, killed by insurgents about 2 miles from Capas. Privates Charles C. Cook, Joseph P. Cook, and Alonzo Brown, all of Company B, captured at the same time. Company B and one platoon Company D, under Lieutenant Frazier, scouted in direction of firing, finding body of Private Lee. These men were absent from their company without authority and encountered a small body of insurgents. Several months later, at an insurgent camp on Mount Arayat, the captured men were lined up and shot upon approach of American troops.



Headquarters, Ninth Infantry, Tarlac, Philippine Islands, November 17, 1899.

Native litter bearer, employed by Company B, at Capas, reported killed by natives two nights previous. Lieutenant Koehler, two non-commissioned officers and 13 privates scouted from Tarlac along Camiling Road.

November 26. Company L (Lieutenant Gibson commanding) scouted from Tarlac to Tibac for arms reported to be hidden there. None found.

Obstruction placed on railroad track 2 miles south of Tarlac to wreck train.

November 27. Lieutenant Coleman, 2 non-commissioned officers, and 13 privates, Company G, scouted Victoria Road. Captured 2 prisoners, 1 revolver, 1 bolo.

Murcia and Capas notified from Tarlac of information received at latter place that large number of insurgents would attack Murcia or Capas. Lieutenant Lang, with detachment Company F, scouted from Gerona westward.

Information received at Tarlac of two thousand hidden arms and

Digitized by Google

three companies of insurgents under command of General Macabulos Soliman at Sulipa, 7 miles northward of Gerona. General Wheeler notified.

November 28. Patrols instituted on railroad, 4 men each way from Tarlac, Murcia and Capas, meeting at half-way point. Averaged 6 miles each per day.

November 29. Lieutenant Schoeffel, Lieutenant Lang and 50 men, Company I from Gerona, joined expedition from Paniqui, under General Wheeler, in search of insurgents and arms at Sulipa. Returned to Gerona. No result (18 miles).

December 1. Company G, First Lieutenant Hammond commanding; Second Lieutenant Coleman scouted from Tarlac to Victoria, and returned to Tarlac on December 2nd via Pura and Gerona, under orders from division commander to arrest Geronimo Velasco. Unsuccessful. Mapped road from Victoria to Gerona (25 miles).

Information that General Macabulos Soliman and from 200 to 300 armed men passed through barrio Alvindria going toward mountains on November 29th. Brigade Headquarters notified.

Lieutenant Lawton appointed battalion Adjutant First Battalion; vice Lieutenant Welborn, who was assigned to Company I and attached temporarily to Company H.

December 2. Lieutenant Connell and detachment, Tarlac to Moriones and return to examine trail (26 miles).

December 3. Company D (Lieutenant Frazier) marched from Capas to O'Donnell for station, pursuant to instruction of the division commander (12 miles).

Frequent patrols made by detachments of Company D during December; no particulars reported.

Captain McCaleb, Headquarters Third Battalion, and companies K and L marched from Tarlac half way to Moriones, and December 4th, remaining distance, for station at Moriones, pursuant to instructions division commander (13 miles).

Lieutenant Bumpus and detachment, Murcia toward Moriones and return (12 miles).

Sixteen men Company B, Capas to Dolores and return (6 miles).

Twenty men Company B, escort to lineman repairing telegraph line on railroad (10 miles).

Eight men Company B, Capas toward Concepcion and return (3 miles).

December 5. Lieutenant Connell and 20 men, Company K, from Moriones northwesterly and return (12 miles).

Captain Sigworth and 8 men, Company K, westerly and return (6 miles).

Digitized by Google

December 6. Company K (Captain Sigworth commanding) scouted in vicinity of Moriones (20 miles).

One officer and 12 men, Company L, from Moriones toward Capas and return (20 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas towards Concepcion and return (4 miles).

Instructions from division commander to institute civil government in towns occupied by the regiment.

December 7. Report that 140 armed insurgents passed through Concepcion on December 5th.

Detachment Company A scouted in vicinity of Murcia (5 miles).

Lieutenant Connell and 16 men, Company K, Moriones to Tarlac, conducting insurgent prisoner (13 miles).

One officer and 12 men, Company L, Moriones toward Santa Ignacia and return (12 miles).

December 8. Lieutenant Connell and 16 men, Company K, Tarlac to Moriones (13 miles).

First Sergeant and 32 men, Company B, Capas to Concepcion and return. This scout and preceding ones, in the week ending December 9th, described by Captain Brewster in report to regimental commander, enclosing route sketch (10 miles).

December 9. Lieutenant Connell and 9 men, Company K, Moriones southward and return (6 miles).

One Officer and 12 men, Company L, from Moriones toward Malateo and return (8 miles).

Report that armed natives east and south of El Bendio contemplated mischief. Lieutenant Schoeffel ordered to send information thereof to Captain Palmer at Gerona, and co-operate with him. Division commander notified (9 miles).

December 10. Detachment Company D, O'Donnell to Capas, escorting bull train (12 miles).

Interpreter employed for service at Tarlac.

Captain Brewster reports attack near Capas on native bull train of empty carts en route from Tarlac to Bamban. Escort sent half way to Bamban and return (4 miles).

Lieutenant Bumpus and 16 men, Murcia toward Tarlac and Moriones and return (20 miles).

December 11. Captain Sigworth and 12 men, Company K, from Moriones eastward (7 miles).

December 12. Captain McCaleb and 12 men, Moriones westward and return (20 miles).

Digitized by Google

December 13. 9 men Company K, escort to ration train from Moriones half way to Tarlac and return (13 miles).

Detachment, escort to ration train from Tarlac half way to Moriones and return (13 miles).

December 14. Report that 500 insurgents would attack El Bendio night December 14-15th. Measures taken to re-enforce from Tarlac if attack occurred.

Captain George Palmer reported at O'Donnell and assumed command of Company D, relieving Lieutenant Frazier, who was sent to Tarlac to command Company H.

December 15. Captain Robert H. Anderson reported at Murcia for duty with Company A.

Captain Sigworth and 10 men, Company K, Moriones to O'Donnell and return (18 miles).

December 16. Railroad bridge over Paruao River at Bamban reconstructed by United States Engineers, and first train crossed.

December 17. Captain Harris and Ninth Infantry Quartermaster Depot transferred by rail from Angeles to Tarlac.

December 18. Detachment Company A scouted in vicinity of Murcia (6 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, from Capas toward Concepcion and return (5 miles).

December 19. Remington carbine brought in to Captain Brewster at Capas for reward of $30 Mexican. This was the first case of "purchase" by the regiment, $30 Mexican having been offered for every rifle in serviceable condition. This offer had been circulated as widely as practicable at all stations of the regiment, under the general authority of the department commander, resulting in acquirement of many rifles.

December 20. Telegraphic information of the death of Major-General Henry W. Lawton, Unites States Volunteers, killed in action December 19th at San Mateo.

Detachments Companies B and D escort ration train Capas to O'Donnell (12 miles).

December 21. One Officer and 8 men, Company L, from Moriones southward (10 miles).

At this date 9 privates were doing duty as railroad engineers, firemen and trainmen, under the direction of Captain Henry Steere, Thirty-sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, who was in charge of the operation of the railroad from Bamban as far as open northward.

Detachment of Company B scouted from Capas on south bank Cut Cut River.

Digitized by Google

December 22. Detachment of Company B sent to locate and place headboards at graves of two soldiers, privates of Fourth Cavalry and Seventeenth Infantry respectively (3 miles).

December 23. Detachment of 18 privates from Tarlac scouting toward La Paz fired on, and returned fire at long range.

Detachment Company B from Capas half way to Bamban and return (4 miles).

Nine men, Company K, escort ration train, Moriones half way to Tarlac and return (13 miles).

Detachment escort ration train, Tarlac half way to Moriones and return (13 miles).

Company C (Lieutenant Bumpus commanding), Murcia to Concepcion, returning December 24th (20 miles).

Full report on the road and town of Concepcion called for by division commander.

Forty men, Company G, Tarlac to San Miguel and return (10 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Concepcion and return (5 miles).

December 25. Order received from Headquarters Second Division announcing that the companies at Gerona and El Bendio would be relieved by companies Twelfth Infantry; garrison at Moriones reduced to 1 company, at Murcia to 1 company, 2 companies to go to Concepcion, 2 companies to Bamban.

Detachments Company B escorting ration train Capas to O'Donnell and return (24 miles).

December 26. Company I changes station by rail from Gerona to Murcia.

Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Headquarters First Battalion, and Companies A and C changed station by rail from Murcia to Bamban, relieving Twenty-fifth Infantry companies. Company M by rail from El Bendio to Murcia.

One officer and 10 men, Company L, from Moriones toward Santa Ignacia and return (18 miles).

Lieutentant Koehler and detachment, Tarlac to Moriones (13 miles).

December 27. Captain McCaleb, Headquarters Third Battalion and Company L from Moriones to Murcia en route to Concepcion changing station (11 miles).

Company M, Murcia to Concepcion, marching 10 miles.

Eight men of Company K, Moriones to Murcia, to act as escort to returning bull train (11 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Bamban and return (5 miles).

Digitized by Google

December 28. Captain McCaleb, Headquarters Third Battalion, and Company L, Murcia to Concepcion. On this march Private John J. King, Company L, straggling, disappeared, and, as afterwards learned, was intercepted and murdered by Filipinos (10 miles).

Detachment Company K, Murcia to Moriones, escorting bull train (11 miles).

December 29. Lieutenant Connell and detachment from Concepcion to Capas and return (10 miles).

Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel, and detachment 16 men, Concepcion to Murcia (10 miles).

December 30. Nine men, Company K, Moriones toward Tarlac, escort to ration train (13 miles).

Detachment Tarlac toward Moriones, escort to ration train (13 miles).

Two corporals, 14 privates, Company M, Concepcion to barrios Santa Rita, San Antonia, San Bartolome, and return (16 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Murcia and return (6 miles).

Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel and detachment 16 men, Murcia to Concepcion with ration train (10 miles).

December 31. First Sergeant, 9 privates, Concepcion to barrios Deliup, Balato and return (14 miles).

Eight men, Company G, Tarlac to Victoria and return, escorting bull train (18 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Murcia and return (6 miles).

Patrols from Capas to railroad bridge, over Cut Cut River, before all regular trains throughout month of December.

January 2, 1900. Pursuant to instructions, report made of names of all surgeons and Hospital Corps men on duty with regiment. The surgeons were at this date First Lieutenant E. W. Pinkham, assistant surgeon, United States Army at Tarlac; Acting Assistant Surgeon L. B. Sandall at Concepcion; Acting Assistant Surgeon Fred N. Barney at Bamban; Acting Assistant Surgeon John T. H. Slayter at Murcia.[108]

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Bamban and return (6 miles).

Two officers and 40 men, Company A, from Bamban to barrio and return (4 miles).

One non-commissioned officer and 12 privates, Company L, and 1 non-commissioned officer and 8 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Santa Cruz and Culatigan and return (15 miles).

[108] L. S. No. 27, — 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

January 3. One non-commissioned officer and 10 men, Company A, escorting Lieutenant Hammond, mapping country, Bamban to Concepcion (16 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Concepcion and return (3 miles).

January 4. Captain Sigworth recommends withdrawal of his company, K, from Moriones on account of sickness of nearly the entire company. Unhealthy locality, unimportant place, people poor.

Eight men, Company B, escort Signal Corps party constructing telegraph line Capas to O'Donnell.

January 5. During the night, January 4th to 5th, 33 United States magazine rifles were stolen from quarters (Nipa shacks) of Company G, Tarlac. Every house and premises in town searched, patrols sent on all roads. Nothing found except the box. The loss of these rifles involved action of a Board of Survey, personal investigation by General Wheeler and by the Inspector-General of the division, and court martial for Lieutenant Hammond, commanding Company G, who was acquitted of neglect. The rifles were eventually all recovered except two.

Obstruction placed by insurgents on railroad between Murcia and Tarlac derailed a south-bound locomotive about 8 P. M.; Lieutenant Welborn, Lieutenant Lang and 74 men, Company I, from Murcia to railroad wreck and scouted in vicinity (7 miles).

Eight men, Company B, Capas toward O'Donnell and return (12 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Concepcion and return (6 miles).

January 6. Two non-commissioned officers and 20 men, Company F, from Tarlac to wreck on railroad toward Murcia and return (8 miles).

One non-commissioned officer and 10 men, Company F, from Tarlac to El Bendio and return (8 miles).

Company K (Captain Sigworth commanding) changed station pursuant to authority from the brigade commander by marching from Moriones to Tarlac (13 miles).

One corporal and 7 privates, Company M, Concepcion to Murcia, and Capas to Concepcion (14 miles).

Sixteen men, Company B, Capas toward Murcia and return (6 miles).

Remington rifle turned in to Lieutenant Clark, commanding temporarily at Capas, for purchase money ($30 Mex.).

January 7. Lieutenant Frazier ordered to Magalang to interview surviving man of the four lost from Company B near Capas, November

Digitized by Google

25th. Lieutenant Frazier's report, dated January 10th, is here quoted in full:[109]

TARLAC, P. I., January 10, 1900.

TO THE ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac, P. I.:

SIR: I have the honor to report that in compliance with Paragraph 2, Special Order, No. 5, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, dated Tarlac, P. I., January 7, 1900, I proceeded by train to Angeles en route to Magalang. The train was so late that I did not arrive at Angeles until after nightfall, so I did not proceed to Magalang until the next morning, January 9th.

I arrived at Magalang about 10:30 A. M., January 9th, and proceeded to interview the officer and surgeon who had participated in the attack upon the Filipino insurgents at Camansi, on January 5th, and also the wounded man, Private Joseph P. Cook, Company B, Ninth Infantry, the only one of the four Ninth Infantry men still alive. Commissary-Sergeant Peterson and Private Norvall, of the Twelfth Infantry, had been removed to the hospital at Angeles early in the morning of January 9th, and I saw them and talked with them there on the morning of the 10th. The story told by all of them is practically the same.

Private Joseph P. Cook, Company B, Ninth Infantry, states that on the morning of November 25, 1899, himself, Alonzo Brown, Charles C. Cook, and H. O. Lee, left Capas armed with their rifles and belts and proceeded to a barrio some two and a half miles to the southeast for the purpose of obtaining chickens. Suddenly they noticed a party of several armed men in the edge of a wood near them, and at the same moment they were fired upon by these. They returned the fire and started to retreat, when they discovered that their retreat had been cut off by another party, and the enemy, fifty or sixty in number, began closing in on them from all sides and firing. They returned the fire until the enemy got quite close and Private Lee was shot in the breast, apparently mortally wounded. Meanwhile the enemy had had seven men hit — three killed and four wounded — and they became furious. One approached close enough to be able to strike Private Brown a blow on the head with the butt of a gun. Seeing that further resistance was hopeless the B Company men then surrendered and were hurried away towards the river in the direction of the wood leading to Concepcion. Private Lee was lying upon the ground, but was not yet dead, nor had he been boloed when they were taken away. Some of the enemy were still with Lee when our men were taken away.

I wish to state here that when I arrived upon the scene, apparently

[109] L. R. 66,—1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

a few minutes after this, Private Lee was dead with the bullet wound in his breast, several bolo wounds upon his neck, arms, and other parts of his body, and his clothing on fire.

Private Joseph P. Cook further states that the three American prisoners were hurried across the river, their captors being fired upon as they crossed by some detachment of American soldiers, which they have since learned was a party of the Twenty-fifth Infantry. They were hurried onward by paths and trails toward the mountain, Arayat, and, upon joining the main body there, found Sergeant Peterson and Private Norvall, Twelfth Infantry, already there as prisoners in the hands of the enemy.

At the time of their capture, and from that time on, their lives were daily threatened, and the three Ninth Infantry men were often told that they were to be killed certain for the stiff fight they had put up and the killing and wounding of so many of the insurgents. A favorite amusement of the Filipinos was to step up to one of the prisoners with a revolver cocked and snap it in his face, the prisoner not knowing beforehand whether the revolver was loaded or not. To add to the terror which these actions would inspire, a Macabebe, who had been captured at the same time as Sergeant Peterson and Private Norvall of the Twelfth, had his throat cut one day before their eyes. The Filipinos jocosely remarked that this was only to show them what was to be done with them.

These cruelties were participated in by all their captors, guards, etc., except one Commandante who had been in command of the party who had captured them, and who had prevented their being killed upon the spot at the time, and complimented them upon the gallant stand they had made against such vastly superior numbers. General Aquino, whom they saw often, was generally very harsh towards them, but sometimes gave them cigarettes and talked with them.

While prisoners they were fed solely upon rice. Only once was the diet varied. Three spoonfuls of salmon were once issued to the five. They became weak, emaciated and sick with the mountain fever, and sometimes some of them could scarcely walk or stand.

There were several hundred insurgents at Camansi. They thought that the evening of January 4th about 600 had answered the roll-call, and that by the morning of the attack by the Twenty-fifth Infantry, January 5th, there were 1,000 of them.

When this attack began early in the morning the five prisoners were all lined up by General Aquino himself, and nine Filipinos lined up in front of them with rifles. When the firing continued to grow heavier

Digitized by Google

General Aquino himself gave the order and the five prisoners were shot. All had been made to kneel down except Sergeant Peterson, who had refused to kneel. The insurgents then boloed those that seemed to be still alive and ran hastily away, as the Americans were already getting quite near.

Private Joseph P. Cook said, in relating the scene to me, "I saw them cutting up the other fellows, so played possum and they did not bolo me much."

Lieutenant Schenck and Dr. J. J. Gilhooley arrived soon after this and described the scene to me. The prisoners had been shot and wounded with bolos in various parts of the body. Private Alonzo Brown was dead. Private Charles C. Cook was mortally wounded, being shot and having also a bolo wound in the back of the neck which had nearly severed the spine. He was rational and lived for about an hour, giving the doctor and Lieutenant Schenck directions what to write to his people and so forth. The doctor said that this private, Charles C. Cook, asked if he was going to die, and upon being told that it was impossible for a man wounded as he was to live more than a very short time, he said: "Tell father about it, and tell him that I died like a soldier." The other three men are still alive, and the two Twelfth Infantry men, Sergeant Peterson and Private Norvall, have a fair chance of recovery. They were able to be moved into the hospital at Angeles yesterday morning, but our man Joseph P. Cook, Company B, Ninth Infantry, is badly wounded with a great hole in the breast, made by a Remington bullet, and Dr. Gilhooley says that, owing to his emaciated and depleted physical condition, he stands very small chances of getting well. He seemed some stronger and better, however, yesterday afternoon, and I have hopes that he may still recover.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) JOSEPH FRAZIER,
First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry.

I wish to add to the above report a little incident that I forgot to embody therein when I wrote it out originally. While speaking of his experiences, capture, etc., Private Joseph P. Cook remarked that he supposed that he would have to pay for his rifle, as he had lost it by being absent without authority, but he hoped we would not be too hard on him for his absence.

Another matter which I failed to enter into the body of my report is the fact that the Twelfth Infantry men stated that it seemed some days after the capture that Private Brown and Private Joseph P. Cook

Digitized by Google

were receiving somewhat milder treatment than the others, and further observation revealed that the Filipinos were referring to these two as their "amigos," saying that they were not going to kill them, etc., and even hinting that they were to become Filipino officers. When I spoke of this matter to Joseph P. Cook he denied all intention of any treachery of any kind whatever, but said their condition was such as to justify their promising anything to the captors. The keeping of the promises, he said, would have been a thing that would never have been done; and this I believe was true, both from what I have heard of the action and bravery of these men in the fight and from the fact that they did not become officers of the Filipino Army, but were lined up and shot with the rest of their comrades. The story of their fight near Capas was told alike by all three to both Private Norvall and Sergeant Peterson in the days of their companionship in captivity. I know from my own knowledge that the firing during this fight, in which both Krags and Remingtons could be clearly distinguished, lasted for quite 20 minutes.

Also I wish to state another matter which I had forgotten, that Colonel Burt desired me to set forth in my report the excellent care and attention which the wounded men received January 5th, and after, at the hands of Doctor Gilhooley, the Doctor himself suffering from a severe attack of fever all the time.

Again, very respectfully,

(Signed) JOSEPH FRAZIER,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

January 7, continued. Pursuant to instructions from division commander extra vigilance and careful inspection imposed on railroad patrols and guard of 1 non-commissioned officer and 6 privates placed at railroad bridge at Bamban.

Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge reports telegraph line cut and railroad track undermined 1,500 yards south of Bamban bridge night of 6th to 7th.

Lieutenant Naylor, 3 non-commissioned officers and 31 men, Company F, from Tarlac northeasterly, and to La Paz, and return (35 miles).

One non-commissioned officer and 7 privates, Company L, Concepcion to San Bartolome and return (7 miles).

January 9. One non-commissioned officer and 14 privates, Company L, from Concepcion to Santa Rita, San Antonio and return (5 miles).

January 10. Major Regan, companies E and K, from Tarlac south, in search of insurgent force, reported in vicinity. No result (8 miles).

Eight men, Company B, Capas toward O'Donnell and return (12 miles).

Digitized by Google

Telephone communication established with O'Donnell and Concepcion from Capas.

January 11. Lieutenant Koehler, 2 non-commissioned officers and 30 men, Company F, from Tarlac toward northwest and return (11 miles).

January 13. Lieutenant Lang and 15 men, Company I, from Murcia toward Moriones and return (18 miles).

January 14. Colonel Liscum ordered to assume command of First Brigade on departure of General Wheeler, who was to be relieved from duty in department.

Engineer soldiers at work about this date repairing O'Donnell and Concepcion Road escorted by detachment from Capas.

January 15. Colonel Liscum proceeds to Paniqui to assume command of First Brigade, maintaining Brigade Headquarters at that place.

Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge Bamban to Tarlac, and assumes command of regiment.

Captain George Palmer assigned to command First Battalion.

One officer and 8 men, Company B, Capas to Arangoing, Laui and Dolores and return.

One officer and 8 men, Company B, Capas toward Concepcion and return (5 miles).

Eight men, Company B, Capas toward Bamban and return (5 miles).

Eight men, Company B, Capas toward Murcia and return (5 miles).

One non-commissioned officer and 7 men, Company F, escorting wagon Tarlac to Capas and return (24 miles).

One non-commissioned officer and 9 privates, Company L, Concepcion to Santa Niña and return (5 miles).

Two Corporals, 14 men, Company M, Concepcion to San Antonio and return (5 miles).

January 16. Company H (Lieutenant Frazier commanding), accompanied by Lieutenant Hammond, Acting Engineer Officer of regiment, Tarlac to Luisita, and scouted in that locality, returning January 20, mapping country pursuant to instructions from division commander (32 miles.)

January 18. Pursuant to instructions from brigade commander, 1 officer and 25 men (Lieutenant Wallace and 25 men Company G) took station at El Bendio, relieving company of 12th Infantry, to remain there one week and then to be replaced by detachment of Twelfth Infantry for one week, etc.

January 19. Pursuant to instructions of brigade commander, Company A (Captain Anderson commanding) changed station from

Digitized by Google

Bamban to O'Donnell, proceeding by rail to Capas and thence by marching to O'Donnell, arriving 7 P. M. (12 miles).

January 20. Company D (Captain George Palmer commanding) changed station from O'Donnell to Bamban, marching to Capas, 12 miles, and thence by rail to Bamban.

One officer, 8 men, Company A, from O'Donnell toward northwest and return (3 miles).

One Corporal and 8 men, Company M, Concepcion to San Antonio and return (5 miles).

January 21. Information received from Brigade Headquarters of rumored presence of insurgent General Aquino in vicinity of Concepcion, and order to send detachment toward La Paz, co-operating with detachment from Concepcion and Victoria.

Two non-commissioned officers and 7 men, Company A, from O'Donnell southwesterly and return (3 miles).

Eight men, Company G, from Tarlac, escorting paymaster.

One non-commissioned officer and 10 men, Company L, from Concepcion toward Daliup and return (5 miles).

January 22. Lieutenant Frazier and 50 men, Company K, from Tarlac toward La Paz and return (28 miles).

Mounted men of his party crossed the Chico River to Zaragosa and return (40 miles).

Lieutenant Lang and 35 men, Company I, from Murcia toward Santa Rosa and Concepcion and return (12 miles).

Two officers (Lieutenant Gibson, Lieutenant R. Smith) and 71 men, Company L, 29 men, Company M, all under command of Captain McCaleb, from Concepcion to Balutu, Santa Cruz and Culatigan and return (20 miles).

January 23. One non-commissioned officer and 7 men, Company A, from O'Donnell westward and return (5 miles).

January 24. Lieutenant Welborn, 1 Corporal, 7 privates, Company D, from Bamban westward and return (3 miles).

Lieutenant Coleman, 3 non-commissioned officers and 21 privates, Company E, from Tarlac to Moriones (13 miles).

Returned from Moriones to Tarlac on 25th (13 miles).

Two non-commissioned officers and 7 privates, Company L, 2 non-commissioned officers and 14 privates, Company M, escorting paymaster, Concepcion to Capas and return (8 miles).

January 25. One officer and 14 men, Company A, from O'Donnell southwest and return (4 miles).

Two non-commissioned officers and 14 privates, Company L,

Digitized by Google

from Concepcion to San Antonio, San Batolome and return (9 miles).

January 26. Lieutenant Hartshorne and 30 men, Company G, from Tarlac to Santa Maria, Sinait and Tinuba and return (15 miles).

One officer and 16 men, Company A, from O'Donnell southward and return (8 miles).

One officer and 8 men, Company L, from Concepcion to San Isidro and return (8 miles).

One sergeant and 9 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Darabulbul and return (12 miles).

Lieutenant Bumpus and detachment from Bamban to Bical and return.

January 27. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge and companies G, H and K, Tarlac to San Manuel and return (13 miles).

The report of this expedition is here introduced as illustrating what the purposes were of the numerous expeditions of this character, following all kinds of reports and rumors concerning insurgent guerillas, and as exhibiting the fearlessness and indifference to personal exposure essential to any degree of success in the performance of the hazardous and trying service which the Ninth Infantry in common with all regiments, was engaged upon during this period.[110] Lieutenant Koehler was killed on a similar expedition a few weeks later.

TARLAC, P. I., January 27, 1900.

ASSISTANT ADJUTANT-GENERAL,

First Brigade, Second Division Eighth Army Corps:

SIR: I have the honor to report that in consequence of information conveyed to the Provost-Marshal (Lieutenant Koehler) of this place, by one Eulogio Reyes Cappillo on the 26th inst. in regard to a certain Filipino and his band of insurgents or ladrones, I concluded to leave 2 companies of the garrison at this post and take 3 companies to the barrio of San Manuel; but I could find no one here who would or could tell me where it was, nor to guide me to it. After telegraphing the Commanding General of my intention and upon his direction to make the most strenuous efforts to investigate the place, I decided to go, nevertheless, and obtain a native en route to guide us. We left this post 2:20 A. M., the morning of the 27th, with companies G, H and K, Ninth Infantry, 150 men and a mounted detachment of 11 men under Lieutenant Naylor. Lieutenant Schoeffel commanded Company K; Lieutenant Hartshorne had been put out on a scout all the previous day. Lieutenant Lawton, being at the post, volunteered his services; the

[110] L. S. 210 — 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Provost-Marshal, Lieutenant Koehler, as well as my Adjutant, Lieutenant Munson, accompanied the column. I had not expected him, but found that "Sr. Reyes" also accompanied the column. He made his presence almost immediately of service by impressing a Filipino as guide (from a small barrio beyond the town of Tarlac). This guide led the way without hesitation on east from there until about 5:00 o'clock, then winding north and northwest into the barrio of San Manuel. The mounted detachment then made a dash to the further end of the town to prevent any escape in that direction, and the companies having been directed to surround each house with from 4 to 8 men, it was promptly and efficiently executed. I then waited until clear daylight when I had each house thoroughly searched by an officer, but no arms or weapons except a few bolos for household use were discovered. "Sr. Reyes" made various explorations with similar results, and also questioned thoroughly many of the inhabitants without eliciting any information regarding insurgents or ladrones having been in that part of the country for a long time. They knew nothing relative to arms or ammunition. One Filipino told "Sr. Reyes" he was not "an insurgent, only a train wrecker"; that man I have now in confinement in the guard-house in Tarlac, but have no other evidence against him than his admission to "Sr. Reyes" as translated to me. A cedula issued at Bacoor was found in possession of one of the natives in Manuel.

I was about to order the assembly of the troops to march home, in fact had ordered them to form and scout through the grass in search of arms, when Lieutenant Frazier and Lieutenant Koehler originated and carried out a scheme for frightening some of the men into telling what they knew about bands of insurgents, robbers, etc.

Lieutenant Frazier reports: "Being sure that the head man of the barrio, and perhaps some of the others, knew where the insurgents were, I selected two squads of three each of the natives, placing the head man in the second squad. I then asked each and severally to tell me all they knew, at the same time informing them that if they told falsely their lives would pay the forfeit. Each declared positively that he knew absolutely nothing. I then made a cross-mark with my pencil upon the breast of each of the men of the first three, and told them that, as they had lied to me and I knew it, they should be promptly shot. I sent them out of sight under direction of Lieutenant Koehler, and he had a volley fired, which I informed the other three meant that their comrades were dead. I then started off with this second three, and had not gone far before they expressed a desire to talk. The first two told nothing of importance, but the head man said he would tell me where

Digitized by Google

the insurgents were if I would take him and his family with me to Tarlac and give them protection. I promised to do so and immediately proceeded with him to the place in the woods where we found the barracks, and a little farther on the enemy themselves. As soon as the others saw that this man was leading us to the place they all became exceedingly anxious to give information.

This was done with my knowledge and tacit permission, though I had, at the time, no expectation of its success. Lieutenant Koehler scared some of the first three men into acknowledging that a "Major Manuel de Leon" had been there three or four days ago, with about 25 men, but had gone to the north with men and arms. Subsequently Lieutenant Frazier obtained the promise from one of the natives to show him where the arms and robber-camps were. Lieutenant Frazier and party started with the man. I sent a couple of squads, but, finding they were going some distance, started after them with the balance of Company K, leaving Lieutenant Hammond in charge of the two other companies in the center of the barrio. Lieutenant Frazier and party, with Lieutenant Schoeffel's squad, started for the place, the native conducting them. I followed with the balance of Company K as stated. They reached the bamboo barracks of a band of ladrones in the woods, about one and one-half miles north of the town by the way they traveled, though only a mile in a direct line. They found the shack contained an arm-rack for 21 guns, but the parties had just left, and the remnants of breakfast and hot embers were evident they had been there earlier that morning; there were no arms discovered around there. The detachment then pushed on the trail to the north and found another shack, also evidently used by the ladrones. Continuing their search they heard voices in the distance and went in their direction. The officers, being ahead on the trail, were fired at within point-blank range by some three or four men who escaped through the dense brush. The fire was returned by Lieutenants Munson and Koehler from their pistols, but the natives got away and could not be followed in the dense underbrush with any chance of success. Shortly after I came up with my detachment of K Company, examined the shacks and grounds without finding anything of value nor any arms. The officers told me of the condition of affairs and we returned to San Manuel. My Adjutant's (Lieutenant Munson) account of the search is as follows: "About 9 o'clock on the morning of January 27th Lieutenants Frazier and Koehler, Ninth Infantry, succeeded in pursuading one of the head men of the barrio to guide a party of us to where a band of armed ladrones lived. Our party was composed of four officers, three of whom

Digitized by Google

were mounted, three mounted orderlies and two squads of Company K on foot. The guide directed, rather than led us, along a trail which ran a little east of north of the barrio, first through an open field, and finally into a very thick woods. After going about 800 yards in all we suddenly came upon a new bamboo hut which showed every indication of its having been occupied within the last hour, as the fire on which they had cooked their breakfast was still burning, and a quantity of clothing was lying on the floor of the hut. Nothing of any consequence was found inside except a gun-rack with places for 21 rifles. Thinking that the late occupants of the hut could not be very far away, those of us who were mounted pushed on ahead at a trot over a very narrow and crooked trail, and gave orders for the foot soldiers to follow as rapidly as possible. After having gone about 300 yards we came upon a large open field which was entirely surrounded by thick and heavy timbers. Lieutenant Schoeffel and 2 orderlies kept on straight to the front, while Lieutenant Koehler and one orderly and I turned to the right. We had hardly gone 200 yards when we heard voices very close to us in the brush to our right and front. Lieutenant Koehler called out "here they are," and then both of us, with our orderly, pushed after them. The next moment we were fired upon at a distance of not over 15 yards, but no one was hit. We both saw one of the ladrones, and each of us fired three times at him in rapid succession, but I believe without effect, as we were still mounted and our horses had become restless after the first shot. It was physically impossible to follow these men through the brush at that point, so we promptly took a trail that ran into it a little farther to the left in the hopes that we would be able to cut them off, but after going about 100 feet the trail became blind and our horses being unable to push through the heavy network of vines we were obliged to abandon the chase. Near where we were fired upon there were two bamboo huts. Both were searched and burned. Retracing our steps we came upon the first hut which we also burned."

The ladrone's barracks were set fire to before our party came away. On the recommendation of the Provost-Marshal and "Sr. Reyes" I then brought on to Tarlac, for further investigation, 8 Filipinos — 2 of these men had red trousers under their white trousers — and had "Sr. Reyes" tell the inhabitants of San Manuel that I should hold them responsible for any trouble resulting from their barrio in future. The barrio of San Manuel consists of 20 houses; there were 60 men and 40 women and children in them this morning. The inhabitants, according to "Sr. Reyes," are a bad lot, and all "ladrones," but they have several large stacks of rice stowed around there and there was a sugar-mill with con-

Digitized by Google

siderable sugar in jars still there, though the mill machinery is out of order so that it could not be used at present. In returning this afternoon I found the road in very fair condition though there were several bad looking places, in one of which a horse, trying to cross, sank nearly up to his belly in the mud, and only with difficulty floundered out. To the eastward of Bora (barrio of a few houses) the road runs for a mile or more through an immense rice paddy, which would be almost impassable for a horse or train during the wet season. We left San Manuel at 11 A. M., and passing through San Jose at 11:10, Bora at 12:00, Malianlo at 12:40; this is quite a large barrio of possibly 400 or 500 inhabitants; reached Tarlac railroad station, 1 P. M. I have the honor to recommend the earnest and efficient services of Sr. E. Reyes Cappillo for the work he did with us to-day, in which he proved that he is loyal with our Government no matter what he has done in the past. I have also to recommend Lieutenant Naylor's management of the scout detachment, and the good services it performed going and returning. This was made up of public and private horses and equipments wherever he could procure them. A mounted detachment at each post would be of inestimable value during the guerrilla or ladrone period, which is the legacy from the late insurgent Government.

Sketch maps of route and town enclosed.

I am sir,

Very respectfully,

(Signed) C. A. COOLIDGE,

Lieutenant-Colonel Ninth Infantry, Commanding

January 27, continued. One non-commissioned officer and 7 privates, Company L, and one non-commissioned officer and 7 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Deliup, Balutu and Magao and return via San Batolome (14 miles).

January 28. Lieutenant Welborn and 16 men scouted in vicinity of Bamban.

January 29. One officer, 4 sergeants, 5 Corporals and 25 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Santa Cruz, Bancal, Balutu, San Marui and return (14 miles).

January 30. Credible information fron spy at Tarlac that General Macabulos Soliman, with 200 men and 400 or 500 arms, was at Lipe, 9 miles north of Camiling. Reported to Brigade Headquarteres, and authority asked and received to send out two companies, increased afterwards to 3, but delayed by disappearance of guide, and expedition finally countermanded; Seventeenth Infantry being nearer, ordered to

Digitized by Google

look into the matter. This information, and whatever was conveyed to the division commander from other sources, led to a movement against Macabulos' stronghold by the Seventeenth Infantry early in April, which gave important results.

Nine sick and wounded Spaniards, who had been held prisoners by Zambales Negritos, arrived at Bamban, having escaped from their captors in the Zambales mountains.

Lieutenant Waldron and 8 men, Company D, from Bamban to Mabalacat and return (10 miles).

One officer and 25 men, Company L, 2 Corporals and 14 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Deliup, Balutu and return (10 miles).

One officer and 25 men, Company L, Concepcion to Magao and return (6 miles).

January 31. Company E (Lieutenant F. H. Schoeffel commanding) from Tarlac toward Santa Ignacia and return (27 miles).

On this date a letter was received from Brigade Headquarters quoting a telegram from Division Headquarters, which gave information of insurgent methods, and urged increased vigilance against surprise. It presented a picture of the situation as it actually existed, and although the malign purposes of the insurgents were never carried out, largely because the vigilant attitude of the Americans never gave them the opportunity, it is introduced here in full to show the atmosphere of suspicion and watchfulness in which all duty was now being performed.[111]

United States Military Telegraph.

BAUTISTA, P. I., January 30, 1900.

COMMANDING OFFICER, FIRST BRIGADE, Paniqui, P. I.:

It is reported that a secret local government has been, or is being established by the natives in all towns occupied by American troops, which is carrying on some kind of administration in the name of the so-called Filipino Republic, the purposes of which is to maintain a military as well as a civil government; for the former purpose it is said that recruits are raised and sent to join armed bands in the vicinity of the respective towns; that supplies are gathered and sent out of town to the troops, mostly at night; that taxes or contributions are levied, collected and applied to the support of the armed bands. In addition to the armed bands gathered at specified rendezvous, it is said many citizens in each town possess arms, which are secreted according to the ingenuity of each individual, and that the citizens thus equipped and inside the towns are organized for military co-operation with the bands

[111] L. R. 191 — 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

in the field when ordered to mobilize. All this organization and preparation, so information says, is intended to lead up to a simultaneous outbreak in many towns, with a view to the massacre and destruction of the American garrisons therein. This information may be true or it may not be true, but it is a fact that rapid conquest over an enemy, who is much scattered, had led necessarily to such an extensive dissemination of our troops that constant vigilance and never-ceasing activity are essential to investigate. It is therefore requested that you urge all commanding officers to make all efforts possible to ascertain what truth there may be in the matters of report referred to, also to give such orders in the premises as will emphasize the necessity of keeping the men well in hand day and night, and such as will preclude the possibility of a feeling of false security to grow up and thus nourish a propensity for carelessness and a negligence of all precautious measures which has always been a fruitful source of mischief under similar conditions to those now existing in the territory occupied by this division.

Please issue a mandatory order that at least half of the command at every station must be in the vicinity of the quarters at all times, and that men who go more than 200 yards from their quarters, for any purpose whatever, must carry arms. If any exceptions are to be made to these orders the matter should be reported in writing and submitted for your discretion and action.

You are further requested to multiply precautions to accomplish the end in view, as actual experience may suggest the necessity therefor. For some time to come it will be impossible to make an error on the side of prudence. Acknowledge receipt.

By command of Major-General MacArthur.

ALVORD, A. A. G.
HEADQUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE
SECOND DIVISION EIGHTH ARMY CORPS
Paniqui, P. I. January 30, 1900.

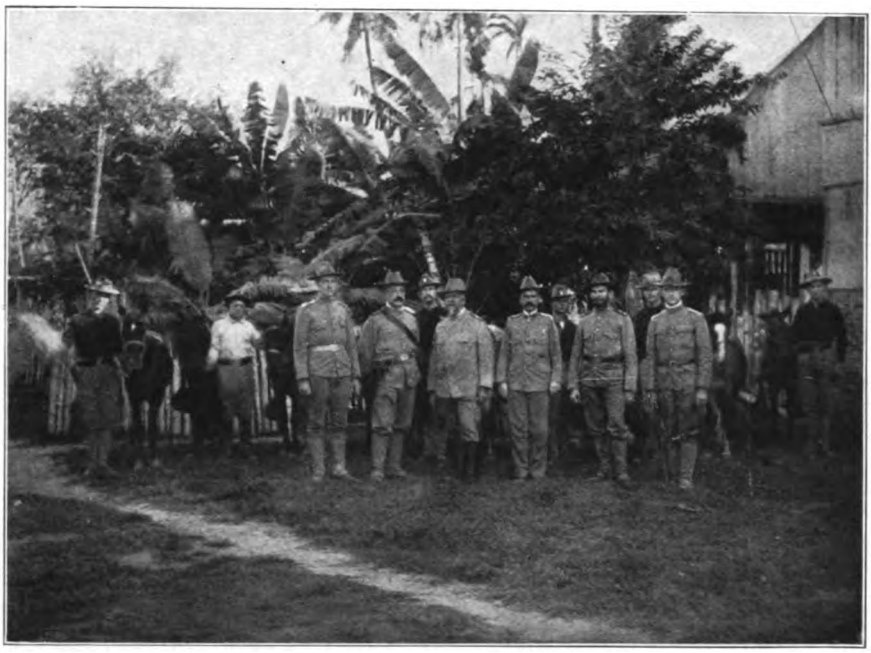
Official copy respectfully furnished to the commanding officer, Ninth Infantry.

Please instruct the commanding officers of the several stations occupied by your regiment, in addition to carrying out the telegraphic instructions sent you this date, to require the most careful scouting on all roads and trails leading from their stations; it is thought no party smaller than a squad should be sent on scouting duty, and if scouting to any great distance, say between two and five miles, the party should be increased to two or three squads, and as often as practicable a commissioned officer

Digitized by Google

should be sent in charge. A portion of all commands should be held in readiness to support. If not familiar with the country around your stations, all practicable information must be obtained at once. Adopt such measures as you may, after mature deliberation, think best to ascertain if supplies are being conveyed out of town, and be prepared to seize and hold both the parties concerned and their supplies.

Upon receipt of this, or as soon thereafter as possible, inspect every house in the towns occupied, and have your scouting parties from time



Brigade Commander (General Liscum) and Staff. Paniqui, 1900.

to time do the same. Do this thoroughly, but without any undue indignity being imposed thereby. Be most careful that no indignity even the slightest, is put upon women. It is thought that tact can be used so as not to create a feeling of resentment on the part of the natives on account of this search. While being made, a part of the command should be held in readiness to act promptly in case of necessity. Have reports rendered to you daily when practicable, using the wire whenever necessary; at other times, when delay will do no harm, by mail.

The brigade commander desires to be kept thoroughly posted regard-

Digitized by Google

ing reports received by you under this order. Please acknowledge receipt of this by wire.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Signed) FRANK L. WINN,
Captain and Adjutant Twelfth Infantry,
Acting Assistant Adjutant-General.

The instructions were telegraphed to all Ninth Infantry stations and all towns were searched for arms.

February 1. Captain Brewster gets information of organizing and plotting near Capas.

One non-commissioned officer and 7 privates, Company L, and 1 non-commissioned officer and 8 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Deliup and return (5 miles).

February 2. Two non-commissioned officers and 14 men, Company A, from O'Donnell northwesterly and return (4 miles).

Company B (Captain Brewster commanding) proceeded from Capas to Dolores and return, arresting head man and capturing 4 rifles.

Two non-commissioned officers and 13 privates, Company C, Bamban to Capas, searching houses for arms; returned on February 3rd (12 miles).

One non-commissioned officer, 5 privates, Company L, and 1 non-commissioned officer, 8 privates, Company M, Concepcion to Deliup and return (5 miles).

Lieutenant Lang and detachment from Murcia in search of ladrones near San Miguel; burned insurgent or ladrone barracks (17 miles).

Company I, at Murcia, fired on at night by insurgents at long range. Company formed but did not return fire, hoping attackers would come nearer.

February 3. Company D (Lieutenant Welborn commanding) from Bamban to Capas to re-enforce latter place during absence of Company B (4 miles).

February 4. Company B (Captain Brewster commanding) from Capas to Telatao and return. Captured 1 rifle.

Company D (Lieutenant Welborn commanding) Capas to Bamban (4 miles).

Company F (Lieutenant Naylor commanding) from Tarlac to Morione, and thence to Ibac River, returning on February 5th (36 miles).

February 5. A mounted detachment was organized at Tarlac on this date. There were mounted men at all stations, using ponies and equipments that had been purchased by the individual members of the detachments. At the end of April Colonel Liscum reported 43 native ponies, owned by officers and men in the public service, scouting, and

Digitized by Google

being fed at private expense. He endeavored to get authority to issue government forage to them; 50 American horses and saddle equipments were supplied by the Quartermaster's Department in May.

Two non-commissioned officers and 14 men, Company M, Concepcion to Bencal, San Juan and return (15 miles).

Lieutenant Bumpus and detachment, Company C, from Bamban to Callabassa and return (6 miles).

February 6. Eight men, Company D, from Bamban northward and return (6 miles).

February 7. Company I (Captain F. L. Palmer commanding) from Murcia, toward Concepcion, in search of insurgent, General Aquino, reported to be in that locality (7 miles).

Mounted detachment from Tarlac to Murcia (7 miles).

One rifle turned in at Bamban for purchase money.

February 8. Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel, with 4 non-commissioned officers and 21 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to San Miguel, San Jose, Darabulbul, Tinang and return (12 miles).

February 9. Company G (Lieutenant Wallace commanding) from Tarlac towards Victoria, and San Manuel and return (16 miles).

Lieutenant Waldron and 8 men, Company D, from Bamban easterly, toward Mt. Arayat and return (6 miles).

Company M (Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel commanding) from Concepcion to Santa Rita, San Vincente, San Roque and return (15 miles).

February 10. Two non-commissioned officers, 14 privates, Company L, two non-commissioned officers and 7 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Calutigan and return (12 miles).

February 11. Company E (Lieutenant Wallace commanding) from Tarlac to Tinuba and return (17 miles).

Two Corporals, 14 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Delucles, Santa Cruz, and Darabulbul and return (9 miles).

February 13. Lieutenant Waldron and 8 men, Company D, from Bamban northeasterly and return (8 miles).

Two rifles received by purchase at Bamban.

Two Corporals, 14 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to San Antonio and return (6 miles).

February 14. Companies F and G, under command of Captain Anderson, from Tarlac to Tinuba and return. Surrounded place at daybreak and searched for arms without result (12 miles).

February 15. Information concerning movement of Manuel de Leon, insurgent Lieutenant-Colonel, toward Camiling, telegraphed to brigade commander.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Waldron and 8 men, Company D, from Bamban eastward and return (12 miles).

One non-commissioned officer, 16 privates, Company L, from Concepcion to Calles, San Isidro and return (8 miles).

Two rifles secured by purchase at Bamban.

February 16. Information concerning Aquino, who was said to be in barrio east of Mabalacat, telegraphed to brigade commander and to General Grant at Angeles.

One rifle secured by purchase at Bamban.

Two non-commissioned officers and 14 men, Company A, from O'Donnell northeasterly and return (8 miles).

Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel, 3 non-commissioned officers and 14 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Santiago and return (8 miles).

February 17. Band of ladrones reported operating near O'Donnell. Company H (Lieutenant Frazier commanding) and mounted detachment (Lieutenant Wallace commanding) to Moriones, and thence to O'Donnell to aid in search for ladrones; thence on February 18th to Capas; thence by rail to Tarlac. Distance marched, 28 miles.

One rifle secured by purchase at Bamban.

Instructions received to have country occupied by Ninth Infantry mapped. Lieutenant Hammond, engineer officer of regiment, is assigned to this duty.

A private letter of this date depicted the situation as follows:

"It is discouraging to talk with Mr. Koehler. As Provost-Marshal he learns about what the natives are doing and thinking. There is no question but that the duly elected Presidente of the Municipal Council of this town is an insurgent of rank and importance. It is probable that he regularly collects and transmits to the insurgent Generals money and sustenance. The military organization is preserved throughout the country. He is at the head of a company or battalion which can assemble quickly. We live along quite confidently, sleeping soundly at night, with a few sentinels here and there, and, in our midst, passing along our streets, spying upon us, are these insurgent soldiers. It is a kind of powder-mill where a spark may cause an explosion and destroy us all.

"It alarms us to find how few friends we have; to realize that only one or two are willing to tell us the truth. We feel in a desperate mood. It is hard to tell how to prepare to meet such an enemy. What to do to foil them."

February 18. Tarlac mounted detachment Capas to Tarlac (10 miles.)

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant Waldron and 16 men, Company D, from Bamban eastward and return (10 miles).

February 19. Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel, 3 Corporals, 21 privates, Company M, Concepcion to Santa Cruz, San Miguel, Tinang, Murcia and return (26 miles).

Lieutenant Smith, temporarily commanding Company A, O'Donnell, captured three ringleaders of ladrones near his station.

February 21. Two rifles secured by purchase at Bamban.

February 22. Flag-raising at Tarlac, attended by the Presidente and members of the Municipal Council, the padre, native school children, and a large number of the citizens who appeared with a written address containing expressions of loyalty, and satisfaction with American occupation, which was read and punctuated with frequent vivas by the natives. Five days later a search of the house and premises of the Presidente, Perfecto Mamaual, revealed convincing evidences of his activity in collecting funds for the insurgents and furnishing them information. In due time he was tried by a Provost Court, pleaded guilty and was given the full sentence authorized to such court.

Instructions received from Division Headquarters to make estimates for putting roads to all stations in good order for use during rainy season, also, about this date, preparations were made to supply each station with four months' rations, having in view the possible impracticability of hauling over the roads during the wet season.

Lieutenant Lang and 8 men, Company I, from Murcia toward Concepcion and return (6 miles).

One officer and 7 men, Company L, from Concepcion to Murcia and return (12 miles).

February 24. One non-commissioned officer, 7 men, Company L, 2 Corporals, 14 privates, Company M, from Concepcion to Santo Niño and return (7 miles).

February 25. Lieutenant Lawton and 8 men, Company D from Bamban westward and return (8 miles).

One officer, 2 non-commissioned officers, 14 privates, Company L, from Concepcion, along left bank of Cut Cut River, to Capas and return (11 miles).

February 26. One officer, 16 men, Company L, Concepcion to Bamban and return (12 miles).

February 27. It was on this date that Lieutenant Koehler, Provost-Marshal at Tarlac, got possession of papers implicating Presidente Mamaual of Tarlac in giving aid to the insurgents. His premises searched and documents found showing that he was a collector of money for the

Digitized by Google

insurgents, and was in communication with them. The Presidente arrested and confined.

Lieutenant Lawton and 8 men, Company D, from Bamban northeasterly and return (8 miles).

February 28. Company G (Lieutenant Hammond commanding) from Tarlac to Sapong-Maragol, where small detachment of insurgents was engaged, killing one, and important capture made in the person of Alfonso Ramos, an educated and influential native, who afterwards became Presidente of Tarlac (6 miles).

At 4 P. M. Lieutenant Hammond, Lieutenant Wallace, and mounted detachment made a dash to Tinuba to arrest Gabino Calma, an insurgent Lieutenant-Colonel who was reported to be there. Not successful.

Up to this date the chronological statement has given all the scouting trips of which there is record, not including, however, the regular daily patrols on the railroad, nor all escort, of wagons carrying rations, Paymaster's trips, etc. Most of the latter, as well as a number of minor scouting trips, are not mentioned in any of the records. A summation of the number of miles, as far as stated above, gives totals covered by scouting parties as follows:

In November..... 30 miles
In December.....702 miles
In January.....638 miles
In February.....427 miles

The duty continued in a similar manner for an equal period following, but as the foregoing illustrates, with considerable fullness the nature of the work that was being performed, the minor scouting trips are not chronicled for the remaining months.

March 1. Company G (Lieutenant Hammond commanding) and mounted detachment (Lieutenant Wallace commanding) began a combined movement, having for its purpose the capture of the band of insurgents, under Lieutenant-Colonel Manuel de Leon at San Manuel, and marched to Luisita.

March 2. Company G and mounted detachment from Luisita at 3 A. M. to San Manuel, uniting with Company K from Tarlac, and one company Twelfth Infantry from Victoria. Company K (Captain Sigworth commanding) marched from Tarlac 3 A. M., arriving at San Manuel at 5:15 A. M. Nothing accomplished. Companies G and K and mounted detachment then returned to Tarlac. Brought in one prisoner who lighted signal fire near Caramuton. Distance marched by Company G and mounted detachment, 33 miles; by Company K, 16 miles.

Digitized by Google

March 3. Lieutenant Koehler and detachment from Tarlac to Sapong-Maragol and return, securing five Remington rifles and one Winchester.

On information obtained by Lieutenant Koehler, companies H (Lieutenant Naylor commanding temporarily) and K (Captain Sigworth commanding) proceeded at 3:20 P. M. to Tinuba, arriving there at 5:30 P. M., surrounding the village and holding all persons until the following morning, March 4th, when Lieutenant Koehler, with the mounted detachment under Lieutenant Wallace, joined the command, having ridden from Tarlac, and efforts were at once made to secure insurgent arms. In the search Lieutenant Koehler was killed, and the regiment lost one of its most active, intelligent and fearless officers. Lieutenant Wallace, who was with him, relates the occurrence as follows:[112]

"Left here with Lieutenants Koehler and Hammond; had with us two natives. One of them had shown us a place the day before where we got rifles. One from the guard-house knew the insurrecto soldiers by sight. The natives of the barrio Tinuba were rounded up — about 150 or 160 men. They were lined up in two lines facing each other. The native from the guard-house went through the lines and picked out the soldiers without any hesitation. We could tell by the manner of the men that they were insurrectos. These were separated from the others and placed under guard. We were then shown a house in which the native identified a Colonel who says his name is Liongson;[113] there were 29 put under guard. Lieutenant Koehler directed the Colonel to order the insurrecto soldiers who were outside to turn in their guns. The Colonel went to the window and spoke to them. The interpreter then asked the soldiers if they understood what was said, and that it was an order. All said yes. Then they were sent under guard separately and told to bring in their arms. After going aimlessly around the town and trails they were brought back. It was plain to see that they did not intend to show up their arms. Those who at first spoke Spanish now pretended not to understand. They were sullen and stubborn. Captain Sigworth and Lieutenant Koehler then took three of the insurrectos aside and told them that they would be harshly dealt with if they did not give some information as to arms. They made all kinds of excuses; some said all the arms had been removed to the mountains. We walked down the road about 50 yards. One said he was willing to get his rifle (or some rifles). Before this he had lied as to not speaking Spanish.

[112] Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 167.

[113] Pedro Nolasco Liongson, Colonel of the Corps of Military Justice.

Digitized by Google

"Lieutenant Koehler started with him and I followed. He led us down the road and then on a trail in the dense brush. We had gone some distance when Lieutenant Koehler asked him how much farther it was. He replied, 'Only a short distance.' This was repeated. He replied, 'About two minutes.' Lieutenant Koehler then said we had better return. I think the man then said if we walked fast we could get there in a minute. We went on, and, at a bend in the path, we received a volley from 10 or 12 rifles at a distance of not more than a few feet. The native jumped to one side and escaped. Koehler fell. Saw him rise slightly. After emptying his revolver he fell forward. After emptying my revolver I stepped into the brush and reloaded, then returned; could see nothing on the trail. No more firing. I drew Lieutenant Koehler to the left of the trail, made a pillow of his coat, ran as fast as I could back to the barrio, distance about half a mile in a straight line."

When the firing described by Lieutenant Wallace occurred the prisoners held by Captain Sigworth's company made a break to escape and 24 were killed. As soon as Lieutenant Wallace reached the village a detachment hastened with him to recover Lieutenant Koehler's body. Later, barracks were found in the woods and were destroyed, and the village was also burned. The command then returned to Tarlac, bringing Lieutenant Koehler's body, the invalid insurgent Colonel and a number of prisoners. The killing of 24 men at Tinuba was made a subject of investigation the following day, a staff officer of the division commander being sent to Tarlac for the purpose. His conclusions were reported as follows: [114]

"My conclusions from this investigation are that the natives identified by the guide, out of a large number of natives, were insurrecto soldiers; that their commanding officer was present with them in Tinuba and gave orders then and there that were understood by them as coming from authority; that the killing of Lieutenant Koehler from ambuscade, into which he was guided, by one of these very men, is strong evidence, more strongly corroborated by the finding close at hand of soldiers' barracks and Colonel's office that the natives identified were properly held as prisoners and properly killed in attempting to escape; that the barrio of Tinuba was nothing short of an insurrecto camp, and that it was justly destroyed."

Lieutenant Wallace was awarded a medal of honor for his gallantry on this occasion in standing by his fallen comrade, and putting to rout the insurgents who had fired upon them.

[114] Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 8, p. 167.

Digitized by Google

March 6. Pursuant to instructions from the division commander, one company changed station from Tarlac to Mabalacat, relieving two companies of the Forty-first Infantry, United States Volunteers. Company K (Captain Sigworth commanding) was the company designated by Colonel Liscum, brigade commander, to go to Mabalacat.

On information from Colonel Page, commanding at Caloocan, conveyed by the division commander to Brigade Headquarters, Colonel Liscum, commanding the brigade, ordered a combined movement for the purpose of scouting the country in the vicinity of Moriones, and concentrating on that place, the purpose being to capture insurgent Generals who, it was reported, would meet there in conference. 50 men of Company E, 50 men of Company G, 10 men of the 100 being mounted, were designated as the party from Tarlac. Colonel Liscum himself proceeded to Tarlac with 100 men of the Twelfth Infantry and 50 men of the Twelfth Infantry were sent there from Victoria; 50 men from Bamban were ordered to Capas to move from there toward Moriones. The movements in detail were as follows:

March 6. Colonel Liscum and 100 men, Twelfth Infantry, from Paniqui to Tarlac on special train.

Fifty men, Twelfth Infantry, from Victoria to Tarlac, marching.

Lieutenant Welborn, 25 men Company C, and 25 men Company D, from Bamban to Capas at 9 P. M., on special train.

March 7. 3:20 A. M., 100 men Ninth Infantry, and 50 men Twelfth Infantry, Lieutenant Frazier commanding, from Tarlac to Santa Ignacia, and thence toward Moriones, total, 33 miles. On the following day this command marched to Moriones, 8 miles, and thence to Tarlac, 13 miles, making a total of 54 miles in 41 hours.

Lieutenants Welborn and Brown, A. D. C. and detachment marched from Capas at 6 A. M., March 7th, to Moriones and thence to O'Donnell, arriving there at 7 P. M. Distance 30 miles. The following day marched to Capas, 9 miles, and returned by train from there to Bamban.

Colonel Liscum accompanied the Twelfth Infantry companies from Tarlac to Moriones and return on March 7th, and returned to Paniqui March 8th. The 50 men of the infantry from Victoria, under Lieutenant Harbeson, returned there March 9th, completing 72 miles in 3 days. The march was a severe ordeal for all who took part in it, especially the march by Lieutenant Frazier's command, being of the nature of a forced march, with short rations. A few men were exhausted by the heat and fatigue, and it was necessary to carry them in carts from Moriones, but Lieutenant Frazier praised the officers and men in his report for their discipline and endurance.

Digitized by Google

Nothing of importance was accomplished by this expedition, but it was doubtless reported to General Macabulos in his hiding-place and gave him a thorough appreciation of the perseverance and capacity for hard work of those who were after him.

March 9. Another expedition, fruitless of immediate results, but calculated to impress insurgents who might hear of it with a sense of their insecurity. Captain McCaleb, with one officer and 71 men of Company L, and 31 men of Company M marched from Concepcion in the evening, under guidance of a native who had reported at Capas that he knew the location of an insurgent camp having 40 or 50 rifles. The guide led the party in a northeasterly direction to the vicinity of Calutigan, but no insurgents were found. Returned to Concepcion 5:10 A. M., March 10th. Distance marched 20 miles.

Sixteen men of Company B were sent from Capas to Concepcion to reinforce the latter place during the absence of Captain McCaleb's party.

March 13. Pursuant to instructions from the division commander, one company changed station from Bamban to Magalang.

Captain George Palmer, commanding First Battalion, with his Headquarters and Company D (Lieutenant Welborn commanding), designated by Colonel Liscum to make this change. Command left Bamban at 8 A. M. Arrived at Magalang 3 P. M., relieving two companies of the Forty-first Infantry, United States Volunteers. Distance marched 16 miles.

On March 13th, 15th, 21st, 22nd, and 25th, scouting expeditions were made by companies at Tarlac, bringing in suspected men, but without accomplishing important results.

March 28. Company K sustained a night attack at Mabalacat, without casualty.

March 31. The regular railroad patrol of Company K from Mabalacat toward Angeles was fired upon from ambush and Sergeant Alonzo L. Johnson, Company K, was killed.

The total distance covered by scouting parties during the month, not including railroad patrols, was 545 miles.

April 2. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge at Tarlac was informed by a spy of the march of an armed body of insurgents passing near Victoria in a southeasterly direction toward La Paz. Confirmed by report from Victoria, and corroborating information received from Captain Anderson, commanding temporarily at Concepcion. Information reported to brigade commander, who directed Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge to organize a combined movement from Tarlac and Concepcion on La Paz and Caut.

Digitized by Google

April 3. Forty men, Company B, from Capas to Concepcion to reinforce that station during absence of Captain Anderson and 100 men toward Caut.

Twenty-four men by train from Tarlac to Capas to reinforce that station.

April 4. Captain Anderson, 2 officers, 60 men Company L, and 39 men Company M, from Concepcion to Caut and return (16 miles). Lieutenant Frazier, with Company G, 22 men Company E, and 26 men Company F, from Tarlac 2 A. M., to La Paz, Caut, and return (26 miles). Nothing accomplished except the usual impression on the Filipinos of American activity and watchfulness.

Information was obtained on April 4th of Major Geronimo Velasco and his band of insurgents in vicinity of Victoria. Major Allen, Twelfth Infantry, commanding at Victoria, was notified. This insurgent office was one of the will-o'-the-wisps whom the Ninth was constantly searching for. General Macabulos, Lieutenant-Colonel Gabino Calma, Lieutenant-Colonel Manuel de Leon, and Major Velasco, were the commanders of guerrilla troops operating in the vicinity of Tarlac, whom the troops were constantly endeavoring to locate, or so harass as to cause them to surrender. General Aquino and Captain Porong were in the vicinity of Concepcion. Any rumor concerning any of them, or any report of spies was followed up most vigorously.

April 6. Major Regan, with two companies, was sent from Tarlac on the Victoria road in search of armed insurgents reported by a native. The native guided the command and pointed out 36 insurgent soldiers from among 63 men found in the barrio. These were brought in and efforts made to cause them to reveal the hiding-place of their arms, but without success. One of the captured men was said to be the drill sergeant in that barrio. On April 6 one company of Maccabebe scouts arrived at Mabalacat and began operation in that vicinity, in conjunction with detachments from Company K, in ferreting out arms. Later in the month this Maccabebe company operated at Concepcion and Tarlac in conjunction with the troops at those stations. Considerable success was attained, especially at Concepcion where about 40 rifles were obtained, but no general surrender of armed commands was brought about.

April 7. The insurgent stronghold in the mountains near Camiling, northwest of Tarlac, information of which was, apparently, first obtained at Tarlac and communicated to Brigade and Division Headquarters on January 30th, was definitely located by troops near the locality, and on this date, April 7th, the place was attacked by a com-

Digitized by Google

mand composed of three full companies of the Seventeenth Infantry, parts of two other companies of the same regiment, and a platoon of cavalry, under the command of Colonel Jacob H. Smith, Seventeenth Infantry. The insurgents were driven out of the place and scattered, and three days later Colonel Liscum telegraphed as follows:

PANIQUI, April 10th, 9 P. M.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Tarlac, P. I.:

The following telegram just received from Division Headquarters dated Bautista, April 10, filed 7:12 P. M., and is furnished you for your information and guidance. Send a detachment to Moriones to-morrow morning and have O'Donnell notified as directed, and acknowledge receipt to you of notification. "Rendezvous of Macabulos in this neighborhood has been broken up, burned and destroyed. He was last heard of the other side of the mountains. It is possible he may work his way down towards Moriones. Please cause that point to be occupied for a period no less than ten days by a detachment of about 25 men under command of an officer. Please warn the commanding officer at O'Donnell that Macabulos may possibly work his way down over trail leading to that point, and that country along that trail may be scouted. By command of General MacArthur." I wish you to send six squads with a few of your mounted men and direct them to gain all the information they can by scouting within supporting distance of Moriones. Give them assistance, if you find it necessary, from Tarlac. They can probably gain assistance from you by going to O'Donnell, which is connected by wire. Acknowledge receipt.

LISCUM, Commanding.

In compliance with the instructions given, Lieutenant Frazier was sent to Moriones on April 11th with six squads of Company H, and the mounted men, and was reinforced on April 13th by Lieutenant Coleman and 30 men of Company G. Lieutenant Frazier sent out scouting parties in all directions, capturing two rifles, receiving four rifles which were surrendered for purchase money, and, above all, getting possession, April 12th, of about 100 men, women and children who had been driven into the mountains at the time of destruction of Macabulos' rendezvous on April 7th. The party which was under the charge of one of Macabulos' officers, Major Doncel, had wandered through the mountains for several days, and came into Moriones to secure food and shelter. Among the number was the wife of Macabulos, and six officers besides Doncel. With the exception of the officers the men of the party were burden-bearers and camp-followers, and none of them were found with arms.

Digitized by Google

All were sent to Tarlac April 13th under guard, and Mrs. Macabulos was provided with a house near Headquarters where she could be kept under surveillance. The officers were conducted to Manila and the other men released. Lieutenant Frazier executed his order on this trip with thoroughness and intelligence characteristic of him, and he was complimented by General Bell for his activity and zeal. His report is quoted:[115]

TARLAC, P. I., April 20, 1900.

THE ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac, P. I.:

SIR: I have the honor to report that, in compliance with paragraph 3, Special Order No. 88, Current Series, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, I proceeded at six o'clock A. M., April 11, 1900, with the designated six squads of company H, Ninth Infantry, to Moriones, arriving at that place about 11 o'clock A. M. Upon my arrival the Vice-President of Moriones reported to me that he had news of the breaking up of the force of Macabulos near Camiling, and its being scattered, but said that, as yet, none had appeared in the vicinity of Moriones.

Early in the morning of April twelfth the Commandante, Arturo Doncel, of Macabulos' force came to my quarters with the Vice-Presidente and a Sergeant. He said that Mrs. Macabulos was in the barrio of San Nicolas, five miles to westward, and would come in with all her retinue if assured of kind treatment. I assured him she would not be mistreated, and held him, but sent the Sergeant for "La Generala," as they called her. She came about eight o'clock that evening, together with some forty other women and seventy men, but no guns. There were also six sick officers and a doctor. The people of Moriones fed and sheltered the women for the night, and I gave supper and breakfast to the seventy-seven men. I sent them all, except one Corporal, in by Sergeant O'Connor and part of the mounted squad which was returning next morning. I was unable to obtain any information from any of them as to the whereabouts of Macabulos or any of his soldiers or guns. They had with them two good beeves which I held and slaughtered during the week in order to provide my men with some much-needed fresh meat. There was also one fairly good horse upon which I mounted one of my men, thus giving me altogether a mounted squad of some ten men by using my own private horses and one or two belonging to men in the company.

Meanwhile, on the twelfth, I had made a scout about five miles on a trail to the north of Moriones, ascending a mountain from which I could easily see all the barrios and villages for many miles around. Nothing

[115] L. R. 768, 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

was discovered on this patrol. On April 13th I sent out a patrol to the top of a mountain to the west of Moriones, distance some 3 or 3½ miles, but nothing suspicious was found.

On the 14th, at 6:30 A. M., I took all the mounted men I had available and, taking the retained Corporal for a guide, started north and west over the trail by which Mrs. Macabulos had come to Moriones (Bolso). At about 10:30 A. M. I arrived at the deserted barrio of Pitrinbayung, where I met Lieutenant E. C. Bolton, Seventeenth Infantry, with a scouting party; he told me that he had covered all the ground to the north and west of that place, and that the information that he obtained all stated that Macabulos had appointed La Paz as the next rendezvous. I returned to Moriones by a road further to the west, at the foot of the mountains, but could discover nothing suspicious. Upon arriving at Moriones I found Lieutenant W. P. Coleman, Ninth Infantry, and 30 men of Company G on hand to reinforce me. Colonel Reyes, and the rest of the mounted squad, also came in late in the afternoon. In accordance with instructions brought by them I sought a messenger to carry communications to Macabulos, but the messenger returned next night saying that the only information he could obtain regarding the whereabouts of Macabulos was that he had scattered his forces and designated a point near La Paz as the rendezvous.

On April 15th I sent out patrols about three miles to the east and north, one on each side of the river Bolso. The patrol on the left side of the river visited the barrio of Pauau, about 2½ miles northeast of Moriones, but neither patrol was able to discover anything.

On the 16th I started at 6 A. M. with Lieutenant Coleman, Colonel Reyes, and 14 mounted men, and proceeded westward, along the trail running up the river Bolso, in the hope that I might find Macabulos in some barrio in or beyond the Zambales Mountains. But after following this trail for about 22 miles westward from Moriones it became obliterated at a cluster of four or five Negrito huts, and I am convinced that passage beyond the mountains, in the neighborhood of Moriones, or subsistence among them, would be an impracticability for any considerable body of men.

Upon returning to Moriones at 7 P. M. I found Lieutenants E. C. Bolton and J. R. Thomas, Seventeenth Infantry, there with a patrol. They had also been following a trail through the mountains to the northwest of Moriones, but found that it did not cross over, and, like me, they were convinced that neither Macabulos nor any considerable body of his men were longer in that neighborhood.

There was also awaiting me at Moriones a letter from Lieutenant

Digitized by Google

A. Smith, Ninth Infantry, at O'Donnell, containing a telegram from Colonel Coolidge directing me to arrest one Jorge Carpricho, and also informing me that the latter had five or six rifles in his possession.

I was unable to get Carpricho, but in seeking for him next day, April 17th, I found out that in a barrio about 2½ miles west were a Sergeant and a Corporal under him who might possibly know of the whereabouts of the guns. I sent Colonel Reyes, Sergeant Connor, and a squad there, and they returned with two guns and a promise from the sergeant that he would come in that afternoon with another, and next morning with two more. This sergeant, Mariano Cobe, did as he had promised, and later, on the 19th, also brought in the man Jorge Carpricho, who had also brought a gun with him. This old man freely confesses that he was acting as Presidente of Moriones, under Macabulos, and that he collected five or ten cents per month from each inhabitant and turned it over to Macabulos. But he says he did this under compulsion and fear for his life. He is old, poor and decrepit; and if this is his only crime I would respectfully recommend that he be given thirty pesos for the gun he turned in, and allowed to return to his home in Moriones, where he promises to remain hereafter ever loyal to the United States.

During the 17th, 18th and 19th of April I sent out patrols in every direction, from three to five miles from Moriones, and became thoroughly convinced that there is no longer any of Macabulos' force in that vicinity, owing to the poverty of the country and lack of provisions. I therefore believe that there is no longer any necessity for American troops to be stationed in Moriones, or to do more than to send a patrol to the place at irregular and unexpected intervals. Forty-six rounds of ammunition were also brought in with the guns obtained.

When inquiring for Jorge Carpricho the Vice-Presidente of Moriones stated to me that this man was dead, he well knowing said statement to be false, and made with intent to prevent me from finding said Carpricho.

The Sergeant Mariano Cobe returned with me to Tarlac this morning to obtain the ninety pesos for the three guns which he turned in of his own volition. Two were captured, three were turned in by him, and one was brought in by Jorge Carpricho.

The command returned to Tarlac this morning at 9:30 A. M., Lieutenant Coleman and eight of the mounted men being sent around by the way of O'Donnell on duty connected with roads and bridges.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) JOSEPH FRAZIER,
First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

On April 7th General Orders No. 1, Headquarters Division of the Philippines announced the creation of the Division of the Philippines in substitution for the Department of the Pacific and Eighth Army Corps. It established the Department of Northern Luzon with Headquarters at Bautista, Major General MacArthur commanding, and divided the department into five districts. The province of Tarlac was comprised in the Third District, the command of which was given to Brigadier-General James F. Bell, United States Volunteers, with Headquarters at Dagupan. These changes resulted in returning Colonel Liscum to the command of the regiment, and he joined Regimental Headquarters at Tarlac on April 19th. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge remained at Tarlac, as second in command, not being assigned to command a battalion until a later date.

April 23rd Company K (Lieut. Brown Commanding) changed station from Mabalacat to Gerona by rail, and April 25th Headquarters First Battalion and Company D changed station from Magalang to Victoria, relieving companies of the Twelfth Infantry. These moves were made because Mabalacat and Magalang were outside the territorial limits of the Third District.

April 26. Company H to O'Donnell to strengthen the post temporarily during the execution of Filipino murderers.

April 28 to 30. A combined movement from Concepcion (Company M commanded by Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel), and from Tarlac (Company E commanded by Lieutenant F. H. Schoeffel), on La Paz, accompanied by Macabebe scouts, searched for arms. A number of arms were secured and two insurgent barracks in the forest were destroyed. The Macabebe scouts were working with Tarlac companies during the closing days of April, and found a few rifles. At Concepcion the mere presence of the Macabebes had brought about many surrenders for cash, and such surrenders continued at Concepcion and elsewhere after the departure of the Macabebes.

April 28. Lieutenant Brown, commanding Company K at Gerona, reported a scouting trip with mounted men, and stated that he had information through spies of the presence of Macabulos and about 300 insurgents at Sulipa, near his station. He ascertained that Macabulos had given orders to all the head men in the barrios that if any American troops left their quarters in search of him or his command that he would kill everybody in the barrio unless they informed him of the fact.

In April considerable correspondence was carried on between Regimental Headquarters and the several stations on the subjects of road construction, building storehouses, and establishing schools. The

Digitized by Google

regimental Quartermaster was much occupied with these matters, and also with disbursements for arms surrendered for the $30 (Mexican) reward. There were 244 arms secured in various ways during the month, chiefly by purchase.

Captain Harris having been ordered to the United States for duty in connection with the War Department Exhibit at the Pan-American Exposition at Buffalo, N. Y., was relieved by Lieutenant Naylor, who had charge of the office temporarily, and on April 22nd Captain Ramsey, who rejoined the regiment, was appointed Quartermaster and Acting Ordnance Officer.

Captain Ramsey's duty with General Lawton's expedition had been terminated in December and later he had been assigned to duty as Chief Quartermaster and Chief Commissary of southern expeditions under Major-General J. C. Bates, United States Volunteers. This officer furnished Regimental Headquarters a copy of a letter in which he expressed to Captain Ramsey appreciation of his ability, skill, and energy, stating that he contributed materially to the success of the expeditions by his energy and promptness in collecting the necessary supplies, animals and vehicles; in loading and handling the fleet of transports, and in improvising means for unloading transports under most unfavorable conditions.

About April 20th the management of the railroad was transferred from military control to the control of the railroad company, but patrols on the track were continued. About 25 miles of track were thus covered twice daily by squads of eight men. Exclusive of these patrols minor escort duty, and small patrols searching for arms, the total distance covered by scouting parties during the month of April was, approximately, 460 miles.

The month of May and that part of June (1900) during which the regiment remained in the province of Tarlac was a period of fruition and reward for its hard scouting of the preceding six months. The period was by no means one of rest and peace, however. Every rumor and report of insurgents was followed up as vigorously and relentlessly as before, and the routine patrolling and scouting continued; but now there began to be satisfactory results.

On May 4th the wife of General Macabulos handed to the Provost-Marshal of Tarlac, Lieutenant Hammond, a letter she had received from her husband indicating his disposition to surrender his forces. Colonel Liscum had previously shown Senora Macabulos every possible courtesy, had taken advantage of an opportunity to convey to her his congratulations upon the birth of a son, and had aided her in sending word of the happy event to the father. At his suggestion both she and

Digitized by Google

Major Doncel, before the latter's departure to Manila, had sent letters to Macabulos urging him to surrender. The letter which Senora Macabulos received from her husband was translated to Colonel Liscum by Lieutenant Hammond, and read as follows:[116]

ZAMBALES MOUNTAINS, April 27, 1900.

SENORA DOROTHEA PASCUAL:

MY DEAREST WIFE: I have received your letter this very day and I understand that you have surrendered yourselves to the American authorities and that they received you very kindly, and I give thanks.

In respect to that which you say in regard to my surrendering with all my soldiers I will say that that is what I also wish, under satisfactory conditions, and not injuring my reputation with the people, or in any way my political career.

And, furthermore, I would desire that my personal property be not taken from me, for in truth I am very tired of living here in the mountains since the year 1896 until the arrival of the present time; on account of my country I have been in this position, and furthermore, no one can say that I have not served my country well; and now we wish to live tranquilly in our towns, and to be by the side of our families so that my people will not say that I wish to be a General all my life.

To this end I have delegated El Commandante Paulilio to arrange with the American commander in Camiling the conditions of surrender, and I have not seen him since that time.

If the American Government will have an order issued saying that it will pay 30 pesos for each gun to the soldiers of all Generals and other officers who are in command of forces, and will not make prisoners of them, but give them their liberty, and be allowed to live unmolested on their farms and in their houses, now occupied by the Americans, I will surrender myself with all my soldiers; all the small parties in the barrios will be surrendered also, and peace will thus be insured in this section.

We cannot do this if we are to be made prisoners and be molested in life or property in the towns where we were born.

Now I must close. May God protect us. Do not leave our child, Datong, the only one we have left, and guard the little interests that you may have to live on.

Your husband,

F. M. SOLIMAN.

In response to this, Colonel Liscum directed Lieutenant Hammond to address Senora Macabulos with a view to having her continue her

[116] Copy filed as L. R. 854 — 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

influence toward bringing about her husband's surrender. The letter read as follows:[117]

TARLAC, PHILIPPINE ISLANDS,
May 4, 1900.

SENORA DOROTHEA PASCUAL:

I am directed by the commanding officer of the Ninth Infantry, who commands at this station, to acknowledge receipt of the letter from your husband, F. M. Soliman, dated Zambales Mountains, April 27, 1900, and addressed to you, his wife, and brought to me this A. M. for translation.

This letter has been shown to the commanding officer who directs me to say as follows: That you urge upon the General the benefit that would result to the people in the community where he lives, by his surrendering himself to our authorities.

I know of no reason existing to prevent the General being set at liberty by the American Governor-General if he would do as he tells you he desires to do, namely, surrender himself with his soldiers.

General Macabulos would be required to surrender as a prisoner of war. He can choose his own station where he may wish to surrender. If he chooses Tarlac I will guarantee to him kind treatment while in my hands, and I have the assurance of the General commanding the department that he would be promptly sent to Manila as a prisoner, but a precedent would no doubt govern in his case, namely, that he would receive his release as other insurgent officers have received theirs.

Regarding the payment of arms surrendered: A Proclamation dated San Fernando, Philippine Islands, May 15, 1899, provides for the payment of 30 pesos to any person surrendering a rifle, and that person so surrendering it shall not be held as a prisoner, but shall have his full liberty, receiving his pay for surrendered gun or guns.

The provisions of this order General Macabulos may depend upon as being faithfully carried out. This regiment, alone, having bought and paid for, at the rate of 30 pesos each, over 200 guns within the month of April past.

The commanding officer desires you to urge upon the General to adopt at once the course he suggests in his letter to you. There will be no conditions in a surrender; payments will be made for arms exactly as stated, and kind treatment can be implicitly depended upon.

The commanding officer was given a copy of the translation of the General's letter to you, and will forward it with a copy of this letter

[117] Copy filed as L. R. 855 — 1900, Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

to the department commander at Bautista for his information, and he wishes you may help the General to a decision by sending him a copy of this letter and telling him of the treatment you are receiving at our hands, which he hopes will act as an additional assurance to the General of fair treatment to him if he at once surrenders and helps build up his people's welfare.

(Signed) HAROLD HAMMOND,
First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, Provost-Marshal.

This correspondence did not, however, meet with any immediate result, and Colonel Liscum was, indeed, required two days later to convey to Macabulos the information that as he, Macabulos, had had an American executed in his camp, he would be subject to trial and punishment by military commission unless it could be proved that no such crime was permitted, or that he was in no way responsible for the same.[118]

In the meantime Lieutenant Brown reported from Gerona that he had information that Macabulos, with 300 men, having left the country west of Gerona, had moved to a locality near Tarlac and thence to La Paz, about 12 miles east of Tarlac. Reports of insurgents crossing the railroad north of Tarlac partially confirmed this information, and Captain Anderson at Concepcion was asked to report what he could find out of the exact locality in which the insurgents were congregating. He telegraphed at 6 P. M. that evening (May 6th) that a large number of soldiers were said to be in the vicinity of Caut and La Paz. Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, who was in command, Colonel Liscum having gone to Manila for a short visit, at once planned a combined movement from Tarlac and Concepcion, which was approved by the district commander. It was executed the night of May 7th, and, during the following day, Companies E and G, with the mounted detachment, were taken from Tarlac, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge going himself, in command, and Company L, increased to 100 men by a detachment from Company M, was sent from Concepcion under command of Lieutenant Connell. As usual, profound secrecy was maintained during the preparations, and a night march was made through the forest to strike the objective by daylight. Gustave Doré could hardly have pictured grander trees, deeper shades, more tangled vines, than those bordering the narrow way along which the long file of soldiers threaded its way, the route being barely revealed by the moon's rays through the high canopy of foliage. But La Paz was found as peaceful as could be desired, even desolate and

[118] Telegram from district commander filed with telegrams received May, 1900.

Digitized by Google

forlorn. The insurgent soldiers, if any had been there, had most successfully concealed themselves, or, as customary, had buried their rifles and assumed the garb of peaceful peasantry. The two forces of Americans united at Caut the morning of the 8th, and returned to their stations late in the afternoon, arriving about midnight. The Tarlac command recorded a march of 30 miles in 28 hours; that from Concepcion 16 miles.

Another rainy season was now at hand. All through the winter months there had been no rain, but in March and April there were occasional heavy showers, and in May they became frequent. In anticipation of impassable roads, supplies of rations and clothing had been placed at the stations off the railroad. Nevertheless road repairs and construction were in progress, especially from Capas to O'Donnell, and Capas to Concepcion, the work being under the charge of the regimental Quartermaster, and under the immediate direction of Lieutenant Lawton, assisted by Lieutenant Waldron. About 500 natives were employed for over a month on this work. Captain Sibert, Corps of Engineers, who had had charge of the railroad for a short period prior to its transfer to the railroad company, built, with native labor, a dyke along the bank of the Tarlac River to confine the stream to its bed, and prevent another washout of the railroad, three miles north of the station. Lieutenant Coleman, Ninth Infantry, with one or two enlisted men, superintended the laboring parties there, and the job was considered a substantial one, but it proved to be insufficient protection against the floods in June.

On May 5th, in obedience to instructions from Washington, Major-General Otis relinquished the command of the Division of the Philippines to Major-General MacArthur, and the latter, on the same day, assigned Brigadier-General Loyd Wheaton to the command of the Department of Northern Luzon. The Headquarters of the department were removed from Bautista to Manila on May 12, 1900.

May 16th Lieutenant Naylor, scouting with a detachment of Company F, and the mounted detachment under the command of Lieutenant Wallace, made the most successful single capture of arms that was made by any part of the regiment. A few arms were being found from time to time by scouting parties, and for purchase money they were turned in at all stations, one or two at a time, but Lieutenant Naylor brought in 36, which was the largest number acquired by any scouting party. The story of the day's work is well told in his own written report, as follows:[119]

[119] L. R. 940 — 1900. Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

TARLAC, P. I., May 16, 1900.

THE ADJUTANT, NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac, P. I:

SIR: I have the honor to submit the following report:

On the evening of May 15, 1900, I received verbal orders from the regimental commander to proceed to the barrio of Balibago Primero, on the Victoria Road, and investigate certain depredations committed in and about this barrio by a band of ladrones, and, if possible, locate them.

I started from Tarlac at about six o'clock A. M. with 25 men of F Company, Ninth Infantry, and a mounted detachment of thirty-seven men commanded by Second Lieutenant G. W. Wallace, Ninth Infantry. The mounted detachment rode on in advance and surrounded both the barrio of Balibago Primero and Banaba, collecting all the hombres together and placing them under guard in front of the house of the Presidente in Balibago Primero, where they were held to await the arrival of the infantry.

Upon the arrival of the infantry the prisoners were lined up, and from the number five ladrones were picked out, one of whom was a Second Lieutenant.

This Second Lieutenant and another of the five offered to reveal the place where arms were cached. Upon this suggestion we started out, and, after covering a distance of about one and one-half miles, came upon a swamp at the edge of the barrio of Banaba and were informed that arms were concealed in a small grassy spot in the middle of this swamp. Some of the men, led by the native under cover of the rifles of the men on the bank, swam to the designated spot and brought back five rifles and a quantity of ammunition.

At this place a sixth prisoner was captured, who has turned out to be Miguel Pagio, a ladrone officer and desperate character.

The command then started out to find a cuartel said to be in the vicinity. After marching through dense bamboo forests and long grass for about two miles, we came upon two complete sets of barracks, each set large enough to quarter from one hundred to one hundred and twenty-five men. These barracks were apparently new, but were occupied, the occupants at the time being absent in the different barrios. The ladrone guide said that arms were hidden somewhere near the barracks, but after a careful search none could be found. At his suggestion the Lieutenant was brought up, and after a close questioning he agreed to show where the arms were buried, and he did. At the places he pointed out digging was begun, and after digging down, in each case about two feet, boxes were discovered, and upon being opened were found to contain thirty-one rifles and a large quantity of ammunition.

Digitized by Google

The explanation of the reason why these arms were buried was that the natives were afraid to keep them in their personal possession on account of the frequent and unexpected visits of the American soldiers in this district.

Being satisfied that no more arms could be found the barracks were ordered destroyed, at the completion of which the command returned to Balibago Primero. Here we were informed that the barracks destroyed were the quarters of the band of Geronimo Manalo, Captain in Macabulos' army, and in charge of this district.

The rifles and ammunition were loaded on to a bull cart, and taking the six prisoners the command returned to Tarlac without further incident, arriving there at about 3:00 o'clock P. M.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) W. K. NAYLOR,
First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry.

Brigadier-General Bell, commanding the district, complimented the officers on their good work.

This achievement was supplemented a few days later by the capture of a few arms by Lieutenant Brown's men, operating in the same direction from Gerona, and the acquirement of information of Macabulos himself at Victoria. It doubtless had a strong influence in demonstrating to the insurgent leaders in that vicinity that it would be impossible to preserve their secrets long. Their barracks, their arms, and they themselves would sooner or later be betrayed to the Americans by some of their own men who were tired of being hounded about the country.

Lieutenant Naylor's success, as well as his activity and reliability in much of the earlier scouting, marked him as a suitable man to command a new detached post which the district commander had determined to establish at La Paz. This was, however, an assignment not craved by any who had visited the place, realizing its inaccessibility, especially in the rainy season, and knowing the reputation it possessed for unhealthfulness.

La Paz was the place which had been suggested by the Filipino General Torres in the preceding year as the most suitable one at which to concentrate the friars. This was in a communication which Major-General Otis quoted as follows:[120]

"SENOR SECRETARY OF WAR:

Referring to your note in regard to an unhealthy town or place in the province of Nueva Ecija, fit for the concentration of the friars,

[120] See Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 4, p. 360.

Digitized by Google

I must state that, excepting the town of Bongabong, there is no good place except the town of La Paz in Tarlac. According to my observations even the persons born there are attacked with malarial fever and ague, and if strangers very few escape death."

Lieutenant Naylor and Company F, with Lieutenant Coleman attached, proceeded to this most unattractive station on May 19th. The place was soon afterwards connected with Tarlac by a telephone line which was constructed by a Signal Corps detachment, escorted by Ninth Infantry men from Tarlac, and strenuous efforts were at once put forth to construct quarters there and place a six months' supply of rations and clothing in store. The rain had already made the roads almost impassable.

The first surrender of an organized insurgent command was made at Tarlac on May 22, 1900, to Colonel Liscum. Major Geronimo Velasco, who commanded a small force under General Macabulos, sent in word that he was ready to surrender his men and all arms in his possession. This transpired almost immediately after an exciting day in Victoria, and a hot pursuit by Lieutenant Welborn, who reported that he had been on the trail of this man, and also Manuel de Leon, and Macabulos himself, when they had ventured to enter that pueblo in disguise. Subsequent investigations by Captain George Palmer, who was in command at Victoria, resulted in the arrest of the Presidente of that place, and the interpreter, charged with having communication with the enemy, and having had cognizance of their presence in town without reporting it.

Alfonso Ramos, the insurgent officer who had been captured prior to Lieutenant Koehler's death in March, and who apparently at that time made up his mind to give his influence to bringing about a state of submission to American authority, aided not a little in bringing about the negotiations which led to this surrender. He had been elected to the office of Presidente of Tarlac soon after the removal of Mamaual, and the Provost-Marshal, Lieutenant Hammond, had been able to instil good seed from time to time in his intercourse with him on municipal affairs.

Velasco's approach to Tarlac to surrender was announced to Colonel Liscum about 6 P. M., May 21st, and dispositions were made to receive him. Company E was ordered to accompany Colonel Liscum and his staff to the outskirts of the town, and the other companies were held in readiness to act in case any treachery was attempted. There was a long wait for the coming of the insurgent force, and, as the evening hours passed and midnight arrived, a strong suspicion arose that the whole matter was a Filipino trick for their own amusement and the

Digitized by Google

discomfiture of the Americans; but about 1 A. M. they came. There were no conditions to be talked over — nothing for the Filipinos to do but lay down their arms. They were formed in single file, and, by the light of a bonfire, moved up and piled their guns in the presence of Colonel Liscum and his officers, while Company E remained near at hand prepared for any emergency. They were rather a forlorn lot of soldiers, and their equipment amounted to nothing more than the rifles and all kinds of pouches and improvised ammunition belts containing a small supply of ammunition. It was with a feeling of considerable satisfaction, however, that the increasing pile of rifles was contemplated by the American officers. A wagon was sent for and hauled the arms to the Quartermaster's storehouse. Major Velasco, his officers and men were provided with quarters for the night. The following morning the oath of allegiance was administered to the officers, and the men were paroled. Every soldier who turned in a serviceable rifle was paid $30 (Mexican). The surrender comprised Major Geronimo Velasco, 1 captain, 2 First Lieutenants, 4 Second Lieutenants, and 127 men, composing the "third and fourth columns of the Guerrillas of Tarlac." There were 168 rifles in good order, and a small quantity of ammunition. The officers and men were allowed to depart to their homes and every effort was made to assure them that the Americans intended to treat them, and any others who surrendered, generously. Velasco promised to bring in 100 more men who were afraid to present themselves, fearing they would be harshly dealt with, and set forth for that purpose the morning of May 23rd. On that day a telegram from Lieutenant Brown, at Gerona stated that the information which he had been following up for several days regarding a company of insurgents, commanded by Captain Nicolas Tomayo, had led him that morning, co-operating with a detachment from Victoria, to the place where the company had been, but he found that they had left the day before and he had since learned that they were a part of the command that surrendered at Tarlac. This was true, and Colonel Liscum directed a telegram, complimentary and consoling, as follows:

TARLAC, May 23rd.

LIEUTENANT F. R. BROWN, Gerona:

Colonel Liscum directs me to say that he is very much pleased with your co-operative work with Victoria. You seem to have worked up the case and he is very much obliged to you for it. This shows that it is our continual hounding these people that has brought about the surrender, and that it was not voluntary on their part, but showed discretion.

NOYES, Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

Captain McCaleb, who was again commanding at Concepcion, reported further surrenders of rifles for purchase money about this date, and the total number obtained from all sources was approaching a very satisfactory figure. But the Colonel still hoped, above all, to recover the 33 Krag rifles which had been stolen from Company G in January. Rumors that they were hidden in the vicinity of Tarlac occasionally came to his hearing, and every possible effort was directed to securing them.

On May 27th the insurgent Commandante, Velasco, returned, bringing in and surrendering 3 officers, 46 men, 52 Remington rifles, 3 Amberg rifles, and a small quantity of ammunition. Payment was made for these rifles as before, and as soon as an investigation to ascertain whether or not any of the men had been guilty of crimes or violation of the rules of war was completed, the officers and men were released, each officer taking the oath of allegiance and the men given their paroles. It appeared at the time that Commandante Velasco was acting entirely in good faith, but several months subsequent to these events, after the Ninth Infantry had departed, he was tried by a military commission for retaining 50 rifles, more or less, in his possession, and aiding in maintaining guerrilla warfare against the authority of the United States, for which he received a sentence of 20 years imprisonment.[121] It is quite probable he has since been released under some one of the general pardons issued for subsequent large surrenders in other parts of the islands. The same day that Velasco brought in the second lot of men, May 28th, a telegram was received from the district commander, General Bell, stating that upon his request the accusation against General Macabulos of killing American prisoners in violation of the laws of war had been investigated and he, General Bell, had been notified that, so far as Department Headquarters was informed, General Macabulos had not violated the laws of war. General Bell directed that Macabulos be communicated with and informed that if he wished to surrender he would be treated as other generals, against whom there were no charges of violations of the laws of war. Word was sent to Macabulos accordingly, or at least was given into the hands of persons who were able to communicate with him, for his hiding-place was still so well guarded as to be undiscoverable.

The next event of interest occurred on May 29th, when a letter was received from Lieutenant Brown from Gerona, accompanying a prisoner whom he sent to Tarlac, saying that the prisoner was one of Lieutenant-Colonel Gabino Calma's men, who knew the place of con-

[121] General Order No. 23, series 1901, Headquarters Division Philippines.

Digitized by Google

cealment of the G Company Krag rifles. A mounted party was at once ordered out under Lieutenant Frazier, accompanied by Lieutenant Hammond, and started for Calma's location, guided by the prisoner. It was said the rifles were kept in one place part of the time and in another the other part. Lieutenant Frazier proceeded with the greatest haste to the first place, but a mounted man, whom he afterwards captured, succeeded in giving information of his approach and the rifles were gone. He went then on to Tinuba, but failed also there. He was, however, guided to Gabino Calma's house, and, from all appearances, the gentleman himself had stepped out only a minute or two before Lieutenant Frazier's arrival. His official papers, correspondence, records, and personal effects were captured. The party also burned 4 insurgent barracks, and captured 5 Remington carbines and 1 Mauser carbine. General Bell and Colonel Liscum congratulated Lieutenant Frazier and his men on this successful raid, and, although the expedition apparently failed of its principal purpose, it did, by the discomfiture of Gabino Calma, who was most potential by reason of being the insurgent Governor of the province, open the way for the immediate recovery of the arms. The Presidente of Tarlac succeeded in getting them 36 hours later (June 1, 1900), that is, to say, 31 out of the 33. The other two had been made away with by the men who stole them, as was learned from the captured correspondence, causing considerable investigation and accusation among the insurgents themselves. Hardly anything could have given more satisfaction to the regiment than the recovery of these arms. Colonel Liscum sent the following telegram to District Headquarters, reporting the recovery.

TARLAC, P. I., June 1, 1900.

ADJUTANT GENERAL, THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

As a result of our raid on Gabino Calma's barracks at San Isidro, already reported, the guns we were in quest of were removed from the barracks.

Our Presidente, learning where the guns had been taken, and taking a loyal and prominent interest, sent a trusted native, Juan Taguinio, with an order to secure the guns and bring them to Tarlac. As a result of the order thirty-one of our thirty-three stolen Krags were last night brought in to us in serviceable condition, and are now in our hands. We are on the trail of the other two guns and there is a remote possibility of our getting them. I think you should be well pleased with the result of our hard work which has brought this about. These guns were never captured from us in any sense of the term. They were

Digitized by Google

stolen by our trusted employees whom we were instructed to use, and the regiment is very much elated over the result of their labor which returns to us our stolen property.

LISCUM, Commanding.

General Bell deemed it expedient to have a troop of cavalry at Tarlac to scout into the Zambales mountains west of Tarlac and Capas, and Troop L, Fourth Cavalry, commanded by Lieutenant O'Shea, arrived March 28th. Squadron Headquarters, Third Squadron, Fourth Cavalry, was also assigned to station at Tarlac, Major Rodgers and his squadron Adjutant, Lieutenant Winans, arriving with the troop. This enabled Colonel Liscum to distribute the horses of his Tarlac mounted detachment to Concepcion and Capas.

Armed ladrones or insurgents invaded Murcia and Capas the night of June 3rd, carrying off carabao. They were pursued by mounted detachments on June 4th, Lieutenant Lang commanding that from Murcia, and Captain Brewster that from Capas. They united at Concepcion, and, with a few mounted men under Captain McCaleb, from there continued to the Chico River at Culatigan, but attained no material success. Lieutenant Lang's party covered 56 miles on this scout.

June 7th Colonel Liscum personally conducted a scouting party composed of 36 cavalry and 50 infantry from Tarlac, co-operating with detachments from Victoria and La Paz, to Balincanang in search of Macabulos on information given to Lieutenant-Colonel Bubb, Twelfth Infantry, at Paniqui, conveyed by telegram from Headquarters Third District, which report was to some extent confirmed by a report from Capas. Lieutenant-Colonel Bubb, however, followed up a report of Macabulos the next day, the 8th, in the opposite direction, toward Camiling. No result in either direction.

June 9: Report received of insurgents having entered Moriones and driven off carabao. Scouting parties ordered at once from O'Donnell, Capas, Murcia, Concepcion and Tarlac. Lieutenant Lang from Murcia succeeded in overhauling a party of men having freshly killed carabao in their possession, and sent them to Tarlac as prisoners, capturing one rifle.

These forays indicated that the guerrilla bands still in the field were short of food and were breaking up, or that control of the worst characters among them was lost. In consequence of the robberies at Moriones, General Bell concluded to again establish a small garrison there to prevent that place being used as a source of supply or a rendezvous for insurgents, and steps were taken by Colonel Liscum to carry out his wishes. But before this could be accomplished other orders for the regiment intervened.

Digitized by Google

On the same day that scouting was in progress towards Moriones, June 9th, another surrender was made to Colonel Liscum at Tarlac, Lieutenant-Colonel Manuel de Leon, who had been so much sought after, coming in with three officers and 38 men, with 64 rifles and a small quantity of ammunition. These men were paid for their rifles, and were disposed of as were the others previously surrendered.

Three days later final correspondence took place with General Macabulos, and his surrender was arranged for June 15th.

On that day, while at breakfast, information of the approach of Macabulos with his men was brought to Colonel Liscum, and he at once mounted his horse and went out with his staff and a small escort to meet him. Macabulos might have come from any one of the points of the compass, so far as knowledge of his whereabouts at Regimental Headquarters was concerned, but he chose to come from the east and advanced on the almost impassable road from the direction of San Manuel and La Paz. Colonel Liscum met him at the crossing of the railroad, beyond the outskirts of the town, and conducted him to the administration building, which had once been Aguinaldo's Headquarters, and in which Macabulos had doubtless often had conferences with Aguinaldo himself.

The force surrendered on this occasion comprised 8 officers besides its commander, 124 men, 124 rifles and some ammunition. On the following day Macabulos sent officers to a barrio of Tarlac and a barrio of Paniqui and dug up 12 more rifles which were turned in. He also presented 10 more soldiers. Information of the surrender was at once reported to the district commander, and conveyed to the commanding officers of all Ninth Infantry stations. General Bell telegraphed his congratulations.

On the day preceding the surrender Lieutenant-Colonel Wilder, a staff officer of Major-General MacArthur, was sent to Tarlac to conduct Macabulos to Manila upon his surrender. Colonel Liscum appealed from this action and expressed a desire to send Macabulos to Manila under charge of his own officers. In reply General MacArthur stated that Macabulos, through friends in Manila, had been in correspondence with the division commander for several weeks in regard to surrendering, and he only consented to surrender himself at Tarlac in consideration of a promise given by General MacArthur that he would send a staff officer to that place to receive him.

No objection was made to Colonel Liscum sending in two officers, and the telegram closed as follows:

"The division commander further wishes to have General Liscum

Digitized by Google

understand that he knows and appreciates what he has been doing at Tarlac in regard to these matters, and that he is entitled to every possible credit for the very satisfactory condition of things in that vicinity. The surrender will be reported to Washington as having been made to General Liscum."

General MacArthur, in a message to Lieutenant-Colonel Wilder, stated that whatever plan Colonel Liscum made for sending Macabulos to Manila would be acceptable as long as it kept in view the promise to Macabulos to have a staff officer receive him and conduct him personally.

Accordingly, the matter being fully explained to Macabulos, and to all others concerned, under the plan as finally concluded, Lieutenants Frazier and Schoeffel were detailed to conduct him, and Lieutenant-Colonel Wilder accompanied the party.

This surrender was considered as closing hostilities in the province of Tarlac, and the regiment prided itself on being the first to "clean up" its district. Only one other prominent insurgent was still in hiding, namely Lieutenant-Colonel Gabino Calma, and he too had so far carried forward correspondence with Colonel Liscum, with a view to giving himself up, that the latter reported to the district commander on June 16th that he, Calma, had offered to come in on Tuesday of the following week with all the rifles he had; which was probably not more than 8 or 10. He presented himself to the new commanding officer at Tarlac a few days after the regiment had departed.

Thus ended the campaigns of the regiment in Luzon.

To complete the record of scouting, and results accomplished, the following summaries are added.

Number of miles traveled by scouting parties summarized chiefly from company returns:

November, 1899	30 miles.
December, 1899	702 miles.
January, 1900	638 miles.
February, 1900	427 miles.
March, 1900	545 miles.
April, 1900	466 miles.
May, 1900	402 miles.
June, 1900	477 miles.
Total	3,587 miles.

The territory over which this scouting was done was in the province of Tarlac, with the exception of the tract about Mabalacat south of the Paruao River, and was about 20 miles wide and 40 miles long. It was

Digitized by Google

bounded on the north by territory occupied by the Twelfth Infantry; on the east by General Funston's district, the Twenty-fourth Infantry and Thirty-fourth United States Volunteers being at different times the nearest regiments; on the south by General Grant's district, the Twenty-fifth Infantry and the Forty-first United States Volunteers being at different times the nearest regiments, and on the west by the Zambales Mountains. In the month of April material assistance was rendered by the Fifth Company of Macabebe Scouts under the command of First Lieutenant John J. O'Connell, Twenty-first Infantry, and in June by Troop L, Fourth Cavalry. All the regiments operating in contiguous territory by their own active scouting prevented the enemy from finding any safe retreats in their districts.

Summary of arms secured by capture, purchase, etc.:

	Captured	Surrendered without Compensation	Purchased	Total
December			1	1
January			7	7
February	6		12	18
March	7		25	32
April	80	10	154	244
May	44	13	427	484
June	6		234	240
Totals	143	23	860	1,026

In addition to these arms 22 revolvers, 17 shot-guns, about 7,000 rounds of ammunition, and 127 bolos were secured and were included in the shipments to the Manila Ordnance Depot, and the 31 United States Magazine rifles recovered June 1st were turned over to the accountable officer, Lieutenant Hammond.

Summary of officers and men who surrendered at Tarlac:

	Officers	
April 6	2	
April 13	8 (To Lieutenant Frazier at Moriones)	
May 22	8	127
May 27	3	46
June 9	4	38
June 15	9	124
June 16		10
Total	34	345

The regiment's period of service in Luzon closed in a deluge of rain, the land effect of a tropical typhoon. On the 15th, the day of Macabulos' surrender, the sun shone in the morning, but the rain came down in torrents during the rest of the day, continued through the night, and during June 16th. By that time the rivers were overflowing their

Digitized by Google

banks, and still the rain continued. On the 17th the dyke three miles north of Tarlac gave way and the Tarlac River again turned half its waters eastward, carrying away all the new railroad work at El Bendio, and causing a washout 200 yards longer than the one of the previous year. The Gerona company was thus cut off. Telegraphic communication was still possible with Gerona, however, but not with places further north, and nothing could be heard from General Bell's Headquarters at Dagupan. On the 17th also, the railroad was so damaged a mile and a half south of Tarlac that trains could not pass, and the northbound train had to return to Murcia. The telephone still worked to La Paz and Lieutenant Naylor reported the whole country in his vicinity inundated. The high water in the Cut Cut river interrupted passage from Capas to Concepcion, and the Bulso River cut off the route from Capas to O'Donnell. Bamban was communicated with to ascertain the state of the Paruao bridge, and the report was received that the river was very high but the bridge still held.

This was the state of affairs on June 18th, 1900, the rain still continuing, when the first intimation came to the regiment of its orders to hasten to Manila to refit for service in China.

The story of the difficulties which beset the several companies in carrying out their orders, the strenuous efforts made by officers and men to pull the regiment out of the mud, and the anxiety felt lest some other regiment, better situated, should be substituted, is an interesting one, but will be given as a preliminary chapter of the campaign of the regiment in China.

List of killed in action, wounded, died of disease, etc., campaigns in Luzon:

KILLED IN ACTION, DIED OF WOUNDS, MISSING

Officers:

Captain Charles M. Rockefeller.

First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant Edgar F. Koehler.

Company B.

Private Alonzo Brown.

Private Charles C. Cook.

Private Joseph P. Cook.

Private De Forest V. Hutchinson.

Private Harry O. Lee.

Company C.

Private James S. Lynch.

Company D.

Private George S. Wells.

Digitized by Google

Company H.
Corporal Charles J. Lavier, Jr.
Company I.
Private Alfred A. Mahoney.
Company K.
Sergeant Alonzo L. Johnson.
Private William Munson.
Private Edward B. Webster, Jr.
Company L.
Private Joseph F. Campbell.
Private Arthur N. Chambers.
Private John J. King.

WOUNDED IN ACTION

Company B.
Private George Clampher.
Private George L. De Forest.
Company C.
First Sergeant Romeo T. Perry.
Corporal John W. Lattimore.
Private Brayton Bretch.
Private Barney Gonyea.
Private Richard E. Keenan.
Private August F. Porczeng.
Company D.
Sergeant Edward Gorman.
Private William Horan.
Private James Linton.
Private George K. Webster.
Private John J. Woods.
Company E.
Private James Brown.
Company F.
Private Axel Skogsberg.
Private Christopher E. Whitesides.
Company G.
Private George P. H. Strauch.
Company H.
Private John Kelley.
Private Russie A. Palmer.

Digitized by Google

Company I.
Corporal Henry Morray.
Private Albert Durand.
Private Thomas F. McCarthy.
Private Arthur S. Odin.
Private Arthur Prager.
Private Henry Shierloh.
Private Charles S. Wilson.

Company K.
Cook Frank H. Lessinger.
Private Joseph F. Beavers.

Company L.
Private Leslie E. Cleland.
Private John F. McGraw.
Private Daniel O'Neil.
Private Frank W. Schork.

DIED OF DISEASE, DROWNED, ETC.

Officers:
Second Lieutenant Joseph B. Morse.

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF AND BAND

Sergeant Henry Wolper.

Company A.
Cook Adolph Hug.
Private Carl E. Crandall.
Private James M. Hart.
Private James Horan.
Private Edgar J. Manning.

Company B.
Sergeant Thomas Brathor.
Corporal William L. Higgins (drowned).
Private John W. Hayes.
Private Harris W. Mallory (drowned).

Company C.
Private Ewing Shelton.

Company D.
Corporal Stephen Hall.
Artificer Dewane Goodrich.
Private Louis E. Corbett.

Digitized by Google

Company D—continued.
Private Fay Foster.
Private James H. McNerney.
Private Joseph H. Spratt.
Private Fred A. Walker.
Private George K. Webster.

Company E.
Private John Dwyer.
Private Frank Jacobs.
Private Robert M. Mayor.
Private Jeremiah Murphy.
Private Charles P. Sharkey.
Private Owen Walsh.
Private Leon W. Wiltshire.

Company F.
Private Henry Fitzgerald.
Private Alfred J. Kennedy (suicide).

Company G.
Quartermaster-Sergeant Henry Tilley.
Sergeant John Bender.
Sergeant John H. Collins.
Corporal Ernest L. Becker.
Private James A. Conroy.
Private Maurice Fitzgerald.
Private William H. Kennedy.
Private Frank E. King.
Private Ernest C. Knapp.

Company H.
Sergeant Michael Rinn.
Corporal Fred Przykalla.
Private Henry O. Bulson.
Private William Brady.
Private Earl R. Cotton.
Private Arthur E. Froggatt.
Private Joseph A. Jolet.
Private John S. Ney.

Company I.
Corporal George Guess.
Private William L. Donivant.
Private Herman McCaul (accident).

Digitized by Google

Company I—continued.
Private John D. McKeen.
Private Fred H. Peon.
Company K.
Cook George G. A. Wienecke.
Private Daniel F. Shank.
Private William G. Wilson.
Company L.
Corporal William Walker.
Corporal John Cunningham.
Corporal Louis W. Mohun.
Private James Armstrong (drowned).
Private William G. Burns.
Private John Garvey.
Private Jacob Kline.
Private Daniel E. Webster.
Company M.
Corporal John McLaughlin.
Private Michael Sullivan (drowned).

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX

REGIMENT ORDERED TO CHINA — PREPARATIONS — CONDITIONS IN CHINA — OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN ON DUTY WITH REGIMENT — ARRIVAL AT TAKU — BATTLE OF TIENTSIN — COLONEL LISCUM KILLED — HEAVY LOSSES — REINFORCEMENTS — MARCH TO PEKIN — BATTLES OF PEITSANG, YANGTSUN — CAPTURE OF PEKIN — RELIEF OF LEGATION — MARCH THROUGH THE FORBIDDEN CITY — GOVERNING PEKIN AND TIENTSIN — EXPEDITION TO PA-TA-CHOW TEMPLES. ORGANIZATION OF THE MILITARY ORDER OF THE DRAGON — AMERICAN TROOPS LEAVE CHINA — LOSSES.

CAMPAIGN IN CHINA.

THE service of the Ninth Infantry in Luzon began in April, 1899, and terminated in June, 1900.

Its service in the Second Division, Eighth Army Corps, and the Department of Northern Luzon, the former merging into the latter May 5, 1900, began June 18, 1899, and terminated June 17, 1900, just a year of activity in that field.

Its service against the guerrillas of Tarlac was begun at Bamban in November, 1899, continued through eight months of scouting and patrolling, with frequent engagements, and came to a close with full success achieved just at the time that a regiment was required for service in China. The surrender of the insurgent, General Macabulos, occurred June 15, 1900; the cable message from Washington ordering a regiment to China was dated June 16, 1900.

The Manila newspapers gave prominence to the telegraphic reports of the Boxer uprising about June 10th, and daily thereafter the headlines indicated the alarming character and the importance of events transpiring in North China.

It was toward the end of May that missionaries and foreigners generally, at isolated localities in China, were warned of the impending danger and withdrew to Pekin and to the seaboard cities. The American Minister at Pekin, in common with the representatives of the other governments, called for additional guards to protect the legations about May 28th, and 350 men assembled at Tientsin from the ships at the Taku anchorage, and went by rail from Tientsin to Pekin on May 31st. They were from the ships of Russia, France, Great Britain, Italy, Japan and the United States, the United States ships Oregon and Newark furnishing 48 marines, 3 blue jackets, 2 machinists and 1

Digitized by Google

hospital apprentice. June 2nd the German and Austrian ships sent additional guards. June 4th the last train went over the railroad from Pekin to Tientsin. On that day sections of the railroad were destroyed and during the next few days the rails were removed from the part of the line from Pekin southward about 30 miles. June 9th, additional guards were called for by the Ministers. The guards were expected to travel as far as possible by rail and march the remaining distance. The Seymour Relief Expedition was accordingly organized and the first train-load of marines and seamen left the coast June 10th, and Tientsin June 11th. Three more train-loads made the total force 2,056 officers and men, all under the command of Vice-Admiral Edward H. Seymour, British Navy, Captain B. H. McCalla, of the Newark, commanding the American Contingent of 112 men.

June 12th, after track repairs had been made, and an attack by Boxers had been repulsed, the trains reached Lang-fang, about 50 miles from Tientsin; and, the railroad being so destroyed there as to require several days for repairs, a detachment was marched forward 13 miles to Anting to prevent more destruction.

It was from these places the Seymour Expedition was forced to retreat instead of continuing to Pekin.

Telegraphic communication with Pekin was cut off about June 10th.

The reduction of the force at Tientsin to strengthen the Seymour Relief Expedition emboldened the Boxers in that vicinity, and rendered the situation of the foreigners there precarious. By June 13th the Boxers had possession of the Walled City of Teintsin, southeast of which were the foreign concessions, and communication with the Relief Expedition was cut off.

These were the earlier events which fixed the attention of the world at large, and of which there were brief reports in the Manila newspapers. They were sufficiently alarming.

The hordes of Boxers were evidently in control of the situation; the Chinese Government, even if it so desired, was too weak to interpose any efficient force to protect the duly accredited representatives of the European and American governments at Pekin. There was not a little evidence, as far as reports then went, that the Imperial Government and Imperial troops were themselves opposing the foreigners rather than the Boxers, and aiding the latter to carry out their barbarous intentions of annihilating foreign missionaries, merchants, and ministers alike. It therefore became apparent that a large force of foreign troops would be needed at once. Officers of the Ninth Infantry, as early as the 13th of June, gave utterance to the thought that the

Digitized by Google

regiment might be called upon for service in China. Where else could a regiment be more easily spared? Where else was a district so well rid of organized insurgents? Furthermore, the regiment was chiefly on the railroad, well situated for quick concentration at Manila. Such seemed to be true, at least, up to the day that the order was issued. In ordinary weather one day would have been sufficient to have placed other troops at the most isolated station of the regiment, and another day would have seen the regiment concentrated in Manila. But so



American Legation Guard Grounds, Pekin, China.

devastating had been the storms, so destructive of routes and lines of communication, that more than a day was lost in transmitting the original message from Manila to Regimental Headquarters, and four days, instead of two, were occupied in getting Twelfth Infantry companies in and Ninth Infantry companies out of their stations. The incidents of the story of these movements are threaded well together by the telegrams received and sent from Regimental Headquarters, and these telegrams are accordingly quoted.

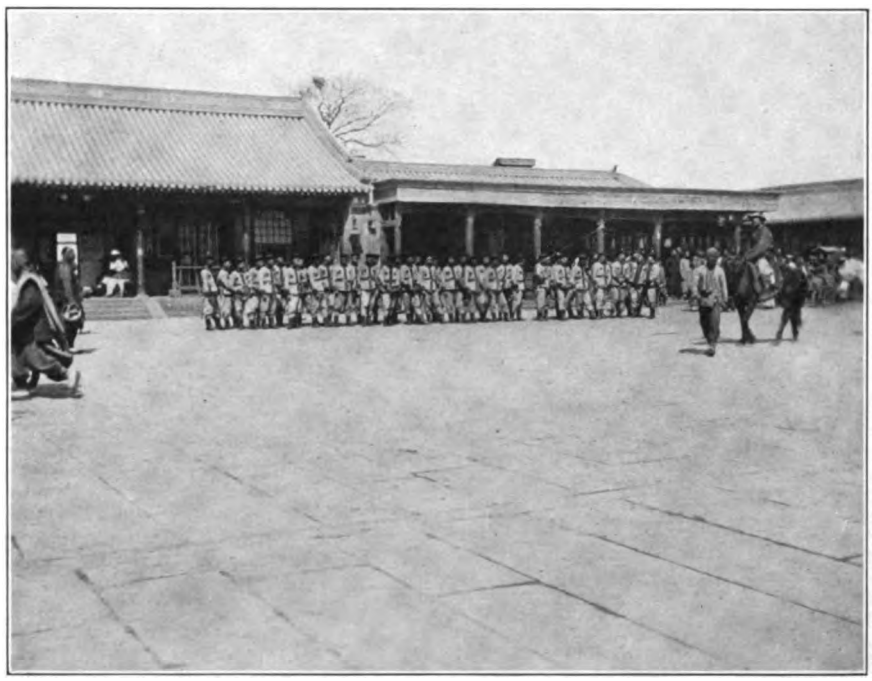
The first intimation the Colonel had of the selection of the regiment

Digitized by Google

by General MacArthur for Chinese service was a telegram from Headquarters Department of Northern Luzon, Manila, received at 3:10 P. M., June 18th, as follows:

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT, NORTHERN LUZON, June 18th.
GENERAL LISCUM, Tarlac:

It is now ordered that 25 of the American horses used for scouting purposes with equipments, and also all horses used by mounted officers,



Company of imperial Chinese soldiers.

will accompany the Ninth Infantry in its movement to Manila. Please acknowledge.

ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Such a telegram was open to many other interpretations besides China service. It gave only as a certain conclusion that an order which had evidently gone astray had been issued directing the regiment to proceed to Manila. But the fact that 25 American horses were to accompany the regiment was the hook on which to hang all sorts of in-

Digitized by Google

teresting conjectures in regard to service in China. Colonel Liscum immediately replied to the telegram as follows:

TARLAC, June 18, 3:15 P. M.

Your telegram directing that certain horses be taken with the regiment in its movement to Manila received. I have received no information nor orders concerning a movement to Manila. Telegraphic communication with District Headquarters has been interrupted by the severe storm for 36 hours. Will be glad to receive all information possible as communication is still cut off.

LISCUM, Commanding.

Two hours passed without further light on the subject; hours that were fully occupied at Headquarters with conferences, planning the necessary steps to cut loose from the administrative work at hand, and from pending questions arising under the new status since the surrenders. At 5:00 o'clock P. M. a civilian wagonmaster appeared and reported to the regimental Quartermaster under instructions to confer with him in regard to wagon transportation for service in China. He had just arrived on the train which had succeeded in passing the weak place in the track a short distance south of the Tarlac station. A few minutes later Lieutenant Webster, aide-de-camp on General Wheaton's staff, arrived and gave official information of the order. The orders of both the division and department commanders came in the mail, and were in the Colonel's hands about 5:30 P. M. Copies of the telegrams to the commanding Generals of the Third and Fifth Districts accompanied the order from Department Headquarters, giving directions for relieving the Ninth Infantry at its several stations by other troops, the Commanding General Fifth District being directed to replace Company C at Bamban and Company B at Capas by companies of the Forty-first Infantry United States Volunteers. The division and department orders read as follows:

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES.
MANILA, P. I., June 17, 1900.

Special Order No. 65:

(*Extract*)

2. In compliance with cable instructions from the Secretary of War, dated June 16, 1900, the Ninth Regiment of Infantry will be concentrated in Manila, with the least possible delay, for transfer to Taku, China, where, upon arrival, the commanding officer will report to the United States Minister at Pekin for the protection of the American Legation and the lives and property of American citizens in China.

Digitized by Google

In regard to the necessary details in the execution of this order the regimental commander will confer with Rear Admiral Louis Kempff, United States Navy, now at Taku.

The command will take a full equipment of tentage, 16 four-mule wagons, thirty days' rations, and five hundred rounds of ammunition per man. The Ordnance Department will furnish one Colt's automatic rapid-fire gun, and one gatling gun, with an ample supply of ammunition. The command will be supplied with ample medical supplies and attendance under the direction and supervision of the chief surgeon of the division.

The Quartermaster's Department will furnish the necessary transportation, utilizing the transport Logan for the troops and the transport Port Albert for the wagon train.

By Command of Major-General MacArthur:

(Signed) S. D. STURGIS,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF NORTHERN LUZON.
MANILA, P. I., June 17, 1900.

(*Extract*)

1. In compliance with instructions of this date from Headquarters Division of the Philippines, the Ninth United States Infantry is relieved from duty in the Third District of this Department, and will proceed without delay to Manila and take quarters in Nipa Barracks, Malate. All baggage and all army transportation belonging to the regiment will be taken. The commanding officer will report at these Headquarters upon arrival in Manila. The Commanding General, Third District, will arrange to relieve the regiment at its present stations by the troops most available to accomplish it speedily.

No concentration of the regiment on the railroad will be made, but each garrison, upon being relieved, will move to the nearest point on the railroad and be shipped from there.

Supplies accumulated at the various stations will be left there for the incoming troops.

The greatest possible dispatch is enjoined in the execution of this order. The Quartermaster's Department will furnish the necessary transportation.

By command of Brigadier-General Wheaton.

(Signed) BENJAMIN ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Digitized by Google

With these orders in hand Colonel Liscum at once began telegraphic correspondence with his companies at outside stations and assembled the officers at Tarlac, to whom he gave verbal instructions. Company H was ordered to proceed to Manila by the first train the following day. Company F, at La Paz, was communicated with by telephone. The inundation of the country in the vicinity of La Paz was a most serious obstacle to movement toward Tarlac and the possibility of sending the company down the Chico River and the Rio Grande to Calumpit was discussed. The Quartermaster was directed to arrange for railroad transportation for all the companies. The following telegrams were sent and received:

TARLAC, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Gerona:

The regimental commander directs that you prepare your command for a movement to Manila. The regiment has been relieved from duty in this district and ordered to take quarters at Nipa Barracks, Malate. All baggage belonging to the regiment will be taken. The Quartermaster will wire instructions about horses and transportation. Commanding Generals, Third and Fifth Districts, have been ordered to arrange to relieve the regiment at its present station. No concentration of the regiment on the railroad will be made, but each garrison, upon being relieved, will move to the nearest point on the railroad and be shipped from there. Supplies accumulated at the various stations will be left there for the incoming troops. Surgeons, Hospital Corps men and hospital supplies will be left. The garrisons at Bamban and Capas will be relieved by companies of the Forty-first Infantry. Haste has been enjoined upon district commanders in arranging to relieve our companies, therefore each command will prepare to move very promptly after being relieved. Acknowledge receipt.

(Sent 6:00 P. M.)

NOYES,
Adjutant.

Same telegram to commanding officers at Victoria, Murcia, Capas, Concepcion, O'Donnell, Bamban and La Paz.

TARLAC, June 18th, 6:15 P. M.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of Northern Luzon:

Shall I designate the officers to relieve my Quartermaster, Commissary, and ordnance officers of their property responsibility, and shall I appoint an officer to issue certificates of registration and receive the civil funds in the hands of the present incumbent?

(Sent 6:32) LISCUM, Commanding.

Digitized by Google

TARLAC, June 18, 1900.

GENERAL WHEATON, Manila, P. I.:

Colonel Liscum desires to know if he shall take horses for the medical officers and hospital stewards in addition to the 25 horses and mounts for mounted officers and their orderlies. Seven horses, all told, for the medical department. He has the horses here with equipment.

WEBSTER, Aide.

TARLAC, June 18th.

CAPTAIN F. L. PALMER, Base Hospital, Dagupan:

The regiment is ordered to Manila to take quarters at Nipa Barracks, Malate. The movement will take place as soon as we are relieved. District commanders have been ordered to make haste to relieve us.

(Sent 6: 20 P. M.) C. R. NOYES.

Same telegram to Major James Regan, Corregidor Island.

DAGUPAN, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Tarlac:

Following just received:

MANILA, June 17th.

COMMANDING GENERAL, THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

Orders were issued to-day relieving the Ninth Infantry from duty in your district and ordering to proceed to Manila with the greatest dispatch. The department commander directs that you relieve the regiment with the troops most available for accomplishing it speedily. All baggage and transportation pertaining to the regiment will be taken. This does not include 20 American horses. All accumulated supplies at the various stations will be left for the incoming troops. No concentration of the troops will be made on railroad, but each garrison, upon being relieved, will move to the nearest point on the railroad and be shipped from there. Direct the commanding officer to report at these Headquarters upon arrival in the city. The utmost possible haste is enjoined in the execution of these orders. Acknowledge.

ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Think it possible you have already received these orders. Notify troops off railroad to pack up at once and start their property to the nearest railway station. All accumulations of commissaries where they are now. Also the 50 American horses and saddles, and have your Quartermaster turn over funds allowed to your station, etc., to Quartermaster of Twelfth Infantry. March the companies which are off the railroad to the nearest stations at once, but leave behind a small guard

Digitized by Google

until a similar guard from Twelfth Infantry arrives at their posts to relieve them. Commanding Officer of Twelfth Infantry will be ordered to send guard at once to all your stations. Have troops on railroad also pack preparatory to taking train for Manila. Don't garrison Moriones. Communicate freely with Commanding Officer, Twelfth Infantry in arranging details. He will be directed to co-operate with you and will be furnished enough troops to relieve you. The cavalry will garrison Depot Quartermaster in Manila to arrange transportation by rail for Tarlac alone for the present. Communicate at once direct with your companies. Ship your entire regiment to Manila as soon as possible, leaving only small guard where troops of other regiments have not arrived by the time you are ready to leave. Acknowledge receipt and if anything has been done already pursuant to orders received direct from Manila, please advise me promptly.

(Received 10:00 P. M.) J. F. BELL,
Brigadier-General, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 18th.

GENERAL J. F. BELL, Dagupan:

Telegram received. I have flooded streams to contend with. It will be impossible for the companies at Victoria, La Paz, O'Donnell, and at Concepcion to march to the railroad at once. I have already given them orders to pack up and be ready to move on being relieved. I will now change the order and direct them to leave as soon as they can get away, leaving the following detachments: Gerona, twenty-five men, expecting that an officer of the Twelfth Infantry will be sent there at once to take charge. At Victoria, Concepcion and O'Donnell, each one officer and twenty-five men. I am at a loss to know how the company from Gerona will get here, as the washout at El Bendio is 200 yards greater in extent than last year, until the river becomes fordable. I will direct Gerona to see if they can get carts and come to Tarlac via Pura and Victoria. I fear, however, the road is impracticable. I am trying to arrange to send the La Paz company to Calumpit by launch and cascoes down the Chico and Rio Grande. I can remove all the property in this way and not wait for any guard to reach that point. The rations at La Paz, and at all railroad points, expire on June 30th, and I have only three days' rations in Tarlac in addition for those same points. This should be known by you in sending detachments. We have applied for railroad trains already and can commence the movement as soon as they are furnished.

(Sent 10:20 P. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

Digitized by Google

CAPAS, June 18th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Telegram regarding change of station received.

BREWSTER, Commanding.

(Received 10: 25 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 18th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL,

Department of Northern Luzon, Manila:

Acting Assistant Surgeon W. W. Calhoun earnestly requests to be continued on duty with the Ninth Infantry. He was surgeon of the regiment in Cuba, has been with it in Madison Barracks, and at this station. If practicable I would like to have him accompany the regiment.

(Sent 10: 20 P. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

DAGUPAN, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Following just received:

MANILA, June 18th.

COMMANDING GENERAL, THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

It is now ordered that the American horses used for scouting purposes, with equipments, and all the horses used by mounted officers, will accompany the Ninth Infantry in its movement to Manila.

ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Previous order modified accordingly; 25 of the 50 American horses furnished for scouting purposes, with equipment, will be left behind and invoiced to Twelfth Infantry.

(Received 11: 30 P. M.) J. F. BELL,
Brigadier-General, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Victoria:

The regimental commander directs that you detail one officer and twenty-five men to remain at your station until relieved by a detachment of the Twelfth Infantry. The company and baggage will be moved to the railroad as soon as you can get there. The detachment will follow as soon as relieved by the Twelfth Infantry.

(Sent 11:10 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Copy of telegram sent to commanding officers at Concepcion and O'Donnell.

The message of 11: 10 P. M. to Victoria, and others later to Gerona, Paniqui and Dagupan were delayed by a break in the telegraph line

Digitized by Google

between Tarlac and Gerona from about 11:30 P. M., 18th, to 10:30 A. M., the 19th.

TARLAC, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, TWELFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

Please inform me when you will be able to send detachment to Gerona, Murcia, Victoria, Concepcion, and O'Donnell. Officers should go to the last three at once to receipt for commissary stores accumulated there. I will leave a detachment of twenty-five men at each station until the arrival of your detachments. I have reported to district commander that I would remove the La Paz company, without waiting for relief, going down by river to Calumpit.

(Sent 11:10 P. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 18th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Gerona:

The regimental commander wants you to have your mounted detachment scout to Pura and Victoria, and see if it will be practicable to get through to Tarlac in that way. Let him know if you can get carts enough to bring you through in one trip. If it is a practicable route, move with all your company except twenty-five men to Tarlac at once, the twenty-five men to remain as guard until the arrival of a detachment of the Twelfth Infantry. Bring all your company baggage.

(Sent 11:10 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

TARLAC, June 19th.

LIEUTENANT LAWTON:

Regimental commander wants you to have Company C ready to move to Manila just as soon as possible. The Quartermaster will notify you about the cars. You yourself will come here with your personal baggage on to-day's train.

(Sent 7:45 A. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

MURCIA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Telegram received of change of station. Under the circumstances shall I attempt to make arrest ordered yesterday. Country is practically impassable in that direction as yet.

(Received 8:00 A. M.) LANG, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

LIEUTENANT LANG, Murcia:

Do not attempt to make arrests. Turn over instructions concerning them to your successor in command.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 8:15 A. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

CONCEPCION, June 18th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Telegraphic instructions concerning movement received.

(Received 8:00 A. M., June 19th.) McCALEB, Commanding.

O'DONNELL, June 18th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Respectfully acknowledge receipt of telegram.

(Received 8:00 A. M., June 19th.) ANDERSON, Commanding.

BAMBAN, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

I acknowledge receipt of telegram regarding movement of command.

(Received 8:00 A. M.) LAWTON, Commanding.

CONCEPCION, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Dr. Sandall, who has been with the regiment for the last 10 months, since arrival in Philippine Islands, is anxious to remain with the regiment. Please arrange this if possible.

(Received 9:00 A. M.) McCALEB, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

Does the district commander approve of my action in arranging to transport entire La Paz company at once to Calumpit by boat and leaving that point ungarrisoned? It will be extremely difficult to get a detachment in there, but the company can get out in the way indicated. There is no public property there. Partially completed buildings are in course of construction.

(Sent 9:30 A. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

I respectfully request that officers be appointed to issue certificates of registration at the posts of the Ninth Infantry, relieving the Ninth Infantry officers. They have funds and property which should be turned over. I recommend that First Lieutenant E. B. Winans, Squadron Adjutant Fourth Cavalry, be appointed at this station.

(Sent 9:30 A. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

Communication with Company F at La Paz was carried on by telephone. The difficulties that beset that company along were enough to cause some anxiety, considering alone the flooded state of the country surrounding it, but about 9:30 A. M., June 19th, the company commander, Lieutenant Naylor, telephoned that a case of smallpox had broken out in the company. The sense of helplessness if the disease became epi-

Digitized by Google

demic in the company, and even the necessity of quarantining for a number of days, in any event, was almost overwhelmingly discouraging. There was much telephoning to ascertain the exact circumstances under which the case arose and the conditions subsequent.

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

Have just learned that a well-defined case of smallpox has broken out in the La Paz company. The case has been isolated, but the company should not be associated with the remainder of the regiment for at least eight days. What will be done with that company? It is rationed to include June 30th, and, if left there, must be supplied in time. I can attend to rationing them if they are directed to stay there.

(Sent 10:00 A. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th,

MEACHAM, DISTRICT SURGEON, Dagupan:

Case of variola at La Paz; light; recruit Frank Custer, contracted on "hike." Has been isolated four days. Request permission to leave twenty men, with whom patient has been in contact, and surgeon at La Paz, and allow rest of company to proceed to Manila and remain in isolation for 8 or 10 days more. With present weather conditions these precautions seem sufficient.

(Sent 10:40 A. M.) CALHOUN,
Surgeon Ninth Infantry.

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL,

Division of the Philippines, Manila:

Does the Commanding General wish to take any action relieving enlisted men on detached service to enable them to join the regiment? I will be glad to have the men of the regiment. There are men on the gunboat Laguna de Bay, on the transport Pennsylvania, one man in the office of the Bureau of Forestry, one in Adjutant-General's office, one in commissary, Quiapo, two orderlies at Division Headquarters, one in office of Judge Advocate, Department of Northern Luzon, two at Headquarters, the Third District, Northern Luzon. LISCUM,

(Sent 10:40 A. M.) Colonel Ninth Infantry.

PANIQUI, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Have received orders to relieve your regiment at all of its stations excepting Bamban and Capas, and am preparing to do so at once. Please wire full information as to best way of reaching your stations under

Digitized by Google

present conditions of travel. We have no information as yet as to what use, if any, can be made of the railroad south of Gerona. Will you leave any ammunition at Concepcion, Victoria and O'Donnell? If so, how much?
(Received 10:45 A. M.) BUBB,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER TEWLFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

Best way to reach Victoria uuder present conditions is via Tarlac. La Paz via Tarlac. Concepcion and O'Donnell via Capas. Gerona and Murcia are on the railroad. No ammunition will be left.
(Sent 11:30 A. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

CONCEPCION, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

At last accounts Cut Cut River was impassable. Have sent scouting party to investigate road to Bamban. They have not returned. If practicable will leave here to-morrow. Please inform me as to disposition of American horses.
(Received 11:05 A. M.) MCCALEB.

GERONA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Can probably make rations last two more days on short rations. If we can go by Dagupan I can obtain rations in Dagupan. Due company, 15 days, potatoes; 10 days, meat; 14 days, bread; average 105 men per ration; so I could submit ration return for 5 days at Dagupan.
(Received 11:30 A. M.) BROWN, Commanding.

GERONA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Your telegram of 11:15, June 18th, just received. Will send mounted detachment at once as directed, though impossible by my information of El Bendio. Think it will be impossible for my company and baggage to get to Tarlac. Have but one cart. Perhaps can hire carts if necessary, and if trip can be made by Victoria. The railroad is open to Dagupan. Can it not be arranged to ship company and baggage to Dagupan by special train and embark in boat from Dagupan for Manila? I have company property and lockers to transport. Will report when mounted detachment returns.
(Received 11:45 A. M.) BROWN, Commanding.

PANIQUI, June 19th.

GENERAL LISCUM, Tarlac:

Lieutenant Brown at Gerona reports it impossible to cross stream at El Bendio. I have sent officer and detachment to Gerona and am

Digitized by Google

trying to work a detachment from Pura and cross to Victoria to relieve your company there. I understand that you have had the river at El Bendio examined by a mounted detachment. Can it be crossed in any possible way? Rain is pouring down here. I will send a company to El Bendio this P. M., equipped with 15 days' rations to go to La Paz. Also one to Tarlac as soon as can cross. Three other companies will be at Bautista to go south as soon as can get transportation, or if I find we can cross at El Bendio will have them march down track. Please let me know if there is any possible way of getting to Tarlac.

(Received 12:15 P. M.) BUBB,
Lieutenant-Colonel Twelfth Infantry.

TARLAC, June 19th.

LIEUTENANT BROWN, Gerona:

Your telegram received. It is out of the question to go to Dagupan, because it would be impossible to get aboard ship there. If you cannot come in via Victoria bring your baggage to El Bendio on cars and get your company across there on rafts. People are crossing at the dam now and the railroad expects to have a ferry at El Bendio by to-morrow. You will have to hasten matters as much as possible, but be very cautious in getting across on rafts. Wire Colonel Bubb as to the arrival of the detachment Twelfth Infantry. Engage native laborers to help you move your baggage to El Bendio and get it across there. Men should take their belts off when going on the raft. We will have cars or bull carts awaiting you on this side as soon as you notify us that you are getting across. You should be at the ferry as early to-morrow morning as possible. Keep us posted as to your relief, and when you start.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 12: 30 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Victoria:

Have you received message of yesterday directing you to move your command and baggage to the railroad as soon as possible, leaving one officer and twenty-five men until relieved by detachment of Twelfth Infantry?

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 1: 15 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Company H, Lieutenant Frazier commanding, departed by railroad train from Tarlac at 12: 00 M., June 19th, arrived at Bamban about 1: 30 P. M., where Company C, Lieutenant Bumpus commanding, boarded the

Digitized by Google

train, having been relieved by one company of the Forty-first Infantry, United States Volunteers. These companies arrived at Manila at 7:00 P. M. Company H marched to the Nipa Barracks for quarters, and Company C bivouacked at the railroad station, guarding property until the next morning, when it proceeded to the Nipa Barracks. Having two companies in Manila twenty-six hours after receiving the order was regarded as an anchor to windward, which might hold the detail for the regiment long enough to overcome the difficulties which delayed most of the companies. However, the typhoon, which was producing such havoc with lines of communication northward, was keeping Manila Bay in such a turmoil, also, that it was impracticable to proceed with coaling a transport, or putting cargo aboard, and no regiment could have sailed as early as the 19th or 20th of June.

BAMBAN, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Company C relieved. Have ordered Lieutenant Bumpus to proceed to Nipa Barracks on military train with baggage, one day's ration in haversacks.

(Received about 1:00 P. M.) LAWTON, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN BREWSTER, Capas:

Please report when you are relieved and start for Manila.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 1:15 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Troops of Forty-first Infantry here to relieve me. Just arrived. No transportation has been arranged. Shall I try and get the cars here and leave at once for Manila, or await further orders?

(Received 1:25 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN BREWSTER, Capas:

Your telegram just received. Load the cars there and to Manila on first train.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 1:30 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

BAMBAN, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Leave with Lieutenant Frazier on this military train. Please telegraph for transportation for company. Will need two escort

Digitized by Google

wagons. Have been relieved by company of Forty-first from Angeles.
(Received 1:30 P. M.) BUMPUS, Commanding Company C.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

The railroad director wires that he cannot take our cars out until to-morrow morning. Says engine on next train is not able to pull our train-load. Will endeavor to get off on that train.
(Received 2:20 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

No more trains south to-day. Last train passed before arrival of relieving troops. I am trying to arrange a special. No engine here.
(Received 2:00 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

CONCEPCION, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Cut Cut River eight feet deep this morning. Raining heavy this afternoon. Doubtful when we can travel. Barrios of Concepcion cut off from town on account of rain. Impossible to procure transportation as yet. From present indications will be unable to move to-morrow.
(Received 2:30 P. M.) MCCALEB, Commanding.

A number of telegrams to Tarlac from Gerona, Victoria and Dagupan which were apparently delayed at Gerona by the break in the telegraph line between Gerona and Tarlac, about 10:30 P. M., 18th, were given to Sergeant Trotter, Signal Corps, and carried by him south from Gerona in his search for the break. They were put on the line finally about 3:00 P. M.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Tarlac:

Operator at Gerona advises that he has sent a batch of telegrams by Sergeant Trotter, who left there this morning for Tarlac, among them acknowledging your message from C. O. at Victoria.
(Received 2:20 P. M.) Operator, Tarlac.

VICTORIA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Telegram received. Am ready as soon as relieved and transportation arrives.
(Received 3:30 P. M.) PALMER, Commanding.

Digitized by Google

GERONA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

I acknowledge receipt of telegram directing Company K, Ninth Infantry, to prepare for change of station to Manila.

(Received 3:00 P. M.) BROWN, Commanding.

DAGUPAN, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Your plan of getting your company away from La Paz is admirable. Hope you can succeed. Have explained the difficulty of the situation to Colonel Bubb, and requested that if it is possible to send a small detachment of twenty men to La Paz, accompanied by sufficient rations to last until we could send more. Would like of you to leave all the rations that you now have in La Paz except enough to last your command until they reach a place where other rations can be got. If the town is entirely abandoned before Twelfth Infantry guard reaches there, leave rations in charge of Presidente local. This is desired even though they may be lost, in which case I will be responsible. Have you any captured guns which could be loaned to the Presidente local of La Paz to arm themselves with in case the town is attacked before a guard reaches there? If not, are there any extra guns at La Paz which you could loan? I will be responsible. It will be inhuman to leave these people at the mercy of ladrones and insurgents. I informed the Presidente local that the regarrisoning of the town depends on the assistance rendered by the people in getting supplies from the railroad to that place. Acknowledge receipt and inform me fully what you think can be done.

(Received about 3:00 P. M.) J. F. BELL,

Brigadier-General, Commanding.

GERONA, June 18th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

I inspected railroad track in vicinity of El Bendio this morning. The road-bed is all washed out to a point about one hundred yards this side of old quarters of detachment there. Track covered with water and all around El Bendio water comes nearly to horses' sides. Near K-127 road-bed is badly washed. Communications can soon be made near break in bank where detachment is now stationed. This by means of ferry or raft. Company can purchase cattle here if necessary for food.

(Received 3:10 P. M., 19th.) BROWN, Commanding.

VICTORIA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Message received to-day. Will comply as soon as possible. It is rain-

Digitized by Google

ing incessantly and the rivers between here and Tarlac are impassable. Two days' good weather will be necessary before it is possible to move.
(Received about 3:00 P. M.) PALMER, Commanding.

The last message was evidently in reply to the one filed at the Tarlac telegraph station at 11:10 P. M., June 18th, which was delayed. This message from Captain Palmer, coming about 3:00 P. M., the 19th, was so little in accord with the unrest at Regimental Headquarters that it called forth a rather peremptory order to move, and was followed by telegrams to the other companies off the railroad to hasten. As a further incentive all companies were informed that the regiment was ordered to China.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Victoria: TARLAC, June 19th.

Regimental commander directs that you move your command to the river at daylight to-morrow, construct rafts and ferry across. Transportation from here will meet you on this side. This is to be done regardless of the weather. It is imperative to move with dispatch. Bring company baggage, but leave detachment as directed.

By order of Colonel Liscum.
(Sent 3:15 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

ANGELES, June 19th, 3:15 P. M.

GENERAL LISCUM, Tarlac:

Railroad broken at K-81 between Mabalacat and Angeles. Do not think that trains will be able to pass to-morrow. Will advance northbound and southbound military trains to breaks to allow transfer.
(Received 3:30 P. M.) HIGGINS.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Higgins wires that he cannot furnish transportation until to-morrow.
(Received 3:30 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN MCCALEB, Concepcion:

Regimental commander directs me to say that it is imperative to move with dispatch, but he leaves you to decide how best to do it. If you can construct rafts, using native labor, or in any way, and get across safely, do so. Move to the railroad as soon as possible, regardless of the weather. If you use rafts have the men take off their belts when crossing. Keep us posted on what you do in order to enable us to provide transportation when needed.
(Sent 3:40 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

TARLAC, June 19th.

LIEUTENANT BROWN, Gerona:

Since receiving your telegram reporting condition of track at El Bendio regimental commander directs that you hire bull carts and move to the crossing at the dam. Get there as early to-morrow morning as you can. The Vice-Presidente of Tarlac promises to have a ferry in working order at that place by noon to-morrow, probably before. Carts will meet you on this side. It is desired that if ingenuity and hard work will get you here to-morrow, to accomplish it, as our orders are to move with dispatch.

(Sent 3: 40 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

DEPARTMENT OF NORTHERN LUZON,
MANILA, June 19th.

COLONEL LISCUM, Tarlac:

The Commanding General of the Division is anxious that the Ninth Infantry should present a good appearance when it goes where troops of other nations are. You will therefore please have new uniforms for the regiment, and, if necessary, send an officer to Manila at once to attend to this. Please acknowledge.

By command of Brigadier-General Wheaton.

ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF NORTHERN LUZON,
MANILA, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Tarlac:

Major Rogers, Fourth Cavalry, has been appointed special inspector to act on all unserviceable property belonging to your regiment that may be presented for inspection.

(Received 4: 15 P. M.) ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF NORTHERN LUZON,
MANILA, June 19th.

COLONEL LISCUM, Tarlac:

The department commander directs that in addition to the twenty-five horses already ordered taken, you take American horses for your medical officers and hospital stewards and also for mounted officers and their orderlies. Acknowledge.

(Received 4: 30 P. M.) ALVORD,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Digitized by Google

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of Northern Luzon, Manila:

Telegram received directing to take horses for medical officers and hospital stewards. Also telegram in regard to new uniforms.

(Sent 4: 30 P. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN ANDERSON, O'Donnell:

The regimental commander directs that you are not to spare any pains, or labor, or ingenuity, to get to the railroad to-morrow. He wants you to raft your company and baggage across the river, if necessary, using your own command and natives to assist you. Our orders are to move with despatch. The Quartermaster is arranging to have wagons and carts to haul your baggage from the river to Capas. Acknowledge receipt and report progress when you get started.

(Sent 2: 20 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Gerona:

The regimental commander directs that you and your men be informed that the regiment has been ordered to Taku, China, in pursuance of cable instructions from the Secretary of War.

(Sent 5: 25 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Copy of same telegram sent to the commanding officers at Victoria, La Paz, Murcia, Capas, Concepcion and O'Donnell.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Thanks for information. Officers and men appreciate the situation.

(Received 6: 55 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

TARLAC, P. I., June 19, 1900.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Gerona:

You are informed that pursuant to telegraphic instructions from the district commander of this date, the officer relieving an officer of the Ninth Infantry is directed to receipt to the latter for any registration blanks and civil funds in his possession.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

(Sent 7: 01 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Copy of same telegram sent to the commanding officers at O'Donnell, Concepcion, Capas, Victoria, Bamban, and Murcia.

Digitized by Google

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

The line is not down between Capas and O'Donnell. We can hear but it is impossible to get a message through to them. Have tried to transmit message myself. It seems to be with the telephone at O'Donnell. Will comply with order.

(Sent 8:30 P. M.) BREWSTER, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, TWELFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

A ferry will be established at the dam near El Bendio, about a mile west of the station, to-morrow, and I expect to get the Gerona company over. Your companies can cross at same place.

(Sent 7:15 P. M.) LISCUM, Commanding.

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Gerona:

Please acknowledge receipt of urgent telegram for your movement to-morrow.

(Sent 7:32 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Copy of same telegram sent to the commanding officer at Concepcion.

TARLAC, June 19th.

LIEUTENANT LANG, Murcia:.

Prepare to send your company to Manila on special train about 9:00 A. M. to-morrow. You are to send it under Lieutenant Wallace, who will be on the train, you yourself to remain at Murcia with twenty-five men until relieved by detachment of Twelfth Infantry. Acknowledge.

By order of COLONEL LISCUM

(Sent 7:29 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

GERONA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, TARLAC:

As you say we can cross at El Bendio, I will start bull train with all property and company at 5:30 A. M. It is necessary to repair two bridges this P. M. As I have the lockers, a great deal of transportation will be required. Sergeant Fitzgerald, with twenty-five men, arrived at 1:00 P. M. to relieve me.

BROWN, Commanding.

(Received 9:15 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER TWELFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

Following is a list of surgeons, stewards and Hospital Corps men at stations of Ninth Infantry:

Digitized by Google

Tarlac — A. A. Surgeon Calhoun, one hospital steward, one acting hospital steward, and ten privates.

Concepcion — A. A. Surgeon Sandall and two privates.

O'Donnell — A. A. Surgeon Slayter and one private.

Bamban — One private.

Murcia — A. A. Surgeon Barney and one private.

Capas — Two privates.

La Paz — A. A. Surgeon Foulkes and two privates.

Gerona — One private.

Victoria — A. A. Surgeon Athey and two privates.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 9:30 P. M.)

DAGUPAN, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Your telegram asking approval of transportation arrangements for company at La Paz and reporting discovery that smallpox had broken out in company, both received same time. Have previously sent you telegrams approving arrangements for directing the leaving of supplies of rations there in charge of Presidente local in case company left there before guard of Twelfth Infantry arrived, also that you furnish the Presidente of the town with some arms and ammunition for self-defence. Hope you have received that telegram by this time, but in view of smallpox case, subsequently reported, will have to modify those orders and leave company where it is until danger of spreading contagion is past. Will report condition to Manila and ask instructions to govern future movements of this company. Having no idea why your regiment is ordered to Manila, am unable to judge very well what is best to do with reference to many questions. Would like you to send as many rations to La Paz at once as you can get there. Designate an officer to issue cedulas and report his name to these Headquarters. Major Abernethey has been directed to attend to this matter covering entire district. Have your Quartermaster, Commissary and Ordnance stores inventoried and turned over as per inventory to any officer whom you have available, with a purpose of finally having this material transferred to corresponding staff officers of the Twelfth Infantry. Dispose of all insurgent prisoners at your own discretion. Have received nothing as yet from department commander on subject. Line working very irregularly and unsatisfactorily. Some of your messages sent on 17th were not received until to-day.

J. F. BELL,
Brigadier General, Commanding.

(Received 9:00 P. M.)

Digitized by Google

TARLAC, June 19th.

GENERAL J. F. BELL, Dagupan:

Both your telegrams respecting movement of the La Paz company received. The Ninth Infantry is ordered to Manila for the purpose of taking transport for Taku, China. It may seem like backing and filling in my arrangements, but in view of the shortage of rations at La Paz, and the impossibility of communicating southward to find out about the supply called for on requisition, I have ordered all but twenty men of the La Paz company to march into Tarlac to-morrow. Twenty men, the surgeon, the tentage, the rations and all medical supplies will be left at La Paz until the arrival of the detachment of the Twelfth Infantry. The company will be quarantined here as long as the surgeon thinks necessary.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 9:20 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of Northern Luzon, Manila:

I have ordered all but twenty men of the La Paz company to come to Tarlac to-morrow. They will be quarantined here for the number of days deemed necessary by the surgeon. This was a matter of necessity, owing to the difficulty in sending rations to that point under present conditions, as indicated by the telegram from your Chief Quartermaster.

LISCUM, Commanding.

CONCEPCION, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Telegraphic instructions received. Leave to-morrow morning for Bamban. Leave detachment, under Lieutenant Smith, to dispose of heavy baggage and take three days' rations and two hundred rounds of ammunition. Weather conditions rainy. Impracticable to arrange otherwise for effective work. Will communicate with commanding officer, Bamban.

McCALEB.

(Sent 9:05 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN McCALEB, Concepcion:

The regimental commander directs me to say that your companies must take their baggage whichever way they move. They may leave behind extra ammunition and any stores which can be replaced in Manila, but lockers and personal effects must be taken with you. The Quartermaster has arranged to give you assistance with bull carts if you come to Capas; you are advised to take that route if possible.

(Sent 9:20 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

CONCEPCION, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Cannot make Capas to-morrow. Conditions will not permit. Cut Cut River impassable. Can make Bamban. Request instructions.

McCALEB, Commanding.

(Received 10:00 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN McCALEB, Concepcion:

You are authorized to go to Bamban if you can take your baggage. Otherwise you must wait until you can cross the Cut Cut. Use every effort possible to get to the railroad with your baggage or you may balk the movement to China.

By order of Colonel Liscum. NOYES, Adjutant.

CAPAS, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Messages are now through to O'Donnell. I will do my utmost to assist both O'Donnell and Concepcion. Send me all large rope you can at once.

BREWSTER, Commanding.

(Received 10:00 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

CAPTAIN BREWSTER, Capas:

It is impossible to arrange for wire or rope ferry. Ferries we will use here will be bamboo rafts poled by natives. Find out whether Concepcion troops will come into Capas under latest orders. If they do not there is no use sending bull carts to them. RAMSEY, Quartermaster.

O'DONNELL, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Acknowledge receipt of telegram.

ANDERSON, Commanding.

(Received 10:00 P. M.)

DAGUPAN, June 19th.

COMMANDING OFFICER NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Recommendation from your doctor to your district surgeon that twenty men, with whom smallpox patient has been associated, be left with him, and rest of company be sent to Manila, has been received. I have no objection to this plan provided you and Dr. Calhoun are willing to take the responsibility of inaugurating without waiting for instructions from department commander. Dr. Calhoun's recommendation repeated to department commander, who has been requested to give

Digitized by Google

orders to you direct in this connection. A request was also received from regimental surgeon, Twelfth Infantry, for Hospital Corps men to replace some taken away by Ninth Infantry. I think this is an error, and he has merely assumed they would be taken away. Orders have been repeatedly given in the district that in change of troops the station of doctors and Hospital Corps men would not be changed without specially directed by department commander. Take no Hospital Corps men or doctors away with your regiment without express orders from department commander to do so. We are short of both in district and it will be far easier for you to get the necessary attendance in Manila than for us to get them here under existing conditions. With reference to Dr. Calhoun's desire to continue with your regiment, I have not the slightest objection, provided that another doctor can first be obtained to relieve him. The non-removal of Hospital Corps men and commissary supplies, under present conditions, is most important. Please see to it personally that it is not done without authority from superior authority.

J. F. BELL,
Brigadier-General, Commanding.

(Received 10:00 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 19th.

GENERAL J. F. BELL:

Your telegram received. I have from the beginning directed all surgeons, Hospital Corps men and hospital supplies to be left at their stations. The printed order received from Division Headquarters today directs the chief surgeon of division to arrange medical attendance. A telegram just received from Department Headquarters states that Dr. Calhoun will accompany the regiment.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 10:00 P. M.)

The last telegram closed the correspondence on June 19th. The Quartermaster's telegrams had been numerous, and he had arranged for a train on the 20th of June so as to put three more companies in Manila. The movement from all parts on the 20th was encouraging, as indicated by the following telegrams:

MURCIA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Order directing movement of company to-morrow received.

LANG, Lieutenant.

(Received 7:45 A. M., 20th (?).)

GERONA, June 19th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Have company repairing bridges between here and dam at washout. Am assembling bull carts and can reach the washout before noon to-

Digitized by Google

morrow if I have no bad luck. Hope to be in Tarlac by dark. Am having large raft made at dam.

BROWN, Commanding.

(Received 7:45 A. M., 20th (?).)

VICTORIA, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Left here at 6:00 A. M. with company and company baggage.

PALMER, Commanding.

(Received 7:45 A. M.)

CONCEPCION, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

For two days have not been able to cross Cut Cut River en route to Capas with four-mule team. River deep and strong. Been raining all day. River this morning eight feet deep and current strong. Have explored the Bamban Road with mounted detachment. They went to Bamban and returned. Reported the route difficult but practicable. Under existing orders, impossible to carry heavy baggage; prefer to leave it and make combination on time.

MCCALEB, Commanding.

(Received 7:45 A. M.)

TARLAC, June 20th.

CAPTAIN MCCALEB:

Regimental commander still insists that you do not leave your baggage. You are to get forward with your baggage as soon as possible, but wait for water to subside if it is absolutely impossible to cross.

(Sent 8:00 A. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

CONCEPCION, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

An officer has been sent to endeavor to construct a raft in order to cross Cut Cut River.

MCCALEB.

(Received 8:00 A. M.)

TARLAC, June 20th.

CAPTAIN BREWSTER, Capas:

Regimental commander wishes you to keep in communication with O'Donnell and Concepcion and report their progress. Please report latest news at once.

(Sent 9:30 A. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

CAPAS, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

O'Donnell expects to get across the river in about five hours. Cap-

Digitized by Google

tain Brewster is out helping O'Donnell with sixteen bull carts, escort wagon and twenty men.
(Received 12:20 P. M.) CLARK, Lieutenant.

CONCEPCION, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Impossible to reach Capas with present condition of Cut Cut River. Have left for Bamban with Company L at 10:00 A. M. Company M will leave as soon as carts can be gotten from barrio.
(Received 11:00 A. M.) McCALEB, Commanding.

CONCEPCION, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Leave here at 12:30 P. M. to-day for Bamban with Company M.
CONNELL,
(Received 12:30 P. M.) Lieutenant Ninth Infantry.

O'DONNELL, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

All of my baggage at river. First load crossed there at noon. Captain Brewster and transportation has just arrived. I now leave with my company, turning over the town to Lieutenant Smith and twenty-five men.
(Received 1:00 P. M.) ANDERSON.

The band, companies E and G from Tarlac, and Company I from Murcia, proceeded to Manila June 20th, by special train, leaving Tarlac at 11:00 A. M. There was no interruption to the journey by a washout, though such was expected, and the following telegram was sent:

TARLAC, June 20th.

GENERAL GRANT, Angeles:

Will you do me the favor to have your Quartermaster employ natives to transfer regiment and baggage of my regiment around the break in railroad at Kilo 81. I think that one hundred can be used to advantage. Train left here at 11:00 o'clock. Other trains will leave to-morrow and next day about same time. Military train will also have troops and baggage.
LISCUM,
(Sent 1:15 P. M.) Colonel Ninth Infantry.

The order of Company F to march to Tarlac, a distance of about thirteen miles, was carried out June 20th under most exhausting con-

Digitized by Google

ditions. The adjacent country and the town itself were flooded, and the natives were using boats to move about the town. The company commander succeeded in hiring thirty-five carabao carts, with native drivers, to handle the baggage, and began its march at 5:45 A. M. For more than three hours the company wallowed through the waist-deep water, following no road, but keeping as close as possible to the course of a trail which first crossed rice-fields and then wound its way through dense forests. Many times were the officers in doubt whether to turn back or keep on. Frequently the men blundered into deep holes.

The route emerged from the forest at Luisita, and for several miles there was good traveling; then other difficulties were met in the nature of flooded streams which were crossed with narrow escapes and loss of some property. Finally the company arrived at Tarlac about 6:00 P. M., having required twelve hours to accomplish the march. Provision had been made at Tarlac to isolate the company and it was placed in quarantine for a proper period.

By 4:00 P. M., June 20th, such progress had been made by most of the companies that the success of the movement seemed most probable. But it depended yet on the ability of Company K, Ninth Infantry, and the detachments of the Twelfth Infantry to cross the rushing torrent at El Bendio. Company K, Commanded by Lieut. Brown, had arrived at the washout at 10:00 A. M., and working in conjuction with a detachment from Tarlac, under Lieut. Hammond, succeeded in stretching a rope across the stream. A raft had been constructed and tried in connection with the rope, but had proved a failure, the current being too swift. While the unsuccessful efforts with the raft were in progress, a small native boat was discovered by a man of the Tarlac garrison, on the river bank near Tarlac, and was reported at Headquarters. Captain Ramsey, the Quartermaster, appreciating its value had it sent to the washout at once. It proved to be the saving element in the situation. By its use, working carefully and continuously all night, Company K was able to cross all the men and all baggage without an accident, and on the morning of the 21st detachments of the Twelfth Infantry crossed in the same way.

The following telegrams were received and sent in the remaining time of June 20th:

TARLAC, June 20th.

COMMANDING OFFICER TWELFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

Please inform me what progress your companies have made on the way to relieve us.

LISCUM,
Colonel Ninth Infantry.

(Sent 4:00 P. M.)

Digitized by Google

PANIQUI, June 20th.

COMMANDING OFFICER NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Please wire whether or not any troops have succeeded in crossing at El Bendio.

BUBB.

(Received 4:30 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 20th.

COMMANDING OFFICER TWELFTH INFANTRY, Paniqui:

Telegram received. K Company and their baggage are crossing at the dam above El Bendio to-day. A raft ferry is in operation there. As my regiment is ordered to move with utmost dispatch I hope you will make every effort to get your companies to their new stations. Every one of my companies off the railroad are moving to the railroad to-day. The Victoria company is in.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 4:45 P. M.)

BAMBAN, June 20th.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Arrived at Bamban this afternoon with Companies L and M and baggage, 142 men, 16 American horses and 6 ponies. Will telegraph to Stevens at Manila for transportation..

McCALEB, Captain.

(Received 4:50 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 20th.

CAPTAIN McCALEB, Bamban:

Telegram received. Regimental commander directs me to say that the Quartermaster is arranging transportation, and is doing all that can be done to get it. You need not telegraph to Stevens.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 5:06 P. M.)

SAN FERNANDO, June 20th.

CAPTAIN NOYES, Tarlac:

Will be up at Tarlac to-morrow if the road is open to pack property.

COOLIDGE.

(Received 6:00 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 20th.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL COOLIDGE, NINTH INFANTRY,

San Fernando, Pampanga:

Telegram received. I have packed your property and it can be shipped to Manila to-morrow. I can send Harrington in charge of it. Headquarters will go to-morrow or next day. Your property could be left here and go down later if you desire. Wire me your wishes.

(Sent 7:15 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

to-morrow. He will be able to tell you about loading of medical supplies.

LISCUM,
Colonel Ninth Infantry.

(Sent 9:10 A. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

LIEUTENANT SMITH, Concepcion:

Please wire number of officers and men left at Concepcion of each Company L and M.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 9:45 A. M.)

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT NORTHERN LUZON,
MANILA, June 21st.

COLONEL LISCUM, Tarlac:

The district commander authorizes retention at present stations of Ninth Infantry of all army wagons, ambulances and mules. Transportation for the regiment's equipment will be provided in Manila.

By command of Brigadier-General Wheaton.

ALVORD,
A. A. G.

(Received 10:45 A. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of Northern Luzon, Manila:

Telegram received authorizing retention of army wagons, ambulances and mules at present stations.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 11:00 A. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

Sergeant Kennedy, Company A, Engineers, has just reported here to construct ferry at washout. A cable was stretched across at the dam yesterday by my regiment at barrio Agusa where the road crosses, and my company from Gerona got across last night. The Twelfth Infantry is crossing to-day. The assistance of the engineers is therefore not needed. It is impossible for them to do any work at the railroad crossing at El Bendio at present stage of water. The Sergeant has therefore been ordered to return to his detachment, which is at El Bendio, and march it back to Gerona to await further orders from your Headquarters.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 1:45 P. M.)

The following companies were forwarded to Manila by rail on the 21st. From Tarlac, Company D. From Capas, companies A and B;

Digitized by Google

from Bamban, Companies L and M. Captain Ramsey proceeded to Manila this day also to receive the wagon transportation for the expedition, and secure supplies for re-equipping.

TARLAC, June 21st.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL THIRD DISTRICT, Dagupan:

The band and five companies of my regiment were in Manila yesterday. Five companies are on train en route to Manila to-day. Headquarters and one company will go from here to-morrow, leaving the La Paz company, in quarantine here, the last one to go. The Twelfth Infantry is crossing at barrio Agusa and will proceed to stations to relieve detachments to-morrow.

LISCUM, Commanding.

(Sent 1:45 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of Northern Luzon, Manila:

The band and five companies of my regiment were in Manila yesterday. Five companies are on train en route to Manila to-day. Headquarters and one company will go from here with me to-morrow, leaving the La Paz company, in quarantine here, the last one to go. The Twelfth Infantry detachments are proceeding to their respective stations and will relieve detachments of Ninth Infantry to-morrow.

LISCUM, Colonel Ninth Infantry.

(Sent 5:15 P. M.)

CAPAS, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Horses from O'Donnell and teamsters from there and Concepcion have gone. Please notify Pearson.

RAMSEY, Quartermaster.

(Received about 3:00 P. M.)

CAPAS, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

A and B companies gone from Capas with everything. Have extra engine to haul Bamban troops..

RAMSEY.

(Received about 3:00 P. M.)

BAMBAN, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

L and M companies, with all transportation, have just left. The only transportation left to bring into Manila is horses and ponies from Victoria, Gerona and Tarlac. Transportation for these and all detachments will be in Tarlac to-night.

RAMSEY.

(Received 3:30 P. M.)

Digitized by Google

BAMBAN, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Have left with company and baggage. The scouts will follow with A company.

BREWSTER, Captain.

(Received about 4:00 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL COOLIDGE, Ninth Infantry, San Fernando, Pampanga:

We leave here on special train at 8:00 A. M. to-morrow. I will load your baggage, will hand you the keys and money at station.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 5:20 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

COMMANDING OFFICER, Murcia:

Be prepared to take train with your detachment a few minutes after 8:00 to-morrow morning. Special train will leave here at 8:00 o'clock. Detachment of Twelfth Infantry will be on train to relieve your detachment.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 6:01 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

COMMANDING OFFICER DETACHMENT NINTH INFANTRY, O'Donnell:

Detachment Twelfth Infantry will be at Capas to-night and will proceed to your station to-morrow. Confer with Lieutenant Lawton here with respect to transportation for your detachment to Manila. Headquarters goes to Nipa Barracks to-morrow morning.

By order of Colonel Liscum.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 6:40 P. M.)

Copy of same telegram to commanding officer detachment Ninth Infantry at Concepcion.

VICTORIA, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Detachment of Twelfth Infantry just arrived. I will start early in the morning.

LOEB.

(Received 7:25 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

LIEUTENANT LOEB, Victoria:

Your telegram received. Regimental commander wishes you to get your detachment here by 10:00 o'clock to-morrow morning so as

Digitized by Google

to go down on military train. Headquarters leaves here to-morrow on special train at eight o'clock. Report to Lieutenant Lawton when you arrive here to-morrow. If he is not at railroad station you can report to him over the telephone to save delay.

NOYES, Adjutant.

(Sent 7:45 P. M.)

MURCIA, June 21st.

ADJUTANT NINTH INFANTRY, Tarlac:

Have already been relieved by detachment Twelfth Infantry. Will be prepared to take train as directed.

LANG, Commanding.

(Received 7:25 P. M.)

TARLAC, June 21st.

COMMANDING OFFICER DETACHMENT NINTH INFANTRY, Concepcion:

Regimental commander has just learned that the detachment Twelfth Infantry was ordered to march to Concepcion to-night. He therefore wishes you to get your detachment to Capas as early to-morrow morning as practicable, with a view to going down on military train.

(Sent 7:50 P. M.) NOYES, Adjutant.

Colonel Liscum, with Headquarters and Company K, proceeded to Manila June 22nd. The Presidente of Tarlac conveyed to Colonel Liscum and all the officers and soldiers of the regiment the best wishes of the people of the town for a happy voyage and success in the operations for which they had been selected.[122]

Lieutenant Lawton was left at Tarlac to attend to forwarding Company F, and the detachments from the several stations as they arrived at the railroad after being relieved by Twelfth Infantry detachments. No interruption occurred to this plan, and at 9.00 A. M., on the 25th, Lieutenant Lawton reported his departure from Tarlac with Company F, all other detachments having preceded. Thus terminates this interesting experience.

Two transports were provided for the transfer to China. They were to carry the Ninth Infantry and the staff details attached, the wagon transportation, mules, horses, machine guns, engineer and signal materials, thirty days' rations, forage, hospital supplies and ammunition. The Logan was assigned for the troops and the chartered transport Port Albert for the animals, wagons and materials. As soon as the weather moderated the ships were placed in readiness for the expedition, and supplies were loaded.

The Ninth Infantry was re-equipped throughout, receiving new

[122] L. R. 1210 — 1900

Digitized by Google

rifles, haversacks, canteens, etc., and new shelter tents. New clothing was drawn as far as necessary for a good appearance, and the dress adopted was campaign uniform, with blue shirts, khaki trousers, and blanket rolls. The rolls were made uniform throughout with the new white shelter tents outside and khaki blouses were, in addition to the usual blanket, underwear, etc., placed inside.

Major William B. Banister, Surgeon, United States Volunteers, reported to Colonel Liscum June 22, 1900, as Chief Surgeon of the expedition. Other surgeons reported later. First Lieutenant Harley B. Ferguson, Corps of Engineers, reported with a detachment of engineers, and First Lieutenant Henry W. Stamford, Signal Corps, with a detachment of the Signal Corps, pursuant to instructions from Division Headquarters, Captain Cornelius F. O'Keefe, Thirty-sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, reported for duty with the expedition; First Lieutenant Marion M. Weeks, Eleventh Infantry, and Chaplain Walter Marvine, United States Army, reported for duty with the regiment. Several other officers sought orders for assignment, but were refused at Division Headquarters, and a number of correspondents applied to Colonel Liscum. Among the latter was Mr. Sidney Adamson who was both artist and correspondent, and pictured the regiment with his pencil, his camera and descriptive articles during its service in China. Mr. A. G. Eames was authorized to accompany the expedition as representative of the Boston Journal. All Ninth Infantry men on the gunboat Laguna de Bay were ordered to join. Officers and men in hospital or on detached service were all anxious to go, and most of them were also ordered to join. Late in the afternoon of June 25th Company F, Lieutenant Naylor commanding, arrived from Tarlac. Orders had already been issued for embarkation the following day and Company F's preparation, involving renewal of arms, equipments and clothing, transfer of old arms to the arsenal, and storing of surplus property, was accomplished only by much hard work, continuing through the night.

The morning of the 26th of June dawned bright and beautiful. Officers and men were astir, and final packing up was finished at an early hour. The arrangements for wagons to do the hauling were thoroughly made and there was no unnecessary delay in the movement to the dock at the Anda Monument, where, as usual, lighters were loaded for transfer to the transports at the anchorage. The regiment was marched to the dock by battalions without ceremony, and in a few hours all were on board. In the meantime, the horses of the mounted officers, also of a mounted detachment of fifty men under Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr., the mules and wagons, were placed on the transport

Digitized by Google

Port Albert. Captain Ramsey, Quartermaster, had secured eighteen escort wagons, four ambulances and a Dougherty wagon with four-mule team for each, and, when paraded for the Colonel's inspection a day or two before loading, they made as fine appearance as such equipment can at its best. One other wagon and team was secured by Lieutenant Stamford. These wagons and teams eventually proved to be all the government transportation that the American contingent of the relief expedition had marching from Tientsin to Pekin the following August, except one pack train which fortunately reached Tientsin just in time to join in the march. In addition to the instructions conveyed by the division commander in personal interviews, the purpose of the expedition was officially communicated to Colonel Liscum in a letter dated June 25, 1900, copies of which were transmitted to the battalion commanders, to be transmitted by them to company commanders, and they in turn to convey the instructions therein to the men of their respective companies.[123] The letter and enclosure were as follows;[124]

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES,
MANILA, P. I., June 25, 1900.

TO THE COMMANDING OFFICER, NINTH UNITED STATES INFANTRY,
Manila, P. I.:

SIR: The Commanding General of the Division directs me to enclose copies of cable messages received from the War Department in regard to the movement of your regiment to China.

It will be seen from a perusal thereof that very much is left to discretion in the execution of details.

The conditions which you will find upon arrival at Taku will undoubtedly suggest necessary action, and after you have established communication with the American Minister, you will of course be largely governed by his wishes.

Until further orders your regiment will be regarded as on detached service from this division, and all periodical reports and papers will be rendered accordingly to these Headquarters. Manila will continue to be your base, and supplies will be forwarded as required from this point. Everything available in the depots in Manila is at your service; all the money you desire will be turned over to the staff officers designated by you to receive it; in these particulars all you have to do is to express a wish and your desires will be complied with.

[123] Paragraph 3, General Order No. 15, Headquarters Ninth Infantry, June 27, 1900.

[124] L. R. 1229 — 1900.

Digitized by Google

The selection of your regiment for this service carries with it a considerable responsibility, in which connection the division commander wishes me to remind you that the attitude, appearance and deportment of soldiers, both under arms and when not on duty, are the features that attract attention and produces the first and most lasting impressions upon observers. Inasmuch as you will be associated with the representatives of the armies of various nations, proper training in these particulars becomes a matter of considerable importance, and it is desired that instructions should be imparted so as to reach each individual soldier in a manner to impress him to the effect that he is, for the time being, the custodian of national interests, and, that in cultivating correct habits and soldierly deportment, he is performing a patriotic duty of great practical value. If the regiment adheres to its own inspiring traditions, nothing will be left to be desired.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) M. BARBER,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

WASHINGTON, D. C., June 16, 1900, 11:20 P. M.

MACARTHUR, Manila:

The Secretary of War directs that you send a regular regiment of infantry, to Taku, China, with tentage, wagon transportation and thirty days' subsistence, medical stores and officers, ample ammunition, and such rapid-fire guns you think desirable. If you are not sure of the tact and judgment of the commanding officer with regiment, select an officer specially qualified, a general officer if need be. Instruct the officer in command to confer with Admiral Kempff, now at Taku, and to report to American Minister at Pekin for protection of American Legation and lives and property of American citizens in China. Transport should sail as soon as possible. Acknowledge receipt and report action. Eight troops, Sixth Cavalry, now en route to San Francisco and will sail for Manila at once. Shot-guns ordered, and will leave on first transport.

CORBIN.

Official copy respectfully furnished the Commanding Officer, Ninth United States Infantry, for his information and guidance.

By command of Major-General MacArthur.

M. BARBER,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES, MANILA, P. I., June 25, 1900.

Digitized by Google

WASHINGTON, D. C., June 23, 1900.

MACARTHUR, Manila:

Liscum will understand that he probably will have to march from Tientsin to Pekin, and should be equipped and supplied accordingly. When will he leave for Taku? Quartermasters and Commissaries going to China should be supplied with sufficient funds to meet all possible needs.

CORBIN.

Official extract copy of cablegram respectfully furnished the Commanding Officer Ninth United States Infantry for his information and guidance.

By command of Major-General MacArthur.

M. BARBER.
Assistant Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES, MANILA, June 25, 1900.

The Logan sailed at 8:00 A. M., June 27, 1900, and the Port Albert a day or two later. The latter ship did not overtake the Logan during the voyage.

The roster of the officers and strength of the regiment at this time was as follows:

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum, commanding regiment.

Lieutenant-Colonel Chas. A. Coolidge, commanding Third Battalion.

Major Jesse M. Lee, commanding First Battalion.

Major Morris C. Foote, D. S., en route to join. Arrived at Manila on transport Sherman in time to board the Port Albert and proceed to Taku on that ship. Reported to Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge en route from Taku to Tientsin with Third Battalion. The Headquarters and First and Second Battalion having preceded the Third Battalion. Arrived at Tientsin with Third Battalion during progress of battle of July 13, 1900.

Major James Regan, commanding Second Battalion.

Captain Thomas S. McCaleb, Company F, absent, sick at Manila.

Captain George Palmer, Company D, absent, sick at Manila.

Captain Frank L. Dodds, Company L, on D. S. at Manila. Judge Advocate Department of Northern Luzon.

Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant, duty with regiment.

Captain Robert H. Anderson, commanding Company A.

Captain George P. Ahern, Company M, on D. S. at Manila. In charge of Forestry Bureau.

Captain Frederick L. Palmer, Company I, absent, sick at Dagupan. Rejoined regiment at Tientsin, July 28, 1900.

Digitized by Google

Captain John P. Finley, Company E, D. S. in United States, recruiting.

Captain Andre W. Brewster, commanding Company B.

Captain Frank DeW. Ramsey, Quartermaster with regiment.

Captain Mark L. Hersey, Company H, on D. S. in United States Fort Slocum.

Captain Peter C. Harris, Company C, on D. S. in United States in charge of War Department Exhibit, Pan American Exposition, Buffalo, N. Y.

Captain John M. Sigworth, commanding Company K.

Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller, commanding Company G.

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel, commanding Company E.

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier, Company D, commanding Company H.

First Lieutenant Arthur W. Yates, Company A, D. S. in United States, Washington.

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion.

First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell, Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion.

First Lieutenant Hugh D. Wise, Company H, D. S. in Philippines, Major Forty-seventh United States Volunteers.

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers, with Company B to June 30th, commanding Company D after June 30th.

First Lieutenant Benjamin M. Hartshorne, Company K, on sick leave in United States.

First Lieutenant Fred L. Munson, Commissary, with regiment.

First Lieutenant Harold Hammond, Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion.

First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn, commanding Company I.

First Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel, commanding Company M.

First Lieutenant William K. Naylor, commanding Company F.

First Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson, commanding Company L.

First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus, commanding Company C to June 30th, with Company G after June 30th.

First Lieutenant James P. Drouillard, Company G, on D. S. in Philippines, en route to join on promotion from Second Lieutenant Eighteenth Infantry.

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, Company K, commanding gun detachments (Gatling gun and Colt's automatic gun).

Second Lieutenant Reuben Smith, with Company L.

Digitized by Google

Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang, with Company I.

Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron, commanding Company C.

Second Lieutenant George W. Wallace, with Company E.

Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr., Company A, commanding mounted detachment.

Second Lieutenant Willis P. Coleman, with Company G.

Second Lieutenant Robert S. Clark, with Company B.

Second Lieutenant Abraham U. Loeb, with Company D.

Second Lieutenant, vacancy, Company F.

Second Lieutenant, vacancy, Company H.

Second Lieutenant, vacancy, Company M.

Attached:—

Chaplain Walter Marvine, United States Army.

First Lieutenant Marion M. Weeks, Eleventh Infantry, with Company A.

STRENGTH OF COMPANIES

	Present	Absent	Total
N. C. S. and Band	30	1	31
Company A	112	13	125
Company B	101	7	108
Company C	91	15	106
Company D	104	17	121
Company E	97	23	120
Company F	117	9	126
Company G	99	10	109
Company H	107	11	118
Company I	92	16	108
Company K	101	11	112
Company L	90	10	100
Company M	89	14	103
Total	1,230	157	1,387

Of the absentees 126 were sick, 10 in confinement, 1 without leave, and 20 on detached service.

The following officers and detachments of the several Staff Corps were assigned to duty with the expedition, and reported to Colonel Liscum:

Medical Department:

Major William B. Banister, Surgeon United States Volunteers, Captain and Assistant Surgeon, United States Army.

First Lieutenant Charles E. Morrow, Assistant Surgeon, United States Army.

Acting Assistant Surgeon, William W. Calhoun, United States Army.

Acting Assistant Surgeon Fred M. Barney, United States Army.

One hospital steward.

Digitized by Google

Three acting hospital stewards.

Sixteen privates, Hospital Corps.

Of the above, Acting Assistant Surgeon Barney, 1 acting hospital steward and 4 privates were embarked on the Port Albert.

Engineer Corps:

First Lieutenant Harley B. Ferguson, Corps of Engineers.

Two Sergeants, 1 Corporal and 17 first-class privates of Company B, Battalion of Engineers.

Signal Corps:

First Lieutenant Henry W. Stamford, Signal Corps.

Six Sergeants, 1 Corporal and 3 privates, Signal Corps, of whom 1 Sergeant and 2 privates were embarked on the Port Albert.

Captain Cornelius F. O'Keefe, Thirty-sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, on duty in the office of the chief engineer of the division, attached to the expedition, was provided with a complete photographic equipment.

Calm seas were experienced during the voyage from Manila and the port of Nagasaki was reached at 6:30 A. M., July 2nd. The transports called at this interesting Japanese port, which was not far off the direct route, for the purpose of coaling, an operation conducted more rapidly than at any other port in the world, with perhaps one or two exceptions. The labor is performed entirely by hand from lighters, the active Japanese, men and women, forming many lines from lighters up the sides of the ship to the coal bunkers, and passing small basketsful rapidly from one person to the next. A number of basket-fillers work in the lighters contributing to each line of passers, and the coal baskets go up so continuously that a constant stream is flowing into the ship at each porthole.

The international character of the service upon which the regiment was entering made itself felt by the common interest observed among the people of all nations in the events transpiring in China, and the fact that information from the British Consul, as well as the American, was of value in determining the movements of the American transports. The American Consul, Mr. Harris, an exceedingly agreeable gentleman, and efficient representative of American interests, gave information of the movements of American naval ships on the Asiatic Station, and announced the expected arrival of the Brooklyn, having on board Admiral Remey, Colonel Meade of the United States Marines and a battalion of marines en route to Taku. The naval transport Solace was in port bound for the same place. There were also naval ships of other nations there, the location of the port making it a convenient point for coaling

Digitized by Google

for all ships on service in that part of the Pacific. Major Hyde, Quartermaster's Department, stationed at Nagasaki, with duties as Depot Quartermaster, gave information regarding the situation at Taku and the facilities for landing there. The fact that ships could not approach nearer than ten or twelve miles to the coast, on account of shallow water, made the problem of landing a somewhat interesting one for the Quartermaster. Lighters and tugs were said to be in the hands of the allies.

On the afternoon of the day following the arrival of the Logan in Nagasaki, messages were received from Tientsin which enhanced the general feeling of anxiety, and which decided Colonel Liscum to depart at once, notwithstanding that the coaling of the ship was unfinished. A bulletin at the Consulate read as follows:

Position at Pekin on June 25th:

Most Legations and custom-houses burnt. Position desperate. Hoping for relief every hour. Large Chinese Army advancing on Tientsin, but arsenal and armory with guns and ammunition destroyed. Admiral Seymour at Tientsin. Troops landed at Taku up to June 28th: 520 officers, 14,500 men, 53 guns and 26 Mitrailleuses. Governor of Port Arthur in supreme command at Taku.

J. H. L.

A cablegram from Admiral Kempff to the Secretary of the Navy, which was handed to Colonel Liscum read as follows:

Runner from Pekin says that Legations are besieged. Provisions nearly exhausted. Situation desperate. German Minister going Tsung-li-yamen murdered by Chinese soldiers. American, Italian and Dutch Legations burned; 20,000 Chinese soldiers inside, 30,000 outside Pekin; 30,000 reported bound Pekin. Still fighting at Tientsin. Communication by rail and river insecure.

The sudden determination to proceed on the journey found a number of the enlisted men absent from the ship, the privilege of landing to see the city having been extended liberally, and details of officers and enlisted men were necessary to gather up absentees.

The Brooklyn arrived in port just before sunset and Colonel Liscum went aboard to consult Admiral Remey, and ascertain if dispatches which the United States Consul had for him gave any important information. Nothing more than had already been learned was forthcoming. The master of the Logan having reported that he had sufficient coal and fresh water aboard, sailing orders were given and the ship put to sea shortly after midnight, July 3rd to 4th. No incident of interest occurred during the three days of sailing. The Shantung promon-

Digitized by Google

tory loomed up on the port side late in the afternoon, July 5th, and the Port Arthur light was visible about midnight. The ship's master took the longer course and the more open entrance to the Gulf of Pechili, on the side toward Port Arthur, not having certain information that the lighthouse at the nearer and narrower passage at the opposite point was to be relied upon during the disturbed state of affairs in China.

In the afternoon, July 6, 1900, all eyes were strained to see the first signs of the warships, transports and supply ships which were known to be anchored off Taku. About 2:00 o'clock they became visible and an hour or two later the Logan worked her way among them to an anchorage near the American warships. The scene was one never to be forgotten. The ships of all nations assembled, many of them battle-ships, forty or more of them in all, at anchor in the open sea. The low shore was so distant that it could scarcely be seen. The appearance of the great white transport, loaded with troops, must have given a realizing sense to the foreign commanders of the nearness of the United States, their strength, and their readiness to take part in the affairs in the Far East.

Colonel Liscum ordered the Logan's steam launch put in the water at once and boarded the gunboat Newark to report to Admiral Kempff. The latter described the situation as serious, the safety of the Legations in doubt, and related the events of the Seymour Relief Expedition, which had proved a failure. Captain McCalla was on the Newark, wounded, and a number of Americans, refugees from Tientsin, were on board. Arrangements were made to transfer the latter on board the Logan. Admiral Kempff advised Colonel Liscum to go ashore the following day, see Captain Wise of the gunboat Monocacy, which was lying in the river at Tongku, and arrange with him for lighters and tugs. The booming of cannon at Tientsin that evening was plainly audible and indicated that something more than a summer day's march to Pekin was in store for the regiment.

During the voyage the effects of the service which the regiment had performed in the tropical heat of the Philippines was disclosed to Surgeon Banister by the large sick report, and he finally pronounced 61 men totally incapacitated for active service. These men, many of whom had come from hospitals in eager anticipation of campaign service, were ordered to remain on the Logan and return to the hospital at Manila or San Francisco, whichever place the ship visited next.[125]

Prior to arrival at the Taku anchorage Colonel Liscum also gave

[125] Compare Major Banister's report, in report of Secretary of War for 1901, vol. i, part 2, p. 688.

Digitized by Google

specific instructions relative to what men on special duty were not to go on the firing line, to the messing of detachments of the Staff Corps, the camping and messing of the mounted detachment and gun detachment, the uniform and equipment on disembarkation, and the employment of coolie burden-bearers.

Following the advice of Admiral Kempff, Colonel Liscum went ashore July 7th with his Adjutant and Quartermaster to arrange for lighters and tugs to land the command. The journey from the anchorage to Tongku, at which place the United States gunboat, Monocacy, was anchored, was made on a tug which had been seized or leased by the United States Navy, and occupied about three hours. It was necessary to leave the ship at such an hour as to take the tide at its proper stage over the bar, two miles or more in width, and which had less than two feet of water at low tide. The depth of the water at high tide was from ten to twelve feet, and sea-going vessels, chiefly small Japanese transports were observed stuck in the mud, some of them at rather uncomfortable list, headed inward and ready to push their way over the bar as soon as the water rose sufficiently. Once across they could enter the Peiho River and proceed to the docks at Tongku, four miles from the mouth, where their cargoes could be unloaded and placed in depot to be forwarded to Tientsin by the river or the railroad as occasion offered. At the time of Colonel Liscum's arrival the railroad was not in operation. The track was safe for eighteen miles from Tongku, but the rails in the remaining ten miles to Tientsin had been removed by the Boxers. The Taku forts, and the town of Taku, near the mouth of the river, were observed with interest, having been the scene of the fighting a few days before. The forts appeared to be extensive, and their mud walls were little damaged. At Tongku the commander of the Monocacy, Captain Wise, gave Colonel Liscum every facility to look over the ground in selecting a camp; arranged to have lighters sent out to the ship, receiving the co-operation of the British commander in this; recommended holding, as a base, some buildings and grounds over which he, Captain Wise, had placed the American flag; suggested leaving a sufficient guard there, and finally arranged to send the Colonel's party out on the railroad as far as the end of the track. He secured an engine and car from the Russians, who had but recently taken charge of the railroad, Captain Wise, machinists and sailors, having at first operated the line. The character of the country was apparent from the car windows, as well as the devastation which war had already spread abroad. The track was guarded by Japanese and Russian detachments. The Chinese villages had been burned, and unburied bodies of dead Chinamen were seen

Digitized by Google

here and there. Those who told of the happenings of the few preceeding weeks spoke of the severity of the Russian methods, and stated that it was impossible to secure Chinese coolies for work because of the burning and killing by the Russians. The Russian method was, however, most effective in ridding the theatre of war of its unfriendly inhabitants, and eliminating some of the uncertainties which would otherwise have been left to confuse the conquerors as they advanced. Colonel Liscum returned to the ship in the evening, finding on board many American refugees, missionaries and their families, families of the Tientsin merchants and officials, who had fled from the foreign concessions near that city after undergoing many hardships and dangers. On July 8th Colonel Liscum issued an order giving refuge to all as follows:

"HEADQUARTERS NINTH INFANTRY, ON BOARD TRANSPORT LOGAN,
OFF TAKU CHINA, July 8, 1900.

Special Order No. 163:

Having been informed by Rear-Admiral Kempff, United States Navy, of the kindness and helpfulness, without charge, shown by ships of the several nations lying off Taku, and by officers and men in caring for American refugees, and of the kind offers of assistance to the United States Steamship Oregon, it is hereby ordered that refugees of all nations, as well as of the United States, shall be given accommodations on board the United States Army Transport Logan. The Quartermaster of the ship will subsist them without charge, and transport them to Nagasaki, Japan."

On July 8th one large lighter and a good-sized junk were brought out from Tongku, and loading began at once to take ashore as large a quantity of supplies as possible. The loading continued through the night, and early the following morning Headquarters and the First and Second Battalions were placed aboard for transfer to the shore, leaving the Third Battalion, under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, to follow as soon as another lighter could be obtained. The lighters at Taku were large and numerous, but the requirements of so many other nations had placed in use everything obtainable, and it was only by the courtesy of the British that lighters were promptly obtained for the American troops. The battalion of marines from the Brooklyn, which had arrived the day before, was placed in the boats of the American warships, and the long line was towed behind the lighters. The band played as the troops left the ship, the sea being smooth and the sky clear, and the men of the Third Battalion and the civilian refugees on the Logan cheered. The Austrian, German and Russian ships, near which the flotilla passed,

Digitized by Google

paid marks of respect, their men cheering, in one case a band playing. Upon reaching Tongku the lighters were tied up to a dock near Monocacy, and the command was disembarked and placed in shelter tents. On this occasion the new tents, the clean uniforms and equipments, together with the eager, active manner of the men, gave the command an excellent appearance and must have favorably impressed the English, Russian, German, French and Japanese soldiers about. There were small detachments of each of these nations present, the German detachment being sailors and marines only, and each nation was engaged in establishing a supply depot, a hospital and all the other attributes of a base.

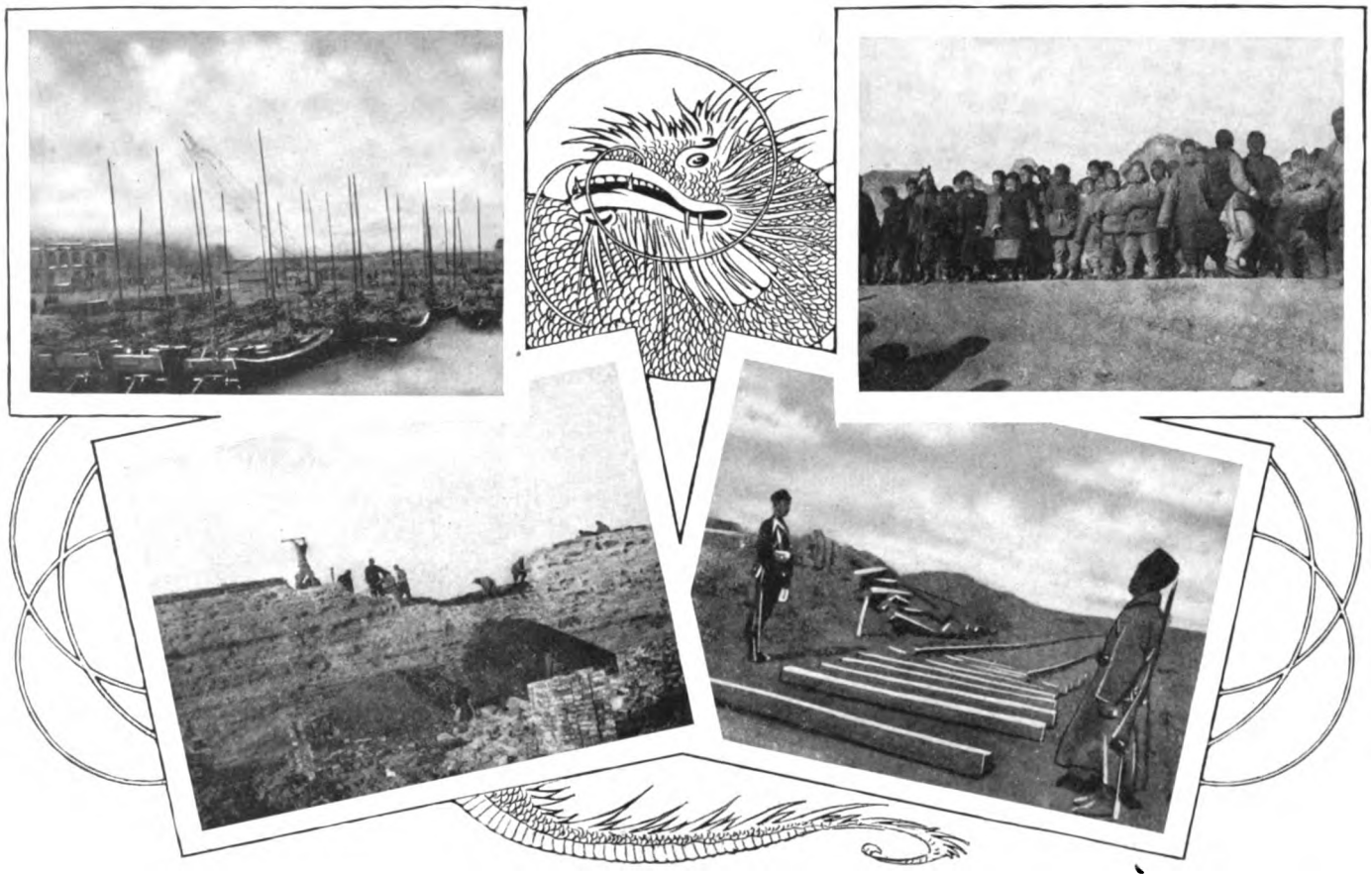
It was decided that the Ninth Infantry should push on to Tientsin the following morning, July 10, 1900, the movement to be continued on the river in the lighters towed by the two tugs. This seemed to be the most feasible way to get to Tientsin promptly. The journey was begun at an early hour and continued all day, the tortuous course of the river making the distance over forty miles from Tongku. The slower tug, with the Chinese junk, having three companies on board, took the lead. Late in the afternoon this tug broke down, and further progress of that part of the command was out of the question for the time being. The junk was tied to the shore, and the three companies, F, G, and H, under the command of Captain Bookmiller, made themselves as comfortable as possible for the night. The junk was a miserable affair, which had been picked up as a last resort, and was only kept afloat by constant bailing. It met with further damage, while tied to the bank, from being run into by a British barge carrying cattle up the river, and at one time it was about to sink but was kept afloat by hard work, and the large quantity of supplies were thus fortunately preserved from damage. Early July 11th, a Japanese Battalion came marching by on the river bank, and Captain Bookmiller was invited, in well-spoken English, to join this command and march with it, an invitation which he was obliged to decline on account of the large quantity of stores to be guarded. Finally repairs had been sufficiently made to enable the tug to do a little work, and by the aid of the inflowing tide the junk was at last worked along to Tientsin, arriving there about dark, July 11, 1900.

In the meantime companies A, B, C, D, and E, and the Band, after a long day on the lighter, during which there was no protection from the sun's rays, the iron deck of the lighter holding the heat and making the situation almost intolerable, succeeded in reaching Tientsin, arriving at a dock near the buildings of a Chinese Mortuary Association about ten o'clock in the evening, July 10, 1900. These buildings were at the

Digitized by Google

southeast border of the foreign concession, about a mile and a half from the walls of the old Chinese city. The foreign concessions constituted a city in itself, having well-paved streets, large stone buildings, warehouses and handsome residences, with municipal control by the foreigners themselves. This was the portion of the city in which foreigners of all nations had taken refuge, where the battalions of marines and sailors had secured quarters, and where guns had been put in position to reply to the Chinese guns, two miles distant, on the further side of the Walled City. The Japanese troops were also chiefly quartered in that locality, while the Russians were on the opposite side of the river, the left bank, where also was the railroad from Tongku. The most advanced point of the allied line on the Russian side was the railroad station which had so far been successfully held against repeated attacks by the Chinese. It was a group of buildings in which shelter was obtained for a small force. If abandoned, the Chinese could have attained the flank of the concession and driven out the foreigners. All nations had shared in defending the place, the Russians, however, furnishing the chief support and meeting with the greatest loss. The Chinese had established guns which, in consequence of the use of smokeless powder, could not be exactly located from the allied position, but which had the range of the railroad station with great exactness. They also fired into the concession almost every night, making the situation quite unbearable. On the day preceding the arrival of the first boat-load of the Ninth Infantry, an attempt of the Chinese to outflank the allies on their extreme left was frustrated, the Chinese being driven back beyond the Walled City and forced to abandon a group of buildings, known as the Western Arsenal, located about 1,500 yards south of the south gate of the Walled City. The outer wall, or mud wall of the city of Tientsin was, on the north and east sides, distant three quarters of a mile to a mile and a half from the wall of the Walled City. It passed just outside the group of buildings just mentioned, the Western Arsenal, a gate being placed in the wall at that point. By an irregular course, a little south of east, it traversed open country to the river, meeting the river near the point where the Chinese mortuary buildings, above mentioned, were located, thus enclosing within it all the foreign concession. It turned to a northerly direction on the east side of the river, the river, as this is seen, passing out at the extreme southeasterly corner of the wall. The Western Arsenal, so called, was directly south of the south gate of the Walled City, and a causeway led from the gate in the mud wall to the south gate of the Walled City, crossing open ground over which were scattered Chinese graves, with mounds, ditches half full of water, and occasional deep pools. An-

Digitized by Google



Junks on the Peiho at Tientsin.

Chinese urchins, Tientsin, March 13, 1901.

Breaking down the wall around Tientsin, China, by allied troops as precaution against repetition of capture of city.

The British-Russian Affair. "The Two Sentinels," 1900–01.

Digitized by Google

other slightly elevated road led from the arsenal buildings toward the French concession, which was the one nearest the Walled City, but not going the whole way to that locality. It terminated in a road which it met nearly at right angles, proceeding from the foreign concession toward the south gate of the Walled City. Beyond the latter road were deep pools of water. These pools occurred in the excavations made by the Chinese in digging mud or clay for their mud houses. Some of them were several hundred feet long, as much as a hundred feet wide, and from six to twelve feet deep. The outer wall, the mud wall, was about twenty feet high, the sides sloping at a sharp angle, but not so steep but that a way could be made over it anywhere by cutting foot-holes. A fifty-foot moat filled with water extended along the wall, but the space between the moat and the foot of the wall was wide enough and level enough to permit marching of troops, and while there they were perfectly protected from the interior. A moat surrounded the buildings of the west arsenal, within the mud wall. After the Chinese were driven from the arsenal, on July 9th, the buildings were not occupied by the allies, nor were they reoccupied in any strength by the Chinese. Plans were immediately made, however, by the allies to attack the Walled City for the purpose of capturing the Chinese guns near the city, or driving the enemy from that locality and quelling the artillery fire which was causing such discomfort in the foreign concession. The attack was to be made on the east by the Russians and Germans (the latter a small force of marines and sailors), and on the south by the other allied forces, of which the Japanese constituted a chief part. When Colonel Liscum arrived with his first lighter, five companies, in the evening, July 10th, he was met at the dock by Major Waller of the United States Marines, by whom he was given a hearty welcome. Major Waller suggested that the men be put ashore at once. He conducted the command to the buildings in which the marines were quartered and provided refreshment for all most hospitably. He and his men had been engaged for several weeks on very arduous service, in which the losses in killed and wounded had been considerable, and the fatigue of constant marching and fighting had almost exhausted them. Nevertheless the struggle for the Walled City was in prospect, and orders had in fact been received to move out at 1:00 o'clock the following morning, the attack to begin at daylight July 11, 1900. Major Waller explained as well as possible, from an imperfect map, the situation and what was proposed, and asked Colonel Liscum if he would join in the operation, to which the latter replied he would. Major Waller said, "I thought you would"; and gave orders to supply the Ninth Infantry companies with a day's cooked rations

Digitized by Google

for their haversacks from his supplies. At the moment, however, of giving orders for the formation of the troops, word was received that the movement was postponed in consequence of necessary bridge-work on the Russian side, which, while incompleted, would interfere with the proper maneuvering of the Russian troops. Instructions were accordingly given to the men of the Ninth Infantry to lie down in the quarters of the marines for such sleep as they could obtain, officers bunking on the floor in the building occupied by the marine officers. Not much sleep could be had, however. The flies were so numerous and persistent that sleep was wholly out of the question unless hands and face were protected. The marine officers had secured mosquito netting which they generously divided with the Ninth Infantry officers, affording some relief. But after 3:00 A. M. the whizzing of artillery projectiles, during another bombardment of the concession, which began at that hour, and the roar of musketry not far away, indicating another Chinese attack at the railroad station, gave so much food for thought that the inclination to sleep was sadly interfered with. By six o'clock the attack was over, and occasional shots were all that marred the quiet of the day. Two small shells burst in the courtyard of the buildings where the officers were quartered, the only injury, however, being the smashing of large earthen water-jars, which Major Waller was sorry to loose because they were hard to get, so he remarked.

Colonel Liscum and his officers were busily engaged, on the 11th and 12th of July, locating the regiment in quarters, unloading supplies and storing them. The mortuary establishment was selected as the most available place, as there were large storehouses in which grain had been kept, suitable for the enlisted men's quarters, and a series of rooms in which attendants had lived and ceremonies had been conducted, adaptable for the use of the officers. Several of the rooms had doubtless been decorated beautifully, and sumptuously furnished, in Chinese style, but the hands of thieves and marauders had despoiled them of whatever was valuable before the arrival of the Americans. There were, however, in the more retired rooms, a large number of elaborately carved coffins, sealed and laid up in tiers, which had not been disturbed. They probably contained the bodies of wealthy Chinese, and it was understood that this was a temporary resting-place for the bodies, pending the necessary opportunity and formal procedure to ship them to the locality in some distant part of China, where they would be interred. It was a strange place to quarter troops, but was indeed a very excellent place in many respects. Colonel Liscum ordered guards placed over the buildings, where the coffins were located, to prevent any possible desecration.

Digitized by Google

Late in the afternoon of the 11th the disabled junk, with Captain Bookmiller's three companies, arrived. The work of unloading and assorting the supplies continued all night, details of men being arranged to relieve each other through the night. The weather was exceedingly hot, and the labor had to be done by the men themselves, Chinese workmen being nowhere available. Late at night, on July 11th, the battalion of marines, which had come ashore with the Ninth Infantry on July 9th, arrived at Tientsin, under command of Colonel Robert L. Meade, United States Marine Corps. This officer, being senior to Colonel Liscum, superseded the latter in command of all American forces in Tientsin, or, at least, was the medium of communication of orders from the Council of Generals. No order of the President had, as yet, placed the marines and army on duty as a single command.

About noon, on the 12th of July, an order was received by Colonel Liscum to send two hundred men of the regiment at 6:00 P. M. to a building on the bund near the French concession, the part of the foreign settlements nearest the Walled City. This party was to act as a support at that place to the outposts toward the city and to the command which was held in the barricaded position at the railroad station. In case of attack those places were to be reinforced. The railroad station was especially to be defended. To reach it, the river was to be crossed by a pontoon bridge directly in front of the building, and a burned district passed, which would furnish protection from Chinese snipers located in salt piles near-by, on the left of the line of approach to the station. The latter was about three hundred yards from the bridge.

Companies A (Anderson) and B (Brewster) were designated for the duty. They were strengthened to one hundred men each by detachments from companies D and C. A Colt's gun with its detachment, under the command of Lieutenant Brown, was ordered to accompany this party. Major Lee, commanding First Battalion, was charged with arranging the details. Colonel Liscum, accompanied by the Adjutant, visited the buildings at which the companies were to be placed, and the Adjutant was directed to observe the route and locality so as to be able to conduct the party at the appointed hour. At 5:00 P. M. Colonel Liscum was called to a meeting of the Generals, and Major Lee was charged with dispatching the party. Captain Brewster was the senior officer of the party. Second Lieutenant Clark, with Company B; Company A commanded by Lieutenant Weeks, Lieutenant Brown commanding gun detachment. The party was dispatched at 5:30 P. M., being conducted by the Adjutant. It had proceeded but a short distance when Colonel Liscum was met returning. The Council of Generals had de-

Digitized by Google

cided to attack the Walled City the following morning, and he was hastening to the quarters to give the necessary instructions. The party en route was reduced to 100 men, Company A being designated to proceed, Company B and the gun detachment to return. Lieutenant Brown was, however, directed to proceed with Company A, Lieutenant Weeks having command. Colonel Liscum, upon reaching Regimental Headquarters, gave preparatory instructions, had rations cooked and ammunition issued. Company E was ordered to remain at the quarters as guard. Twelve men were taken from that company, however, to reinforce, Company D, which had sent men with Company A. Colonel Liscum had in his possession, a memorandum giving the list of troops with which the Ninth Infantry would march out to the battle-field, and designating its place in column. Precise instructions as to his part in the attack had not apparently been communicated to him. The Ninth Infantry was to be the last organization in the left of three columns, and was to follow in its proper place as the column passed out of a gate in the mud wall, not far from the quarters, called the Taku Gate.

The evening was a busy one, but the necessary preparations were not numerous and officers and men, who were very much fatigued by the labor of the day, got a few hours' sound sleep. At 1:00 o'clock the men were called, breakfast was served, and the ranks were formed at 2:30 A. M. At roll-call the following were present:

Colonel Liscum, commanding.
Captain Noyes, Regimental Adjutant.
Major Banister, surgeon.
Lieutenant Marrow, surgeon.

FIRST BATTALION

Major Lee, commanding.
Lieutenant Lawton, Battalion Adjutant.

Company B:
Captain Brewster.
Lieutenant Clark.
Sixty-six enlisted men.

Company C:
Lieutenant Waldron.
Fifty-eight enlisted men.

Company D:
Lieutenant Rethers.
Lieutenant Loeb.
Fifty-two enlisted men.

Digitized by Google

SECOND BATTALION

Major Regan, commanding.

Lieutenant Hammond, Battalion Adjutant.

Company F:

Lieutenant Naylor.

Eighty-six enlisted men.

Company G:

Captain Bookmiller.

Lieutenant Bumpus.

Seventy-five enlisted men.

Company H:

Lieutenant Frazier.

Eighty enlisted men.

Six enlisted men, in addition to the above, were orderlies for the field and staff. Total present, Ninth Infantry, 15 officers and 423 men. Surgeons and Hospital Corps, 2 officers and 8 men. Company A was, at this time, as stated above, on the bund in support of the railroad station.

Lieutenant Weeks, commanding.

Lieutenant Brown.

One hundred enlisted men.

Company E was ordered to remain at the quarters.

Lieutenant Wallace, commanding.

About Seventy-five enlisted men for duty.

The Third Battalion, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, had not yet arrived at Tientsin. It left the Logan on July 11th, arrived at Tongku at about 9:00 A. M. July 12th, on a lighter, remained there through the day, awaiting a tug, proceeded to Tientsin as soon as the latter was obtained, leaving Tongku at 2:00 A. M. July 13th, and arriving at Tientsin about 11:00 A. M. July 13th, while the battle of that day was in progress. In the afternoon Companies I and L were sent under Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge to reinforce the First and Second Battalions, companies K and M, under Major Foote, to reinforce Company A on the bund. This battalion was therefore under fire that day, and, properly speaking, took part in the battle, but it did not join in the assault of the early morning. The battalions under Colonel Liscum were ready at 3:00 A. M. and took their place in the column which passed out through the Taku Gate. A few hundred yards out the column changed direction to the right, taking a country road, but halted at once and waited for daylight; then, as daylight increased, started on, soon getting into the fields and following a course nearly parallel with

Digitized by Google

the mud wall, about three quarters of a mile from it. As this column emerged in the open country, having been at first screened by trees, it was observed by Chinese gunners placed either on the main wall or on towers of the city, and a number of shells were fired at very long ranges. There were no casualties, however, some of the shell flying over and others falling short; the advance of the other two columns was made nearer the mud wall. The French force, about 600 men,[126] comprised the right column, marching near and under the protection of the mud wall; the Japanese, the middle column, about 500 yards from the wall. The third column, about 500 yards from the second, comprised two companies Royal Welsh Fusileers, United States Marines, organized as three companies of infantry, and one of artillery with 4 three-inch guns, the British Naval Brigade (about three hundred men), a small Austrian detachment (about thirty men from an Austrian war-ship), and the six companies of the Ninth Infantry. The operations of the Russian force of about 2,300 men, and German Naval Detachment (about 250 men) were to be conducted on the easterly side of the city, entirely disconnected from those planned for the south. The Japanese General, Fukushima, was the senior officer on the field on the south side. Brigadier-General A. R. F. Dorward, of the British force, commanded the united column of the British and Americans.

As soon as the French and Japanese column arrived opposite the west arsenal their forces aligned themselves outside of and along the mud wall on each side of the mud wall gate, the Japanese line extending three or four hundred yards to the left of the gate. Just within the mud wall was the arsenal on the right of the road. A few mud houses were on the left, and from that locality the road stretched straight across the marshy and ditched open country to the south gate of the Walled City. When the head of the third column arrived opposite the gate, the several organizations in succession deployed, the formation then being in echelon, one organization being directly behind the preceding one, all facing the mud wall gate and about 1,000 yards from it. The six companies of the Ninth Infantry deployed in a single line, and the right flank extended considerably further to the right than any other organization in front of it. All were ordered to lie down. The sun was now well up, and the fields being level, and free of trees, a good view was had of the operations in front, and of the country far off to the left; 150 Japanese cavalry

[126] General Dorward's report to the English War Office stated that there were about 900 men in the French column. The figure must have been based on expectations which were not realized. No command of that size was in evidence at this part of the battle-field. About 100 French troops were seen with the Japanese just prior to the advance on the South Gate.

Digitized by Google

were watching the rear and left. The nimble Japanese infantry, in white uniforms, could be seen digging footholds in the mud wall and gradually ascending it preparatory to getting over the crest and advancing in line to the Walled City far beyond. The Welsh Fusileers and the United States Marines with their guns were soon called from column No. 3 to the mud wall gate, and the firing which had been maintained so far, chiefly by a British mountain battery (Sikh, Hong Kong regiment), rapidly increased in volume. Two British 12-pounders from the ships, and Krupp guns captured at the Taku forts, which had been mounted near the concession, had for some time been firing at the wall of the city and at the Chinese battalions in forts beyond. Infantry fire from the mud wall was now beginning, and as the Chinese replied, directing their fire for the most part at that part of the wall near the arsenal, and particularly at the gate itself, the bullets which flew high and passed over the wall began falling among the troops of column No. 3, deployed in the fields. Colonel Liscum's orderly was among the first men hit, receiving a wound in the muscle of the back. Within the half hour following there were nine casualties in the regiment, and a number of men of the British command immediately in front were struck. Company C suffered the most, one man being killed. Nearly all the wounded at this time were in that company. Its location happened to be on the direct line of fire from a group of riflemen, who, in all probability, were firing at the mud wall gate. The victims were 1,000 yards farther out, and nearly two miles from the points on the interior wall from which the firing was done. The Adjutant, Captain Noyes, received a slight wound in the left arm just as the order was being conveyed to move the line forward. A Chinese magazine at the northern side of the city, two miles away, blew up at this time, producing a tremendous explosion, and throwing a high column of smoke in the air. The concussion was felt and the sound heard several seconds after the column of smoke was seen, and gave the impression of a second explosion near at hand. The order to move forward was sent by General Dorward, and was conveyed to Colonel Liscum by a British staff officer who rode first to the British Naval Brigade and then to Colonel Liscum. He gave his instructions as follows: "General Dorward sends his compliments and says that if you are having casualties here you can advance your regiment to the mud wall, where you will be perfectly protected. You will have to cross the canal by the causeway and bridge in front of the gate, and then you will move your command to the left of the Japanese.[127]

[127] Report of Captain Noyes, Adjutant Ninth Infantry, p. 23, part 9, vol. i, Report of War Department, 1900.

Digitized by Google

Colonel Liscum enquired more particularly about the movement, but the staff officer was not in a mood to stay long and explain. The position of the Japanese, however, along the wall at the left of the gate, was apparent. The forward movement was begun at once and continued to the canal, or moat, near the wall, where complete protection was obtained. The regiment remained in line of skirmishers along and on the outer side of the moat, however, during the bombardment, Colonel Liscum and his battalion commanders joining General Dorward near the gate, and entering into conversation with him. General Dorward said at this time, in respect to the position the regiment had taken, that it made no difference whether it was to the right or left of the Japanese as long as it was under cover. The fact, however, that the regiment was permitted to remain in the position it had taken near the gate, and beyond the moat, instead of being ordered at once to the left of the Japanese on the wall where the United States Marines and Welsh Fusileers had already gone, led to the regiment getting into the fight on the extreme right instead of support of the left, where it was not needed and where the fighting was less severe.[128]

The artillery of the United States Marines was within the gate, and continued bombarding the wall and south gate of the city until their ammunition was exhausted. The guns were then withdrawn, outside, and the moment for the infantry attack had arrived. Two battalions of Japanese were closed in mass near-by in readiness to enter. The order was given them, and the brave little fellows went in at double time, under heavy fire, maintaining perfect order in the formation, every man in his place responding promptly to the call. The Ninth Infantry, in extended order, responded with equal promptness. It was faced to the left, crossed the causeway over the moat, and, with Colonel Liscum at the head of the long column of files, proceeded under the guidance of one of General Dorward's staff officers, about 100 yards along the foot of the wall, turning the corner of a slight re-entrant angle, and taking a path over the crest where the wall was slightly broken down. This path was designated by the staff officer as the proper place to cross. It would appear, however, that possibly an error was committed at this time in not conducting the regiment a considerable distance further to the left, for

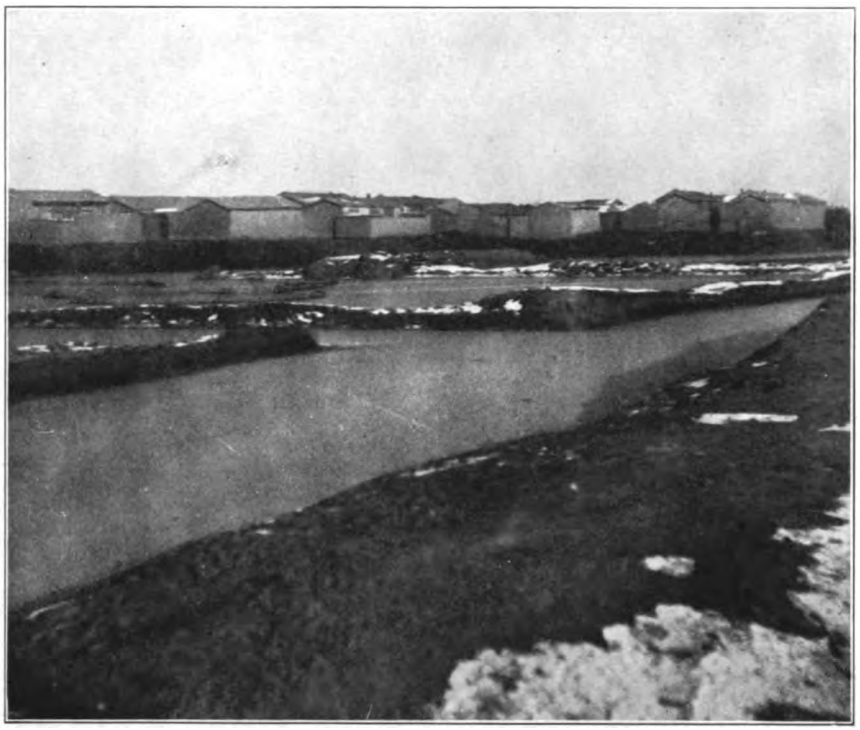
[128] Vide following extract from the Report of Brigadier-General Dorward.

"General Fukushima had asked me to give some support to the left of his line during the attack and the Ninth American Infantry was directed by me to give this support, and also to support the attack of the Fusileers and Marines."

One officer of the regiment states, however, that he heard General Dorward say to Colonel Liscum, when putting the regiment into action: "Left or right, it makes no difference, but look smart."

Digitized by Google

upon getting down on the other side the Colonel found that he was directly in rear of the Japanese who had just entered at the gate, the road within the gate inclining to the left, to skirt the moat of the arsenal. No advantage of position had been gained by going over the wall; the regiment might just as well have followed the Japanese through the gate. It was a very natural conclusion on the part of Colonel Liscum

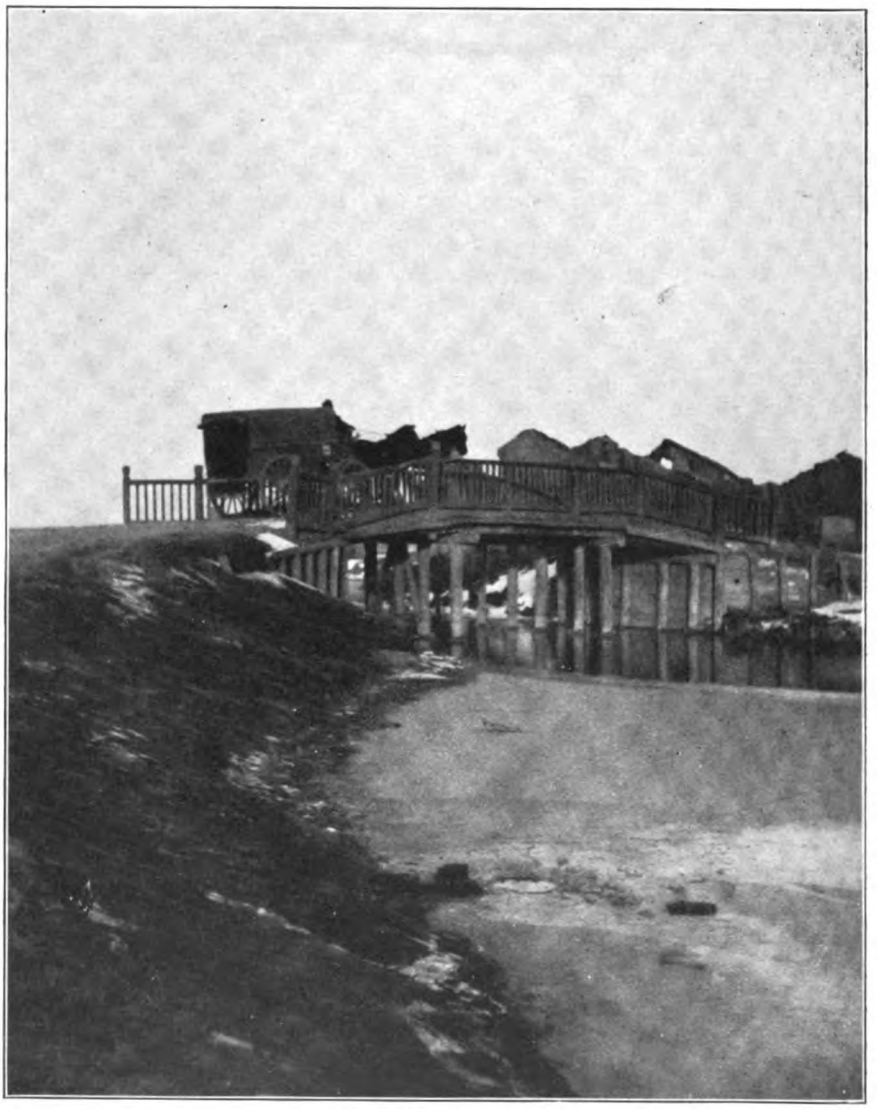


Deep, water-filled excavations which stopped the advance of the Ninth Infantry in its attack on Chinese in the mud houses, Battle of Tientsin, China, July 13, 1900.

that these Japanese, whom he now found in front of him, were the ones whose left he was to support. They had quickly placed themselves in compact formation behind some Chinese mud huts on the left of the road, and the Ninth Infantry battalions were ordered to do the same.

Colonel Liscum himself moved forward to a small bridge, which crossed a sluggish body of water on the right, possibly the intake for filling the moat around the arsenal, and meeting the Japanese commanding officer endeavored to converse, but without avail, having no common language, and the meeting only resulted in bowing and smiling, and

Digitized by Google



Bridge near the arsenal crossed by the Ninth Infantry in the attack on the Walled City, Tientsin, China, July 13, 1900. (Photographed on December 7, 1900, by Captain C. R. Noyes, Ninth Infantry.)

Digitized by Google

pantomime introduction of two or three officers on each side, all of which transpired under considerable fire.

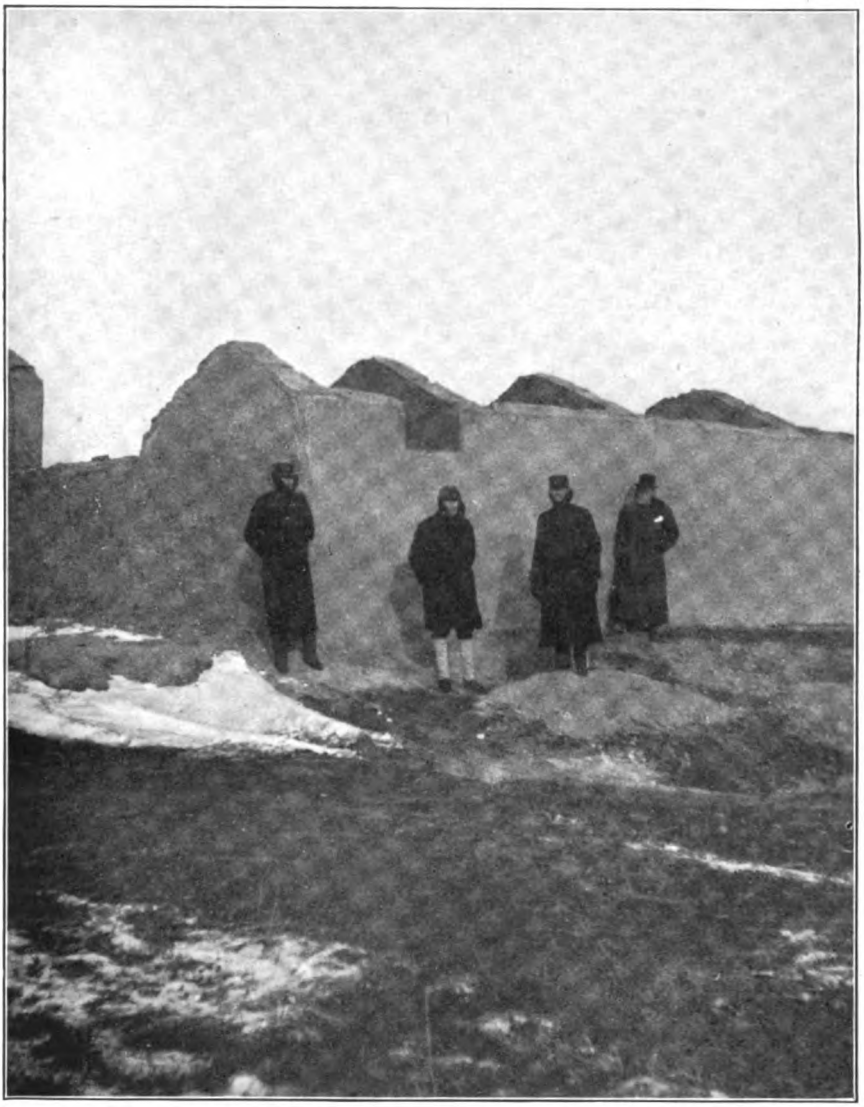
In a few minutes the Japanese crossed the bridge, with the same precision of movement as before, changed direction to the left, and moved forward toward the gate of the Walled City, deployed as much as the ground permitted. Large ponds of water, ditches and marshy ground prevented an accurate deployment. On the left the sluggish stream which had just been crossed prevented extension in that direction. The road itself was elevated and dry, and in fact constituted a causeway which offered the only means of advancing rapidly. A body of French infantry or marines was found deployed at the edge of the field beyond the arsenal, and after the Japanese had passed they jumped up and followed. The Ninth Infantry was now led in column of files across the bridge and changed direction so as to extend the line in front of the arsenal, the men protecting themselves by walking in the water of the arsenal moat which was not deep at the edge. The leading files were urged on beyond the right of the arsenal to give room for complete extension in line of skirmishers. No extension could be made to the left on account of the sluggish stream referred to, and it was now evident that the only support which could be given the Japanese would be in echelon directly in their rear. Doubtless other battalions of Japanese were beyond the sluggish stream, but having gone over the wall far to the left, they had advanced some time before and were not in view. The right wing of the regiment was now partially exposed to the enemy's fire, having extended on the open ground beyond the turn of the moat around the east side of the arsenal, and by direction of Major Lee, the companies so exposed were swung forward to get shelter behind an elevated road, the direction of which was from the arsenal toward Chinese houses lying between the Walled City and the foreign concessions. The district lying between the Walled City and the concessions was densely populated, and this second road from the arsenal apparently led straight to the suburbs referred to, and was, doubtless, the road used by persons crossing from the concessions to the arsenal and mud wall gate. The fact that the road before reaching the suburbs joined another leading to the right, and skirting great ponds of stagnant water, was not apparent as far away as the arsenal. It seemed to lead directly to groups of Chinese mud houses 1,200 yards distant. The right wing of the regiment had no sooner taken up its new position than a withering fire opened from the mud houses referred to, the range being accurately known by the assailants. To remain inactive under such a fire was impossible; to advance in the direction the Japanese and French

Digitized by Google

had taken seemed useless if the flank were exposed to such an enfilading attack. General Dorward was not near to give instructions, and there was not time to send word to him; if the regiment had been supporting the left of the Japanese instead of the right, and such a fire had come from the left flank, manifestly the best support would have been given by attacking and driving off the assailants. Colonel Liscum decided to face the new enemy on his right flank and advance on them. If any error was made in this decision it was in failing to consider the possibility of impassable obstructions in the line of attack. None were apparent; the field was level and seemingly all in view. Occasional cross ditches and the mounds of Chinese graves afforded favorable shelter for the halts between rushes. The fact that heavy losses would occur could not have a determining effect in the decision. The Japanese and French had advanced straight to the city wall from which the firing was incessant. It was Colonel Liscum's brave and impetuous nature to plunge into the thickest of the fight, to let none outdo him on the field of battle. Front was changed and the assault began. It was an advance by rushes; companies and parts of companies led forward by their officers, first on the right, then on the left, here, there, wherever a portion of the line found itself in rear, the fire kept up during the halts, men tumbling into ditches and crawling out, miring in holes and being pulled out, stopping for breath behind Chinese grave mounds and darting on to the next, men falling in death, others with terrible wounds, men dropping out to assist the wounded, and a few lagging. In this desperate rush one third of the officers and one man in every six was hit. The firing was so well maintained, however, that the opponents were several times silenced, and successful rushes were made in the intervals[129] Colonel Liscum, with his battalion commanders, Majors Lee and Regan, marched boldly along the elevated road, never once screening himself, urging the line forward by his example and voice, as gallant a leader as brave soldiers could ever wish to follow. Just prior to the final advance Major Regan reported to Colonel Liscum that a number of men were wounded in the ditches and many overcome by fatigue. He replied "We must get forward." Major Regan then went along the mounds and trenches, got as many men in line as he could, and led them forward. This was soon after Captain Noyes received his second wound. Finally the thin remnant that constituted the firing line reached a posi-

[129] Captain Noyes states that he once called Colonel Liscum's attention to the fact that the enemy's fire was quelled, offering an opportunity to advance, and later, when wounded, he hobbled back 200 yards without being fired on. This was when the line was within 100 yards of the enemy.

Digitized by Google



The mud huts about 250 yards in rear of position of Ninth Infantry. Wounded were sheltered here.

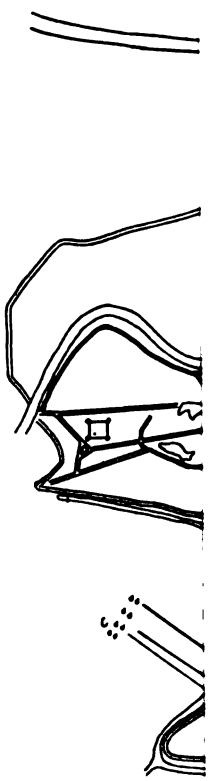
Digitized by Google

tion within eighty yards of the enemy's loopholed houses, but could go no farther. A wide, deep pond of water intervened between them and the foe. There is little reason to doubt that the Chinese had, for the moment, left their position, and another rush would have crowned the effort with success, but the deep pond of water intervened. A movement to the flank to go around the pond under fire was impossible. In a few minutes the Chinese were again at their loopholes and barricades and their fire opened hotter than ever. It was at this time that Colonel Liscum fell, receiving a mortal wound in the abdomen. Just prior to that moment he had taken the national colors from Color-Sergeant Gorman, who had received a severe wound in the knee, and, while holding them erect and fearless, he fell. While dying, his last words were "Keep up the fire, men."

Major Lee was now the senior officer on the ground, and assumed command. Major Regan was lying severely wounded near the most advanced position, having been hit three times, two of which were serious wounds. Captain Noyes had been wounded a few yards back and had withdrawn to the shelter of a house, two hundred yards further to the rear. Captain Bookmiller had been shot when about the middle of the field, and after supporting himself, partially lying, for several hours, in one of the ditches, was removed outside the mud wall. The firing line had secured cover in a ditch half filled with water, the earth from the ditch having been thrown up on the side toward the enemy. Partial protection was thus afforded. A number of acts of heroism were performed by men who, finding themselves in safety, voluntarily went to the assistance of wounded men lying in exposed positions, or carried messages to the rear. Lieutenant Frazier, with three men, succeeded in moving Colonel Liscum's body to a protected place. Three other men, Privates Gallagher, Hickman, and Porter, went to the assistance of Color-Sergeant Gorman, Porter being killed; Major Lee sent his battalion Adjutant, Lawton, accompanied by Musician Hoyle, to the rear to give information of the situation of the command, and to ask for re-enforcements; Sergeants Pleasants and Bernheim voluntarily carried a second message from Major Lee later in the day; Private Caraher twice voluntarily carried messages for Captain Noyes, returning each time with replies; and Captain Brewster, at the risk of his own life, saved a man from drowning.

The possibility of a counter-attack by a superior force on the flank, which would drive the men from their position and subject them to the fire of the enemy, at very close range, made the situation a very serious one. The ammunition was nearly exhausted. Major Lee's request for

Digitized by Google



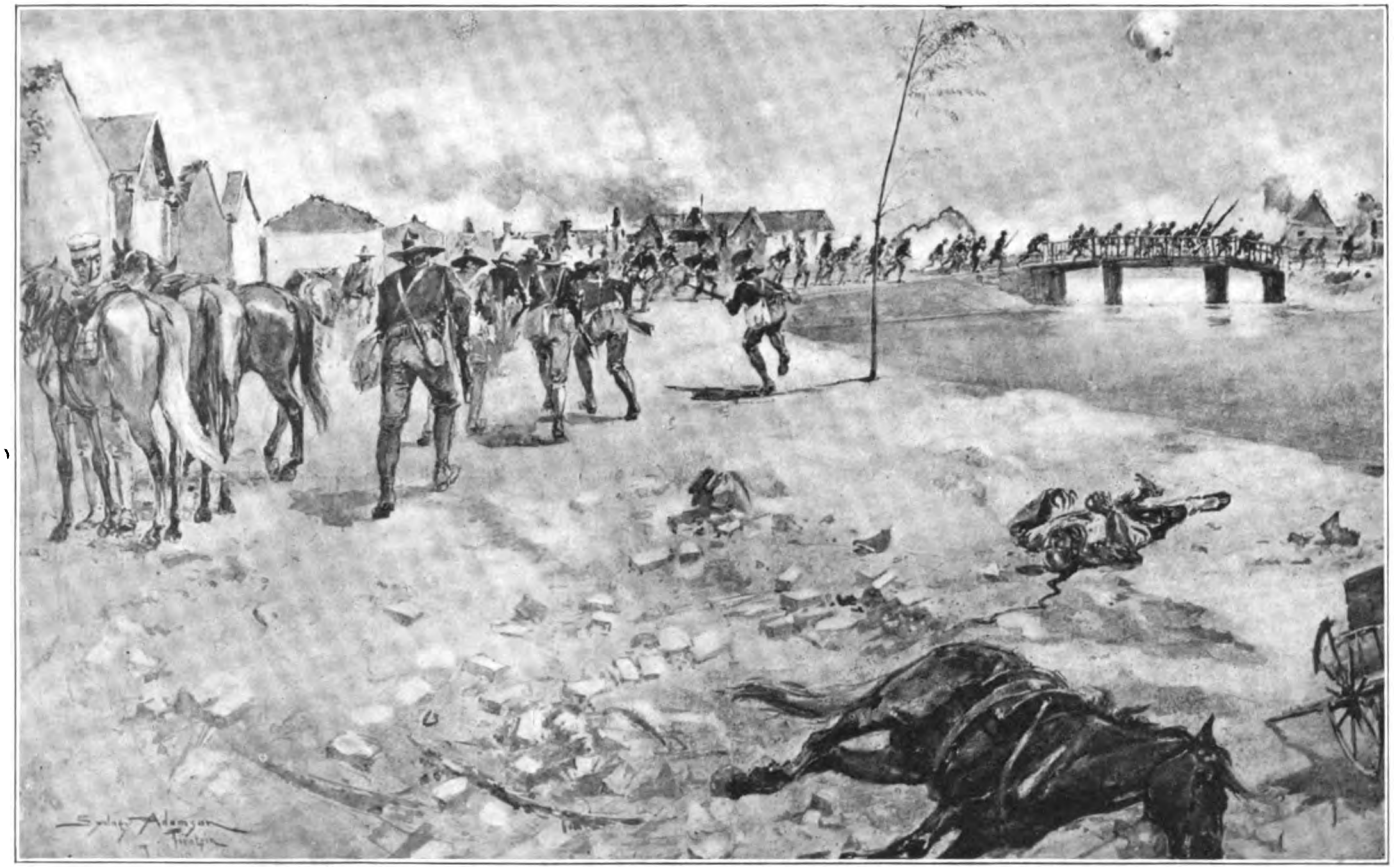
N

† Artillery
• Cavalry
▭ Infantry
A Americ
9th 9th Inf.
M Marines

Based on report of
Commanding Foreign
Position of German

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



The Ninth Infantry crossing the bridge near the "mud wall," under severe Chinese fire, during Battle of Tientsin, July 13, 1900.
Permission, Leslie's Weekly

Digitized by Google

re-enforcements was complied with by General Dorward as far as lay in his power. One hundred men of the British Naval Brigade were first sent forward, the officers and most of the men arriving, with some losses, at a position about 250 yards in rear of Major Lee's most advanced line, but unable to proceed further on account of the heavy fire to which they were subjected; a part of a company of United States Marines, sent forward a little later, reached the same locality, one of the officers, Lieutenant Leonard, receiving a severe wound in the arm at the moment of reaching cover, at the houses where wounded men of the Ninth Infantry were lying. General Dorward also ordered up a detachment of the Chinese Regiment (part of the Wei-hai-wei garrison) with litters to carry off wounded men. Major Pereira of the regiment displayed great gallantry in urging his men forward, losing several men in the effort, and he himself being wounded, but the open ground was so swept with bullets, he was unable to accomplish anything in the effort to get wounded men from the extreme front. He finally reported to General Dorward that the Americans and the men of the Naval Brigade were in a fairly safe position, and the General decided to leave them there until nightfall. He said in his report: "They detained a considerable body of the enemy in front of them, and prevented any attack being made on the right flank of the Japanese."[130] The withdrawal of the regiment was ordered by General Dorward after nightfall, and was successfully accomplished, with the loss of but one man, under the direction of Major Lee. The latter was complimented by General Dorward in his report in the following language: [130]

"I would specially bring to notice the conduct of Major Jesse Lee during the retirement. In him his regiment possesses an officer of exceptional merit."

Upon arriving at the mud wall Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge and two companies of the Third Battalion were found awaiting opportunity to give assistance. They had arrived there about 4:00 P. M., reporting to General Dorward. The latter, in view of the uselessness of re-enforceing the line in its position, from which it could not advance, would not order them forward. Lieutenant Lang of this battalion received a slight wound in the arm while observing the field from the crest of the wall. The wounded, who were brought off the field during the retirement, received first aid dressing just outside the wall, and were at once carried to the British concession, where a building had been fitted up as a hospital. There Major Banister, and Lieutenant Marrow of the army,

[130] General Dorward's report to his Home Government, dated Tientsin, July 19, 1900.

Digitized by Google

and Surgeon Norton, and Assistant Surgeon Thompson of the navy, gave more permanant relief to the wounded, the building being soon filled to overflowing with marines and Ninth Infantry soldiers.

While the battle was raging on the south side of the city, the Russians were having an equally sanguinary conflict on the east and northeast. The railroad station was virtually within their sphere of action, but it



The engine house used as fort by allies. Severe fighting and heavy losses occurred here for nearly a month, ending with Battle of Tientsin.

was held by troops from the commands over which General Fukushima and General Dorward exercised command. The guard of that post, on the night of July 12th, consisted of detachments from the French force, the British and the Americans. Fifty United States Marines, under Lieutenant Bannon, were in the trenches, and 100 men of the Ninth Infantry (68 Company A and 32 Company D) constituted the support, as already described. Early in the morning of the 13th a call for reenforcements was made and fifty men of the support were sent forward under Lieutenant Brown. He reached the engine house (occupied as

Digitized by Google

a blockhouse by the allies) without loss, and disposed his men as directed by the senior officer present (Captain Johnson, British Army). Improvised bomb proofs and barricades of railroad ties had been built and the troops were kept sheltered as much as possible. In spite of all precautions men of the combined force were occasionally hit; once, in particular, with deadly effect, when a shrapnel, fired by the Chinese, exploded within the engine-house, killing and wounding eighteen men, two killed and five wounded being of the men under Lieutenant Brown's command. There being no medical officer present, he had all dead and wounded sent at once to the hospital, in the foreign settlement, on litters improvised by means of blankets, guns, etc., the wounds being first dressed with the first aid dressing carried by each soldier. A heavy artillery fire was accurately maintained all day, but, thanks to the crude protection, without further loss to the men.

The detachment was relieved late in the evening, returned to the barracks, and at once went to join the regiment at the mud wall gate near the west arsenal.[131]

The outcome of the battle of the 13th of July was uncertain at the close of that day. The allies had not succeeded in forcing an entrance to the Walled City; the losses of the allies was heavy, and at some places the attack had failed and the troops were withdrawn under cover of darkness. The sturdy Japanese clung tenaciously, however, to what they had gained. They were in possession of the fringe of Chinese mud houses just outside the wall, on the south side, and during the night they were able to so prepare the way for further action against the gate that at daylight, on the 14th it was blown in and entrance to the city was effected. There was some desultory street-fighting but the Chinese lacked the organization or determination to make further strong resistance, and the troops entered and took possession at once.

General Dorward's official statement of the losses in his command in this battle was as follows:

Royal Marine Light Infantry:
Killed, Captain Lloyd.
Slightly wounded, Major Luke.
Wounded, 16 men.

Royal Navy:
Slightly wounded, Lieutenant Field.
Killed, 5 men.
Wounded, 19 men.

[131] Letter from Lieutenant Brown dated July 24, 1900.

Digitized by Google

Royal Welsh Fusileers:
Killed, 5 men.
Wounded, 12 men.
Hong Kong Regiment:
Wounded, 8 men of whom one afterward died.
Hong Kong Companies, Royal Artillery:
Killed, 2 men.
Wounded, 5 men.
Chinese Regiment:
Killed, Captain Ollivant.
Slightly wounded, Major Pereira.
Killed, 5 men.
Wounded, 13 men, one of whom afterward died.
American Forces:
Colonel Liscum and 22 men killed.
Three officers and 70 men wounded.
Marines:
Five killed and 27 wounded.

He also reported the losses of the Russians about 120 killed and wounded; of the French, 110 killed and wounded; of the Japanese, 400 killed and wounded, and of the Austrians, 5 wounded.

His report of the losses in the Ninth Infantry was slightly inaccurate, the correct figures as stated in official records being 1 officer and 17 enlisted men killed; 5 officers and 72 enlisted men wounded; one enlisted man missing. Colonel Meade's official report of the troops engaged, and the casualties, stated the number engaged as follows: Russians, 2,300; Japanese, 1,600; Americans, 900; French, 600; Germans, 250; Total, 5,650. Casualties as follows: Americans killed, 24; wounded, 98; missing, 1. English killed, 17; wounded, 87. Japanese killed and wounded, 320. French killed, 13, wounded 50. Russians and Germans killed and wounded, 140. Total, 750. The names of the killed and wounded in the Ninth Infantry were as follows:[132]

KILLED

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum.
Company A:
Privates, John A. Potter.
George H. Buckley.

[132] Return of casualties in Ninth United States Infantry, action at Tientsin, July 13, 1900.

Digitized by Google

Company B:
Corporal Richard B. Slater.
Privates, John McPartland.
Gottfried Svenson.

Company C:
Privates, Barney Gonyea.
Robert B. Golden.

Company D:
Private, John H. Porter.

Company F:
Privates, Oscar Olsen.
John J. Dreher.
Axel Skogsberg.
Casper Schwertfeger.
James B. Taylor.

Company G:
Privates, Clyde J. Jamison.
Fred E. Riffenacht.
John P. Smith.
Dewey Rogers.

WOUNDED

Major James Regan.
Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant.
Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller.
First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, Battalion Adjutant.
Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang.

Company A:
Corporal, Arnold Peruzzy.
Privates, John J. Dimond.
Martin Dunphy.
George F. Murphy.
John Seymour.

Company B:
Corporals, Michael Conroy.
John Gallant.
Privates, Arthur W. Ruggles.
Robert Crawford.
Henry E. Stillings.
Harry Van Leer.

Digitized by Google

Company B:—continued.
Patrick Cox.
Frank W. Southworth.
William S. Rowley.
Clarence J. McBride.

Company C:
Sergeants, Romeo T. Perry.
Joseph A. Dory.
Adelbert Walker.
Corporals, James R. Benton.
Peter Savage.
Samuel F. Whipps.
Richard W. Webb.
Musician, Harry K. Ellis.
Privates, John D. Closson.
Ulysses S. Jumper.
James J. O'Neill.[133]
Henry J. Scharer.
Robert H. Von Schlick.

Company D:
First Sergeant, George Bailey.
Sergeant, Edward Gorman.
Corporals, Silas A. Christenberry.[134]
Sherman E. Jackson.
Privates, Thomas L. Maloney.
Joseph Munch, Jr.
Fred E. Newell.
David J. Kennedy.
Carroll L. Pingree.
William Murphy.
Joseph Ryan.

Company E:
Privates, William Gilbert.
Joseph McMahon.
Patrick J. Murphy.

Company F:
Corporals, Frank M. Leonard.
Gustave Bartz.

[133] Died of wounds July 18, 1900.
[134] Died of wounds February 16, 1901.

Digitized by Google

Company F:—continued.

Privates, Arthur Ables.
John P. Diamond.
David H. Hammons.
Francis J. Magee.
David A. Murphy.
Harry A. Norton.
Frederick E. Shoecraft.
Orin C. Weston.
Edward Wright

Company G:

Corporals, Denis Moriarty.
Stephen O'Dea.[135]
Thomas H. Curren.

Privates, Loda B. King.
Philip Wuhnig.
Walter F. Coleman.
William L. Partlon.

Company H:

First Sergeant, Wesley Bickhart.

Corporals, Albert Juhl.
Jacob Mengel.
Gerhart Heckerman.
George F. Hoar.

Privates, Louis Frish.
David Morris.
Ralph Richards.
Charles Riley.
John McSweeney.
Jesse Westervelt.
Andrew Roden.

MISSING

Company B:

Private, Myron C. Miller.

In the reports submitted by General Dorward to his government, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Major Lee and subordinate commanders,[136] and in special letters of recommendation [137] the following officers and

[135] Died of wounds July 15, 1900.
[136] Vol. i, part 9, Report of the War Department, 1900.
[137] L. R. and L. S. Books. Headquarters Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

enlisted men were mentioned for gallantry, etc., recommendations for brevets, or medals of honor, or certificates of merit being made, viz., Major Lee, Major Regan, Captain Noyes, Captain Brewster, Captain Bookmiller, Lieutenant Frazier, Lieutenant Lawton, Lieutenant Rethers, Lieutenant Hammond, Lieutenant Naylor, Lieutenant Bumpus, Lieutenant Waldron, Lieutenant Clark, Lieutenant Loeb.

Sergeant Alfred A. Bernheim, Company D; Sergeant John H. Pleasants, Company B; Private John Porter, Company D (killed while assisting Color-Sergeant Gorman), Private John Gallagher, Company C; Private Robert H. Von Schlick, Company C; Private Taylor B. Hickman, Company C; Private Wilson C. Price, Company F.[138]

Sergeant Albert Davis, Company B; Private Max Kline, Company D; Private Edward Keenan, Company D; Private Harry Van Leer, Company B; Private Martin Doyle, Company B; Private Ezekiel Hale, Company C; Private James Pickett, Company C.[139]

Private Thomas Garaher, Company B; Private Axel M. Benson, Company H; Corporal George F. Abbott, Company G; Private Andrew J. Lackey, Company G; Private Charles L. Humphrey, Company H.[140]

Major Banister, Private Hamilton and Private Heinze of the Medical Department were also recommended in reports.

On the above recommendations a medal of honor was afterward awarded to Captain Lawton, and certificates of merit to Sergeants Bernheim and Pleasants, Privates Gallagher, Hickman, Porter and Price.

The following complimentary letter from General Dorward respecting the services of the American force under his command, was addressed to the senior officer of the American forces, Colonel Meade, and a copy thereof was transmitted to the commanding officer Ninth Infantry.

TIENTSIN, July 15, 1900.

TO THE OFFICER COMMANDING UNITED STATES FORCES:

SIR: I desire to express the high appreciation of the British troops of the honor done them in serving alongside their comrades of the American Army during the hard and long fighting of the 13th inst., and in the subsequent capture of Tientsin city, and of my own appreciation of the high honor accorded to me by having them under my command.

The American forces formed part of the front line of the British attack, and so had more than their share of the fighting that took place. The ready and willing spirit of the officers and men will always make

[138] Bernheim to Price, medals of honor, by Major Lee.
[139] Davis to Pickett, certificates of merit, by Major Lee.
[140] Letters of various subordinate commanders.

Digitized by Google

their command easy and pleasant, and when one adds to that the steady gallantry and power of holding on to exposed positions, which they displayed on the 13th inst., the result is soldiers of the highest class.

We all deeply sympathize with you in the heavy losses you have suffered, especially with the Ninth Regiment in the loss of their gallant Colonel, E. H. Liscum, while at the head of his men, and with the First Regiment of Marines in the death of Captain Davis, who met a soldier's death in the very front of the fight.

I blame myself for the mistake made in taking up of their position by the Ninth Regiment, not remembering that troops wholly fresh to the scene of action, and hurried forward in the excitement of attack, were likely to lose their way. Still, the position they took up and gallantly stuck to all day undoubtedly prevented a large body of the enemy from turning the right of the attacking line and inflicting serious loss on the French and Japanese.

Among many instances of personal bravery in the action I propose specially to bring forward, in dispatches, the conduct of First Lieutenant Smedley D. Butler, United States Marine Corps, in bringing in a wounded man from the front under heavy and accurate fire; Lieutenant Butler was wounded while so doing, but, I am glad to learn, not seriously. The Regimental Adjutant, First Lieutenant Henry Leonard, as Lieutenant Butler was suffering severely, volunteered to carry him out of the firing line. This feat he successfully accomplished, but, I regret to say, was very dangerously wounded in so doing.[141]

The Ninth Regiment were fighting somewhat outside of my sphere of action, so I am able to bring forward only one instance of personal gallantry in that regiment, although circumstances as they were, fighting for about twelve hours almost alone and unsupported, and never giving back a foot of ground until directed to retire under cover of night and fire of the naval guns, such instances must have been very numerous. The one that I would refer to was the bringing back to me by the Acting Regimental Adjutant, Captain Lawton, of the account of the position of the regiment, across a wide and fire-swept space, and returning with re-enforcements to guide them to his regiment when he was severely wounded.

The withdrawal of the regiment was a delicate military operation,

[141] An inaccuracy of statement possibly arising from the phraseology employed by Colonel Meade in mentioning Lieutenant Leonard's wound. This officer was unhurt while assisting Lieutenant Butler, but received a very dangerous wound while gallantly leading a detachment of Marines to re-enforce the Ninth Infantry in its exposed position.

Digitized by Google

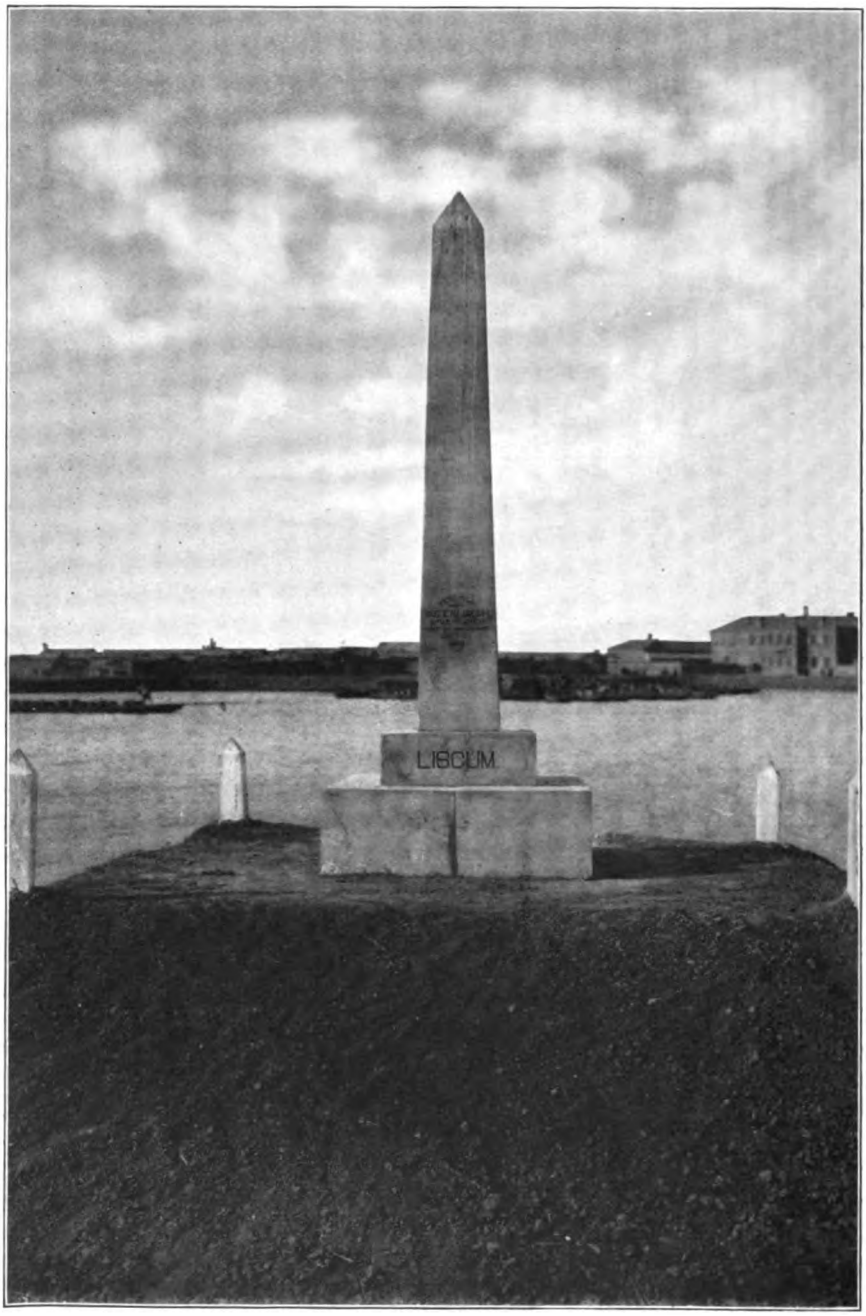
finely carried out, on which I congratulate Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge and the officers and men under his command.

I have the honor to be, sir, your obedient servant,

(Signed) A. R. F. DORWARD,
Brigadier-General.

The successful termination of the assault on the Walled City of Tientsin resulted in the capture of the Chinese artillery which had produced such distress in the foreign concessions, and dispelled all armed resistance by the Boxers in the immediate vicinity of the city. The Chinese regular forces retreated northward. The immediate problem for the allies was to restore order in the Chinese Walled City and systematize the sanitary work made necessary by the bombardment of such a thickly populated place. The Ninth Infantry, remaining in reserve at the mud wall gate on the night of July 13, 1900 (except companies K and M), was not immediately required for duty in the Walled City, and was returned to its quarters at the mortuary buildings. Companies K and M, under Major Foote, were, however, retained at their post on the bund where they had relieved Company A, and sometime before noon, on the 14th, Major Foote, with one company (M), was ordered to report to Colonel Meade in the Walled City. The company entered at the south gate. Everything there was in the greatest confusion. The horrible results of the bombardment, and of the terrible musketry fire to which the place had been subjected, were in evidence on all sides. The flames were still springing up here and there, and ruins were smouldering; many Chinese were in the streets homeless and terrified, but wherever possible the people had barred themselves in the houses against intrusion; occasional shots were heard, and the company advancing into the city was fired upon. Major Foote succeeded in finding Colonel Meade and reported. He was informed that the southeastern quarter of the city had been assigned to the Americans to be patroled and guarded, and he was directed to proceed there and assume charge. The most practicable route in the confusion which existed was to ascend to the crest of the wall and march around the top, which was done. Hundreds of Chinese, the defenders of the day before, were found lying in death along, and at the foot of the wall. Arriving at the designated locality Major Foote discovered an arsenal, in the grounds of which he located the company and established such guards and patrols as he could with his small force. The remaining companies of the battalion reported in the evening. The next day was occupied in further efforts to restore order; and by compelling Chinamen to work, the bodies of the dead were collected and covered with matting and earth, somewhat

Digitized by Google



Monument to General Liscum erected by the Ninth Infantry near the spot where he was killed in the battle of Tientsin, China. The background shows the obstacle which stopped the advance of the Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

after the manner of Chinese burial. On this day, July 15th, the fact became known to Major Foote that a treasury or mint containing silver was located in the American district, and he at once sent a guard to protect it. The place which proved to be the yamen of the salt commissioner had been burned, and doubtless some of the silver had been taken away by Chinese Looters and others, but thereafter the remainder was guarded until removed under the direction of Colonel Meade, United States Marines. The amount so taken estimated by a Board at a value of $376,300, was turned over by the marines, who had taken charge of it, to the representative of a New York banking firm in Tientsin in exchange for drafts for that amount which were forwarded to the United States authorities at Washington. The United States Government afterwards returned the money to China.

The funeral of Colonel Liscum occurred on July 14th, the body being conveyed under the escort of the regiment and attended by General Dorward and the marine officers, from the hospital to the dock, from which place the body was carried to Tongku and received temporary burial there. Later in the year the body was transferred to the United States and was buried with military honors at Arlington. The bodies of the enlisted men killed in the action of the thirteenth were buried with military honors, near the mortuary "compound," an impressive service conducted by Chaplain Marvine being held over the grave. The bodies were disinterred and returned to the United States the following year.

The reaction from the strain of battle, together with unsanitary conditions arising from the long state of siege in which the foreign concession had been placed, as well as the pollution of the air, and the river water from the carnage in the Walled City, contributed to conditions which increased the sick report. Before the battle the sick report numbered about twenty cases of unimportant ailments. Including the wounded the number was at once increased to ninety-four by the battle, and continued increasing during the next two weeks, the number on July 28th being 254, not including 54 wounded who had been sent away a few days before. Although the number was somewhat reduced after that, there were 177 men of the regiment unable to march out when the relief expedition started for Pekin August 6th. These men were left in a base hospital which was established at Tientsin by the chief surgeon of the expedition, almost all suffering with diarrhœa or dysentery. The regiment was, as a whole, not in a strong physical condition, owing to the hard service it had just come from in the tropics. The inability to

Digitized by Google

throw off disease, and the numerous cases of exhaustion occurring on the march to Pekin were largely attributable to that fact.[142]

The removal of the wounded to the naval transport Solace, at Taku, was accomplished on July 24th and 26th, the Solace proceeding to Nagasaki, Japan, July 29th, and transferring them to the United States Army transport Thomas, by which ship they were transported to San Francisco. Upon arrival there they were placed in the United States General Hospital at the Presidio.

The duty of maintaining order in the American section of the Walled City, as well as directing the sanitary operations, was continued, companies C and D of Major Lee's battalion relieving the Third Battalion on the 16th. These were in turn relieved by companies of the United States Marines, and later other companies of the Ninth Infantry served on the same duty. Major Lee, in his report of the conditions prevailing at that time, and the duty performed, stated:[143]

"Our section was thoroughly protected by guards at the arsenal gate, south gate, mint, on wall around buildings of arsenal, cossack post west of arsenal, and frequent patrols. The guards had orders to prevent all looting, and in case any foreign troops were caught at it they should be reported to my Headquarters to be sent to their proper commanding officers, and, if by officers, the names were to be taken and I would make report. The Chinese residents, through Mr. Wah, a prominent Chinaman, were told to report to me any looting or molestation. . . . . The condition of the city as regards filth, stench of unburied bodies, and refuse, when we entered, cannot be properly described in this report. With the valuable assistance of Mr. Wah with coolies and a number of Chinese impressed, we did everything possible to have the streets cleared, refuse burned and bodies buried. As to the portion of the city and mint burned or destroyed by shell-fire, it is impossible to state whether or not it had been looted. Some other buildings showed unmistakable signs of pillage, but by parties unknown to me. While some looting may have been committed by troops of some nations, I am convinced that the greater portion was done by the Chinese themselves. Very strict orders were given men of my command against it, and so far as I know, or believe, the orders were obeyed. Guards were placed over the arsenal buildings, which were filled with vast quantities of military supplies, and with the exception of a few curios of very little value, which were given under my direction, nothing was disturbed in the arsenal."

[142] Report of Major William B. Banister, Surgeon United States Volunteers, p. 688, part 2, vol. 1, Report of War Department, 1901.

[143] Report of War Department, vol. i, part 9, p. 27.

Digitized by Google

Colonel Meade, of the marines, having been invalided home on account of sickness, July 25, 1900, Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge, Ninth Infantry, became the senior officer of the American forces and exercised control for a few days. He repeated the standing orders against looting, and directed that the utmost be done to place the American section of the Walled City in good sanitary condition. He found it necessary to caution American soldiers to show the same respect to foreign flags and officers as to our own, and to prohibit enlisted men to enter the French concession.

On July 30th Major-General Adna R. Chaffee, United States Volunteers (Colonel of Cavalry, United States Army), arrived at Tientsin, having the instructions of the Secretary of War to assume command of the American land forces in China, marines ashore being included in the command under the 122nd Article of War. He had been informed that such force would constitute an independent command to be known as the China Relief Expedition, that re-enforcements would arrive to make the force in the immediate future 5,000 men, and very soon thereafter 10,000 men. He was also informed regarding supplies, the departure of first transports with troops, was instructed as to concurrent action with other national forces and was given quite fully the attitude of the United States, politically, toward China. Information of the fact that General Chaffee was en route to China to have command had been conveyed to Colonel Liscum at Nagasaki by a cablegram from General MacArthur, and his arrival at Tientsin had been anticipated eagerly. He arrived at Taku July 29th on the transport Grant, and lost no time in hastening on to Tientsin. The transport Indiana had arrived at Taku a few days before, from Manila, with two battalions of the Fourteenth Infantry. The Grant brought the men of the Sixth Cavalry, but not the horses. The General's arrival and the landing of other American regiments gave a new aspect to affairs and filled the hearts of all Americans with enthusiasm. Major-General Sir Alfred Gaselee, of the British Army, arrived a few days earlier than General Chaffee to have command of the British forces; with him was the leading contingent of the British re-enforcements from India. Lieutenant-General Yamaguchi of the Japanese Army, and General Frey of the French Army had arrived. There were large accessions also to the Japanese force, so that by August 1st, at a conference of the Generals, the strength available for a forward movement was reported to be 8,000 Japanese, 4,800 Russians, 3,000 British, 2,100 Americans and 800 French. Two companies of the Fourteenth Infantry from the transport Flintshire, a battalion of marines from the transport Grant, and Reilly's battery (F, Fifth Artil-

Digitized by Google

lery) from the Flintshire, arriving after the conference, increased General Chaffee's force to about 2,500 men. It was rumored in camp that the question of going forward at once was discussed by the Generals at their conference an August 1st, and that a negative attitude on the part of the Russian General was all that prevented a decision in favor of the movement. Also that the Japanese, English and American Generals decided among themselves to move at once, communicated as much to the Russian General, and intimated that he could join or not as he saw fit. At all events, an order to prepare to move was issued by General Chaffee August 2, 1900, and the definite order to march was received at Headquarters of the Ninth Infantry about 10:30 P. M., August 3rd, the hour set for the regiment being 4:00 P. M. the following day.

General Chaffee's first general order, assuming command, had been issued at Taku, July 29th, the date he landed. It announced the name of the expedition, his personal staff (Second Lieutenant Roy B. Harper, aide-de-camp), and the Adjutant-General of the expedition (Captain Grote Hutcheson, Sixth Cavalry). General orders No. 2, also issued at Taku, enjoined protection of Chinese citizens and their persons and property, and directed that precautions be taken to preserve the health of the command. General orders No. 3, issued at Tientsin, announced other officers of the expedition staff, and General Orders No. 4, dated July 31st, announced Captain Ramsey, Ninth Infantry, as Chief Commissary of the expedition, and Major Lee as Acting Inspector-General. Captain Ramsey was also directed to perform the duties of Acting Chief Quartermaster during the advance to Pekin. The appointment of Major Lee on the staff, and the losses incurred in the battle, necessitated the following assignments in the Ninth Infantry: Major Foote to the command of the First Battalion, Captain Anderson to the command of the Second Battalion. Captain F. L. Palmer (who arrived from Manila on the Indiana) to the command of the Third Battalion. Lieutenant Connell was detailed as Acting Regimental Adjutant, Lieutenant Brown, Acting Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion, and Lieutenant Lang, Acting Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion. Captain Ramsey continued to act as Quartermaster of the regiment, nothwithstanding his new duties. The general order directing preparations for the forward movement read as follows:

HEADQUARTERS CHINA RELIEF EXPEDITION,
TIENTSIN, CHINA, August 2, 1900.

General Orders No. 5:

1. The following troops of the expedition will make ready to move and remain in readiness until the hour for marching shall be named:

Digitized by Google

The Ninth Infantry, the Fourteenth Infantry, the First Regiment United States Marines, less one company, amounting to not less than 100 men, Light Battery F, Fifth Artillery.

2. Rations will be taken; One day's on the person of the soldier, four day's by wheel transportation, ten days' by water transportation.

4. Each company will provide for itself coolie laborers to carry water and utensils for boiling same; also company kitchen outfit, as follows: For Ninth Infantry, 8 per company; for Fourteenth Infantry, 12 per company; for marines, 8 per company; and to carry litters each company and organization will secure 8 coolies. These men will be paid 20 cents per day, Mexican money, and be furnished with rice.

5. Such transportation as can be obtained is hereby authorized to the extent of 50 carts, for which $1.00 per day, gold, may be paid; rice for the driver and grain for the animals to be furnished in addition to pay, when practicable to provide the grain.

6. The Quartermaster, Ninth Infantry, will provide wagon transportation for the rations, ammunition, and supplies as follows: To these Headquarters, 1 dougherty (wagon), 1 four-mule wagon; to Ninth Infantry, 4 four-mule wagons; to Fourteenth Infantry, 4 four-mule wagons; to United States Marines, 1 four-mule wagon; to the chief surgeon, 3 Red-Cross ambulances, 1 four-mule wagon; to detachment of engineers, 2 four-mule wagons; to chief ordnance officer, for first reserve ammunition, 150 per rifle, 5 four-mule wagons; for troops remaining at Tientsin, 1 four-mule wagon.

7. Water transportation: In addition to boats loaded with supplies there will be taken with the fleet 3 boats for the transportation of the sick and wounded to Tientsin. The commanding officer Fourteenth Infantry will detail an officer to have general charge of the fleet of boats. He will detail also 2 privates for guard over such boat loaded with stores for his regiment, and 6 privates for guard on empty boats. One non-commissioned officer will be detailed with this guard. The commanding officers Ninth Infantry and First Regiment United States Marines will each detail one non-commissioned officer, and for each boat loaded with supplies for their respective commands 2 privates as guard; the non-commissioned officers to report to the officer in charge of the fleet of boats. The boats will be kept together as far as practicable propelled by sails, oars, or to be towed, as circumstances may require. The guard on the boats will prevent the crew from deserting their boats and service.

8. Lieutenant-Colonel Theodore J. Wint, Sixth Cavalry, will

Digitized by Google

assume command of the United States forces remaining in Tientsin after the departure of the commanding general of the expedition.

The Sixth Cavalry, 1 company of marines, and the sick will constitute the guard for the United States property and for the protection of the city, as may be required. A guard of 25 men will be left by the marines for the protection of property pertaining to the corps, the officer or non-commissioned officer to report to Lieutenant-Colonel Wint. All stores, supplies, baggage, etc., except for hospital and marines, will be stored in the buildings used by the Ninth Infantry. Lieutenant-Colonel Wint will give the necessary directions for separating and proper storage of property as it arrives by water or railroad.

Hospital supplies will be delivered to the surgeon in charge of the hospital.

The transportation of the Fourteenth Infantry, when it arrives, will be used by Lieutenant-Colonel Wint for the movement of property and remain subject to his orders until otherwise directed.

By command of Major-General Chaffee.

(Signed) GROTE HUTCHESON,
Captain Sixth Cavalry, Acting Adjutant General.

Captain Ramsey's calculation in Manila, as to the amount of transportation necessary for the expedition, had in view the movement of the Ninth Infantry alone, but he anticipated a long line of communication inland from the seaboard and had provided accordingly.

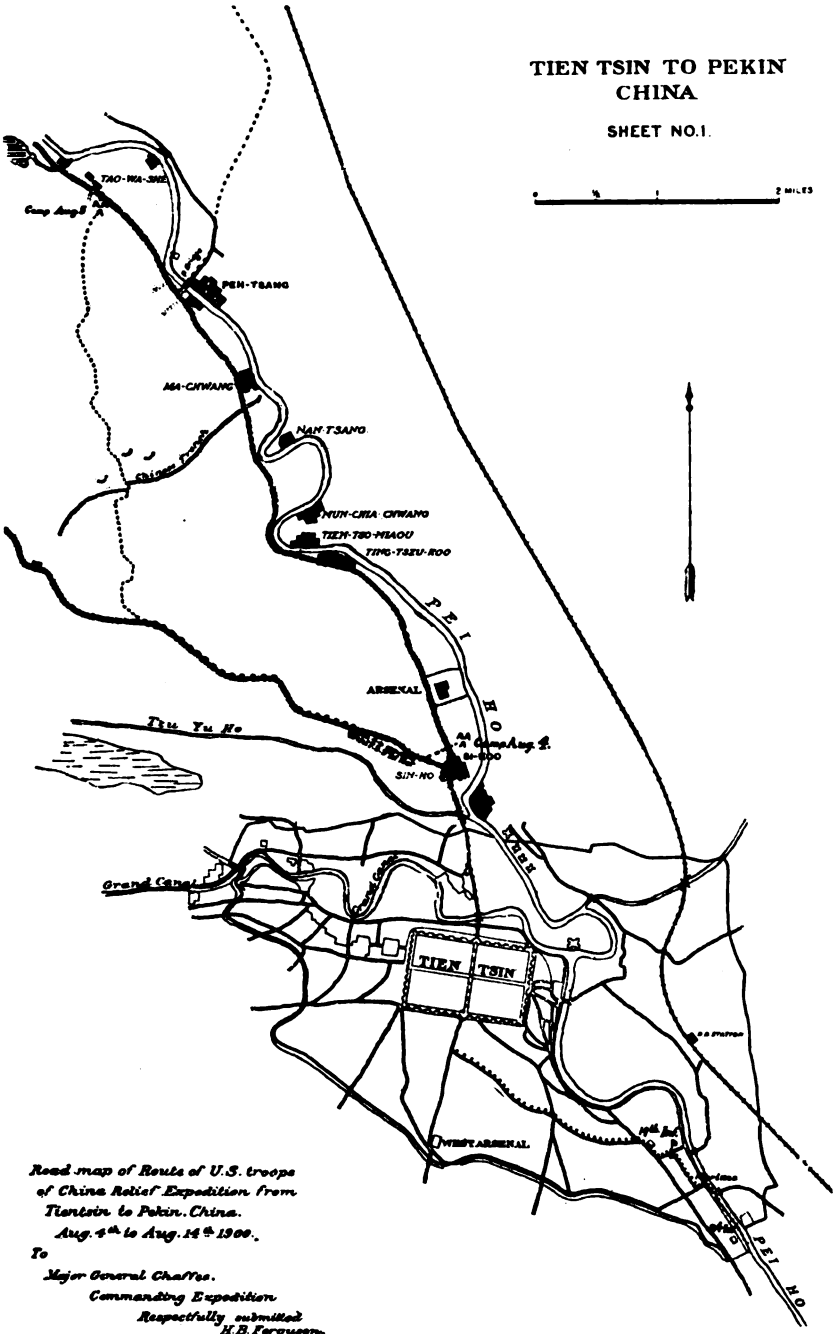
His 18 wagons, with large, strong mules, proved sufficient for the larger expedition, when to this transportation was added the boats for rations on the river. A pack-train, which got to Tientsin just in time to join the expedition, made 3 wagons available for other stores by loading ammunition on the pack-mules.

Lieutenant Reuben Smith was detailed by Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge to remain at Tientsin in charge of the band, the sick, and the stored regimental supplies.

At the designated hour, on August 4, 1900, the regiment was ready to move out and the memorable march to Pekin, which will long remain a most unique and interesting event of history, began. The Japanese had reconnoitered the country to the northward and had ascertained that the Chinese force had entrenched at Pei-tsang, about five miles from Tientsin; the strength of the enemy was reported to be from 8,000 to 11,000.

The Americans followed the British as they departed from the foreign concessions of Tientsin, and taking a route which led across the memorable field of battle of the 13th of July, passed through the Walled

Digitized by Google

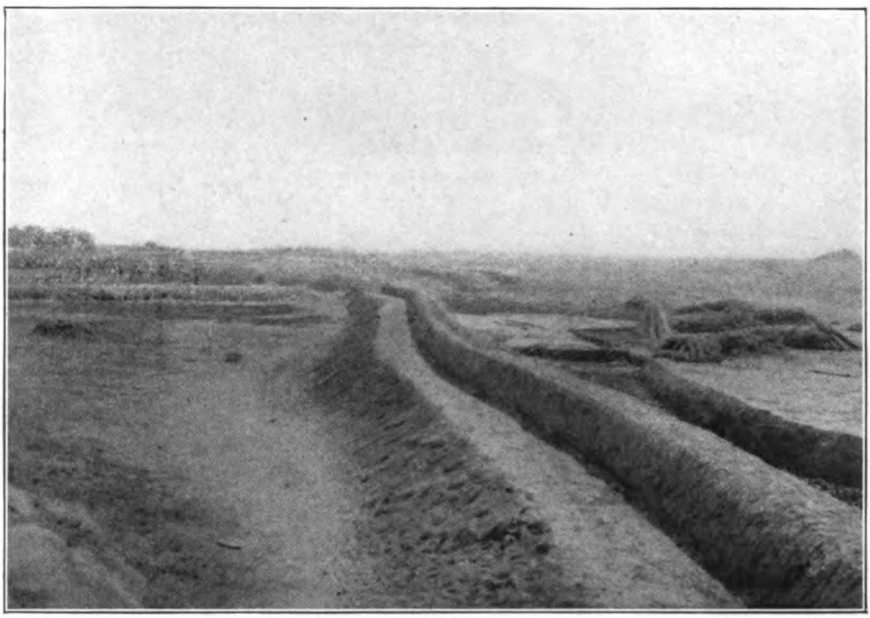


Road map of Route of U.S. troops of China Relief Expedition from Tientsin to Pekin. China. Aug. 4th to Aug. 14th 1900.

To
Major General Chaffee.
Commanding Expedition
Respectfully submitted
H.B. Ferguson,
1st Lt., Engrs. U.S.A
Chief Engineer Officer.

Digitized by Google

City, and a short distance further on to Si-Ku, where camp was made, about 7: 00 P. M., in a corn-field. Rain fell during the night. On August 5th the regiment broke camp about 3: 00 A. M., and, turning westward from the Peiho River, marched on a road in a northwesterly direction, Fourteenth Infantry leading, followed by the battery, then the Ninth Infantry, and the marines in the rear. Very shortly after leaving camp the sound of battle was heard in front. The Japanese had attacked the extreme right of the Chinese position; a British battery was engaged



Chinese intrenchments at Pietsang, China.

near-by. The American force was halted and remained in column awaiting orders. The sound of infantry volleys followed the artillery duel and, in time, as they gradually receded, the success of the Japanese attack became known. The Americans, having been kept in reserve, moved forward in column about 5: 00 A. M., the Ninth Infantry marching along the road a short distance, then turning off the road on the left side and passing through the Japanese field hospital. The Japanese attack had been a spirited one and their forces had done nearly all the fighting, having swept along the entrenchments after capturing a battery at the Chinese extreme right. Their losses were 60 killed and 240 wounded. The British had 1 killed and 25 wounded; the Russians,

Digitized by Google

who had advanced on the left side of the Peiho River, against the left of the Chinese position, had 6 wounded. The other allies had no casualties. After the battle the German, Austrian and Italian contingents, two or three hundred men in all, not having transportation with which to continue the march, returned to Tientsin. The American column changed direction to the right, and took a general course northward for a few miles, crossing the Chinese entrenchments on the way. About 12: 00 o'clock, noon, after a very hot march through fields of high corn or millet, the column arrived at the small village Tao-wa-she or Wang-Tsing [144] on the river, and camped. Many blanket rolls which had been dropped by the way, on account of the excessive heat, were recovered during the evening, men going back for them, individually, when they discovered camp was reached so early.

General Chaffee endeavored to find a passable road northward, along the right bank of the river, but the country had been flooded from the river, and three bridges were necessary before troops could pass that way. The Japanese constructed the bridges during the night, and also placed or took charge of a pontoon bridge across the Peiho, at Pei-tsang. Leaving camp about 4: 00 A. M., August 6th, the American column marched down the river to the latter bridge, and crossed to the left bank, followed by the British and Russians. There was then some delay awaiting the completion of the bridges in front of the Japanese.

After the battle of Pei-tsang, the American forces bivouacked for the night near the Tientsin — Pekin wagon road, which passed over the Peiho at this point, on a bridge made of Chinese river junks. This bridge was of much strategic importance, as it controlled what was then the only practicable road to Pekin, as the land on the opposite side of the river, in the vicinity of Tientsin, had been made impassable, due to the cutting of the river bank by the Chinese.

To properly guard this bridge and keep it in repair, as well as to protect the line of communications, was imperative, and for this purpose about 150 troops of the allies were detached from the relief column and ordered into camp close by.

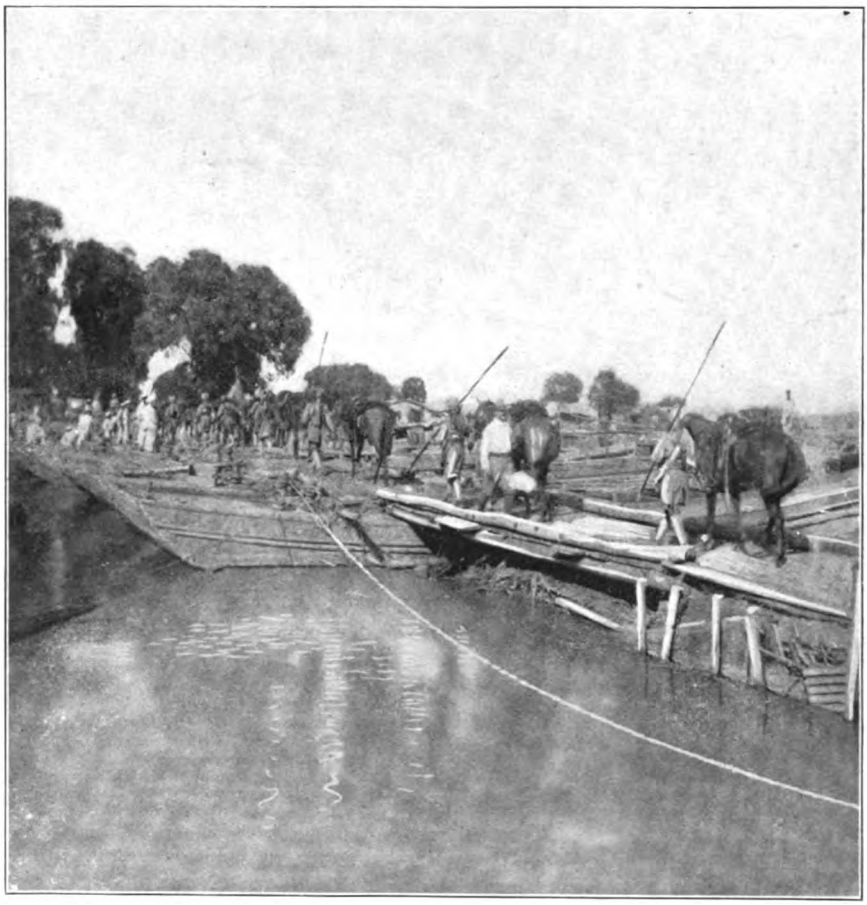
From the contingent of the United States forces one company of infantry was left, and, as the duty was considered undesirable, the junior company commander of the Ninth Infantry, with Company G, Ninth Infantry, was detailed. A detachment of the Eleventh Japanese Infantry, commanded by Lieutenant Baba, and a mixed company of the Seventh Rajputs and Sixteenth Bengal Cavalry, with Second Lieutenant

[144] Called Kwang Chwang in Ninth Infantry Reports.

Digitized by Google

C. A. Meadows, Seventh Rajputs, in command, completed the Pei-tsang detail.

At daylight, on the 6th of August, the relief column took up its march toward Yang-tsun and left, disconsolate, those composing the bridge



The pontoon bridge, Second Bengal Lancers "sowars" crossing. November 26, 1900.

guard. Company G went into camp on a strip of land adjoining the south end of the bridge, and immediately opposite was that of the Japanese contingent. It was at first thought that service at this point would be devoid of interest, but in this we were greatly mistaken. The mad rush of belated troops to join the relief column, and the constant flow

Digitized by Google

of supplies, both by land and river, which passed within a few feet of the camp, made as interesting and instructive a sight as has ever been witnessed.

During the eight weeks in camp never a day passed without some unusual sight or experience. There was no fighting to do, even though a band of Boxers, 3,000 strong, was seen by a Japanese reconnoitering patrol, seven miles from our camp, and it was reported that they intended crossing at the Pei-tsang bridge; however, if such were their intentions, their plans must have changed for the Boxers never appeared.

Several incidents of the service at Pei-tsang seem important enough to recount here:

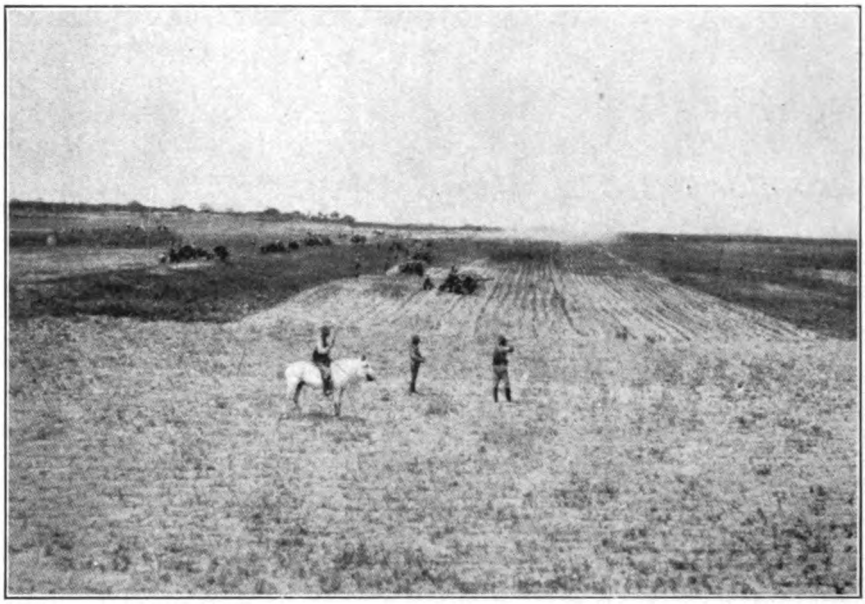
Shortly after going into camp a column of Russian troops passed on their way to Pekin, and in crossing the bridge with their transportation, which was no easy matter, due to the poor material with which the roadway was constructed, one of the carts fell in the river. The driver, a Russian soldier, made every effort to keep his cart on the bridge, but, due to the fractiousness of the horse, the accident happened. Undaunted by the swift current, the driver plunged in the river, cut the harness and saved both horse and cart. The officer in charge of the train had come up by this time and began to question the driver — of course, speaking the Russian language, so nothing could be understood. This officer, after working himself into a frenzy, began to pound the soldier about the head and face, while the one beaten stood and remained at "attention" with his hand in the position of "salute." This was an incident of Russian discipline.

A few days after the battle of Yang-tsun, when the junks containing the Japanese wounded had reached Tientsin, Lieutenant Baba sent an interpreter to inform the commanding officer, of Company G, Ninth Infantry, that he had received instructions from Headquarters to clear the village, two miles below the bridge, of "snipers." This action was made necessary because some of the junks containing the wounded had been fired on, and, while no one was hit, the practice had to be stopped. Because I was curious to learn how the Japanese would handle a situation of this sort, I accompanied Lieutenant Baba's detail with 20 men of Company G.

Our combined party surrounded the village, and the Japanese made a thorough search of all houses therein. Some very old native women, who were immediately released, and twelve able-bodied Chinamen were found. Without further ceremony the captured men were marched to the edge of the village and every one of them, then and there, shot. Such was the Japanese method.

Digitized by Google

The march was resumed at 6:00 A. M., August 6th, the American column following the railroad embankment, marching on the west side of it for about 7 miles. The country here was open, level and uncultivated. The day was very hot and there were no streams of water. Injudicious men slacked their thirst from their canteens until empty, and they were then subjected to the torture of extreme heat, with no water to drink. Some of them dug holes in the sand at the halts, and there got sips of warm, brackish water. The halts were frequent and



British and Russian artillery in action at Yang-tsun; Russian guns to the left.

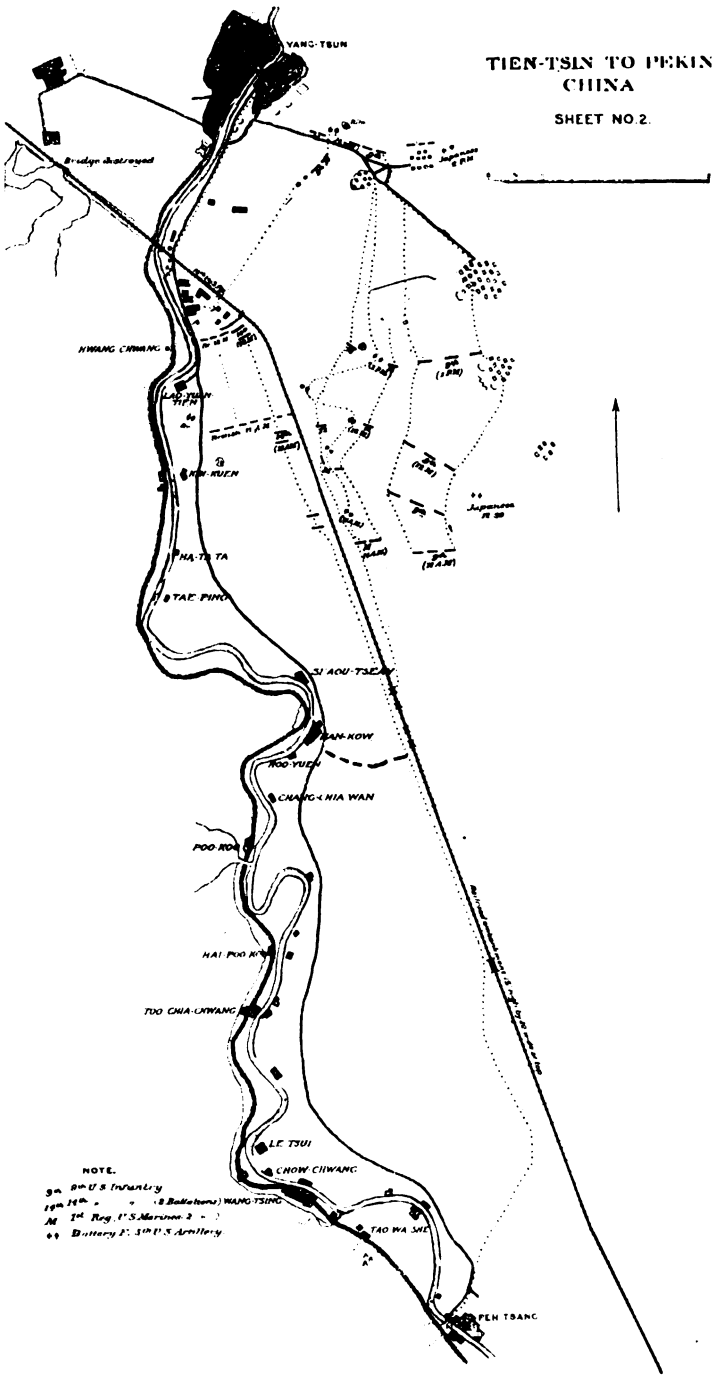
progress slow as the command was approaching the enemy's position at Yang-tsun. Between 10:00 and 11:00 o'clock A. M., Cossacks in advance came in touch with the enemy, and the Ninth Infantry was ordered to cross the railroad embankment to the east side and form for attack. The Third Battalion, Captain Anderson commanding, was formed in line of skirmishers, the Second and First Battalions in column of fours, in the rear of the wings of the Third Battalion, the Second Battalion on the right. The Fourteenth Infantry, British and Russians, remained on the west side of the railroad, advancing between the railroad and the river, and, in the subsequent attack of the village in their front, the Fourteenth Infantry lost heavily, a considerable portion

Digitized by Google

of the loss, however, resulting from shells fired into their ranks by mistake by British or Russian batteries. The Japanese were on the opposite side of the river and were not seriously engaged.

The attack of the Ninth Infantry was made on villages which formed the extreme left of the enemy's position. Captain Reilly's battery also operated in this field of action, taking positions, as the line advanced on the left of the Ninth Infantry, supported by the marines. The Bengal Lancers (British) observed the country to the right flank of Ninth Infantry line. The fact that the villages were occupied by the enemy was developed as the line moved forward. The first one, in which the enemy had three guns and 8 infantry companies, was somewhat beyond the right flank of the Ninth Infantry, and the attack upon it involved a partial change of direction. After the place had been shelled by Reilly's battery, Captain Anderson's battalion, re-enforced by Company H, charged up to and through the village without losses, the enemy having decamped. The other battalions continued their movement more in the original direction, and, passing to the left of the village, again followed in support of Captain Anderson's battalion. It was now a little after noon, the heat was intense, the fields of high millet cut off what little air was stirring, and the dust rising from the tramp of feet stifled the men. Many were completely exhausted and fell out of ranks, unable to move on. Major Foote's and Captain Palmer's battalions were now deployed, the enemy's artillery and infantry fire being at times severe. A second village was passed in the next advance, and, moving on beyond it, the line halted. Here a severe shrapnel fire enfiladed the line and caused casualties, Lieutenant Lang receiving a serious wound in the right shoulder. The enemy's guns, located in a village 1,200 yards to the right, were finally silenced by Reilly's battery. An opportunity was offered about this time to impose a heavy loss on a Chinese command which passed in front of the line, withdrawing from the field, but the colors carried were mistaken for the French flag and the fire was withheld. It was now after 1:00 o'clock and the next movement brought the regiment to a village at the junction of roads a short distance from Yang-tsun. In the village was a well and the men could not, for the time being, be restrained in their frenzy to get water. They gathered in crowds, notwithstanding the efforts of the officers to preserve the line, and fairly fought for the water. At last, however, they were brought under control, and the regiment was moved forward in support of Reilly's battery, which was shelling the edge of the town of Yang-tsun. There was no reply and the firing ceased. The regiment was then marched about two miles to the railroad, and

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

went into camp, 3:00 P. M., between the railroad and the river. The total distance marched during the day was about 15 miles, the last 5 being under occasional shrapnel and musketry fire during a period of about four hours. The Ninth Infantry losses in this battle were: Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang, wounded; Private William H. Webb Company M, died of heat and exhaustion; Private Albert Fitzpatrick, Company D, Corporal Daniel J. O'Connor, Company E, Sergeant Micheal O'Brien, Company F, Private William J Field, Company I, and Private Joseph Fritsch, Company M, wounded.

Private Fritsch died of his wounds the same day.

Lieutenant Gibson was among the number prostrated by the heat during the battle.

The dead, wounded and sick (32 men sick and unable to proceed) were sent to Tientsin on river junks the following day.

Company C acted as wagon guard on the 5th, 6th, and 7th of August, and did not take part in the engagements at Peit-sang and Yang-tsun.

The allied column rested at Yang-tsun one day, August 7th, the Generals holding a conference and deciding the order of march and general plan of advance as far at Tung-chow. On the 8th of August, the column marched to Tsai-tsun, about ten miles. The Ninth Infantry broke camp about 7:00 A. M., and marched through the town of Yang-tsun about 8:00 A. M., the entire force crossing the river to the west bank on a pontoon bridge and continuing along the river road. It was a hot, tiresome march. The road was slightly elevated and narrow; the allies starting from practically the same locality were not sufficiently extended on the march to give a clear road to the several organizations, so there were frequent halts and delays. For a portion of the way the regiment was mixed with Japanese transportation, which caused annoying interruptions and added very much to the fatigue. Camp was reached at Tsai-tsun at about 4:00 P. M. That evening Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge called the officers together and gave very explicit instructions in regard to the march, explaining the importance of moderation in drinking water and the necessity of requiring the men to keep their places in ranks. If there was straggling the regiment would not be able to keep its place in the column. But the instructions could not be carried out as fully as desired by the officers, as experience proved in the next two or three days. The heat was too intense. In a number of instances men who tried to keep up fell, in convulsions, and others seeing this, could not be forced, even by dire threats, to hold to their places in the ranks. When nearly overcome they dropped by the wayside, and after resting a few hours rejoined their companies in camp

Digitized by Google

during the night. The officers endeavored to discriminate between the cases of malingering and the cases of necessity but it was a difficult thing to do. The rivalry among the nations urged all commanders to the utmost exertions, and the endurance of the men were strained to the last degree. The order of march adopted was Japanese leading, Russians next, Americans third and the British in the rear. The Japanese started very early and pushed their men on to the end of the day's march before the extreme heat of the day. The Russians followed, but necessarily lengthening the column so that the Americans could not start before 7:00 o'clock. The latter were thus compelled to march through the heat of the day, suffering frequent interuptions and delays from causes originating ahead of them. The British, being at the rear, were under no necessity of beginning the march early and very wisely postponed leaving the camp till afternoon. Their march was continued into the evening hours, arriving at camp after dark. Their men were thereby saved from much distress.

The camp of the Americans, on the night of August 9th was at Peh-Meauo. Orders were received that night to outpost the camp, to allow no fires, and make no noise, presumably on account of the proximity of the enemy. There was no alarm, however, during the night. On this occasion, as usual, the ration wagons came up very soon after camp was established, and rations for the succeeding twenty-four hours were issued. The wagons then went to the river, which, as a rule, was not far away, and replenished from the boats. Captain Ramsey had charge of this work and carried it out very successfully, keeping the boats well up, notwithstanding obstacles and threatened interruptions from the other flotillas. Peh-Meauo was near the town of Ho-si-wu, at which place the Japanese had a brush with the enemy. It was determined to leave a guard there to protect the line of communication, and, as the Americans were to share in this duty, Company C, Ninth Infantry, Lieutenant Brown commanding, was designated to remain.

The march on August 10th continued along the river for about 8 miles, and then on a road branching to the left, leaving the river, which made a bend eastward. At Ho-si-wu and vicinity there were evidences of the Japanese encounter with the Chinese, and beyond were found partially constructed mines crossing the road, intended to bar the advance. Upon leaving the river road the hardships of the march were even more severe than before. The road was worn down into the soil and was very dusty. The high banks and the fields of millet cut off what little breeze was stirring, and the dust hung in the air in stifling clouds.

Digitized by Google

Camp was made the night of August 10th at the village of Tsen-ping. Here for once, the only time on the march, the wagons failed to appear. Search was made for them by a troop of the Sixth Cavalry (Cabell's), which had joined the command the night of August 9th, after a forced march from Tientsin, and late in the day they were located at Matow, several miles further on, having kept on the river road and passed the camp three quarters of a mile to the east. The command was, however, sufficiently supplied with rations from the haversacks, and early the next morning, August 11th, a three-mile march was made to Matow, where the wagons were overtaken. The Americans remained at Matow until about 3:00 P. M., August 11th. Cannonading was heard during the day, the Japanese having engaged the enemy at Ching-Chia-Wan, a walled town about ten miles further on. Before resuming the march from Matow, sick and exhausted men were culled out to constitute a force of 100 Americans to be left with men of the other forces as another guard to the line of communications. An officer of the Fourteenth Infantry was detailed in command of the American detachment. Starting forward about 3:00 P. M., August 11th, the distance to Ching-Chia-Wan was covered by 9:00 P. M. Rain of the preceding night had laid the dust and the day was cloudy and cooler. The Ninth Infantry arrived within about a mile of its camping ground by 7:00 P. M., and had already settled for the night when it was moved on closer to Ching-Chia-Wan. Tung Chow, a walled city of considerable size and importance, was now within a short day's march. From Tung Chow the route to Pekin was to be directly westward, leaving the river. The place would therefore be a sub-base and point of transhipment from boats to wagons. The enemy was supposed to be there in considerable force and the walled character of the town was expected to give an opportunity for a stiff resistance, but the Chinese troops had evacuated, only slight resistance being offered to the Japanese upon their arrival on the morning of August 12th. The American column, upon leaving Ching-Chia-Wan, was guided into a roundabout road which increased the march considerably. This was said to have occurred by a mistake of the guide and the Ninth Infantry did not reach its camp near the gates of Tung Chow until nearly 11:00 o'clock A. M., although the direct distance from Ching-Chia-Wan was not over six miles. The day (August 12th) was a hot one as usual. A detachment of marines was sent at once to the Peiho River to occupy the ground where the supply depot was to be established, and the boats were brought up to that place. No duty of special importance was assigned to the Ninth Infantry at Tung Chow, and the regiment remained in camp until late in the afternoon of the following day. The

Digitized by Google

several parallel roads leading westward to Pekin were reconnoitered on the 13th by the allied forces, the Japanese taking the most northern ones, the Russians the very old stone-paved road, the Americans the road immediately south of the canal, and the British next to them on the south. It was agreed among the commanding Generals that the several forces should advance from Tung Chow along the several roads reconnoitered to a line about 7 miles west of the city, where the Japanese already had an advance force, and, having arrived on that line, there should be a conference to determine how the attack on Pekin should be made. Accordingly, after the reconnaissance on the American road, the infantry and marines were moved forward late in the afternoon, August 13th, the Fourteenth Infantry leading. The Ninth Infantry left camp about 6:00 P. M. A severe thunder storm came up and everybody was drenched. To add to the discomfort the guide made mistakes in the route and there was some retracing of steps, but the destination was finally reached about 12:30 A. M., August 14th, camp being made at a village named Kao-pei-tien. The conference of the Generals never took place, however. The Russians apparently moved forward from Tung Chow after dark, August 13th, and, pushing on beyond the line agreed upon, attacked the walls and gate of the west side of the city of Pekin during the night, or before daylight, August 14th. That morning, at daylight, a Japanese officer arriving at General Chaffee's Headquarters reported that the Russians were not in place, as they were supposed to be between the Japanese and Americans. General Chaffee ordered reconnaissance forward by the troop of cavalry, and, upon receiving a call for assistance, sent forward a battalion of the Fourteenth Infantry. That battalion, as appears from reports,[145] reached the walls of the city near the Tung-pien gate about 10:30 A. M., found the gate occupied by Russian troops, which were in much confusion, and motionless; and, after some fighting on the walls, pushed in through the crowd at the gate, followed by Reilly's battery, found a way along a side street and among buildings, worked westward, aided magnificently by the battery, cleared the Tartar Wall of Chinese riflemen, and, finally, about 3:00 P. M., attained a position nearly opposite the location of the legations within the Tartar City, so that the British who had advanced all the way from Tung Chow that morning, August 14th, and who had entered another gate of the east wall, further south, were enabled to march far in to the Chinese city without interruption, turn northward, approach the Tartar Wall without serious engagement with the enemy, and pass under the wall by the so-called "water gate" into the Tartar City, and to the

[145] Report of War Department, 1900, vol. i, part 9, p. 59, et seq.

Digitized by Google



Japanese Column beyond Peit-sang, China.



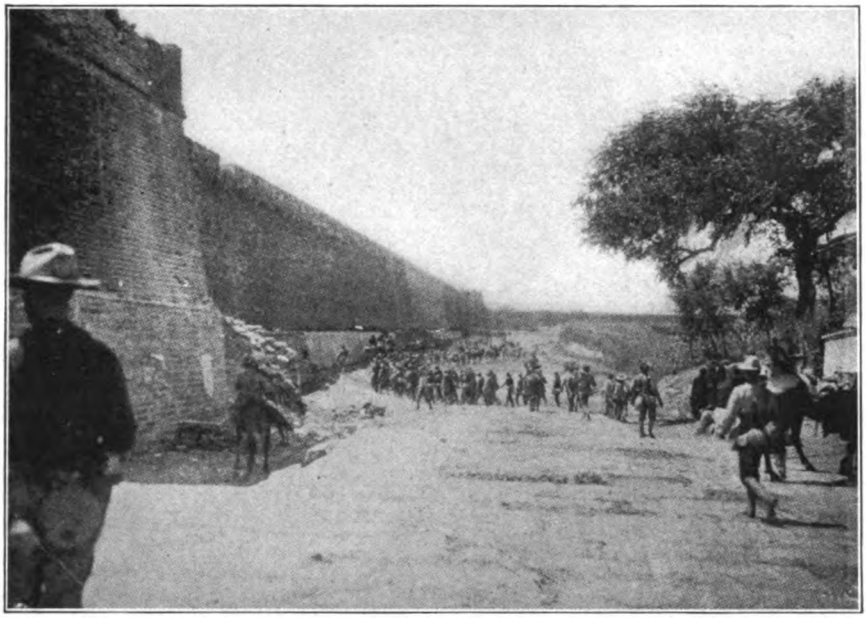
Russian troops blocking the gate leading into the Chinese City of Pekin.

Digitized by Google

legations just within, they being thus the first to enter the legations. General Chaffee and the battalion of the Fourteenth Infantry found their way in by the same gate an hour later.

It was the fortune of the Ninth Infantry to have only a minor part in this operation, which was the crowning achievement of an interesting campaign. The events of the day, so far as the Americans were concerned, all went too quickly and too easily at the last to give opportunity for more than one battalion, and that opportunity fell to the Fourteenth Infantry. The Ninth Infantry had already contributed its full share of strength and blood toward the rescue of the beleaguered Americans. Its part in the noble work had already been rendered, and it rejoices that the honor of leading the final advance fell, with the glory of success, to such an intrepid warrior and worthy comrade in arms as Colonel Aaron S. Daggett, Fourteenth Infantry. The operations of the Ninth Infantry during the day can be briefly stated. It was brought forward in support of Reilly's battery, leaving camp about 7: 00 A. M., witnessed the excellent work of the guns against the tower on the wall directly in front, and against the gate northward, where the Japanese were engaged; changed position forward with the guns; ferreted out "snipers" who were annoying the battery, and in the afternoon was brought, with one battalion of the Fourteenth Infantry, to the gate through which the leading battalion of that regiment had entered a few hours before. Delay was caused at the gate by the crowded condition of the streets within, and entrance was not effected for half an hour or more. By then the action within the city was practically completed and the regiment was marched to a location close to the south wall of the Tartar City, near the water gate, and halted. Two hours later, about 6: 00 P. M., an urgent order came from General Chaffee for the regiment to hurry westward along the foot of the Tartar Wall to the Chien-men gate and report to him, but upon arrival there the occasion for the call, whatever it was, had ceased, and return to the former place was ordered. Thus ended the relief of the legations. Officers passed in and out of the legation grounds during the evening, and the members of the American Legation Guard, marines, who had borne the hardships and the battling of the siege so heroically, fraternized with the soldiers and their comrades of their own corps. The evidence of the two months' struggle for existence which the legations had maintained were numerous and interesting. The happiness of the careworn people at being once more safe and protected was a delight to witness. There was a general feeling of satisfaction and thankfulness at the successful completion of such a notable expedition. There remained, however, a little more work to do

Digitized by Google



United States Infantry moving up to the gate. Pekin.



Pagoda, bridge and vicinity, in the vicinity of the gate entered by the United States troops, showing the dead bodies along the shore.

Digitized by Google

to stamp out the dying embers of war, to clear the city of all armed resistance. On the following day, August, 15, 1900, occurred one of the most spectacular events of history, the battling to gain possession of the palace of the Emperor. Quick appreciation of a situation, and promptness in action, characteristic of Americans, and exemplified to the fullest degree in General Chaffee, brought the American force to the front in this operation, that force entering into the fight alone and practically completing it so that the guardianship of the principal gate of the Forbidden City remained with the Americans during the entire period of foreign occupation of China. General Chaffee, in his report, says: "I was informed by Mr. Conger[146] that a portion of the Imperial City, directly in front of the Chien-men gate, had been used by Chinamen to fire on the legations, and I determined to force the Chinese troops from this position."

This determination was acted on with as much promptness as it was conceived, and early in the morning, August 15, 1900, four guns of Reilly's battery were placed on the Tartar Wall near the Chien-men, and the Chien-men itself, an enormous structure of brick and mortar, with galleries, one above another, was occupied by the marines. The Chien-men (Chien-men gate) stood in the Tartar Walla cross the paved thoroughfare which traverses the southern half of Pekin from the south toward the north, a fortress at the point where this thoroughfare passes through the great transverse wall separating the Chinese city (South Pekin) from the Tartar City (North Pekin). Within that gate Legation Street crosses east and west and beyond that is a smaller gate, the first gate of the Imperial City; 600 yards beyond the last mentioned is another, a fortress like Chien-men; beyond that a third, and next, the fourth, is the gate to the Forbidden City, which is the name of the Emperor's palace, buildings and grounds, storehouses, private apartments, gardens, treasuries and record depositories. This gate is also an enormous structure built as a fortress for the defence of the entrance. These gates all stand in walls broad and high, which extend to the right and left. The Tartar Wall is 60 feet thick at the base, 52 feet at the top, and is 40 feet high. On the broad top were walls for protection of riflemen along each edge; on the southern edge, six feet high, with loopholes, on the northern, three feet.

Reilly's guns on the Tartar Wall first cleared out a body of riflemen to the westward and then fired over the first gate and wall of the Imperial City at the next gate. The marines had one battalion in the topmost gallery of Chien-men, and another in the next, and strung along to the

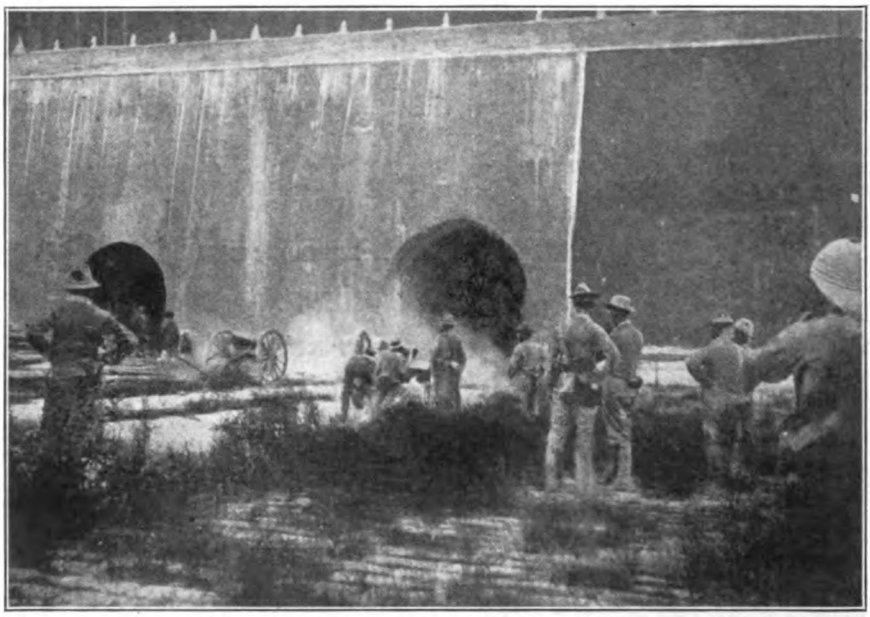
[146] Hon. Edwin H. Conger, United States Minister to China.

Digitized by Google

right and left on the wall. The Ninth Infantry was brought up from its camp of the night before, leaving camp about 7:30 A. M., and following the Fourteenth Infantry. The Chien-men being open, both regiments were marched in, being subjected to heavy rifle-fire as they passed through the gate and were placed in close column on the left of the road close up to the next wall. Here they were subjected to sharp-shooters' fire from the left and left front, but were protected from front fire by the wall of the Imperial City. The sharp-shooters' fire was replied to by a detachment of Company F, Ninth Infantry, under Lieutenant Naylor. The Fourteenth Infantry broke down the doors of the gate in the Imperial Wall by using beams of a rough chevaux de frise found there. Colonel Daggett and some of his mounted officers rode boldly in to reconnoiter, but were apparently not observed by the enemy posted in the galleries of the next gate, 600 yards further on. The enclosure in which they found themselves, about 100 yards wide, was bounded on each side by a long, low building with tiled roof, offering protection from flank fire, like a wall. Colonel Daggett ordered in one platoon of a company of the Fourteenth Infantry to deploy and open fire on the gate now in view. The second platoon was sent in soon after firing began. The two guns of Reilly's battery not on the Chien-men were brought up to fire through two of the doors which had just been battered down, and the Ninth Infantry Gatling gun, manned by a detachment of the Ninth Infantry, under command, at the time, of Lieutenant Corcoran, Sixth Cavalry, fired through the left door. Then began this most spectacular of battles. The guns on Chien-men, the battalions of marines in the galleries of Chien-men and on the Tartar Wall, the guns at the battered doors of the first gate of the Imperial City, the company of the Fourteenth Infantry within, all firing on the great gate and pagoda-like galleries, 600 yards to the front, across the paved court. There was a brisk reply for some time, and men were killed and wounded. Captain Reilly, commanding Battery F, Fifth Artillery, on Chien-men, was struck while observing the effects of a shot from one of his guns and died in a few minutes. A member of the Gatling gun detachment, Private Robert F. Walsh, Company C, Ninth Infantry, was killed in the gateway. First Sergeant George Bailey and Private Frank Fitzpatrick, company D, and Private Martin A. Silk, Company F, and Private George H. Siemens, Company K, were wounded. The Fourteenth Infantry suffered a loss of 4 killed and 14 wounded; the battery had one enlisted man wounded. The fire of the enemy was, however, inaccurate, and by the overpowering fire of the Americans, aided by flanking parties of the Fourteenth Infantry, sent along side streets, the fire was silenced in about one hour. The Four-

Digitized by Google

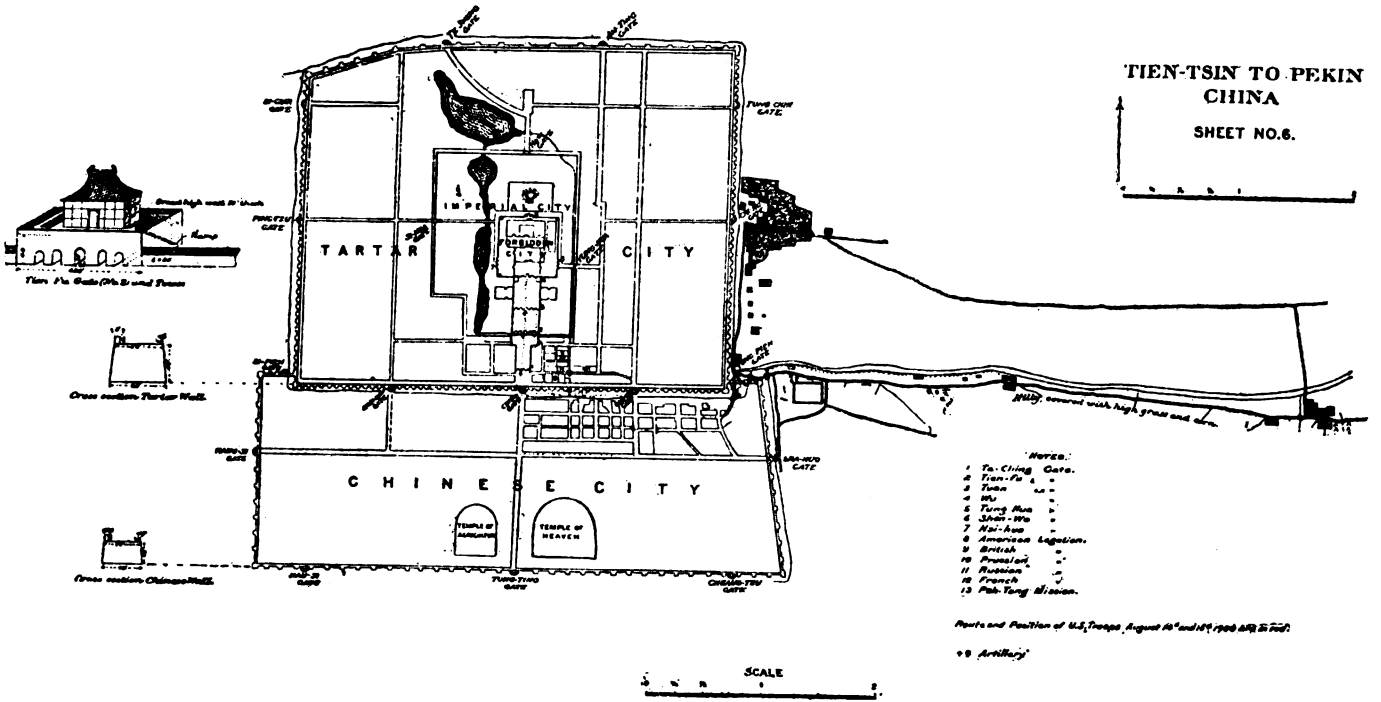
teenth and Ninth Infantry, the former leading, were then advanced to the next gate, the second of the Imperial City, and a similar method of assault was made on the third gate, except that artillery battered down the doors and the enemy's return fire from the next gate was much less. Companies E, F and H, of the Second Battalion, were placed on the walls and on the roofs of the buildings on the west flank to keep down the fire of snipers. As soon as the doors of the second gate were battered down the First and Third battalions of the Ninth Infantry (B and C companies



Breaking open the gates during capture of the Imperial City by the American forces. Pekin, China.

excepted), following the Fourteenth Infantry, were marched into the next enclosure, and four companies of the Ninth Infantry were sent to the upper galleries and on the wall of the second gate. The doors of the third gateway were now battered in by the artillery, and the fourth gate, which was the entrance to the Forbidden City, came under fire. The return fire from this was slight, if anything, and was soon silenced. Before a further advance could be made the operation was suspended. About 6: 00 P. M. the troops were withdrawn, the Ninth Infantry returning to its camp of the night before. The marines were left to hold the Chien-men. Just at the completion of these operations, Private James O. Hall, Company E, was accidentally shot and killed.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

The cause of the cessation of the advance into the Forbidden City, and the subsequent withdrawal does not appear, precisely, in reports, the only statement in regard to the matter being that at a conference that afternoon it was decided not to occupy the Imperial City.

Companies A and D, Ninth Infantry, were the ones first placed on the wall of the second gate, followed by companies K and M, the four companies being, in that position, under command of Major Foote. Captain Anderson (commanding Third Battalion) conducted companies K and M to the crest of the wall, and, after placing them in position, was ordered by the regimental commander to return and take command of the remaining companies of his battalion, I and L, in reserve in the court-yards below. The Second Battalion, Captain Palmer commanding, after entering the first gate, was placed on the long buildings on the west side of the enclosure to keep down the enemy's sharp-shooters, Company E, however, being changed by the commanding General to a similar location in the next enclosure a half hour later. Company B was wagon guard on that day and did not take part in the engagement. Company C at Ho-si-wu, Company G at Peit-sang.

During the withdrawal from the Imperial City, Company K acted as rear guard and closed the several gates as it passed out. The officer engaging in the operations of the 14th and 15th of August with the regiment were:

Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge.
Major Foote.
Captain Anderson.
Captain F. L. Palmer.
Captain Brewster (with wagon train on 15th).
Captain Sigworth.
Lieutenant Frazier.
Lieutenant Connell.
Lieutenant Rethers.
Lieutenant Munson.
Lieutenant Hammond.
Lieutenant Welborn.
Lieutenant J. B. Schoeffel.
Lieutenant Naylor (with wagon train August 14th).
Lieutenant Bumpus (attached to Company H).
Lieutenant Waldron (commanding company L).
Lieutenant Wallace.
Lieutenant Clarke (with wagon train August 15th).
Lieutenant Loeb.

Digitized by Google

Major Lee, Captain Ramsey and Lieutenant A. Smith, Jr., were on General Chaffee's staff, and were commended by him for efficiency. Major Lee's efficiency was reported as "conspicuous every day."

On August 16th the regiment was moved from its camp at the Tartar Wall, about a mile southward, to a camping ground in a large walled enclosure nearly half a mile square, in which were located the buildings and "compounds" of the Temple of Agriculture. The term "Temple of Agriculture" was frequently applied to the whole enclosure, not restricting it to the buildings alone. This enclosure was situated in the southern part of the Chinese city, to the west of the main north and south avenue or thoroughfare. Opposite it, east of the thoroughfare, was another large enclosure called "The Temple of Heaven" which was assigned to the British.

On August 17th companies E, F and H, under command of Captain F. L. Palmer, were sent to clear up the district in the Chinese city, west of the main thoroughfare, to search out armed parties, and quiet the populace. This district was subsequently assigned to the Americans to be patrolled, the necessary measures to insure good order and sanitary conditions to be under their control. Upon the arrival of German troops, some weeks later, the northern half of the district was assigned to them. Captain Palmer's battalion traversed the district to the western wall and left a guard at the city gate. The following day, upon a rumor of a possible attack there by Boxers, Company F was sent to re-enforce the guard at the gate.

August 19th, the decision against occupying the Imperial City having been reversed, the Ninth Infantry was sent to the locality where the fighting had taken place, August 15th, and placed in camp, occupying available buildings just outside the south gate of the Forbidden City. From that time till the return of the Emperor to Pekin, over a year later, Ninth Infantry sentinels guarded the gate to the Forbidden City.

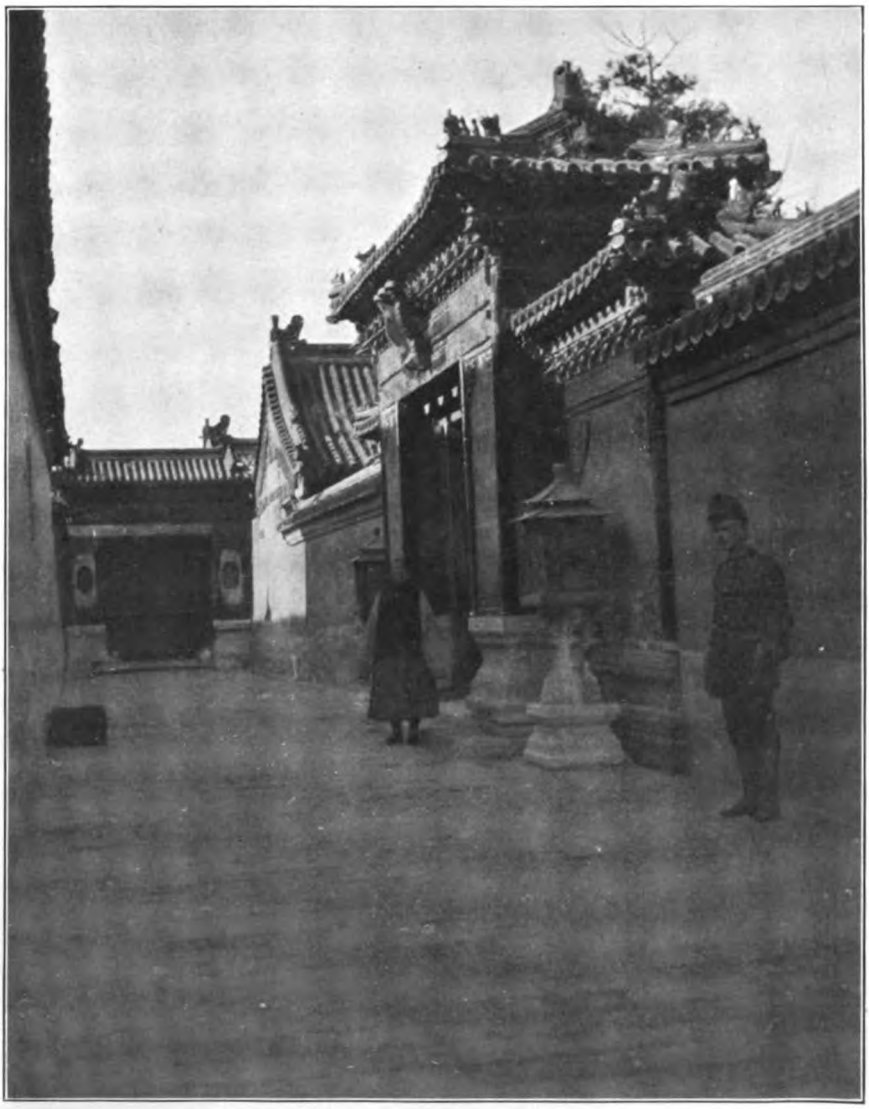
The question of making a formal entry into the Forbidden City was one about which there was considerable discussion, involving the foreign ministers as well as the Generals commanding the foreign troops. The ministers set forth the importance of giving full force to the exhibition of power displayed by the allies in reaching the city, and stated that unless they marched into the most sacred precincts of the Emperor's residence, the people at large would still believe in its inviolability and sacredness, a condition of mind which would interfere with a ready compliance with the demands of the powers for indemnity and protection in the future. A formal entry into the city was therefore determined upon. The ceremony was carried out on Tuesday, August 28th. The

Digitized by Google



The throne of Kwang-Hsu, Pekin, China, 1900.

Digitized by Google



A passageway to the apartments of the Empress Dowager in the Forbidden City, Pekin, China, December 27, 1900. (Photo by Capt. C. R. Noyes, Ninth Infantry.)

Digitized by Google

Generals and their staff, who alone marched in, mounted, were followed by representative detachments of their troops, a question of precedence between the Russians and Japanese being finally yielded by the Japanese to the Russians.

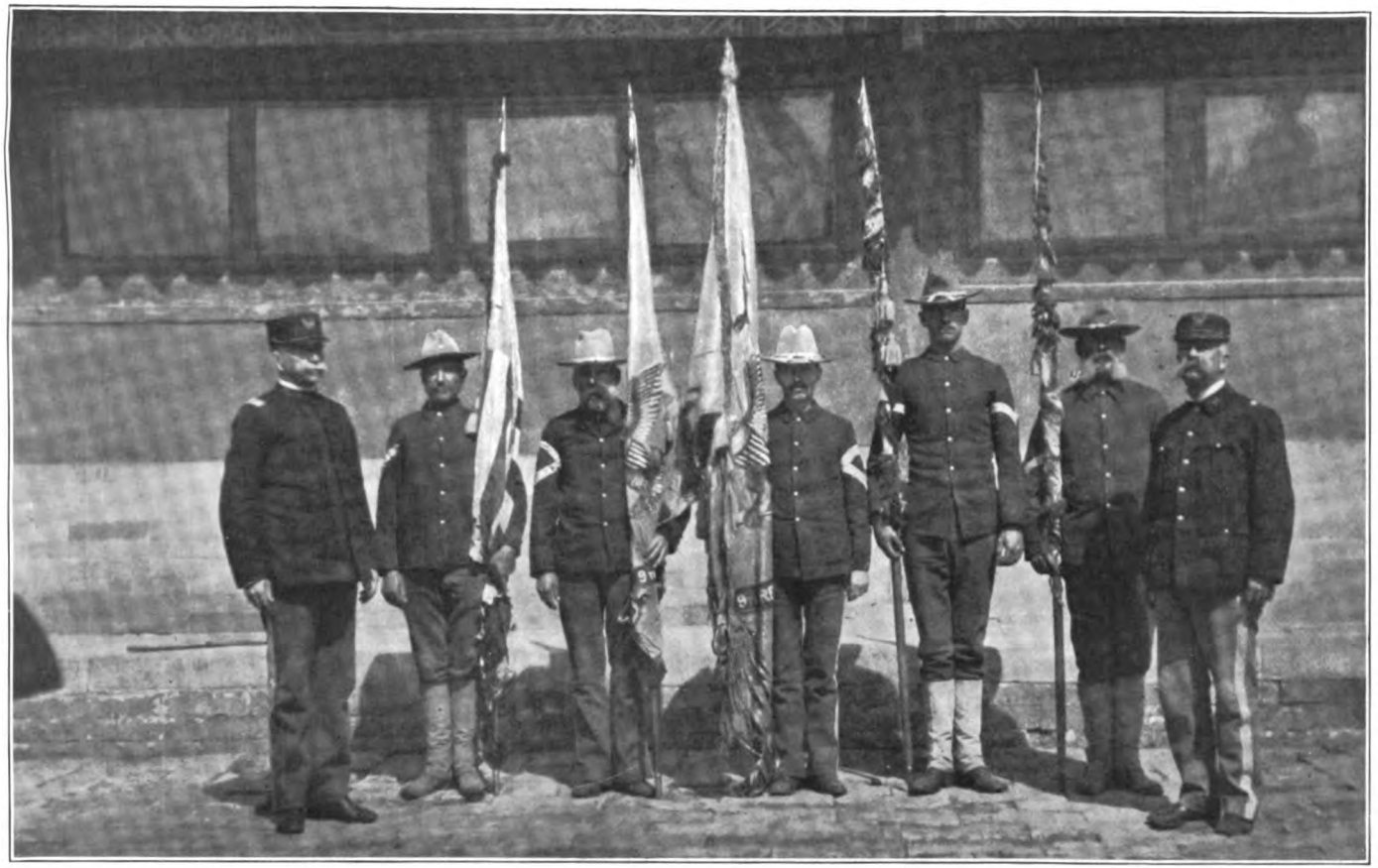
The order of entry and the number of men of each nation was as follows:

1. Russians.....800
2. Japanese.....800
3. English.....400
4. Americans.....400
5. French.....400
6. German.....250
7. Italian..... 60
8. Austrian..... 60

The American contingent was made up of detachments from all the organizations which participated in the march to Pekin, the Ninth Infantry sending a composite company of 100 men, made up of detachments from the companies present, Captain Anderson commanding.

There was a sombre magnificence about the temples and throne rooms which the troops found within the gates of the Forbidden City. There were cross walls and paved courts, marble staircases, brass dogs of great size and grotesque appearance seated at the foot of the approaches to the throne rooms, immense bronze urns, carved dragons, gilded thrones, highly-colored and ornate ceilings and roof timbers, heavy doors and handsome rugs, but all in unclean, unkempt condition. There were passageways between high walls, to the right and left of the paved courts, leading to apartments, some of which had the appearance of having been occupied. In one set of apartments were numerous clocks, some cheap and common, others ornamented and of great size. At the extreme northern end of the grounds was a garden and a tower. Old, decayed trees in the garden were propped up with all kinds of supports, their preservation having been regarded, apparently, as of supreme importance. The eastern part of the grounds, cut off from the court by a high wall, was found locked and impenetrable unless force was used. A number of attendants were about — old men whose faces evidenced their unutterable surprise at the sight of men so different from themselves — the European type, which they perhaps had never seen before. The ceremonial march was finished in an hour, and the soldiers returned to their camps. A number of officers lingered and examined some of the rooms and courts more carefully, but there were no entrancing scenes to meet their eyes — they came away with still more

Digitized by Google



Ninth Infantry colors carried in three wars — Cuba, Philippines and China. Taken at Pekin, China, 1901.

Digitized by Google

vivid impressions of Chinese massive walls and pretentious gateways. The American and European soldiers had now penetrated to the innermost precincts of the Imperial Palace; nothing had proved inviolable; the completeness of their victory could not be questioned. On that day, August 28, 1900, General Chaffee published to his command congratulations received from Washington by cable, as follows:

WASHINGTON, August 26, 1900.

CHAFFEE:

The President joins me in congratulations to you and the officers and men of your command on the brilliant achievement in which the courage, fortitude and skill of the American forces in China have played so honorable a part. While mourning for our fallen comrades, the whole country is proud and grateful for your great success.

ROOT.

The Ninth Infantry (entire regiment) served in China from July, 1900, until May, 1901. In the latter month all the United States forces in China, except Company B, Ninth Infantry, were withdrawn, and the eleven companies of the Ninth Infantry, with Headquarters, field, staff and band, were sent to the Philippines, leaving Company B as Legation Guard at Pekin.

The principal duties of the regiment after the relief of Pekin were:

1. Guarding the gate to the Forbidden City.
2. Provost guard in a section of the Tartar City (one company).
3. Provost guard in a section of the Chinese City (two companies).
4. Garrison and guard duty (5 companies) at Pekin (Camp Reilly).
5. Garrison and guard duty (two companies) at Tientsin (Liscum Barracks).
6. Guarding supply depots at Tung Chow and Tongku.
7. Convoys, patrols, and participation in minor expeditions.

The following list gives the names of all officers who served with the regiment in China, giving dates and principal duties:

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum. July 6, 1900, to July 13, 1900, the latter being the date of his decease on the field of battle, Tientsin, commanding the regiment until that date.

Colonel Charles F. Robe. About August 5, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded the regiment from date of joining (August 25, 1900), and Camp Reilly from the date the camp was organized, October 21, 1900.

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles A. Coolidge. July 6, 1900, to April 20, 1901, at which latter date he departed to the United States pursuant to telegraphic instructions from Washingotn, having been promoted Colonel

Digitized by Google

Seventh Infantry. Commanded regiment from July 13 to August 25, 1900. Provost-Marshal United States Section of the Tartar City, September 30 to October 16, 1900. Summary Court officer of Infantry troops at Camp Reilly.

Lieutenant-Colonel Morris C. Foote, Promoted Lieutenant-Colonel Ninth Infantry from Major Ninth Infantry, vice Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge. Was commanding Liscum Barracks, Tientsin, when promoted and remained there in command until departure of regiment, May 25, 1901.

Major Jesse M. Lee. July 6, 1901, to about October 30, 1901. Was transferred to Fifteenth Infantry August 7, 1901, information received about October 5, 1901. Commanding First Battalion, Ninth Infantry, to July 30, 1901. Acting Inspector-General on the staff of the Major-General Commanding after July 30, 1901.

Major Morris C. Foote. July 9, 1900, to July 30, 1901. Commanding Second and Third Battalions from July 13 to July 30, 1900. Commanding First Battalion after July 30, 1900. Commanding Liscum Barracks, Tientsin. Member of Provisional Govérnment, composed of representatives of the foreign forces, Tientsin.

Major James Regan. July 6 to July 29, 1900. Commanding Second Battalion until July 13th, when he was wounded at battle of Tientsin. Was sent to the United States Naval transport, Solace, at Taku anchorage, sailing for Nagasaki July 29, 1900.

Major Edgar B. Robertson. In China from about August 20, 1900, until January 31, 1902, arriving with a battalion of the Fifteenth Infantry. Transfered to Ninth Infantry and joined at Regimental Headquarters about October 15, 1900. Provost-Marshal in the United States Section of the Tartar City, October 18, 1900, until May 22, 1901. In command of Legation Guard at Pekin from the last date to date of his departure.

Captain Frank L. Dodds. Arrived in China about September 15, 1900. Rejoined his company at Pekin September 22, 1900. Commanded Second Battalion, and composite battalion at Camp Reilly. Acting Judge Advocate of China Relief Expedition October 25, 1900, to November 2, 1900.

Captain Charles R. Noyes. July 6, 1900, to July 29, 1900, on which date departed to Nagasaki on the naval transport Solace, and thence to United States, wounded. Returned to China December 2, 1900, reported at Regimental Headquarters December 18, 1900, regimental Adjutant. Adjutant Camp Reilly December 19, 1900, till its discontinuance May 19, 1901. Left China with regiment May 25, 1901.

Digitized by Google

Captain Robert H. Anderson. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded Third Battalion during march to Pekin and until October 27, 1900. Commanding Company A.

Captain Frederick L. Palmer. About July 19, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded Second Battalion during march to Pekin. Commanding guard at Tung Chow after October 3, 1900. Commanding Company I.

Captain Andre W. Brewster. July 6th to September 12th, 1905, having command of the United States Legation Guard, Pekin, since February 1, 1902. Commanding Company B, Provost guard duty in the United States District of Tartar City, Pekin.

Captain Frank DeW Ramsey. Regimental Quartermaster. Chief Commissary and Acting Chief Quartermaster China Relief Expedition during march to Pekin. In China from July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901.

Captain Mark L. Hersey. About September 10, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Arrived at Pekin and joined his company September 22, 1900. Commanding Company H, Provost guard duty in the Chinese City, Pekin.

Captain John M. Sigworth. July 6, 1900, to about March 20, 1901. Left company at Pekin on sick leave March 10, 1901. Commanding Company K, which was the company acting as guard of the gate of the Forbidden City, after October 21, 1900, when the remainder of the regiment was ordered to the grounds af the Temple of Agriculture.

Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller. July 6, 1900, to July 29, 1900, on which date departed for Nagasaki, Japan, on naval transport Solace, and thence to United States, wounded. Returned to China February 11, 1901, rejoining his company at Tientsin February 13, 1901. Commanding Company G.

Captain Francis H. Schoeffel. February 11, 1901, to May 25, 1901. Joined Company E as Captain, February 16, 1901. Commanding Company E.

First Lieutenant Francis H. Schoeffel. July 6, 1900, to July 29, 1900, on which date departed to Nagasaki, Japan, on naval transport Solace, and thence to United States, sick. Returned to China as Captain, February, 1901.

First Lieutenant Joseph Frazier. July 6, 1900, to about October 30, 1900. Leaving China with the Fourteenth Infantry, to which regiment he was promoted as Captain, October 9, 1900. Commanded Company H until October 1, 1900, and Company D temporarily.

First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton. July 6, 1900, to July 29, 1900, on which date he departed to Nagasaki, Japan, on naval transport

Digitized by Google

Solace, and thence to the United States, wounded. Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion.

First Lieutenant Thomas W. Connell. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion. Acting Regimental Adjutant July 13, 1900, to December 19, 1900.

First Lieutenant Harry F. Rethers. July 6, 1900, to about September 15, 1901, at which time he departed on Hospital Ship Relief and thence to the United States, sick. Commanded Company D.

First Lieutenant Benjamin M. Hartshorne, Jr. February 11, 1901, to May 26, 1901. With Company K from February 15, 1901. Commanding Company K at the gate of Forbidden City after March 10, 1901.

First Lieutenant Fred L. Munson. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Regimental Commissary. Depot Commissary at Pekin until January 26, 1901.

First Lieutenant Harold Hammond. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion.

First Lieutenant Ira C. Welborn. July 6, 1900, to April, 1902. Commanded Company I on march to Pekin. Assistant to the depot Quartermaster, and depot Quartermaster at Tung Chow from October, 20, 1900, to December 9, 1900. Depot Quartermaster at Chang-wan-tao from December 10, 1900. Transferred to Company B, and remained at Pekin as Quartermaster and Commissary of the Legation Guard after departure of the regiment.

First Lieutenant John B. Schoeffel. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded Company M.

First Lieutenant Benjamin P. Nicklin. About August 15, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Joined Company A at Pekin about August 25, 1900. Commanded Company E temporarily. Attached to Troop F, Sixth Cavalry, during expedition to Great Wall, March 27 to 30, 1901.

First Lieutenant William K. Naylor. July 6, 1900, to about April 15, 1901. Left Pekin in command of guard over general prisoners transferred to the United States April 7, 1901. Commanded Company F until date of departure.

First Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded Company L. In charge of detachment and regimental property at Tientsin from about August 10th to about September 5th. Rejoined company at Pekin September 9, 1900.

First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus. July 6, 1900, to May 26, 1901. Commanded Company C at Tientsin after the 11th of March, 1901. Duty with Company G and H temporarily. Commanded Company D from October 24, 1900, to February 11, 1901.

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant James P. Drouillard. About August 15, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Reported at Regimental Headquarters, Pekin, August 30, 1900. Temporarily attached to Company L and H. Commanded Company G at Tientsin from November 14, 1900, to February 14, 1901. and Company C from February 22, 1901, to March 11, 1901. Commanded detachment at Tongku from March 15, 1901, to April 11, 1901.

First Lieutenant Clifton C. Kinney. About November 10, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Joined Company E at Pekin November 18, 1900. Commanded Company E. Attached to Company K April 18, 1901. With Company K at the gate of the Forbidden City April 18, 1901., to May 10, 1901.

First Lieutenant George S. Simonds. About March 5, 1901, to May 25, 1901. Reported at Regimental Headquarters at Pekin March 6, 1901. Commanded Company D from March 7, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Fred R. Brown. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Commanded Gatling gun and Colt's gun detachment temporarily. Commanded Company C temporarily. Acting Battalion Adjutant First Battalion. Adjutant at Liscum Barracks from November 28, 1900.

Second Lieutenant Reuben Smith. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. With Company L. Left in charge of regimental property and detachment Ninth Infantry, at Tientsin, August 4, 1900, until about August 10, 1900. Rejoined company at Pekin August 21, 1900.

Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang. July 6, 1900, to about August 15, 1900. With Company I. Acting Adjutant Third Battalion July 13th. Sent to the Hospital Ship Relief at Taku after the battle of Yang-tsun, and thence to the United States, wounded.

Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron. July 6, 1900, to about August 30, 1900. Sent to Hospital Ship Relief at Taku about August 30th, and thence to the United States, wounded.

Second Lieutenant George W. Wallace. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. With Company E. Commanded company on the march to Pekin and later. Was attached to Company I and served with that company at Tung Chow after December 15, 1900.

Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr. July 9, 1900, to about April 20, 1901. Left Pekin, sick, April 18, 1901. Commanded mounted detachment until August 30, 1900. With Company A. Sick at Tientsin October 10, 1900, to November 5, 1900. Temporarily attached to Company H and K, serving at gate of Forbidden City, with latter company, from December 11, 1900, to April 18, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Willis P. Coleman. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901.

Digitized by Google

With Company G. Commanded Company G at Pei-tsang and at Tientsin until November 14, 1900. Commissary at Liscum Barracks, Tientsin, from October 11, 1900, and Quartermaster from December 9, 1900.

Second Lieutenant Robert S. Clark. July 6, 1900, to about November 5, 1901. With Company B. Remained at Pekin with Company B Legation Guard upon departure of regiment. Commanding detachment of Company B, which relieved Company K at the gate of Forbidden City May 10, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Abraham U. Loeb. July 6, 1900, to May 25, 1901. With Company D. Acting Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, August 9, 1900, to October 27, 1900. In charge of prisoners from October 26, 1900, to January 22, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Paul M. Goodrich. About July 25, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Arrived in China with Fourteenth Infantry. Joined Ninth Infantry August 20th upon appointment as Second Lieutenant. Attached to Company K, serving with that Company at the gate of the Forbidden City, August 20, 1900, to December 11, 1900. With Company H after December 11, 1900.

Second Lieutenant Thomas M. Bains. About September 10, 1900, to May 25, 1901. Joined regiment at Pekin September 22, 1900. With Company M. Temporarily attached to Company D, December 28, 1900, to January 4, 1901, and to Company A, April 11 to 26, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Emery T. Smith. February 11, 1901, to May 25 1901. Joined regiment at Pekin February 15, 1901. With Company F. Commanded Company F after April 7, 1901.

ATTACHED.

Chaplain Walter Marvine, United States Army. July 6, 1900, to about April 5, 1901. Assigned to Ninth Infantry, 1901. Served at Tientsin until about January 10, 1901. Then at Pekin.

First Lieutenant Marion M. Weeks, Eleventh Infantry. July 6, 1900, to February 22, 1901. Commanded Company A temporarily. With Company A until September 18, 1900, and Commanded Company C from October 16, 1900, to February 22, 1901. Commanded detachment at Tongku. Relieved from duty with regiment and China Relief Expedition February 22, 1901, order dated February 17, 1901.

During the month, from August 15th to September 15th, the strength of the China Relief Expedition was considerably increased by the arrival of troops from the United States and two brigades were organized. The

Digitized by Google

Ninth Infantry was assigned to the First Brigade, which was placed under the command of Brigadier-General James H. Wilson, United States Volunteers. The only other troops brought forward to Pekin, however, were the remainder of the Third Squadron, Sixth Cavalry. Others arriving remained at Tientsin (First Squadron, Sixth Cavalry, at Yang-tsun), and the Headquarters of the Second Brigade was established there, Colonel Moale, Fifteenth Infantry, having command.

The minor expeditions and convoys in which the regiment, or parts of it, were engaged were as follows:

August 21st Companies B, D and I acted as escort to a wagon train conveying missionaries and their families from the United States Legation to Tung Chow, and thence to Tientsin, B and D companies continuing on to Tientsin as escort to the boats, Company I returning to Pekin August 20th. Companies B and D returned from Tientsin September 4th.

September 16th an expedition was undertaken by a combined force of English and Americans, supported by a small force of Japanese, and a German command, consisting of eight companies of infantry and six guns, against the Pa-ta-chow Temples, about ten miles west of Pekin. It had been the custom of the Foreign Ministers to rent buildings there as summer residences, and the British government had, not long before the Boxer outbreak, built a summer residence at the same locality for the British Minister. The Boxers were reported to have assembled there in considerable numbers, and the expedition was undertaken to dislodge them. The American contingent comprised two battalions Ninth Infantry, one battalion Fourteenth Infantry, two field guns, and a small detachment of cavalry, under the command of Brigadier-General James H. Wilson, United States Volunteers.

The Ninth Infantry contingent comprised companies A, E, F and H, and the Third Battalion. The provisional battalion, composed of the four companies named, was commanded by Captain F. L. Palmer, the Third Battalion by Captain Anderson. In so far as the two battalions operated together the command devolved upon Captain Anderson, who was the senior officer of the regiment present. The Ninth Infantry strength was 17 officers and 437 enlisted men.

The British and American troops operated together, the Germans and Japanese separately. Considerable opposition was anticipated, but very little was met with. The Americans marched about 2:30 P. M., September 16th, proceeded to the Chien-men, and thence westward, passing out of a west gate of the city. The march was continued until about 7:45 P. M., camp being made at Lu-kou-chiao, at which place

Digitized by Google

the British had arrived about an hour and a half earlier. The orders for the following day contemplated an early departure from camp, about 2:00 A. M., a march of one portion of the command to a position on the west side of the temples, where, by climbing the hills, the force would find itself in rear of the defensive position, and an advance of the remainder of the command, from the southeast up the valley, for a frontal attack, or to hold the enemy in position until the flank movement had been accomplished. The Ninth Infantry battalions, except Company E, which was rear guard, Lieutenant Nicklin having command, was assigned to the latter column. The Fourteenth Infantry and British troops secured their proposed position on the hills west of the temples without resistance, and opened fire on the Boxers, who fled. There was therefore no resistance in front, and no fighting by the Ninth Infantry. There were evidences in the town of Boxer occupation with some preparation to make resistance, but, doubtless, the Boxers lacked organization and discipline, and the whole number seen did not exceed four or five hundred. On September 18th the command returned to Pekin, marching from about 9:00 A. M. until 3:00 P. M., at which time the Ninth Infantry arrived at their quarters in the Imperial City. Company K, under Captain Sigworth, escorted the field guns during this return march.

On September 30th Company G changed station by marching from Pie-tsang to Tiéntsin. The service of this company at Pie-tsang, extending from August 6th to September 30th, consisted in outpost duty and protection of the bridge. One company of the Eleventh Regiment of Japanese infantry, and one company of the Seventh Rajputs (British), were also stationed at the same place. The camp of G Company was on the right bank of the river near the bridge. It was correctly laid out and kept in good condition, and excited favorable comment from numerous passers of all nations. A force of 3,000 Boxers was found at one time by a Japanese patrol about seven miles from camp, but they came no nearer, and no annoyance was given the camp at any time. On one or two occasions riflemen (snipers) in the village, near the river, fired on passing junks, for which the Japanese took revenge by very drastic punishment, and nothing further of the kind took place.

October 1st Company C proceeded on junks from Ho-si-wu to Tientsin. On August 24th Lieutenant Waldron, of this company, who had rejoined it from Pekin after the relief of the legations, was wounded in the left hand, either by "snipers," or by a stray shot from indiscriminate firing by foragers, and was obliged to again relinquish command to Lieutenant Brown. The wound was a severe one. He was sent to the

Digitized by Google

United States for treatment, and did not again join the regiment, being assigned to duty in the United States upon recovery, and then transferred to another regiment on promotion. Company C continued its journey by rail on October 3rd from Tientsin to Tongku, and took station at the latter place to act as guard at the Quartermaster's depot.

Company I marched from Pekin to Tung-chow on October 4th, taking station as guard at the Quartermaster's depot at that place.

These changes and others, in October, were brought about in rearrangement of troops consequent upon withdrawal of a large part of the American forces from China. The order for the reduction of the expeditionary force was issued September 29, 1900, but, prior to the departure of any of the troops, General Chaffee, accompanied by United States Minister Conger and general officers of the allied armies, reviewed the American force in Pekin. This ceremony took place on the open ground east of the Temple of Agriculture on October 3, 1901, General Wilson having command. The Fourteenth Infantry (2 battalions), Ninth Infantry (3 battalions), and First Regiment of Marines (2 battalions), were drawn up in line of masses in the order named from right to left. Next in line was the light battery and the cavalry on the left. The ceremony went off well, and favorable comment was made by Minister Conger and the foreign Generals. One notable accomplishment among the officers, just prior to the reduction of the expeditionary force, was the organization of a society to perpetuate the associations formed during the expedition. Meetings of officers were held October 1, 2, and 3, 1900, resulting in the adoption of a name for the society, a constitution, officers, etc. The name adopted was "The Military Order of the Dragon"; the officers elected were as follows:

President, Major-General Adna R. Chaffee, United States Volunteers.

First Vice-President, Captain B. H. McCalla, United States Navy.

Second Vice-President, Captain John T. Myers, United States Marine Corps.

Secretary and Treasurer, Captain Frank DeW Ramsey, Ninth United States Infantry.

Registrar, Captain Grote Hutchenson, Sixth United States Cavalry. An executive committee was also elected. Membership was classed as "Active," "Hereditary" and "Honorary." Eligibility for the first class was fixed as follows: "All officers of the United States Army, regular, volunteer, and acting assistant surgeons, and authorized volunteer staff officers, who served under orders in North China between June 15, and October 1, 1900, and all officers of the Army, Navy and Marine Corps, who served under orders in North China, or in the Gulf

Digitized by Google

of Pechili between June 15 and October 1, 1900, and the representatives and diplomatic officers of the United States at Tientsin and Pekin during said period," to be members upon payment of fees and dues.

For the second class: "Male descendants of twenty-one years of age or over, of those who are eligible to membership of the first class," to be members upon election as afterward provided. For the third class: "All members of Foreign Diplomatic Corps at Pekin during the interval between June 15 and October 1, 1900; all military officers of foreign military services there present or engaged in the operations for the relief of Tientsin and Pekin, and civilians actively engaged against the enemy during the siege of the legations, or accompanying the relief expedition on the march," to become members on election by a committee.

"Provided: That all members of kindred societies, organized by officers of the allied forces engaged, shall be honorary members without further action of the committee."

It was expected that this society would, in years to come, have a standing and historical interest similar to the well-known Aztec Society and the Military Order of the Loyal Legion. Its alliance with other kindred societies of other nations would undoubtedly tend to preserve acquaintance and friendships, which might otherwise be lost, and keep open the door for very desirable friendly exchanges, of a social and professional nature, with foreign officers.

The Ninth Infantry, the Third Squadron Sixth United States Cavalry, and Light Battery F, Fifth Artillery (now Tenth Field Battery), were ordered to remain in China.

The regiment of marines, the Fourteenth Infantry, the battalion of the Fifteenth Infantry, and of the Third Artillery, and one squadron of the Sixth Cavalry, were sent to the Philippines. The marines were the first to leave, marching from Pekin on October 4th. The battalion of the Fifteenth Infantry, at Tientsin, was the last to get off, sailing from the anchorage at Taku on December 2nd. General Wilson, General Barry and a number of officers who had served on General Chaffee's staff, also departed in this period. On October 21st the Fourteenth Infantry left Pekin, and the Ninth Infantry Headquarters, with 5 companies, moved to the camp in the grounds of the Temple of Agriculture, vacated by the former regiment. The order terminating the brigade organization and assigning stations and duties of the troops remaining in China was issued October 21st, the paragraph on the latter subject reading as follows:

6. The following disposition of troops of this command is ordered with a view to stations for the ensuing winter:

Digitized by Google

A. Light Battery F, Fifth Artillery, its present camp in grounds of Temple of Agriculture.

B. Cavalry Squadron, present camp in grounds of Temple of Agriculture.

C. Headquarters, Band, and Companies A, D, E, F and M, Ninth



Some Ninth Infantry officers in winter camp in Temple of Agriculture grounds. Pekin, China, 1901.

Infantry, present camp of Fourteenth Infantry in grounds of Temple of Agriculture.

D. Company B, present station of Foote's battalion, Ninth Infantry, and for duty as Provost guard in American section of Tartar City.

E. Company K, south gate of Forbidden City and for duty as Provost guard in American section of Tartar City.

F. Companies H and L in American section of Chinese city and for Provost guard of said city.

G. Company I, Tung Chow, temporarily, while necessary to maintain guard at that place for stores; later, with headquarters of regiment.

H. Company G, Tientsin.

L. Company C, Tongku, until the Quartermaster's depot there is

Digitized by Google

broken up, when it will proceed to Tientsin and be reported to the commanding officer at that point.

J. Troop L, Sixth Cavalry, for patrol duty of American section of Tartar city between the hours of 7:30 A. M. and 4:30 P. M.

Troop L, Sixth Cavalry, for patrol duty of American section of Chinese city between the hours of 7:30 A. M. and 4:30 P. M.

The cavalry will operate from camp in the Temple of Agriculture, under system to be arranged by troop commanders with Provost-Marshal of the section.

K. The movements necessary to comply with Clause C will be completed by 8:00 A. M., Clauses F and J by 7:30 A. M., the 21st inst.

The stations and duties thus assigned remained practically the same throughout the winter.

On October 21st, the day of departure of the Fourteenth Infantry, an order from Expedition Headquarters constituted all troops in Pekin a single command, the station being designated as Camp Reilly, Colonel Robe commanding. All troops in Tientsin constituted a single command, the station being designated Liscum Barracks, Major Foote commanding. The posts at Tongku and Tung Chow were assigned as sub-posts of Liscum Barracks, and Camp Reilly respectively. The supply depots and hospitals at Pekin, Tientsin, Tung Chow and Tongku, remained separate, to be under the direction of the Commanding General.

While there was a number of small expeditions by the United States Cavalry in September and succeeding months, and numerous expeditions of a minor nature by the other allied forces, there were only two in addition to those heretofore described in which detachments of the Ninth Infantry took part. The first consisted of 31 enlisted men of Company E, under Lieutenant Kinney, accompanying as cavalry reconnaissance under command of Captain W. W. Forsyth, Sixth Cavalry, the purpose being to patrol the district of country south of Pekin, which had been allotted to the American force for police control. The following marches were made: December 17th, to point 3 miles from south gate of Pekin. December 18th, to Matow, 25 miles; December 19th, to Ho-si-wu about 22 miles; December 20th, to village 6 miles southeast of Ho-si-wu and return, 12 miles; December 21st, to Mo-cho-kiau, 20 miles; December 22nd, to Agriculture Park, Pekin, 16 miles. Total distance about 100 miles. The second was also chiefly a cavalry expedition, the commanding officer being Lieutenant-Colonel Theodore L. Wint, Sixth Cavalry. Company D, Ninth Infantry, Lieutenant Bumpus commanding, and Lieutenant Bains attached, the company, being increased to 100 men by detachments from companies A, E, F and M, participated. The expedi-

Digitized by Google

tion was undertaken to overawe the inhabitants of a district southeast of Pekin, about 21 native Christians having been murdered in that direction near the town of Mafang. The command marched at 8:10 A. M. December 28th, and arrived at Matow in the afternoon, the infantry reaching camp about 6:30 P. M., distance 27 miles. December 29th, crossed the Peiho River on the ice and proceeded to Hiang-ho, distance 11½ miles. December 30th, returning to Hsi-chi, distance 8 miles; December 31st to the Peiho River, opposite Tung Chow, distance 13 miles; January 1st to Agriculture Park, Pekin, distance 18 miles. Total distance 77½ miles. When the command arrived at Hiang-ho a German force was found operating in the vicinity. The murders had been investigated and arrests made by the German officers and no action was taken by the Americans.

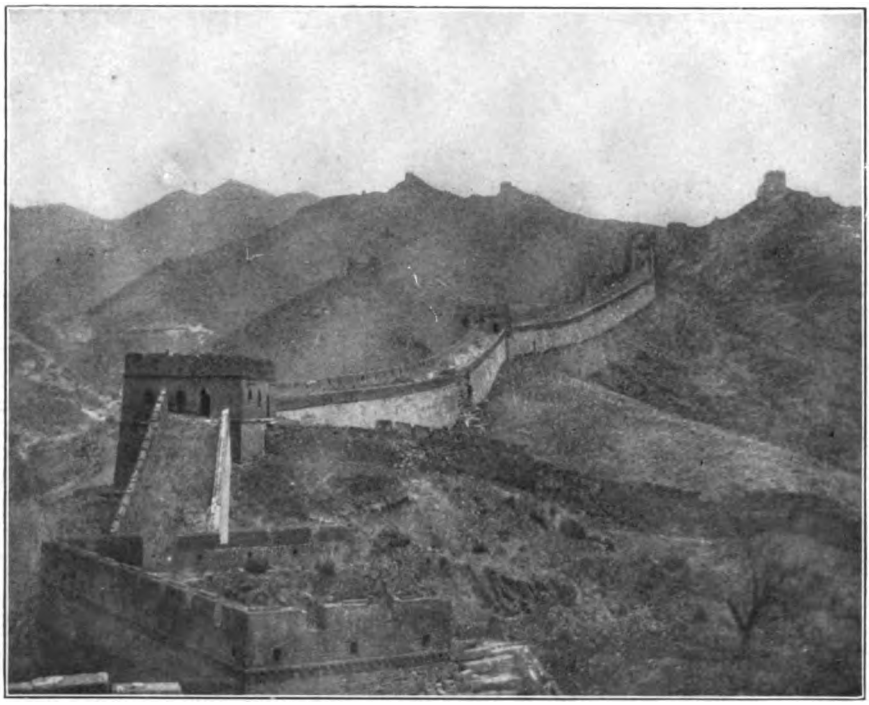
On August 27th, while Company E was doing guard duty at the Chien-men, a fire which originated from the cooking arrangements of a British signal detachment consumed the great pagoda-like superstructure of the gate, destroying one of the most notable features of the city. An investigation was ordered by General Chaffee, and the American guard exonerated from all blame.

The guard duty of the regiment over imperial palaces, at the earlier period of the occupation of Pekin, placed it in a position to be blamed for the removal of articles of value, and the regiment suffered some opprobrium in consequence. It was censured, unjustly, but the censure had the effect of holding it to the true standard of probity which its best friends might wish it to have. The duty performed in guarding the main entrance to the Forbidden City was most unique. There all visitors were halted to show that they had the authority of the American commanding General to enter. Foreign Ministers, Generals of all the foreign armies, distinguished travelers must pass the Ninth Infantry sentinel at the gate. An American officer invariably accompanied the parties. The uniqueness of the situation was appreciated and aptly stated by a well-known writer and lecturer who visited Pekin in August, 1901, a year after the relief of the legations. Even then, long after the departure of General Chaffee and the troops of the China Relief Expedition, sentinels of a Ninth Infantry company were no duty and a Ninth Infantry officer gave the necessary authority to enter. Here is the description by the traveler:

"Awed by the savage frowning splendor of this 'Gate of the In visible' we draw near to demand admission, wondering what manner of guardian will confront us at the low tunnel-like portal. We should have not been surprised had we been repulsed by a monster or a dragon.

Digitized by Google

No sentry would be too fantastic or too terrible for such a portal — and yet there stands a sentinel too fantastic for belief — no grinning, awful creature, no awe-inspiring giant, but simply a smiling, tired-looking, khaki-clad Hoosier boy, who hails from some unknown little town on the banks of the Wabash, very far away. But there he stands with power to admit or to exclude, for the time being, virtually dictator of



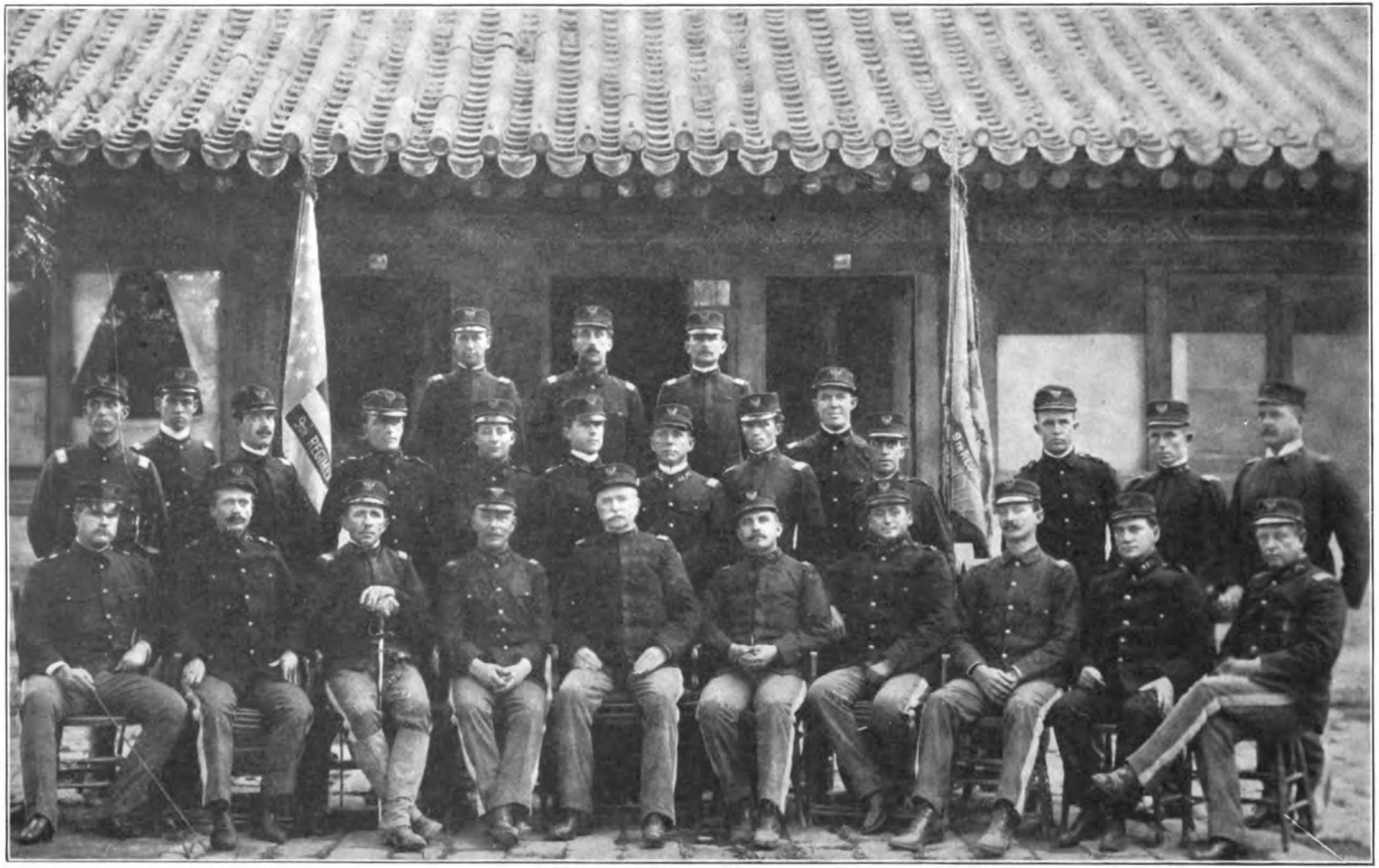
Great Wall of China.

the situation, in absolute control of the palace of the Emperor of China, who claims to be the Son of Heaven, and master of the lives and destinies of a third part of the inhabitants of the earth. But, as the sentry confidentially informed us, 'It is a darn dull job.'"

After the departure of the Fourteenth Infantry, and the establishment of Camp Reilly and Liscum Barracks, the routine of service soon became regular and familiar. Guard drill, and ceremonies were carried on as is customary at military posts.

There was a great deal to interest both officers and men, however, at all times, when duties did not demand their presence in camp. The

Digitized by Google



Officers of the Ninth Infantry. Pekin, China, 1901.

Digitized by Google

strange scenes of the city, the foreign soldiers, and the Chinese people, all offered sources of entertainment. The principal places of interest visited were the main avenue where trading was in progress, the gateways, the Temple of Heaven, the Great Buddhist Temple, the Forbidden city, the Winter Palace, the Summer Palace, and as remote places as the Ming Tombs and the Great Wall. It was necessary, however, for all



Gate leading to Avenue of Animals, en route to Great Wall.

nations to place restrictions on their soldiers in the matter of roaming about. The regular system of passes was in vogue for the American soldiers, and only under most unusual circumstances were the soldiers of one nation permitted to go into the districts controlled by others. This was essential to preserve proper order, and as an aid to fixing responsibility for infraction of Provost regulations. There were, occasionally, evidences of national prejudice exhibited by soldiers, or rather national pride, national feeling leading to arrogant words or looks which were quickly resented, and unless restrictions on the freedom of the men had been made, these occurrences would have been more frequent and serious.

Digitized by Google

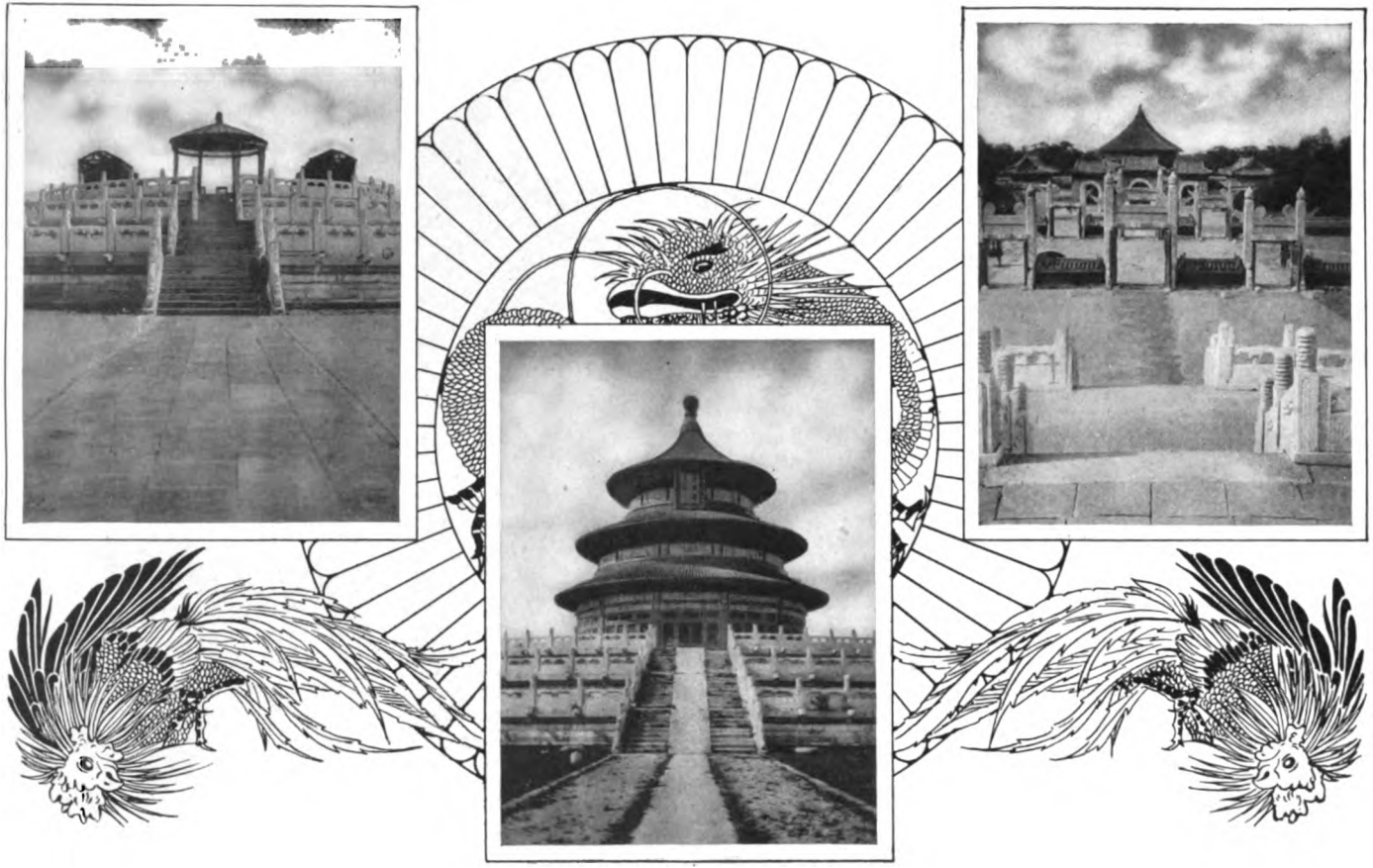
A great deal was done by all nations to promote friendliness and good feeling among the officers. The British main camp at Pekin was in the grounds of the Temple of Heaven, a walled enclosure comprising several square miles of meadow and woods lying in the southern part of the Chinese city, east of the main avenue. The Agriculture Park was in the southern part, west of the main avenue. Only a broad open plain, trav-



Principal north and south street in Chinese City. Pekin, China, looking north toward Chenmen, December 27, 1900. (Photo by Captain C. R. Noyes, Ninth Infantry).

ersed by the paved road, intervened between the two parks. The British and Americans were therefore near neighbors and there was, on this account, as well as from consanguinity and the common language, inducement to sociability. The American officers were on a number of occasions delightfully entertained by the British, and they in turn often came to the Temple of Agriculture to spend an evening at the club. On these occasions the Ninth Infantry band provided music, a troupe of Chinese jugglers entertained the party with their tricks, refreshments were served, and the evening ended with songs and dances and a good

Digitized by Google

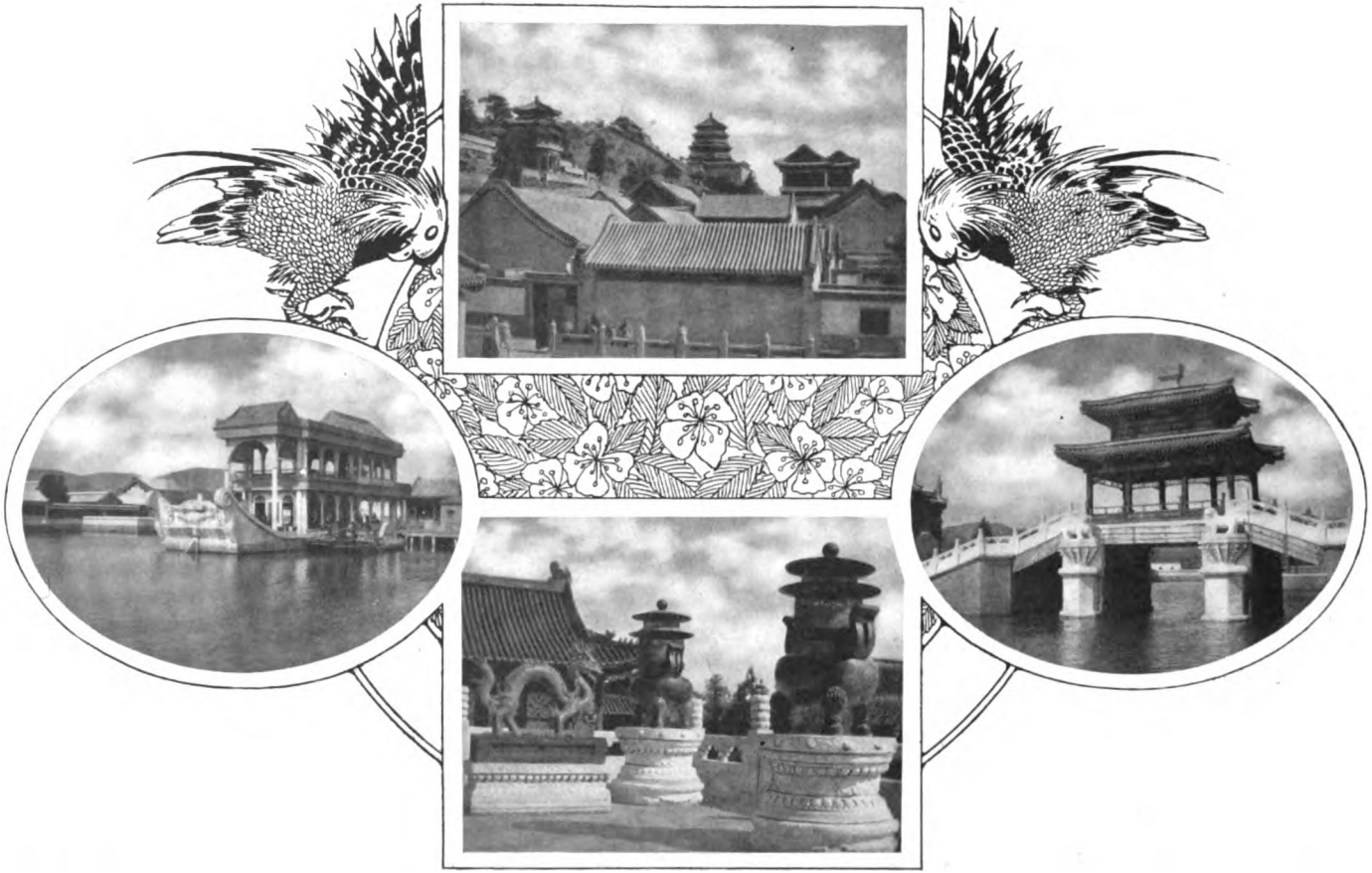


Temple of center of the universe.

Temple of Heaven.

Approach to Temple of Heaven. taken from Temple of Heaven.

Digitized by Google



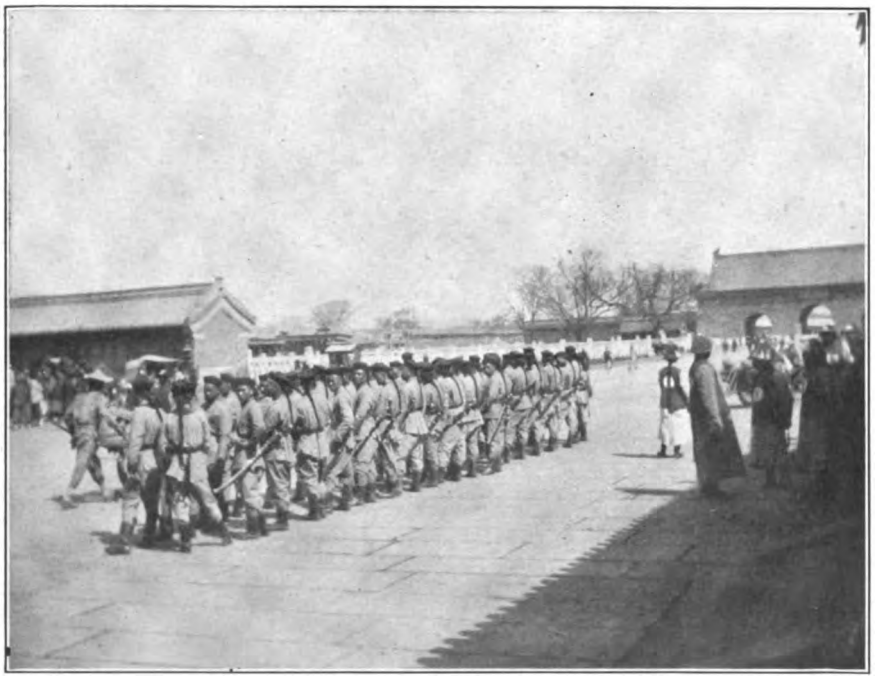
Marble Boat, Summer Palace.

Summer Palace.

Marble Bridge, Summer Palace.

Digitized by Google

time generally, which was sometimes even uproarious. German staff officers who spoke English were also frequently guests on these occasions. At Tientsin the troops of all nations were quartered in the foreign concessions. There also British and American officers fraternized most easily, and no differences occurred among the soldiers. With other nations there was sometimes a little friction, but nothing of a very serious nature. At Pekin there were during the winter several entertain-



Company of Imperial Chinese soldiers.

ments or ceremonies given by different nations, which were, in their nature, truly characteristic of the people who gave them, and each, in its way, thoroughly enjoyable. Thus the Germans, upon the arrival of Count Waldersee on October 17th, received him with much ceremony and parade of troops, in which all nations were invited to participate. An American guard of honor lined a part of the route from the Hata-men to the Winter Palace, over which he passed, proceeding to the latter place, where he made his headquarters. Companies K and M were united to form one company of a battalion of honor, which received him at the Winter Palace. At a later date, December 26th, a presentation

Digitized by Google



A TIENTSIN GROUP OF OFFICERS, 1901

Lieutenant Barrett, Hong Kong Regiment.
Lieutenant Drouillard, Ninth United States Infantry.
Captain Forteath, Commissariat.
Lieutenant Welborn, Ninth United States Infantry.
Robertson, Engineer, Victorian Naval Contingent.
Captain Beatty, First Bengal Lancers.
Paymaster Tracy, Victorian Naval Contingent.
Lieutenant Brown, Ninth United States Infantry.
Lieutenant Moberley, Hong Kong Regiment.
Lieutenant Coleman, Ninth United States Infantry.
Lieutenant Saxton, Third Bombay Cavalry.

Digitized by Google

of colors was made an occasion for further military display. All natives were invited to attend, and General Chaffee sent a battalion of the Ninth Infantry and a squadron of cavalry. Place was given this detachment to witness this ceremony and to see the march past of the German troops. Finally, upon Count Waldersee's request, General Chaffee ordered his soldiers to march by in review, which was creditably done.

The English entertained with amateur comic opera, games, military sports and contests. The presentation of a comic opera, ridiculing the Empress Dowager of China, and staged in the Temple of Heaven, excited considerable unfavorable comment among the home people in England, but the impropriety, if there were any, did not occcur to those who enjoyed it, for it was merely a burlesque of all the experiences of the relief campaign, and was given in a building which had been appropriated for public use, situated in the great park to which the term "Temple of Heaven" was applied generally.

A football tournament was given by teams from all the British regiments, the games being played in open ground outside of the wall of the Tartar City on the west. Tents were pitched and excellent refreshments served, officers of all nations attending as guests.

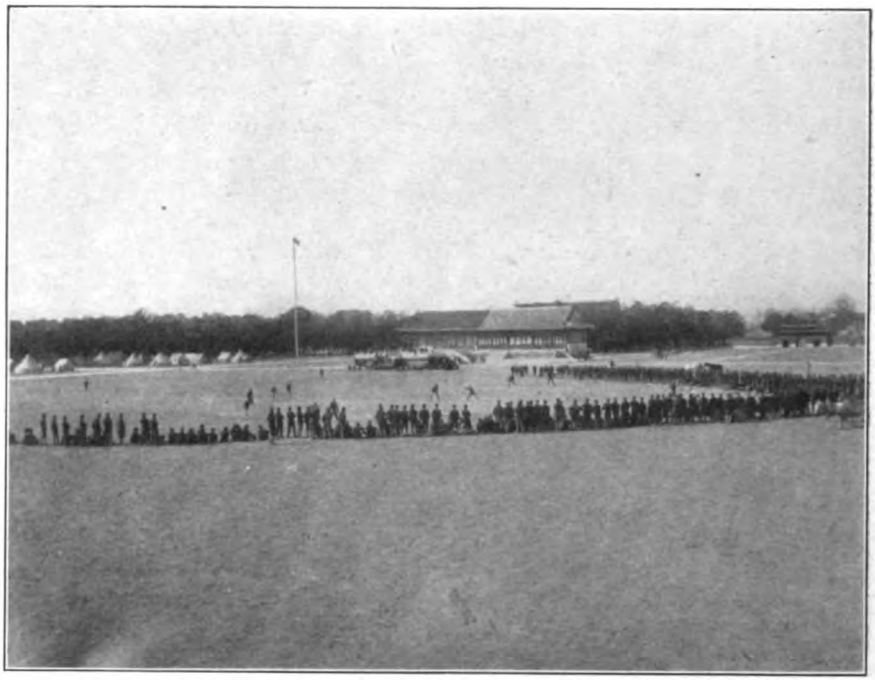
In April a series of much more elaborate military exercises and sports were given by the British on the grounds of the Temple of Heaven. Among the events were competitive infantry drills, bayonet exercises and rifle calisthenics, tent pitching competitions, artillery driving, tent pegging, hurdle jump by cavalry, and tug-of-war contests, all very interesting and enjoyable. These contests lasted for several days. Officers and enlisted men of all nations were in attendance, as were also members of the legations, with ladies, giving as gay an aspect to the scene as might have been witnessed in a European city.

The French entertainment was a fete champetre — an evening affair — gotten up with the characteristic French love for artistic effects. A marble bridge near the Winter Palace, and a lake in the French district, gave opportunity for beautiful effects in lighting with Chinese lanterns. Two barges on the lake were rigged with mast and spars, and were decorated with innumerable lanterns, and the border of the lake was outlined with lanterns. A collation was first served in what was known as the Rotunda, an adjunct of one of the Imperial palaces, to which the Generals and their staffs, senior officers and members of the legations were invited, after which all these streamed forth across the marble bridge, each person carrying a lantern on the end of a light bamboo stick, in Chinese style, and proceeded to a raised platform from which a procession was viewed as it marched through one of the main

Digitized by Google

avenues toward them. The bands of music, the prancing grey horses of chasseurs, the rumbling artillery and bodies of infantry coming on with songs, was an interesting spectacle. The evening closed with fireworks and booming of cannon, in a mock assault on the tower at Coal Hill.

The Americans made no effort at a public entertainment. The English officers took some interest in the frequent games of baseball,



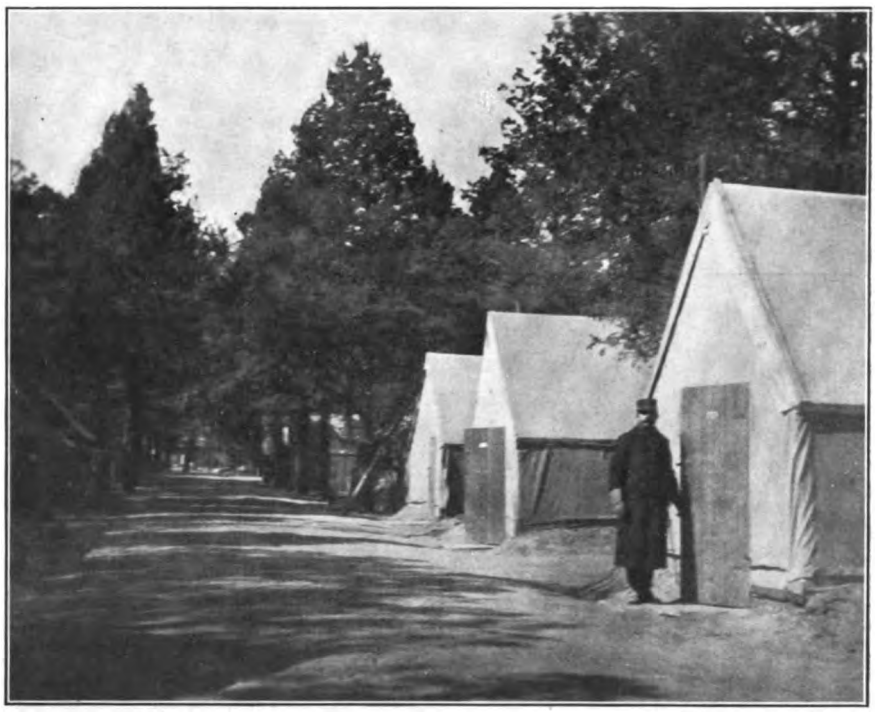
Final game of series for camp championship between officers vs. enlisted men Ninth Infantry, Pekin, China, February, 1901. Won by enlisted men. Score 4–3.

with which the American officers and men entertained themselves. Each branch of the line was represented by a baseball nine, and there was also enough good players among the Hospital Corps men and the officers to enable each of them to organize a nine. As all were about equally matched the rivalry was well worked up, and gave considerable entertainment.

The companies in the Agricultural Park were camped in Sibley tents, having Sibley stoves set on brick foundations, and iron grates placed in the latter, permitting the use of coal. This system of heating proved

Digitized by Google

fairly satisfactory, but not entirely so, for the fires became clogged and required a good deal of attention, while much of the heat was lost in the brick foundation. Small sheet-iron stoves, such as are constructed with a view to consuming soft coal, would have been very much more satisfactory, and not much, if any, more expensive. More of the tents in



Officers' tents, Ninth Infantry, Camp Reilly. Grounds of Temple of Agriculture. Pekin, China, March 16, 1901. (Photo by Captain C. R. Noyes, Ninth Infantry.)

use were so much damaged by sparks as to be unserviceable at the end of the winter, and two or three fires occurred in which the tents and most of the contents were destroyed. The officers and the Ninth Infantry Headquarters' offices were provided with hospital tents which were framed. The floors were bricked, and by the use of felt rugs on the floors, and matting to line the tent walls, they were made quite tight and comfortable. Terrific sand storms, however, swept down from the mountains and filled the air with dust which penetrated the tents and covered everything.

Digitized by Google

The water used in bathing was extremely hard, and ordinary soap had very little effect in cleaning the skin. The hands became grimed and chapped, and remained so all winter. A distilling plant was kept in operation to furnish drinking water, which undoubtedly accounted largely for the good health of the command through the winter.

The companies located in the American districts of the Chinese and Tartar Cities (Pekin) were quartered in Chinese compounds, where the buildings furnished excellent accommodations for officers and men.

Mr. Conger, the United States Minister, and Mr. Squires, the First Secretary of the Legation, gave a number of very pleasant dinners to



Party of officers visiting Li Hung Chang, at Pekin, China, 1900.

which officers of the regiment were frequently invited. General Chaffee often entertained, a New Year's reception, and a birthday dinner in April being the occasion of general invitations to the Americans in Pekin. The news of his appointment as Major-General in the regular army, advancing him to that grade from Colonel of cavalry, was received February 7, 1901, and caused great satisfaction among the officers who had been serving under his command in China.

An International Club at Pekin, in which officer so fall nations joined, gave a place of meeting and entertainment for its members and played an important part in promoting good feeling.

A few officers enjoyed the novelty of dining with Chinese mandarins, the service of the companies, as Provost guard in different sections

Digitized by Google

of the city, bringing about more or less intimate acquaintance between the officers and the influential, well-to-do Chinese.

The Americans won the respect and trust of the Chinese people in their district very readily after taking charge, the people returning to their homes and avocations, and merchants opening their stores very generally. The difficulty which the Germans and others experienced in gaining the confidence of the people in adjoining districts was very noticeable. When the time came for the American troops to withdraw, numerously signed petitions were presented by Chinese residents, requesting that the Americans remain as long as any foreign occupation continued, and expressing their appreciation of what had been done for them. One of these petitions, addressed to Captain John C. F. Tillson, Fourteenth Infantry, who remained in Pekin after the departure of his regiment, having charge in the district guarded by companies L and H, Ninth Infantry, contained the following:

"After the relief expedition the city was divided into different sections and we were under your jurisdiction.

"We are profoundly grateful because we have been so well treated.

"You have, under the wise government established by you, justly punished criminals, given us letters of protection and saved us molestation from bad soldiers, and enabled us to lead peaceful lives.

"You have opened charity eating-houses and saved the poor from starvation.

"You have employed policemen to prevent crime; gambling houses and opium dens have been closed, and thieves driven from the district.

"We have been made very happy, and are grateful to you because you have protected us so kindly." [148]

A petition to Major Robertson, Ninth Infantry, who had charge in the part of the Tartar City under American control, Company B, Ninth Infantry being, quartered there, read as follows:[149]

"We, the people of the American section consider ourselves fortunate to be protected under the glorious flag of the United States, a flag which has indeed secured us better protection than we ever had before. In addition to the commercial prosperity and individual privileges we have enjoyed since the arrival of the allied forces at Pekin, we have been favored with many beneficial institutions such as police station, charity house, board of health, vaccination, etc.

"The court of Provost-Marshal, which seldom, if ever, leaves innocence without recognition and the guilty unpunished, is the center of

[148] Report of War Department, 1901, vol. i, part 6, p. 492.

[149] Report of War Department, 1901, vol. i, part 6, p. 494.

Digitized by Google

justice. The watchfulness with which the American policemen perform their duties has protected many a merchant from being robbed by foreign soldiers and native rascals. Everything moves on as smoothly as could be desired.

"Thousands of homeless people, who otherwise would starve to death, are being fed by the American charity house. The excellence of the present sanitary arrangements, which was once so foreign to us, can not but win our admiration. We believe that Pekin has never enjoyed such good health in all her history as she is enjoying at present. In short, as a conquered people, we are more privileged than we are entitled to. We earnestly and sincerely request you, the American authorities, not to leave us until the time when all the nations withdraw their forces."

This petition, which was said to have been signed by 5,600 leading merchants and prominent citizens, was dated the 28th day of the first month in the twenty-seventh year of Emperor Kuang Hsu.

On a number of occasions through the winter the enlisted men were entertained by lecturers, usually American or English missionaries, who related their experiences during the uprising, or gave a review of the causes of the Boxer movement, and explanations of other political matters in China. These were often especially interesting, coming from men who had been long residents in China.

The percentage of sick in the regiment while in China was very small. During the winter months pneumonia was one of the chief causes of addition to the sick report, and caused the death of eight or ten men of the regiment. One officer at Camp Reilly, Captain Richard B. Paddock, Sixth Cavalry, succumbed to the disease. The American soldiers and marines who were killed during the siege of the legations, and those who were killed during the fighting on August 14 and 15, 1900, were buried at the legation grounds. The removal of their bodies to the Agriculture Park, preparatory to sending them to Taku to be transferred to the United States, was done with fitting ceremony, on two days at the end of March, those that were buried in the grounds of the American Legation, including the remains of Captain Henry J. Reilly, being first removed, and then the bodies of the marines, who were killed during the siege from the Russian grounds where they had been buried. Those bodies, and the bodies of men who had died during the winter, interred in the Agriculture Park, were transferred to the railroad on April 3rd, with proper escort, the route being lined with troops, men standing at order arms and presenting arms as the funeral train passed. Lieutenant Naylor had command of a detachment of the regiment, acting as guard on the train to Tongku, the bodies being placed on board

Digitized by Google

the transport Egbert at Taku. The remains of the men who fell at the battle of Tientsin in July, and of those who died there afterwards, were also shipped to the United States at the same time.

It was customary among the allies to announce to all commands in advance any proposed artillery firing, such as target practice or salutes. Thus the Germans announced a salute to be fired January 18th on the wall between Hata-men and Chien-men, that day being coronation day of His Majesty, the Emperor of Germany. Another was announced for January 27th, the birthday of the Emperor. The death of Queen Victoria occurred January 22, 1901, and upon the official announcement thereof the British fired half-hour guns. All flags of the allies were half-masted for a week in her memory. An announcement from the Japanese read as follows: "On February 11th, at noon, the Japanese artillery will fire a salute of 101 guns on the great wall near Chien-men, in honor of the 2561st anniversary of the creation of the Japanese Empire." On March 18th the American battery fired half-hour guns in memory of ex-President Benjamin Harrison, whose death was announced.

One of the most important events in the history of the foreign occupation of Pekin was the completion of the railroad into the city, and the establishment of a railroad station within the walls. Prior to that time the railroad had been barred from approaching nearer than about seven miles; but the allies, upon making repairs during the fall of 1900, continued it into the city, an entrance being effected by simply tearing down the wall and making an opening large enough for a track. The station, for the time being, was established near the gateway of the Temple of Heaven. The railroad from Paoting-fu, owned by French and Belgium capitalists, was also pushed into the city, entering through the west wall and making a terminus at the Chien-men. The first train from Tientsin to enter the city of Pekin arrived there on December 18th, 1900. The control of the railroad was first in the hands of the Russians, then the Germans, then the English, and was finally turned over to the representatives of the English bond holders, when the Chinese operatives were once more installed with English superintendents.

Throughout the winter the occupation which interested the officers more than any other, outside of their duties, was the seeking out and bargaining for interesting curios, beautiful works of art, furs and silks, which were found for sale on all the main thoroughfares of the city. Considerable rivalry was engendered to find the oldest, most interesting curio, the finest piece of red lacquer work or carved jade, the handsomest fur, the most beautiful embroidery. Often the finest articles would be found in the dingiest back store-room of a dusty, smoky, unattractive

Digitized by Google

shop. Many beautiful articles were exhibited on the street by itinerant salesmen, and frequently the prices were very low. Those who were well read in Chinese art were able to select and choose understandingly and secured very valuable articles, especially in the line of porcelains and cloisonné ware. Frequently there were embroideries and similar works of art which had the marks of royal ownership. How they had come into the possession of these street venders was an unanswerable question, but certainly the anarchy of war and invasion had given the opportunity to some of the submerged ninety-nine hundredths who had been unable to flee from the invaders, to enrich themselves at the expense of their rulers, and they had seized the opportunity to do so.

One very unfortunate occurrence was the burning of the Winter Palace. This occurred on the night of April 17, 1901. It was Count Von Waldersee's Headquarters, and many valuable German records and documents were doubtless destroyed, but the saddest episode of the fire was the death of the German Chief of Staff, Major-General Von Schwarzhoff, who, having once escaped from the building, re-entered it to save property or records and was overcome by the heat and smoke. He was a man of pleasing personality. Several of the officers had met him officially and socially, and his death caused profound sorrow.

As the winter months passed, and negotiations between the Powers and the Chinese Government progressed toward a solution of the questions of state arising from the Boxer uprising, the regiment, in common with other troops in China, looked forward to removal from Chinese territory. The Ninth Infantry had regained health and strength by its winter service in a temperate latitude, and losses had been filled by the arrival of recruits. It was in good condition for further active service, but rumors were occasionally afloat that it would be returned to the United States. These rumors probably had no foundation whatever. Other rumors, for which perhaps there was some reason on account of the dilatory methods of the Chinese in consummating agreements with the powers, were to the effect that the regiment would be removed to Tientsin or the seashore, and held there in camp. Finally, however, in April definite information was received that the regiment would return to the Philippines.

Since January work had been in progress constructing barracks for the Legation Guard of 150 men. A suitable location had been secured near the former legations. It lay between Legation Street and the wall of the Tartar City, not far from the Chien-men. There substantial walls were constructed on the west side and along Legation Street, and

Digitized by Google

the buildings for the officers and men, and the necessary storehouses, etc., for a complete post were begun.

On April 1, 1901, General Orders No. 15, Headquarters China Relief Expedition announced that upon withdrawal of the United States forces from Pekin, Company B, Ninth Infantry, increased to 150 enlisted men, would constitute the Legation Guard and Major Robertson was detailed as the commander. Captain Brewster commanded the company, and Lieutenants Welborn and Clark were the subalterns. The order gave explicit instructions in regard to the duty of the guard, and in regard to its supplies and the post equipment. All enlisted men of Company B, having less than one year to serve, and not intending to re-enlist, were transferred to other companies of the regiment and enough men were transferred in to make the necessary 150. A little prior to this date General orders were received from the Adjutant-General's Office, Washington, announcing the Act of Congress of February 2, 1901, increasing the army and changing the organization of infantry regiments in some minor particulars. Six Sergeants and 10 Corporals were authorized for each company. Two Color-Sergeants were added to the non-commissioned staff of the regiment, Sergeants John White and Oscar F. Winters receiving the first appointments. The law placed the rank of the Regimental Commissary at the grade of Captain, and authorized one Second Lieutenant for each battalion as Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary. Lieutenant Munson was continued in office as Acting Regimental Commissary, pending the appointment of a Captain. The total number of officers in an infantry regiment, including a chaplain, became, under the new law, 51.

As soon as General Chaffee received definite information from Manila of the date of departure of transports from that port to receive the troops, he issued General Order No. 17, dated April 28, 1901, No. 18, dated May 1, 1901, and No. 19, dated May 3, 1901, giving full and definite instructions relative to the discontinuance of the China Relief Expedition, the transportation or marching of the troops to Tongku and the embarkation for Manila. In accordance with these instructions, Captain F. L. Palmer's Company (I) marched to Pekin from Tung Chow, all stores and property of the United States having been previously removed from that place. The march was made on May 3rd, leaving Tung Chow about 8:00 A. M., and arriving at the Agriculture Park about 4:00 P. M., distance marched about 16 miles. Camp was made with the companies already there. On May 10th, 12:00 o'clock, noon, Company B marched from its quarters in the Tartar City to the Agriculture Park, turning over the care of its district to a detachment of troops designated by

Digitized by Google

Field Marshal Waldersee. Earlier in the day 50 men of the company under Lieutenant Clark were sent to the gate of the Forbidden City to relieve Company K, and that company, at noon, marched to Agriculture Park. At the same hour companies H and L marched from their quarters in the Chinese city to Agriculture Park, turning over their districts to detachments designated by Waldersee. The regiment was thus assembled at Agriculture Park, except companies C and G, which re-



Shelter tent camp of Ninth Infantry. At Tong Ku, China.

mained at Tientsin and made preparations for their departure from that place direct to Tongku. All the companies arriving in Agriculture Park were placed in camp, except Company B, which took quarters in the buildings from which stores had been removed. This company at once assumed all the duties of the Legation Guard (May 10, 1901).

The original order designated Sunday, May 12, 1901, at midnight, as the date and hour for the discontinuance of the China Relief Expedition, but in consequence of the non-arrival of the transports at Taku, a postponement was necessary until Sunday, May 19, 1901. The additional time gave opportunity for more perfect arrangement of the details of departure. The cavalry, the light battery, the pack train and the wagon trains left Camp Reilly about May 5th to march to the seacoast.

Digitized by Google



Ninth Infantry leaving Tong Ku, China, May 25, 1901.



Ninth Infantry leaving Tong Ku, China, May 25, 1901.

Digitized by Google

Upon their departure from the park the Ninth Infantry escorted them as far as the gate and saluted as they passed out. The British Bag-Pipe Corps from several of the regiments were present also, to do them honor, and numerous British officers said good-bye. Lieutenant-General Sir Alfred Gaselee and the officers of the British forces had joined in giving a farewell "smoker" to the American officers on the evening of April 27th, at the Temple of Heaven.

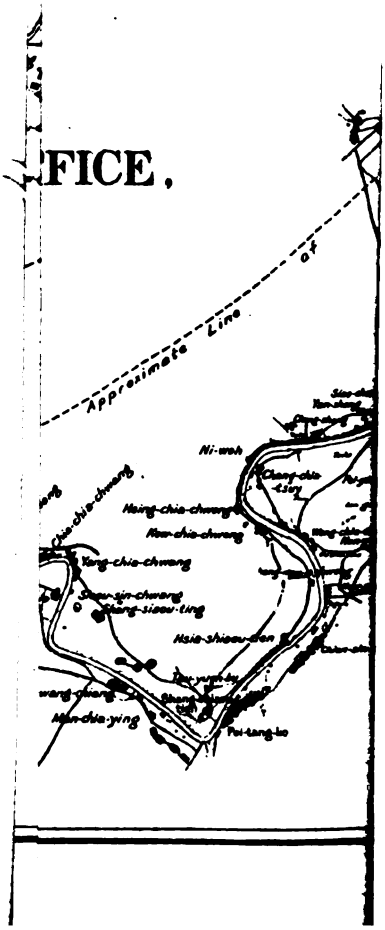
The Ninth Infantry was ordered to proceed to Tongku by rail. May 22nd was set as the day of departure, and all arrangements were so thoroughly made that there was no confusion or delay. The large tents, hospital and sibley, had been taken down, packed, and shipped several days before, and the regiment was in bivouac in shelter tents. On the morning of the 22nd this camp was struck at the sounding of the General; the blanket rolls were made, the grounds policed, and the busy camp of a few days before, which had been the home of so large part of the regiment through the winter, passed from view. The regiment marched to the railroad station at 7:00 A. M., boarded the cars at once, and was ready to bid farewell to Pekin, its strange people, its dust, and its great walls. Many English officers, a number of German and Japanese officers, and a few of other nations were at the station to say good-bye. The British bag-pipes (Indian) and a Japanese brass band were there to sound their parting salutes. Members of the American Legation were also on hand, so the departure was signalized by many expressions of goodwill, and good wishes, and the men's cheers, as the train started, gave evidence of their own good spirits. The journey to Tongku was made without special incident. Companies C and G proceeded there from Tientsin the same day, arriving early in the day, and the Pekin command reached their camping ground about 5:00 P. M. Three days were spent in camp, and embarkation took place on May 24th, 25th and 26th. The tide and the stage of the water over the bar exercised a controlling influence over the question of the hour of starting from Tongku. Companies A, D, E and M were sent off at 3:00 P. M., May 24th; Headquarters, field, staff and band, and Companies F, G, H, I and L, at 5:45 A. M., May 25th. Companies C and G embarked on the 26th. Lighters were used to convey the troops down the river to its mouth, four miles, and eight miles off shore to the anchorage.

Headquarters, field, staff and band, and the nine companies first named above, were assigned to the chartered transport Indiana, Companies C and G to the Sumner with the cavalry. The Indiana sailed at 10:50 P. M., May 25, the Sumner at 6:00 P. M., May 27, 1901.

The China campaign was ended.

Digitized by Google

FICE,



Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

List of killed in action, wounded, died of disease, etc., campaign in China.

KILLED IN ACTION, DIED OF WOUNDS, MISSING.

Officers:

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum.

Company A:

Private George K. Buckley.
Private John A. Potter.

Company B:

Corporal Richard B. Slater.
Private John McPartland.
Private Myron C. Miller.
Private Gottfried Svenson.

Company C:

Private Robert B. Golden.
Private Barney Gonyea.
Private James J. O'Neil.
Private Robert E. Walsh.

Company D:

Corporal Silas A. Christenberry.
Private John H.Porter.

Company E:

Private James O. Hall.

Company F:

Private John J. Dreher.
Private Oscar Olsen.
Private Casper Schwertfeger.
Private Axel Skogsberg.
Private James B. Taylor.

Company G:

Corporal Stephen O'Dea.
Private Clyde J. Jamison.
Private Fred E. Rieffennacht.
Private Dewey Rogers.
Private John P. Smith.

Company M:

Private Joseph Fritsch.
Private William H. Webb.

Digitized by Google

WOUNDED.

Officers:

Major James Regan.
Captain Charles R. Noyes, Adjutant.
Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller.
First Lieutenant Louis B. Lawton, Battalion Adjutant.
Second Lieutenant Frank R. Lang (at Tientsin July 13, 1900, and at Yang-tsun, August 7, 1900).
Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron.

Company A:

Corporal Arnold Peruzzy.
Private John J. Dimond.
Private Martin Dunphy.
Private George F. Murphy.
Private John Seymour

Company B:

Corporal Michael Conroy.
Corporal John Gallant.
Private Patrick Cox.
Private Robert Crawford.
Private Clarence J. McBride.
Private William S. Rowley.
Private Arthur W. Ruggles.
Private Frank W. Southworth.
Private Henry E. Stillings.
Private Harry Van Leer.

Company C:

Sergeant Romeo T. Perry.
Sergeant Joseph A. Dory.
Sergeant Adelbert Walker.
Corporal James R. Burton.
Corporal Peter Savage.
Corporal Richard W. Webb.
Corporal Samuel F. Whipps.
Musician Harry K. Ellis.
Private John D. Closson.
Private Ulysses S. Jumper.
Private Henry J. Scharer.
Private Robert H. Von Schlick.

Digitized by Google

Company D:

First Sergeant George Bailey (at Tientsin, July 13, 1900, and at Pekin, August 15, 1900).
Sergeant Edward Gorman.
Corporal Sherman E. Jackson.
Private Albert Fitzpatrick.
Private Frank Fitzpatrick.
Private David J. Kennedy.
Private Thomas L. Maloney.
Private Joseph Munch, Jr.
Private William Murphy.
Private Fred E. Newell.
Private Carroll L. Pingree.
Private Joseph Ryan.

Company E:

Corporal Daniel J. O'Connor.
Private William Gilbert.
Private Joseph McMahon.
Private Patrick J. Murphy.

Company F:

Sergeant Michael O'Brien.
Corporal Frank M. Leonard.
Corporal Gustave Bartz.
Private Arthur Ables.
Private John P. Dimond.
Private David H. Hammond.
Private Francis J. Magee.
Private David A. Murphy.
Private Harry A. Norton.
Private Frederick E. Shoecraft.
Private Martin A. Silk.
Private Orin C. Weston.
Private Edward Wright.

Company G:

Corporal Denis Moriarty.
Corporal Thomas H. Curren.
Private Loda B. King.
Private Philip Wubnig.
Private Walter F. Coleman.
Private William L. Partlon.

Digitized by Google

Company H:
First Sergeant Wesley Bickhart.
Corporal Albert Juhl.
Corporal Jacob Mengel.
Corporal Gerhart Heckerman.
Corporal George F. Hoar.
Private Louis Frish.
Private David Morris.
Private Ralph Richards.
Private Charles Riley.
Private John McSweeney.
Private Andrew Roden.
Private Jesse Westervelt.
Company T:
Private William J. Field.
Company K:
Private George H. Siemens.

DIED OF DISEASE, DROWNED, ETC.

Company A:
Private Arthur N. Salisbury.
Private Patrick Tafe.
Private Edson Work.
Company B:
Private Jake H. Ammerman.
Private Charley Collins.
Private Ezekiel E. Hale.
Private Henry Kirkland.
Private David McDaniel.
Private Morton Stalmaker.
Company C:
Corporal John Conway.
Private William Brayton.
Company D:
Private John J. Knitter.
Company E:
Private William Allen.
Private William Burgen.
Private James H. Burke.
Private Peter Savery.
Private August B. Stone.

Digitized by Google

Company F:
Private Oliver Ackerman.
Private John Plugge.
Private William Talbot.

Company G:
Private Albert Henig.
Private William Kelly, (suicide)
Private Davis Miles.

Company H:
Private John Sullivan.
Private Samuel A. Womack.

Company I:
Private George S. Bell.
Private Patrick Donovan.
Private William Harvey.
Private Charles Kildish.
Private Eugene L. Lyon.
Private Henry Morray.
Private Michael Nevins.

Company K:
Private Joseph Knox.
Private Daniel Reasoner.

Company L:
Sergeant John M. O'Connor.
Private William H. Morse.

Company M:
Private Charles Friedeck.
Private Ambrose I. Melonson.
Private Dennis A. Shea.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X

BACK IN MANILA — RESUMÉ OF CONDITIONS IN PHILIPPINE ISLANDS — VOLUNTEERS RELIEVED AS USUAL DURING HOSTILITIES — ORDERED TO SAMAR — OPERATIONS AGAINST LUKBAN — SEVERE FIGHTS BY SCOUTING PARTIES — ACTIVE WORK BY ALL COMPANIES — OCCUPATION OF BALANGIGA — MASSACRE OF COMPANY C AFTER TERRIBLE FIGHT — SEVERE FIGHT ON THE GANDARA BY COMPANY E — DESPERATE FIGHTING BY SCOUTING PARTY UNDER CAPTAIN SCHOEFFEL — CAPTURE OF LUKBAN — SURRENDER OF SAMAR INSURGENTS — CHOLERA — REGIMENT RETURNS TO THE UNITED STATES — BACK TO ITS OLD STATIONS — WELCOMED BY CITIZENS IN NEW YORK STATE — ROSTER OF OFFICERS — LOSSES DURING SAMAR CAMPAIGN.

CAMPAIGN IN SAMAR.

THE transport Indiana, bearing Headquarters, field, staff and band and Companies A, D, E, F, G, H, I, L and M, Ninth Infantry, arrived at Manila from Taku, China, at 12:00 o'clock, noon, on June 2, 1901. The Sumner, which had stopped at Nagasaki, Japan, en route, arrived with Companies C and K, Ninth Infantry, and troops of the Sixth Cavalry, three days later, anchoring at 10 A. M., June 5th. Calm seas had prevailed throughout the voyage, and no untoward event had occurred to mar the journey.

Both ships had been loaded to their full capacity, but were not overcrowded. The period of absence from the Philippines had been nearly a year, from June 27, 1900 to June 2, 1901.

The success attained by the regiment in securing arms prior to its departure to China had given the impression to the Ninth Infantry, at least, that insurgent leaders were at last brought to a realization of the futility of further resistance to the United States, and that surrenders of organized bands would occur with increasing frequency throughout the islands, resulting in early pacification. But an examination of records and reports discloses the fact that the surrenders received by Colonel Liscum in May and June, 1900, were almost the only important ones for a long period. One surrender of 101 rifles in August, 1900, accredited to Captain E. V. Smith, of General Funston's staff, was the only one that approached in importance the surrenders to Colonel Liscum; and the whole number of rifles formally surrendered throughout the archipelago from May, 1900, to December 31, 1900, outside of the

Digitized by Google

426 accredited to Colonel Liscum, was only 215.[150] These figures make no accounting of the number secured from individuals under the pressure of everlasting pursuit, aided by the bonus of $30, Mexican, nor captures, which were very few. The number to the credit of the Ninth Infantry under these heads was 615.[151]

The former figures, however, and an examination of the reports of the division commander and the department commanders, disclose the fact of the persistence of the insurrection in guerrilla form, and that the success of the Ninth Infantry was in no wise an indication of immediate pacification. Moreover, the methods of the insurgents in the conduct of their guerrilla warfare continued to be savage beyond description, involving assassination and torture of their own people if suspected of friendliness to the Americans, assassination of Americans, wherever found, treachery of every sort, insurgent soldiers divesting themselves of the character of soldiers by concealing their arms and mingling with the people in ordinary dress, and townspeople while pretending friendship, aiding and abetting the enemy.

On December 20, 1900, Major-General MacArthur issued a proclamation, setting forth the laws of war on these subjects as accepted by civilized nations, and announced that insurgent leaders who gave orders for assassinations, and those who executed such orders, and all others who violated the laws of war would sooner or later be held to trial for felonious crimes.

This paper was published in the English, Spanish, and Tagalog languages and given wide circulation. It appears to have caused surprise, and to have cleared up some false ideas among the natives as to the rightfulness of their methods. It was followed up, under authority of the War Department, by deportation to Guam of a number of prominent Filipinos who were known to be in sympathy with and secretly aiding the insurrection, and by a more stringent policy in holding in confinement all prisoners of war captured in the field or in towns, while men who surrendered were released after giving up their arms.

The good influence of these steps began to be felt in January, 1901, and surrenders were more numerous from that time on. The capture of Aguinaldo, the insurgent President and Commander-in-Chief, by Gen-

[150] Exhibit E, Major General MacArthur's Report in Report of War Department, 1901, vol. i, part 4, p. 125.

[151] 426+615=1,041, which is 15 more than stated on p. 199 of this history, Gabino Calma's surrender of 15 not being included in that statement, because made a few days after the departure of the regiment, although credited to Colonel Liscum in the Exhibit E just referred to.

Digitized by Google

eral Funston on March 23rd, gave even greater impetus to the surrenders. By May, 1901, Major-General Wheaton, in Northern Luzon, was in position to announce that all insurrectionary leaders in his department had been captured, or had surrendered, and the state of war had terminated.

In Southern Luzon, although a number of important surrenders had taken place, the insurrection was not stamped out, and, at the date of arrival of the Ninth Infantry at Manila, the insurgent General, Malvar, was conducting guerrilla warfare, claiming to be Aguinaldo's successor by appointment of an insurgent committee at Hong Kong, which committee derived its authority by virtue of appointment by Aguinaldo.

In the southern islands of the archipelago satisfactory progress had been made toward pacification after the announcement of the result of the presidential election in the United States, December, 1900. This was true at least of most of the islands, but Samar was an exception. This island had been occupied by troops since January, 1900. The force had been insufficient, however, and the island was so impenetrable that the few insurgents having arms were able to avoid contact and maintain a kind of brigand control of the inhabitants, thus preventing general occupation of American sovereignty. General Vicente Lukban, a Tagalog from Luzon, was in command of the insurgent force, having charge in Samar and Leyte. He made his headquarters in the wilds of the interior of Samar after the arrival of American troops.

Briefly the history of operations against the insurgents in Samar up to June, 1901, was as follows:[152] Brigadier-General Kobbe, United States Army, was assigned to the command of an independent expedition consisting of two regiments of volunteers, the Forty-third and Forty-seventh, and Light Battery G, Third Artillery (four three-inch Hotchkiss mountain guns), to occupy important hemp ports in the extreme southern end of Luzon and the islands of Samar and Leyte. The former islands separated from the southeast point of Luzon by San Bernadino Strait. Leyte is southwest of Samar, and separated from its southern end by the narrow strait, San Juanico. Two battalions of volunteers (Forty-third Infantry) were stationed by General Kobbe on Samar, one disembarking at Calbayog on January 26, 1900, the other at Catbalogan the next day. No opposition was made to the landing at Calbayog, and very little at Catbalogan, but insurgents were found in the hills back of the towns and driven off. The remaining battalion with Regimental Headquarters, Forty-third Infantry, was placed at Tacloban Leyte.

[152] Vide War Department Reports 1900-1901.

Digitized by Google

Small expeditions were sent out from time to time from Calbayog and Catbalogan, and other ports were occupied taking companies and detachments from the two places named. The difficult nature of the terrain prevented decisive results from these expeditions, but men were wounded or killed, or fell into man traps, and the total number of casualties became considerable. As a rule the insurgents maintained a policy of keeping their forces in small detachments in the interior, and avoiding contact except when they could accomplish some success from ambush. They sometimes fired into the occupied towns, and on one or two occasions fanatical attacks were made by bolomen for the purpose of murdering the American officers.

On April 15th a detachment located at Catubig, an interior point in the northern part of the island, was attacked by a large number, driven out of its quarters, and finally besieged in a defensive position to which it had withdrawn. The detachment was without an officer at the time, and upon his return, accompanied by a few men, four days later, the insurgents were dispersed. The American loss was 18 killed and 3 wounded, all of the Forty-third Infantry, one of the wounded dying later. The insurgents left many dead in the streets of the town.

General Kobbe's period of command was concluded as soon as he had the garrisons located and provisioned, and Samar and Leyte reverted to the Visayan Military District, to which they properly belonged. On the organization of the Departement of the Visayas as one of the geographical subdivisions of the Division of the Philippines, April 7, 1900, the islands were included in that department. Brigadier-General Robert P. Hughes, United States Army, was the first commanding general of the Department of the Visayas, assuming command April 19, 1900. He visited Samar and Leyte soon after his assignment, and, finding that the work to be done in these islands was more than the Forty-third Infantry Battalion could accomplish, concluded to subdue one island at a time, beginning with Leyte. Accordingly two companies were withdrawn from Catbalogan to Leyte, and the six companies of the Forty-third Infantry in Samar were left to hold on to what they had, not requiring much else of them.

On June 21, 1900, Samar was detached, temporarily, and a few days later, under authority of the president, permanently, from the Department of the Visayas and attached to the Department of Southern Luzon, a change which was followed by removal of all the companies of the Forty-third Infantry to Leyte. They were replaced by part of the Twenty-ninth Infantry, United States Volunteers, and Light Battery F, Fourth Artillery, Colonel Edward E. Hardin, commanding. This

Digitized by Google

change occurred on June 26, 27, 28, 1900. Companies G and K, Twenty-ninth Infantry, landing at Laguan on the north coast, Companies H and M at Calbayog, and D and E, with Regimental Headquarters, at Catbalogan. The light battery was also distributed to these three stations.

Colonel Hardin, reporting his arrival in Samar to the Adjutant-General, Department of Southern Luzon, on July 3, 1900, said:

"There is no doubt that the present force on this island can hold the three ports now open, but, owing to the difficult nature of the country, we can do little more. I should have a good steamer here. There is not a road on the island a mile long."

Colonel Hardin appears to have been left to work out his own destiny, and there are few reports of expeditions by his command. Doubtless the operations against Malvar and his following in Southern Luzon were too numerous and engrossing to allow much attention on the part of the military authorities in Manila to far-away Samar. Five months later, December 3, 1900, Lukban issued a proclamation to his insurgent comrades in Leyte, who had been hard pressed by the Forty-third Infantry, urging them to demonstrate with greater energy their valor and patriotism, and pointing to the good example set them by the brave front of the inhabitants of Samar.[153] About this time, also, two captains of the insurgents, with about 80 men and 25 rifles, were said to have crossed from Leyte to Southern Samar because they were tired out by the many columns after them and wanted a rest.[154] Samar, as a connecting link between the Department of the Visayas and the Department of Southern Luzon, was indeed a hiding-place for the pursued on both sides, while at the same time it was left as a last district to be cleaned up, whichever department had charge of it.

At the end of the year 1900 Brigadier-General Hare, United States Volunteers, was in command of the district for a short time, having his Headquarters at Catbalogan. The Headquarters and part of the First Infantry, soon after arrival from the United States, were sent to Samar, and occupied points on the southeast coast, in the latter part of 1900. Two battalions of this regiment were afterwards distributed so as to relieve the Twenty-ninth Volunteers, upon their departure to the United States in March, 1901. The battery which had been assigned to the island with the Twenty-ninth was returned to Manila. It was very much out of place in such a pathless country.

The operation of relieving the volunteer regiments throughout the islands had rendered suspension of aggressive action generally necessary,

[153] Report of War Department, 1901, vol. i, part 6, p. 64.

[154] Report of War Department 1901, vol. i, part 6, p. 62.

Digitized by Google

and for the first five months of 1901 little was done towards concentrating on unconquered places. It was during these five months, however, that numerous surrenders were received in Luzon, the result of the previous hard work, the proclamation of December 20, 1900, and the capture of Aguinaldo March 23, 1901.

Finally (May, 1901), the time came to clean up Samar, that impenetrable island, which had never been subdued by the Spaniards, and counted itself unconquerable. Yet the people, as a mass, were docile. Only the few brigands in the mountains, in the morasses, and removed from the coast towns, were belligerent. They overawed the unarmed townspeople with their rifles, and gathered tribute as they wished. Lukban issued orders and proclamations, but from what place no one could tell. If any native knew he dared not say, for his life would have been forfeited. Here and there a Presidente, who was disposed to be peaceful, if loved and respected by the people, was able to maintain his position, keeping a watchful body-guard about himself to warn him of assassins.

On May 6, 1901, Samar was transferred back to the Department of the Visayas, and General Hughes, whose tour of service in the Philippines should have been terminated ere that date, and who, indeed, would have been relieved if the lamented General Ludlow had kept his health, once more shouldered his carbine and took up the trail. He went to Calbayog and set himself to looking up what paths there were in the island, and what others could be made to reach the interior. That month, May 1901, the remaining battalion of the First Infantry, and one squadron each of the Ninth and Tenth Cavalry, arrived from the United States and were sent to Samar. That the Ninth Infantry was looked upon by General MacArthur as a lusty, available regiment for service in the same place, appears as early as May 15th, ten days before the regiment left China. On that date the Adjutant-General of the Army, at Washington, received a cablegram from him saying that if necessary he would send the entire Ninth Infantry to Samar, and if that was not sufficient, would continue concentrating troops there until Lukban was forced to submit.[155]

The intention of sending the entire regiment was not immediately carried out, however. Upon disembarking at Manila it was placed in tents at Camp Wallace, the large camp facing the Luneta drive, which had been used by the volunteer regiments returning to the United States, and was attached to the Provost guard of the City of Manila. This was, however, for administration purposes only, and the order directed

[155] Correspondence between Adjutant-General's office and military commanders April 15, 1898, to July 30, 1902, vol. 2, p. 1278.

Digitized by Google

that no duty should be required of the regiment until further order from Division Headquarters.[156]

June 11th, nine days after arrival, the Provost-Marshal General was directed to prepare four companies of the regiment for duty in Samar, the order reading as follows:

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES,
MANILA, P. I., June 11, 1901.

Special Orders No. 152:

2. A battalion of four companies, Ninth United States Infantry, of not less than two officers and eighty men each, under command of a field officer, will be prepared at once by the Provost-Marshal General for temporary field service, and will proceed without delay to Calbayog, Samar, reporting, upon arrival, to the commanding general, Department of the Visyas. The command will take full field equipment, including tentage, three months' subsistence supplies and at least three hundred rounds of ammunition per man. Upon completion of the temporary duty the battalion will be returned to Manila. The Quartermaster's Department will furnish the necessary transportation, and the Subsistence Department will arrange for the necessary subsistence. The travel enjoined is necessary for the public service.

By command of Major-General McArthur.

S. D. STURGIS,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

The second battalion was selected by the regimental commander for this service, its officers and strength being as follows:

Lieutenant-Colonel Morris C. Foote, commanding.

First Lieutenant Harold Hammond, Battalion Adjutant.

Battalion Sergeant Major William J. Matter.

Company E:

Captain Francis J. Schoeffel, commanding company.

First Lieutenant Clifton C. Kinney, attached to and commanding Company F.

Second Lieutenant George W. Wallace, with company.

Strength 89 enlisted men.

Company F:

Captain John P. Finley, absent on recruiting service in the United States.

[156] Paragraph 9, Special Orders No. 144, Headquarters Division of the Philippines, Series 1901.

Digitized by Google

Company F:—continued.

First Lieutenant William K. Naylor, absent at Columbus Barracks, Ohio.

Second Lieutenant Emery T. Smith, with company.

Strength 80 enlisted men.

Company G:

Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller, commanding company.

First Lieutenant James P. Drouillard, with company.

Second Lieutenant (vacancy).

Strength 82 enlisted men.

Company H:

Captain Mark L. Hersey, commanding company.

First Lieutenant (vacancy).

Second Lieutenant Paul M. Goodrich, with company.

Strength 87 enlisted men.

Total strength of battalion, 10 officers, 339 enlisted men.

Captain William W. Calhoun, assistant surgeon United States Volunteers, and a suitable number of Hospital Corps men were attached to the command. Tentage, rations and ammunition were provided as directed in the order, and Lieutenant Hammond was appointed Acting Quartermaster, Commissary and ordnance officer to take over responsibility for the stores.

The transport Indiana, which had remained in the harbor since arrival from Taku, was designated to convey the battalion to Samar. The embarkation was made early in the morning, June 13th, a drenching rain flooding Camp Wallace at the time. The transport sailed about 6 P. M. the same afternoon. Arriving at Calbayog, on the west coast of the island, in the morning of the 15th, Company F was disembarked, and Company H was transferred to a smaller chartered transport, the Churruca, to be taken to the east coast. The Indiana then proceeded to Tarangnan, about 15 miles south of Calbayog, where Company E was landed, and thence around the west coast of Leyte to Basey at the extreme southwestern point of the island, where Lieutenant-Colonel Foote, Headquarters of the battalion, and Company G were landed. Company H was taken by the Churruca to the east coast and landed at Oras. These assignments were made personally by General Hughes who was at Calbayog. Tarangnan, Basey, and Oras had not been previously occupied, and Company F, landing at Calbayog, was intended for an interior point up the Gandara River, which could be best reached from Calbayog. These four companies engaged at once in getting ac-

Digitized by Google

quainted with their stations, exploring the surrounding country, and ferreting out the insurgent sources of supply, and their armed bands. It was to be a somewhat similar duty to that upon which the regiment had been engaged in Tarlac eighteen months previous, except that the country was more impenetrable, more of a jungle, without roads, and the enemy more miserable and fanatical. It would be difficult to conceive of more ignorant, impoverished, bestial-looking little specimens of humanity than the people met with in the jungle, the ravines and mountains of Samar. There was a much better class in the towns. At the principal ports, where hemp was delivered for shipment to Manila, there were some wealthy traders, although Chinese merchants and the Spanish and English traders were the chief buyers and shippers.

The Manila companies of the regiment were, on June 13th, the date of departure of the Second Battalion, well nigh mired in their deluged camp. Superior commanders, becoming cognizant of the state of affairs, ordered removal to more suitable quarters as fast as places became available. June 14th the Band and Company C were sent to the building known as the cock pit, in the Paco district of the city, and companies A and D to the Nipa Barracks on the exposition grounds.

June 19th Company I moved to the Malacanan, relieving a battery of artillery, and took over the custody of Aguinaldo, who was still held there under surveillance, although not confined as a prisoner. The same day Company K was placed under cover in Nipa Barracks, near the Cuartel Malate. June 20th the field and staff took quarters at the Nipa Barracks exposition grounds, Company L was placed in barracks at the same place, and Company M joined Company C at the Paco Barracks. June 21st the band changed from the Paco Barracks to the Nipa Barracks at the exposition grounds. There were then three companies with Headquarters and the band at the last-named place, two companies at Paco Barracks, one company at the Malacanan, and one company near the Cuartel Malate. These stations were in communication with Regimental Headquarters by mounted orderlies, Colonel Robe retaining administrative command. The assignment of Captain Palmer's Company, I, to duty in charge of Aguinaldo, was followed soon after by orders from the Provost-Marshal General to furnish guards at various places in the city, and the Manila contingent of the regiment appeared to be fully incorporated in the Separate Brigade which constituted the Provost guard of the city. The two battalions of the Fourteenth Infantry, which had fought in China, constituted the chief part of the Manila force, and the Ninth Infantry companies found them-

Digitized by Google

selves once more serving alongside their old comrades of the march to Pekin.

An interesting duty fell to the regiment on July 4th, when Major-General MacArthur transferred his military command to Major-General Chaffee, and his office as military governor to the first civil governor, Judge William H. Taft, President of the Philippine Commission. This was accomplished under the instructions of the President of the United States, and the departure of Major-General MacArthur was made the occasion of an appropriate military ceremony. Colonel Robe had command, under the direction of Brigadier-General Davis, Provost-Marshal General of the battalions of infantry and artillery which participated. They were drawn up as a guard of honor on each side of the street from the Ayuntamiento, out through the gate of the city and along the Malacon drive to the dock at the Anda Monument. The Ninth Infantry extended from the plaza to the Malacon drive, and part way along it, the Fourteenth Infantry and artillery companies (armed as infantry) next in line to the Anda Monument. The ceremony of transfer was conducted in the Ayuntamiento, and the speeches were made from a raised platform, canvas-covered, on the side of the plaza opposite to and facing the Ayuntamiento. Army officers, civil officials, and invited guests, including ladies, were accommodated on the platform, and the plaza was partially filled with a crowd of Filipinos, who looked and listened, but probably did not fully understand what was said, or appreciate that the occasion was of much importance to them. At the conclusion of the ceremony a salute was fired from the battery at Fort Santiago, and General MacArthur, escorted by Stewart's troop, Fourth Cavalry, rode in a carriage with General Chaffee between the lines of the guard of honor, followed by numerous other carriages bearing staff officers to the Anda Monument. There he bade good-bye to the officers and departed in a launch to the transport Meade, in which ship he sailed from Manila to Japan, transferring at Japan to the Sheridan, a later transport.

The Ninth Infantry deemed itself fortunate in being present to join in the farewell honors to the commander under whom it served so long in Northern Luzon, and the inauguration of the commander who had led them in China.

An episode of the guard-duty of the regiment in Manila was the transfer of the gunboat Laguna de Bay, on which a detachment of the regiment served so long in 1899 and 1900, to her new owners, upon sale by the government.

When the Fourteenth Infantry was ordered to the United States,

Digitized by Google

early in July 1901, the Ninth Infantry companies in Manila took over the various guard duties of that regiment. Guards were placed at the depot Quartermaster's and Commissary storehouses, near the Captain of the Port's office, the Cuartel Infanteria and other points, being in addition to the guards at the First Reserve Hospital, the Sales Commissary, the tentage of Camp Wallace, when not occupied, and the residence of the members of the Philippine Commission. The guards at the residences were, however, discontinued shortly after.

Under instructions from the Provost-Marshal General's office, Ninth Infantry Headquarters, band and certain companies were about to take station at Cuartel Meisic, the barracks vacated by the Fourteenth Infantry, when the movement was suspended. Companies K and M had already located in the cuartel and the regimental Quartermaster had taken over the regimental Quartermaster's property, but then information was received that the whole regiment would be sent to Samar. The two companies therefore moved back to their former stations, a battalion of the Twenty-fourth Infantry arriving in the city at the same time for station at Cuartel Meisic.

The battalion of the Twenty-fourth Infantry, commanded by Major Dent, at once assumed a portion of the guard duty, under instructions from the Provost-Marshal General's office.

Prior to the departure of the Manila companies to Samar, the Separate Brigade and Provost-Marshal General's office was discontinued. This was effected under the following orders:

HEADQUARTERS DIVISION OF THE PHILIPPINES,
MANILA, P. I., July 24, 1901.

General Orders, No 190.

Upon the completion of the transfer of the military government in the City of Manila to the civil governor, the Separate Brigade organization, heretofore existing in said city, will be discontinued, and the city limits are declared to constitute the military post of Manila; the garrison, as now constituted, or as may be hereafter ordered, will belong to that post, the senior officer to command.

The post of Manila herein constituted is attached to the Department of Northern Luzon.

These Headquarters, those of the two departments, the engineer battalion, the Quartermaster, Commissary and other depots, and the general hospitals are not included in and do not belong to the post of Manila.

By command of Major-General Chaffee. W. P. HALL,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

Digitized by Google

HEADQUARTERS PROVOST-MARSHAL GENERAL,
(Separate Brigade, Provost Guard)
MANILA, P. I., August 7, 1901.

General Orders No. 49.

1. Announcement is hereby given of the discontinuance of the Separate Brigade, Provost guard, and the military government of Manila, and of the transfer of all civil duties and functions pertaining to municipal affairs to the executive authorities of the city, appointed by the civil governor in pursuance to the Legislative Acts Nos. 183 and 188, United States Philippine Commission, at 12: 00 o'clock, noon, this date.

By command of Brigadier-General Davis,
Provost-Marshal General.
ARTHUR R. KERWIN,
First Lieutenant Thirteenth United States Infantry,
Acting Adjutant-General.

Colonel Robe was the senior officer present, with troops serving in Manila on the 7th of August, and became the commanding officer of the post. He reported in person to Major-General Loyd Wheaton, commanding Department of Northern Luzon, and under the latter's instructions proceeded to establish post Headquarters, and open up post records. He appointed the members of his regimental staff to corresponding offices in the post staff, called upon the commanding officers of the various organizations in the post to render special field returns of their commands and submitted a return to Headquarters Department of Northern Luzon.

The troops in the post besides the Ninth Infantry were one battalion, Twenty-fourth Infantry, and about eight companies of coast artillery serving as infantry. Colonel Tully McCrea, Artillery Corps, commanded the artillery, which occupied Cuartel de Espana and Fort Santiago. There were also surgeons, detachments of the Hospital Corps, and a large number of casuals, en route to their regiments in the islands, or en route to the United States to be discharged, or already discharged and waiting transportation.

Post Headquarters began in a very modest way in a single room in a Nipa shack at the exposition grounds. All records and reports were at once instituted, however, and the office was in proper condition for transfer to the new post commander a week later. This change occurred through the assignment of Colonel Chambers McKibben, Twenty-fourth Infantry, to duty at the post, and the appointment of a new post staff

Digitized by Google



Colors of the Ninth Infantry, Calbayog, Samar. These same colors entered Santiago, Tarlac and Pekin.

Digitized by Google

from the regimental staff of the Twenty-fourth Infantry. The business of the post in receiving and forwarding casuals grew to enormous proportions in following months and was most efficiently handled by the able post commander, Colonel McKibben, and his Adjutant, Captain Moss.

The movement of the Manila companies of the regiment to Samar began August 7th, and continued as rapidly as transportation could be provided, the several commands proceeding to Calbayog, at which place orders were given by General Hughes for their distribution to important points on the island. The order for the movement, issued from Headquarter's Division of the Philippines, July 24, 1901, directed four companies to proceed to Samar to relieve four troops of the Ninth Cavalry. Companies A and C were designated by the regimental commander to go first, accommodations on the transport Liscum being provided for two companies only. Company A was placed at Santa Rita, on the west coast of Samar, near the northern entrance to the San Juanico Strait, relieving a troop of cavalry, and Company C at Balangiga, a point previously unoccupied at the southern end of the island.

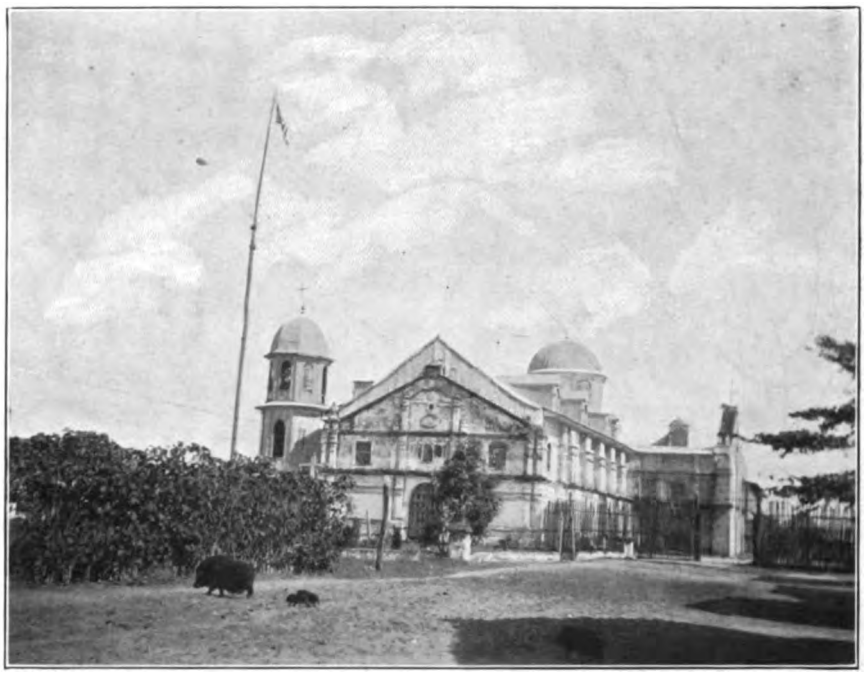
Two more companies, D and M, were sent August 14th on the Relief, which had just been transferred from service as a hospital ship to the Quartermaster's Department as a transport. Both companies were landed at Catbalogan on August 17th, D company remaining there, and M marching to Mutiong, placing detachments at Calbiga and Hiabong.

The Headquarters of the regiment, the Band, and Companies I, K and L were placed on board the transport Lawton August 19th, and the ship sailed early in the morning on the 21st, arriving at Calbayog on the 22nd. The following day Company I was first landed. It marched to the Gandara River and was transported by boats up the river to a camp on the south bank, called Camp Gandara, relieving Young's troop of the Tenth Cavalry on August 25th. The other companies and the Band were put ashore leisurely the following day, the ship awaiting the arrival of cavalry troops from the Gandara River; Headquarters, the Band, and Company L were ordered to remain at Calbayog, Company K to be there temporarily, but eventually to take station at Oras with Company H.

To return to the operations of the Second Battalion, June 15 to August 22, 1901: General Hughes made his Headquarters at Calbayog during this period, having the Adjutant-General of the department, Major Noble, and his aide-de-camp, Lieutenant Conger, with him. In May several new points had been occupied by incoming companies of

Digitized by Google

the First Infantry and Ninth and Tenth Cavalry, and by means of the Gandara River, one of the largest streams in the island, emptying into the sea on the west side near Calbayog, companies had penetrated a number of miles into the interior. One company of the First Infantry occupied a town named Taviran, on the north branch of the Gandara River, and in June pushed on to Mataguinao, still further up the river. Another was sent from Catbalogan to San Jose, near the center of the



A church at Calbayog, Samar, 1901. Convent in rear used as barracks by Company L, Ninth Infantry.

island, by very difficult marches, and one troop of the Ninth Cavalry, dismounted, was placed at Aurora Blanca on the south branch of the Gandara. General Hughes' information from friendly natives at that time was to the effect that Lukban made his own Headquarters in the vicinity of Mataguinao, or between there and San Jose, and for that reason he endeavored to so occupy that district that it could not be used as a base of operations. Still it was impossible to ascertain definitely where he was. His force was believed to consist of a small body-guard only, which could hide in the fastnesses of the mountainous interior without fear of discovery.

Digitized by Google

Company F, Ninth Infantry, commanded by Lieutenant Kinney, having landed at Calbayog on June 15th, General Hughes at once detached Second Lieutenant Emery T. Smith, and assigned him to the command of a small river tug named the Hercules, which was engaged in towing supplies from Calbayog to the companies up the Gandara River. This duty Lieutenant Smith continued to perform for a long period, under many difficulties and dangers, both from the sea and from the enemy's bullets, but with much success and to General Hughes' thorough satisfaction. Lieutenant Kinney was called upon a few days later to prepare 50 men of his company with five days' rations for a trip up the Gandara River, as escort to the General himself, and in support of the company of the First Infantry which had not been heard from for a number of days. The detachment, accompanying General Hughes, boarded the launch Hercules at Calbayog and was conveyed to the mouth of the Gandara River, 8 miles, crossed the bar at the proper stage of the water, and going up stream with the tide arrived at Taviran, twenty-five miles from the mouth, about 5:00 P. M. the same day. A part of Captain Newman's company, First Infantry, was found there in camp. The Captain himself, with half the company, had proceeded further up the river to Mataguinao.

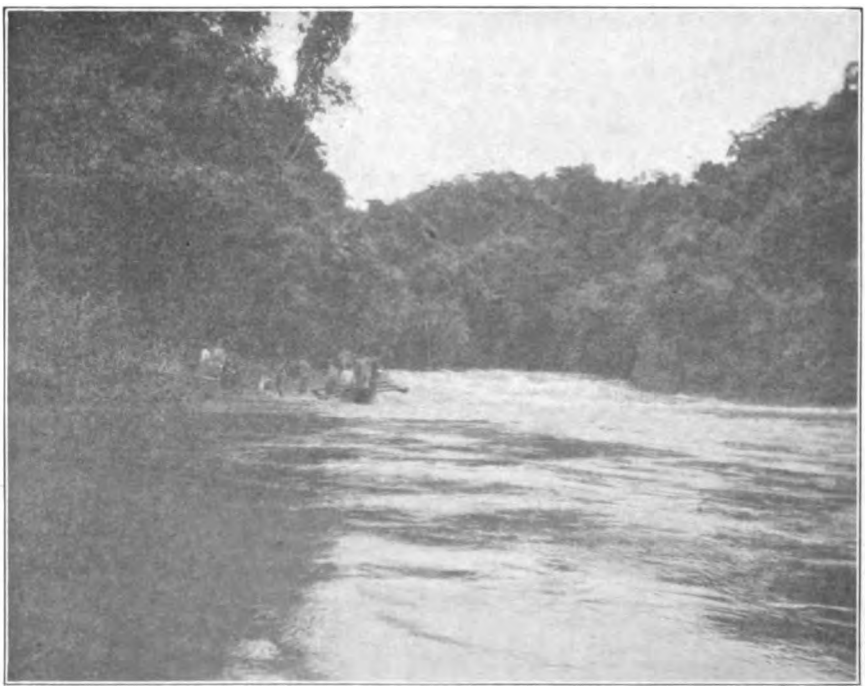
The particular object of this expedition was to conduct a brother of General Lukban's, who had been sent from Manila, into the interior, as near as possible to the General, and endeavor to open communication with the latter by the assistance of this brother, Dr. Lukban, who was believed to be opposed to further insurgent warfare.

The companies of the First Infantry were large, and Captain Newman's command comprised about 128 soldiers and 50 native burden-bearers, now divided between Taviran and Mataguinao.

On the day following General Hughes' arrival at Taviran he started on toward Mataguinao, making use of native river canoes (barotas) for himself and party, while Company F picked a way through the jungle. At 4:00 o'clock in the afternoon the company, which had not been able to keep the river in view during most of the day, arrived at some falls about six miles above Taviran, and nothing having been seen of General Hughes all day Lieutenant Kinney decided to ford the company down the river-bed to meet him. He was found about a mile down, and orders were given to return to the falls, where the company camped during the night. By this time Dr. Lukban exhibited a condition of mind quite apart from any purpose to penetrate the jungle himself to locate the hiding General. He was overcome with terror at the thought of armed insurgents hidden in the jungle, and could not be persuaded to

Digitized by Google

leave the boats. General Hughes decided, therefore, to return with the company to Taviran, which was done the following day, June 21st. Before leaving camp some of the men found a place where the insurgents had been manufacturing bamboo cannon, and destroyed four of these primitive weapons. At Taviran General Hughes gave Lieutenant Kinney further instructions to push through to Mataguinao and reinforce Captain Newman's half company, and he then, the same evening, re-



Scouting party approaching the Iona Falls on the Gandara River, Philippine Islands, 1902.

turned to Calbayog with Dr. Lukban on Lieutenant Smith's launch. June 22nd Lieutenant Kinney started again up the river with 30 men of Company F, using native boats, by which he could make progress without utter exhaustion, chancing attacks from the jungle which bordered on each bank. Having started late in the day, he was compelled to camp before reaching the falls, but pushed on early the next morning, drew his boats up through the rapids and around the falls and, continuing, soon met a boat-load of Captain Newman's men coming down. They were taking a sick man to Taviran. A few miles further on, a detach-

Digitized by Google

ment of Captain Newman's company was found in camp at a place where a landing could be made, and from which it was only about an hour's march to Mataguinao, the distance by the river being much greater. Obtaining a guide, Lieutenant Kinney and his detachment proceeded and reached Mataguinao about 4:00 P. M., finding Captain Newman there with the remainder of his company.

Mataguinao had been found by Captain Newman abandoned and burned, with the exception of one building which had been Lukban's Headquarters. On the following day, June 24th, Lieutenant Kinney and his men returned to Taviran and went into camp as a permanent station. The Hercules was back once more from Calbayog with a company of native scouts, which was under orders to continue to Mataguinao. Taviran became a small sub-depot for operations further up the river, and on the 28th of the month, Captain Newman having come down from Mataguinao, transferred to Lieutenant Kinney his accountability for subsistence stores accumulating there. Lieutenant Smith with the Hercules continued his trips between Calbayog and Taviran with supplies, keeping within the river or fleeing to an island opposite Calbayog, when the southwest monsoon became too severe for his little craft. There was no harbor at Calbayog. Boats had to anchor off shore, exposed to the full effect of the wind. At the proper stage of the tide small launches and cascoes could cross the bar and enter the river.

July 4th General Hughes again proceeded to Taviran and the next day, escorted by Lieutenant Kinney and a detachment of Company F, he started for Mataguinao. He had previously sent word that he wanted a trail opened up between Taviran and Mataguinao over which a pack train could go, but that had been pronounced impracticable by both Captain Newman and Lieutenant Kinney, and he wanted to go over the country himself. Starting up the river in barotas early on the 5th, the party landed four or five miles above Taviran, and began the tiresome tramping in the terrible heat, up and down hills and through the tangled jungle. It was very exhausting, but General Hughes bore the fatigue and heat even better than some of the men. Arriving at Captain Newman's ration camp, the party stopped for lunch, then crossing the river, took the trail over which Lieutenant Kinney had previously traveled. It led over a small mountain. The precipitous sides gave no easy way of ascending nor of descending, and although getting to the top was exceedingly difficult, going down on the other side was equally so, and more dangerous, as the trail lay in the bottom of a small mountain stream flowing over rocks which were very slippery. Here General

Digitized by Google

Hughes had a fall which disabled him for a long time. Lieutenant Kinney describes the accident as follows:

"I had three or four men in front of me as a 'point,' and I warned the General to be very careful. I had a Filipino spear, which aided me greatly and saved me more than once from slipping. The General carried a carbine, and before we started down I wanted him to take my spear and let me carry his carbine, but he would not let me do it. The General was following directly in rear of me and we had gotten almost down to the foot of the hill when he slipped on one of the smooth rocks and fell, feet first, about six or ten feet, and landed at my feet. I think he landed on his right hip, and injured himself severely. I helped him to his feet, but he could not bear his weight on his right leg. He then took my spear and tried to hobble along using it as a crutch. We were making such slow progress that Sergeant James F. W. Allen, who was at that time a Corporal, volunteered to carry the General on his back, and the General, realizing that he could not go very far without help, allowed Sergeant Allen to carry him. We were then less than a mile from Mataguinao, and the trail from there on was very good. The next day, the 6th of July, I took the General down the Gandara in a barota to Taviran. A barota had been fixed up with a cot in it, and an awning over it, so the General had a very comfortable trip down. He was carried on board the launch and taken that night to Calbayog. Before he left he, at my request, gave me written orders to relieve Captain Newman at Mataguinao, and for Captain Newman to return to Taviran."



A river scene in Samar.

General Hughes' injury proved to be a fracture of the bone, which confined him to his bed for several weeks, and lamed him for a much longer time. He continued to exercise command, however.

Digitized by Google

Company F was all moved up the river from Taviran to Mataguinao July 19th, and Captain Newman's company took station at Taviran. A troop of the Tenth Cavalry, dismounted, was placed midway between the two stations. Supplies were delivered at Taviran in small barges towed by the Hercules, and forwarded from thence by barotas. Lieutenant Kinney sent out scouting parties which explored the country very thoroughly, and, although occasionally exchanging shots with small parties, his men never found the insurgents in force, and no casualties occurred.

Mataguinao was the most interior point in the island occupied by troops, with the exception of one other, San Jose, and General Hughes was very desirous that it be held. He notified all commanders on the north, east, and west coasts that the place was garrisoned and wanted them to scout to the place from all directions. Captain Jackson, of the First Infantry, making a "hike" with a detachment from Laguan on the northwest, remarkable for the difficulties encountered, was the only officer who succeeded in reaching the place.

Company E, under command of Captain Schoeffel, having landed at Tarangnan, about twenty miles from Calbayog, established itself there, and began searching out the surrounding country with detachments. On one of the expeditions, August 30, 1901, Private Frederick Kopp was struck by a spear thrown from an insurgent trap and instantly killed.

Company G, during the first two months in Samar, was similarly occupied in the southern part of the island, operating from Basey. Captain Bookmiller, Lieutenant Drouillard, and non-commissioned officers of the company led scouting parties by trails and by river routes to all surrounding localities, occasionally being absent two or three days and penetrating into the interior for distances of fifteen to twenty miles. Insurgent supplies and bamboo canoes were searched out and destroyed. In July the company assisted in the construction of a telephone line from Basey to San Antonio, and thence by cable across the strait to Tacloban, on the island of Leyte, a place garrisoned by a company of the Eleventh Infantry. On August 4th, Private Robert I. Parnell, while having charge of several native prisoners who had been sent to a small island a short distance from the shore to obtain water from a spring, was overpowered by the natives and forced to accompany them. He was never afterwards seen by his company, and although at first reported a deserter, the facts were learned later from other natives, and it was well established that he met his death at the hands of his captors.

Digitized by Google

Company H landed at a town on the east coast not previously occupied, Oras. General Hughes' instructions to Captain Hersey before the company left Calbayog were substantially as follows:[157]

"The troops stationed on the west coast of Samar are among people professedly friendly, but whose friendship is very doubtful. I am going to send you to Oras, on the east coast, where you will have an entirely different proposition. Your work will be straightforward. They are all hostile; we have not a friend nor any one that pretends to be. I want a sub-camp established by you up the Oras River, at Concepcion, to cut off carrying of rice and other supplies to the insurgents in the mountains."

Captain Hersey was prepared, therefore, to wage war effectively. The town of Oras was found to be burned and abandoned. He took possession of it, strengthened a position near it on the river, and at once organized expeditions into the surrounding country, destroying whatever he found of value in the way of houses, caribao, stores of rice and hemp. His men exchanged shots with the insurgents on almost every expedition. June 30th, immediately after mustering his company, he went up the Oras River, taking Lieutenant Goodrich, Dr. Blanchard and 50 men of the company. For three days the party traveled on, penetrating the country from one to two miles on both river banks as they progressed. The valley was found fertile, thickly populated and stored with large quantities of rice in the husk. This and all caribao were destroyed. Concepcion was reached July 3rd. It was found to be abandoned. In accordance with instructions received from General Hughes at Calbayog, camp was established there, one thousand rations left, and Lieutenant Goodrich placed in command. Captain Hersey returned that night, by river, with ten men to Oras, making one of those desperate journeys in the midst of dangers so often necessarily undertaken by American officers with small detachments, to establish communication or convey information between isolated posts. For the next twenty days Captain Hersey was busily occupied acquainting himself with the country immediately about. Word was sent out by native messengers to the people in the mountains that all who would come into Oras would be protected. About July 20 a boat arrived, having the Adjutant-General, Major Noble, on board. Captain Hersey explained to him what he had done, and expressed the opinion that Concepcion was not a center of active operations, nor on the route by which rice was carried into the interior. Major Noble thereupon

[157] The account of operations at Oras and vicinity is taken chiefly from a narrative by Captain Hersey, written at Bangor, Maine, dated July 29, 1902.

Digitized by Google

gave an order to recall Lieutenant Goodrich's detachment, which was done. About August 1st, Lieutenant Conger, aide-de-camp, to General Hughes, arrived and took Captain Hersey and a detachment of 45 men to the Gamay River, towing small boats behind his steamer. That river was explored to the head of navigation, and about 200 tons of rice were destroyed. Returning by trail along the coast, three towns were destroyed, and at the last one the party divided, one detachment going by sea, the other by land, Captain Hersey in charge, crossing the mountains from the coast to the Oras River, and capturing more boats there for the remaining journey to their station. This expedition took nine days. The insurgents had lookouts on all the prominent hills, from which warnings were given by blowing conches. They had few rifles, and those were of poor quality. No casualties occurred on the trip. Soon after the return of this party, Lieutenant Goodrich was sent, July 25th, across country with 25 men to Hinolasan, twenty-five miles up the Dolores River, and at the same time Sergeant John Galliant, with 15 men, accompanied by Surgeon Blanchard, went around by sea and up the Dolores River to unite with Lieutenant Goodrich's party. The latter succeeded in a night surprise of a small body of insurgents, but was not seriously opposed and no casualties occurred. Sergeant Gallant's detachment was frequently fired upon, and his men were landed to drive off their assailants, but met with no losses. Having united, the parties returned the next day, clearing the Dolores valley of insurgents and property. On a later expedition, in the same direction, Private William Roberts, Company H, was wounded by a spear trap, and at another time, August 22nd, Corporal Clarence Matthews, Company H, was also wounded in the same way.

There were three species of traps laid by the insurgents, against which precautions and great watchfulness had to be exercised. One was a spear trap in which a sharp spear was propelled from a bow, at the proper moment, from the side of the path, grass or a vine stretched across the path when caught by the foot, or pressed by the body, releasing the spring. Second, a pit filled with sharpened bamboo points, the mouth of the pit in the path being skilfully covered with grasses; and third, a heavy log poised at the crest, or on the slope of a hill, and released by the hand of the enemy, or by a trap arrangement set off at a distance down the slope by the unwary person himself. The narrow trail climbing a steep slope offered an opportunity for such an arrangement, and placed a number of men in danger at once. The traps were guarded against by carrying a lance or pole with which to prod the path, or sweep aside vines at suspicious places.

Digitized by Google

By the middle of July people had begun to accept Captain Hersey's invitation to return to Oras, which by order of Lukban they had abandoned several months previous. He exacted from each male, between the ages of fifteen and sixty, one day's labor a week as a tax. If he called on them for more than that he paid for it. The labor exacted was applied to building barracks and quarters, storehouses, a church, school-houses, streets, and other public improvements.

About August 15th Captain Hersey took passage to Calbayog on the Churruca. This ship made trips as frequently as possible, at this season, to deliver rations and stores in anticipation of the period when anchoring and landing on the east coast would be impossible on account of the prevailing winds called the northeast Monsoon. He reported to General Hughes at Calbayog, and received permission to go to Iloilo. While there he secured much needed supplies from the depot Quartermaster, including a ship's boat and a Colt's rapid-fire gun, calibre 6 mm., both of which proved of invaluable service later.

The relation of events has now been brought down to the latter part of August, 1901, when the whole regiment, with the exception of Company B, far away in Pekin, was in the island, scattered and contending with a treacherous foe, destined to lose by death within the next few months, at the enemy's hand, a larger number of men than in all its previous campaigns, beginning with Cuba.

One of the projects which General Hughes had had in view for a considerable time was to open lines of communication from west to east across the island. The enemy constantly eluded his detachments in the mountains, and tropical fastnesses of the interior; he could keep himself informed of the condition of affairs on the east coast only by the trips of two coasting vessels, the Churruca and Loang, which distributed supplies, and he anticipated that even this means of communication would be cut off when the northeast monsoon tossed up the mighty waves of the Pacific on the east coast. Penetrating the island by means of the Gandara River, he had established two posts on the east branch, one at the limit of navigation of the launch Hercules, called Camp Gandara, and the other a few miles further up, near the site of a small village called Aurora Blanca. From there a company of the First Infantry had been pushed on, as already mentioned, to a site called San Jose, well up in the mountains, near the center of the island. Native burden-bearers were employed to transport the necessary rations to these points, but the trail was so rough, and the footing of such nature that half the number were disabled after each trip. The soil was wet and filled with disintergrating limestone; the men's feet were torn and blistered; leather

Digitized by Google

shoes were eaten away by the lime and mud into which the feet sank at every step. Roots and vines intertwined across the path, and boulders lay tumbled together in the creek beds, which, even so, offered the better way. Pack trains were brought from Luzon to try these terrible trails, but were found utterly useless. The animals sank in the mud, stumbled and fell, were exhausted by the awful heat, and died. The few that survived one or two trips to San Jose were returned to the seacoast towns, and were not used again on that route. Hundreds of native men were employed in cutting out a new trail, but it proved no better. Finally the company was withdrawn from San Jose, rationing it becoming practically impossible. But before this was done the effort was made to penetrate to it from the east coast, and this was successfully accomplished by Lieutenant Fred R. Brown, Ninth Infantry, and a small detachment from Companies H and K. Company K was transferred from Calbayog, where it had landed on August 24th, to the east coast, September 17th, the small coasting vessel Loang being utilized. The weather was stormy and the journey proved to be a dangerous one, for the little vessel was not a very stanch ship. Captain Hersey was one of the passengers on this trip, returning to his station, and the operations of Company K were placed under his direction, although the company took station a few miles south of Oras, at Dolores. From the latter place Lieutenant Brown rendered his report of the trip to San Jose, as follows:

DOLORES, SAMAR, P. I., October 6, 1901.

THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL, Department of the Visayas:

SIR: I have the honor to report as follows: I landed here on September 17, 1901, with one medical officer (Dr. H. B. Wilkinson, Captain and assistant surgeon, United States Volunteers), one Lieutenant (Mills), one acting steward, and two privates Hospital Corps, and 69 enlisted men, Company K, Ninth Infantry, and about 5,200 rations. The unloading required two days, owing to heavy seas, and the departure of the Loang to Sulat and Borongan with the paymaster.

Every house in Dolores having been previously destroyed or burned, my command was put into tents.

On September 19th, at about 10:00 P. M., Captain Hersey with 19 enlisted men of Company H, Ninth Infantry, and 6 native scouts, arrived from Oras for the purpose of co-operating in work on the Dolores River and trip to San Jose.

On September 21st Captain Hersey, Dr. Wilkinson, and myself, with 39 enlisted men from Company K, Ninth Infantry, 17 enlisted men

Digitized by Google

from Company H, Ninth Infantry, 4 native scouts and 1,000 rations, left Dolores at 7:00 A. M., towed by the launch Julia up the Dolores River to Hinolason, arriving without accident at 3:00 P. M.

All houses at Hinolason having been destroyed by insurgents, the command was put into tents.

I returned to Dolores with the launch Julia the following day, and on September 23d took up another thousand rations to Hinolason.

On September 24th Captain Hersey, Dr. Wilkinson, and myself, 30 enlisted men and 3 native scouts, left Hinolason at 6 30 A. M., by barotas, and arrived at Maslog at 3:30 P. M., traveling at the estimated rate of two miles per hour.

On September 25th we scouted the trails leading from Maslog, in direction of San Jose, and finally found a well-defined one leading in the direction desired.

Hinolason and vicinity did not agree in the least with the sketch of trail made from San Jose by Lieutenant Martin, and Maslog only to a small extent.

However, we thought Maslog to be the place we had found, and which he believed to be Hinolason. No guides could be found who knew of any trail leading to San Jose, so we started at about 1:00 P. M., September 25th, in a southwesterly direction by compass, following the trail through the forest and over mountains until the following day, about noon, when the trail disappeared and we returned to our last camp, about seven miles by trail from Maslog. On our return march we encountered a native family living beside a mountain stream called Nasagit, southwest of Maslog. The man acknowledged he knew the trail to San Jose, but said it would take four days to reach there, and that it passed through Caryacay, Tomay, and Inagingeyan.

From all the information in our possession we could not beleive this to be true.

However, I determined to try it, and Captain Hersey returned to Oras to attend to matters requiring his attention there.

I then brought up all boats and pushed on up the river to Caryacay, the head of navigation for all barotas, as beyond that point are many swift rapids full of very large boulders.

There are also many shallow rapids from a point about midway between Hinolason and Maslog, clear to Caryacay, but which we were able to pass by having every man wade and push the barotas through the rapids.

We reached Caryacay about 3:00 P. M., September ——, having started from camp about 3 miles, by river, above Maslog, at 7:00

Digitized by Google

A. M., on September ——, leaving the barotas at Caryacay with guard of 12 men, I, with Dr. Wilkinson, 18 men and four native burden bearers and half rations for six days left Caryacay by trail for Tomay at 6:45 A. M.

The trail from Caryacay to Tomay passed by land up and down mountain streams, then up the Casaca River, thence overland to the Table River, which is supposed to be the half-way point to Tomay. From the Table River, to perhaps two miles from Tomay, the trail is in the bed of the Bocod River, usually stepping from one boulder to another or wading when necessary. There is also at this place a very difficult trail which passes over a steep mountain and running parallel to the river instead of being in the bed of the river. We arrived at burned town of Tomay at 5:00 P. M., after marching eight hours actual travel at estimated rate of two miles per hour. Distance traveled, 16 miles.

On September 29th we left Tomay at 7:00 A. M., followed a trail which crossed the Bocod at Tomay, then directly up a mountain by following the bed of a mountain stream which enters the Bocod directly opposite Tomay. It took us two and one half hours to cross this mountain, there being some slopes as steep as seventy degrees.

Descending the mountain on opposite side by another mountain stream which flows into the Arrayo Gusa, thence up the Gusa for about two hours, then over another hill which required one hour to cross, and arrived at 12:30 P. M. at a clearing containing two houses beside the Inagingeyan, which is about one half hour from the burned town of Inagingeyan, but on opposite bank of river. From this point Mt. Hurao can be seen in a due southerly direction.

On September 30th we left camp near Inagingeyan at 7:00 A. M., and arrived at San Jose at 12:00 M., where we found a detachment of First Infantry under command of Lieutenant Nowlen.

The trail from Inagingeyan to San Jose passes over four separate mountains (or more properly large hills), usually crossing the streams instead of following them. For about the first half of the distance the streams flow in an easterly direction to the Bocod, while in the last half they flow in a westerly or southwesterly direction to San Jose River.

The trail from Inagingeyan to San Jose runs almost due southwest, thus showing more clearly than ever that this portion of the blue-print map made by Enrique D'Almonte Y. Muriel, 1898, to be absolutely wrong. It took four and one half hours actual travel at estimated rate of two miles per hour, making distance traveled about 9 miles.

A sketch of the trail followed is hereto appended, which shows quite accurately the direction of trail and location of towns, rivers, and mountains or hills.

Digitized by Google

The part of Mt. Hurao seen from Inagingeyan is due east of San Jose.

From Tomay to San Jose the trail is usually over a sticky, yellow clay mixed with rock, while in the streams for a half-day's march each side of Tomay the river-bed is principally of limestones. The limewater continually soaking from the time we left Hinolason rendered the feet of the men and natives in a very bad condition.

I was compelled to leave two men at San Jose on account of sore feet, and of the men who made the return trip, all but two were almost unable to reach Caryacay.

The feet were eaten, inflamed and covered with raw sores, principally caused, I believe, by the limewater.

The trail is absolutely impossible for animals, and practically so to burden-bearers, though my burden-bearers were made to carry loads equivalent to a box of hard bread, but required relief.

At many places the use of both hands and feet are necessary.

The entire country is covered with a dense forest filled with underbrush, vines, bejuca and thorny plants, thereby practically confining travel to the native trails.

With two exceptions, the few houses passed along the trail showed no signs of recent occupancy. There are frequent clearings in vicinity of the towns mentioned, planted with rice and sweet potatoes (camotes), and we subsisted to a certain extent on camotes.

The burned town found by Lieutenant Martin, and believed by him to be Hinolason, is Inagingeyan, and the town found by Lieutenant Nowlen, on his trip to connect with us, and at first believed by him to be Hinolason, is Tomay. He saw his mistake when he reached San Jose.

During the entire trip from Dolores to San Jose and return, not a hostile shot was fired, nor an insurgent, their pitfalls or traps encountered.

The trail from Tomay to San Jose is well cleared, broad and quite distinct, though difficult to travel, owing to its character, while from Caryacay to Tomay can hardly be followed without a guide. Natives state that from Hinolason to Caryacay all travel is by barotas, and that there are no practicable or known trails.

Hinolason is located on a high, dry bluff, about thirty feet above the river, and at the edge of the bank, with a clearing of perhaps three fourths of a mile radius on all sides, and very well suited for a station and defense. It is also practically the highest point which can be reached by launch.

Digitized by Google

Captain Hersey directs that I submit this report direct, that it may reach you by the Churruca, now unloading at this port.

Respectfully submitted,

F. R. BROWN,

First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, Commanding Company K.

The two men left at San Jose were unable to travel for several days, but finally accompanied a detachment to Aurora Blanca, and from thence were carried in barotas and by the launch Hercules down the Gandara River to Calbayog.

These were the only men of the Ninth Infantry who crossed the island. Few, if any, other white men have crossed it at any time.

While Captain Hersey was absent with Lieutenant Brown, Oras was left without an officer, Lieutenant Goodrich having gone on the steamer Loang to Calbayog, to proceed thence to Luzon, as a witness before general court-martial.

First Sergeant Wesley Bickhart was in charge. On September 22nd he led a successful expedition against a detachment of the enemy which had entrenched itself near Yabo on the Oras River. With eighteen men he marched two hours in the early morning to San Eduardo, thence over a mountain trail toward Yabo, capturing en route a native, who proved to be a Corporal, and who was compelled to lead them to the insurgent position. After two and one half hours' hard marching, about 11:45 A. M., the detachment came on the enemy's entrenchment, situated on a mountain side behind a fringe of brush and commanding the Oras River. Firing was begun, and, after a combat lasting about twenty-five minutes, the insurgents retreated. The enemy's force had thirty rifles, as was afterwards ascertained. Sergeant Bickhart's bold attack, resulting in the death of the commander, Major Asodillo and his lieutenant, routed the enemy from their position, but his men were too exhausted to follow up the advantage. The detachment returned to Oras late in the afternoon. Captain Hersey later expressed the opinion that this timely attack prevented the attempt of a well-devised plan to shoot up and burn Oras the night of September 22nd, and recommended Sergeant Bickhart for a certificate of merit. Upon receipt of Sergeant Bickhart's report at Manila, General Chaffee wrote him a letter, expressing his appreciation of the good judgment and energy displayed and the hard work performed by the men.

Captain Hersey's narrative of operations on the east coast, under his charge from this time until the following May, when the Ninth Infantry companies were withdrawn, is here quoted in full:

Digitized by Google

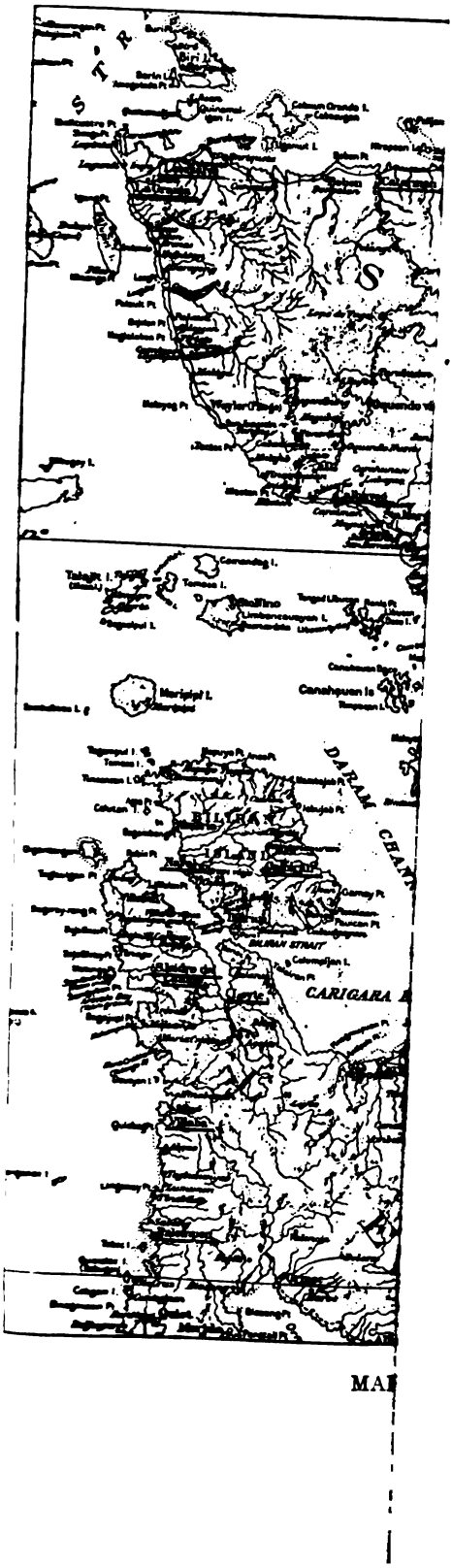
"I returned to Oras two days after this engagement, and, with a detachment of twenty-five men, followed up the remnants that he (first Sergeant Bickhart) had scattered. We drove them out of their fortifications at Agsom, and suffered no casualties. We met only the fire of their outposts; at the time we reached their main fortifications they were a mile or more in retreat. The country between the Oras and Dolores rivers was next thoroughly scouted by Sergeant John Gallant, Company H, Ninth Infantry. He became so thoroughly acquainted with the trails that he surprised the enemy in several skirmishes. He became so well known to the insurrectos in that vicinity that whenever a new surrender took place or new men came into the town of Oras from this section 'Sergeant Juan' was the first man they asked to see. In one engagement, he attacked with 9 soldiers a party of twenty-five bolomen; the women of the barrio that he had surprised took part in the fight. He killed 9 men and captured the rest, bringing the prisoners, about 25, all into Oras. This engagement was in October, 1901, and for his daring and good judgment, I recommend him for a certificate of merit. Sergeant Gallant was discharged December 1, 1901, and is now Inspector in the Philippine constabulary and stationed in Northern Luzon.

"In October my command was further increased by the arrival of Lieutenant B. M. Hartshorne, with Company M, Seventh Infantry, who took station at Dolores, Lieutenant Brown, with K Company, coming to Oras for station. On his arrival, Lieutenant Hartshorne began to operate in the country to the south of the Dolores River, clearing out the valley of the Ulut or Canabid River and also the valley of the Tubig. Both towns of Oras and Dolores increased rapidly in population. Officers' quarters and barracks for the men were supplied with board floors sent from Tacloban. The same system of taxation was established at Dolores as was in vogue at Oras. From this time on the insurrectos gave us a wide berth. We had to go from forty to sixty miles to get an engagement with them, and the work began to include many civil problems.

"In November General Jacob H. Smith, who succeeded General Hughes in command of the department, visited Oras and approved the work that had been done, and made no changes in the orders given by General Hughes further than to require of me a written weekly report. He directed that early in December I should go with 90 men up the Oras River to its head waters and cross over to the head waters of the Catubig to co-operate with Major Williams of the First Infantry, who expected to use my force as a back-stop in the capture of General Lukban. On



Digitized by Google


Mariveles I.
Corregidor I.
Caballo I.
Carabao I.
Fortune I.
Talim I.
Talim Pt.
Tonsuya I.
Tingloy I.
Tingloy Pt.
Binangonan I.
Binangonan Pt.
Talim I.
Talim Pt.
Tonsuya I.
Tingloy I.
Tingloy Pt.
Binangonan I.
Binangonan Pt.
Marivelez I.
Corregidor I.
Caballo I.
Carabao I.
Fortune I.
Cavahoyan Is

Digitized by Google

this trip Lieutenant Brown was sent ahead to clear the trail of spears and spear traps which abounded. He encountered over a thousand of them. The difficulties of the trail can be judged by the fact that it took him three days to march over a trail that I followed with the main command in six hours after it had been cleared out. On this march, by reason of rains and high water, we were forced to camp in the mud and rain waiting for the waters to subside for three days, living mainly on the emergency rations at that time. More than twenty-five per cent of the command became sick and were left behind at the head waters of the Oras River in a camp, while the rest of the command went over the divide to unite with Major Williams. The only result of this expedition was the clearing out of a large tract of new Country of the insurrectos. Destroyed their rice and other property as usual.

"Lieutenant Brown did not return with me to Oras but kept on to Laguan, and later returned by sea. Lieutenant Goodrich met me on my return with a fresh detachment at Hippapod, near the head waters of the Oras River, and from there crossed over the mountains to the coast near La Penig, penetrating the country by entirely new trails, killing four bolomen in a skirmish and bringing in a dozen, or thereabouts, prisoners.

"During my absence Lieutenant Mills, Ninth Infantry, had completed a telephone line between Oras and Dolores, 10 miles.

"December 20th, my command was further increased by the arrival of Companies G and D of the Ninth Infantry, Lieutenants Drouillard and Collins commanding. Lieutenant Hartshorne, with Company M, Seventh Infantry, was ordered to Borongan and station at Hinolasan abandoned.

"From December 20th to the end of the month, all the troops available were brought into Oras for Christmas sports. Early in January arrangements were made with the commanding officer at Borongan, Captain Wallace, Seventh Infantry, to construct a telegraph line from Dolores to Borongan, simultaneous work from Dolores and Borongan. The Dolores end of it was under the charge of Lieutenant Mills of the Ninth, who completed his line to about three miles beyond Sulat, a little more than half of the distance. Captain Wallace found that it would be useless to construct a telephone line from his end to any great distance without clearing out the country of insurrectos between us, as they cut down his line about as fast as he could put it up. We arranged for a combined movement against the enemy. Captain Wallace furnished one hundred men and three officers, with himself in command; I sent 60 men under Lieutenant Drouillard, assisted by Lieutenants Collins,

Digitized by Google

Loeb, and Mills, to operate with them. They penetrated the interior of the country from ten to fifteen miles from the coast, and thoroughly cleared it of insurrectos and their property, from the Ulut River to San Julian Bay. The work on the telephone line was then continued, but Captain Wallace reported the difficulty at his end so great that it was impractical to put it through at that time; and, up to the time I left, it was not in working order beyond Tubig, some twenty miles from Oras.

"In the latter part of January I captured a messenger with a letter from Akales to Lukban; Akales was Lukban's military commander in northeast Samar. This man promised to take me to Lukban's haunts, to Lukban himself. I asked Captain Wallace to send me an officer and 25 men to assist me in an expedition after the insurrecto leader in Samar. He sent Lieutenant Wallace M. Craigie, Seventh Infantry, with 27 men. I took 65 men with Lieutenants Brown, Collins, and Loeb from my command at Oras and went about 80 miles into the interior, around the head waters of the Dolores River. The guide proved false, and after he had taken us to the vicinity of where he had claimed that Lukban was, then announced that the distance was eight days further. I knew him to be lying, but started Lieutenant Brown with a detachment of 25 men, with this native guide, in the direction he indicated. After traveling two or three hours he declared then that he knew nothing about the country. The principal men of Dolores and Oras were with this detachment, but neither their persuasions nor the threats of my officers would induce him to guide us as he had promised to do before starting. We destroyed some insurrecto barracks, some sixty miles up the Dolores River, on this trip, together with stores of rice. We met rifle-fire a few times, effected all the damage possible, both going and coming, and returned to the coast after ten days' absence. There was now a district of about five thousand square miles in extent (one hundred miles along the coast by fifty miles inland), with Oras for a center on the coast, freed from active insurrectos.

"I next proceeded to build up the towns of San Remon and Tubig. Lieutenant Drouillard, with his Company, G, of the Ninth, took charge at San Remon, 25 miles north of Oras; and Lieutenant Collins, with D Company, at Tubig, about the same distance south. Lieutenant Brown had charge of Dolores with Company K. All companies kept their Headquarters at Oras. Instructions were given these officers to invite the natives in and promise them protection of life and property and to order them to cultivate their rice and bring in their hemp and copra and store it until such time as the ports should be opened.

Digitized by Google

"During the months of January and February I sent several detachments into the country between San Remon and Gamay River, the latter river being about fifty miles north of Oras. The more important of these detachments were under Sergeant Fred H. Gould, Company H, Ninth Infantry, who went into this section in command of three different expeditions. On one expedition alone he captured and brought in 190 prisoners, and, in all, over 300. His work was characterized by daring and good judgment — an excellent example of the best kind of American Soldiers. For all that he hit them so hard, he seemed to have the infinite respect and even the kind regards of the people in this section of the Country. He captured several herds of carabao and brought them in, and such property as could not be brought to Oras and made use of was destroyed. For his most arduous work, which included hard marching and hard fighting, and the excellent results that he accomplished during the months of January and February, 1902, I recommend that Sergeant Fred H. Gould, Company H, Ninth Infantry, be given a certificate of merit.

"In building up the town of Tubig, insurrectos interfered with the peaceful occupations of the natives who had come in under our protection at that place. I sent Sergeant Michael Sullivan, Company H, Ninth Infantry, along the coast, and Private John Thomas, Company K, Ninth Infantry, into the interior, both to operate in the Tubig and Sulat section. Each had with him a detachemnt of native scouts and operated in this vicinity for some three weeks. In fact, Sergeant Sullivan was engaged in a fight at Sulat at the time we received notice from General Smith that armistice was in force, and, it being my orders to withdraw all the detachments into Oras, he had to fight his way back for the first five miles. No more offensive operations were engaged in, though it was necessary to suppress the insurgents around Tubig on three or four occasions, in one of which Pedro Almercen, a man of much influence on the east coast, was killed. Among his papers was found a letter from Lukban, who referred to the presence in his force of one William Denton, whom he described as a 'noble son of Washington, who had joined the insurgent cause as a lover of liberty.' This Denton was said by men of my command to have formerly been a private in Company C, Ninth Infantry, who deserted to the enemy shortly before the Balangiga massacre.

"The troops at San Remon were withdrawn in April to Oras in anticipation of our speedy relief, but the detachments at Tubig and Dolores were kept up until the arrival of Headquarters and one battalion of the First Infantry, on May 10, 1902, when they were relieved by detachments

Digitized by Google

of the First Infantry. We embarked on the transport Lawton, and sailed for Manila on May 13th.

"Of the hundreds of prisoners of war taken, some 300 of the worst were sent to the Military Prison at Catbalogan, Samar. I kept a good working force, averaging more than 100, on public works at Oras. I assigned others to outlying towns and barrios, kept many employed as packers for troops on the march, and released those giving evidence of good intentions on bail or their own recognizance.

"In regard to my personal part in the engagements during the eleven months on Samar, as called for in the endorsement, I took part in all of the larger expeditions that are indicated in this report. There was no engagement against any considerable body of rifle-men except the one in which Sergeant Bickhart commanded at Yabo, September 16th, 1901, which is reported above. A sergeant of Lukban's command, who surrendered to me in December, told me that he had fired upon me from amambush over forty times during the year. I fancy his statement was somewhat of an exaggeration, but in going up and down the Oras and Dolores rivers in the steam launch Julia, I operated the rapid-fire gun in the bow of the boat myself, and was fired on upon a great many occasions.

"To sum up the work of the year, we cleared a district approximately five thousand square miles in extent, of insurrectos, established four prosperous towns, namely: San Remon, Oras, Dolores, and Tubig, with several small barrios. In all of these towns we endeavoured to instruct the people in good sanitary arrangements, to build up their schools and churches, to have clean streets, and honest town officers. Apparently we succeeded.

"On my return to Manila I was sent for to come to the Commanding General's Headquarters, and was told by Captain Grote Hutchinson, Sixth Cavalry, Aid-de-Camp, that the General commanding (General Chaffee was then absent on a trip to the Southern islands) wished me to know of his approval of my work done with the Oras battalion of the Ninth Infantry, and his commendation of the results accomplished. I submitted written reports from time to time to General Hughes, the department commander, and later, weekly reports to General Smith, commanding the Sixth Separate Brigade.

"Copies of these reports were in the 'Letters Sent' book at Oras, but I have none available for transmittal herewith."

While these operations were in progress on the east side, constant scouting was carried on on the west and south coasts. The attention of the officers was also addressed to improving the orderliness and clean-

Digitized by Google

liness of the towns. Natives taken as prisoners were required to do scavenger work, and the inhabitants were instructed to keep their respective abodes and the contiguous grounds and streets in clean condition. In the southwestern part of the island the occupation of the towns was, however, especially resented, and it was there, on September 28th, that a treacherous attack resulted in almost complete annihilation of Company C, at Balangiga, the disaster being the worst of its kind that occurred through the islands.

Preceding this event the natives had evinced a threatening attitude at Basey, a bolo attack on a patrol resulting in the death of three men and wounding of a fourth. This occurred September 1st. A patrol under First Sergeant Willford, consisting of one Corporal and ten privates left Basey at 1:00 P. M. to inspect the new telephone line along the shore, six miles to a point opposite Tacloban, where it crossed the strait by cable. While returning, arranged in correct patrol order, with two men in advance and two a short distance in rear of the main portion, about 50 natives with bolos sprang from the reeds and tall grass at a point where the grass came close to the water's edge, many others remaining in the brush in support. While several crept up behind the two men in rear and slashed them with their bolos, others attempted to reach the men in front. But the cries of the men in rear gave warning just quickly enough to let the others realize the situation and open fire. Two other men besides those in rear were reached by the enemy's bolos, one of them receiving fatal wounds; but the rapid fire soon drove the enemy back, and the detachment took position to protect the dead and wounded, sending word to Basey. Lieutenant-Colonel Foote at once dispatched Captain Bookmiller, Lieutenant Drouillard, and 20 men to their relief, arriving about 8:00 P. M. The dead and wounded were then carried to Basey. Corporal John L. Weiss and Private Charles C. MacManius were dead, Private Jacob Settles mortally wounded, dying the next day at Tacloban, Leyte; Private James H. Swanton, less severely wounded. Seven bodies of the enemy were counted, but more were believed to have died, either from their wounds or from drowning; as many jumped into the water to escape the bullets. The number of the enemy wounded was not ascertained. The following morning Captain Bookmiller returned to the locality with 25 men, found the barrio deserted and burned it. He also, within the next few days, burned barrios up the Caducan and Iba Rivers, and on the coast southeast of Basey, ridding the country immediately about of the enemy's lurking laces and supply depots.

About the middle of the month Lieutenant-Colonel Foote went by

Digitized by Google

launch to Balangiga to inspect the location of Company C, informed the officers of what had transpired at Basey, and warned Captain Connell to be on his guard against treachery. The date of Company C's arrival at Balangiga was August 11th. The officers were Captain Thomas W. Connell, and First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus. Major Richard S. Griswold, Surgeon, United States Volunteers, was assigned as surgeon of the station. The company was landed at Balangiga without opposition, and the officials of the town professed friendship. The public buildings were appropriated for the use of the company, the upper part of the tribunal being used as barracks, and the lower floor as commissary storehouse, guard and prison room. The kitchen was in a building immediately in rear, large tents between the two buildings were used as mess rooms. Conical tents were erected at the northwest corner of the main building as shelter for native prisoners, sentinel post No. 1 guarding them on one side and another sentinel (No. 4) on the other. Two small houses at a short distance were occupied as additional barracks, the main building not being sufficient to accommodate the whole company. The tribunal faced an open square or plaza, and in front of it, on the opposite side of the plaza, was the church and the convent. The latter building was taken for the hospital, and the officers occupied one part of it as quarters. It was separated from the church by a narrow passage which was bridged by a closed hallway from the church on the level of the main floor of the convent, a staircase ascending from a door of the church to the level of the hall. A guard and sentinel were posted in the convent at the foot of an interior staircase, near a door looking out toward the plaza. This building which was on the south side of the church was slightly further back than the latter, and immediately in its rear was the river — a deep and rather rapid stream. A few yards below was a dock at which landing was made from barotas. Immediately in front of the church door was a large wooden cross, the stone base of which had crumbled somewhat, and to the left (north) side was the bell tower, a separate structure, about thirty feet high, holding several bells of different sizes, which were rung at stated hours of the day. The river flowed into a small open bay a short distance below the dock, and the bay, with a shelving beach, lay on the south side of the town. On the other sides the tangled tropical shrubbery bordered the town, and shrubbery about the native houses offered places of concealment.

This description and the facts of the attack are gathered chiefly from a report made by Captain Bookmiller, who went to Balangiga from Basey with most of his company the day following the attack,

Digitized by Google

and from a report by Captain F. L. Palmer, who had command of Company C a few months later, and, under instructions from Manila, secured the narratives of all the survivors.

Captain Connell, with detachments of his men, scouted the country in the immediate vicinity of the town, destroying about 600 pounds of palay at Sitio Bigoto, about a mile and a half from the town, on August 29th. One or two of the expeditions extended to a distance of seven or eight miles, and on one occasion Captain Connell went in barotas with a party along the coast to Guian, twenty miles distant, in the opposite direction from Basey, at which place a company of the First Infantry was stationed. Several parties were sent in search of Private Denton who was missing. It developed later that this man actually deserted to the enemy. He was captured the following year, tried, and sentenced to a long term of imprisonment.

The instructions to Captain Connell in occupying the town were those given generally, to endeavor to maintain friendly relations with the natives, to allow them to occupy their houses, and go about their usual business, to permit them to have possession of the church, and conduct their usual religious services. He kept on friendly terms with the Presidente and the native padre, required them to administer the duties of their offices, and to maintain a small police force of natives. He followed the usual custom in requiring the people to clean up their grounds, and he instituted rather extensive improvements in clearing the plaza of weeds and cutting down the thick brush that encroached on the borders of the town. The latter was undertaken, as a measure of safety, to remove possible hiding-places of the enemy. In carrying on this work he employed a number of native prisoners whom he had confined in tents under charge of the sentinels, and also called upon the Presidente to furnish other men for the purpose. The daily gathering of men for the work finally served as the cloak under which a large number was introduced into the town, without suspicion, ready for the attack. Lieutenant Bumpus made two trips, with a detachment of six men, in a good-sized proa, to Basey for supplies and mail. It was a full day's journey. At the first trip he spent two nights with the officers at Basey, Lieutenant-Colonel Foote, Captain Bookmiller, Lieutenant Drouillard, and Lieutenant Hammond, the intervening day being occupied in a visit to Tacloban, seven miles from Basey, across the San Juanico Strait. He carried back a few necessary articles, but no mail had reached either Basey or Tacloban for the company. The second trip was made September 24th. He again visited Tacloban September 25th, and this time secured a large sack of mail. On the 26th he rested his men at Basey,

Digitized by Google

and returned to Balangiga on the 27th, delivering the mail that evening. Many of the men got letters from home, the last words to reach them. The night was clear and still. Nothing marred the quiet repose of the little garrison. One soldier, who was unable to sleep in the forepart of the night, and who sat at a window of the barracks looking out on the moonlit plaza, said he observed some figures at the church door. It was unusual for the natives to leave their houses after nightfall, but his suspicions were allayed by a soft chanting proceeding from the church, indicating that a few were joining in some religious service. The morning came, September 28th, and the usual reveille calls aroused the men, who lazily prepared themselves for breakfast. Already the natives were gathering for the day's work, and many were lounging about the plaza in groups of 15 or 20, their working bolos in their hands. The prisoners, of whom there were 64 in the guard tents the night of the 27th, were within a few feet of fifty or more bolos which they had thrown together in a pile for the night near their tents. Captain Bookmiller, in his report, states regarding the prisoners as follows:

"On September 23rd Captain Connell had collected 78 natives of the town, and held most of them as prisoners for police work (cleaning up). During the next four days the town officials brought in prisoners from the country and nearly all of the prisoners living in town had been released, a number presenting themselves each morning for work. On September 27th the Chief of Police (native) informed Captain Connell that he would bring in more on the morning of the 28th. He sent in 13 on the afternoon of the 27th, but he did not return with them. Sixty-four prisoners were held over the night of the 27th. These prisoners had been making nipa for the roof of barracks, and worked between the tents and the main building. The bolos used by these, 50 in number, were piled in front of building, three feet north of entrance."

Relative to the outbreak of the attack, this report continues as follows:

"At 6:30 A. M., September 28th, breakfast time, a number of the prisoners were at work, and about 20 more had appeared voluntarily near Post No. 1, and the tents, apparently waiting to be set to work by the First Sergeant. The First Sergeant at this time was at breakfast in the kitchen. Nearly all of the men were at breakfast in the tents in front of the kitchen. The men who lived in barracks No. 2, (Sergeant Betron's) were eating under this building. Some few were walking to or from the kitchen. At the guard-house there were but the sentinel on No. 1, and the Sergeant of the guard. Private Gamlin, a member of the guard, had taken breakfast, gone to quarters in main building to return

Digitized by Google



Survivors of Balangiga. The bell was rung as signal for the attack.

Digitized by Google

his mess kit, and immediately relieved the sentinel on No. 2 Post. When he was in quarters he saw no one in there. Corporal Burke, with others, were at breakfast under Barracks G. The Chief of Police came near him and leaned against pillar of building, then walked along post No. 2 towards Barracks No. 3. As the sentinel passed him he seized the sentinel's rifle, gave a loud call, the church bells rang, and a rush was made by the natives simultaneously on the different barracks, officers' quarters, and on the men at the breakfast table and kitchen. The sentinel on No. 1 and the Sergeant of the guard were killed at once, and the native prisoners and others near rushed into main barracks. From the east of the kitchen the natives rushed upon the men at breakfast.

* * * * *

At the officers' quarters, which was entered from the church, and rear by enemy, First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus, Ninth Infantry, and Major R. S. Griswold, surgeon United States Volunteers, were killed in their rooms. Captain Thomas W. Connell, Ninth Infantry, evidently jumped from window and was killed about twenty feet from the building. The two members of the guard were both killed at sentinel's post. Acting First Sergeant James M. Randles was killed at kitchen."

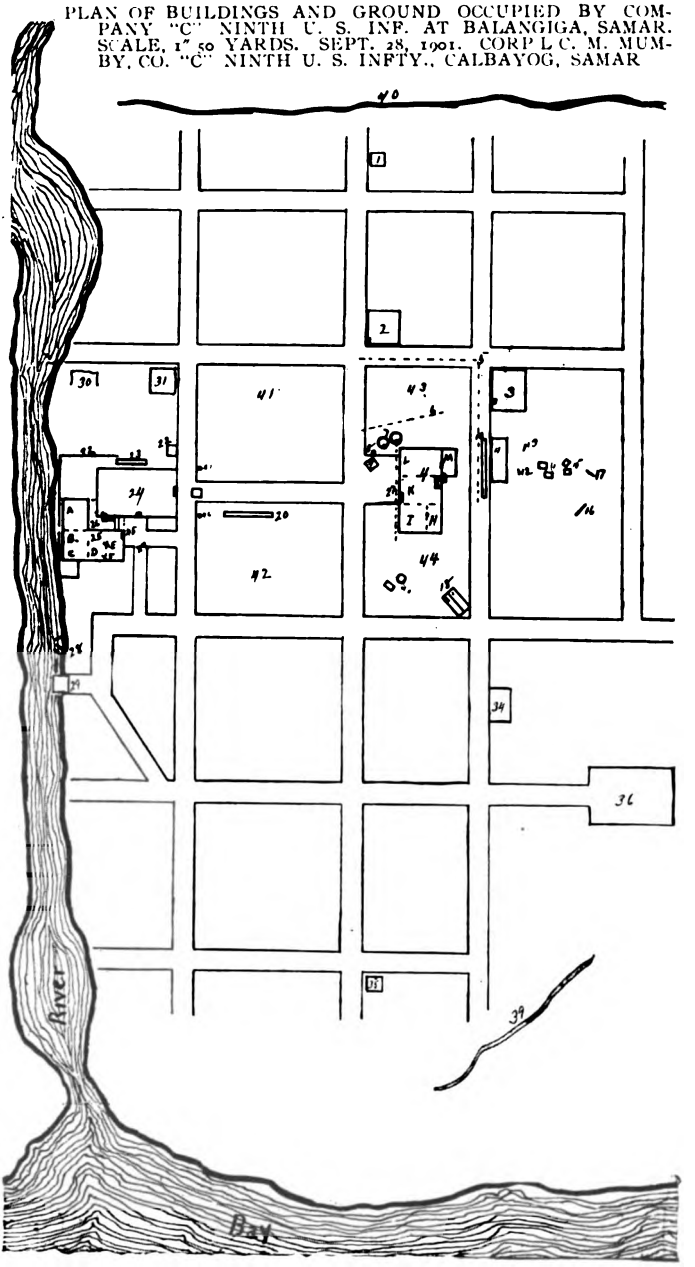
The details of the plan of attack were evidently thought out with care and were well nigh perfectly arranged. The time was the breakfast hour, when the men were all assembled and absent from their arms, and the officers still sleeping. A certain number of individuals were assigned to assassinate particular persons, such as the sentinels on post, of whom there were four; one or two where to ring the church bells as the general signal for the attack; the Chief of Police was to see that all were ready at their posts, and at the proper moment to call out to men at the bells, and at the same time grab the rifle of the sentinel on Post No. 2. Small groups were told off to kill the officers, the Acting First Sergeant, and the few individuals who might be at the two outlying houses used as barracks. A large number were to be in the plaza near the entrance to the barracks, having their bolos in their hands as though ready to begin the work of the day, to rush in and up the stairs to the main dormitory to secure the arms and ammunition belts. With these the prisoners, most of whom had been brought in from the surrounding country during the few days immediately preceding, were to arm themselves. They were, doubtless, an organized lot of insurgents prepared to do the bidding of their leaders, and the fifty bolos, which they had been using at their work the day before, were near at hand to be seized as they sprang forth from the guard tents. Finally a large number were assembled along the

Digitized by Google

PLAN OF BUILDINGS AND GROUND OCCUPIED BY COMPANY "C" NINTH U. S. INF. AT BALANGIGA, SAMAR. SCALE, 1" 50 YARDS. SEPT. 28, 1901. CORP'L C. M. MUMBY, CO. "C" NINTH U. S. INFTY., CALBAYOG, SAMAR

INDEX

1. Residence of chief police.
2–3. Small barracks.
4. Main barracks.
5. Post No. 2.
6. Post No. 4.
7. Conical tents for prisoners.
8. Flagstaff.
9. Well for drinking water.
10. Dining tents.
11. Kitchen.
12. Buzzacot.
13. Woodpile.
14. Bake oven and Bakery tent.
15. Hen-coop and pig-sty.
16. Lavatory.
17. Where Prvt. Wright was buried.
18. Graves of Schechterle and McGilligan.
19. Bath tent and well for wash water.
20. Where 33 Americans' dead were buried.
21. Large cross.
22. Bell tower.
23. Where enemy's dead were buried.
24. Church.
25. Convent.
26. Passageway between church and convent on ground.
27. Post No. 1.
28. Barotes survivors escaped.
29. Docks for small boats.
30–1–2–3. Ruins of old cathedral.
34. Police headquarters.
35. Residence of presidente.
36. Cemetery.
37. Bridle path to Caloogan, 7½ miles.
38. Bridge over small creek.
39–40. Insurgents trenches.
41–2–3–4. Plaza.
45. Stairway and Post No. 3.
46–47. Trees.
A. Kitchen for officers' mess and hospital mess.
B. Hallway.
C. Room used for hospital.
D. Room used for officers' barracks.
E. Where Lt. Bumpus was killed.
F. Where Major Grisswold was killed.
G. Where Capt. Connell was killed.
H. Orderly room on 2nd floor.
I. Sales commissary on 1st floor.
K. Guard room and prison, 1st floor.
L. Store room and prison, 1st floor.
M. Squad room, Srg't. Hickman and four (4) men.



Digitized by Google

beach and in the grass and shrubbery among the houses, just south of the kitchen, to rush on the men at breakfast.

The Chief of Police, who gave the signal, doubtless looked over the ground to see that everybody was in readiness. At the last he was near Sergeant Betron's shack talking with Corporal Burke, leaning carelessly against a post. Five or six of the men who lived there had brought their breakfast from the kitchen, and were eating under the house. We may imagine that he saw the possibility of their getting at their rifles, and felt some uneasiness about it. The group of natives assigned to the house was, perhaps, too small, but they were ready, hiding close at hand, and the attack could not be delayed. A few of the soldiers were already finishing their breakfast, two or three were passing from the breakfast table. Sergeant Sharer, who was Sergeant of the guard, had just returned to the guard-room. The moment for action had arrived. The Chief of Police walked along the sentinel's post, Post No. 2, grabbed the sentinel's rifle as he passed him, and yelled. The bell-ringers could see this, looking from the doorway of the bell tower across the plaza, and they heard the call. The bells clanged forth the terrible notes, and the rush was made. Then followed a few minutes of hurrying, rushing, fighting, stabbing, cutting, in which all the officers and more than half the 71 men were killed, at least half of the remainder received serious wounds, and only 4 escaped without wounds of some nature. The assailants are believed to have numbered 400, and an estimate of the number killed, based on the statements of the survivors, is placed at about 100. The others were driven to cover. The failure of the enemy's plan to exterminate the garrison appears to be attributable to not assigning a large enough force to assault the two detached houses, Sergeant Betron's, No. 3, and Sergeant Markley's, No. 2. The assembling of seven or eight of Sergeant Betron's squad under their house to eat breakfast was not sufficiently provided against. These men engaged in hand-to-hand encounters in which all were more or less seriously wounded, but met with some success in getting at their rifles. Their fire drove off their immediate assailants. They then formed a rallying point for a few others. Sergeant Markley had also succeeded in getting his rifle at his own shack, No. 2. He, Corporal Irish, and Private Swanson, from that shack, and two or three from Sergeant Betron's, starting forth, relieved individuals here and there who had escaped death at the first onslaught and were hard pressed. Such escapes as were made elsewhere were usually attributable to the fact that the individual happened at the moment to be at some spot separate from the others, or succeeded at once in getting possession of some weapon — a club, a

Digitized by Google

baseball bat, a carpenter's adze, or a kitchen knife, and with these stood off the assailants for the first few minutes. Most of the soldiers in the dining tents made a rush for the barracks to get their rifles, but this had been anticipated, and even before they could get to the staircase, that and the barrack room were swarming with natives, and they were set upon by the crowds that came in from the edges of the town. Still, a few succeeded in getting up in the building, and perhaps others would have done so if the broad ladder at the back of the building, which served as a staircase to one of the squad-rooms, had not broken, precipitating the crowd of struggling natives and soldiers to the ground together. The few who got into the barracks were set upon by the natives who had preceded them, and were killed or badly wounded; two or three escaped death, however, by jumping from the windows, and then, although at once pursued, succeeded by one chance or another in warding off or dodging their assailants for the few minutes before the rifles at the detached houses began to have effect. The natives who got possession of rifles were unfamiliar with the mechanism of the bolt, and in the first few minutes could not operate it for loading. The Chief of Police who seized the sentinel's rifle could not fire it, for, although the magazine was full, the cut-off was closed, and he did not know how to turn it.

Among those who fought individually and escaped was Sergeant John D. Closson, a tall, powerful man, who was a match for several natives. He had a few minutes of desperate struggling alone, but soon united with three or four others, who, working together, saved themselves. His account is as follows:

"I was seated at the south end of mess table when the ringing of the bell and the yell seemed to come together. I looked out and saw the natives coming towards us, and I jumped and ran to back stairs to barracks, reaching them at the same time with the natives. I ran upstairs and into the annex (M), pushing my way through the natives who did not attempt to bolo me. They were crowding in to get the guns. I got in and seized a gun, but somebody grabbed me from behind, and they were crowding so that I couldn't do anything, and they pulled me down onto the floor. Then all but three or four let go of me and went looking for rifles. I wrenched away and tried to get up. They tried to hold me. I hit at them with my fists and then they began to hit at me with bolos. I thus received several wounds, the worst a severe cut in head over left temple. I was also stabbed by a stilletto. It entered behind left ear and came out of throat, severing a nerve and depriving me of all control over left side of face. Also had a couple of light wounds on top of head, another just above left elbow, and another across first and

Digitized by Google

second fingers of left hand. I wrenched loose at last and got up, got hold of a stick and began fighting with that, when a native came into the annex from the main barracks with a rifle and belt in his hands. I knocked him down, grabbed the rifle and belt, and jumped out of north window of the annex to the ground. As I struck the ground two bolomen made for me. I struck one beside the head, knocking him down, but breaking the stock of rifle off at the smallest part. I didn't know the piece was loaded when I struck, but as I glanced at the broken stock I saw that the piece was cocked, so I took chances on its being loaded and fired at the other native, killing him. I opened the chamber, threw out the shell, and noticed that the magazine was loaded, but cut off. I loaded the piece from my belt and started for the corner of barracks. Some natives came around this corner. I turned down the magazine cut-off and turned loose on them, and they ran away. I then came around to main door, firing several more times as I saw natives, and at this door I met DeGraffenreid, Considine and Manire. They had a shovel and two spades with which they were hitting at the natives and trying to get into the hallway, the doors being closed from inside and held by natives. I fired once or twice through the door. The natives let go and we forced the door open and drove the natives upstairs, firing into them and driving them off the stairs. At the top I found another rifle, which I gave to Manire, then I got another one for myself and gave Considine the one I had been using. DeGraffenreid also had a rifle now, so we fought on upstairs and kept firing, some natives jumping out the windows and others going into the orderly room. Through the cracks in the orderly room we could see it was crowded with natives, so we opened up on them, and fourteen or sixteen were killed in there. Then we came downstairs and began firing at natives on the plaza. Presently I started over towards the church to see about the officers and to see who was firing near the river, but met Corporal Hickman, who said officers were all dead. I made up my mind so many of our men had been killed we would have to go away."

Sergeant George F. Markley, also a large man, saved himself by his size and activity, and, after driving off his assailants, was one of those who started forth to relieve individuals. He describes his first few minutes as follows:

"I was on duty as barrack guard of my shack, No. 2, since 8:00 A. M., September 27th, and was not yet relieved at breakfast on the 28th, so I stayed in the shack as we had orders that the barracks were never to be left without a guard. I stood in the doorway looking about and hollered to Private Cain to hurry and get back so I could get breakfast.

Digitized by Google

As he came towards my shack I started to go towards him, not waiting till he was clear there. I noticed a lot of natives about the guard tents and in front of barracks No. 27, and some on streets too. As I passed Cain I said to him, 'the natives are back early today,' or somethng like that, and went on to breakfast. I was just holding out my plate to get my breakfast from Cook Walls when I heard a yell and the church bells began to ring. I was rather suspicious of the natives there anyhow, and I seemed to know at once that this meant an attack, so I yelled out 'Get your rifles, boys,' or something to that effect. I ran towards my shack, No. 2, passing between the kitchen, No. 11, and the mess tents, No. 10, and Private Wood ran by me. When I got out beyond the mess tents the whole place seemed to swarm with natives. I cut across the corner of the plaza towards my shack, and near it was a policeman (native) with a club in his hand. He started to hit me with it, but I threw my tin cup in his face and went by. As I got to the steps I saw a native with a bolo up on the porch. I gave a jump and landed on porch by him. He struck at me and I caught his hand with my left hand and the bolo cut my fingers slightly. Then I hit him with my right fist, knocking him out into the road. My bunk was very near the door, and I grabbed my rifle, which was loaded in chamber and magazine. There were four natives in the shack then, killing Private Vobayda. When they saw me they tried to jump out a hole on the north wall of the shack. I shot one and he fell out this hole and over Private Swanson, who had followed me to the shack (he lived there too), but had gone round behind it as there were too many natives in front. Swanson then came in through this hole and as I saw him I turned to the south window. The native policeman who had struck at me before was still standing near shack and not more than ten or fifteen feet away, so I shot him first. As I threw another cartridge into the chamber, Corporal Irish fell at the steps. I shot one of the natives, striking at him with a bolo, then the rest ran. I stepped out onto the porch and helped up Irish, who was exhausted and crawling up the steps, and told him to get a rifle. Then from this same place I shot a native near the flag-pole; he had a rifle trying to use it; also one I saw running with a cartridge belt. Then I went in and put on my belt and got Swanson and Irish and we went across towards main barracks, firing at natives in front of it."

Corporal Arnold Irish, who succeeded in reaching Sergeant Markley at his shack, describes more particularly their firing, showing that they made a place for themselves and became a nucleus of safety for others, as follows:

"I was at breakfast and heard a yell and bells ringing. Looked out

Digitized by Google

from under tent at side and saw natives attacking a soldier. I then heard someone about the middle of the mess table yell out, 'They're in on us, run for your lives.' I looked around and saw natives surrounding the kitchen on north, east, and south; I looked about for something to defend myself with. Saw and picked up a wooden club — heavy cane. As I rushed out of the south end of mess tent two natives made for me with bolos. I hit one and dodged by the other and ran around south end of main barracks, and on around to well. As I ran past front of barracks I saw a big native policeman with a rifle he had just fired. I think it was Donahue he shot. I ran on toward the shack where I lived with Sergeant Markley. As I reached the corner, there were two natives behind me with clubs, and one came at me from the street, at my left, with a knife. I hit him and tried to run up steps into house but stairs gave way and I fell, and the natives began to club me. I crawled up the remaining steps, and Sergeant Markley began shooting at the natives who ran. When I entered I saw Private Vobayda standing, leaning forward and gasping. He had been on guard the night before and had had breakfast early, and had been wounded at the first rush, and while rolling a cigarette, I guess, for papers and tobacco were scattered over his bunk where his rifle lay with a cartridge in the chamber, but the bolt open. 'Irish, I'm wounded, can't you do something for me?' he said as I came in. I said 'I can't now, Frank, we are surrounded;' I then seized his rifle and knelt to fire out a window, and just then he fell dead to the floor, between the bunks. His wound seemed to be in the neck, which was bleeding profusely. I began firing at natives near main door of barracks, till the gun got too hot, then I changed it for my own, which was hanging up there. I must have fired fifty shots before the natives began to run. Sergeant Markley was there firing too. Hearing no other rifles firing I thought we were the only ones left alive but soon heard some shots from Corporal Burke's shack. Then Markley and I jumped out onto the ground and started for Corporal Burke's shack. When near where Private Record lay, I saw Sergeant Betron, Corporal Burke and others near their shack firing at natives disappearing in brush east of the kitchen. I then started back towards main street, and just as I reached it I heard some one calling and thought it was the Captain. I called Sergeant Markley and we went over together towards the officers' quarters, but found it was Corporal Hickman calling. The Captain was dead and his body lay on the ground there. Seeing natives jumping into river beyond convent, Markley and I (Mumby had joined us too) went to river bank and began firing at natives in the water."

Digitized by Google

The chief nucleus of safety was made, however, by the group at Sergeant Betron's shack, those who were eating there when the alarm was given. They were Corporal Burke, Musician Meyers, Privates Armani 2nd, Clark, Driscoll, Gibbs, and Stier. The natives were upstairs in the house ahead of them, and in the struggle all but Stier were more or less wounded, and Armani 2nd, and Driscoll, were so seriously injured that in subsequent encounters they lost their lives. The accounts of this struggle are unfortunately very meagre, but it appears that Corporal Burke, in a desperate determination to do and die, jumped at the throat of one of his assailants, threw him to the floor, rolled over and over with him, and in doing so came in reach of a loaded revolver, which he seized and fired killing his opponent. This shot, and those of Sergeant Markley's were the first ones heard. Gradually the group of men fighting for their lives, gained the mastery, secured their rifles and belts and, firing from the windows, drove to cover all who showed themselves. The sounds of firing from this shack attracted thence men who had held their own near the barracks. Sergeant Betron, Privates Mumby and Gamlin, and Sergeant Markley, Privates Irish and Swanson, started over from their shack. But Sergeant Markley, hearing a voice from the direction of the officers' quarters, turned out on the plaza, and calling to others to join him, started toward the convent to render assistance to the officers. But the officers had already fallen; they were all dead. Lieutenant Bumpus and Dr. Griswold had been killed in their rooms. Captain Connell had jumped from the window and started for the barracks, but was immediately set upon by three natives and killed after going a few steps. The natives had entered the upper floor of the convent by the staircase, ascending from the side door of the church. A sufficient number had been told off to conceal themselves in the church, and their ascent was unopposed, no sentinel being placed at that point. A sentinel at the foot of the main staircase had been despatched at once, as had another member of the guard off duty and sleeping. The corporal of that detached post, Hickman, chanced to be sitting upstairs at a table at a rear window, and although separated from his rifle, and having no weapon, he succeeded in eluding the natives, and was one of four who was uninjured. Private Bertholf, who was the officers' cook, and a small native boy named Francisco, whom they employed, although set upon from two sides, escaped by jumping from a balcony at the rear. Bertholf had grabbed his rifle and belt. In trying to load it he jammed a cartridge. Corporal Hickman joined him, set it right, and the two men and boy, with the one rifle, made a defensive group which kept off the enemy long enough to enable the

Digitized by Google

fighting squads at the two distant shacks to get in their ringing blows. It was Corporal Hickman's voice that was heard by Sergeant Markley, calling for aid. The natives were now on the run. Some were swimming the river, and Markley, with the four or five who had rifles, coming up at Hickman's call, opened on them and killed many. The natives in the barracks were now stampeded. Many of them jumped out of the windows, throwing out rifles and belts as they did so, and fifteen or twenty barricaded themselves in the orderly room at the end of the barracks. Here they were found by Sergeant Closson and the men who were fighting with him, and all were eventually killed, through the partition. Those who jumped out ran off. One or two of the surviving soldiers armed themselves from the rifles lying on the ground. Markley and his men, after finishing with the natives in the river, and hearing cries toward the bay shore, ran that way, drove off a deployed line of natives lying along the crest of the beach, killed a number, and rescued one of three soldiers, Claas, who were in the bay, pursued by natives in barotas. The others had already been stabbed and had sunk.

The soldiers were now in possession of the plaza; the natives had all been driven to cover. Markley posted men to watch the streets and all others set to work to aid the wounded. Sergeant Betron was the senior surviving non-commissioned officer, and he decided the best thing to do was to get away from the town. Of the total number of the garrison, including 3 officers, and 1 Hospital Corps private, 74 in all, 5 were uninjured (Corporal Hickman, Privates Bertholf, Clark, Stier and Wingo), 12 were slightly wounded (Sergeants Betron and Markley, Corporal Burke, Cook Walls, Privates Allen, Considine, DeGraffenreid, Gibbs, Irish, Mumby, Qula, and Swanson); all others were killed or so severely wounded as to be practically helpless, and requiring medical attention. There were 19 of the severely wounded, of whom 10 finally recovered (Sergeant Closson, Corporal Pickett, Musician Meyers, Privates Claas, Keller, Manire, Ralston, Uhtof, Marak, and Gamlin). Three officers and 35 men were killed in the fight, 9 died en route to Basey or in hospital, and 1, who escaped from the fight uninjured, Wingo, was lost en route, either drowned or killed.

Although the manful struggle for supremacy resulted for the moment in victory for the small band of surviving soldiers, flight to Basey seemed imperative. No doubt the decision to abandon Balangiga was brought about as much through consideration for the wounded as from motives of personal safety. Many wounded needed immediate attention, the surgeon and his Hospital Corps man were both dead. It was reasonable to suppose that the several hundred natives who had escaped into the

Digitized by Google

surrounding jungle would return to the attack, and would come next time armed with the rifles which they had secured from the barracks. How could they be successfully opposed by so few survivors? What hope was there of relief appearing at that remote place? Could any one be spared to go for help? Sergeant Betron gave orders to secure what boats there were at the landing and placed a sentinel over them. Cook Walls was instructed to get hard-tack, water and ammunition, and a systematic inspection of the fallen was made to see if any were still alive. The severely wounded were carried to the landing and placed in the boats, the barracks were ransacked for rifles, and all that could not be carried away were rendered unserviceable by disassembling the bolts and throwing the parts into the bay. The company records were secured, but in the confusion of other preparations they were afterwards misplaced and forgotten. An effort was made to burn the barracks, but the hard wood, of which the floors, doors and beams were constructed, would not easily catch fire, and in the haste of departure the effort was, unfortunately, abandoned. Consequently the subsistence stores, boxed rifles and ammunition which were stored in the lower part of the building, fell into the hands of the enemy. It was calculated that they secured 52 serviceable rifles and 26,000 rounds of ammunition. The flag was hauled down by Private Wingo and brought away.

The boats which the men found at the dock and up the river were taken down to its mouth, after several of the most severely wounded had been placed in them, and the other men embarked from the beach. They were barotas with outriggers. One was a large boat and carried 18 men, including several who were so badly wounded that they had to lie down. Sergeant Betron had charge of this boat. Another carried 6 men, Corporal Hickman in charge. Another took in 9, including the native muchacho, named Francisco. Bertholf, Marak, and Considine were among these. Sergeant Markley and Private Swanson got into a small boat that would hold two, as did also Wingo and Powers in another, but Powers was so badly wounded he could not give any assistance in paddling.

The journey was a perilous one on account of the rough sea, and the danger of landing in the presence of the hostile natives. Sergeant Betron's boat kept afloat and aided the others, taking in three men from the boat containing Bertholf, Marak, and the boy Francisco, which boat filled with water when the wind came up in the afternoon. After relieving Bertholf's boat, an effort was made to land, with a view to sending back to aid those who had remained with Bertholf in the boat,

Digitized by Google

but the waves were rough toward evening, the rocks were dangerous, so the boat continued.

Corporal Hickman's boat was the most seaworthy of all, best manned, and went furthest out from shore, but upon hearing calls from Sergeant Betron's boat, after the sea got rough, went toward it and remained near it during the rest of the journey. These two boats succeeded in getting to the shore about dusk, and one or two men landed, but it was too rough to get the wounded ashore, and after changing Private Meyers from Hickman's boat to Betron's, and getting Claas in his place in Hickman's, they went on. These boats arrived at Basey about 3:30 A. M., September 29th, and aroused Captain Bookmiller and his company, to whom they related the harrowing tales of their experiences.

Sergeant Markley and Private Swanson had been told by Sergeant Betron to hurry ahead with their small boat. When the water got rough their boat filled, and they landed, emptied it and tried again; but it filled again, so they abandoned it, and taking their paddles started along the shore. After going five or six miles they found another barota, the outriggers of which were slightly out of repair. Markley sent Swanson to get a native whom they saw to fix it, and to accompany them to do the paddling, as they were both tired out. Upon going to the man, Swanson apparently persuaded him, for he started with him, but when close by he made a sudden assault upon Swanson, getting hold of his rifle and trying to wrench it away. Swanson relates that in the struggle he saw the native glance at his belt, which reminded him of a dagger he had there, which he had picked up at Balangiga. He seized it, and struck the native as hard as he could. The native then started to run, and Swanson shot him. In the meantime he had yelled for Markley, who came up. They decided to push off in the barota, and got away safely at once. With nothing to eat or drink they paddled along as well as they could all day and all night, losing their way in the darkness. Finally they landed on the island of Leyte, about 5:00 A. M., September 29th, reaching Tanauan about 9:00 o'clock, where they were cared for. Information of the disaster had already been communicated by telephone from Basey to Tanauan.

Bertholf and Marak relate their experience after being left in the half sunken boat with two wounded men, Armini 2nd and Buhrer. Marak says:

"About ten miles from Balangiga our boat swamped, and Shoemaker, Considine and Keller got into Sergeant Betron's boat, and Driscoll got into Wingo's boat, and as they could not take any more they told us they would pick us up as soon as they could send some out.

Digitized by Google

Keller, Shoemaker, and Driscoll were the worst wounded of us, and could not sit up or be of any assistance. I don't know how Considine happened to go too. Our boat only sank a foot or so below the surface of the water, as the outriggers held it up. About dark the tide seemed to carry us in to shore and we got ashore about midnight. We hid away till morning. After landing Bertholf got us a cocoanut and gave us a drink, the first we had had since breakfast and we were nearly dead with hunger and thirst. In the morning Armini and Buhrer were in bad condition. Armini could walk. He had been stabbed in the abdomen; but Buhrer had to be helped along. He had several cuts over the head and his throat was bleeding too. We started to hunt for a boat. We got to a point where Armini and Buhrer could not climb over the rocks and boulders, so we hid them among the rocks where they could only be seen from the water-front. We told them we would try to get a barota and come back for them. They seemed pleased at that, so we went on. About a hundred yards further on I saw a body on the rocks and went to examine it, and found it to be Private Powers, who had been in Wingo's boat. He was in his underclothes, and the back of his head was split open. He had not had his head bandaged before getting into the boat, and had helped row, so we knew he had been killed since landing. While we were talking about this we heard screams, turned and saw about 30 natives, armed with bolos, rushing Armini and Buhrer. Some of the natives saw us and started for us. We had only one rifle and a couple of belts, which had been saved by the native muchacho when our boat swamped. We had thrown over all the other rifles and belts to lighten the boat, as we did not expect to land, but the muchacho saved these. The odds being so great we ran, and must have gone about four miles along the beach till we found an old barota, in which we shoved off from the shore; then the pursuing natives disappeared. About two hours after this we were picked up by the Pittsburg."

Bertholf's account was similar, but with the additional statement that after getting ashore they emptied the water from their barota, and would have been able to use it in the morning, but the tide came in during the night and floated it off, so it was lost. The information concerning Powers, who was seen on the edge of the shore with new wounds, gives the only clew of the fate of Wingo and Driscoll. It is related in the accounts by others that Wingo's boat was first tied behind the large boat, that Driscoll was taken in by him when Bertholf's boat sank, and when the wind came up and the waves were rough, he feared his boat would sink and asked that the rope be cast off from the big boat, believ-

Digitized by Google

ing he could manage alone better. The waves were too great, however, and his small boat became separated from the others, and finally was submerged. His signals were heard in the large boat, but apparently nothing could be done, and that was the last seen of them. The boat was probably washed ashore during the night, as Bertholf's was, and natives surrounded and dispatched the three men. Wingo was unwounded, and possibly he escaped by running after getting ashore, but, judging from remarks made about his good conduct during the fighting, a declaration he is said to have made, that he would not leave Balangiga as long as a wounded man was there alive, also a willingness to sacrifice himself if there were not room in the boats for all the wounded, it is more probable he stood by his wounded comrades and died fighting to protect them.

Captain Bookmiller and his men at Basey first directed their attention to the wounded, caring for them and providing food and drink for all. The news was communicated as soon as possible by telephone to Tanauan, and telegraphed from there to Department Headquarters at Iloilo, and to Regimental Headquarters at Calbayog. A small coasting steamer, named the Pittsburg, was called for from Tanauan, and arrangements were at once made for a large detachment to proceed on her to Balangiga. Captain Bookmiller took fifty men of his company, and eight of the least injured survivors of Company C, leaving 30 men to guard Basey. Starting at 9:00 A. M. they picked up Privates Bertholf and Marak en route, passing near enough to see them by the merest chance, and arrived at Balangiga about 12 o'clock. As the steamer arrived within 500 yards of the shore, the natives hastened away, fired upon from the deck of the boat. They had carried off the arms and ammunition and some parts of the subsistence stores, and then burned the barracks. Captain Bookmiller's men gathered together the bodies of the dead, and buried them in a long grave on the plaza in front of the church. The 3 officers and 29 enlisted men were there buried, care being taken by Surgeon Combe to obtain the names, and place with each body, in a bottle, the name, rank, etc., for further identification. The natives killed had been buried by their fellows before the arrival of the Basey party. It was estimated from the length of the grave that about fifty natives were killed. A later estimate, made from the statements of the survivors, placed the number at about one hundred. The attacking force was believed to have numbered about four hundred. Captain Bookmiller's command returned to Basey the same day, having done all that was possible. A day or two later the town was reoccupied by a company of the Eleventh Infantry.

Digitized by Google

This terrible disaster caused a profound sensation throughout the military forces in the islands, and aroused a determination to stamp out the insurrection in Samar. Reinforcements were sent there shortly after, consisting of a battalion of the Seventeenth Infantry, one of the Twelfth Infantry, one of the Twenty-sixth Infantry, and a battalion of marines, under Lieutenant-Colonel Waller, with whom the Ninth Infantry had served in China. The marines, who were landed at Basey,



A typical river expedition during the Samar Campaign.

relieved Captain Bookmiller's command, Company G, which took station at Catbalogan; the remnant of Company C at Calbayog. Captain Sigworth, who had recently returned from the United States, was placed in command of Company C to reorganize it. Brigadier-General Jacob H. Smith was ordered to the island to have charge of the military operations in that district, making his Headquarters at Tanauan, Leyte.

A few days prior to his leaving Calbayog for Cebu, that is on September 15, 1901, General Hughes wrote a letter to Captain Schoeffel at Tarangnan to the following effect:

"It seems that Abuque has come over to the Gandara again, and is

Digitized by Google

preparing to make a fuss about our sending supplies up the river. He is entirely in his place in doing so, but can he succeed? The last time he tackled the Hercules they put four or five shots in her, and one of these days they may shoot well enough to penetrate her boiler and bother us. In addition to this, I am told that back from the river there is a good deal of agriculture going on, and people seem to be very much at home. May be they are in condition to receive company. I suggest that you send a detachment of, say, 25 men up to some suitable camping place about one and one-half miles south of the confluence of the two branches, and locate it on the river bank in good ground, and with camp equipage, and have all that vicinity harried over. I am told that camotes are good in that vicinity still. It might be well that the detachment take boats to move up and down stream, but I leave all details to you."

In accordance with the instructions thus given, Captain Schoeffel took a detachment of his Company E up the Gandara and located a camp on the left bank of the river, about four miles below the old town of Gandara, leaving Lieutenant Wallace in charge. A number of prisoners were sent to the camp from Calbayog, and the operation of destroying supplies was begun, attention being given chiefly to fields of half-grown rice. The camp ground was located at the base of a small ridge parallel to the stream. There was barely room between the ridge and river for a double row of Sibley tents, with a company street between. Lieutenant Wallace's tent was at the lower end of the camp, and the kitchen and cook tent at the upper end. The ridge was possibly 100 feet in height, and was covered with thick underbrush and hard-wood trees. It was proposed to clear off this brush and place a sentinel on the ridge to overlook the country back from the river, but the hard-wood trees had so broken up the few axes that the completion of the undertaking was delayed. A sentinel was posted at each end of the camp. Shortly after the Balangiga massacre Captain Schoeffel visited the camp, by a march overland, left a few more men, increasing the strength of the detachment to 40 in all, including Lieutenant Wallace and one Hospital Corps private. He also gave instructions that the rifles should have the bayonets fixed and the magazines filled at all times. Lieutenant Wallace went to Calbayog for supplies on October 14th, and during his absence, on the morning of the 16th, just before the breakfast hour, the camp was attacked by a large force of bolomen. The natives swarmed over the crest of the ridge and around both ends of the camp, catching some of the soldiers at their breakfast and some in their tents. They cut the tent cords, allowing the tents to fall on

Digitized by Google

their victims, stabbing them while thus enveloped. The cries of alarm at the first appearance of their assailants aroused all, and jumping for their rifles the men made good use of them, with bayonets and bullets. It was a hand-to-hand fight, lasting a few minutes only. The soldiers gradually gained the ascendancy, although many were cut to pieces with the murderous bolos, and in the end the natives were driven off, with a loss of about 100 killed. Over 90 bodies of dead natives were counted on the ground, as a result of this fight, a day or two after. The number of the assailants was estimated at 250. In their retreat they left a large flag, 3 Krag rifles, 3 United States cartridge belts, 300 rounds of ammunition, calibre 30, and 175 bolos and daggers. The detachment suffered severely, having 8 killed and 10 wounded, two of the latter dying in the afternoon of the 15th, one, Private Robert L. Hampton, dying October 23rd, and one other, Private Jack M. Russell, who was shot in the right leg, dying of his wound after several months' suffering in hospital. The Hospital Corps private, Heinze, was also among the wounded, making 19 casualties in all. The needs of the wounded again determined the question of withdrawal, and after destroying the tents and such property as could not be carried away, and burying the dead, the detachment embarked in their small boats and proceeded down the river. In the meantime a message had reached Captain Schoeffel informing him of what had occurred, and, starting with a few men by boat to give assistance, he met the party near the mouth of the river. Lieutenant Wallace, having left Calbayog on the Hercules before word reached there, was part way up the river when he met the stricken party. All arrived back at Calbayog about midnight, and the seriously wounded wer placed in the hospital, where everything possible was done for them. The two who died en route were First Sergeant William F. Gormby, who, as the senior present, was in charge of the camp in Lieutenant Wallace's absence, and Private John P. Kelly. The names of the other killed and wounded were:

Killed — Edward F. Burns, Orville J. Dromgoole, Carl M. Johnson, William Loftus, Jack Pleoplis, William H. Ritchie, George W. Teachout, and Charlie Wilson.

Wounded — Musician Charles W. Buck, Privates Martin G. Lyons, Henry Stierle, Eugene DeWitt, Frank McAndrews, Joseph A. Monahan, and the men, Hampton, Russell, and Heinze, already mentioned. The last named was highly praised by his comrades for manful conduct, both during the fight and afterwards in his attentions to the wounded, although severely wounded himself in both arms. In this hand-to-hand encounter at least one of the men found himself in an awkward situa-

Digitized by Google

tion in being unable to withdraw his bayonet after a thrust with his rifle, the bayonet penetrating the breast-bone of his assailant.

Shortly prior to this attack on Lieutenant Wallace's camp, a scouting party from Company I, consisting of three non-commissioned officers and twelve privates, while returning by boat to the camp of the company, on the east branch of the Gandara, was fired on by insurgents and two men were seriously wounded, viz., Frank W. Gossin and Walter Harper. This occurred on September 28th. The following day another party was detailed to operate along the banks of the Gandara, some of the men in boats, and one man, Private Philip Durand, was drowned.

Company M had numerous scouting parties out from their stations further down the coast, and on September 13th Musician John E. Smith was wounded.

A statement of all scouting parties from the various companies would show almost daily expeditions, and hundred of miles covered. The record is similar to that made in Luzon against the Tagalos two years previous. The difficulties of the terrain were, however, much greater.

November 11, 1901, a detachment of 15 men of Company E, under Lieutenant Wallace, and 10 native scouts, under Lieutenant Lang, (not of the Ninth Infantry), left Tarangnan at 4: 15 A. M. for the purpose of locating and dispersing a party of insurgent bolomen and riflemen reported to be northeast of Tarangnan. At 7: 30 A. M. a party of bolomen was encountered at Porang and dispersed, leaving three dead on the field. Marching three hours longer, just as the detachment was ascending a ridge near Catangan, made almost inaccessible by fallen trees and underbrush, the detachments were suddenly fired upon by the enemy from the top of the hill. They returned the fire and after a few minutes sharp firing on both sides the enemy retreated. Corporal William J. Brighly, Company E, was killed, and one of the scouts was wounded in this encounter. The belts being much depleted of ammunition, it was considered impracticable to follow, and, after burying Corporal Brighly's body, the detachment returned to Tarangnan, carrying the wounded scout, and arriving about 11: 00 P. M., having traveled about 22 miles.[158]

On another expedition a detachment of 15 men of Company E, led by Captain Schoeffel, was ambushed a few miles out from Tarangnan, where the trail led through tall grass — a reedy grass that was so high

[158] Return of casualties by Captain Schoeffel, dated Tarangnan, November 12, 1901.

Digitized by Google

above the men's heads and so thick that it was impossible to see but a very few feet to the right and left. In this the natives concealed themselves, strung along the sides just out of view, with their murderous bolos in their hands. Captain Schoeffel's party, advancing in single file with a small group, pushed well to the front, and one, following the rear at a short distance, after the manner of advance and rear guards, was permitted to fully enter the defile, and was then suddenly beset on all sides. The hand-to-hand fighting was desperate and short, the enemy diving back into the tall grass as soon as the stroke was delivered. Doubtless the soldiers used their bayonets to good effect, dealing heavy blows too with clubbed rifles, and then opening fire, but the enemy's attack was too quick and unavoidable. Four soldiers were killed outright, viz., Sergeant John Swisher, Corporal James Gaughan, Privates Joseph A. Weipert, and Frank Andrews; Captain Schoeffel and eight men were wounded. A detachment of Philippine scouts, under Lieutenant Lang, of that organization, which had been sent along another route to co-operate later with Captain Schoeffel's detachment, hearing the firing, hastened to the scene, but nothing remained to be done but to bind up the wounds and carry the wounded back to Tarangnan. Private John Marr died before the return journey began, Private Thomas Clark died on the way, Private George Bedford, at the hospital the same day, and Private George Claxton the next day, Christmas. The other enlisted men wounded in this encounter were: Corporal John H. Russell, Private Philip Brady, Private Daniel C. McPherson, Private Arthur Bonnicastle. Information of the encounter was carried by a Sergeant in a barota, with native paddlers, to Calbayog, being picked up just before his journey was completed by a small gunboat, one of several manned by the navy which co-operated with the army in the operations about Samar. Company L, under Lieutenant Gibson, and a number of Philippine scouts under Lieutenant Caulfield, were at once ordered to Tarangnan to reinforce Company E, and they marched off to the dock in half an hour. Chaplain Newsom accompanied the command, volunteering to do so, and Contract Surgeon Spillman was one of the number. The commander of the gunboat offered to transport the party, and, as soon as transfer from shore to the boat was made, they steamed away from the anchorage, and arrived at Tarangnan in about two hours. The following day, Christmas, Lieutenant Gibson, with 34 men of his company, some scouts under Lieutenants Lang and Caulfield, and Contract Surgeon Spillman, began a scouting trip in the vicinity, and toward Dapdap, camping at Colonoogan the night of the 25th, and in the mountains the following night. December 27th, while penetrat-

Digitized by Google

ing the jungle near Dapdap, the command was fired on from the crest of a slight ridge which it was approaching. A brisk return fire was given, but it was difficult to locate the enemy on account of the thick brush, and he fled carrying off his dead and wounded. In this encounter Private Clayton C. Allard, Company L, was killed. The command proceeded after burying the body, and arrived at San Pelayo, on the Gandara River, from which place it was transferred by water fifteen miles to Calbayog, on the gunboat Florida.

The three affairs described above were the ones in which the regiment suffered its most severe losses in Samar. The number of men killed aggregated a few more than in all the previous campaigning of the three and a half years period from Cuba on.

Among the numerous expeditions by small detachments the following, not heretofore mentioned, were attended with casualties.

July 13, 1901, Private Patrick Farrell, Company H, was drowned in the Oras River, returning from Concepcion to Oras with a detachment.

October 2nd a detachment of fourteen men, Company L, under command of Lieutenant Hammond, on scouting expedition from Calbayog, having bivouacked for the night at a place about twelve miles from the town, Corporal Jeremiah T. Healey, Company L, was shot by a sentinel about 10:00 P. M., while moving about in the dark, being mistaken for an insurgent. He was brought back to Calbayog and died October 5th.

In November, December, and January, several extensive expeditions were made by detachments of Companies H and K from Oras, to Concepcion, San Ramon and vicinity, a small launch being used for such parts of the trips as could be made on the Oras River. On one of these expeditions, commanded by Lieutenant Brown, November 23rd, Corporal Joseph P. Coyle, Company K, was wounded by a spear trap.

In February combined expeditions were made by the companies on the Gandara River. On one of these, a detachment of 30 men, Company F, operating from Pagsanhan, under command of First Sergeant Breyley, scouted through the hills on the 14th, 15th, and 16th, and on the afternoon of the 16th, while passing through a rice-field surrounded by hills, the insurgents opened fire. The detachment changed position to a hill and returned the fire. After the engagement the roll was called and Private General F. Babb was missing. The detachment returned to the field where he was last seen, finding about 100 bolomen there. They were fired upon and driven off, but Private Babb could not be found. The insurgents were heard to call out a boast of having caught

Digitized by Google

one American, and doubtless Babb fell into their hands and was killed. The enemy numbered about 50 riflemen and 200 bolomen. The detachment marched about forty miles, burned several cuartels and destroyed about 8,000 pounds of rice. On February 22nd a general movement from several stations in the Gandara River district was undertaken, and during its progress detachments of Companies F and M fired upon one another by mistake, fortunately without casualties.

These and similar expeditions at many other places in the island were made for the purpose of destroying insurgent rendezvous, meeting their forces if possible, and endeavoring to locate Lukban and kill or capture him.

In conjunction with the scouting, various measures were adopted to bring the leaders to terms, and to persuade the influential people in the towns to actively assist in bringing about the surrender of the few insurgents having arms.

As early as August, 1901, an expedition under Captain Jackson, First Infantry, succeeded, after severe struggles through the jungle, in finding Lukban's hiding-place in the northern part of the island, and, while not being quick enough to secure Lukban himself, captured one of his officers, many of his records, his wife and little child, brought them to the seacoast and landed them safely at Calbayog. The wife and child were kept under Ninth Infantry guards for many months, and efforts were made through her to ascertain her husband's whereabouts and convey messages to him, but no advantage was gained. Later she was sent to Catbalogan, and after being held there several months more was finally conducted to the country back of Tarangnan and allowed to depart.

The Signal Corps laid a cable connecting Samar with Masbate and Luzon on the north, and Leyte and Panay on the south, landings being made at Calbayog and Catbalogan on Samar. The material for land lines was also brought, and detachments of the regiment were engaged for many weeks in construction of the lines on both the west and east coasts. Second Lieutenants Loeb, Harris and Mills were engaged in this work.

Two companies of native scouts were organized at the same time that other companies were organized throughout the islands, October, 1901, pursuant to an Act of Congress. The nucleus for one of these companies already existed at Calbayog, consisting of scouts paid from the Philippines civil fund. It became the Thirty-sixth Company, Captain Noyes being assigned to the duty of organizing it, and having temporary command. Later First Lieutenant Moynihan was the com-

Digitized by Google

mander, Caulfield, Second Lieutenant. These two companies, and two others brought to the island in November, were employed with the troops on expeditions against insurgents, and always did faithful service. Native runners could always be relied upon to carry messages, and they frequently undertook dangerous trips for small pay.

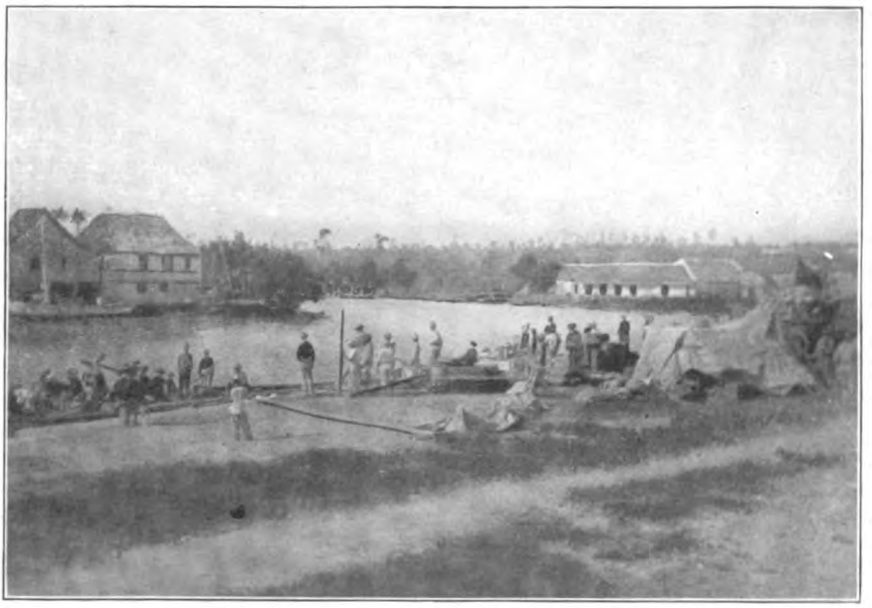
The navy took a very active part, having several small gunboats constantly on the alert, patrolling the coast to prevent supplies being landed, entering the large rivers on the same business, and aiding materially in keeping up communication between isolated coast stations. Frequently they transferred detachments of troops to effect landings at out-of-the-way places, and aided in searching adjacent islands for money and supplies, suspected to be held in store for insurgents.

The problem as to how to prevent money and supplies getting to the insurgents was a difficult one to solve. Rice and salt were the articles of food searched for, trading in the chief commerical product, hemp, was regulated, and materials which could be used in the manufacture of ammunition were destroyed. General Hughes established a rule that each head of family might deliver in the towns twenty-five pounds of hemp per week, and receive in exchange necessary food supplies. This gave very little for sustenance, but suspicion arose that even so the insurgents were able to enforce sufficient contributions of rice and salt to keep themselves in flourishing condition. After General Smith assumed control, trading was for a time entirely stopped, and he refused to allow rice to be imported by any native merchant. Gradually the stocks in the towns dwindled until starvation threatened. At the same time the townspeople were given to understand that if they would give information of Lukban and of other insurgent leaders, conditions would be changed at once. Under the influence of these methods the head men in the towns organized large expeditions to go out into the hills to seek for insurgents, and for stores of rice. A force of 350 men in motley garb, and armed with bolos, swords and clubs, assembled at Calbayog one morning in November, another at Catbalogan on a later date. They presented a picturesque appearance and seemed to be imbued with a spirit to accomplish something, but doubtless a hostile shot would have dispersed them in a moment. They were unable to remain in the field for more than two or three days, for lack of food, and they saw nothing of the enemy, brought in no rifles. A few sacks of rice were all they found. Still, such demonstrations may have had some effect on the minds of the insurgent leaders. One of the repressive measures adopted by General Smith was to seize the churches and use them for storehouses for subsistence supplies. The large church at

Digitized by Google

Calbayog was thus occupied, notwithstanding the pleadings of the native priest and Presidente. It certainly provided a most excellent warehouse for the large quantities of supplies which were handled there, Calbayog being a depot for the companies posted up the Gandara River. The regimental Quartermaster and Commissary, Captain Wise, had charge of this depot. His labors and experience in forwarding supplies were valuable and interesting, having meagre facilities and much to contend with in stormy seas, and dangerous river boating.

Following the Balangiga massacre and the ferocious attack on the detachment camped on the Gandara River, stockades were very gener-



Quartermaster's wharf at Calbayog, Samar, Philippine Islands. Shipping supplies.

ally constructed, surrounding the camps or occupied buildings of a town, to prevent bolo rushes.

One of the early efforts to induce Lukban to surrender was made through the mediation of a Major Doncel, a former officer of the insurgents, who in 1900, had been with Macabulos in Tarlac Province, Luzon. He it was who had charge of Macabulos' wife and entourage when that chieftain was driven out of his stronghold in the mountains by the Seventeenth Infantry, and the fugitive families came into Tarlac sur-

Digitized by Google

rendering at Ninth Infantry Headquarters. A few weeks prior to the date of Ninth Infantry operations in Samar, he had acted as intermediary between the Manila Headquarters and the insurgent General Cailles, the negotiations finally resulting in the surrender of that officer with a comparatively large following. Doncel was sent to Samar with letters of introduction and began efforts at Calbayog to get in communication with Lukban. His arrival antedated the Balangiga affair. After that event efforts to bring about a surrender by friendly intercourse were regarded as inexpedient and Doncel was suddenly recalled.

Finally the authority and severest measures of General Order No. 100, that is, the order issued during the Civil War relative to the government of armies in time of war, were invoked, these measures being directed toward the apparently peaceful and friendly "pudientes," "principales," and "presidentes" of the towns. They were told that information had been obtained against them of incriminating nature; that their aid and assistance to the few Commandantes, Captains and Lieutenants remaining in the hills, and to Lukban were known, and that the time had come when they would be looked to to bring about their surrender. They were notified that they must not only desist giving aid and encouragement to the enemy, but they, in person, would be called upon to lead the American forces to the insurgent hiding-places and cuartels, and if they failed to do so they would be regarded as war traitors, and false guides, and must suffer the consequences. A staff officer of General Hughes, Major Edwin F. Glenn, who had used similar methods in Cebu and elsewhere, was sent to General Smith to carry out these measures in Samar. His investigations extended over several months, and operations were conducted in December, 1901, and January, 1902. Post commanders were directed to give all possible assistance. At Calbayog he succeeded in bringing about the surrender of Hugon Rosales, a Captain. No arms of any consequence were obtained and no body of insurgents, but Rosales himself was a valuable capture. As a matter of policy he was treated with great consideration, and even honored with appointment as Presidente of Calbayog, taking the place of the benign appearing old Filipino, Rufino Pido, who had long been regarded as the friend of the Americans, and whose fidelity had, indeed, been demonstrated to the satisfaction of several different commanders at Calbayog. Major Glenn's information convinced him, however, that Pido was treacherous, that he gave aid to the insurgents, and he was, therefore, made a prisoner in the guard-house. The proofs of his treachery were, of course, never given out, and by some it was believed that if he were in communication with the insurgents, or furnished them

Digitized by Google

money and supplies, or was otherwise apparently aiding insurrection, it was for the purpose of preserving his town from fire and his people from insurgent attack. The padre was also accused and taken away to Catbalogan. Many of the influential men were imprisoned, and searching inquiries were made on the ground that they were the real sources of power in the insurrection, and knew the whereabouts of the insurgents. The captain, Rosales, already mentioned, was induced to come in by bringing pressure to bear on his father, a "pudiente" who had fled from Calbayog to Leyte, and whom Major Glenn had gotten possession of and brought back to Calbayog. What further success would have followed must remain a matter of conjecture, for a change of policy was again made toward the end of January, apparently under the orders of the Commanding General himself, General Chaffee, who arrived on an inspection tour on January 26th, and brought Major Glenn's sway to an abrupt termination.

Orders came shortly after from General Smith, indicating that more leniency was to be shown the natives; there were to be less restrictions on trading, rice was to be imported, the church was to be vacated, and shortly afterwards the padre returned and church services were resumed. Instead of regarding everybody as an enemy until he proved his friendliness, everybody was to be regarded as a friend except those who were still in the mountains and refused to come under American protection. Still, there was no relaxation of the efforts to seek out the armed enemy. Expeditions were in progress all the time from the Ninth Infantry stations, and from all those occupied by other regiments. It was toward the end of February that an expedition under Lieutenant Strebler of the Philippine scouts, operating in the north of the island, in the district commanded by Captain Bell, First Infantry, located Lukban and captured him. This was the beginning of the end in Samar. Lukban was induced to send letters to other leaders, and although his influence was small, and at one time it appeared that the next in rank, Colonel Guevarra, would continue the contest, still, under the persuasion of constant hounding, all were pretty well discouraged, and in March an armistice was declared, conferences were had, resulting in a general surrender in April.

As far back as the November preceding, instructions from Washington provided for the relief of the regiments in the Philippines by new regiments and by home battalions of old regiments, the Philippine troops to return in the order in which they went out in 1899. Accordingly the Fourth Infantry departed in December, 1901, followed at intervals of about two weeks by other regiments. In February, 1902,

Digitized by Google

rumors of orders for the Ninth Infantry were current, and were hailed with delight. But the work in Samar delayed action. The companies of the regiment having been greatly reduced by the departure of men whose term of service was approaching completion, two or three large bodies of recruits were sent to the regiment to maintain it at fighting strength while operations in Samar were in progress. But, finally, at the end of March, when the state of affairs admitted of reduction of the force on the island, definite instructions were received for concentration of the west coast companies at Calbayog, and for embarkation.

On the morning of April 7, 1902, the transport Warren appeared off the coast at Calbayog, bringing one battalion of the Fifteenth Infantry to relieve the Calbayog command. This battalion had come from Madison Barracks, New York, leaving there in February. The pleasure of embarking for home from scenes of strife and disturbance, fighting and hiking can only be appreciated by those who have participated in such events. The long service of the Ninth Infantry in the Orient was about to be closed, the delight of returning home was at hand.

The transfer of property accountability, of records and general responsibility, took place as rapidly as possible, the Fifteenth Infantry companies coming ashore and the Ninth Infantry companies going aboard. Companies from Gandara River stations arrived and embarked, and at 6:00 P. M., April 9th, all being aboard, the transport sailed, and the regiment, or one portion of it, at least, bid good-bye to Samar. The companies on the east coast, D, G, H and K, were not relieved until several weeks later. (May 13, 1902.)

The following circular gives the result of the arduous work done by the regiment and other troops on the Island of Samar:

HEADQUARTERS SIXTH SEPARATE BRIGADE,
TACLOBAN, LEYTE, P. I., May 6, 1902.

Circular No. 10:

1. The brigade commander announces the surrender on April 27, 1902, at Catbalogan, Samar, of the following named insurgent officers: General Claro Guevarra, Colonel Francisco Rafael, Lieutenant-Colonel Narciso Abuke, Agapito Sebastian, Major Leonio Guioson, Eugenio Daza, Andres Lobrio, Jose Hermosilla, Teodoro Garfin. Captains: Ramon Serrano, Carnimo Abcede, Corme Antonio, Victor Maurino, Luiano Limo, Meliton Almanton, Benito Azanza, Peregrin Albano, Clodoaldo Linero, Severino Linero, Julian Cabaeang, Alejandro Mendeniola, Valeriano Abanador, Eulogio Barretto. First Lieutenants: Hilarion Enriano, Lazaro Giray, Cesario Ortez, Nazario Dimaquileng, Leonio de Platino,

Digitized by Google

Andres Barandino, Ponciano Mankol, Matias Fajardo, Jose Cultura, Peligio Acosta, Tuciano Ortez, Girilo Epriltano. Second Lieutenants: Vicente Roxas, Francisco Limo, Hipolito Rono, Manuel Rasell, Lino Cruz, Poniano Jazenines, Lepoldo Arteche, Mariano Cueva, Pio Cazalla, Lacarias Base, Esperidion Farrayo, Jose Permosa, Mato Marona, Naruso Rosales, Julian Bautista, Benedicto Morillo, Hilaro Nunez, Pilarion Laturre, Elislo Latarre, Santiago Donesa, Joaquin Obao, Hermogenes Rosales, Elenterio Neyra, Gregorio De Los Reyes, Marelto Mira, Pasenal Cana, Patricio Comando, Cavino Buenaventura, Balino Reyes, Miguel de la Sala Valentin Abelgasa, Ubaldo Llanr, with 236 riflemen, 443 bolomen, 112 Krag rifles, one Krag carbine, 78 Remington, 31 Mauser rifles, 14 miscellaneous guns: total 236 rifles practically all serviceable about 8,000 rounds of ammunition, 7,500 of which was Krag. Since the 27th 5 riflemen and 53 bolomen with 3 Krags and 1 Remington have presented themselves at Catbalogan.

This force includes all the armed insurgents on Samar except Lieutenant Ignacio Alar and 11 rifles reported between Calbiga and Borongan. A party of 17 miscellaneous guns between San Julian and the Gandara River and a party of 8 rifles in the northeast part of the island. The ex-insurgent leaders state that these parties will all present themselves.

2. The brigade commander desires to congratulate the officers and men of the brigade, whose tireless, energetic work during the past six months has brought about these gratifying results.

3. Commanding officers will facilitate in every way the restoration of peaceful conditions throughout the island of Samar, and will establish municipal government, under General Orders, No. 43, Headquarters Department of the Pacific and Eighth Army Corps, 1899, in all towns not now so organized. As far as practicable commanding officers will follow the wishes of the people as regards the selection of officials, Cabezas, etc. In this connection, where the inhabitants desire to rebuild any town, or barrio, commanding officers will freely grant such permission to such people as have taken the oath of allegiance, and will require such other people as desire to rebuild in said towns to present themselves first to the nearest commanding officer to take the oath of allegiance. The Presidente or Cabeza of towns and barrios thus organized will be required to keep a United States flag flying over the building used for municipal purposes, to establish schools, keep roads and trails in repair, see that all streets, houses, and surroundings are kept clean and in a sanitary condition, to isolate and care for all cases of infectious or contagious disease, to report promptly any outbreak of

Digitized by Google

smallpox, cholera, or other serious disease, to construct in each town, not garrisoned, a suitable building for public purposes which could be used from time to time by detachments of troops, to avoid the necessity of using private houses for such purpose. To maintain order and to show proper respect for the officers in command of the districts and their local officials.

4. Permission has been given to Senores Rafael, Abuke and Daza, former insurgent officers, to visit the pueblos, barrios and sitios, for the purpose of encouraging the people to rebuild their barrios and homes, accept in full American sovereignty and control, and to assist in bringing about the full benefits of peace. Their mission is limited to the above, and does not extend to organizing government of any kind. They will be assisted in their proper mission.

5. While the brigade commander believes the surrender of the insurgent leaders to have been in good faith and that all will labor conscientiously to bring the full benefits of peace to the people of Samar, yet he takes this opportunity to direct that station commanders take full precautions at all times to guard against the carelessness apt to follow overconfidence in peaceful conditions.

By command of Brigadier-General Grant.

J. A. PENN,
Captain Seventh Infantry, Adjutant-General.

The Warren arrived at Manila on April 11th; the troops were disembarked and placed at Camp Wallace, awaiting the readiness of a transport for the journey to the United States. Delays occurred, and the wait was tedious. Camp Wallace was almost unbearable on account of the heat. An order to embark on the Warren, issued April 17th, was countermanded. That ship finally sailed with marines and one company I, Ninth Infantry, Captain Palmer, Major Robertson, who had joined Headquarters upon its arrival at Camp Wallace, going on that ship also.

During this period of waiting at Camp Wallace a scourge of Asiatic cholera was gaining headway in and about Manila. Extreme precautions were taken to prevent the disease entering the camp and the health of the men was preserved. The Warren, however, was detained at the quarantine station at Mariveles, a death from cholera occurring among the short-term men, casuals. The post of Manila received large numbers of these men from all regiments, and as many as possible were sent to the United States on each returning ship.

The large number of recruits received by the regiment in January and February were transferred out while at Camp Wallace, going to regi-

Digitized by Google

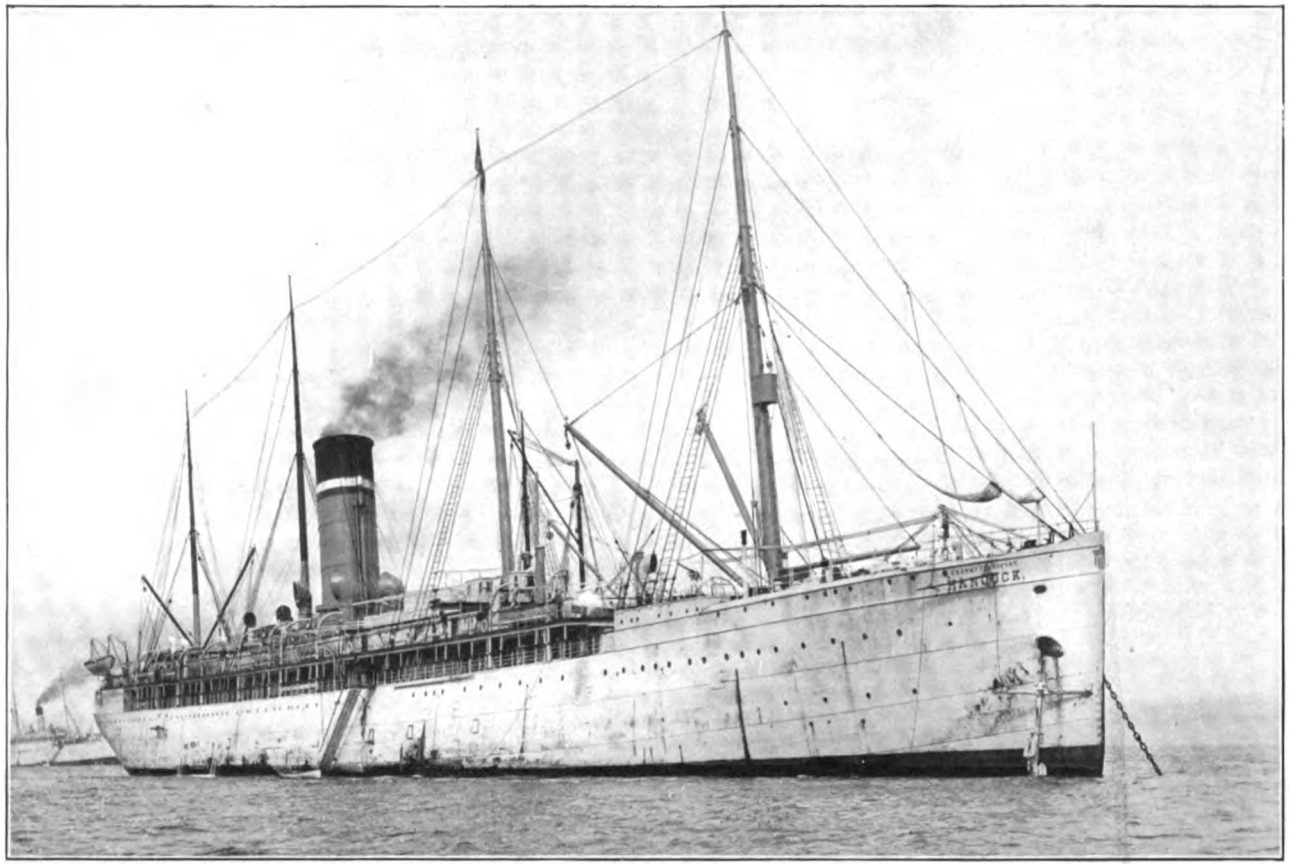
ments which had recently arrived from the United States. This reduced the strength of the companies to about 40 men each. Of these, about one half had been with the regiment in China, not more than four or five per company, on an average, had come to the Philippines with the regiment in 1899. All others had been discharged, or, as "short-term men," had been sent home in advance to be discharged after reaching the United States.

One of the pleasant episodes of the stay at Manila was a dinner given at the officers' club, on April 26th, in honor of the officers of the Ninth Infantry, attended by General Chaffee, Acting-Governor Wright, Secretary Ferguson, and a number of army and navy officers and marine officers with whom the regiment had served during its tour in the Orient. It was an opportunity for renewal of acquaintance, offering congratulations on service well performed, and for well wishing for the future. Addresses, poems, and songs spoke reminiscences and praises.

The Oras companies were ordered to repair to Manila in May, leaving Samar on the transport Lawton and arriving at Manila May 15th. The regiment was thus united in Camp Wallace, with the exception of Company B at Pekin, China, and Company I, which had proceeded to the United States on the Warren. May 19th was finally set for embarkation, and the Hancock was the transport. The regimental baggage, all of which had been brought from the United States, and occupied storage room in Manila during the three years, except such as could be used in camp, was overhauled, marked, inspected by the quarantine officer and loaded, the loading going on all day on the 18th. With the usual early start, the regiment marched to the Anda Monument dock and was transferred by lighters to the Hancock. The ship sailed for the quarantine station at Mariveles at the entrance of Manila Bay at 5:15 P. M., the same date, May 19th. The Ninth Infantry (ten companies) numbered 28 officers, 398 enlisted men. There were also on board two large companies of short term men, 28 additional cabin passengers, about 150 civilians (ex-employes, etc.), and 50 prisoners, making in all a passenger list of 1,019 persons.

Two hours after sailing the ship arrived at Mariveles, and anchored for an eight days' sojourn at quarantine, everybody hoping most earnestly that no case of cholera would develop, and that the ship might proceed. But among the large number of casuals there were many who had been careless as to the places where they had obtained food and drink, and a case of cholera appeared on the morning of the 21st. The man, who was a short-term soldier of the Second Infantry, named Ward, died at noon. It was necessary, on this account, to have the ship go

Digitized by Google



Transport Hancock, which brought the Ninth Infantry from the Philippines in 1902.

Digitized by Google

alongside the dock, which was done the following morning, to disembark the men, place them in barracks and disinfect the ship. The men were re-embarked on the 27th, and the ship sailed at 6:30 P. M. that day. The homeward journey was actually begun. A happy hour for all.

At Nagasaki, on June 1st, the quarantine authorities again took the ship in charge, sent the entire number of persons ashore for a bath, disinfected the ship, and in every way most thoroughly protected their port from infection. The quarantine station was noticeably clean and comfortable, the whole process extremely thorough. The ship coaled on June 2nd and 3d, sailing at 4:00 P. M. the latter date, and, after a fair voyage, arrived off the coast of California, in a fog, the night of June 19th. On the 20th, the fog still continuing, the ship proceeded slowly and land was discerned at 1:30 P. M. on the port side, but at some distance north of the Golden Gate. The pilot was taken aboard at 4:00 P. M., entered the Golden Gate at 5:45 P. M., anchored at 6:30 P. M., but two hours later proceeded to the quarantine station at Angel Island, where the ship was anchored for the night. The following day the regiment was taken by lighter to the dock at the Presidio and placed in camp. A battalion of the Seventh Infantry was paraded to welcome the regiment, a compliment offered by Colonel Coolidge who had served in the Ninth Infantry as Lieutenant-Colonel in Luzon and China.

The delay at the presidio was for a few days only, the regiment then starting by rail for its stations in the east. The original assignment to stations, published in orders from the Adjutant-General's office in January or February was to Forts Assinniboine and Harrison, in Montana, but New York State claimed an interest in the regiment, and influential citizens requested a change so as to permit it to return to its old station at Madison Barracks. This was finally granted, and news of the change reached the regiment through a private cablegram received in Manila just prior to embarkation. This was a delightful turn of affairs for most of the officers, for Madison Barracks and Fort Niagara, the two posts assigned, were easily accessible from the homes in the east where relatives and friends were awaiting the arrival. As the regiment began its journey on June 27th, by rail, from San Francisco, information was received of a royal welcome to be given it at several of the cities on the line of travel in New York, and telegrams were passed back and forth as the trains proceeded eastward, perfecting the plans. It was 12:45 P. M., July 2nd, when the trains arrived at Buffalo. The mayor and other dignitaries were at the depot, and two companies of the Fourteenth Infantry in line on the street to act as escort. A march

Digitized by Google

through the streets, cheered by assembled crowds, was made, and then the journey continued. Companies A, C and D, under Major Robertson, separated from the remainder of the regiment at Buffalo and proceeded to Fort Niagara. At Rochester, which was reached at 5: 15 P. M., July 2nd, the regiment again marched, and was reviewed by Major-General Elwell S. Otis, and by city dignitaries. The crowds were greater and more enthusiastic even than at Buffalo. The march terminated at the armory of a militia organization, where a supper was served the men, and the officers were entertained most agreeably at a banquet at one of the principal clubs. By midnight, when it was time to move to the railroad station, the men were well scattered, but sounding the trumpet-call got them together, and, without disturbance or any serious absence of men, the train departed for Syracuse about 2: 00 A. M. At Syracuse, on the morning of July 3rd, the march and the welcome by the mayor was repeated, and a luncheon was served at an armory. The officers were invited by Major Benham, recruiting officer, to his house, where refreshments were served, and all were then taken on a drive about the city. The train then proceeded northward to Watertown, where the welcome was made by sounding all the whistles in the city. A more elaborate welcome, similar to those received at the other cities, was given a few days later, the regiment marching in parade, followed by a supper at an armory, and in the evening the officers attending a banquet served in the large dining-room of the Woodruff House. But on this date, July 3rd, the regiment continued its journey to Sackett's Harbor, where it disembarked and marched to Madison Barracks, arriving about 6: 00 P. M. Company I had arrived about three weeks before, and were already settled in barracks. The regiment was thus once more at its old home. Four years of campaigning were closed.

SPEECH OF THE HON. JOHN S. WISE, OF NEW YORK CITY, AT WATERTOWN, NEW YORK, SATURDAY, JULY 12, 1902, WELCOMING THE RETURN OF THE NINTH INFANTRY, UNITED STATES ARMY, FROM THE PHILIPPINES.

"*Colonel Robe, and officers of the Ninth Infantry:*

"Opportunity to welcome the return of the Ninth Infantry is a privilege, a compliment, and an honor of which any loyal American citizen may justly feel proud; all the more so, if, as in my case, his heart-strings have been twined into the regimental colors during every hour of the Ninth's perilous and glorious foreign campaigns.

Digitized by Google

"This regiment is one of the oldest in the service. It furnished to the Northern and to the Southern side some of the most famous officers of our Civil War. For many years, upon the frontier, it rendered the country invaluable service. But its most illustrious record is crowded into the past four years. There was a time, doubtless, when the circumstance that it was allowed to take no part in the battles of the great Rebellion was regarded as a misfortune; but with the subsidence of the passions of those times, it is a source of congratulation to every one that its colors are unstained by fratricidal blood, and that it enjoys the almost unique distinction of never having fired a shot during the conflict between the hostile sections of the Union. This was due to the accidental circumstance that the war found the regiment upon the Pacific Coast, and that the exigencies of the service detained it there until the restoration of peace. For many years thereafter this gallant regiment remained on duty in the then unsettled region of the West, and performed valuable, though not conspicuous, service against the Indians. That was followed by a long period of garrison duty at Sackett Harbor, a station which, while important, brought the command into comparatively little notice.

"It was not until the sudden outbreak of hostilities against Spain that the Ninth Infantry came prominently under the observation of the nation; but long before that it was known to the army as one of the best regiments in the service. By a course of long and unostentatious preparation it had become one of those typical American regiments, whose efficiency is now of world-wide repute. In the quiet, uneventful days of its long stay here, not even its neighbors knew that they were in daily contact with a band of heroes. But all things come to him who waits. Summoned, even before the outbreak of hostilities, to hasten from the Great Lakes to the Gulf, the Ninth was passing through the National Capital upon the very day that war was declared against Spain. As if it caught fresh inspiration from the war trumpets sounding in the gates of Washington, it sped onward south towards the foe.

"Brigaded at Tampa, under Wyckoff, in Kents' Division of Shafter's Army, it was among the first troops of the American Army of Invasion to embark, and among the first to land at Siboney. Hurried forward to the attack on Santiago, it was in the hottest of the assault on San Juan Hill, and was among the first to enter the trenches of the Spaniards. In that engagement, three of its brigade commanders fell successively; and then its own commanding officer, the gallant Ewers, led the brigade to victory — a glorious, gallant victory, for which it gave the precious

Digitized by Google

life of Lieutenant Lewis, and forty soldiers killed and wounded. Already, amid the events which have since crowded upon us, the story of Santiago grows dim in the distance, but few in this nation forget the thrill of joy produced by that superb attack, or that, from among the bravest of the brave, the Ninth Infantry was accorded the honor of raising the Stars and Stripes over the Governor's Palace in the surrendered city.

"Then followed that long depressing period of sickness and death, which depleted the ranks of the American Army, and the weary transfer of our suffering men to the bleak camp at Montauk Point. Thither the strongest and most willing came tottering back like helpless babes, racked with Cuban malaria and fell tropical diseases. Even there the Ninth was as conspicuous as in the battle front. In spite of all its fighting and exposure in Cuba, it was among the first to recuperate, and, after a brief rest here, was ordered to the Philippines, where, early in 1899, it arrived and entered at once upon a conspicuous service in the arduous campaign in Northern Luzon, under Lawton and Wheeler.

"Scarcely had the savage foe in Luzon been subjugated when that peculiar outbreak in China demanded the presence of our best troops there. The veteran Ninth was called upon again to bear its heroic burden, and it responded with a cheer. To the uttermost parts of the earth it sped to add new lustre to the Stars and Stripes. The story of Tien-tsin is the crowning glory of the gallantry of this brave regiment. In the presence of the troops of other nations it was rushed into an unprotected position. Exposed to a deadly fire, where it was impossible to advance, out of less than five hundred men it sustained a loss of about one-third of those engaged, but held its ground and only retired after nightfall, when ordered back, and then in perfect formation. Then it was that the English, Russians, French, Germans, and Japanese, began to understand the temper of American courage.

"Again, at Pekin, it was in the forefront of the fight. After all these trials and all these battles the country cried out aloud that the gallant Ninth had done enough, and demanded its recall.

"But other and bloody work was yet in store for it. Scarcely had it reached Manila, when the vicious outbreak in Samar compelled further demands upon the courage and patriotism of the regiment. Responding cheerfully, it there enacted the saddest and most heroic episode in all the long line of its courageous sacrifices. The bloody story of Balangiga, the almost total annihilation of Company C, sent a shudder of horror through the American people; a horror tinged with unspeakable grief when they learned that their beloved Ninth of Santiago and

Digitized by Google

Tarlac and Tien-tsin and Pekin, was the regiment called upon once more to bleed freely in its country's service. The ghastly roster of dead and wounded mounted upward until the Ninth had lost more officers and men than any other regiment in the army.

"No doubt there were times when the regiment itself, so far away from home, felt, amid all these depressing scenes, that it was called upon to make more than its share of sacrifices; no doubt it felt at times that it was cruelly pressed, and that what it had done was not appreciated nor remembered at home. Such a feeling was natural enough, but nothing could have been more unjust nor untrue than that its arduous work was not fully recognized. The American people saw and knew and noted all. While they gloried in its valor, their hearts were bleeding for its suffering and swelling with gratitude for its services. It took, and to-day holds in their affections a place which is the soldier's highest reward for duty bravely done.

"What the Tenth Legion was in the cohorts of Cæsar — what the Old Guard was in the army of Napoleon — the Ninth Infantry is to-day in the Army of the Union. The American boy who would be a soldier. models his courage upon that of the humblest private in the Ninth Infantry. The aspiring young officer, who hopes to gain prominence for coolness and courage on the battle-field, recalls the conduct of your officers at Santiago and of your officers at Tien-tsin. Soldiers who contemplate the possibility of death find no higher models of the fearless soldier meeting his fate with a smile than in your Liscums and Connells and Lewises and Bumpuses and the host of their comrades who gave up their lives in Cuba, in China, and in the Philippines. Gentlemen of the Ninth Infantry, it is glory enough, and reward enough, for all your suffering and all your sacrifices to know that your countrymen so far appreciate you that they seek not elsewhere for a name of bravery and endurance, or of prompt self-sacrifice, but find it in the Immortal Ninth Infantry — the Fighting Ninth — a name honored and beloved in the remotest hamlet of the nation.

"Survivors of the glorious band with whom we parted company four years ago; decimated ranks of the joyous and ambitious throng who crowded to the colors at the drum tap of the Spanish war; tired, bleeding, suffering heroes, welcome home! You have not been forgotten in your absence. Those who love and honor you know how well placed was their affection and their trust. Carpers and cavilers against the general policy of the war there may be, but none so craven nor so dead to the thrill which true courage produces that they fail to accord to you the full meed of unselfish patriotism. If such there be, and I doubt it,

Digitized by Google

this is the day on which they slink away into the dark places to which they belong, for the nation stands with streaming eyes and outstretched arms to greet the proud return of its bravest veterans.

"Welcome once more to the eyes that strained after you beyond the sunset until you seemed lost in the western gloom; welcome to the hearts that beat with yours in joy and pride and grief; welcome to your fellow citizens who know each bloody, weary footstep you have trod, who even sometimes suffered for you when you were gay, who hail you as the builders of America's pre-eminence as the home of modest, simple valor!

"God grant to you a long and welcome period of peace and rest; God grant to us, your loving countrymen, the assurance that in all the perils of our national life, in all the trying times to come, the United States of America may ever have soldiers to bear its eagles to the battle-front, of the peerless glorious type of the Ninth United States Infantry."

The following memoranda, prepared from the monthly regimental returns, relative to the officers and companies, are given to connect their service with the events described, where not already stated:

Colonel Charles F. Robe. Commanded at Calbayog from August 25, 1901, to November 25, 1901, on which date he proceeded to Tanauan, Leyte, as a member of a general court-martial. Continued to exercise command of the regiment from Tanauan, the regimental staff officers and records remaining at Calbayog. Returned to Calbayog and resumed command of that station and district March 5, 1902.

Lieutenant-Colonel Morris C. Foote. Commanded at Basey until September 26, 1901, on which date he proceeded to Manila on leave of absence. Leave for one month, with permission to visit the United States, granted October 9th, Headquarters Division of the Philippines, and extended one month from Headquarters of the Army. Ordered to report at Headquarters Department of California for temporary duty on expiration of leave of absence. In command of Discharge Camp, Angel Island, California, from February 17, 1902. Transferred to the First Infantry April 11, 1902.

Major James Regan. On detached service at Fort Slocum, New York, upon light duty, recovering from his wounds. Promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, First Infantry, August 12, 1901. Transferred to the Ninth Infantry, exchanging with Lieutenant-Colonel Foote, April 11, 1902. On general recruiting service at New York City from October 9, 1901.

Major Edgar B. Robertson. Commanding United States Lega-

Digitized by Google

tion Guard at Pekin, China, until January 23, 1901, when he was ordered to proceed to the Philippines to join regiment. On detached service at Manila from March 5, 1902, as member of General Court-Martial. Rejoined regiment at Camp Wallace, Manila, May 1, 1902. Commanded United States troops on transport Warren en route to the United States from May 2 to June 12, 1902. Rejoined Regimental Headquarters at Presidio of San Franciso June 22, 1902. Assigned to First Battalion and proceeded in command of it to Fort Niagara, New York, for station.

MAJOR ROBERT J. C. IRVINE. On duty at Fort Sheridan, Illinois. Ordered to join regiment in Philippines, September 13, 1901; en route to join until November 6, 1901, when he joined Headquarters at Calbayog, taking station at that place. In command of district and station of Calbayog from November 23, 1901, to March 5, 1902, when Colonel Robe resumed command. On detached service at Tanauan, March 9, to March 27, 1902. With regiment returning to the United States. Sick en route from San Francisco, and left train to enter hospital at Omaha, Nebraska. Rejoined regiment about two months later.

MAJOR FRANK B. JONES. Promoted major of the regiment, vice Regan, August 12, 1901. On detached service in the United States. Joined Regimental Headquarters upon its arrival at Madison Barracks, July 3, 1902.

CHAPLAIN WALTER MARVINE. Absent in the United States. Transferred from regiment July 27, 1901.

CHAPLAIN ERNEST P. NEWSOM. Assigned to regiment August 7, 1901. Joined regiment at Calbayog, October 26, 1901; served with it at that station.

CAPTAIN GEORGE PALMER. On detached serivce in the United States; rejoined regiment upon its arrival at Madison Barracks, New York, July 3, 1902.

CAPTAIN FRANK L. DODDS. Appointed Major, Judge Advocate, June 2, 1901.

CAPTAIN CHARLES R. NOYES. Adjutant at Calbayog.

CAPTAIN ROBERT H. ANDERSON. Commanded Company A, which company was assigned to station at Santa Rita, Samar, August 10, 1901. Commanded that station until October 10, 1901. Absent, sick at Tacloban and Manila after October 10th. Died at First Reserve Hospital, Manila, November 7, 1901.

CAPTAIN GEORGE P. AHERN. Absent on sick leave and on detached service in the United States May 4, 1901, to December, 1901. In Manila Chief of Forestry Bureau, after December 3, 1901.

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN FREDERICK L. PALMER. Commanded Company I, at Camp Gandara, on the east fork of Gandara River, from August 25, 1901, to December 25, 1901. Company changed station to Taviran on North Fork, Gandara River, moving by boats, distance 26 miles. Commanded company and station at Taviran to January 11th. Ordered to Calbayog, arriving January 12th. Attached to and commanded Company C to April 9th, day following arrival of Company I at Calbayog from Taviran, for embarkation on transport Warren. Commanded Company I en route to the United States.

CAPTAIN JOHN P. FINLEY. On detached service in the United States. Recruiting officer at Syracuse, New York, and commanding company of casuals at Discharge Camp, Angel Island, California.

CAPTAIN ANDRE W. BREWSTER. Commanded Company B at Pekin, China. Commanded Legation Guard after departure of Major Robertson, January 23, 1902.

CAPTAIN FRANK DEW. RAMSEY. On detached service at Manila. Aide-de-camp to Major-General Chaffee, and Acting Assistant Adjutant-General at Heaquarters Division of the Philippines. Relinquished appointment as regimental Quartermaster, September 10, 1901.

CAPTAIN MARK L. HERSEY. Commanded Company H and Station and District of Oras, on east coast of Samar. Company arrived at that station June 20, 1901. Company K reinforced district September 18th, arriving by boat from Calbayog, and landing at Dolores, 14 miles from Oras. Command was further increased by Companies D and G, which arrived from Calbayog December 21, 1901. Participated in and had command of many expeditions, and credited with having excellent knowledge and control of district.

CAPTAIN PETER C. HARRIS. On detached service in the United States. In charge War Department Exhibit at Pan-American Exposition, Buffalo, New York.

CAPTAIN JOHN M. SIGWORTH. In the United States, and en route to join regiment to October 21, 1901. Joined at Calbayog on that date; attached to and commanding Company C from date of its arrival at Calbayog, November 2, 1901, to January 9, 1902. Left Calbayog for Taviran on that date; attached to and commanding Company I, and the station of Taviran from January 11th to April 8th, when station was abandoned, and company was conveyed by boat to Calbayog for embarkation on transport Warren. Attached to and commanding Company C from April 9 to May 15, 1902. Joined his proper company, K, upon its arrival at Camp Wallace from Oras, May 16, 1902.

CAPTAIN EDWIN V. BOOKMILLER. Commanded Company G in June,

Digitized by Google

July, August and September, at Basey, and commanded station of Basey after departure of Lieutenant-Colonel Foote, September 26, 1901. Commanded many expeditions in search of insurgents and expedition to Balangiga on September 29, 1901, the day following the massacre. Assigned to command of Company C to reorganize it, October 2, 1901. Companies C and G relieved from Basey October 26th, and stationed at Catbalogan. Company C proceeded to Calbayog a few days later, arriving November 2nd. Captain Bookmiller relieved from command of Company C and rejoined his own company at Catbalogan. Detached and assigned to duty as Judge Advocate, Sixth Separate Brigade, November 13, 1901, and took station at Tacloban. Absent sick at Manila, and en route to the United States after February 10, 1902. Absent sick, and on sick leave in the United States.

CAPTAIN FRANCIS H. SCHOEFFEL. Commanded Company E and station of Tarangnan. Appointed Commissary of regiment November 4th, but remained attached to and commanding Company E. Commanded several expeditions; wounded December 24th in action near Dap Dap. Absent sick at Tacloban and Manila to about February 27th, en route to the United States and in the United States following. Borne as regimental Commissary to June 30, 1902.

CAPTAIN THOMAS W. CONNELL. Commanded Company C and station of Balangiga until September 28, 1901; killed at Balangiga on that date.

CAPTAIN HUGH D. WISE. Having been promoted to Captain, Twenty-sixth Infantry, transferred back to Ninth Infantry June 4, 1901. En route to the United States, in United States and en route returning to the Philippines to October 21, 1901. Joined at Calbayog on that date. Assigned to duty as Quartermaster, Commissary, Ordnance Officer, Captain of Port, and Collector of Internal Revenue at Calbayog October 24, 1901. Appointed regimental quartermaster November 1, 1901. Appointed, in addition, depot Quartermaster and Commissary at Calbayog November 20, 1901, and had charge of supplying coast and river stations in vicinity, to date of departure of regiment from Samar.

CAPTAIN HARRY F. RETHERS. In the United States. Transferred back to Ninth Infantry from Third Infantry, June 21, 1902.

CAPTAIN REYNOLDS J. BURT. Promoted Captain July 23, 1901, and assigned to Ninth Infantry December 5, 1901. On detached service at Iba and in Manila. Joined regiment at Calbayog March 19, 1902. Assigned to duty as Acting Regimental Commissary, and depot Commissary at Calbayog, relieving Captain Wise.

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN RUSSELL C. LANGDON. Promoted captain July 26, 1901. Assigned to Ninth Infantry December 5, 1901. Joined at Calbayog February 18, 1902. Assigned to Company A. Commanded Company A until June 26, 1902, when relieved, having been transferred to Third Infantry.

FIRST LIEUTENANT BENJAMIN M. HARTSHORNE, JR. Commanding Company K at Manila to August 2, 1901, date of transfer to Seventh Infantry. This officer was near his promotion and transferred with Lieutenant Brown. He was killed in action in Samar, January 2, 1902, being then Captain, Seventh Infantry.

FIRST LIEUTENANT FRED L. MUNSON. Acting Regimental Commissary at Calbayog, Quartermaster, Commissary and ordnance officer at station of Calbayog from August 25, 1901, to October 24, 1901. Left Calbayog for Tacloban October 28, 1901, for duty as Chief Commissary, First District, Department of Visayas. Detached service at Tacloban and Manila, and sick at Manila. Detached service en route to the United States, and absent with leave in the United States. Promoted Captain Twenty-fourth Infantry. Subsequently transferred back to Ninth Infantry.

FIRST LIEUTENANT HAROLD HAMMOND. Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion. With Headquarters, Second Battalion at Basey, Samar. Changed station to Calbayog about September 26th, thence to Camp Gandara for duty with Company I about October 5th. Commanded detachment 25 men, Company I, at Blanca Aurora, substation of Camp Gandara, October 8 to 19, 1901. Changed station with Company I to Taviran. Adjutant and Quartermaster at that station.

FIRST LIEUTENANT IRA C. WELBORN. At Pekin, China.

FIRST LIEUTENANT JOHN B. SCHOEFFEL. Commanded Company M. Absent at Catbalogan, Tanauan, and en route to company January 12 to February 23, 1902. (In arrest and before General Court-Martial.) Company M was stationed at Mutiong, with detachments at Jiabong and Calbiga, sending out numerous scouting expeditions until December 27, 1901. Changed station to Taviran, via Catbalogan and Calbayog, arriving January 2, 1902. Changed station February 3, 1902, to Tagnac on right bank of Gandara River, about 18 miles below Taviran.

FIRST LIEUTENANT BENJAMIN P. NICKLIN. With Company A. Commanded company from October 10, 1901, upon departure of Captain Anderson; sick, to date of arrival of Captain Langdon. On detached service, January 27 to February 23, 1902, conducting recruits by sea from Calbayog to Oras. Company A was at Santa Rita from August 10, 1901, having detachment at Villa Real until November 5th, when

Digitized by Google

entire company took station at latter place. December 19, 1901, changed station to Calbayog.

First Lieutenant William K. Naylor. On detached service in the United States.

First Lieutenant Easton R. Gibson. Commanded Company L at Calbayog. Absent sick at Iloilo, August 29 to October 3, 1901.

First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus. With Company C at Balangiga. Killed at Balangiga September 28, 1901.

First Lieutenant James P. Drouillard. With Company G at Basey and Catbalogan. Commanded detachment of Twenty-sixth Infantry at Zumarraga, October 29 to November 19, 1901. Commanded Company G from November 19th. Company G changed station from Basey to Catbalogan October 26, 1901, and to Oras December 15, 1901, arriving December 18th.

First Lieutenant Clifton C. Kinney. Commanded Company F. This company was at Taviran a few weeks, but proceeded by detachments to Mataguinao, about 12 miles further up the Gandara River, last detachment going July 19th. Changed station back to Taviran December 21, 1901, and to Pagsanjan, near mouth of Gandara River, January 22, 1901.

First Lieutenant George S. Simonds. Transferred to the Twenty-second Infantry in June, 1901; order dated May 1, 1901.

First Lieutenant Fred R. Brown. Having been promoted to First Lieutenant Seventh Infantry, transferred back to Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1901. Commanded Company K. Commanded expedition to San Jose, September 21 to October 6, 1901; in the field December 21, 1901, to January 18, 1902. Company K landed at Calbayog August 23, 1901. Left Calbayog for east coast September 14th, disembarked at Dolores September 18th. Had detachment at Hinolasan; changed station from Dolores to Oras October 30, 1901. Adjutant at Oras. (Commanded various other scouting expeditions.)

First Lieutenant Frank R. Lang. Having been promoted to the Twenty-seventh Infantry, transferred back July 20, 1901. Absent on detached service in the United States.

First Lieutenant George W. Wallace. With Company E. Commanded company from November 25 to December 15, 1901, and after Captain Schoeffel was wounded, December 24, 1901. Company E changed station from Tarangnan to Taviran January 19, 1902.

First Lieutenant Willis P. Coleman. Having been promoted to the Twenty-sixth Infantry, joined that regiment in June, 1901. Trans-

Digitized by Google

ferred back to the Ninth Infantry May 22, 1902, but did not join regiment before its departure to the United States.

First Lieutenant Cleveland Willcoxon. Assigned to regiment in 1901. Absent on detached service in the United States.

First Lieutenant Harry J. Collins. Assigned to regiment June 21, 1901. On detached service with native scouts in Luzon until November 26, 1901. Joined Company D at Catbalogan, December 11th, and commanded company from December 12th. Company changed station to Oras December 15th with Company G, arriving at Oras December 21, 1901.

First Lieutenant Robert S. Clark. At Pekin, China, until May 20, 1901. On detached service en route to the United States, and in the United States after August 20th. Promoted from Second Lieutenant to First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 14, 1901.

Second Lieutenant Reuben Smith. Promoted February 2, 1901. Assigned to the Twenty-eighth Infantry June 3, 1901. Left regiment at Manila, July, 1901.

Second Lieutenant William H. Waldron. Promoted February 2, 1901. Assigned to Twenty-ninth Infantry June 3, 1901. Absent on detached service in the United States.

Second Lieutenant Allen Smith, Jr. Promoted February 2, 1901. Assigned to Third Infantry June 3, 1901. Absent in the United States.

Second Lieutenant Abraham U. Loeb. With Company D. Commanded company at Catbalogan until December 12, 1901. Detached service at Tacloban, Leyte, part of April, 1902.

Second Lieutenant Richard W. Buchanan. Appointed February 2, 1901. Assigned to regiment in November, 1901. Joined regiment at Manila, April 15, 1902. Absent at Manila, in arrest, from May 26, 1902.

Second Lieutenant Herbert L. Evans. Appointed February 2, 1901. Assigned to regiment November 12, 1901. Joined at Manila April 15, 1902.

Second Lieutenant Paul M. Goodrich. With Company H. Commanded various expeditions of detachments of companies from Oras. Post Quartermaster and Commissary at Oras.

Second Lieutenant Emery T. Smith. Commanded launch Hercules from June 17, 1901, to January 18, 1902. At Taviran January 19th to 21st as Quartermaster. Relieved and assigned to command of gunboat Florida January 23, 1902. Commanded gunboat Florida January 23 to March 28, 1902. Returned to duty with Company F, March 1902.

Digitized by Google

SECOND LIEUTENANT GUY E. BUCKER. Assigned to Ninth Infantry July 26, 1901. Attached to Company F from July 31, 1901; assigned to Company I, September 22, 1901, but remained with Company F. Commissary at Taviran from January 1, 1902. En route to the United States with Company I on transport Warren.

SECOND LIEUTENANT WILLIS E. MILLS. Joined regiment and assigned to Company K, July 3, 1901. With Company K. Detached service at Hinolasan from October 7 to December 8, 1901. Detached service at Dolores and southward, from December 11, 1902, constructing telegraph line.

SECOND LIEUTENANT GEORGE W. HARRIS. Joined regiment at Calbayog October 21, 1901. Attached to Company L, and assigned to that Company, December 24, 1901. Constructing telephone line from Calbayog northward to Weyler and Mauo, 45 miles, from about December 20, 1901, to about March 5, 1902.

SECOND LIEUTENANT KNEELAND S. SNOW. Joined regiment at Manila, July 17, 1901. Attached to Company A; assigned to Company A, September 22, 1901. Commanded detachment of 20 men at Villa Real from August 14, 1901, to November 5, 1901, and detachment at Zumarraga November 6 to December 20, 1901. Commanded Company A at Calbayog from January 28 to February 18, 1902.

SECOND LIEUTENANT ROBERT L. MEADOR. Joined regiment upon its arrival in San Francisco, June 27, 1902.

SECOND LIEUTENANT HUNTER HARRIS. Joined regiment at Manila, April 15, 1902.

SECOND LIEUTENANT GIRARD L. MCENTEE, JR. Joined regiment upon its arrival at Madison Barracks, New York, July, 1902.

SECOND LIEUTENANT GEORGE C. ROCKWELL. Joined regiment at Madison Barracks, New York.

LISTS OF KILLED IN ACTION, WOUNDED, DIED OF DISEASE, ETC., CAMPAIGN IN SAMAR, 1901–2.

KILLED IN ACTION, DIED OF WOUNDS RECEIVED IN ACTION, MISSING

Captain Thomas W. Connell.
First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus.

Company C.

Quartermaster Sergeant James M. Randles.
Sergeant John F. Martin.
Private Cornelius F. Donahue.
Private Jerry J. Driscoll.
Private Eli Fitzgerald.

Digitized by Google

Company C—continued.

Sergeant Henry J. Scharer.
Corporal Frank McCormick.
Corporal Leonard P. Schley.
Corporal Proal Peters.
Corporal Thomas E. Baird.
Musician John L. Covington.
Cook Gustav F. Schnitzler.
Artificer Joseph R. Marr.
Private John D. Armini.
Private Litto Armini.
Private John W. Aydelette.
Private George Bony.
Private Robert L. Booth.
Private John D. Buhrer.
Private James L. Cain.
Private Charles E. Davis.
Private Byron Dent.
Private Guy C. Dennis.
Private Patrick J. Dobbins.
Private Joseph I. Godon.
Private Joseph O. Kleinhampl.
Private Richard Long.
Private James Martin.
Private James F. McDermott.
Private John H. Miller.
Private Daniel S. Mullins.
Private August F. Porczeng.
Private Charles Powers.
Private Chris F. Recard
Private Floyd J. Shoemaker.
Private Evans South.
Private Robert Sproull.
Private Charles E. Sterling.
Private Joseph Turner.
Private Frank Vobayda.
Private John Wannebo.
Private Christian S. Williams.
Private Claud C. Wingo.
Private Harry M. Wood.

Company E.

First Sergeant William F. Gormly.
Sergeant John P. Swisher.
Corporal William J. Brighly.
Corporal James Gaughan.
Private George Bedford.
Private Edward F. Burns.
Private Thomas Clark.
Private George Claxton.
Private Orville J. Dromgoole.
Private Robert L. Hampton.
Private Carl M. Johnson.
Private John P. Kelly.
Private Frederic Kopp.
Private William Loftin.
Private John Marr.
Private Frank McAndrew.
Private Jack Pleoplis.
Private William H. Ritche.
Private John H. Russell.
Private George W. Teachout.
Private Joseph Weippert.
Private Charlie Wilson.

Company F.

Private General T. Babb.

Company G.

Corporal John L. Weiss.
Private Charles C. McManius.
Private Robert I. Parnell.
Private Jacob Stettler.

Digitized by Google

Company L.

Private Clayton C. Allard.

WOUNDED

Company C.

Sergeant Frank Betron.
Sergeant John D. Closson.
Sergeant George F. Markley.
Corporal Sylvester Burke.
Corporal James Pickett.
Cook Melvin M. Walls
Musician George E. Meyers.
Private George Allen.
Private Richard Considine.
Private Elbert B. DeGraffenreid.
Private Adolph Gamlin.
Private William J. Gibbs.
Private Arnold Irish.
Private Albert B. Keller
Private Henry W. Manire.
Private Charles F. Marak.
Private Clifford M. Mumby.
Private Tehmistocles Qula.
Private Ernest U. Ralston.
Private Carl E. Swanson.
Private John Uhtof.

Company E.

Corporal John H. Russell.
Musician Charles W. Buck.
Private Arthur Bonnicastle.
Private Philip Brady.
Private Eugene De Witt.
Private Martin C. Lyons.
Private Henry Stierle.
Private Frank McAndrew.
Private Daniel L. McPherson.
Private Joseph A. Monahan.

Company G.

Private James H. Swanton.

Company H.

Corporal Clarence Matthews.
Private William Roberts.

Company I.

Private Frank W. Gossin.
Private Walter Harper.

Company K.

Private Joseph P. Coyle.

Company M.

Musician John E. Smith.

Digitized by Google

DIED OF DISEASE, DROWNED, ETC.

Company A.

Private John Leahy.

Company C.

Private Charles E. McGilligan.
Private Anderson Temple.
Private Frederick Schechterle (suicide).

Company D.

Private Absolom A. Briley.

Company E.

Private Dominick F. Neary.
Private Guy de St. Croix.
Private William Stafford (accidental shooting).

Company F.

Private Ewell W. Brown.
Private Orin C. Weston.

Company H.

Private Patrick Farrell (drowned).

Company I.

Private Philip Durand (drowned).
Private Joseph F. Gallion.

Company L.

Corporal Jeremiah T. Healey (accidental shooting).
Musician Joseph F. Krietzer.
Private John Grill (suicide).
Private Simon Hepp.
Private Patrick J. McEntes.
Private Joseph Wolfe.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE CUBA COLORS — PHILIPPINE COLORS — CHINA COLORS.

CUBA COLORS

The set of colors used by the Ninth Infantry in Cuba were unfurled for the first time about May 1, 1898, at the camp of the regiment at Tampa, Florida, Colonel William H. Powell, commanding the regiment, Sergeant John White, Company D, Ninth Infantry, and Sergeant Henry Ewing, Company A, Ninth Infantry, color sergeants.

The regiment had arrived at Tampa on the 22nd of April, assembling at that place with nearly all the infantry of the regular army in consequence of the outbreak of the Spanish-American War.

The colors were displayed daily at the Colonel's tent until June 8th. On that date the regiment proceeded by rail to Tampa Bay and embarked on the transport Santiago, No. 2, of the fleet assembled to convey the Fifth Army Corps to Cuba. The regiment had then been brigaded with the Thirteenth and Twenty-fourth Regiments, forming the Third Brigade, Second Division, Fifth Army Corps. The departure of the fleet from Tampa was delayed until June 14th. On the eve of sailing, Colonel Powell was ordered to remain at Tampa to appear before a retiring board, and the command of the regiment fell to Lieutenant-Colonel Ezra P. Ewers. The voyage was without special incident, the triple line of transports extending for miles, steaming slowly on to an unknown port. At last the course indicated that Santiago was the objective, and at 11:00 A. M., June 20th, the fleet lay off the coast opposite that port, several miles out from the frowning Morro Castle.

The troops first landed were, however, put ashore at Daiquiri, and the Ninth Infantry, with other regiments, at Siboney on June 25th.

On the day of landing at Daiquiri, June 23rd, the transport Santiago had lost its proper position and was ordered to join other ships to the west of the Santiago harbor entrance. As she passed the entrance two shells were fired at her from an interior battery, both passing over harmlessly. This was the first time the colors came under fire. Landing at Siboney on the 25th, the regiment went forward on the 27th, advanced again on the 30th, and took part in the attack on and capture of San Juan hill July 1, 1898. The hot fire of battle on that day and on

Digitized by Google

the two following days was hurled at the line on San Juan hill, and, until the surrender of the city, the colors were placed on the crest of the breastworks, waving defiantly in full view of the Spaniards. The surrender was announced July 14th and on the 17th, the regiment was selected to march into the city to represent the American Army at the ceremony of raising an American flag over the municipal building. The colors were therefore the first of the Fifth Army Corps to enter the city of Santiago. There they remained for three weeks while the regiment was in the city as a force of occupation.

Colonel Powell rejoined in Santiago, and continued in command during the remainder of the stay in Cuba. He displayed the colors at his tent on the hills outside the city for the few days the regiment was there before departure for the United States, and on August 10th they were borne once more through the city as the regiment marched with depleted ranks to embark for home. After camping at Montauk Point until the middle of September the regiment resumed its old post at Madison Barracks, New York. There the Cuba colors, somewhat tattered and torn, were laid aside. They were, however, again given the place of honor at the Colonel's quarters (Colonel Charles F. Robe), two years and a half later in China, after the regiment had participated in other campaigns, and other sets of colors had become too worn for use. It was on March 26, 1901, at Camp Reilly, in the grounds of the Temple of Agriculture at Peking, that the Cuba set was again put in use. The regiment had been in China since July of the preceding year, serving there with the military forces of other nations. Its service, since the relief of the legations in August, 1900, had consisted in maintaining proper police and good order in certain portions of Peking and Tien-Tsin. The principal gateway to the Forbidden City was under its guard. This duty continued for two months longer when all United States troops, except Company B, Ninth Infantry, were withdrawn from China. The regiment sailed from Taku May 25, 1901, and arrived at Manila June 2nd. The colors were placed at the Colonel's tent at Camp Wallace, on the Luneta, and at his quarters at the Nipa Barracks, Malate. Once the regiment paraded with other troops in the city, when, on July 4, 1901, control of the Philippines was transferred by the military commander to the commission headed by Honorable William H. Taft, the first Civil Governor. On this occasion the colors waved in the ranks in front of the Ayuntamiento, while Mr. Taft delivered his inaugural address, and were dipped in salute to Major-General MacArthur, the retiring commander, as he proceeded to the dock between long lines arranged as escort of honor.

Digitized by Google

Within the next six weeks the regiment was transferred by detachments to various points in Samar, Headquarters and the colors going on the transport Lawton to Calbayog in August. The Philippine insurrection was regarded as terminated in all localities except Samar and Leyte, and it was in Samar during the next seven months that the regiment participated in some of its severest, most trying service, and suffered its greatest losses. The colors, the same set that had gone through the campaign in Cuba, remained at Calbayog. They were displayed daily in front of the Colonel's quarters, and thus added the title Samar to the title Cuba. The fighting in Samar was by detachments in all parts of that tropical, almost impassable, island. Company C at Balangiga, detachments of Company E at camp on the Gandara River, and at Tarangnan, and a detachment of Company G near Basey, were assaulted by hordes of fanatical bolomen, with terrible losses; scouting parties penetrated to the very center of the island, and patrolled the coasts at Oras, and on the north and west. The numerous marches and combats and the long list of casualties are all of record in the detailed history of the regiment. The colors, however, while at Calbayog were not under fire.

On April 7, 1902, most of the regiment having been assembled at Calbayog, the colors were placed with all the regiment, except companies D, G, H and K, which were at Oras, aboard the transport Warren for transfer to Manila, under orders for return to the United States. It was the latter part of May, however, before the regiment was united and sailed from Manila. The transport Hancock was the ship on which the journey was made.

The original order of assignment to station in the United States directed the regiment to proceed to Fort Assinniboine, Montana, but, in the interim between the issue of the order and the regiment's departure from Manila, a change was made, and the old station in New York State, Madison Barracks, was designated as the post for Regimental Headquarters and two battalions, the First Battalion, less Company B, to take station at Fort Niagara. The citizens of central New York were especially interested in the record the regiment had made during its three years absence, and arranged to see it in parade. It was, therefore, detrained and paraded at Buffalo, Rochester and Syracuse, and the tattered and faded Cuba and Samar colors were displayed and escorted in great honor. Once more, at Watertown, a few weeks after arrival at Madison Barracks, they were carried in a street parade, and soon thereafter, being replaced by new colors, were permanently retired, full of honors and glorious history.

Digitized by Google

PHILIPPINE COLORS

The set of colors, national and regimental, which became known as the Philippine Colors of the Ninth Infantry, were received by the regiment prior to the Spanish-American War, and were in use at Regimental Headquarters at Madison Barracks, New York, on occasion of ceremony for an unknown period, possibly a year or two. It is quite probable they were borne along the avenues of New York City by the regiment in parade on the occasion of the dedication of Grant's Memorial in the spring of 1897. The regiment was sent from Madison Barracks to New York for this ceremony, camping on Governor's Island for the two or three days of its stay.

In the early part of 1898 these colors were no longer new, and Colonel Powell took the necessary steps to obtain a new set for the impending war with Spain. War was declared, however, before the new set arrived, and these colors were the ones with which the regiment set forth for unknown battle-fields, leaving Madison Barracks, April 19, 1898, and arriving at Tampa, Florida, three days later. The country was filled with patriotic enthusiasm, and the people along the line of travel, from extreme north to extreme south, cheered the uniform and the colors as they passed. Shortly after arrival in camp at Tampa, the new colors, the Cuba colors, were received, and the ones here referred to as the Philippine colors were boxed and returned to Madison Barracks, apparently denied forever the honor of waving in battle and in active campaign.

However, on return of the regiment to Madison Barracks, in September 1898, after the campaign at Santiago de Cuba, the Cuba colors were temporarily retired with honors, and this set resumed its place in the Colonel's quarters, and on parade. The United States had now acquired the Philippine Islands, as a consequence of the Spanish American War, and service in that faraway land loomed up as a probability. The necessity arose sooner than was expected. The outbreak of the Filipino insurrection against American control occurred in February 1899. The Ninth Infantry was among the first regiments ordered for active service, something more than mere service of occupation. Families were to be left behind.

These colors therefore started for the second time on campaign. The regiment had been recruited to full strength, and by reorganization, under laws of 1898 and 1899, had become a twelve company, three battalion regiment, with over 1,200 men, instead of the eight company organization of 500 men, or less, which went to Cuba. The railroad journey to San Francisco was made in six trains, and there the companies

Digitized by Google

embarked on two steamships, chartered as transports, the City of Puebla, and the Zealandia, the colors being with Headquarters on the former. The Zealandia had seen about thirty-five years service, having been launched as the Arizona in the early 60's. Notwithstanding its age and ancient design, it landed its troops safely at Manila at the end of April, the Puebla two or three days earlier.

The insurrection had seemed a small affair when viewed from the distant shores of the United States, and there was some surprise upon learning that in the month of the regiment's sea travel, it had not been terminated. After equipping with khaki clothing, a new and unknown dress for United States troops, the regiment was divided, part going to Caloocan and part to Pateros, while Regimental Headquarters and the colors remained at Manila. The marches to Caloocan and Pateros were made in a night, but, even at so short distance from Manila, the regiment was in face of the enemy. In June there was fighting southward from the Pasig River in which the Pateros detachment joined, and immediately afterwards the regiment was united and sent to General MacArthur's command, which, while fighting its way northward, was temporarily waiting at San Fernando. There these colors first came under fire. The regiment was held responsible for part of the entrenched line, and was turned out frequently to meet night firing. Occupation of the line by larger detachments day and night, in tropical rains and scorching sun, was most wearing service. At last, in August, an advance was made, the whole command moving northward, beating off whatever resistance was offered, and arriving at Calulut where there was a final encounter. The regiment, marching from Calulut two days later, next faced the enemy at Santa Rita for a month, was then in an affair at Porac, and the following day marched to Angeles. There the service was similar to that it had at San Fernando, the fighting including several strong night attacks by the enemy, which were successfully resisted. In November, further advance was made to Mabalacat, then to Bamban and finally to Tarlac; at the last-named place General MacArthur detached the regiment for garrison duty. Headquarters and the colors were at Tarlac, while the regiment in detachments occupied numerous places around about and for several months sought and found the enemy and his rifles. It was while this duty was in progress in January, 1900, that the Philippine colors were replaced by new ones and retired. These colors stand for the work of the regiment in Luzon from April, 1899 to January, 1900; engagements at Pateros, Caloocan, Paranaque, Zapote Bridge, San Fernando, Calulut, Porac, Santa Rita, Angeles and Bamban, and many minor encounters in the province of Tarlac and adjoining

Digitized by Google

provinces, during a vast amount of patrolling in the jungle in search of arms. They also stand for the initiatory efforts of the United States through its officers and men, of this regiment and others, to induct the Filipino into the methods of democratic government and to educate the children. Schools for the children were started at that early day, and enlisted men of the Ninth Infantry were teachers. These colors are therefore emblems of peace as well as of war.

The regimental commanders, during the period they were in use, were Colonel Powell, until the regiment arrived at San Francisco, then Major Regan, until duty begun at San Fernando, and afterwards Colonel Liscum.

CHINA COLORS

The new colors received by the regiment at Tarlac, Luzon, Philippine Islands, in January 1900, replacing the so-called Philippine colors which had become worn out in use, were of somewhat smaller size, conforming to a new regulation on the subject. One of them had no staff, and Color-Sergeant White took the old national color off its staff and cut down the staff to proper length to use with the new color.

These colors entered on service at Regimental Headquarters at Tarlac in January, 1900, Colonel Emerson H. Liscum being in command of the regiment. For about six months they were unfurled daily in front of the building, which he occupied as Headquarters and residence. During the latter part of this period the building used was the Filipino governmental building which Aguinaldo had as his headquarters and seat of government for the time he remained at Tarlac. The regiment was scattered, occupying several towns along the railroad and a number of others outlying, its duty being to so garrison and patrol the territory assigned it that no place could be a suitable point of assembly or source of supply for any portion of the disbanded Filipino troops. Every report of assembly of troops, or information of concealed arms, or of hiding insurgents, was the precursor of an expedition, large or small, as the occasion demanded. The results were very satisfactory. Several organized bands were driven to surrender. Many individuals gave themselves up, insurgent barracks hidden in the forests were found and burned, one thousand musket and rifles of various kinds, and a number of revolvers were obtained and shipped to Manila. The district was regarded as well cleaned up by June 1, 1900.

It was a few days after this that the seriousness of the Boxer uprising in China became manifest, and the necessity arose for the use of United States troops in connection with forces from other countries

Digitized by Google

to relieve the beleaguered legations in Pekin. The Ninth Infantry was the first regiment to go from the Philippines, the order being received June 18th.

The companies were hastily forwarded from their several stations by rail to Manila, Headquarters and the colors going from Tarlac on June 22nd. After re-equipping, the regiment embarked on the United States transport Logan and sailed June 27th. Wagons and mules were sent on a chartered steamer, the Port Albert. The journey was via Nagasaki, Japan.

On July 6th the Logan arrived off Taku, the port of Tien-Tsin and Pekin, and anchored in the midst of warships, transports, and supply ships of all nations, the shore being ten miles from the anchorage.

Sailors and marines had already been landed from all warships, but of soldiers no nation except Russia and Japan had ashore a force exceeding the strength of the Ninth Infantry. Russia had despatched troops at once from Port Arthur and Japan from home stations. The waving of the United States colors in China, supported by United States troops so promptly after the emergency arose, was a surprising evidence to all nations of the prominent part the United States were in future to have in all international questions in the Far East.

These colors were carried ashore in China at Tongku, the landing place near the mouth of the Pei-ho, on July 9, 1900. The following day at 10:00 o'clock in the evening, Headquarters, the First Battalion, and Company E, of Second Battalion, arrived at Tein-Tsin, the journey having been made on a lighter towed by a river tug. On the 11th, the remainder of the Second Battalion arrived. Fighting had been in progress in and about Tien-Tsin for several weeks, and before daybreak of July 11th the combat was renewed. At intervals throughout the day there was cannonading and rifle fire at some part of the lines, and it was thus these colors first came under fire, but the Ninth Infantry was not then actively engaged.

The battle of Tien-Tsin, by which the allied forces strove to capture the Chinese walled quarter of the city, was fought on July 13 and 14, 1900, the Russians fighting on one side of the city, and the Japanese and contingents of the other nations on another. Companies B, C, D, F, G and H, of the Ninth Infantry, led by Colonel Liscum, were in the thickest of the fight. Company A was placed at another point where the fighting was severe, and the Third Battalion, which arrived in the afternoon of the 13th, joined a reserve force, coming under fire, but suffering no losses.

In this battle the colors were bravely carried forward across fire

Digitized by Google

swept ground. Color-bearer, Edward Gorman, Sergeant Company D, kept near Colonel Liscum, who was with the most advanced line, the regiment's objective being loop holed mud houses from which the Chinese were pouring forth a hot fire. When within a hundred yards of the enemy's position, the attack being stopped by deep water-filled excavations, Sergeant Gorman fell, severely wounded. A few minutes later, after seeing that the colors were properly secured, Colonel Liscum fell with a mortal wound. So much of the attacking force as had reached this most advanced position retained its place, incurring losses throughout the day. Major Jesse M. Lee was now in command, and in pursuance of orders from the British General, Dorward, successfully withdrew the line at nightfall, taking the colors and wounded from the field. The regimental losses in killed and wounded were about twenty per cent of that part of the regiment engaged. Early in the morning of July 14th, the Japanese broke through the gate of the Walled City and the object of the fighting was attained.

In August the regiment joined with foreign troops in marching and fighting to reach Pekin and relieve the legations which had been besieged for two months. On this march the colors were in battle at Yangtsun on August 6th, and at the gates of Pekin on August 14th and 15th. A month later they were borne in the triumphal procession, composed of representative organizations from each nation, which, as a sign,of complete domination, marched through the most interior and sacred precincts of the Chinese Emperor's palace in the Forbidden City.

The regiment remained in China garrisoning districts of Pekin, Tien-Tsin, Tungchow and Tongku, until May 1901. The duty consisted in performing, with other United States forces and troops of other powers, — England, Germany, France, Russia, Japan, Italy — the duties of a force of occupation. Regimental Headquarters at Pekin were located in the grounds of the Temple of Agriculture, and the colors were displayed at the door of the building occupied by the Colonel as his residence and office. Colonel Charles F. Robe, who was promoted on the death of Colonel Liscum, and joined from the Philippines in the latter part of August, was in command of the regiment during this period. In March, 1901, a box containing regimental colors of earlier service was forwarded to the regiment from its storeroom in Manila, and a memorandum by the Adjutant, dated at Pekin, China, March 26, 1901, states:

"One box marked 'Cuban colors' received from Manila, contained

* * * * *

2. A set of colors, regimental and national, small sized, used in

Digitized by Google

Cuba, being known as the Cuba colors, and this day unfurled for further use, being substituted for the China set which have become tattered."

The China set thereof yielding up their place of honor to colors which had already seen campaign service and waved in battle. The China set were permanently retired at that time.

Their history, while being most honorable, is most unusual in having waved triumphantly in the realm and very palace of the Emperor of China.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII

DUTIES FROM 1902 TO 1904 INC.— REBUILDING OF THE REGIMENT — GARRISON SCHOOL — DUTIES AT FAIRS — PRACTICE MARCHES AND TARGET PRACTICE — DRILL OF COMPOSITE COMPANY AT MADISON SQUARE GARDEN AND WEST POINT — UNVEILING OF HOOKER MONUMENT AT BOSTON — REUNION OF THE SOCIETY OF SANTIAGO AT DETROIT, MICHIGAN — COLONEL ROBE RETIRED — MANASSAS MANEUVERS — ERECTION OF MEMORIAL TO THE REGIMENT — ROSTER.

THE history of the regiment from July 4, 1902, to December 31, 1904, is practically that of the record of troops in garrison within the limits of the United States. At the close of this period the regiment was under orders for a second tour of duty in the Philippines, being scheduled to sail from San Francisco for Manila April 30, 1905. At the commencement of this period, the stations of the different organizations were as follows:

First Battalion, excepting Company B, at Fort Niagara, New York.

Headquarters, band, and Second and Third Battalions at Madison Barracks, New York.

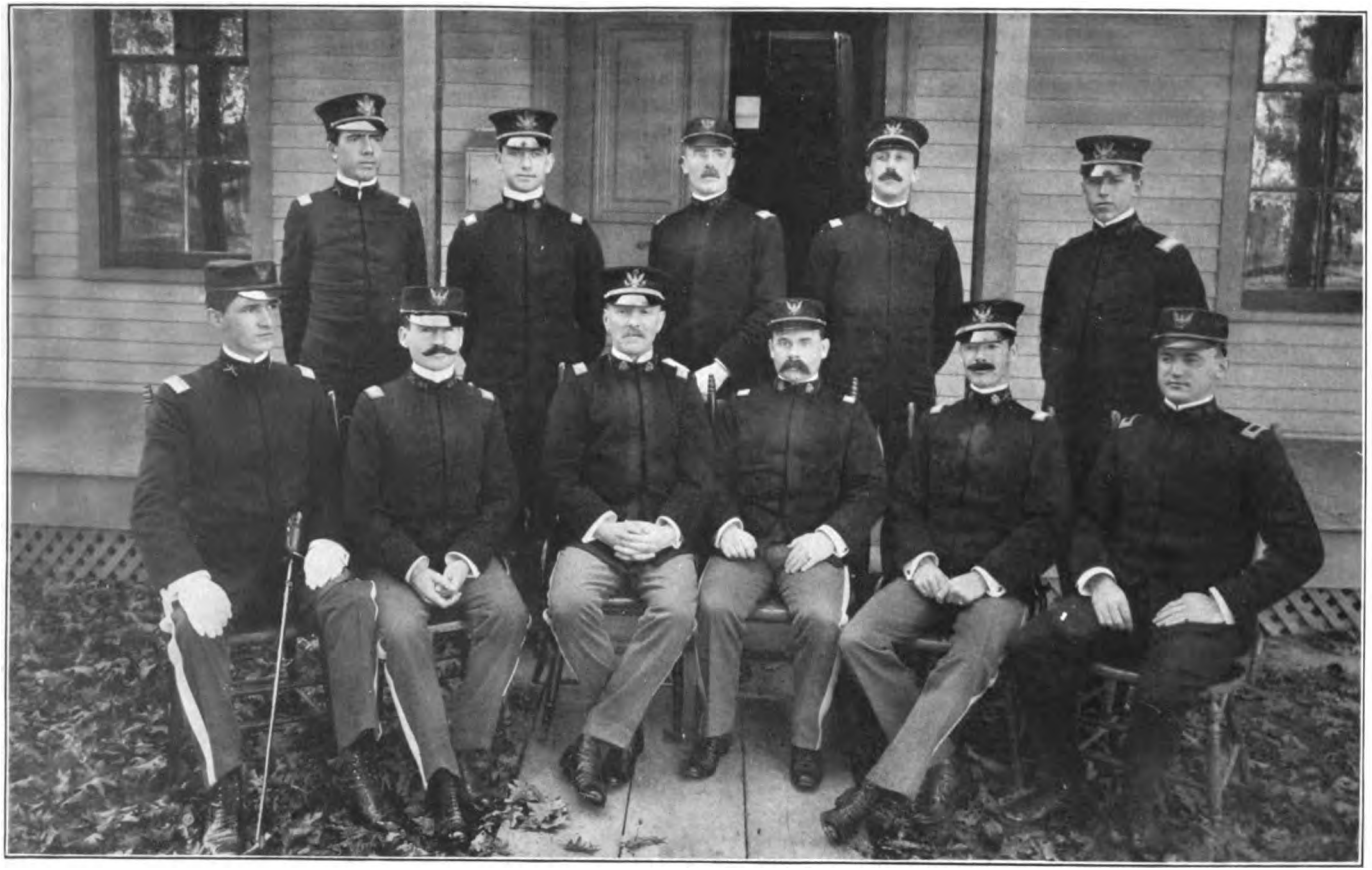
Company B continued as United States Legation Guard, Pekin, China, throughout the period.

Excepting temporary changes, Madison Barracks remained the station of Headquarters and Second and Third Battalions throughout the period. Company C was transferred to Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, January 7, 1904, and Companies A and D to Madison Barracks, August 12th, and to Fort Thomas, Kentucky, September 21, 1904.

The regiment returned from the Philippines with its ranks much depleted; companies averaging less than forty men present, many of whom were soon to be discharged for expiration of term of service, disability and other causes. The authorized strength of companies had been reduced from 128 to 80 men by orders of July 1, 1902, and were further reduced to 65 men October 25, 1902. The authorized strength of Company B was established at 2 Sergeants, 4 Corporals, and 70 privates, in addition to that of other companies. By the end of October, 1902, the companies had been recruited to approximately their full strength,

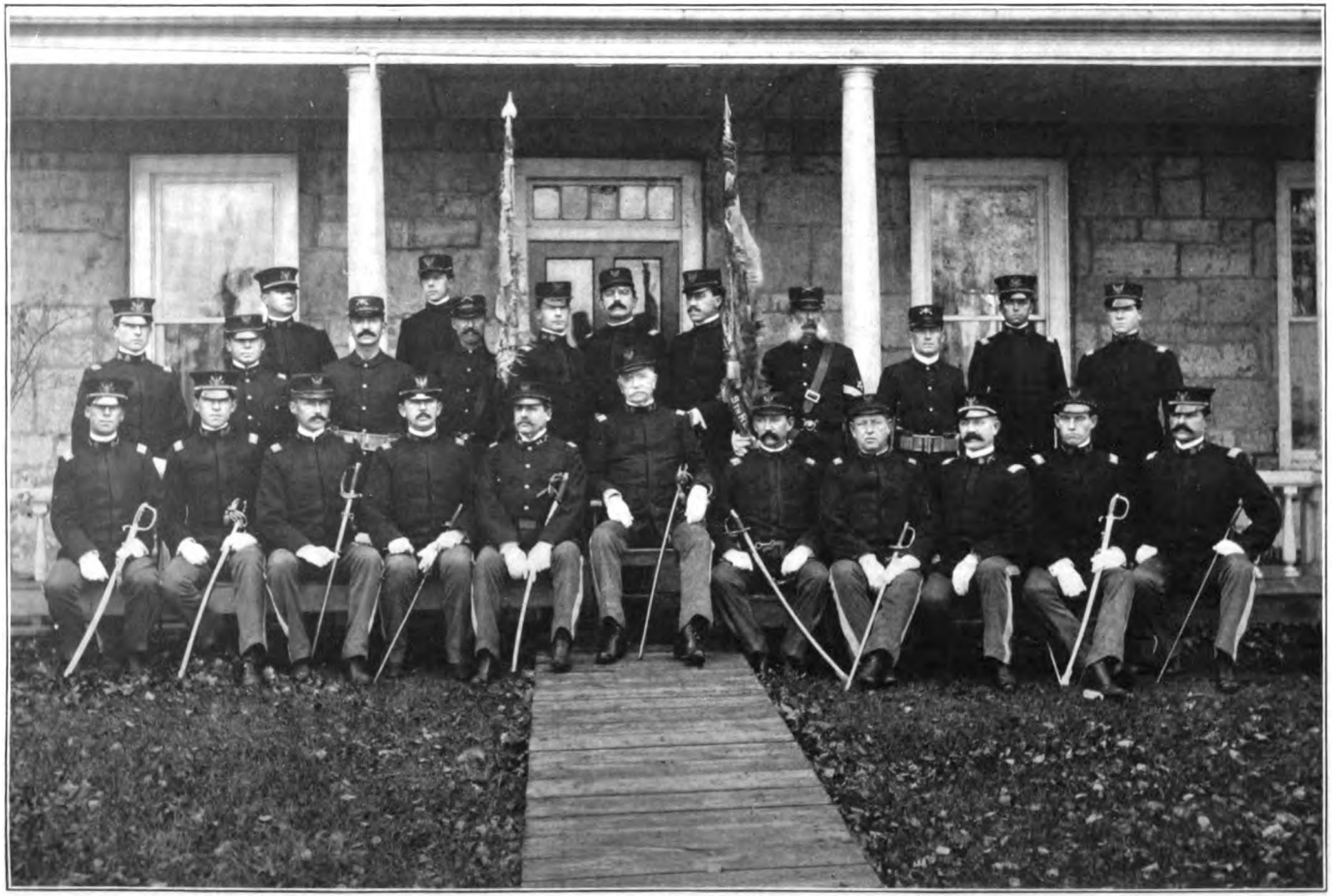
Note — The last history of the regiment covered the time up to the arrival of the different organizations at their several stations, July 3, 1902, from foreign service.

Digitized by Google



Officers at Fort Niagara, N. Y., 1902.

Digitized by Google



Officers Ninth Infantry, Madison Barracks, N. Y., 1902.

Digitized by Google

and after the completion of the annual target practice in August, the drilling of recruits, and acquainting older men and recently commissioned officers, of whom there were a considerable number, with garrison duties, was pushed rapidly forward. The preceding years had been those of campaigning; and especially so was the immediate preceding year in Samar, during which there had been little time for drill. Most of the stations had been occupied by one company, or a detachment, and a battalion formation was new alike to many officers and men. During the winter following, as well as the winters of 1903–'04, and 1904–'05, the time of most officers was occupied in the Garrison School for Officers, established by the War Department. It proved a benefit to all; many of the officers receiving for the first time systematic instruction in a variety of military subjects; instructors in the preparation required of them as such.

The Second and Third Battalions, under Colonel Robe, proceeded by rail to Watertown, New York, July 12, 1902, and took part in a parade and ceremonies in honor of the regiment; returned to Madison Barracks same day. Distance traveled, 26 miles. On the same day a banquet was given the officers by the citizens of Watertown at the Woodruff House. This hospitality was a "welcome home" to the regiment after an absence of over three years on foreign service in the Philippines and China.

The Third Battalion, under Major Jones, marched to the Stony Point Rifle Range July 14th, and encamped for the annual target practice; returned to Madison Barracks July 30th. Distance marched, 32 miles.

The Second Battalion, under Captain Hersey, followed on August 2nd, and returned August 15th. The target practice of the First Battalion was held each year on the range at Fort Niagara.

Company K, strengthened to 80 men by details from other companies, under Captain Sigworth, proceeded by rail September 3rd to Boonville, New York, to participate in the Lewis County Fair. Exhibition drills and a sham attack were given by the company on the 3rd and 4th, the company returning to Madison Barracks on the 4th. Distance traveled, 124 miles.

The Second and Third Battalions left Madison Barracks September 16th for field exercises. The Second Battalion, being in advance one hour, took a position for defense about four miles southeast of the post.

The Third Battalion developed and attacked this position. Both commands then returned to post. Distance marched, 8 miles.

The Second and Third Battalions and band, under Colonel Robe, left Madison Barracks September 18th for a practice march and field

Digitized by Google



Composite Company, Ninth Infantry. Madison Square Garden, 1903.

Digitized by Google

exercises; encamped at Adams Center on the night of the 18th. On the 19th the command marched to Adams and returned to camp; and on the 20th returned to post. Distance marched, 30 miles. The weather was pleasant, and the march was enjoyed by all. Throughout the marches, organizations alternated as advance and rear guard; and, during each night in camp, outposts were maintained until one o'clock A. M.

During the winter of 1902–'03, opportunity was offered enlisted men to transfer to commands designated for foreign service in the Philippines, and many men accepted transfers to the Fourteenth and Twenty-third Regiments of Infantry.

Companies E and F left Madison Barracks April 14, 1903, to garrison Plattsburg Barracks during the interim from the departure of the Twenty-third Infantry for, and the arrival of the Fifth Infantry from the Philippines. These companies returned to Madison Barracks September 16th. Distance traveled, 420 miles.

A composite company, under Captain Bookmiller, with Lieutenants Naylor and E. T. Smith, left Madison Barracks April 25th to take part in the Military Athletic League Tournament, Madison Square Garden, New York, during the week ending May 1st. Each regiment of infantry in the Department of the East had received orders during the preceding fall to have one company of 65 men specially drilled for this purpose. The company ordered to the tournament was selected by a board of officers appointed by the department commander.

After completion of the work at Madison Square Garden, the command proceeded to West Point, New York, by direction of the department commander, and gave an exhibition drill before the Corps of Cadets.

The company returned to Madison Barracks May 4th. Distance traveled, 640 miles. General Chaffee remarked, in an official communication, that the work of this company was "never excelled, if ever equaled."

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST,
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW YORK CITY, May 4, 1903.

CAPTAIN E. V. BOOKMILLER, Ninth Infantry, Commanding Composite Company of Ninth Infantry (Through Commanding Officer, Madison Barracks, New York):

SIR: The department commander has closely observed your company during its performances at the Military Athletic League Tournament at Madison Square Garden, New York City, April 27th to May 2, 1903, and has pleasure in directing me to inform you that he is thoroughly

Digitized by Google

satisfied with the work accomplished, especially with the soldierly appearance and conduct of the men concerned. It is his opinion, shared by all who have witnessed the exercises, that the greatest possible degree of proficiency and correctness of detail has been attained, and that the work of the regular army organizations that participated in this tournament has never been excelled, if ever equalled. These exercises, and the general bearing of the officers and men of the regular army concerned, have done much to impress the public at large with the high standard of discipline and instruction maintained by the regular army of the United States.

The department commander therefore directs me to convey to you and to your officers and men his appreciation of the good work accomplished, and extends to you his thanks for the creditable manner in which all have performed their duty in this respect.

Copy of this letter has been furnished the War Department.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) THOMAS H. BARRY,

Colonel and Assistant Adjutant-General, Adjutant-General.

HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST,
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW YORK CITY, May 1, 1903.

CAPTAIN E. V. BOOKMILLER, Ninth Infantry, Commanding Composite Company, Ninth Infantry, Madison Square Garden, New York City:

SIR: In reward and appreciation of the work of yourself, your officers and your men, in attaining the excellence exhibited by your company in its drills, exercises and feats at the Military Athletic League Tournament now being held at Madison Square Garden, the department commander directs that in returning to your station at Madison Barracks, New York, you delay en route at the United States Military Academy, West Point, New York, for the purpose of giving an exhibition drill before the Corps of Cadets. The superintendent of the academy has been conferred with, and remarks that it will be entirely agreeable to him to have your company stop there for the purpose indicated, and that he will make all arrangements conducive to the company's comfort and interest during its visit. He remarks that, owing to several interruptions in the regular schedule for instruction laid down for cadets, it will be best for the company to drill on the afternoon of May 3d next.

This opportunity will afford an object lesson to the cadets, and indicate to them the perfection that can be accomplished by the careful instruction of our enlisted men.

The department commander is extremely gratified with the showing

Digitized by Google

your company has made, its general appearance and conduct during the week, and feels satisfied that it will fulfill his expectations in this respect in its coming visit to West Point. He desires that you accept for yourself, and convey to your officers and men, his thanks for and appreciation of the work accomplished.

Upon arrival at West Point, you will report to the Superintendent, United States Military Academy, and carry out his wishes and instructions in the premises.

The details for transportation, etc., are being arranged.

Very respectfully,

THOMAS H. BARRY,
Colonel and Assistant Adjutant-General, Adjutant-General.

Companies G, H, and L marched to Stony Point Rifle Range May 15th; completed the annual target practice and returned to Madison Barracks June 19th. Distance marched, 32 miles.

Companies G, H, L and M, under Major Irvine, left Madison Barracks for Boston, Massachusetts, June 24th, to take part in the ceremonies attending the unveiling of the Hooker Monument. The command returned to post June 26th. Distance traveled, 800 miles.

Companies I and K, under Major Jones, marched to Stony Point Rifle Range June 20th, and were followed by Company M, on the 27th, for the annual target practice. The command returned to post July 28th. Distance marched, 32 miles.

The band and Company H, under Captain Hersey, proceeded to Carthage, New York, on July 4th, to take part in Independence Day Ceremonies; returned to post same day. Distance traveled, 60 miles.

The composite company that had taken part in the Military Athletic League Tournament in New York City, and Company L, Captain Bookmiller commanding, left Madison Barracks July 14th and proceeded by rail to Buffalo, New York. There they joined companies A and D from Fort Niagara, and the command, under Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson, proceeded by steamer to Detroit, Michigan, where it encamped and took part in the reunion of the Society of Santiago de Cuba, July 15th–18th. The composite company, in connection with Captain Brett's Troop, Second Cavalry, and Captain Berry's Battery Field Artillery, giving exhibition drills daily. The command returned by steamer to Buffalo on the 20th and divided, each detachment returning to its station on the same day. Distance traveled by the Fort Niagara command, 782 miles; by the Madison Barracks command, 940 miles.

Companies I and K, Captain Palmer commanding, left post for Park-

Digitized by Google

ersburg, West Virginia, August 3rd, and returned to post August 15th. Distance traveled, 1,338 miles. The command encamped during this time with the National Guard of that state, taking part in camp duties and field exercises.

Colonel Robe, who had commanded the regiment since August 25, 1900, was appointed Brigadier-General July 31, 1903. He relinquished command August 3rd.

HEADQUARTERS NINTH UNITED STATES INFANTRY,
MADISON BARRACKS, NEW YORK, August 3, 1903.

General Orders No. 5.

In consequence of promotion, and retirement from active service, I hereby relinquish command of the regiment.

The unanimity of thought, sentiment and action in all matters concerning the common welfare, has taught me, in the progress of events, to realize how great the influence which both officers and enlisted men have ever loyally exerted, and that that influence has made so good the name and reputation of the regiment.

In the forefront of happiest and most cherished recollections of the past will be the memory of almost three years' service with the Ninth Infantry.

(Signed) CHARLES F. ROBE,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Colonel Robe was succeeded as Colonel by Lieutenant-Colonel James Regan, who had served with the regiment in all grades from First Lieutenant since 1870. Colonel Regan assumed command August 17th. During August Major E. B. Robertson succeeded as Lieutenant-Colonel and Captain C. R. Noyes as Major.

Both these officers' entire service had been with the regiment. Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson continued in command of the First Battalion and Fort Niagara, New York, and Major Noyes was soon assigned to duty in the Military Secretary's Department.

Headquarters, band and Companies G, H, I, K, L and M, under Colonel James Regan, marched to Watertown, New York, September 1st, bivouacked on the Jefferson County Fair Grounds that night, and returned to post on the following day. Distance marched, 24 miles. On the 2nd, exhibition drills were given upon the grounds.

Company E left Plattsburg Barracks September 7th for Lake George, New York, to take part in the ceremonies attending the dedication of a

Digitized by Google

monument to the participants in Colonial Wars. The company returned to its station September 9th. Distance traveled, 256 miles.

Headquarters, band and Second and Third Battalions, Colonel James Regan commanding, left Madison Barracks October 3rd for a practice march. The command bivouacked at Chaumont on the 3rd; distance 12 miles; at Cape Vincent the 4th, 12 miles; at Clayton the 5th, 15 miles; at Alexandria Bay the 6th, 12 miles; at La Fargeville the 7th, 12 miles; returned to Madison Barracks the 8th, 23 miles. The roads on the last day were very muddy, but a rate of three miles per hour, including halts, was maintained throughout the day.

Since December 22, 1902, a detachment of 20 men, under command of Second Lieutenant Ralph W. Drury, had garrisoned Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pa. These men were taken from Companies A, C and D at Fort Niagara. Company C, Captain P. C. Harris, commanding, left Fort Niagara January 7, 1904; arrived at Allegheny Arsenal the following day and garrisoned that post throughout the year.

Orders were received about 10: 00 P. M. February 8th, for one battalion to proceed at once to Baltimore, Maryland, where a great fire was laying waste that city. The Third Battalion, under Major Jones, was equipped for this service in a short time but was unable to leave by rail before 7: 45 A. M. the following morning, as the railroad between Sackett Harbor and Watertown was blocked by snow and ice. At that hour, by working throughout the night, the road had been cleared; but before leaving Watertown the battalion was ordered to return, the fire having been brought under control.

The Third Battalion, under Major Jones, marched to Stony Point Rifle Range May 14th, and returned to post June 8th. It was followed by the Second Battalion, under Captain Hersey, June 17th. Captain Palmer commanded the camp from June 8th to July 20th. The Second Battalion completed its target practice and returned to post July 20th

The Headquarters and Second and Third Battalions were ordered on June 18th to change station to Fort Thomas, Kentucky, upon the arrival of the Eighth Infantry at Madison Barracks from Alaska. Preparation for the movement was made, but after the command had lived amidst packing boxes until September 3rd, the order was revoked.

Companies A and D, Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson commanding, arrived at Madison Barracks for station, from Fort Niagara August 12th. Distance traveled, 250 miles. These companies garrisoned the post during the absence of the Second and Third Battalions at the maneuvers at Manassas, Virginia, and on September 21st left for Fort Thomas, Kentucky, arriving on the following day. Distance traveled,

Digitized by Google

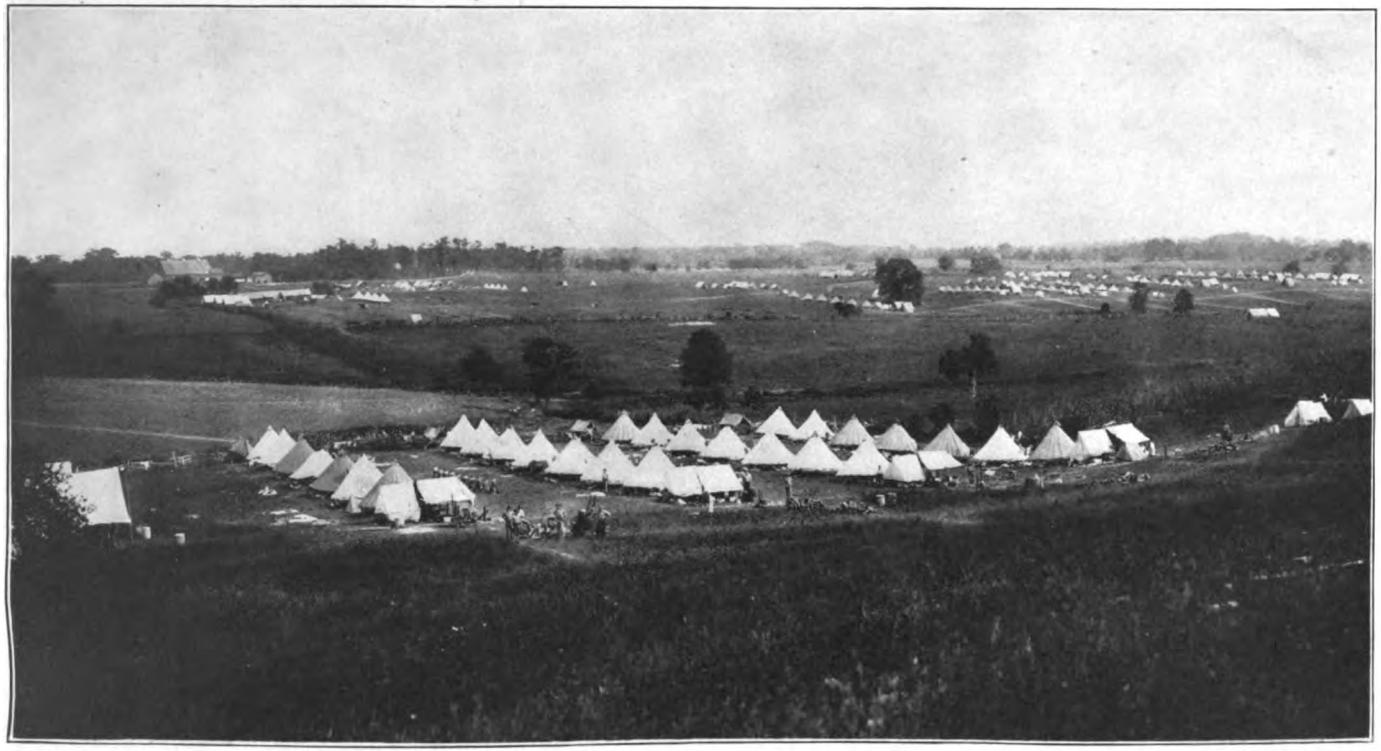
664 miles. These companies formed a part of the garrison of that post throughout the remainder of the year.

The Headquarters, band, Second and Third Battalions, Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson commanding, left Madison Barracks for Maneuver Camp No. 2, near Thoroughfare, Virginia, August 27th, arriving the following day.

The Headquarters and Second Battalion were assigned to the Third Brigade and the Third Battalion to the Second Brigade, Second Division, during the maneuvers. Colonel Regan had been previously assigned to the command of the Third Brigade of the Second Division, which consisted of the following regiments of National Guard, in addition to the Second Battalion of the Ninth Infantry: Ninth Massachusetts, Second New York, First Maryland and Third Tennessee. The Regimental Staff, Ninth Infantry, formed the Brigade Staff during the encampment. Officers of the two battalions performed various duties including that of staff, muster and umpire. Several preliminary field exercises and marches were had before the arrival of the National Guard regiments on the 3rd and 4th of September. The officers rode over the ground, acquainting themselves with the field of maneuvers. Both battalions took part in the problem of defense on the 6th and 7th, and of offense on the 8th and 9th, and the review of the combined divisions near Gainesville, the Corps Headquarters, on the 10th. The most difficult work occurred on the 9th, the last day of the offensive operations, when both the Second and Third Brigade began operations at 1:00 o'clock A. M. and, when camp was reached that night, had covered from 26 to 30 miles. The battalions left camp on the 14th and arrived at Madison Barracks, the Third Battalion on the 15th, and the Second on the 16th of September. Distance traveled by rail, 1,260 miles. Colonel Regan, in his report of these exercises, refrained from commenting upon the battalion of his regiment forming a part of his brigade, but General Barry remarked as follows: "The Third Battalion, Ninth Infantry, commanded by Major Frank B. Jones, were models of soldierly efficiency in all respects, and did much to encourage and inspire the National Guard troops."

During the years 1903 and 1904 considerable attention was given athletics, conducted under orders from the Department of the East. An excellent quarter-mile cinder track was constructed at Madison Barracks, under direction of the officer in charge of athletics, Captain H. D. Wise, Quartermaster of the regiment. Great interest was also taken by company commanders in target practice, resulting in the regiment leading the division and standing second in the army for the year 1904.

Digitized by Google



Camp, Third Battalion, Ninth Infantry. Manassas, Virginia, 1904.

Digitized by Google

During the year 1902, there was erected at Tien-tsin, China, by the officers of the regiment, under direction of Captain A. W. Brewster, a monument to the memory of Colonel Emerson H. Liscum, who fell in battle July 13, 1900, while commanding the regiment. The monument was erected where Colonel Liscum fell, but, owing to changes in the vicinity, the site later became undesirable, and the monument was moved a short distance to a better one. Another monument was erected in 1904 at Madison Barracks, to the memory of the officers and men who fell at Balangiga, Samar, September 28, 1901.

Soon after the return of the regiment from foreign service in 1902 the Chaumont Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, of Watertown, New York, expressed a desire to erect at Madison Barracks some memorial to the regiment in commemoration of its service in Cuba, China and the Philippines. It was finally agreed that a bronze tablet, bearing the names of officers and men who lost their lives in battle, or from disease while serving in the regiment, would be the most suitable form. This tablet, three feet by four feet, was set in a recess cut for it in the stone water tower. It bears the names of eight officers and 178 men, the majority of whom were killed in battle. On August 25, 1903 it was dedicated with appropriate ceremony, and stands a lasting tribute to the memory of the regiment in northern New York, where it had been stationed since 1891, while in the United States, and where the mutual interest of the regiment and citizens have illustrated the wisdom of the War Department in making it possible for the regular troops to become identified with a particular locality.

ERECTED BY
THE LE RAY DE CHAUMONT CHAPTER DAUGHTERS
AMERICAN REVOLUTION IN MEMORY
OF THE GALLANT OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE NINTH UNITED STATES
INFANTRY, WHO LOST THEIR LIVES DURING THE CAMPAIGNS
IN CUBA, CHINA AND THE PHILIPPINES
1898 – 1902

OFFICERS

Colonel Emerson H. Liscum.
Captain William L. Carpenter.
Captain Charles M. Rockefeller.
First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant Edgar F. Koehler.
Second Lieutenant Louis H. Lewis
Captain Robert H. Anderson.
Captain Thomas W. Connell.
First Lieutenant Edward A. Bumpus.
Second Lieutenant Joseph B. Morse.

Digitized by Google

ENLISTED MEN

Non-commissioned Staff and Band.

Charles A. Ostermann
Henry Wolper

Company A.

George H. Buckley
Carl E. Crandall
Harrison D. Dewey
James M. Hart
Peter Henninger
James Horan
Adolph Hug
Walter A. Jarvis
John Killgallen
John Leahy
Edgar J. Manning
George H. Myers
Thomas Nilan
Thomas Nolan
Richard O'Shea
John A. Potter
Arthur N. Salisbury
DeForest A. Spicer
Frank J. Stannard
Patrick Tafe
William Walker
James C. Webster
Edson Work

Company B.

Jake H. Ammerman
Thomas Barkley
Thomas Brathor
Alonzo Brown
John W. Clark
Charley Collins
Charles C. Cook
Joseph P. Cook
Samuel E. Cook
Joseph P. Gruninger
Ezekiel E. Hale
John W. Hayes
William L. Higgins
DeForest V. Hutchinson
Henry Kirkland
Harry O. Lee
Thomas Longway
Oliver Longway
Frank Losee
Harris W. Mallory
David McDaniel
James McGowan
John McPartland
Richard B. Slater
Morton Stalmaker
Gottfried Svenson
Elmer Van Brocklin

Company C.

John D. Armini
Litto Armini
John W. Aydelotte
Thomas E. Baird
George Bony
Robert L. Booth
William Brayton
John D. Buhrer
James L. Cain
John Conway

Digitized by Google

Company C—continued.

John L. Covington
Charles E. Davis
Guy C. Dennis
Byron Dent
Patrick J. Dobbins
Cornelius F. Donahue
Jerry J. Driscoll
Eli Fitzgerald
Joseph I. Godon
Robert B. Golden
Barney Gonyea
Melville B. Huffman
Joseph O. Kleinhampl
Richard Long
James S. Lynch
James Martin
John F. Martin
Joseph R. Marr
Charles W. Morrow
Frank McCormick
James F. McDermott
Charles E. McGilligan
John H. Miller
Daniel S. Mullins
James J. O'Neil
Proal Peters
August F. Porczeng
Charles Powers
James M. Randles
Chris F. Recard
Richard M. Requa
Henry J. Scharer
Frederick Schechterle
Leonard P. Schley
Gustav F. Schnitzler
Ewing Shelton
Floyd J. Shoemaker
Evans South
Robert Sproull
Charles E. Sterling
Anderson Temple
William H. True
Joseph Turner
Frank Vobayda
Robert E. Walsh
John Wannebo
Christian S. Williams
Claude C. Wingo
Harry M. Wood

Company D.

Absolom A. Briley
Myron Vherry
Silas A. Christenberry
Louis E. Corbett
Samuel Dumas
Fay Foster
Dewane Goodrich
Stephen Hall
John J. Knitter
Charles H. McCutchin
James H. McNerney
John H. Porter
Philip H. Schermerhorn
Joseph H. Spratt
Fred A. Walker
George K. Webster
George S. Wells

Company E.

Walter Allen
George Bedford
William J. Brighly
William Burgen
James H. Burke
Edward F. Burns

Digitized by Google

Company E—continued.

Edward Callanan
Thomas Clark
George Claxton
Guy de St. Croix
Orville J. Dromgoole
John Dwyer
James Gaughan
William F. Gormly
James O. Hall
Robert L. Hampton
John F. Howard
Frank Jacobs
John Joyce
Carl M. Johnson
John P. Kelley
Frederic Kopp
William Laftin
John Marr
Robert M. Mayor
Frank McAndrew
Samuel G. Miller
Jeremiah Murphy
Dominick F. Neary
Jack Pleoplis
William H. Ritche
John H. Russell
Peter Savery
Charles P. Sharkey
William Stafford
August B. Stone
John P. Swisher
George W. Teachout
Owen Walsh
Joseph Weippert
Leon W. Wiltshire
Charlie Wilson

Company F.

Oliver Ackerman
General T. Babb
Ewell W. Brown
John J. Dreher
Henry Fitzgerald
Clifford J. Houghton
Alfred J. Kennedy
John Murphy
Oscar Olsen
John Plugge
Casper Schwertfeger
Axel Skogsberg
William Talbot
James B. Taylor
Orin C. Weston
Adison Witcher

Company G.

Ernest L. Becker
John Bender
John H. Collins
James A. Conroy
John W. Ecker
Maurice Fitzgerald
Albert Henig
Clyde J. Jamison
William Kelly
William H. Kennedy
Frank E. King
Ernest C. Knapp
Frank McGowan
Charles C. McManius
Davis Miles
Stephen O'Dea
Robert I. Parnell
Fred E. Rieffennacht
Dewey Rogers
John P. Smith

Digitized by Google

Company G—continued.

Clark Spalsburg
Jacob Stettler
Andrew Thornton
Henry Tilley
John L. Weiss

Company H.

Henry J. Barnes
William Brady
Henry O. Bulson
Earl R. Cotton
Patrick Farrell
Arthur E. Troggatt
William J. Gough
Joseph A. Jolet
John B. Kane
Charles J. Lavier, Jr.
John S. Ney
Fred Pozykalla
Michael Rinn
David H. Smith
John Sullivan
Samuel A. Womack

Company I.

George S. Bell
William L. Donivant
Patrick Donovan
Philip Durand
Joseph F. Gallion
George Guess
William Harvey
Frederick Kaiser
Charles Kildish
Eugene L. Lyon
Alfred A. Mahoney
Henry Morray
Herman McCaul
John D. McKeen
Michael Nevins
Fred H. Peon

Company K.

Alonzo L. Johnson
Joseph Knox
William Munson
Daniel Reasoner
Daniel F. Shank
Edward B. Webster, Jr.
George C. A. Wienecke
William G. Wilson

Company L.

Clayton C. Allard
James Armstrong
William G. Burns
Joseph F. Campbell
Arthur N. Chambers
John Cunningham
John Garvey
John Grill
Jeremiah T. Healey
Simon Hepp
John J. King
Jacob Kline
Joseph F. Krietzer
Patrick J. McEntee
Louis W. Mohun
William H. Morse
John M. O'Connor
William Walker
Daniel E. Webster
Joseph Wolfe

Digitized by Google

Company M.

Charles Friedeck
Joseph Fritsch
Ambrose I. Melonson
John McLaughlin
Dennis A. Shea
Michael Sullivan
William H. Webb

ROSTER OF THE REGIMENT JULY 1, 1904

James Regan, Colonel, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding post and regiment.

Edgar B. Robertson, Lieutenant Colonel, Fort Niagara, New York, commanding post and First Battalion.

Robert J. C. Irvine, Major, Second Battalion, Detroit, Michigan, general recruiting service.

Frank B. Jones, Major, Third Battalion, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding Third Battalion and camp, Rifle Range.

Wilds P. Richardson, Major, First Battalion, Constructing Quartermaster, Fort W. H. Seward, Alaska.

Ernest P. Newsom, Chaplain, Madison Barracks, New York, post Treasurer and Librarian.

Edwin V. Bookmiller, Captain and Adjutant, Madison Barracks, New York, Adjutant and recruiting officer.

Hugh D. Wise, Captain and Quartermaster, Madison Barracks, New York, Quartermaster.

Fred L. Munson, Captain and Commissary, Madison Barracks, New York, Commissary and mess officer.

Paul M. Goodrich, First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion, Fort Niagara, New York, Adjutant and recruiting officer.

James P. Drouillard, First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion, Madison Barracks, New York, Adjutant Rifle Range.

Willis P. Coleman, First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, Madison Barracks, New York, duty.

Eugene C. Ecker, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary First Battalion, Fort Niagara, New York, Quartermaster.

Vacancy, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary, Second Battalion.

Guy E. Bucker, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary, Third Battalion, Madison Barracks, New York, Quartermaster camp, Rifle Range.

Harry F. Rethers, Captain Company A, Fort Niagara, New York, commanding company.

Robert B. McConnell, First Lieutenant Company A, Fort Niagara, New York, absent with leave.

Kneeland S. Snow, Second Lieutenant Company A, Fort Niagara, New York, with company.

Andre W. Brewster, Captain Company B, Peking, China, commanding company and United States Legation Guard, military attache, Peking, China and Seoul, Corea, with company.

Digitized by Google

Robert S. Clark, First Lieutenant Company B, Pekin, China, with company.
Vacancy, Second Lieutenant Company B.
Peter C. Harris, Captain Company C, Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pa., commanding company and post.
Abraham C. Loeb, First Lieutenant Company C, Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pa., with company, post Adjutant.
Ralph W. Drury, Second Lieutenant Company C, Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pa., with company; Quartermaster and Commissary.
William K. Naylor, Captain Company D, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, general service and staff college.
Reuben Smith, First Lieutenant Company D, Fort Niagara, New York, commanding company.
Deshler Whiting, Second Lieutenant Company D, Fort Niagara, New York, with company engineer and signal officer.
Frank DeW. Ramsey, Captain Company E, Washington, D. C., general staff.
George W. Wallace, First Lieutenant Company E, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Hunter Harris, Second Lieutenant Company E, Madison Barracks, New York, with company.
Louis M. Nuttman, Captain Company F, West Point, New York, Military Academy.
Roscoe H. Hearn, First Lieutenant Company F, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Robert L. Meador, Second Lieutenant Company F, Madison Barracks, New York, with company.
Benjamin P. Nicklin, Captain Company G, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Clifton C. Kinney, First Lieutenant Company G, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, general service and staff college.
Vacancy, Second Lieutenant Company G.
Mark L. Hersey, Captain Company H, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Kaolin L. Whitson, First Lieutenant Company H, Madison Barracks, New York, with company.
Charles G. Sturtevant, Second Lieutenant Company H, Madison Barracks, New York, duty with Company G.
Frederick L. Palmer, Captain Company I, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding Second Battalion.
Frank R. Lang, First Lieutenant Company I, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company, exchange officer.
Jennings C. Wise, Second Lieutenant Company I, Madison Barracks, New York, with company, engineer officer.
Ira C. Welborn, Captain Company K, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Cleveland Willcoxon, First Lieutenant Company K, Madison Barracks, New York, sick, leave of absence.
Willis E. Mills, Second Lieutenant Company K, Madison Barracks, New York, with company.
Reynolds J. Burt, Captain Company L, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.

Digitized by Google

Fred R. Brown, First Lieutenant Company L, Madison Barracks, New York, with company.
George W. Harris, Second Lieutenant Company L, Madison Barracks, New York, with company, signal officer.
George P. Ahern, Captain Company M, Manila, P. I., Chief of Forestry Bureau.
Herbert L. Evans, First Lieutenant Company M, Madison Barracks, New York, absent with leave.
Girard L. McEntee, Jr., Second Lieutenant Company M, Madison Barracks, New York, commanding company.
Emery T. Smith, First Lieutenant, unassigned, Madison Barracks, New York, range officer, Rifle Range.

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

Vacancy, Sergeant-Major.
James N. Bean, Quartermaster-Sergeant.
William J. Walker, Commissary-Sergeant.
Harry Blum, Color-Sergeant.
John Fernback, Color-Sergeant.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII

AGAIN ORDERED TO THE PHILIPPINES — DISCHARGES AND RE-ENLISTMENTS — ON BOARD THE SHERMAN — IN QUARANTINE — COMPANY B RELIEVED AS LEGATION GUARD AT PEKIN — TYPHOONS — ROSTER FOR 1905 — PRACTICE MARCHES AND GARRISON SCHOOLS — DEATH OF COLONEL REGAN AND CAPTAIN RAMSEY — ROSTER FOR 1906.

General Orders No. 176, War Department, November 17, 1904, directed the regiment to proceed to San Francisco, California, in time to embark upon transport sailing for the Philippine Islands, May 1, 1905. It was directed that all men, non-commissioned officers excepted, should have at least two years and three months to serve from date of sailing. On February 15, 1905, privates having less than six months, and those having more than six months and less than two years and six months, and who desired to immediately re-enlist in the regiment, were discharged. From the companies serving in the United States 347 men were so discharged, of whom 288 re-enlisted on the following day. The remaining privates (169) were transferred out of the regiment: those of companies A and D to the casual detachment, Fort Thomas, Kentucky, February 15th; those of the other companies to the Twenty-third Infantry, March 3d. A few of these men afterwards secured their discharge in order to re-enlist in the regiment. A sufficient number of recruits were received during March to bring the regiment up to its authorized strength, and the close of March found the regiment equipped and ready for a second tour in the Philippines.

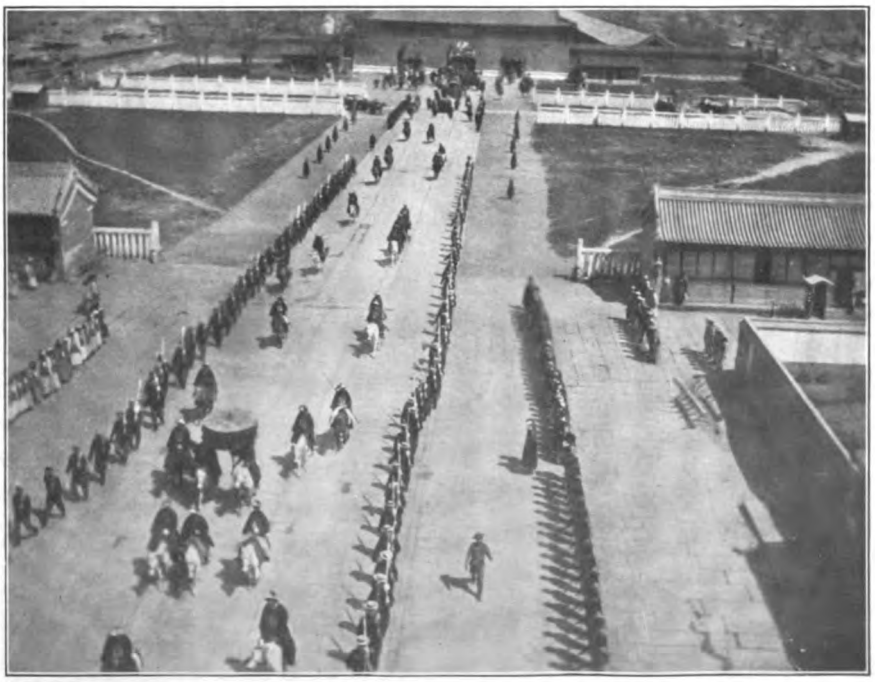
The date of departure for San Francisco, California, was fixed so as to have no more than the necessary time there for the transfer of troops and baggage to the transport. The Third Battalion, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson, left Sackett Harbor, New York, at 3:30 P. M., and Headquarters and Second Battalion, under Colonel Regan, at 4:30 P. M. April 23d. Company C left Allegheny Arsenal at 6:00 A. M. and Companies A and D left Fort Thomas at 9:30 A. M., April 24th. All companies passed through Chicago, from which place the route was over the Santa Fé System. Companies A, C and D were there consolidated into one command under Captain Harris.

On April 26th, after the Third Battalion had passed Trinidad, Colorado, and before the other battalions had reached there, a section of the railroad track was washed away. There the two trains were held await-

Digitized by Google



Chinese Emperor, Kwang-Hsu, leaving Imperial Palace for Temple of Agriculture to sow seed, May 1, 1905.



Imperial chow being carried by coolies on horseback.

Digitized by Google





Digitized by Google



Emperor, Kwang-Hsu, in Sedan chair in foreground.



Digitized by Google

ing the rebuilding of the track until the morning of April 28th, when further washouts compelled the railway company to send the command over another route. The trains were then transferred to the Denver & Rio Grande Railroad, arriving at San Francisco at 2:00 P. M. May 1st. The troops were at once transferred to the transport Sherman. The Third Battalion, which had arrived in San Francisco and encamped at the Presidio on the 29th, came aboard the transport on the morning of the 2d. The transport sailed at 1:00 P. M. the 2d, having aboard, in addition to the regiment, the Second Squadron, Seventh Cavalry, under Major McCormick. Colonel G. S. Anderson, Eighth Cavalry, commanded troops aboard.

When the regiment sailed its strength was: Officers, 48; men, 934; 13 officers, but only 9 men were absent. No officers were absent sick. So many passengers had been granted first class-passage, that the isolation wards of the hospital were filled with bachelor lieutenants. Later when measles and small-pox developed aboard and the wards were taken for their proper purpose, much crowding followed which, with the excessive heat during the greater part of the trip, resulted in considerable discomfort.

The Sherman arrived at Mariveles Quarantine Station at 8:00 P. M. June 1st. On the morning of June 2d the transport proceeded to Manila; returned to Mariveles on the same day for disinfection of troops and baggage; returned to Manila June 4th. On June 5th the Headquarters and Second Battalion were disembarked and took station as follows:

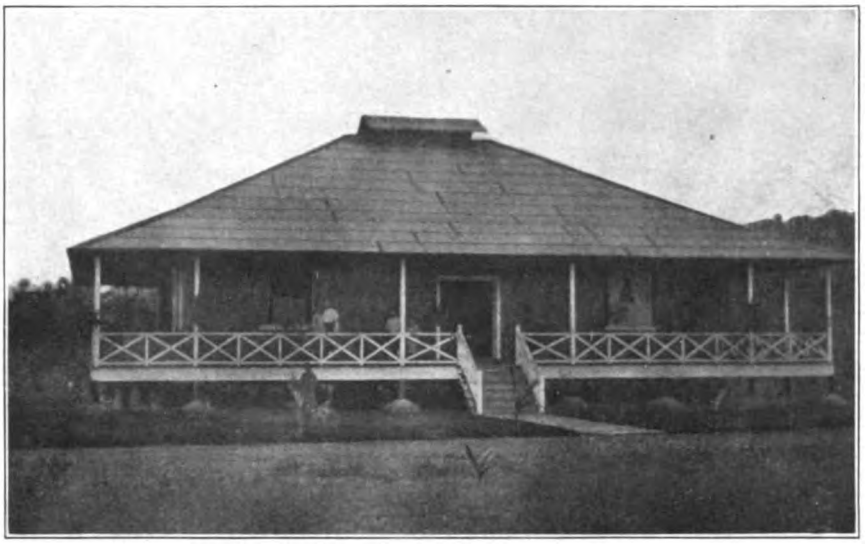
Headquarters, band and Companies E and H at Cuartel de España.

Second Battalion, Staff and Companies F and G, Captain F. L. Palmer commanding, at Cuartel Meisic.

The Third Battalion, Major Jones commanding, desembarked and took station at Camp Daraga, June 9th, and the First Battalion Companies A, C and D, Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson commanding, at Camp Wilhelm, June 11th. The regiment occupied these stations throughout the remainder of the year.

In compliance with telegraphic instructions of the War Department of August 18th, Company B was relieved as Legation Guard at Pekin, China, September 12th. Embarked on the transport Logan off Tong-Ku, China, same date; arrived at Manila September 25th; sailed from Mariveles for San Francisco October 1st; arrived at San Francisco, October 31st; left San Francisco November 3d and took station at Allegheny Arsenal, Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, November 8th, where the company remained throughout the remainder of the year. This company had been on foreign service continuously for seven years and seven

Digitized by Google



Officers' quarters, Camp Daraga, Philippine Islands.



Camp Daraga, Philippine Islands.

Digitized by Google

months, and under command of Captain Brewster practically the entire time. On November 1st it was reduced in strength to 65 enlisted men by transfer of the excess to the Twenty-second Infantry.

No part of the regiment was called into active service during the year; all stations being on the island of Luzon which, excepting occasional Ladrone raids, remained peaceful. The troops at Camp Wilhelm and Camp Daraga engaged in practice marches and field problems and small detachments under officers mapped a considerable section of the surrounding country. The troops in Manila were kept quite well employed by guard duty, not only in supplying guards throughout the city, but those for paymasters traveling in Luzon and Samar, and guarding funds in transit to other islands. The casuals collected in Manila for transfer to the United States were handled at Cuartel Meisic, and those arriving from the United States were sent to and distributed from Cuartel de España.

First Lieutenant Robert McDonnell died at Camp Wilhelm, September 11th, of general peritonitis following operation for appendicitis.

During September 26th, 27th and 28th, a severe typhoon passed over the island of Luzon, doing considerable damage to the buildings at Camp Daraga on the night of September 25th-26th, and severely injuring Cook William J. Johnson and Private John Hanley, Company M, and a number of men to a lesser extent.

ROSTER OF REGIMENT JULY 1, 1905

James Regan, Colonel, Cuartel España, commanding Regiment and Post.

Edgar B. Robertson, Lieutenant-Colonel, Camp Wilhelm, commanding First Battalion and Post.

Wilds P. Richardson, Major, Skagway, Alaska, member Alaska Road Commission.

Robert J. C. Irvine, Major, Detroit, Mich., general recruiting service.

Frank B. Jones, Major, Camp Daraga, commanding Third Battalion and Post.

Ernest P. Newsom, Chaplain, Cuartel España, duty.

Edwin V. Bookmiller, Captain and Adjutant, Cuartel España, Adjutant, recruiting officer, intelligence officer.

Hugh D. Wise, Captain and Quartermaster, Cuartel España, Quartermaster, signal, ordnance and engineering officer.

Fred L. Munson, Captain and Commissary, Cuartel España, Commissary, commanding casual detachment and prison officer.

Reuben Smith, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Camp Wilhelm, duty with First Battalion.

Frank R. Lang, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Cuartel Meisic, Adjutant and recruiting officer, commanding casual detachment.

George W. Wallace, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Camp Daraga, duty with Third Battalion.

Digitized by Google

Eugene C. Ecker, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and commissary, Camp Wilhelm, duty with First Battalion.

George W. Harris, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and commissary, Cuartel Meisic, Quartermaster, ordnance, engineering and signal officer.

Charles G. Sturtevant, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and commissary, Camp Daraga, duty with Third Battalion.

Harry F. Rethers, Captain Company A, Camp Wilhelm, en route to join.

Robert B. McConnell, First Lieutenant Company A, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company, exchange, range, engineering and intelligence officer.

Vacancy, Second Lieutenant, company A.

Andre W. Brewster, Captain Company B, Pekin, China, commanding company and U. S. Legation guard, acting paymaster and quartermaster.

Clifton C. Kinney, First Lieutenant Company B, Pekin, China, duty with company; quartermaster, ordnance and summary court officer.

James G. McIlroy, Second Lieutenant Company B, Pekin, China, duty with company; adjutant recruiting officer, engineering and signal officer.

Peter C. Harris, Captain, Company C, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company; summary court and surveying officer.

Roscoe H. Hearn, First Lieutenant Company C, Fort Slocum, New York, detached service.

Kneeland S. Snow, Second Lieutenant Company C, Camp Wilhelm, duty with company; signal officer.

William K. Naylor, Captain Company D, Fort Leavenworth, the Staff College.

Abraham U. Loeb, First Lieutenant Company D, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company.

Deshler Whiting, Second Lieutenant Company D, Camp Wilhelm, duty with company, superintendent of athletics.

Frank De W. Ramsey, Captain Company E, Washington, D. C., General Staff.

Willis P. Coleman, First Lieutenant Company E, Cuartel España, commanding company.

Hunter Harris, Second Lieutenant Company E, Cuartel España, duty with company.

Louis M. Nuttman, Captain Company F, West Point, New York, U. S. Military Academy.

Paul M. Goodrich, First Lieutenant Company F, Cuartel Meisic, commanding company.

Robert L. Meador, Second Lieutenant Company F, Cuartel Meisic, duty with company.

Benjamin P. Nicklin, Captain Company G, Cuartel Meisic, commanding company; summary court.

Robert S. Clark, First Lieutenant Company G, Cuartel Meisic, absent with leave in United States.

Erle M. Wilson, Second Lieutenant Company G, Cuartel Meisic, duty with company. Exchange officer.

Mark L. Hersey, Captain Company H, Cuartel España, commanding company; summary court, surveying and exchange officer.

Kaolin L. Whitson, First Lieutenant Company H, Cuartel España, duty with company; librarian.

Vacancy, Second Lieutenant Company H.

Digitized by Google

Frederick L. Palmer, Captain Company I, Cuartel Meisic, commanding Second Battalion.
Emery T. Smith, First Lieutenant Company I, Camp Daraga, commanding company; range officer.
Henry S. Brinkerhoff, Jr., Second Lieutenant Company I, Liguan, Batan Island, commanding detachment guarding government coal mine.
Ira C. Welborn, Captain Company K, West Point, New York, U. S. Military Academy.
Fred R. Brown, First Lieutenant Company K, Camp Daraga, commanding company; post treasurer.
Willis E. Mills, Second Lieutenant Company K, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, Infantry and Cavalry School.
Reynolds J. Burt, Captain Company L, Camp Daraga, commanding company; summary court and surveying officer.
Vacancy, First Lieutenant, Company L.
Ralph W. Drury, Second Lieutenant Company L, Allegheny Arsenal, Pennsylvania, detached service.
George P. Ahern, Captain Company M, Manila, Philippine Islands, Chief Bureau Forestry.
Herbert L. Evans, First Lieutenant, Company M, Camp Daraga, commanding company; exchange officer.
Girard L. McEntee, Jr., Second Lieutenant Company M, Camp Daraga, duty with company; engineering and intelligence officer.
William F. Pearson, Second Lieutenant, Unassigned, Cuartel España, en route to join.

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

Eston M. Barker, Sergeant-Major.
William J. Walker, Commissary-Sergeant.
Harry Blum, Quartermaster-Sergeant.
John Grace, Battalion Sergeant-Major.
Luther Joralemon, Battalion Sergeant-Major.
Benjamin L. Carroll, Battalion Sergeant-Major.
John Fernback, Color-Sergeant.
William J. Harris, Color-Sergeant.

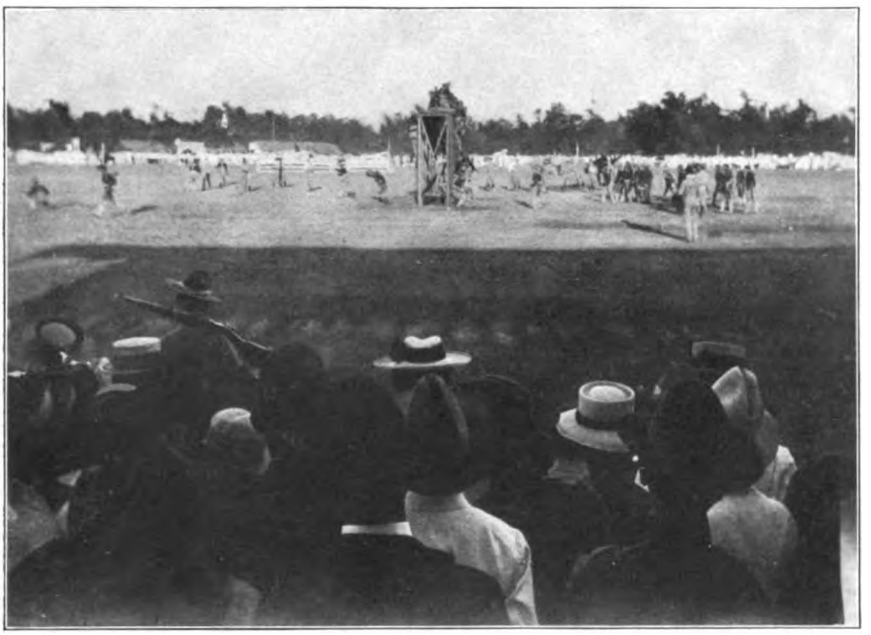
During the year 1906 the work of the regiment was practically the same as in 1905 after arrival in the Philippines. There was no active service in the Island of Luzon, but the First and Third Battalions engaged regularly in practice marches and field problems, both night and day, in compliance with War Department and Division orders. The Second Battalion in Manila engaged in a number of practice marches and field problems, but on account of guard duty and detached service required of it, this command was excused from complying with the orders above referred to.

In the Annual Department Field Day the Regiment was awarded third place in General Events, (seven organizations competing), and

Digitized by Google

first place in Military Events for Infantry, (three organizations competing).

Companies G and F, on March 7th and 8th respectively, changed station from Cuartel Meisic to Cuartel de España. This brought the entire Second Battalion together at the latter station, except the staff, which remained at Cuartel Meisic until May, when all casuals arriving in Manila were thereafter sent to Fort William McKinley. Cuartel



Company G, Ninth Infantry, winning the wall-scaling event in Division Meet, Manila, Philippine Islands, January, 1907.

Meisic, which had been a sub-post of Cuartel de España, was then abandoned, and turned over to the civil government.

Company B remained at Allegheny Arsenal, Pennsylvania, until January 29th, and thereafter it was shifted about, garrisoning posts, either wholly or in part depleted of their regular garrison, until at the close of the year it had reached ist fifth station, viz: from Allegheny Arsenal to Fort Porter, New York, January 29th; to Fort Wayne, Michigan, May 24th; to Madison Barracks, New York, October 9th; to Plattsburg Barracks, New York, December 15th.

Captain Frank De W. Ramsey, General Staff, died in Washington District of Columbia, January 18th. He was commissioned a Second

Digitized by Google



Funeral of Colonel James Regan, Manila, P. I.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant of the Regiment in 1885, and attained the grade of Captain in 1899. He was Quartermaster of the Regiment in Luzon and China in 1900, where his ability as a staff officer was especially proved. He was known throughout the army as a very able officer, and in his death the Regiment experienced a great loss.

Colonel James Regan was found dead in his bed, at Cuartel de España, Manila, on the morning of June 25th. His death was a surprise to all, as no one suspected him to be in ill health. He enlisted in 1858, at the age of thirteen, was commissioned a Second Lieutenant in 1866, and, after joining the Regiment as a First Lieutenant in 1870, served continuously with it, except while recovering from wounds received at the battle of Tientsin, China. He became Colonel in 1903, and, at his death, had served longer than any other officer on the active list of the Army.

HEADQUARTERS NINTH UNITED STATES INFANTRY

CUARTEL DE ESPAÑA, MANILA, P. I., June 28, 1906.

GENERAL ORDERS, No. 8.

The sad duty devolves upon the Regimental Commander of announcing to the Regiment the death of its Colonel, JAMES REGAN. Colonel REGAN died at about 2:00 o'clock, A. M., June 25, 1906, at Cuartel de España, Manila. On the previous evening he was apparently well; death came to him while sleeping. Thus died REGAN, one of the most modest, tenderest and bravest soldiers; on duty to the last with the Regiment he had served so long and loved so well.

He had more than two years to serve before reaching the age limit, yet he had served longer than any officer upon the active list of the Army; having entered the service when but thirteen years and six months of age.

Since his assignment to the Regiment as a First Lieutenant in 1870 practically all his service had been with it. He was a firm believer in the principle that a line officer belonged with his colors; and excepting about two years when he was unfit for field work, as a result of wounds, he served with his command. He served in many Indian campaigns on the frontier from 1858 until such service practically ceased. He was recommended for the Brevet of Major for gallantry in action at the battle of San Juan and the siege of Santiago de Cuba, and for a Medal of Honor and Brevet of Lieutenant-Colonel for coolness, courage and heroic exposure under heavy fire, until severely wounded, at the Battle of Tien-tsin, China. As a Major he commanded the Regiment en route to and in the Philippine Islands from March 24 to June 29, 1899, and

Digitized by Google

afterward the Second Battalion in the campaigns in Luzon and China, until twice severely wounded, wihch necessitated his being sent to the United States. From the effect of one of these wounds he never fully recovered. He became Colonel of the Regiment July 29, 1903, after having served in it through all grades from First Lieutenant.

He was of a kind disposition, and rarely did he utter a harsh word to either officer or man. His life may well be taken as a model for the American soldier. As the Most Reverend J. J. Harty, Archbishop of Manila, stated in his address at the funeral services, "He won the confidence of his superiors and the love and respect of his officers and men." The Regiment has lost its best soldier and the Army a man not easily replaced.

The usual badge of mourning will be worn for thirty days.

The following is a brief summary of his record:

Born in New York City, December 14, 1844.

Field Musician Company H, Second Infantry, June 1, 1858, to June 1, 1863. Musician and Sergeant Company B, General Service, March 8, 1864 to December 31, 1866. Second Lieutenant Eighteenth Infantry December 1, 1865; First Lieutenant Eighteenth Infantry August 12, 1867: unassigned April 26, 1869: assigned to Ninth Infantry December 15, 1870. Captain Ninth Infantry June 15, 1887: Major Ninth Infantry March 2, 1899: Lieutenant-Colonel First Infantry July 26, 1901: transferred to Ninth Infantry April 11, 1902: Colonel Ninth Infantry July 29, 1903.

In field against Indians in Kansas, 1861, and near Fort Sedgwick, Colorado, 1867. Commanded escort bearing dispatches to Fort Phil Kearney March 1868. At Governor's Island, New York, June, 1869, to February, 1871. Joined Ninth Infantry June 6, 1871. Yellowstone Expedition May 20 to October 9, 1873. Regimental Quartermaster June 22, 1879, to September 30, 1886. Expedition to Santiago de Cuba June, 1898. Battle of San Juan and siege of Santiago de Cuba. Expedition to Philippine Islands March, 1899. Advance from San Fernando, battles of Calulut, August 9, Porac, September 28, 1899, and night attacks at Angeles, October 11-16, 1899. China Relief Expedition June, 1900: battle of Tientsin July 13, 1900. Absent sick, wounded, and on recruiting duty, New York, to August, 1903. Assumed command of Regiment as Colonel, August 17, 1903, at Madison Barracks, New York. In Philippine Islands since July 1, 1905.

By order of Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson.

E. V. BOOKMILLER,
Captain and Adjutant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert S. Foster, Twelfth Infantry, became Colonel of the Regiment at the death of Colonel Regan. He never joined, and was retired October 6th, when Lieutenant-Colonel Edgar B. Robertson, Ninth Infantry, became Colonel.

ROSTER OF REGIMENT JULY 1, 1906

Vacancy, Colonel.

Edgar B. Robertson, Lieutenant-Colonel, Camp Wilhelm, commanding regiment, temporary duty in Manila.

Wilds P. Richardson, Major, Skagway, Alaska, Member of Alaska Road Commission.

John Cotter, Major, Cuartel España, commanding post and Second Battalion.

Frank B. Jones, Major, Camp Daraga, commanding post and Third Battalion.

Ernest P. Newsom, Chaplain, Camp Daraga, duty.

Edwin V. Bookmiller, Captain and Adjutant, Cuartel España, adjutant, intelligence officer and division recruiting officer.

Harry F. Rethers, Captain and Quartermaster, Cuartel España, quartermaster, signal, engineering and ordnance officer.

Fred L. Munson, Captain and Commissary, Cuartel España, absent with leave in U. S.

Reuben Smith, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Camp Wilhelm, adjutant, recruiting, ordnance and range officer.

Frank R. Lang, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion, Cuartel España, sick in division hospital.

George W. Wallace, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, Camp Daraga, adjutant, recruiting, and ordnance officer.

Hunter Harris, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary First Battalion, Camp Wilhelm, Quartermaster and Commissary.

George W. Harris, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary Second Battalion, Cuartel España, prison officer.

Charles G. Sturtevant, Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary Third Battalion, Camp Daraga, Quartermaster and Commissary.

Hugh D. Wise, Captain, Company A, Camp Hartshorn, Samar, commanding Eighth Battalion Philippine Scouts.

William A. Castle, First Lieutenant Company A, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company.

Eugene C. Ecker, Second Lieutenant Company A, Camp John Hay, duty with detachment.

Andre W. Brewster, Captain Company B, Fort Wayne, Michigan, commanding company and post.

Willis P. Coleman, First Lieutenant Company B, Wichita, Kansas, general recruiting service.

James G. McIlroy, Second Lieutenant Company B, Fort Wayne, Michigan, ordnance, engineering, signal and exchange officer.

Peter C. Harris, Captain Company C, Camp Wilhelm, absent with leave in China.

Roscoe H. Hearn, First Lieutenant Company C, Barnesville, Georgia, Gordon Institute.

Digitized by Google

Kneeland S. Snow, Second Lieutenant Company C, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company.

William K. Naylor, Captain Company D, Camp Wilhelm, commanding company, post and First Battalion.

Abraham U. Loeb, First Lieutenant Company D, Camp Wilhelm, exchange officer.

Deshler Whiting, Second Lieutenant Company D, Camp Wilhelm, engineering, signal and intelligence officer.

Harry S. Howland, Captain Company E, Fort Pikit, Mind., commanding Fourth Battalion Philippine Scouts.

Kaolin L. Whitson, First Lieutenant Company E, Cuartel España, commanding company. Exchange officer.

William F. Pearson, Second Lieutenant Company E, Cuartel España, duty.

Frederick L. Palmer, Captain Company F, Cuartel España, commanding company, acting regimental commissary.

Paul M. Goodrich, First Lieutenant Company F, Cuartel España, duty.

Robert L. Meador, Second Lieutenant, Company F, Cuartel España, duty.

Benjamin P. Nicklin, Captain Company G, Cuartel España, commanding company.

Clifton C. Kinney, First Lieutenant Company G, Cuartel España, duty.

Erle M. Wilson, Second Lieutenant Company G, Camp Daraga, duty with Company M.

Mark L. Hersey, Captain Company H, Manila, Phillipine Islands, detached service with Philippine Constabulary.

Robert W. Adams, First Lieutenant Company H, Cuartel España, commanding company.

Norman F. Ramsey, Second Lieutenant Company H, Cuartel España, duty.

Louis M. Nuttman, Captain Company I, West Point, New York, detached service U. S. Military Academy.

Emery T. Smith, First Lieutenant Company I, Camp Daraga, commanding company.

Henry S. Brinkerhoff, Second Lieutenant Company I, Liguan, Batan, Philippine Islands, commanding guard at government coal mines.

Ira C. Welborn, Captain Company K, West Point, New York, detached service U. S. Military Academy.

Fred R. Brown, First Lieutenant Company K, Camp Daraga, commanding company.

Willis E. Mills, Second Lieutenant Company K, Camp Daraga, duty.

Reynolds J. Burt, Captain Company L, Camp Daraga, commanding company.

Horatio I. Lawrance, First Lieutenant Company L, Camp Daraga, engineering, signal and intelligence officer.

Ralph W. Drury, Second Lieutenant Company L, Pittsburg, Pa., detached service

Vacancy, Captain, Company M.

Herbert L. Evans, First Lieutenant Company M, Camp Daraga, commanding company.

Girard L. McEntee, Jr., Second Lieutenant Company M, Cuartel España, duty with Company G.

Digitized by Google

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

John Grace, Sergeant-Major.
William J. Walker, Commissary-Sergeant.
Harry Blum, Quartermaster-Sergeant.
Luther Joralemon, Battalion Sergeant-Major, First Battalion.
John J. Lynch, Battalion Sergeant-Major, Second Battalion.
Eston M. Barker, Battalion Sergeant-Major, Third Battalion.
William J. Harris, Color-Sergeant.
Charles C. Leaback, Color-Sergeant.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV

ORDERED BACK TO THE U. S.— STATIONED AT FORT SAM HOUSTON, TEXAS — TARGET PRACTICE, FIELD TRAINING AND GARRISON SCHOOL — COLONEL ROBERTSON RETIRED — ROSTER 1907 — TWO HUNDRED MILES PRACTICE MARCH — MANEUVERS AT LEON SPRINGS, TEXAS — ROSTER — UNUSUALLY LONG SERVICE OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS — COMMENDATION BY INSPECTOR-GENERAL, DEPARTMENT OF TEXAS — SOCIAL AFFAIRS.

During the year 1907 the work of the Regiment was practically the same as in 1906, until July 15, 1907.

Headquarters, band and Second Battalion stationed at Cuartel de España, Manila, Philippine Islands; Companies A, C and D at Camp Wilhelm, Lucena, Philippine Islands; Third Battalion at Camp Daraga, Albay, Philippine Islands.

Company B stationed at Plattsburg Barracks, New York to May 24, 1907.

Pursuant to General Orders No. 207, War Department, 1906, and General Orders No. 6, Philippines Division, 1907, the Regiment embarked for the United States July 14, 1907.

From the companies serving in the Philippines, 192 men having more than 6 months to serve, with character excellent, or very good, were transferred to organizations remaining in the Philippines.

The Field Staff and band and Second Battalion, under command of Colonel E. B. Robertson, left Cuartel de España, Manila, at 8:00 A. M., July 14, 1907, joining Companies A, C and D and Third Battalion at Mariveles at 4:00 P. M. same date. Companies A, C and D, under command of Major John Cotter, left Camp Wilhelm, Philippine Islands, at 1:30 P. M., July 9, 1907 and arrived at Mariveles at 12:15 P. M., July 10, 1907. The Third Battalion, under command of Major F. B. Jones, left Camp Daraga at 10:30 A. M., July 8, 1907, and arrived at Mariveles at 12:15 P. M., July 10, 1907. The regiment sailed from Mariveles at 1:00 P. M., July 15, 1907 for the United States on the United States Army transport Thomas.

When the Regiment sailed its strength was: officers 48; men 480. 10 officers, but only 20 men were absent.

The Thomas arrived at San Francisco, California, at 11:00 P. M., August 12, 1907; left San Francisco, California, at 11:00 P. M. on the

Digitized by Google

Southern Pacific Railroad, August 14, 1907, en route to Fort Sam Houston, Texas, for station.

Company B left Plattsburg Barracks, New York, for station at Fort Sam Houston, Texas, at 1: 30 P. M., May 24, 1907, arriving at Fort Sam Houston, Texas, June 2, 1907.

The entire Regiment, except Company B, participated in 3 days' field training during the month of September, 1907.

Headquarters and Companies A, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L and M participated in 21 days' (consecutive) field training, as prescribed by General Orders No. 177, War Department, 1907, from October 8 to 28, 1907, in camp near Leon Springs, Texas, about 25 miles from Fort Sam Houston, Texas. The band remained at Fort Sam Houston, Texas.

Company B was engaged in annual target practice at Leon Springs, Texas, September 7 to October 10, 1907.

Our Colonel E. B. Robertson was retired from active service on October 25, 1907, on account of disability in line of duty, and when retirement seemed a foregone conclusion was given a written testimonial signed by the officers of the Regiment as an expression of their love and esteem for their Colonel, who was and had always been a "Ninth Infantry man."

Colonel Robertson's farewell follows:

FORT SAM HOUSTON, TEXAS, October 29, 1907.

To the Ninth Infantry:—

Having been placed on the retired list of the United States Army, I wish to make my farewell to the organization of which I have been a part for about 33 years.

Starting as a Second Lieutenant in 1874, I have served in every commissioned grade in the Regiment to that of Colonel, and have partaken of the good and of the bad service as it came.

The history of the regiment during this time it is not necessary to repeat. It is a matter of record of which everyone who had a hand in making should feel proud.

For the enlisted men of the regiment, past and present, I can say nothing but good. They have helped to make the regiment what, in my opinion, it is — the best. It is hoped the men of the present will remain with it and keep up the old standard.

In the Indian troubles on the frontier years ago, in Cuba, in the Philippines and in China, wherever the Ninth Infantry has been ordered, it has done what it has been told. What more can be asked of soldiers?

The regiment needs nothing but orders, and the orders will be obeyed.

Digitized by Google

It was my privilege to have been of the regiment with those of the present and those of the past, beginning under the second Colonel John H. King, and serving under him and all the others until I came twelfth in succession to the Colonelcy. Of the officers now living who belonged to the old regiment are Major-General Jesse M. Lee, Brigadier-General L. P. Bradley, Brigadier-General A. S. Burt, Brigadier-General A. H. Bowman, Colonel W. H. Jordan, Major Alfred Morton, and Captain William E. Hofman, all of the retired list.

The present regiment, commissioned and enlisted, is as good as it always has been.

From my earliest recollections in 1874, there never has been a time. in garrison, in the field, and in battle, when there was not cheerful and willing obedience in the performance of all duties, loyalty on the part of enlisted men to their officers, and of both to the regiment and the government we all serve.

I hope there will never be an officer or enlisted man who has belonged, or who may in future belong, who will not be as proud as I am to say "I belong to the Ninth Infantry."

E. B. ROBERTSON, Colonel, United States Army, Retired.

ROSTER OF THE REGIMENT
DECEMBER 31, 1907

Charles J. Crane, Colonel, Fort Sam Houston, commanding regiment.
William C. Buttler, Lieutenant-Colonel, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.
Waldo E. Ayer, Major, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding First Battalion
John Cotter, Major, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding Second Battalion.
Wilds P. Richardson, Major, Skagway, Alaska, member of Alaska Road Commission.
Albert J. Bader, Chaplain, Hot Springs, Arkansas, sick in hospital.
Fred R. Brown, Captain and Adjutant, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, Adjutant and Post Adjutant.
Hugh D. Wise, Captain and Quartermaster, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, Quartermaster.
David J. Baker, Jr., Captain and Commissary, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, Commissary; commanding Third Battalion.
Abraham U. Loeb, First Lieutenant Battalion Adjutant, First Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding recruits and casuals; athletic officer.
Kaolin L. Whitson, First Lieutenant Battalion Adjutant, Second Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, prison officer, police officer, assistant to Chief Quartermaster, Department Texas.
Emery T. Smith, First Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, Third Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, librarian and in charge post school.
Deshler Whiting, Second Lieutenant, Quartermaster and Commissary, First Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

Digitized by Google

William F. Pearson, Second Lieutenant, Quartermaster and Commissary, Second Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

Erle M. Wilson, Second Lieutenant, Quartermaster and Commissary, 3rd Battalion, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

Edwin V. Bookmiller, Captain Company A, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

William A. Castle, First Lieutenant Company A, Grove City, Pennsylvania, detached service Grove City College, Pennsylvania.

Eugene C. Ecker, Second Lieutenant Fort Sam Houston, duty.

Fred L. Munson, Captain Company B, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company, commissary, ordnance, signal and engineer officer.

Willis P. Coleman, First Lieutenant Company B, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

James G. McIlroy, Second Lieutenant Company B, Fort Sam Huston, Texas, duty.

Harry F. Rethers, Captain Company C, Manila, Phillippine Islands, detached service, aide to Major-General Weston, United States Army.

Frank A. Awl, First Lieutenant Company C, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

William K. Naylor, Captain Company D, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Marion M. Weeks, Captain Company E, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Frank R. Lang, First Lieutenant, Company E, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

Ira C. Welborn, Captain Company F, detached service, Mississippi A and M college.

Paul M. Goodrich, First Lieutenant Company F, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Benjamin P. Nicklin, Captain Company G, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Roscoe H. Hearn, First Lieutenant Company G, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, special duty, commanding company L.

William T. Merry, Captain Company H, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Robert W. Adams, First Lieutenant Company H, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, detached service, general recruiting service New Haven, Connecticut.

Charles A. Lewis, Second Lieutenant Company H, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.

Mark L. Hersey, Captain Company I, Manila, Philippine Islands, detached service, chief supply officer, Philippine constabulary.

George W. Wallace, First Lieutenant Company I, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Henry S. Brinkerhoff, Jr., Second Lieutenant Company I, Fort Sam, Houston, Texas, duty.

William R. Leonard, First Lieutenant Company K, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, sick, surgeon's certificate of disability.

Charles G. Sturtevant, Second Lieutenant Company K, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.

Reynolds J. Burt, Captain Company L, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, detached service, student, army school of the line.

Horatio I. Lawrance, First Lieutenant Company L, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, special duty commanding machine gun platoon, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Ralph W. Drury, Second Lieutenant Company L, Madison Barracks, New York, detached service in charge construction public works.
Peter C. Harris, Captain Company M, Washington, D. C., detached service, general staff.
Herbert L. Evans, First Lieutenant Company M, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, commanding company.
John L. Jenkins, Second Lieutenant, Company M, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, duty.
Andre W. Brewster, Captain, unassigned, Washington, D. C., detached service, army war college.
Hunter Harris, First Lieutenant, unassigned, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, absent with leave 3 months, since November 16, 1907.

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

John J. Lynch, Sergeant-Major.
Harry Blum, Commissary-Sergeant.
John Maguth, Quartermaster-Sergeant.
Luther Joralemon, Battalion Sergeant-Major, First Battalion.
Harry Pforzheimer, Battalion Sergeant-Major, Third Battalion.
Garrett A. Harwood, Battalion Sergeant-Major, Second Battalion.
William J. Harris, Color-Sergeant.
Charles C. Leaback, Color-Sergeant.

During the year 1908 the work of the regiment was practically the same as since arriving in the United States from the Philippine Islands in 1907.

The entire regiment continued with station at Fort Sam Houston, Texas, only leaving same for small field maneuvers by battalion for three days each; and when the regiment participated in the maneuvers at the Leon Springs Maneuver Reservation.

The first battalion was engaged in annual target practice at Leon Springs, Texas, under command of Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller, Ninth Infantry, leaving Fort Sam Houston at 8:30 A. M., April 1st, in compliance with General Orders No. 17, Current Series, post. The battalion proceeded by marching to the target range, arriving at 11-mile ranch at 2:00 P. M. the same day. The battalion then left 11-mile ranch at 6:00 A. M., April 2nd, and arrived at camp at target range at 11:00 A. M., the same day. The total distance marched was 23 miles. From April 6th to May 9th the battalion engaged in target practice. Breaking camp at Leon Springs at 6:00 P. M., May 9th, the battalion proceeded by marching to Fort Sam Houston, arriving at 4:00 A. M., May 10th. Distance marched was about 23 miles.

The Second and Third Battalions left Fort Sam Houston, in compliance with General Orders No. 27, Current Series, post, at 7:00 A. M., May 13th, marched to camp at target range, Leon Springs, for annual

Digitized by Google

target practice, under command of Major John Cotter, Ninth Infantry, arriving at 12:00 M. the following day. Distance marched was about 23 miles. From May 15th to June 11th the battalions participated in target practice. Leaving the target range the same day as their target practice was completed, the battalions marched to Fort Sam Houston, arriving at 10:00 A. M., June 12th. The distance marched was 23 miles.

In compliance with General Orders No. 53, Headquarters Department of Texas, the entire regiment, less one company, was ordered to the Leon Springs Maneuver Reservation to carry out the provisions of General Orders No. 84, Current Series, War Department, providing camps of instruction. The following itinerary was followed in compliance with regimental General Orders No. 9, which designated the following organizations of the regiment to participate, viz: Headquarters, band, companies E, F, G, H, I, L, M, and the machine gun platoon; June 17th, Fort Sam Houston to Selma; 18th, Selma to New Braunsfels; 19th, New Braunsfels to San Marcos; 20th, San Marcos to Kyle; 21st, Kyle to Manchaca Springs; 22nd, Manchaca Springs to Austin; 23rd Austin to Manchaca Springs; 24th, Manchaca Springs to Kyle; 25th, Kyle to San Marcos; 26th, San Marcos to New Braunsfels; 27th, New Braunsfels to Selma; 28th, Selma to Fort Sam Houston; 29th, Fort Sam Houston to Windmill in southwest corner of reservation, via Blanco road; 30th, Windmill to Maneuver Camp, via Oppenheimer Ranch. The itinerary was carried out in every respect, excepting from Fort Sam Houston to Leon Springs which was via the Fredericksburg road, and the combined regiment, less company K, reported for duty to the camp commander, Brigadier-General Albert L. Myer, United States Army, on June 30th, having marched about 201 miles with no day of rest.

The First Battalion, under special orders of the department commander, left Fort Sam Houston, proceeding to the Leon Springs Maneuver Reservation, via the following route: Selma, New Braunsfels, Hunter, San Marcos, Hunter, New Braunsfels, and Heidriech's Ranch; covering a distance of 105½ miles by marching, between the dates of June 9th to 17th. On June 18th Company D was designated to guard the railroad station warehouses of the various supply departments at Aue Station, Texas, continuing on said duty during the entire maneuver period. Companies A, B and C were to June 30th engaged in preparing camp sites, receiving property, and performing the usual duties required preparatory to the occupation of the reservation by a large body of men.

On July 17th Companies A, B and C were relieved from maneuver duty and assigned to duty in connection with the Southwestern Rifle

Digitized by Google

and Pistol Competition, held at Camp T. J. Wint, Leon Springs. The commanding officer of the battalion, Major Waldo E. Ayer, Ninth Infantry, acted as commanding officer of the competition. They continued on this duty until July 31st. From August 1st to 8th the battalion was engaged on duty at the Maneuver Camp, packing, shipping and guarding property. On August 8th the battalion broke camp, and proceeded to Fort Sam Houston, by marching, via the following route: Boerne, Comfort, Waring, Zoeller's Ranch, Ammon's Crossing, Boerne and Viva, Texas, arriving at Fort Sam Houston on August 16th. Distance marched was about 100 miles, thus completing the annual practice march required in War Department Orders.

On the afternoon of August 1st, Headquarters, band, Second and Third Battalions, less Company K, left Leon Springs Maneuver Camp, en route for Fort Sam Houston, arriving at 11-mile ranch the evening of the same day and went into camp. Breaking camp at daylight the following morning, the command proceeded to and arrived at Fort Sam Houston at about 11:00 A. M. the same day. The distance marched was about 23 miles. On August 3rd, the command again left Fort Sam Houston for a practice march of 8 miles, returning to the post the same day, thereby completing the practice march for August, which required three consecutive days field service.

From June 17th to August 3rd Company K performed the usual garrison duties at Fort Sam Houston, being the only organization to garrison the infantry post and guard public property, therefore they were excused from participation in the practice marches incidental to the maneuvers and during all the maneuvers.

From August 4th to December 31st, the regiment performed the usual garrison duties at Fort Sam Houston, with the exception of those days spent on practice marches which were as follows: September 8th to 10th, the First Battalion; September 14th to 16th, the Second Battalion; September 21st to 23rd, the Third Battalion; and October 20th to 22nd, the entire regiment.

A roster of officers and non-commissioned officers of the regiment was published under date of January 1, 1909. This roster has the following features: It shows the commissioned personnel of the regiment according to rank, the organization to which assigned, the date of commission of present rank, and the nature of duty or status at the time of publication. For the non-commissioned officers, it shows them under the following captions, viz: Non-commissioned staff, band, non-commissioned officers and company organizations, followed by First Sergeants, Sergeants and Corporals in their relative rank in the regiment,

Digitized by Google

in each case the lineal number of standing in the regiment, the date of appointment and warrant, and the years of service in the army.

The average service of the following classes of non-commissioned officers of the regiment is as follows:

Non-commissioned staff (8), 16 years of service.

First Sergeants and Drum Major (13), 11½ years of service.

Sergeants (64), 9½ years of service.

Corporals (79), 6½ years of service.

The average service of non-commissioned officers of the regiment is 8½ years of army service.

On January 1, 1908, the strength of the regiment was 46 officers and 556 enlisted men. On December 31, 1908, the strength was 50 officers and 825 enlisted men. The gains were, officers: 10 by appointment and promotion, 4 by transfer; enlisted gain, 573 by enlistment, 185 by re-enlistment, 41 by transfer, and 1 from desertion, making the total enlisted gain 800. The losses were, officers: 10 transferred or retired, and enlisted loss, 381 discharged by expiration of term of enlistment; 21 discharged for disability; 14 discharged by sentence of General Court Martial, 18 discharged by order, 6 retired, 41 transferred, 3 died of disease, 47 deserted, making total enlisted loss 531. The regimental gain in strength for the year was 4 officers and 269 enlisted men. The net loss by desertion (47 out of 1,234 different men) equals 3.8 per cent.

The following remarks by the Inspector-General, Department of Texas, as result of his annual inspection, March–April, 1908, are given as showing the condition of the regiment:

COMMENDATION

"Ninth Infantry: This regiment is in excellent condition as regards discipline, instruction, equipment, attention to duty on the part of both officers and men, and all other essentials that go to make a fine organization.

In the matter of desertions the record of the regiment is one deserving special mention, there having been but seven desertions in the last two years. Seven companies have had no desertions in nearly three years, and one company, C, has had none during the last five years.

Company I, Ninth Infantry, commanded by First Lieutenant G. W. Wallace, Ninth Infantry, is commended for the excellent state of police of its barracks."

As showing that all the duties of the regiment are not strictly warlike

Digitized by Google

nor preparing for war, we will close this volume with the following article, published in the "Passing Show" San Antonio, Texas, relative to a reception and ball given in the Post Gymnasium, February 21, 1908.

ARMY COURTESY; BY ONE WHO HAS ENJOYED IT

The function given by the officers of the Ninth Infantry and others stationed at Fort Sam Houston on the 21st deserves more than passing mention. That it was larger, more brilliant and broader in the representative character of the truly best element of our citizenship were not the most significant circumstances that attracted the favorable comment heard on all sides. This was to have been anticipated, in a measure, when the number, character, antecedents and reputation of the Ninth and others among their hosts, whose main object was to requite the courtesies of our social organizations, is taken into consideration. It is one thing in a function of any character, large or small, to "cordially" invite guests to participate in its hospitalities, and to surround them by the most brilliant appointments when they are ushered in, of music, flowers, decorations and lavish and elegant refreshments, with an accompanying service that leaves no point for criticism; but it is quite another, as many charming and ambitious hosts and hostesses have discovered to their amazement, regret and almost social undoing, to create among those guests an atmosphere so gentle and warm that each feels, from the modestly-gowned debutante to the retired motherly queen of the erstwhile social regime, from the lad, fresh from his rural surroundings, to the gallant old beau with no more social worlds to conquer, that its glow is meant for *him* and *her* solely, or, at least, equally; that they are sitting 'neath the hospitable roof of some delightful old country mansion, and are wandering at will through its woodland and streams and breathing the scented odors of its natural beauties. This is indeed almost a lost art. This is the charming essence of the olden days hospitality that this dollar-mad age of commercialism has wellnigh obliterated. The penalty the American people are paying for their newly acquired and, sad to say, too often ill-gotten riches, and if this were all we are paying, some of us might count the cost small, compared to the glitter and tinsel we are getting in exchange. But when you cast into the scale the undermining of the very foundation of ethics, to say nothing of the selfishness, greed, conceit, and egotism, overlain by a thin veneer of costly material accessories that are made to do duty for the true and innate refinements of our social life, we cannot repress a sigh for the wellnigh lost art of entertaining. In the army,

Digitized by Google

with its high social traditions, as in civil life, they have not escaped the frost that has silently crept into and chilled our social atmosphere, and it is this phase that one, who for half a century has regretfully noted the changes mentioned, desires to invite especial attention to, in one of the most auspicious and successful social affairs that has occurred since the Civil War gave both our manners and our morals a downward tendency, accelerated by our reckless, desperate struggle for the "almighty dollar," and it is this turn in the social tide we hail with pleasure. These words of commendation would not serve their full purpose if a hint to younger guests were not given. In that delightful, chivalrous age — for it seems an age, so swift and vast have been the changes of time — equal, or, at least, a fair amount of attention was shown all lady guests, married or single, young and beautiful, or "old" — if they ever get old at such a function — and plain. There were no "sets" when under the roof of a common host, our sense of duty to him, our own innate sense of propriety, and if these were absent, as too often they are, then our arboreal ancestral instincts and imitativeness rescued our functions from the social crime of a purely personal desire to avail ourselves of the goodness, courtesy and hospitality of our host, and gratify our selfish pleasure and a few of "our set." It followed as the day the night there were no heartaches and leaden eyes wet with scalding tears after the night of revelry was o'er. There were no mortified hosts to vow "never to bid that ungrateful, rude steer to her hospitable home again, whose whole evening was devoted to two or three of his "set," while her other lady guests were left unhonored, unnoticed and unsung, including not infrequently the guest of the occasion, decorating her walls like grave-stones, while the "set" stole out among the shrubbery "between acts."

The officers and ladies of Fort Sam Houston, and those so well known lately on the active list, now living among us, may rest assured that their graceful, tactful, unceasing and yet unostentatious efforts to render the occasion one never to be forgotten by every soul in attendance, were thoroughly appreciated. Young, beautiful, gem and lace-adorned dames or damsels did not unduly command a share of their civilities, nor did their absence lessen that proper courtesy and solicitude for her pleasure that every true gentleman on such an occasion delights to accord, and every woman of refinement, culture and breeding, host or guest, deeply appreciates when so accorded.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV

RECORDS OF THE 249 FORMER OFFICERS OF THE REGIMENT — ALSO MANY PHOTOGRAPHS OF FORMER OFFICERS.

WILLIAM ABBOT

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1868; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 14, 1872; resigned March 27, 1876.

GEORGE P. AHERN

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1878; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Infantry, June 13, 1882; First Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, February 20, 1891; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry, July 20, 1891; Captain, Ninth Infantry, June 30, 1898; retired with rank of Major, May 26, 1906.

FRANK H. ALBRIGHT

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1883; additional Second Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, June 1, 1887; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 2, 1887; First Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Infantry, January 3, 1895; Captain, March 2, 1899.

JAMES B. S. ALEXANDER

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1852; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 10, 1856; resigned May 9, 1861; died August 15, 1861.

JESSE K. ALLEN

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1851; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July 7, 1855; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 15, 1855; killed August 15, 1858, in action with Yakima Indians on the Upper Yakima, Washington Territory.

ROBERT H. ANDERSON

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Georgia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1853; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, July 1, 1857;

Digitized by Google

Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, December 29, 1857; resigned May 17, 1861; Brigadier-General, Confederate States of America, war 1861–65. Died February 9, 1888.

ROBERT H. ANDERSON, JR.

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Georgia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, 1884. First Lieutenant September 28, 1889. Captain April 26, 1898; died November 7, 1901.

THOMAS M. ANDERSON

Born in Ohio. Private A, Sixth Ohio Infantry, April 20 to May 15, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Second Cavalry, May 7, 1861; Captain Twelfth Infantry, May 14, 1861; transferred to Twenty-first Infantry September 21, 1866; Major March 26, 1868; unassigned March 16, 1869; assigned to Tenth Infantry June 24, 1869; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, March 20, 1879; Colonel, Fourteenth Infantry, September 16, 1886. Brevet Major August 1, 1864, for gallant service in the Battle of the Wilderness, Virginia, and Lieutenant-Colonel August 1, 1864, for gallant service in the Battle of Spottslyvania, Virginia. Brigadier-General, United States Army, March 31, 1899; accepted April 3, 1899; retired January 21, 1900.

WILLIAM E. APPLETON

Born in Delaware. Appointed from Delaware; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 6, 1861; First Lieutenant December 31, 1862; Captain May 24, 1864; unassigned June 14, 1869; wholly retired October 19, 1869.

JAMES J. ARCHER

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Maryland; Captain of Infantry, February 23, 1847; voltigeurs April 9, 1847; Brevet Major September 13, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; honorably mustered out August 31, 1848; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3,1855; resigned May 14, 1861; Brigadier-General, Confederate States of America, war 1861–65; died October 24, 1864.

THOMAS ASPINWALL

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fifteenth Infantry, March 12, 1813; transferred to Ninth Infantry, September 29, 1813; Brevet Colonel September 17, 1814, for distinguished service in Brown's sortie from Fort Erie, Upper Canada, in which he was severely wounded; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; died August 10, 1876.

Digitized by Google

THOMAS M. BAINS, JR.

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from the army; Private, Sergeant, and Quartermaster-sergeant, Battery E, Sixth Artillery, March 19, 1898, to August 7, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1900; accepted August 8, 1900; resigned April 30, 1902.

JOHN A. BALDWIN

Born in Iowa. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 27, 1872; First Lieutenant, May 19, 1881; Captain November 4, 1890; Major, Twenty-second Infantry, June 2, 1889; Lieutenant-Colonel, Sixteenth Infantry, June 9, 1902; died March 15, 1903.

CHARLES G. BARTLETT

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Captain, Twelfth Infantry, August 5, 1861; accepted September 10, 1861; transferred to Thirtieth Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Fourth Infantry March 23, 1869; Major, Eleventh Infantry, January 10, 1876; Lieutenant-Colonel, Tenth Infantry, March 1, 1883; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, April 23, 1890; retired May 1, 1896; Sergeant, Company F, Seventh New York State Militia April 17, 1861; discharged May 8, 1861; Captain, Fifth New York Infantry, May 9, 1861; honorably mustered out September 9, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, One Hundred Fiftieth New York Infantry, September 29, 1862; honorably mustered out September 20, 1864; Brevet Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865; Colonel, One Hundred and Nineteenth Colored Infantry, May 10, 1865; honorably mustered out April 27, 1866; Brevet Major May 14, 1864, and Lieutenant-Colonel March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services in the battle of Resaca, Georgia; Brigadier-General of volunteers, March 13th, for gallant and meritorious services during the war; died June 14, 1901.

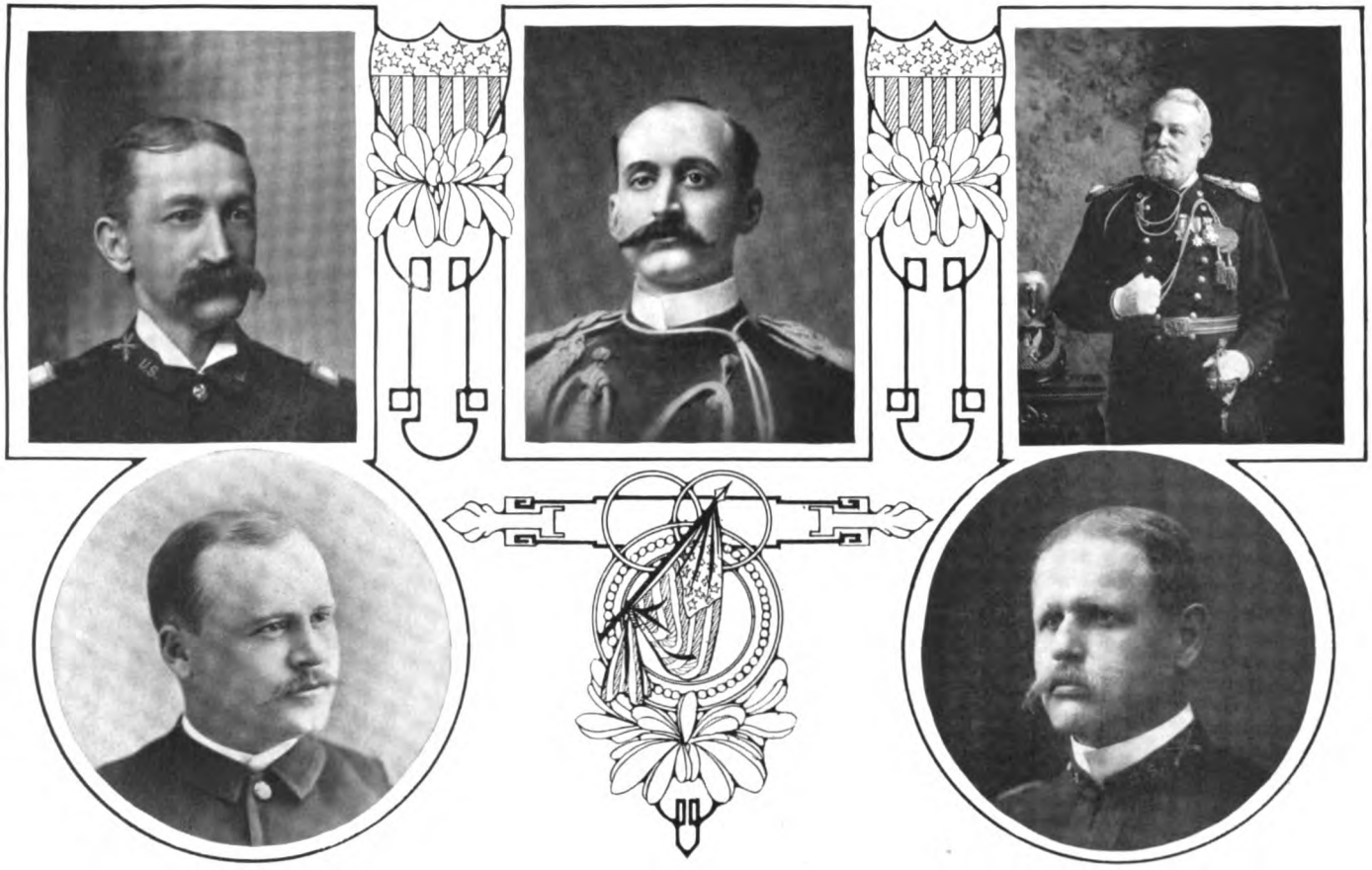
WARREN S. BARLOW

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy June 15, 1893; additional Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 11, 1897; Second Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, March 8, 1898; First Lieutenant March 2, 1899; Captain June 13, 1902; transferred to Twenty-sixth Infantry March 12, 1903; retired September 22, 1905.

GEORGE N. BASCOM

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1853; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1,

Digitized by Google



John A. Baldwin,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

John Baxter, Jr.,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

Edgar F. Koehler,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Edward F. Townsend,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

Carl Riechmann,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

1858; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, April 23, 1859; First Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Captain October 24, 1861; killed February 21, 1862, at the battle of Val Verde, New Mexico.

JOHN BAXTER, JR.

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1873; additional Second Lieutenant June 19, 1877; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1877; First Lieutenant February 3, 1885; Captain and Assistant Quartermaster, October 15, 1897; accepted October 16th; Major and Quartermaster August 15, 1903.

DAVID W. BIDDLE

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861; Captain July 25, 1863; resigned May 24, 1864.

LYMAN BISSELL

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Connecticut; First Lieutenant of Infantry, February 24, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; Captain September 8, 1847; honorably mustered out August 26, 1848; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; regimental Quartermaster, September 1, 1858, to March 15, 1861; Captain March 15, 1861; Major, Eleventh Infantry, March 4, 1864; transferred to Twenty-ninth Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Eleventh Infantry March 15, 1869; retired December 31, 1870; died November 22, 1888.

HENRY M. BLACK

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1842; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, July 1, 1847; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, August 20, 1847; regimental Quartermaster, September 10, 1850, to April 14, 1855; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Captain September 10, 1866; Major, Seventh Infantry, July 25, 1863; Colonel, Sixth California Infantry, February 1, 1863; honorably mustered out volunteer service October 27, 1865; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourth Infantry, October 27, 1868; unassigned March 15, 1869; assigned to Eighteenth Infantry July 1, 1870; Colonel, Twenty-third Infantry, February 6, 1882; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel and Colonel, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war; retired January 15, 1891.

Digitized by Google

JOHN D. BLAKER

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Private and Corporal Company C, Third Pennsylvania Reserves, July 28, 1861, to November 24, 1862; Second Lieutenant, Third United States Colored Infantry, July 26, 1863; resigned May 26, 1864; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 23, 1866; First Lieutenant July 28, 1866; resigned April 21, 1868.

GUSTAV VON BLUCHER

Born in Denmark. Appointed from West Virginia; Second Lieutenant, First Battalion, New York Light Artillery, September 2, 1862; First Lieutenant December 31, 1862; Captain, Thirty-first New York Battery, January 31, 1864; honorably mustered out October 31, 1864; First Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, January 22, 1867; unassigned April 17, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 6, 1870; Brevet Captain, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service at the battle of Chancellorsville, Virginia, and Major, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service at the Battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; honorably discharged October 1, 1870, at his own request. Second Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, August 21, 1872; resigned June 5, 1875.

ALPHEUS H. BOWMAN

Born in Virginia. Captain, Ninety-first Pennsylvania Infantry, December 3, 1861; discharged December 12, 1862; Captain, Ninety-first Pennsylvania Infantry, December 22, 1862; honorably mustered out September 23, 1863; Private and First Sergeant,L, Third Pennsylvania Artillery, December 24, 1863, to March 21, 1864; Second Lieutenant, Second Pennsylvania Artillery, March 21, 1864; First Lieutenant September 1, 1864; honorably mustered out November 9, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-seventh Infantry, July 28, 1866; First Lieutenant March 5, 1867; regimental Adjutant January 1, 1867, to June 14, 1869; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; Captain May 19, 1881; Major, Second Infantry, June 30, 1898; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fifth Infantry, February 2, 1901; Colonel, Twenty-fifth Infantry, April 14, 1902; Brigadier-General August 12, 1903; accepted same date; retired August 13, 1903.

ANDREW W. BOWMAN

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1837; Brevet Second Lieutenant, First Infantry, July 1, 1841; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, April 30, 1842; First

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant September 21, 1846; regimental Quartermaster March 28, 1847, to April 30, 1852; Captain June 6, 1852; Major, Ninth Infantry, June 7, 1862; Lieutenant-Colonel, Thirty-first Infantry, June 26, 1867; unassigned March 15, 1869; Brevet Captain, April 18, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Cerro Gordo, Mexico; died July 17, 1869.

FRANCIS L. BOWMAN

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; First Lieutenant, First Pennsylvania Infantry, December 16, 1846; Major December 18, 1846; honorably mustered out August 8, 1848; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; died September 10, 1856.

WILLIAM H. BOYLE

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Fifth New York Artillery, June 28, 1862; First Lieutenant December 27, 1864; Captain March 7, 1865; honorably mustered out March 9, 1365; Captain, Fifth New York Artillery, March 25, 1865; Major May 20, 1865; honorably mustered out July 19, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, May 10, 1866; accepted June 15, 1866; First Lieutenant August 15, 1867; unassigned April 17, 1869; assigned to Twenty-first Infantry December 15, 1870; Captain April 23, 1877; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 25, 1898; transferred to Twenty-first Infantry, September 26, 1898; Lieutenant-Colonel, Nineteenth Infantry, May 4, 1899; retired November 13, 1900; Colonel retired April 23, 1904.

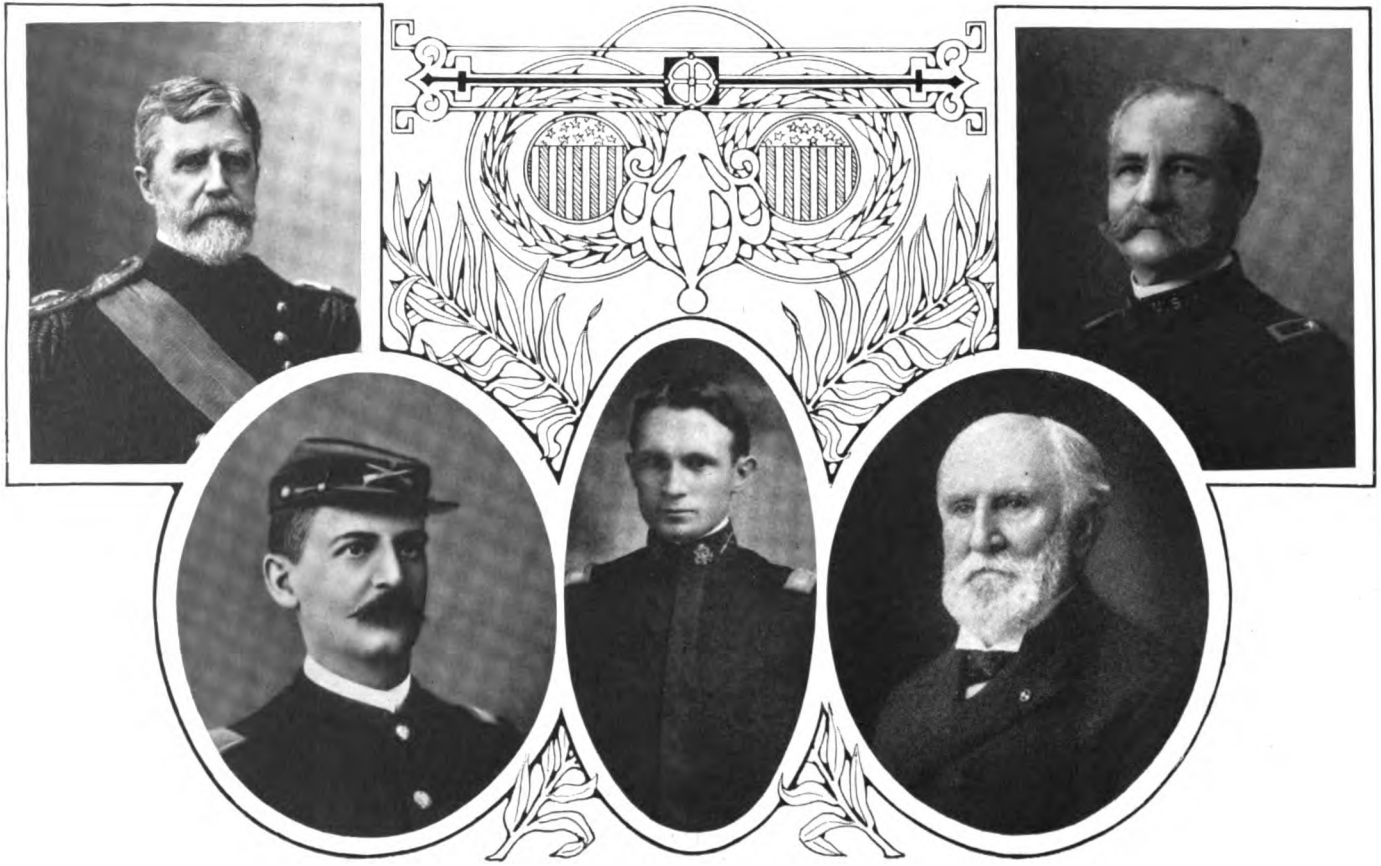
LUTHER P. BRADLEY

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Illinois; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fifty-first Illinois Infantry, November 6, 1861; Colonel October 15, 1862; Brigadier-General of volunteers July 30, 1864; resigned June 30, 1865; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-seventh Infantry, July 28, 1866; transferred to Ninth Infantry March 28, 1869; Colonel, Third Infantry, March 27, 1879; transferred to Thirteenth Infantry June 14, 1879; retired December 8, 1886; Brevet Colonel March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chickamauga, Georgia, and Brigadier-General March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Resaca, Georgia.

GEORGE M. BRAYTON

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Ohio; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; regimental Quartermaster May 8 to October 3, 1862; Captain January 3, 1863; transferred to Thirty-third

Digitized by Google



Thomas M. Anderson,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

E. P. Ewers,
Major, Lieutenant-Colonel,
Ninth Infantry.

Robert H. Anderson, Jr.,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

George S. Simonds,
First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Luther P. Bradley,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Infantry September 23, 1866; transferred to Eighth Infantry May 3, 1869; Major, Fifteenth Infantry, February 6, 1882; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, September 6, 1886; Brevet Major, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Missionary Ridge, Tennessee; Colonel, Nineteenth Infantry, March 23, 1892; retired September 16, 1892; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, February 27, 1890, for gallant services in action against the Indians in Arizona June 25, 1875, July 4, 1875, January 10, 1877, January 21, 1877, and January 30, 1877.

Andre W. Brewster

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from Pennsylvania, Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, January 19, 1885; accepted February 7, 1885; First Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, December 17, 1891; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 9, 1892; Captain March 2, 1899; Major, Nineteenth Infantry, March 15, 1908; Captain, Assistant Quartermaster, volunteers, October 15, 1898; accepted October 24, 1898; honorably discharged May 4, 1899.

Elisha Brimhall

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Maine; Superintendent Artificers July 12 to December 13th; ensign, Ninth Infantry, December 4, 1813; Third Lieutenant January 1, 1814; First Lieutenant September 1, 1814; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; reinstated December 2, 1815, as Second Lieutenant, Corps Artillery, with brevet of First Lieutenant from September 2, 1814; First Lieutenant April 20, 1818; resigned November 30, 1820.

James M. Broom

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 30, 1861; honorably discharged September 10, 1863; Second Lieutenant and First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 7, 1864; dismissed May 27, 1869.

William Browning

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Ensign, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant March 13, 1813; First Lieutenant October 15, 1813; Captain October 31, 1814; retained May 17, 1815, as First Lieutenant, Second Infantry, with brevet of Captain from October 31, 1814; Captain November 1, 1817; transferred to Third Infantry June 1, 1821; resigned September 23, 1827.

Digitized by Google

TIMOTHY M. BRYAN

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1851; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1855; Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, August 28, 1855; resigned January 1, 1857; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twelfth Massachusetts Infantry, June 26, 1861; resigned October 12, 1862; Colonel, Eighteenth Pennsylvania Cavalry, September 24, 1862; honorably discharged December 29, 1864; died April 8, 1881.

GUY E. BUCKER

Born in Indiana. Appointed from the army; Private and Corporal Troop I, Seventh Cavalry, and Company G, First Infantry, April 4, 1899, to July 15, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted July 16, 1901; transferred to Second Infantry October 20, 1904; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, July 28, 1905; private, Company D, One Hundred and Fifty-eighth Indiana Infantry, May 10 to November, 4, 1898.

RICHARD W. BUCHANAN

Born in Kentucky. Appointed at large; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted September 21, 1901; First Lieutenant, Twenty-first Infantry, February, 2, 1902; Second Lieutenant, One Hundred and Sixty-first Indiana Infantry, July 11, 1898; Captain March 9, 1899; honorably mustered out April 30, 1899; First Lieutenant, Forty-fourth United States Infantry, August 24, 1899; accepted September 12, 1899; honorably mustered out June 30, 1901; dismissed February 5, 1906.

EDWARD A. BUMPUS

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-first Infantry, July 9, 1898; accepted August 8, 1898; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 8, 1899; killed in battle September 28, 1901; private, Company A, First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, May 8, 1898, to August 4, 1898.

ADOLPHUS BURGHARDT

Born in Massachusetts. Ensign, Ninth Infantry, July 2, 1813; Third Lieutenant August 15, 1813; Second Lieutenant October 15, 1813; killed July 25, 1814, in battle of Niagara Falls.

Digitized by Google

THOMAS B. BURROWES

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; First Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; dismissed June 17, 1863; reinstated February 27, 1864; Captain November 13, 1863; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; retired March 20, 1879; Brevet Major, September 1, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Jonesboro, Georgia; died October 12, 1885.

ANDREW S. BURT

Born in Ohio. Sergeant Company A, Sixth Ohio Infantry, April 20 to July 15, 1861; First Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Captain A. A. D. C. April 30, 1862, to May 30, 1863; Captain, Eighteenth Infantry, May 30, 1863; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; Major, Eighth Infantry, January 26, 1883; Lieutenant-Colonel, Seventh Infantry, January 1, 1888; Brevet Captain, June 19, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Mill Spring, Kentucky, and Major September 1, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service during the Atlanta campaign and in the battle of Jonesboro, Georgia; Colonel, Twenty-fifth Infantry, United States Army, July 4, 1892; Brigadier General April 1, 1902; accepted April 14, 1902; retired April 15, 1902; Brigadier General of volunteers May 4, 1898; accepted May 16, 1898; honorably discharged December 31, 1898.

MATTHEW C. BUTLER, JR.

Born in South Carolina. Appointed from South Carolina; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1883; additional Second Lieutenant, Fourteenth Infantry, June 11, 1888; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 17, 1888; transferred to Fifth Cavalry February 11, 1889; First Lieutenant, Seventh Cavalry, August 27, 1896; Captain February 2, 1901; Major, Chief of Ordnance, July 19, 1898; accepted July 21, 1898; honorably discharged May 12, 1899.

ELISHA E. CAMP

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; served as enlisted man under name of Henry Leon; private general service, August 4, to August 31, 1847; Second Lieutenant, Third Dragoons, August 28, 1847; resigned February 4, 1848; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 14, 1857; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861, to December 31, 1862;

Digitized by Google



Edwin J. Harvie,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Andrew S. Burt,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Richard C. Drum,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.
Only living officer in Ninth Infantry during Mexican War.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

George E. Pickett,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Captain, Acting Quartermaster, August 3, 1861; Brevet Major and Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious conduct during the war; died August 4, 1867.

William A. Campbell

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from army; private, Corporal, and Sergeant, Company K, Twelfth Infantry, October 13, 1885, to March 5, 1889; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, Feburary 11, 1889; accepted March 6th; First Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, February 16, 1896; Captain May 16, 1899; retired October 9, 1903.

Thaddeus H. Capron

Born in Wisconsin. Private, C and Quartermaster-Sergeant, Fifty-fifth Illinois Infantry, September 9, 1861, to March 1, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Fifty-fifth Illinois Infantry, March 1, 1863; First Lieutenant October 10, 1863, to June 13, 1865; Captain and Acting Quartermaster of volunteers June 1, 1865; Major and Quartermaster June 6, to August 1, 1865; honorably mustered out October 31, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 22, 1867; First Lieutenant November 8, 1871; retired August 30, 1887.

George Carr

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Second Lieutenant of Infantry February 23, 1847; voltigeurs April 9, 1847; honorably mustered out August 31, 1848; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; resigned February 20, 1861; Colonel Fifty-seventh Virginia Volunteers, Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65.

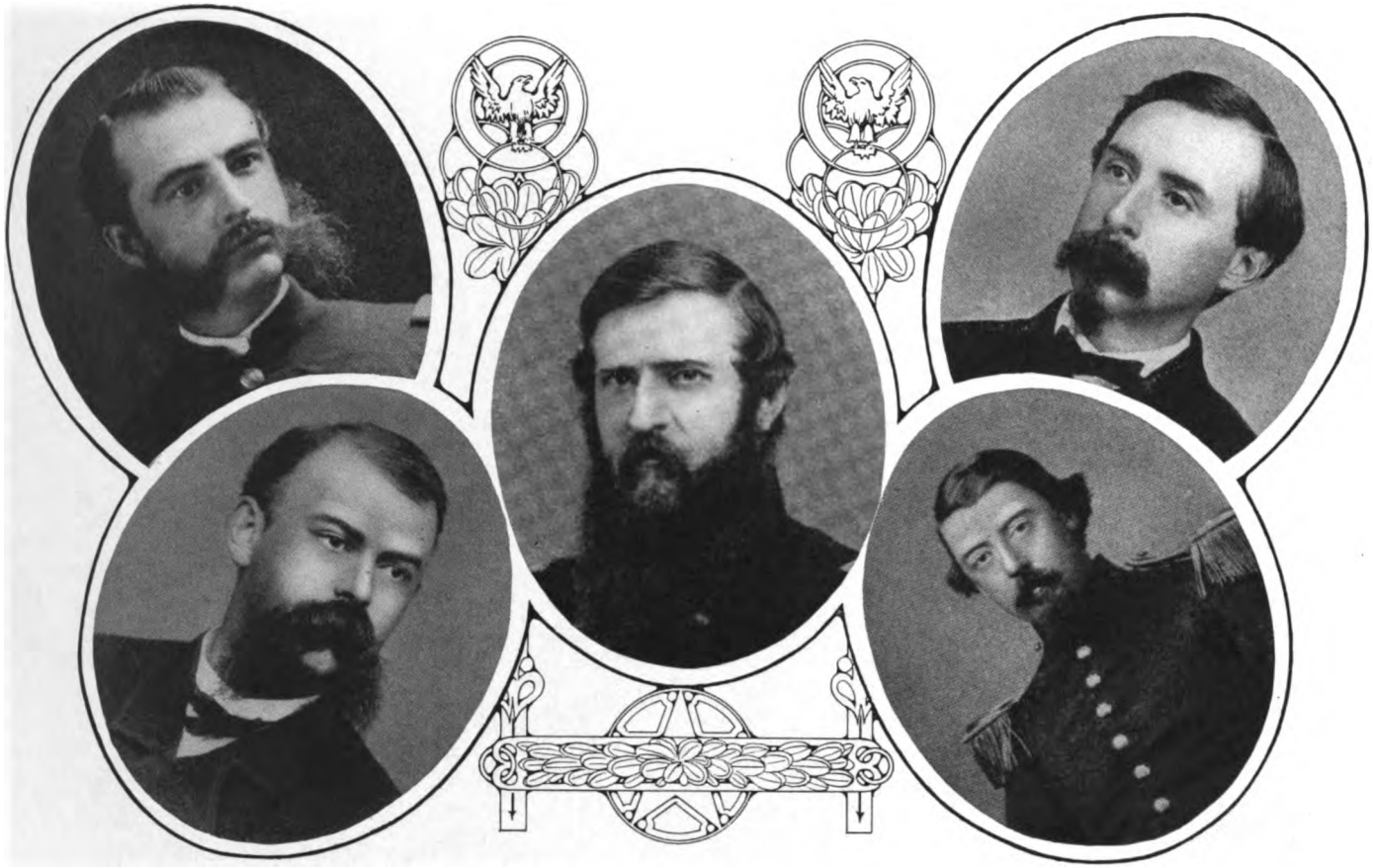
William L. Carpenter

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, D and L, Second Artillery, July 29, 1864, to June 11, 1867; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 5, 1868; First Lieutenant December 31, 1873; Captain October 2, 1887; died July 10, 1898.

Samuel S. Carroll

Born in District of Columbia. Appointed from District of Columbia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1852; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, October 1, 1856; First Lieutenant April 25, 1861; Captain, November 1, 1861; Colonel, Eighth Ohio Infantry, September 7, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers May 12, 1864; honorably mustered out of volunteer service

Digitized by Google



William L. Carpenter,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Charles O. Wood,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Thomas C. English,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Samuel Munson,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Edwin Pollock,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Digitized by Google

January 15, 1866; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-first Infantry, January 21, 1867; unassigned March 15, 1869; retired with rank as Major-General June 9, 1869; Brevet Major, May 3, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chancellorsville, Virginia; Lieutenant-Colonel, July 3, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; Colonel, May 5, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service at the Battle of the Wilderness, Virginia; Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Spottsylvania, Virginia; Major-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the field during the war, and Major-General of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war.

SILAS CASEY

Born in Rhode Island. Appointed from Rhode Island; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1822; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, July 1, 1826; Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, July 1, 1826; First Lieutenant June 28, 1836; Captain July 1, 1839; Lieutenant-Colonel Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Colonel, Fourth Infantry, October 9, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers August 31, 1861; Major-General of volunteers May 31, 1862; honorably mustered out of volunteers August 24, 1865; retired July 8, 1868; Brevet Major, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; Lieutenant-Colonel, September 13, 1848, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; Brigadier-General, March 31, 1862, for gallant and meritorious conduct at the battles of Fair Oaks, Virginia, and Major-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; died January 22, 1882.

GEORGE F. CHASE

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1867; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 1, 1871; transferred to Third Cavalry May 8, 1872; First Lieutenant March 20, 1879; Captain November 25, 1887; Major, Seventh Cavalry, February 22, 1901; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twelfth Cavalry, April 15, 1903; Colonel, Fifteenth Cavalry, October 2, 1906; Inspector-General (by detail, act February 2, 1901) May 3, 1907.

EBENEZER CHILDS

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from army; Sergeant, Fourth Infantry, October 11, 1808; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; First Lieutenant May 13, 1813; Captain July 20, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815; resigned March 3, 1817.

Digitized by Google

CHARLES C. CLARK

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1886; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1890; First Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, June 1, 1897; Captain, Twentieth Infantry, January 12, 1900; transferred to Fifth Infantry February 17, 1900; Commissary (by detail, act February 2, 1901) April 9, 1905; Captain, Signal Corps, June 2, 1898; accepted June 13, 1898; honorably discharged November 30, 1898.

ROBERT S. CLARK

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 1, 1899; accepted October 1, 1899; First Lieutenant March 14, 1901; resigned July 29, 1905.

HARRY J. COLLINS

Born in Colorado. Appointed from Colorado; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to Twenty-eighth Infantry February 4, 1903; Private and Corporal, Company I, First Colorado Infantry, May 1, 1898, to July 7, 1899; Private and Corporal, Company B, and Commissary-Sergeant, Twenty-sixth United States Infantry, July 10, 1899, to September 26, 1899; Captain, Thirty-second United States Infantry, July 5, 1899; accepted September 27, 1899; honorably mustered out June 11, 1901; dismissed September 15, 1904.

RICHARD COMBA

Born in Ireland. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant and First Sergeant, Company K, Company B and Company E, Seventh Infantry, January 30, 1855, to March 26, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, February 19, 1863; First Lieutenant, October 30, 1863; Captain March 14, 1865; Major, Ninth Infantry, May 15, 1889; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twelfth Infantry, United States Army, March 9, 1893; Colonel, Fifth Infantry, June 30, 1898; retired July 11, 1901; Brevet First Lieutenant July 2, 1863, and Captain and Major, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel February 27, 1890; Brigadier-General of volunteers September 7, 1898; accepted September 8, 1898; honorably discharged September 15, 1899.

THOMAS W. CONNELL

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1889; Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, June

Digitized by Google

12, 1894; transferred to Ninth Infantry September 18, 1894; First Lieutenant April 6, 1898; Captain, Ninth Infantry; killed in action September 28, 1901.

TIMOTHY CONNELLY

Born in Ireland. Appointed from the army; Private and Corporal, Company C, Sixth Infantry, August 20, 1849, to August 20, 1854; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Company A, First Infantry, September 14, 1854, to January 25, 1863; ordnance Sergeant January 16 to June 1, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 1, 1863; First Lieutenant December 29, 1863; Captain September 10, 1867; unassigned June 14, 1869; dismissed June 25, 1869.

CHARLES A. COOLIDGE

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from the army; Private, Sixteenth Infantry, and Private, Company H, Sixteeenth Infantry, October 23, 1862, to July 21, 1864; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, May 18, 1864; First Lieutenant July 20, 1864; accepted July 21, 1864; Captain August 9, 1877; Major April 26, 1898; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, May 16, 1899; Colonel, Seventh Infantry, March 2, 1901; Brigadier-General August 8, 1903; accepted August 8, 1903; retired August 9, 1903.

LOUIS A. CRAIG

Born in Missouri. Appointed from Missouri; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1869; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 17, 1874; transferred to Sixth Cavalry May 17, 1875; First Lieutenant November 30, 1879; regimental Adjutant Cctober 1, 1883, to October 1, 1884; Captain February 24, 1891; Major, Fifteenth Cavalry, February 17, 1901; retired March 23, 1903; Major, Assistant Adjutant-General of volunteers, May 20, 1898; accepted June 4, 1898; honorably discharged April 7, 1899; Colonel, Thirty-second United States Infantry, July 5, 1899; accepted July 12, 1899; honorably mustered out May 8, 1901.

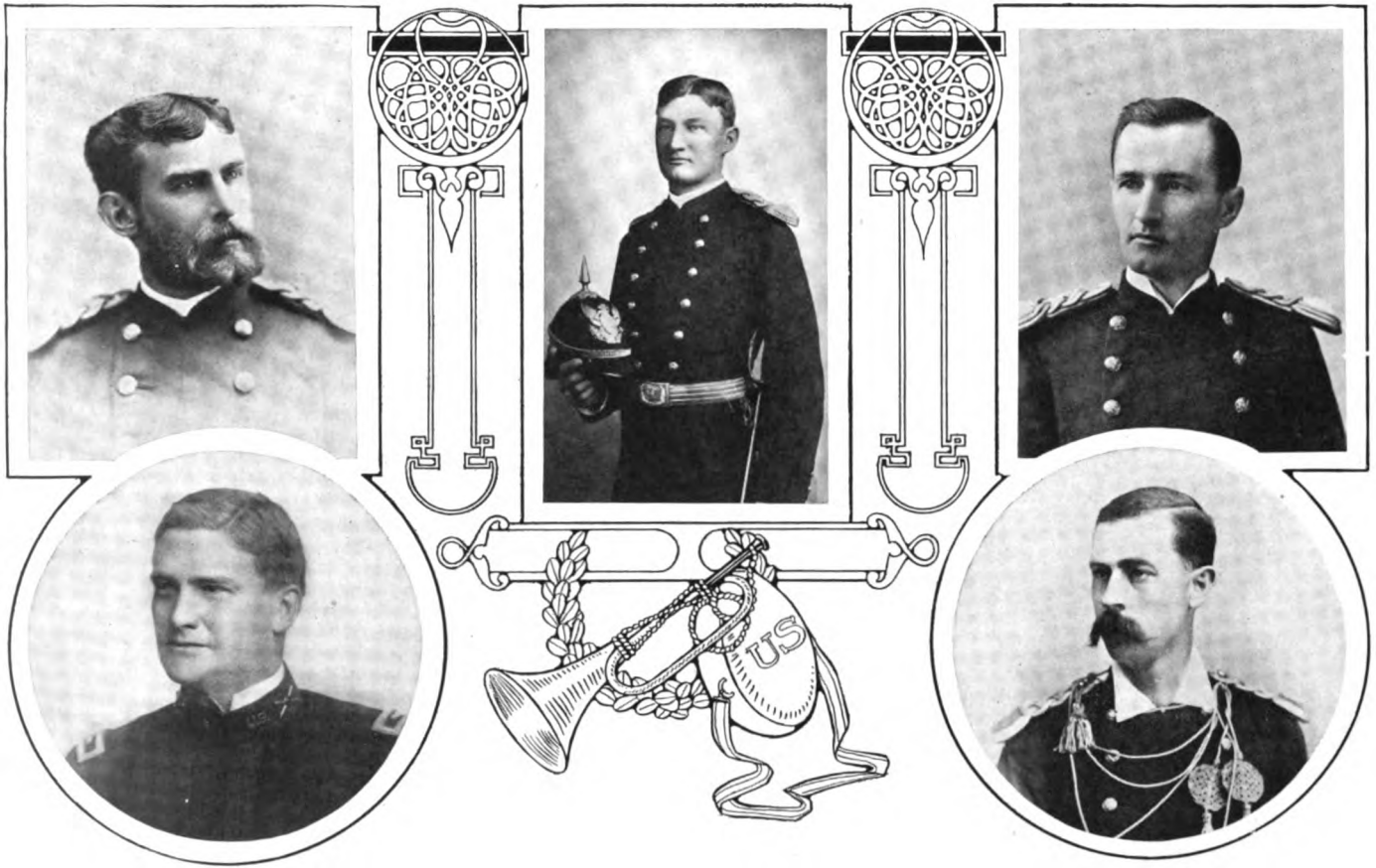
DANIEL H. CRAM

Born in New Hampshire. Appointed from New Hampshire; Second Lieutenant of Infantry March 17, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 19, 1847; First Lieutenant September 8, 1847; resigned December 4, 1847.

CARY I. CROCKETT

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 5, 1908; in Philippine Islands, 1899 to 1907.

Digitized by Google



Thomas S. McCaleb,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

E. P. Newsom,
Chaplain, Ninth Infantry.

Edmund Wittenmyer,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Ambrose I. Moriarity,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Louis A. Craig,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

CALEB CUSHMAN

Appointed from the army; Sergeant, Ninth Infantry, June 25, 1812, to March, 1814; ensign, Ninth Infantry, March 30, 1814; Second Lieutenant July 25, 1814; regimental Adjutant August 14th to June 15th; First Lieutenant October 31, 1814; honorably discharged June 15, 1815.

HARRY F. DALTON

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 9, 1898; accepted July 29, 1898; First Lieutenant, Nineteenth Infantry, July 11, 1899; transferred to Sixth Infantry October 10, 1902; Captain, Sixteenth Infantry, April 11, 1905.

THOMAS W. DARRAH

Born in Kansas. Appointed from Kansas; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1891; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1895; First Lieutenant of Infantry July 1, 1898; assigned to Twentieth Infantry January 20, 1899; Captain, Thirtieth Infantry, February 2, 1901; Commissary (by detail, act February 2, 1901) April 15, 1901; assigned to Seventh Infantry April 15, 1905; Captain, Thirty-fifth United States Infantry, July 5, 1899; accepted July 13, 1899; honorably mustered out May 2, 1901.

GEORGE W. DAVIS

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Connecticut; Captain, Fourteenth Infantry, January 22, 1867; accepted March 25, 1867; Major, Eleventh Infantry, August 16, 1894; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 9, 1897; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourteenth Infantry, April 26, 1898; Colonel, Twenty-third Infantry, October 19, 1899; Brigadier-General February 2, 1901; accepted February 8, 1901; Major-General July 21, 1902; accepted July 21, 1902; retired July 26, 1903; Quartermaster-Sergeant, Eleventh Connecticut Infantry, November 27, 1861; discharged April 5, 1862; First Lieutenant, Eleventh Connecticut Infantry, April 5, 1862; Brevet Major March 13, 1865; honorably mustered out May 30, 1865; Captain, Acting Quartermaster, May 22, 1865; accepted May 31, 1865; Major and Quartermaster, May 31, 1865, to February 5, 1866; honorably mustered out April 20, 1866; Brigadier-General of volunteers May 4, 1898; accepted May 11, 1898; honorably discharged April 14, 1899; Brigadier-General April 14, 1899; accepted April 15, 1899; vacated February 28, 1901.

Digitized by Google

ROBERT H. DAVIS

Born in Mississippi. Appointed from Mississippi; First Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; resigned August 3, 1857.

HAYDEN DELANEY

Born in Ohio. Private and Corporal, B, Thirtieth Ohio Infantry, December 31, 1861, to May 31, 1865; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1865, to September 5, 1867; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 11, 1867; First Lieutenant June 28, 1878; Captain September 28, 1889; Brevet First Lieutenant, May 1, 1868, for gallant and meritorious service in action with the Paiute Indians, in Warner Valley, May 1, 1868; died November 4, 1890.

FREDERICK T. DENT

Born in Missouri. Appointed from Missouri; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1839; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, July 1, 1843; Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, March 30, 1846; First Lieutenant September 11, 1847; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Major, Fourth Infantry, March 9, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, aide-de-camp to Lieutenant General Grant, March 29, 1864, to April 5, 1865; Brigadier-General of volunteers April 5, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service April 30, 1866; transferred from Fourth to Fourteenth Infantry August 23, 1866; Lieutenant-Colonel, aide-de-camp to Lieutenant General Grant May 3, 1866, to July 25, 1866, and Colonel, aide-de-camp to General Grant July 25, 1866, to March 4, 1869; and to General Sherman to December 31, 1872; Lieutenant-Colonel, Thirty-second Infantry, December 31, 1867; unassigned March 15, 1869; assigned to Fifth Artillery September 5, 1870; Colonel First Artillery January 22, 1871; transferred to Third Artillery November 4, 1882; retired December 1, 1883; Brevet First Lieutenant, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; Captain, September 8, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Molino del Rey, Mexico; Lieutenant-Colonel, May 7, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in the Battle of the Wilderness, Virginia; Colonel, July 30, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in front of Petersburg, Virginia; Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the field during the war, and Colonel of volunteers, February 24, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service.

Digitized by Google

JOHN D. DEVIN

Born in Maine. Appointed from New Hampshire; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861; Captain March 9, 1863; retired March 27, 1879; Brevet Major and Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; died December 31, 1882. (This officer served as an enlisted man in the Ninth Infantry during the Mexican War.)

WILLIAM DEVINE

Born in Ireland. Appointed from the army; Private, Battery I, Fourth Artillery, September 9, 1856, to September 19, 1861; private, Corporal and Sergeant, Company G, Eleventh Infantry, October 16, 1861, to March 27, 1863; Captain, Seventy-ninth United States Colorado Infantry, March 27, 1863; resigned September 11, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 22, 1863; resigned November 7, 1863; died May 2, 1884.

FRANK L. DODDS

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant June 15, 1887; Captain April 26, 1898; transferred to Twenty-sixth Infantry June 4, 1901; Major, Judge Advocate May 22, 1901; accepted June 2, 1901.

HENRY DOUGLASS

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1847; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, July 1, 1852; Second Lieutenant, Eighth Infantry, December 31, 1853; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant September 10, 1856; Captain, Eighteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Major, Third Infantry, July 28, 1866; unassigned March 15, 1869; assigned to Eleventh Infantry December 31, 1870; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourteenth Infantry, January 10, 1876; Colonel, Tenth Infantry, July 1, 1885; Brevet Major, December 31, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Murfreesboro, Tennessee; died June 19, 1892.

JOHN R. DOYLE

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy June 18, 1897, to June 5, 1898; and from June 20, 1898, to June 13, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 28, 1902; accepted November 1, 1902; resigned December 8, 1903.

Digitized by Google

JAMES P. DROUILLARD

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Tennessee; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, September 9, 1898; accepted September 19, 1898; First Lieutenant, First Infantry, September 30, 1899; transferred to Ninth Infantry April 23, 1900; Captain Thitieth Infantry; resigned November 2, 1905.

RICHARD C. DRUM

Born in Pennsylvania. Private Company K, First Pennsylvania Infantry, December 16, 1846, to March 17, 1847; Second Lieutenant of Infantry February 18, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; transferred to Fourth Artillery March 8, 1848; First Lieutenant September 16, 1860; Brevet Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General, March 16, 1861; Major and Assistant Adjutant-General August 3, 1861; Lieutenant Colonel, Assistant Adjutant-General July 3, 1862; Colonel, Assistant Adjutant-General February 22, 1869; Brigadier-General, Adjutant-General, June 15, 1880; retired May 28, 1889; Brevet First Lieutenant, September 13, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; Colonel, September 24, 1864, for meritorious service during the war and Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service in the Adjutant-General's department during the war.

RALPH W. DRURY

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy June 18, 1893, to June 25, 1895; private and Corporal, Company E, Fourteenth Infantry, November 5, 1901, to October 26, 1902; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 17, 1902; accepted October 27, 1902; First Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, March 16, 1908.

GEORGE B. DUNCAN

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1882; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1886; First Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, May 18, 1893; Captain March 2, 1899; Major Philippine Scouts, February 28, 1905; Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General volunteers May 12, 1898; accepted May 31, 1898; honorably discharged February 20, 1899.

THOMAS F. DWYER

Born in Maryland. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1891; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1895; First Lieutenant of Infantry July 10, 1898; assigned to Ninth

Digitized by Google

Infantry January 1, 1899; transferred to Eighteenth Infantry August 29, 1899; Captain, Twenty-sixth Infantry, February 28, 1901; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry May 18, 1901; transferred to Twenty-first Infantry June 18, 1902; transferred to Artillery Corps December 19, 1904, to rank from October 29, 1901.

EUGENE C. ECKER

Born in Missouri. Appointed from the army; Private and Corporal, band, and Company A, Fifth Infantry, August 27, 1900, to October 26, 1902; Second Lieutenant October 17, 1902; accepted October 27, 1902; promoted First Lieutenant of Infantry May 15, 1908; retired May 15, 1908.

WILLIAM G. ELLIOT

Born in California. Appointed from District of Columbia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1882, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1886; First Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, October 19. 1893, died August 25, 1898.

FRANK D. ELY

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1890; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, June 12, 1894; transferred to Thirteenth Infantry September 10, 1895; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1898; transferred to Second Infantry February 23, 1899; Captain, Twenty-ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; paymaster (by detail act February 2, 1901) August 15, 1906.

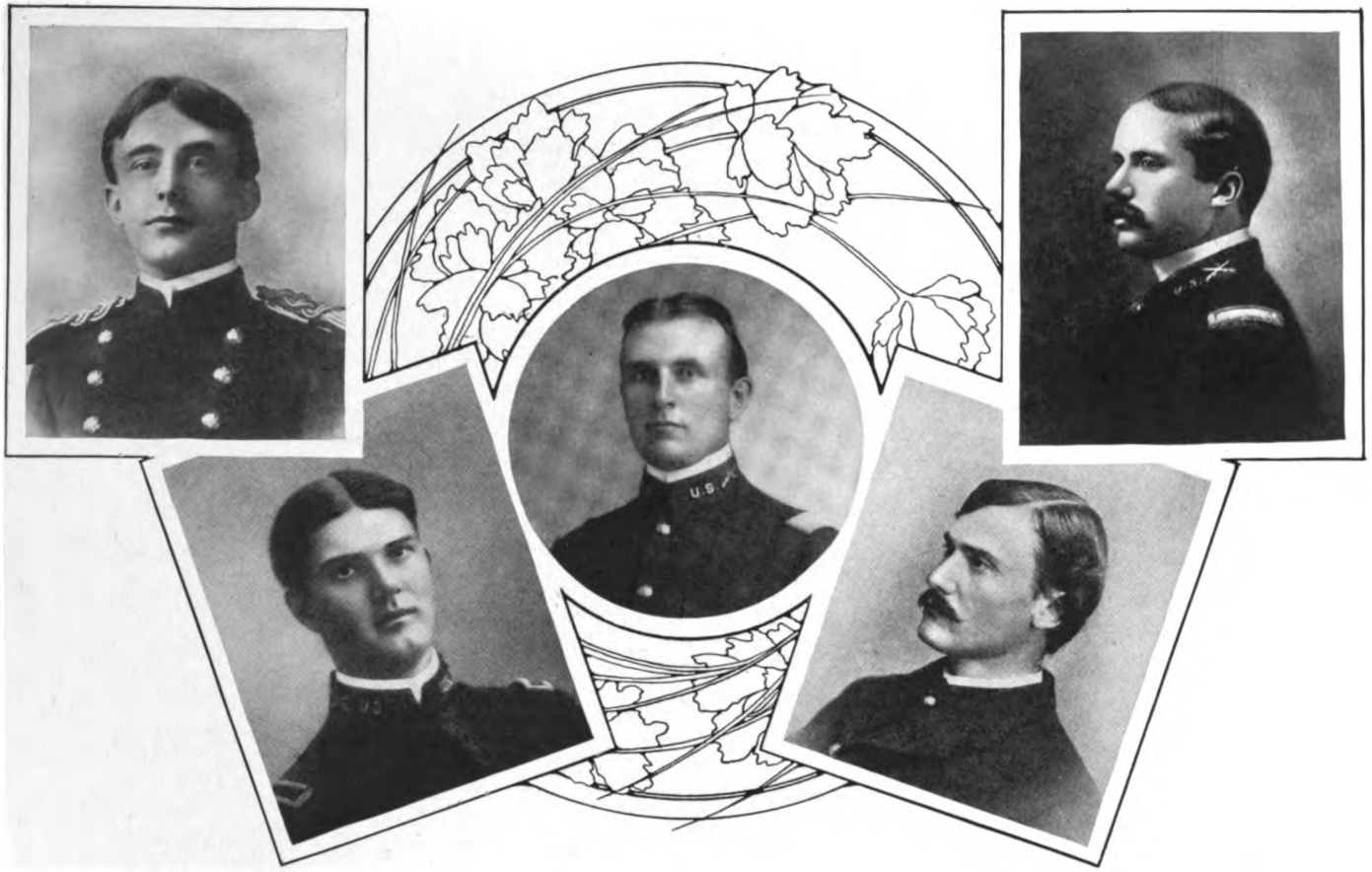
CAMPBELL D. EMORY

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed at large; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, May 6, 1861; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 26, 1861; First Lieutenant June 25, 1861; regimental Adjutant July 21, 1862, to December 29, 1863; Captain December 29, 1863; Brevet Major, April 2, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in front of Petersburg, Virginia, and Lieutenant-Colonel, April 9, 1865, for faithful and distinguished service in the field during the war; died March 11, 1878.

THOMAS C. ENGLISH

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1845; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July, 1849; Second Lieutenant July 31, 1850; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infan-

Digitized by Google



Lewis H. Lewis,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Joseph B. Morse,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Frank D. Ely,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Thomas W. Connell,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Leonard Hay,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Digitized by Google

try, March 3, 1855; regimental Adjutant April 18, 1855, to May 1, 1856; Captain December 29, 1857; Lieutenant-Colonel, First Washington Territory Infantry, April 17, 1862; honorably mustered out of volunteer service April 17, 1865; Major, Fifth Infantry, August 27, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, Second Infantry, February 22, 1869; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war; died June 10, 1876.

Ezra P. Ewers

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; Private, Sergeant, and First Sergeant, Company E, First Battalion, Nineteenth Infantry, January 8, 1862, to December 4, 1863; Second Lieutenant Nineteenth Infantry, October 31, 1863; accepted December 4, 1863; First Lieutenant, March 16, 1864; transferred to Thirty-seventh Infantry September 23, 1866; Captain September 12, 1866; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 19, 1869; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 7, 1893; Lieutenant-Colonel, April 30, 1897; Colonel, Tenth Infantry, May 16, 1899; retired April 13, 1901; Brigadier-General, retired April 23, 1904; Brevet Major February 27, 1890; Brigadier-General of volunteers July 12, 1898; accepted August 9, 1898; honorably discharged April 20, 1899.

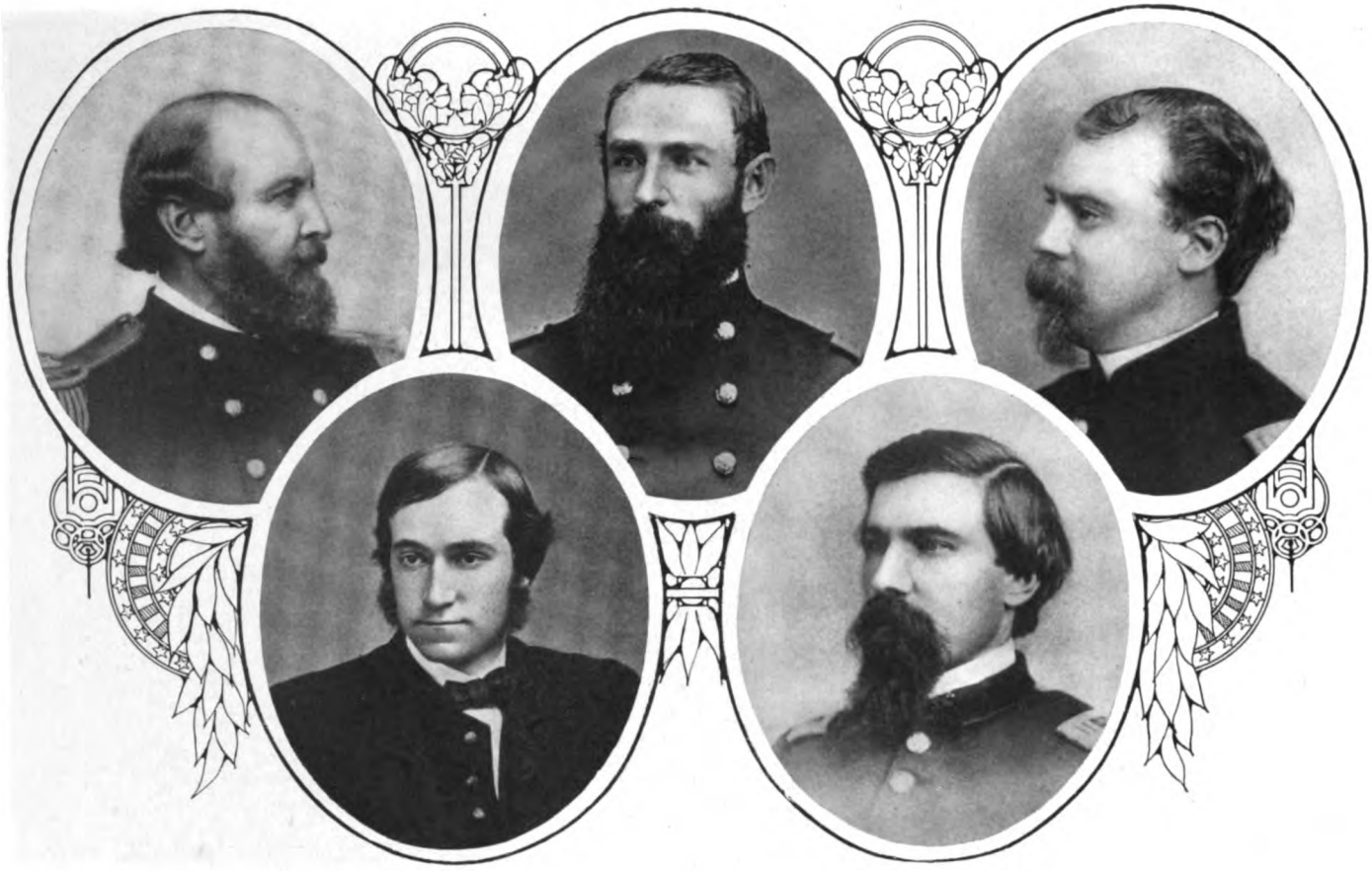
Charles W. Fenton

Born in Michigan. Appointed from Michigan; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1884; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 11, 1888; transferred to Seventh Cavalry May 23, 1891; First Lieutenant, Fifth Cavalry, August 5, 1897; Captain, Thirteenth Cavalry, February 2, 1901; Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General of volunteers May 12, 1898; accepted June 1, 1898; honorably discharged May 12, 1899.

John P. Finley

Born in Michigan. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Signal Corps, March 8, 1877, to July 10, 1884; Second Lieutenant, Signal Corps, July 1, 1884; accepted July 11, 1884; Second Lieutenant, Nineteenth Infantry, February 2, 1891 (to rank from July 1, 1884); accepted February 11, 1891; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry June 15, 1891; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 20, 1891; Captain of Infantry July 1, 1898; assigned to Ninth Infantry January 1, 1899; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry August 18, 1902; Major, Twenty-eighth Infantry, October 23, 1907.

Digitized by Google



Andrew W. Bowman,
Major, Ninth Infantry, 1866.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

J. E. Yard,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

James B. Hardenburgh,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Edwin D. Waite,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Hugh B. Fleming,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Digitized by Google

OTIS FISHER

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; ensign, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; Second Lieutenant June 30, 1813; First Lieutenant July 20, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815; regimental Quartermaster February 20, 1816, to March, 1819; died May 3, 1820.

MICHAEL J. FITZGERALD

Born in Ireland. Appointed from the army; Private and Corporal, Battery E, Fourth Artillery, and private and artificer, ordnance, January 5, 1856, to February 23, 1861; hospital steward March 14, 1861, to June 5, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 1, 1863; First Lieutenant March 4, 1864; Captain December 31, 1873; retired May 1, 1879.

HUGH B. FLEMING

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1848; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, July 1, 1852; Second Lieutenant June 9, 1853; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant June 7, 1856; Captain May 14, 1861; Major, Nineteenth Infantry, July 28, 1866; transferred to Thirty-seventh Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Fifth Infantry March 15, 1869; unassigned June 9, 1869; retired December 15, 1870.

CRAWFORD FLETCHER

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Arkansas; First Lieutenant, Mississippi Rifles, June 5, 1846; honorably mustered out June 11, 1847; Captain, Ninth Infantry, 1855; resigned March 1, 1861; died September 4, 1876.

GEORGE F. FOOTE

Born in New York. Appointed from Tennessee; Private and First Sergeant, E, Fourteenth Michigan Infantry, January 17, 1862, to March 14, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Fourteenth Michigan Infantry, March 14, 1863; First Lieutenant September 1, 1864; Captain May 26, 1865; Brevet Major and Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; honorably mustered out July 18, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 28, 1866; First Lieutenant April 21, 1868; unassigned June 14, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry September 17, 1869; transferred to Eighth Cavalry February 21, 1870; regimental Quartermaster May 1, 1870, to May 31, 1880; Captain January 18, 1881; retired April 24, 1886; Brevet

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant, March 27, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Stone River, Tennessee, and Captain, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Jonesboro, Georgia.

MORRIS C. FOOTE

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Private, C, Forty-fourth New York Infantry, September 3, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninety-Second New York Infantry, June 22, 1862; honorably mustered out December 31, 1863; First Lieutenant, One hundred Twenty-first New York Infantry, March 26, 1865; Brevet Captain of volunteers, April 6, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service before Petersburg, and in the battle of Little Sailor's Creek, Virginia; honorably mustered out July 17, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 7, 1866; First Lieutenant March 7, 1867; regimental Adjutant June 22, 1879, to January 26, 1883; Captain January 26, 1883; Major, Twenty-first Infantry, August 11, 1898; transferred to Ninth Infantry September 26, 1898; Lieutenant-Colonel February 2, 1901; transferred to First Infantry April 11, 1902; Colonel, Twenty-eighth Infantry, April 15, 1902; Brigadier-General February 18, 1903; accepted same date; retired February 19, 1903; Major and Commissary of Subsistance volunteers July 15, 1898; accepted July 22, 1898; resigned September 2, 1898; died December 26, 1905.

JAMES W. FORSYTH

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1851; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1856; First Lieutenant March 15, 1861; transferred to Eighteenth Infantry May 14, 1861; Captain October 24, 1861; Major, Assistant Adjutant-General of volunteers, April 7, 1864; Lieutenant-Colonel, Assistant Inspector-General; assigned April 19, 1864, to May 19, 1865; Brigadier-General of volunteers May 19, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service January 15, 1866; Major, Tenth Cavalry, July 22, 1866; Colonel, aid-de-camp to Lieutenant-General Sheridan, March 13, 1870, to March 17, 1872; Lieutenant-Colonel, military secretary to Lieutenant-General Sheridan March 17, 1873, to April 14, 1878; Lieutenant-Colonel, First Cavalry, April 4, 1878; Colonel, Seventh Cavalry, June 11, 1886; Brevet Major, September 20, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chickamauga, Georgia; Lieutenant-Colonel, October 11, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Cedar Creek, Virginia. Colonel, April 1, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Five Forks, Virginia; Brigadier-General, April 19, 1865, for gallant

Digitized by Google

and meritorious service in the field during the war, and Brigadier-General of volunteers, October 19, 1864, for gallant and meritorious service in the battles of Opequam, Fishers Hill, and Milltown, Virginia; Brigadier-General November 9, 1894; Major-General May 11, 1897; retired May 4, 1897.

CHARLES S. FOSTER

Born in Illinois. Appointed from North Dakota; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; accepted April 27, 1899; resigned January 24, 1900; Quartermaster-Sergeant, Company B, First North Dakota Infantry, May 14, 1898, to April 28, 1899.

WILLIAM L. FOSTER

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; First Lieutenant March 23, 1813; Captain October 15, 1813; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815; honorably discharged June 1, 1821; died November 21, 1821.

JOHN FOWLE

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 9, 1812; reg. paymaster, July 3, 1812, to June, 1814; First Lieutenant April 16, 1813; Captain, June 10, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815; Major, Third Infantry, March 4, 1833; Lieutenant-Colonel, Sixth Infantry, December 26, 1837; Brevet Major, June 10, 1824, for 10 years' faithful service in one grade; killed April 25, 1838, by steamboat explosion.

JOSEPH FRAZIER

Born in Missouri. Appointed from Missouri; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1886; Second Lieutenant, Nineteenth Infantry, June 12, 1891; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 16, 1898; Captain, Twenty-fifth Infantry, August 11, 1900; transferred to Fourteenth Infantry, August 18, 1900.

JOHN W. FRAZER

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Mississippi; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1845; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, July 1, 1849; Second Lieutenant June 30, 1850; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Captain May 1, 1857; resigned March 15, 1861; Brigadier-General Confederate States of America, war 1861–65.

Digitized by Google

Henry W. Freedley

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1851; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1855; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, September 30, 1855; First Lieutenant March 31, 1861; Captain May 14, 1861; Major, Fourteenth Infantry, December 31, 1867; retired with rank, as Colonel, September 25, 1868, and with rank, as Major, March 3, 1875; Brevet Major, May 3, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chancellorsville, Virginia, and Lieutenant-Colonel, July 2, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; died November 3, 1889.

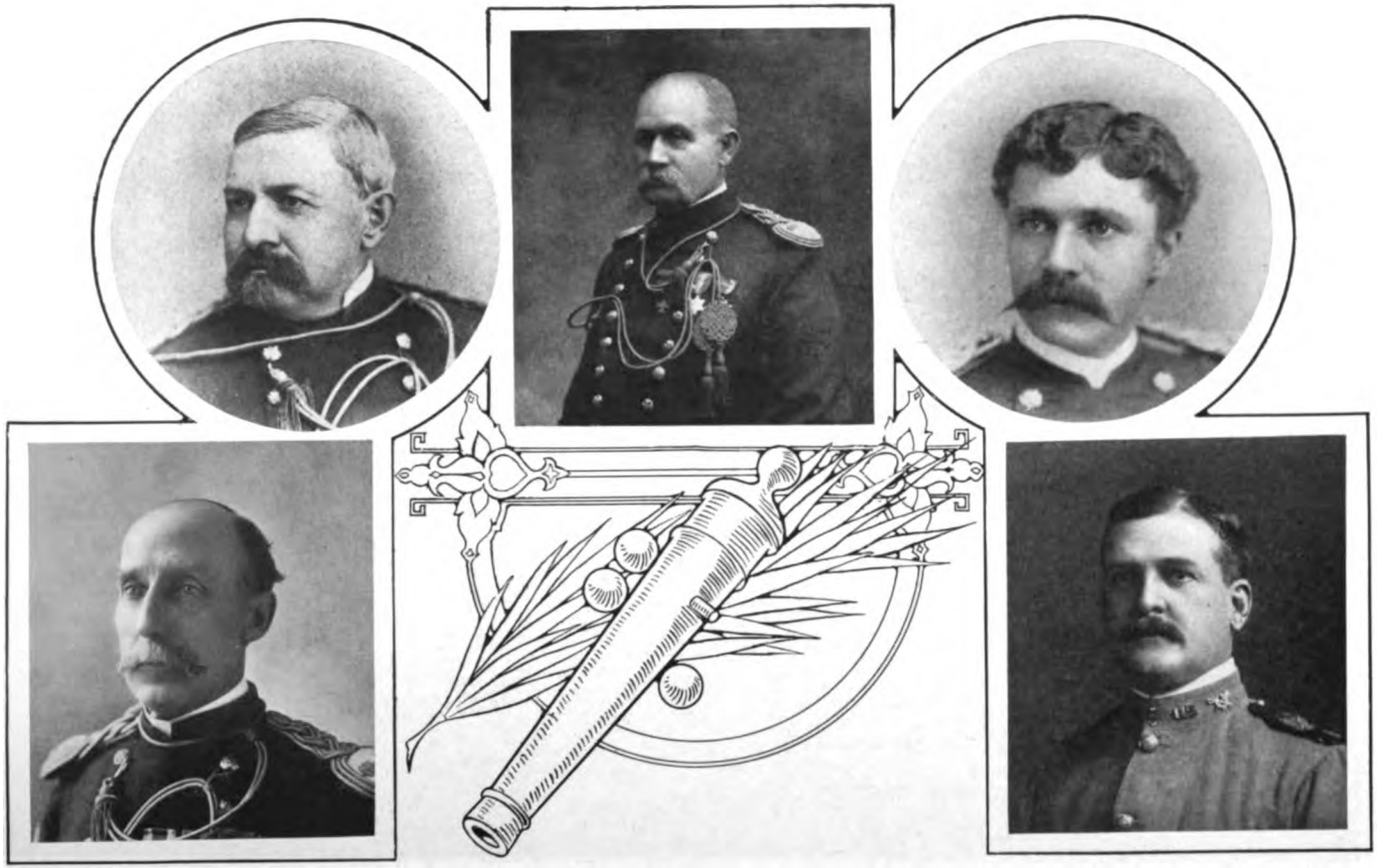
Asa Bird Gardiner

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; First Lieutenant, Thirty-first New York Infantry, May 27, 1861; honorably mustered out August 7, 1861; Captain, Twenty-second New York State Militia, May 1, 1862; honorably mustered out September 6, 1862; Captain, Twenty-second New York State Militia, June 18, 1863; honorably mustered out July 24, 1863; First Lieutenant G. R. C., February 11, 1865; regimental Adjutant, Eleventh G. R. C. May 29, 1865, to August 13, 1866; Brevet Captain of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; honorably mustered out August 13, 1866; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 22, 1866; First Lieutenant February 14, 1868; transferred to First Artillery April 23, 1869; Major and Judge Advocate August 18, 1873; retired September 8, 1888.

Robert S. Garnett

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1837; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fourth Artillery, July 1, 1841; Second Lieutenant January 31, 1842; First Lieutenant August 18, 1846; transferred to Seventh Infantry August 31, 1848; Captain March 9, 1851; Captain, First Cavalry, March 3, 1855; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 27, 1855; Brevet Captain, September 13, 1846, for gallant conduct in the several conflicts at Monterey, Mexico, and Major, February 23, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Buena Vista, Mexico; resigned April 30, 1861; Brigadier-General, Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65; killed July 13, 1861, in action at Carrick's Ford, Virginia.

Digitized by Google



William T. Gentry,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

William H. Boyle,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

George Palmer,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Morris C. Foote,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Major, Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Frank L. Dodds,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

WILLIAM T. GENTRY

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1852; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant August 1, 1856; First Lieutenant, Seventeenth Infantry, 1861; Captain October 24, 1861; unassigned May 27, 1869; assigned to Ninteenth Infantry February 15, 1870; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 20, 1879; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-fifth Infantry, April 14, 1884; Brevet Major, July 6, 1864, for gallant services at the crossing of the North Anna, and during the campaign before Richmond, Virginia, and Lieutenant-Colonel April 1, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service at the battle of Five Forks, Virginia; died June 28, 1885.

EASTON R. GIBSON

Born in Missouri. Appointed from Missouri; Cadet Military Academy June 21, 1893, to June 25, 1895; private and Corporal, Company D, Twentieth Infantry, August 28, 1897, to September 1, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 9, 1898; accepted September 1, 1898; First Lieutenant March 16, 1899; Captain, Thirteenth Infantry, June 8, 1904.

GEORGE P. GRIFFITH

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, November 29, 1865; resigned July 1, 1877.

PRESLEY N. GUTHRIE

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Captain of Infantry February 16, 1847; assigned to Eleventh Infantry April 9, 1847; Brevet Major, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; honorably mustered out July 20, 1848; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; died December 29, 1857.

JOSIAH CARVILLE HALL

Born in Maryland. Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, January 8, 1799; honorably discharged June 15, 1800.

HAROLD HAMMOND

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1894; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1898; First Lieutenant March 2, 1899; Captain, Ninteenth Infantry, October 21, 1902; transferred to Twenty-third Infantry July 3, 1903; paymaster (by detail act February 2, 1901) November 21, 1907.

Digitized by Google



Frank R. Lang,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Edward A. Bumpus,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Harold Hammond,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Louis B. Lawton,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

John B. Schoeffel,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

JAMES P. HARDENBURGH

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from California; Second Lieutenant, Second Cavalry, June 8, 1865; honorably mustered out June 2, 1866; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 5, 1866; First Lieutenant July 28, 1866; honorably discharged September 27, 1870, at his own request.

JOHN H. HARDIE

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; Private, Company I, Seventy-ninth New York Infantry, May 27 to October 16, 1861; Private, Company A, Ninth Infantry, September 16, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 28, 1863; First Lieutenant, April 20, 1864; mustered out December 31, 1870; died August 12, 1873.

CHARLES G. HARKER

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1854; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, July 1, 1858; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 15, 1858; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Captain October 24, 1861; Colonel, Sixty-fifth Ohio Infantry, November 11, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers September 20, 1863; killed June 27, 1864, at the battle of Kennesaw Mountain, Virginia.

FRANK S. HARLOW

Born in Vermont. Appointed from Vermont; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1879; transferred to First Artillery August 11, 1879; First Lieutenant July 11, 1886; Captain March 2, 1899; Major, Artillery Corps, April 1, 1904; died August 11, 1906.

GEORGE W. HARRIS

Born in Indiana. Appointed from the army; Private, Companies F and K, Eleventh Infantry, and second class and first class private and Corporal, Signal Corps, July 18, 1896, to July 17, 1899; first class Private and Corporal, Signal Corps, September 17, 1899, to October 9, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted October 10, 1901; First Lieutenant, First Infantry, February 5, 1906; first class private, Signal Corps volunteers, September 14, 1899, to October 16, 1899.

THOMAS HARRISON

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-first Infantry, May 15, 1812; First Lieutenant

Digitized by Google

March 20, 1813; Captain August 15, 1813; transferred to Forty-second Infantry June 10, 1814; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; M. F. K. Ordnance Department, December 25, 1817; resigned March 28, 1826.

BENJAMIN M. HARTSHORNE, JR.

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1891, to January 16, 1892; and from June 18, 1892, to June 12, 1896; additional Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1896; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-third Infantry, January 6, 1897; transferred to Tenth Infantry February 4, 1897; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 7, 1899; killed January 2, 1902.

EDWIN J. HARVIE

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant, December 29, 1857; resigned March 15, 1861; Colonel and Inspector-General, Confederate States of America, war of 61–65.

LEONARD HAY

Born in Indiana. Appointed from the army; Private, Company D, Third Battalion, Fifteenth Infantry, June 18 to July 11, 1864; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 2, 1864; First Lieutenant September 29, 1864; regimental Adjutant July 1, 1865, to March 11, 1878; Captain March 11, 1878; retired June 15, 1891.

WILLIAM E. HOFMAN

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Illinois; First Lieutenant, Ninety-eighth Illinois Infantry, September 3, 1862; Captain May 1, 1863; honorably mustered out June 27, 1865; First Lieutenant, Thirty-first Infantry, June 1, 1867; unassigned May 15, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry May 4, 1870; Captain February 3, 1885; retired September 28, 1889.

EDWARD HOPPY

Born in Germany. Appointed from New York; Private, Battery B, Second Artillery and Company E, Eighth Infantry, May 31, 1854, to May 31, 1859; private, Battery B, Second Artillery, June 11, 1859, to February 24, 1862; Second Lieutenant,V. R. C., July 23. 1863; Brevet First Lieutenant and Captain Volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant service in the battle of Bull Run, Virginia, and for faithful and meritorious service during the war; honorably mustered out December 26,

Digitized by Google

1866; Second Lieutenant, Forty-fourth Infantry, July 28, 1866; unassigned May 27, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry, August 3, 1870; First Lieutenant September 15, 1871; retired November 8, 1871; Brevet First Lieutenant, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the first battle of Bull Run, Virginia.

ALFRED L. HOUGH

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Sergeant, Company F, Seventeenth Pennsylvania Infantry, April 17 to June 29, 1861; Captain, Nineteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; transferred to Twenty-eighth Infantry September 1, 1866; unassigned March 31, 1869; assigned to Thirteenth Infantry April 16, 1870; Major, Twenty-second Infantry, February 18, 1874; Lieutenant-Colonel, Sixteenth Infantry, February 20, 1882; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, August 21, 1888; retired April 23, 1890; Brevet Major, September 20, 1863; for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chickamauga, Georgia; Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for faithful service in connection with the mustering of troops, and Colonel, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war.

DOUGLAS A. HOWARD

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy October 3, 1874; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 14, 1878; transferred to Third Artillery June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant, Ordnance Department, April 17, 1883; accepted April 18, 1883; retired with rank as Captain June 14, 1892.

JOHN C. HOWARD

Born in District of Columbia. Appointed from Texas; First Lieutenant of Infantry March 17, 1847; assigned to Twelfth Infantry April 19, 1847; honorably mustered out July 25, 1848; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 28, 1855; resigned September 6, 1861; died December 23, 1885.

HARRY S. HOWLAND

Born in Sweden. Appointed from Illinois; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-third Infantry, September 9, 1898; accepted September 13, 1898; First Lieutenant, Thirteenth Infantry, September 23, 1899; transferred to Twenty-third Infantry March 30, 1903; Captain, Ninth Infantry, 1906; transferred to Twenty-sixth Infantry September 19, 1907; Major, Philippine Scouts, June 30, 1906.

Digitized by Google

William B. Hughes

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Tennessee; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1852; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 30, 1856; First Lieutenant April 1, 1861; Captain, Assistant Quartermaster, February 19, 1863; Major, Quartermaster, May 29, 1876; Lieutenant-Colonel, duputy Quartermaster-General, February 15, 1889; died September 22, 1896.

Abraham F. Hull

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Captain, Twenty-third Infantry, April 14, 1812; transferred to Ninth Infantry April 15, 1813; killed July 25, 1814, in the battle of Niagara Falls, Upper Canada.

Jared Ingersoll

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; Captain April 16, 1813; resigned October 31, 1814.

Robert J. C. Irvine

Born in Canada. Appointed from Georgia; Second Lieutenant, Eleventh Infantry, September 2, 1879; accepted September 9, 1879; First Lieutenant August 24, 1886; Captain June 8, 1894; Major, Ninth Infantry, February 28, 1901; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-first Infantry, March 3, 1906; retired October 3, 1906.

George W. Jacobs

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Ninth Infantry, January 8, 1813, to August, 1814; Ensign, Ninth Infantry, July 12, 1814; Third Lieutenant July 20, 1814; Second Lieutenant September 1, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 17, 1815; resigned December 1, 1815; died October 2, 1828.

Joseph K. Jacobs

Born in Vermont. Appointed from army; Private and Sergeant, Ninth Infantry, January 8, 1813, to July, 1814; Ensign, Ninth Infantry, July 12, 1814; Second Lieutenant September 1, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 16, 1815; resigned September 1, 1815.

Digitized by Google

LORENZO JOHNSON

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Connecticut; Captain of infantry February 22, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; resigned December 4, 1847.

FRANK B. JONES

Born in Mississippi. Appointed from Mississippi; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant January 1, 1888; Captain May 1, 1896; transferred to Seventeenth Infantry July 20, 1901; Major, Ninth Infantry, July 26, 1901; Lieutenant-Colonel, Nineteenth Infantry, October 4, 1907.

WILLIAM H. JORDAN

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1855; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, July 1, 1860; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1861; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861; Major, Eighth California Infantry, February 23, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service October 24, 1865; Captain, Ninth Infantry, December 31, 1862; Major, Third Infantry, May 19, 1881; Lieutenant-Colonel April 19, 1886; Colonel, Nineteenth Infantry, United States Army, November 1, 1891; retired March 23, 1892; Brevet Captain, June 27, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gaines' Mill, Virginia

JOSEPH KARGE

Born in Germany. Appointed from New Jersey; Lieutenant-Colonel, First New Jersey Cavalry, October 14, 1861; resigned December 22, 1862; Colonel, Second New Jersey Cavalry, September 2, 1863; Brevet Brigadier-General of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; honorably mustered out November 1, 1865; First Lieutenant, Eighth Cavalry, June 1, 1867; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 1, 1870; unassigned May 4, 1870; honorably mustered out January 1, 1871.

JOHN H. KING

Born in Michigan. Appointed from Michigan; Second Lieutenant, First Infantry, September 2, 1837; First Lieutenant March 2, 1839; Captain October 31, 1846; Major, Fifteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers December 29, 1862; honorably mustered out of volunteer service January 15, 1866; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourteenth Infantry, June 1, 1863; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, July 30,

Digitized by Google

1865; retired February 20, 1882; Brevet Colonel, September 20, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chickamauga, Georgia; Brigadier-General March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Ruff's Station, Georgia; Major-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the field during the war, and Major-General of volunteers May 31, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war; died September 13, 1888.

Jacob Kline

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; First Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, September 9, 1861; accepted September 13, 1861; Captain September 30, 1864; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry September 21, 1866; transferred to Eighteenth Infantry April 26, 1869; Major, Twenty-fourth Infantry, October 6, 1887; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, March 23, 1892; Colonel, Twenty-first Infantry, April 30, 1897; Brigadier-General January 23, 1904; accepted January 23, 1904; retired January 24, 1904; Brevet Major September 1, 1864; Brigadier-General of volunteers May 27, 1898; accepted June 7, 1898; honorably discharged March 15, 1899.

Edgar F. Koehler

Born in Illinois. Appointed from army; Private and Corporal, Company C, Eighth Infantry, November 8, 1891, to November 1, 1894; Second Lieutenant, Eleventh Infantry, October 31, 1894; accepted November 2, 1894; transferred to Ninth Infantry September 27, 1897; First Lieutenant May 12, 1898; killed in action March 4, 1900.

Folliot T. Lally

Born in New York. Appointed from Maine; Major of infantry March 3, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel for gallant and meritorious conduct in several affairs with guerrillas at Paso Ovejas, National Bridge, and Cerro Gordo, Mexico, August 10, 12, and 15, 1847; honorably mustered out August 26, 1848.

Frank R. Lang

Born in Maine. Appointed from Maine; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; accepted April 17, 1899; First Lieutenant, Twenty-seventh Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 20, 1901; Captain, Second Infantry, March 14, 1908; Sergeant-

Digitized by Google

Major, First Maine Infantry, May 13 to July 4, 1898; Second Lieutenant, First Maine Infantry, July 5, 1898; honorably mustered out November 12, 1898.

LOUIS B. LAWTON

Born in Iowa. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy June 15, 1889; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1893; First Lieutenant April 26, 1898; Captain, Twenty-sixth Infantry, February 2, 1901; Major, Judge-Advocate, January 5, 1903; retired January 27, 1903.

SIMON LEARNED

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; died November 16, 1817.

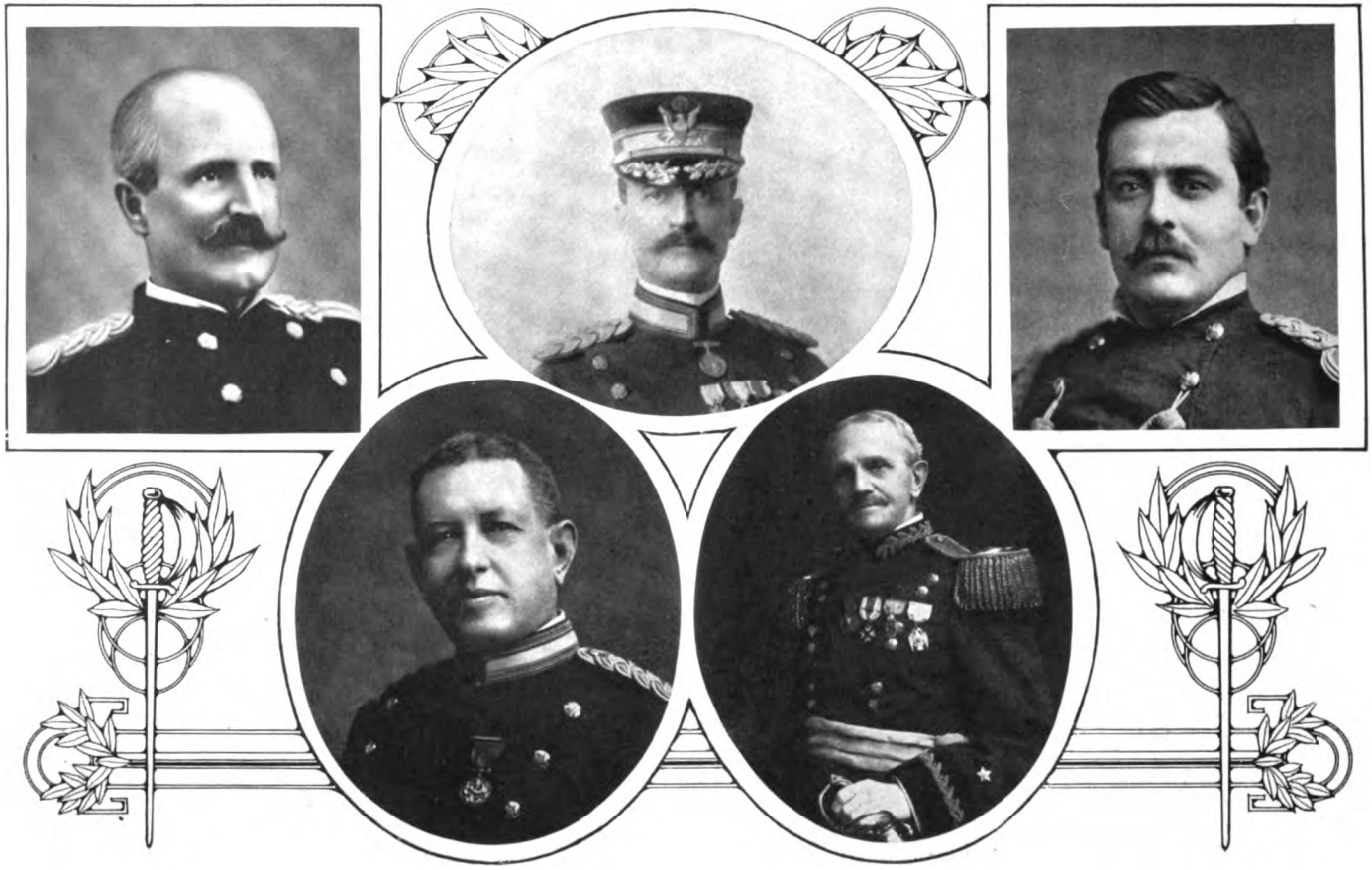
HENRY LEAVENWORTH

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from New York; Captain, Twenty-fifth Infantry, April 25, 1812; Major, Ninth Infantry, August 15, 1813; transferred to Second Infantry May 17, 1815; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fifth Infantry, February 10, 1818; transferred to Sixth Infantry October 1, 1821; Colonel, Third Infantry, December 16, 1825; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, July 15, 1814, for distinguished service at the battle of Chippewa, Upper Canada; Colonel, July 25, 1814, for distinguished service at Niagara Falls, and Brigadier-General, July 25, 1824, for 10 years' faithful service in one grade; died July 21, 1834.

JESSE M. LEE

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Private, Company B, and Commissary-Sergeant, Fifty-ninth Indiana Infantry, November 13, 1861, to October 13, 1862; Second Lieutenant, Fifty-ninth Indiana Infantry, October 13, 1862; First Lieutenant February 14, 1863; Captain August 11, 1863; honorably mustered out July 17, 1865; Captain, Thirty-eighth United States Colored Infantry, August 23, 1865; honorably mustered out January 25, 1867; Second Lieutenant, Thirty-ninth Infantry, July 28, 1866; First Lieutenant January 7, 1867; regimental Adjutant January 1 to April 20, 1869; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry April 20, 1869; regimental Adjutant April 20 to April 24, 1869; unassigned April 24, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry December 31, 1870; regimental Adjutant March 11, 1878, to May 1, 1879; Captain May 1, 1879; Major April 26, 1898; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry August 7, 1900; Lieutenant-Colonel, Sixth Infantry, October 9, 1900; Colonel,

Digitized by Google



Charles M. Rockefeller,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Arthur W. Yates,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Jesse M. Lee,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Major,
Ninth Infantry.
(Photo, 1877.)

Frederick L. Palmer,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Daingerfield Parker,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Thirtieth Infantry, November 8, 1901; Brigadier-General June 17, 1902; accepted June 28, 1902; Major-General September 18, 1906; accepted September 20, 1906; retired January 2, 1907; Colonel, Tenth United States Infantry, May 31, 1898; accepted June 13, 1898; honorably discharged July 8, 1898.

LOUIS H. LEWIS

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1890; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 2, 1895; killed July 1, 1898, in action.

EMERSON H. LISCUM

Born in Vermont. Appointed from the army; Corporal, Company H, First Vermont Infantry, May 2, 1861; discharged August 15, 1861; private, Corporal, Sergeant, and First Sergeant, Companies E and A, Second Battalion, Twelfth Infantry, February 1, 1862, to March 22, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, February 19, 1863; accepted March 22, 1863; First Lieutenant May 4, 1863; transferred to Thirtieth Infantry September 21, 1866; Captain, Forty-fifth Infantry (declined July 28, 1866); Captain, Twenty-fifth Infantry, July 28, 1866; accepted March 26, 1867; unassigned April 26, 1869; assigned to Nineteenth Infantry July 5, 1870; Major, Twenty-second Infantry, May 4, 1892; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-fourth Infantry, May 23, 1896; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, April 25, 1899; killed at Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900; Brevet Captain, August 1, 1864, for gallant services in the battle of Bethesda Church, and during the campaign before Richmond, Virginia; Brigadier-General of volunteers July 12, 1898; accepted August 1, 1898; honorably discharged December 31, 1898.

SAMUEL H. LODER

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1873; additional Second Lieutenant, June 15, 1877; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, August 2, 1877; died June 30, 1879.

JOHN C. LONG

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Second Lieutenant, Nineteenth Illinois Infantry, June 17 to August 31, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 6, 1861; dismissed November 25, 1862; First Lieutenant and Adjutant, One Hundred and Fortieth Illinois Infantry, September 1, 1865; Brevet Captain, volunteers, February 15, 1866, for faithful service; honorably mustered out January 20, 1866.

Digitized by Google

HOWARD K. LOUGHRY

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Cadet Military Academy June 11, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1906; First Lieutenant, Coast Artillery Corps, July 9, 1907; accepted July 27, 1907; Private and Corporal, Company I, One Hundred and Sixty-first, Indiana Infantry, July 30, 1898, to April 30, 1899.

P. LUGENBEEL

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1835; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July 1, 1840; Second Lieutenant September 22, 1840; First Lieutenant June 29, 1846; regimental Adjutant February 1, 1847, to April 15, 1855; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Major, Nineteenth Infantry, December 31, 1862; Lieutenant-Colonel June 25, 1867; transferred to First Infantry March 15, 1869; Colonel, Fifth Infantry, September 15, 1880; retired February 6, 1882; Brevet Captain, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct at the battle of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico, and Major, September 13, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; died March 18, 1886.

THOMAS S. MCCALEB

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1871; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 16, 1875; First Lieutenant March 4, 1883; Captain April 22, 1892; transferred to Twenty-third Infantry June 20, 1900; Major, Sixth Infantry, December 5, 1900; transferred to Thirtieth Infantry June 26, 1902; retired December 5, 1902.

JAMES M. MCCARTY

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 16, 1881; wholly retired July 13, 1885.

ROBERT B. MCCONNELL

Born in Iowa. Appointed from Nebraska; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted August 10, 1901; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 8, 1904; died September 12, 1905; Sergeant and First Sergeant, Company H, First Nebraska Infantry, May 10, 1898, to June 12, 1899; Second Lieutenant, First Nebraska Infantry, June 13, 1899; honorably mustered out August 23, 1899; Private and First Sergeant, Company B, Thirty-ninth Infantry, Octo-

Digitized by Google

ber 4, 1899, to September 25, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Thirty-ninth United States Infantry, September 20, 1900; accepted September 26, 1900; honorably mustered out May 6, 1901.

GIRARD L. MCENTEE, JR.

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted July 4, 1901; First Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, March 23, 1906.

DAVID B. MCKIBBIN

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1846, to October 31, 1848; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant March 1, 1861; Captain, Fourteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Colonel, One Hundred and Fifty-eighth Pennsylvania Infantry, November 28, 1862; honorably mustered out of volunteer service August 28, 1863; Colonel, Two Hundred and Fourteenth Pennsylvania Infantry, April 14, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service April 30, 1866; transferred from Fourteenth to Thirty-third Infantry September 14, 1866; Major, Tenth Infantry, September 15, 1867; unassigned March 15, 1869; assigned to Tenth Cavalry December 31, 1870; retired May 31, 1875; Brevet Major, August 1, 1864, for gallant service in the battle of North Anna, Virginia; Lieutenant-Colonel, August 1, 1864, for gallant service in the battle of Bethesda Church, Virginia; Colonel, Brigadier-General, and Brigadier-General of volunteers March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war.

CLAYTON MCMICHAEL

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Second Lieutenant and First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 5, 1861; regimental Quartermaster January 1, 1862, to September 1, 1863; Captain March 4, 1864; Brevet Major, April 2, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service at the capture of Petersburg, Virginia; resigned September 28, 1865.

ALBERT S. MCNUTT

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1877; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 2, 1881; First Lieutenant October 17, 1888; retired January 3, 1895.

JOSEPH G. MARSHALL

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 5, 1861; Cashiered June 25, 1863.

Digitized by Google

SALEM F. MARSH

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1855; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1860; Second Lieutenant Second Infantry, January 19, 1861; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861; Captain November 12, 1861; Brevet Major, December 13, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service at the battle of Fredericksburg, Virginia, and Lieutenant-Colonel, May 3, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service at the battle of Chancellorsville, Virginia, where he was killed May 1, 1863.

JOHN S. MASON

Born in Ohio. Appointed to the Military Academy from Ohio July 1, 1843; Second Lieutenant July 1, 1847; First Lieutenant September 7, 1850; regimental Quartermaster June 27, 1854, to June 1, 1858; Captain, Eleventh Infantry, May 14, 1861; Colonel, Fourth Ohio Infantry, October 3, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers November 29, 1862; honorably mustered out of volunteer service April 30, 1866; Major, Seventeenth Infantry, October 14, 1864; transferred to Thirty-fifth Infantry September 25, 1866; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry March 15, 1869; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourth Infantry, December 11, 1873; transferred to Twentieth Infantry February 25, 1881; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, April 2, 1883; retired August 21, 1888; Brevet Major, September 17, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Antietam, Maryland; Lieutenant-Colonel, December 13, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Fredericksburg, Virginia; Colonel, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war and Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the field during the war.

WINFIELD S. MATSON

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Private, troops C and F Fifth Indiana Cavalry, February 25, 1863, to September 15, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, April 9, 1866; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry September 21, 1866; First Lieutenant December 21, 1866; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; resigned January 1, 1870.

GEORGE MEADE

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1860, to June 21, 1862; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Pennsylvania Cavalry, October 21, 1862, to May 30, 1863; Captain,

Digitized by Google

aide-de-camp volunteers, May 22, 1863; Brevet Major, August 1, 1864 for faithful and meritorious service in the field, and Lieutenant-Colonel of Volunteers, April 1, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services during the operations resulting in the fall of Richmond, Virginia, and the surrender of the insurgent army under General Robert E. Lee; honorably mustered out September 1, 1866; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, November 29, 1865; Captain, Thirty-first Infantry, July 29, 1866; transferred to Twenty-second Infantry May 15, 1869; unassigned October 25, 1870; assigned to First Artillery January 7, 1871; Brevet Major, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service at the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, and Lieutenant-Colonel, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the campaign ending in the surrender of the army of Northern Virginia; resigned October 1, 1874.

ELIJAH H. MERRILL

Born in New Hampshire. Appointed from New Hampshire; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1874; additional Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 14, 1878; Second Lieutenant June 28, 1878; resigned June 1, 1879.

FREDERICK MEARS

Born in New York. Appointed from Illinois; Lieutenant-Colonel First United States Volunteers, October 1, 1861; honorably mustered out November 30, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 17, 1861; Captain August 27, 1863; Major, Twenty-fifth Infantry, April 2, 1883; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourth Infantry, April 24, 1888; Brevet Major, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war; died January 2, 1892.

WILLIS E. MILLS

Born in Michigan. Appointed from the army; Private and Corporal, Company C, Fifth Infantry, and private, Signal Corps, April 8, 1899, to June 29, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted June 30, 1901; First Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, October 30, 1905.

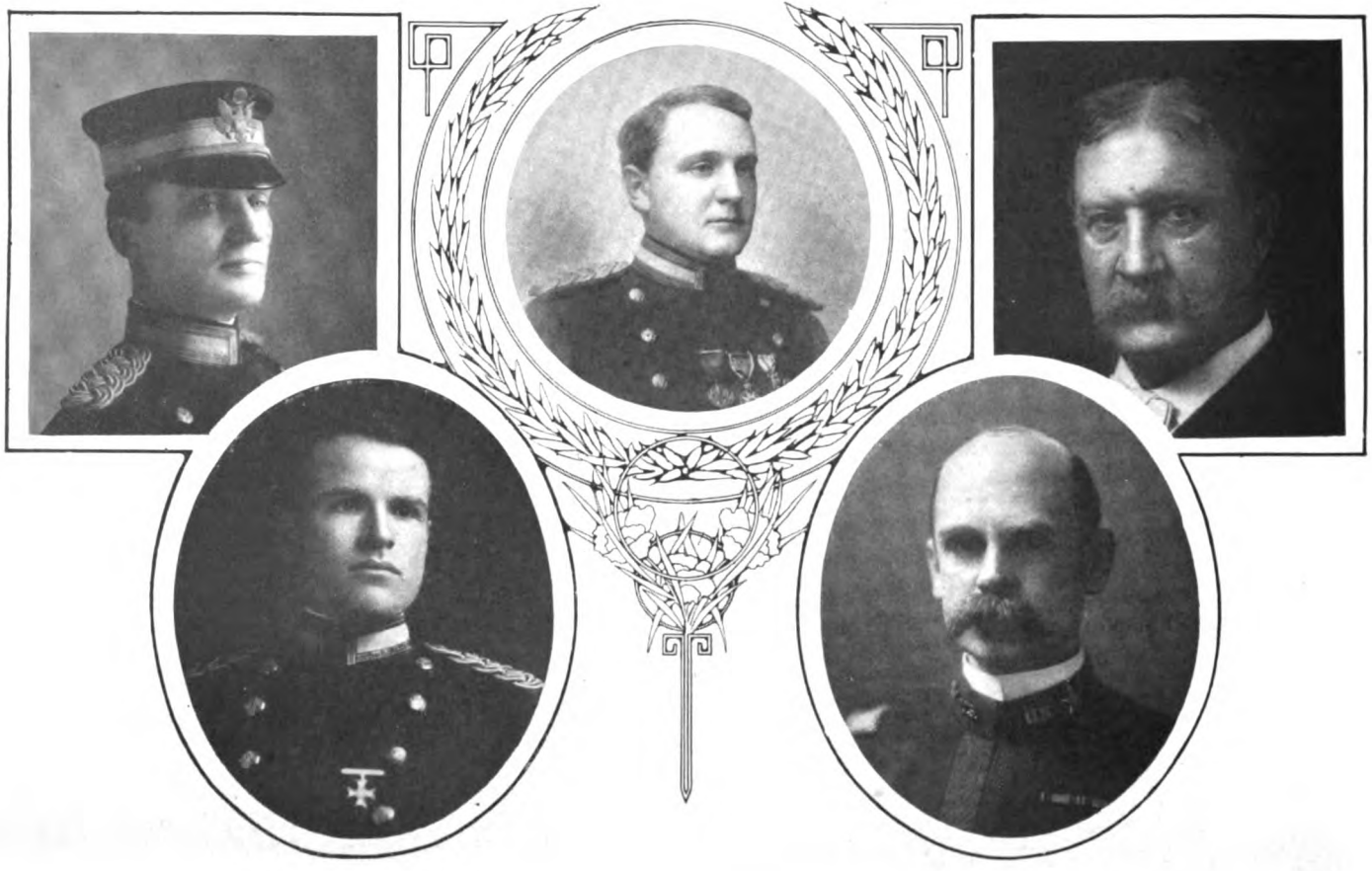
ISRAEL MILLER

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; drowned September 30, 1866.

WILLIAM H. MILLER

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Illinois; Private, Company I, Ninth Indiana Infantry, April 18 to July 29 1861; Sergeant, Company

Digitized by Google



Francis H. Schoeffel,
Second Lieut., First Lieut., Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

J. P. Drouillard,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

William H. Miller,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Girard L. McEntee, Jr.,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Peter C. Harris,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

F, Forty-eighth Indiana Infantry, October 20, 1861; Second Lieutenant January 10, 1863; Captain November 14, 1864; honorably mustered out July 15, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-seventh Infantry, June 18, 1867; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; First Lieutenant July 1, 1877; retired June 28, 1878.

CHRISTOPHER C. MINER

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Connecticut; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant October 2, 1887; dismissed September 30, 1891.

AMBROSE I. MORIARITY

Born in Connecticut. Appointed from Connecticut; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1883; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, June 12, 1887; resigned December 15, 1887; appointed Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, December 21, 1889; accepted January 30, 1890; retired June 6, 1894.

ALFRED MORTON

Born in Maine. Appointed from California; Sergeant, F, and Commissary Sergeant, Second California Cavalry, September 13, 1861, to January 6, 1862; First Lieutenant, Second California Infantry, January 6, 1862; Captain February 14, 1863; Major, Seventh California Infantry, November 25, 1864; honorably mustered out March 17, 1866; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1866; First Lieutenant July 28, 1866; regimental Quartermaster June 1, 1866, to March 20, 1879; Captain March 20, 1879; retired January 16, 1898; Major, retired April 23, 1904.

SAMUEL MUNSON

Born in the East Indies. Appointed from Maine; Sergeant, Company H, Fifth Maine Infantry, May 6, 1861; Second Lieutenant May 27, 1861; honorably mustered out September 4, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninth United States Infantry, August 5, 1861; First Lieutenant December 31, 1862; regimental Quartermaster May 9, 1864, to July 7, 1865; Captain and Acting Quartermaster of volunteers February 27, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service June 27, 1866; Captain, Ninth Infantry, September 28, 1865; died October 2, 1887.

WILLIAM MYERS

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1848; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July 1, 1852; Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, March 27, 1854;

Digitized by Google

Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant May 1, 1857; Captain, Acting Quartermaster, May 17, 1861; Colonel, Additional aide-de-camp, June 14, 1862; to May 31, 1866; Major and Quartermaster January 18, 1867; Lieutenant-Colonel, Deputy Quartermaster-General, January 22, 1881; retired March 15,1883; Brevet Major, Lieutenant-Colonel, Colonel, Brigadier-General, and Brigadier-General of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for faithful, and meritorious service during the war; died November 11, 1887.

William A. Newman

Born in Vermont. Appointed from Vermont; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 9, 1847; Brevet First Lieutenant, August 20, 1847 for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; honorably mustered out August 26, 1848; M. S. K. Ordnance, December 29, 1848; dismissed April 2, 1856; died March 5, 1870.

Ernest P. Newsom

Born in North Carolina. Appointed from Texas; Chaplain February 2, 1901; accepted July 28, 1901; assigned to Ninth Infantry August 7, 1901; transferred to Coast Artillery Corps June 12, 1907.

William F. Norris

Born in Maine. Appointed from Minnesota; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1868; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 1, 1872; First Lieutenant June 22, 1879; resigned June 15, 1881.

Louis M. Nuttman

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy June 17, 1891; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-first Infantry, June 12, 1895; First Lieutenant, Fourteenth Infantry, July 2, 1898; Captain, Twenty-seventh Infantry, February 28, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 18, 1902; Commissary (by detail act, February 2, 1901) December 15, 1906.

Philip A. Owen

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from Alabama; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant August 1, 1857; regimental Adjutant July 15, 1856, to June 25, 1861; Captain June 25, 1861; resigned December 31, 1873.

Digitized by Google

Daingerfield Parker

Born in New York. Appointed from District of Columbia; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 30, 1861; Captain October 20, 1863; Major, Ninth Infantry, April 14, 1884; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twentieth Infantry, May 15, 1889; transferred to Thirteenth Infantry, United States Army, December 10, 1890; Colonel, Eighteenth Infantry, December 26, 1894; retired May 23, 1896; Brigadier-General, retired April 23, 1904. Brevet Major, July 2, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gettysburg, Virginia.

Alpheus T. Palmer

Born in Maine. Appointed from Maine; Second Lieutenant of Infantry, February 23, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; First Lieutenant December 4, 1847; Brevet First Lieutenant, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; honorably mustered out August 26, 1848; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; resigned October 15, 1855; died February 15, 1890.

George Palmer

Born in Wisconsin. Appointed from Wisconsin; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1872; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, June 15, 1876; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 28, 1876; First Lieutenant June 15, 1883; Captain January 16, 1898; Major, Twenty-first Infantry, July 15, 1902.

Loring Palmer

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; First Lieutenant June 26, 1813; Captain July 25, 1814; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, April 18, 1818; dismissed October 2, 1822.

George W. Patten

Born in Rhode Island. Appointed from Rhode Island; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1826; Brevet Second Lieutenant and Second Lieutenant July 1, 1836; First Lieutenant February 13, 1837; Captain June 18, 1846; Major, Ninth Infantry, April 30, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, Second Infantry, June 7, 1862; retired February 17, 1864; Brevet Major, April 18, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the Battle of Cerro Gordo, Mexico; died April 28, 1882.

Digitized by Google

WILLIAM B. PEASE

Born in Connecticut. Private, Company H, Fifteenth Connecticut Infantry, August 11, 1862, to January 5, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Eighth United States Colored Infantry, October 15, 1863; First Lieutenant, December 3, 1865; resigned December 18, 1865; First Lieutenant, Eleventh Infantry, March 7, 1867; unassigned April 14, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry December 15, 1870; regimental Adjutant March 4 to April 2, 1873; Captain April 2, 1883; retired June 15, 1887.

SAMUEL G. PENNEY

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, November 1, 1861; First Lieutenant December 31; 1862; wholly retired November 10, 1867; died February 27, 1869.

DAVID PERRY

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant March 12, 1812; First Lieutenant June 30, 1813; Captain September 1, 1814; transferred to Fifth Infantry May 5, 1815; resigned April 1, 1822.

GEORGE E. PICKETT

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1842; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Eighth Infantry, July 1, 1846; Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, March 3, 1847; transferred to Seventh Infantry July 13, 1847; transferred to Eighth Infantry July 18, 1847; First Lieutenant June 28, 1849; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Brevet First Lieutenant, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; and Captain, September 13, 1847, for gallant conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; resigned June 25, 1861; Major-General Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65; died July 30, 1875.

JOHN PITCHER

Born in Texas. Appointed from District of Columbia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1872; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 15, 1876; transferred to First Cavalry July 28, 1876; First Lieutenant November 27, 1882; Captain July 22, 1892; Major, Sixth Cavalry, December 9, 1901; transferred to Seventh Cavalry April 19, 1907.

Digitized by Google



Alfred Morton,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Thomas B. Burrowes,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Frank H. Albright,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

William B. Pease,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Michael J. Fitzgerald,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

William E. Hoffman,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

EDWIN POLLOCK

Born in Pennsylvania. Private Company F, Twenty-fifth Pennsylvania Infantry, May 2 to July 28, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 5, 1861; First Lieutenant December 31, 1862; regimental Quartermaster September 1, 1863, to April 20, 1864; Captain April 20, 1864; retired February 2, 1885; died February 24, 1885.

WILLIAM H. POWELL

Born in District of Columbia. Appointed from District of Columbia; Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, October 24, 1861; accepted October 25, 1861; First Lieutenant September 16, 1862; Captain February 2, 1865; Major, Twenty-second Infantry, August 5, 1888; Lieutenant-Colonel, Eleventh Infantry, May 4, 1892; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, June 27, 1897; retired April 25, 1899; Private, Fourth Battalion, District of Columbia Militia, April 17, 1861; discharged July 17, 1861; Brevet Captain, September 17, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Antietam, Maryland; Major, April 2, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services in front of Petersburg, Virginia; died November 16, 1901.

PAUL JONES QUATTLEBAUM

Born in South Carolina. Appointed from South Carolina; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1853; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, July 1, 1857; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 31, 1857; resigned June 29, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, Assistant Adjutant-General Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65; died January 4, 1883.

FRANK DEW. RAMSEY

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1881; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 14, 1885; First Lieutenant, Second Infantry, January 25, 1892; transferred to Fourteenth Infantry February 9, 1892; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 3, 1892; Captain March 2, 1899; died January 18, 1906.

NORMAN F. RAMSEY

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Kansas; Cadet Military Academy July 29, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1905; First Lieutenant of ordnance (by detail act, June 25, 1906,) July 1, 1907; private and Corporal, Company E, Twentieth Kansas Infantry, May 10, 1898, to October 20, 1899.

Digitized by Google

TRUEMAN B. RANSOM

Born in Vermont. Appointed from Vermont; Major of infantry February 16, 1847; Colonel March 16, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; killed September 13, 1847, in the storming of Chapultepec, Mexico.

JOHN REED, JR.

Born in Massachusetts. First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 30, 1812; resigned February 15, 1813.

JAMES REGAN

Born in New York. Appointed from army; Musician Company H, Seventh Infantry, June 1, 1858, to June 1, 1863; musician and Sergeant, Company B, General service, March 8, 1864, to December 31, 1866; Second Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, December 1, 1866; First Lieutenant August 12, 1867; unassigned April 26, 1869; assigned to Ninth Infantry December 15, 1870; regimental Quartermaster June 22, 1879, to October 1, 1886; Captain June 15, 1887; Major March 2, 1899; Lieutenant-Colonel, First Infantry, July 26, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry April 11, 1902; Colonel July 29, 1903; died June 25, 1906.

CARL REICHMANN

Born in Germany. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant and First Sergeant, Company I, Twentieth Infantry, December 6, 1881, to August 6, 1884; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, August 4, 1884; accepted August 7, 1884; First Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, June 19, 1891; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 20, 1891; Captain of infantry December 13, 1898; assigned to Seventeenth Infantry January 1, 1899; Major, Twenty-fourth Infantry, November 8, 1907; Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General of volunteers, May 12, 1898; accepted May 30, 1898; vacated December 13, 1898.

HERMAN O. RENALDO

Born in Germany. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, and First Sergeant, Company I, Sixth Infantry, March 28, 1856, to December 21, 1861; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 24, 1861; resigned June 20, 1863.

CHARLES A. REYNOLDS

Born in Maryland. Private, Company F, Maryland Battalion and District of Columbia Infantry, July 23, 1847, to February 6, 1848; Second

Digitized by Google



James Regan,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Major, Lieutenant-Colonel, Colonel
Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant February 20, 1861; Captain, Assistant Quartermaster, November 18, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, Quartermaster, assigned November 1, 1862, to April 22, 1863; Major and Quartermaster March 3, 1875; Lieutenant-Colonel, Deputy Quartermaster-General, April 9, 1885; retired November 11, 1887; Brevet Major and Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war.

OLIN F. RICE

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1856; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 6, 1861; transferred to Sixth Infantry, May 26, 1861; dismissed June 6, 1861; Colonel, Second Alabama Reserves, Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65.

WILDS P. RICHARDSON

Born in Texas. Appointed from Texas; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1880; Second Lieutenant, Eighth Infantry, June 15, 1884; First Lieutenant December 16, 1889; Captain April 26, 1898; Major, Ninth Infantry, April 7, 1904; transferred to Thirteenth Infantry March 31, 1908.

CHARLES F. ROBE

Born in New York. Appointed from Michigan; First Lieutenant, Twenty-ninth Infantry, July 28, 1866; accepted October 31, 1866; unassigned April 25, 1869; assigned to Twenty-fifth Infantry January 31, 1870; Captain January 25, 1872; Major, Fourteenth Infantry, July 5, 1895; Lieutenant-Colonel, Seventeenth Infantry, September 16, 1898; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, July 13, 1900; Brigadier-General July 31, 1903; accepted same day; retired August 1, 1903; First Lieutenant, One Hundred and Forty-seventh New York Volunteers Infantry, September 11, 1862; Captain November 10, 1863; honorably mustered out March 11, 1864; Captain, Veteran Reserve Corps, March 5, 1864; honorably mustered out September 7, 1866.

EDGAR B. ROBERTSON

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1870; Second Lieutenant June 17, 1874; First Lieutenant June 15, 1881; regimental Adjutant June 15, 1883, to July 1, 1887; Captain June 15, 1891; transferred to Sixteenth Infantry August 29, 1899; transferred to Twentieth Infantry October 23, 1899; Major, Fifteenth Infantry, January 12, 1900; transferred to Ninth Infan-

Digitized by Google

try August 7, 1900; Lieutenant-Colonel July 31, 1903; Colonel, October 6, 1906; retired October 25, 1907; Major and Quartermaster June 3, 1898; accepted July 20, 1898; honorably discharged February 5, 1901.

George C. Rockwell

Born in Kansas. Appointed at large; Private, Troops C and I, Third Cavalry, July 30, 1900, to November 11, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted February 4, 1902; transferred to Tenth Infantry September 25, 1902; First Lieutenant, Thirteenth Infantry, February 14, 1907.

Charles M. Rockefeller

Born in New York. Private, Company E, Seventh New York, and Company C, Eighth New York State Militia, April 26 to August 2, 1861; First Lieutenant, One Hundred and Seventy-eighth New York Infantry, October 17, 1863; honorably mustered out April 20, 1866; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 3, 1867; First Lieutenant March 11, 1878; Captain August 15, 1889; Major, Sixth Infantry, March 16, 1899; missing since April 28, 1899; dropped January 1, 1901; medal of honor for most distinguished gallantry in action at Fort Blakely, Alabama, April 9, 1865, when reconnoitering and volunteering the work alone under a heavy fire from the enemy, and obtaining valuable information which was made the basis of orders for the assault that followed, and in the assault with a few followers exposed to the fire of both attack and defense, while serving as First Lieutenant, One Hundred and Seventy-eighth New York volunteers.

William W. Rogers

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Private, Company B, Third Pennsylvania Cavalry, July 23, 1861; Second Lieutenant December 31, 1861; First Lieutenant August 1, 1862; Captain May 1, 1863; honorably mustered out February 16, 1864; Captain, Veteran Reserve Corps, February 6, 1864; Brevet Major of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service, and Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers March 13, 1865, for gallant conduct in the field; honorably mustered out January 13, 1867; First Lieutenant, Forty-fifth Infantry, July 28, 1866; transferred to Fourteenth Infantry July 22, 1869; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 22, 1871; Captain March 27, 1879; retired August 15, 1889; Brevet Captain, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the Battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania.

Digitized by Google

GEORGE B. RUSSELL

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-eighth Massachusetts Infantry, August 30, 1862; First Lieutenant January 1, 1863; Captain April 5, 1863; honorably mustered out September 8, 1864; First Lieutenant, Veteran Reserve Corps, August 25, 1864; Captain September 15, 1864; Brevet Major of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for meritorious service, and Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the siege of Port Hudson, Louisiana; honorably mustered out September 1, 1866; Captain, Forty-fourth Infantry, July 28, 1866; unassigned May 27, 1869; assigned to Seventh Infantry April 7, 1870; transferred to Ninth Infantry 1870; Major, Fifth Infantry, United States Army, April 22, 1892; Lieutenant-Colonel, Fourteenth Infantry March 10, 1896; retired March 25, 1898. Brevet Major, March 2, 1867, for gallant and meritorious service in the assault on Port Hudson, Louisiana.

ALVIN SARGENT

Born in Maine. Appointed from Maine; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1845; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, July 1, 1850; Second Lieutenant April 15, 1851; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; resigned June 7, 1856; died October, 1873.

BARD P. SCHENCK

Born in Maryland. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1883; additional Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, June 12, 1887; Second Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, September 1, 1887; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 3, 1895; wholly retired July 10, 1896.

FRANCIS H. SCHOEPFEL

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy June 16, 1887; Second Lieutenant, Seventeenth Infantry, June 12, 1891; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 10, 1892; First Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, September 16, 1897; transferred to Ninth Infantry November 23, 1897; Captain, Twenty-third Infantry, April 18, 1900; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 20, 1900; transferred to Sixteenth Infantry December 22, 1903; Major, Judge Advocate, December 2, 1903; accepted December 26, 1903; retired December 28, 1903.

Digitized by Google

JOHN B. SCHOEFFEL

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; Private, Company C, Eighteenth Infantry, June 26, 1894, to September 25, 1897; private and Corporal, Company B, Ninth Infantry, December 16, 1897, to July 6, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, June 27, 1898; accepted July 2, 1898; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 27, 1898; First Lieutenant March 2, 1899; Captain, Tenth Infantry, May 25, 1903.

DANIEL E. SHEEHAN

Born in Nebraska. Appointed from army; Private and Corporal, Company G, Fourth Infantry, January 23, 1899, to July 3, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted July 4, 1901; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 22, 1905; transferred to Sixteenth Infantry February 15, 1906; private, Company C, First Illinois Infantry, May 13, 1898, to November 13, 1898.

CHARLES H. SHEPARD

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Private, Company G and Commissary Sergeant, Seventh New York Cavalry, August 26, 1862, to May 12, 1863; Second Lieutenant, Seventh New York Cavalry, May 12, 1863; First Lieutenant June 5, 1865; honorably mustered out November 29, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 23, 1866; First Lieutenant July 28, 1866; resigned September 15, 1871.

CALEB C. SIBLEY

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1825; Brevet Second Lieutenant, and Second Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, July 1, 1829; First Lieutenant October 31, 1836; regimental Adjutant August 4, 1836, to September 22, 1840; Captain September 22, 1840; Major, Third Infantry, January 19, 1859; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, October 9, 1861; Colonel, Sixteenth Infantry, April 16, 1864; retired February 22, 1869; Brevet Brigadier-General, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war; died February 19, 1875.

JOHN M. SIGWORTH

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from army; Private and Corporal, Battery L, First Artillery, January 6, 1886, to March 7, 1889; Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, February 11, 1889; accepted March 8, 1889;

Digitized by Google



William H. Jordan,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Clayton McMichael,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Henry Black,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Frederick T. Dent,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Caleb C. Sibley,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.
(Copy by Hegemann.)

Digitized by Google

First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 15, 1896; Captain June 2, 1899; paymaster (by detail act, February 2, 1901,) November 21, 1903; assigned to Twenty-third Infantry November 21, 1907.

George S. Simonds

Born in Iowa. Appointed from Iowa; Cadet Military Academy June 15, 1895; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, February 15, 1899; First Lieutenant, Fourteenth Infantry, July 2, 1900; transferred to Eleventh Infantry August 11, 1900; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 18, 1900; transferred to Twenty-second Infantry May 21, 1901; Captain July 13, 1906.

Wendell L. Simpson

Born in New York. Appointed from Michigan; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1880; Second Lieutenant, Third Cavalry, June 15, 1884; transferred to Twenty-fourth Infantry January 4, 1887; First Lieutenant, Twentieth Infantry, April 20, 1891; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 20, 1891; transferred to Fourteenth Infantry September 16, 1898; Captain of Infantry September 17, 1898; assigned to Sixth Infantry January 1, 1899; Quartermaster (by detail act, February 2, 1901,) March 9, 1905; Major, Nineteenth Infantry, March 9, 1907.

Jennifer H. Smallwood

Born in Florida. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy October 7, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Second Cavalry, June 16, 1869; transferred to Ninth Infantry March 17, 1873; resigned December 18, 1873.

Allen Smith, Jr.

Born in South Dakota. Appointed from Washington; Corporal, Company I, First Washington Infantry, May 10, 1898, to April 26, 1899; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; accepted April 27, 1899; First Lieutenant, Third Infantry, February 2, 1901.

Kneeland S. Snow

Born in Ohio. Appointed from the army; Private, Hospital Corps, January 27, 1900, to July 8, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted July 9, 1901; First Lieutenant June 30, 1906; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry June 21, 1907.

Digitized by Google

CHARLES J. SPRAGUE

Born in Maine. Appointed from California; Cadet Military Academy July 1 to December 8, 1838, and from September 1, 1839, to February 3, 1840; First Lieutenant of Infantry March 24, 1847; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 9, 1847; regimental Adjutant June to September 21, 1847; Captain October 9, 1847; Brevet Captain, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; honorably mustered out August 26, 1848; additional paymaster volunteers August 17, 1861, to November 21, 1867; Major and paymaster, United States Army, January 17, 1867; retired April 12, 1887; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war.

JAMES McB. STEMBEL

Born in Ohio. Appointed from New York; Cadet Naval Academy September 26, 1862, to March 18, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-seventh Infantry, October 19, 1867; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 14, 1869; First Lieutenant March 27, 1879; regimental Quartermaster November 28, 1886, to July 1, 1887; retired with rank of Captain November 4, 1890.

EDWARD J. STEPTOE

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1833; Second Lieutenant, Third Artillery, July 1, 1837; First Lieutenant July 9, 1838; Captain March 3, 1847; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Lieutenant-Colonel, Tenth Infantry, September 9, 1861; Brevet Major, April 18, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Cerro Gordo, Mexico, and Lieutenant-Colonel, September 13, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Chapultepec, Mexico; resigned November 1, 1861; died April 1, 1865.

CHARLES P. STIVERS

Born in Louisiana.. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant August 30, 1887; resigned October 17, 1888.

WALTER R. STOLL

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersey; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1877; Additional Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 11, 1881; Second Lieutenant June 15, 1881; resigned June 1, 1885.

Digitized by Google

ALEXANDER THOMAS

Born in New York. Appointed from the army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Battery B, Fourth Artillery, September 4, 1880, to July 9, 1883; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 3, 1883; resigned March 31, 1884.

GEORGE P. THYNG

Born in New Hampshire. Appointed from New Hampshire; Second Lieutenant, First New Hampshire Artillery, September 1, 1863; First Lieutenant February 9, 1864; Captain October 18, 1864; honorably mustered out September 11, 1865; Second Lieutenant, First Artillery, February 23, 1866; First Lieutenant May 1, 1866; transferred to Ninth Infantry April 3, 1869; unassigned June 14, 1869; honorably discharged September 10, 1870, at his own request.

DAVID S. TOWNSEND

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 6, 1812; Captain May 13, 1813; Major, Assistant Adjutant-General July 27, 1814; honorably discharged June 15, 1815; paymaster, Battalion Corps Artillery, April 29, 1816; retained as Major and paymaster June 1, 1821; died January 28, 1853.

EDWIN F. TOWNSEND

Born in New York. Appointed from Wisconsin; Cadet Military Academy September 1, 1850; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Third Artillery, July 1, 1854; Second Lieutenant January 31, 1855; resigned March 11, 1856; First Lieutenant, Fourteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; regimental Adjutant July 8 to August 27, 1861; Captain, Sixteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry September 21, 1866; Major, Twenty-seventh Infantry, June 22, 1868; transferred to Ninth Infantry March 15, 1869; Lieutenant-Colonel, Eleventh Infantry, March 27, 1879; Colonel, Twelfth Infantry, October 13, 1886; Brevet Major, April 7, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Shiloh Tennessee, and Lieutenant-Colonel, March 13, 1865, for continued and faithful service in the Ordnance Department; retired October 1, 1895.

FREDERICK TOWNSEND

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Colonel, Third New York Infantry, May 3, 1861; Major, Eighteenth Infantry, May 14, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, April 20, 1864; Brevet Lieutenant-

Digitized by Google

Colonel, December 31, 1862, for gallant and meritorious service at the Battle of Murfreesboro, Tennessee; Colonel, March 30, 1865, for meritorious and faithful service in the recruitment of the Army of the United States, and Brigadier-General, March 30, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service during the war; resigned March 26, 1868.

CLEMENT A. TROTT

Born in Wisconsin. Appointed from Wisconsin; Cadet Military Academy June 15, 1895; Second Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, February 15, 1899; First Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, September 15, 1900; Captain, Ninth Infantry, August 20, 1906; transferred to Fifth Infantry April 16, 1907.

JOHN F. TROUT

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Private, Company A, Tenth Pennsylvania Infantry, April 24 to July 31, 1861; First Sergeant, Company B, Forty-fifth Pennsylvania Infantry, September 24, 1861; Captain September 4, 1862; Major September 27, 1864; honorably mustered out July 17, 1865; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, May 15, 1866; First Lieutenant November 10, 1867; dismissed January 2, 1869; First Lieutenant of Infantry March 25, 1870, to rank from November 10, 1867; assigned to Twenty-third Infantry December 31, 1870; retired March 15, 1883.

STEPHEN TURNER

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 12, 1812; First Lieutenant May 13, 1813; killed July 25, 1814, in battle of Niagara Falls, Upper Canada.

LAURENCE D. TYSON

Born in North Carolina. Appointed from North Carolina; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1879; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry. June 13, 1883; First Lieutenant August 15, 1889; resigned April 6, 1896.

JOSEPH UPDEGRAFF

Born in Virginia. Appointed from the army; Private, Battery E, Third Artillery, and Corporal and Sergeant, Company H, Fifth Infantry, March 9, 1846, to June 28, 1848; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fifth infantry, June 28, 1848; Second Lieutenant October 7, 1848; First Lieutenant December 31, 1854; Captain February 25, 1861; Major Ninth Infantry, December 1, 1863; died June 19, 1866.

Digitized by Google

JOHN J. UPHAM

Born in Delaware. Appointed from Wisconsin; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1854; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 1, 1859; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, December 2, 1859; First Lieutenant May 4, 1861; regimental Adjutant July 1 to September 9, 1861; Captain September 9, 1861; transferred to Sixth Cavalry December 31, 1870; Major, Fifth Cavalry, August 1, 1874; Lieutenant-Colonel, Third Cavalry, October 29, 1888; Colonel, Eighth Cavalry, January 14, 1892; retired January 30, 1892. Brevet Major, July 2, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania;

GEORGE W. VANDERBILT

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1855; Brevet Second Lieutenant July 11, 1860; Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, February 22, 1861; First Lieutenant June 14, 1861; Captain, additional aid-de-camp, April 17, 1862; Captain, Tenth Infantry, September 19, 1863; died January 1, 1864.

JAMES VAN VOAST

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1848; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Third Artillery, July 1, 1852; Second Lieutenant August 22, 1853; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; regimental Quartermaster July 4, 1855, to June 11, 1858; Captain March 1, 1861; Major, Eighteenth Infantry, December 29, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, Sixteenth Infantry, August 16, 1871; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, February 20, 1882; retired April 2, 1883.

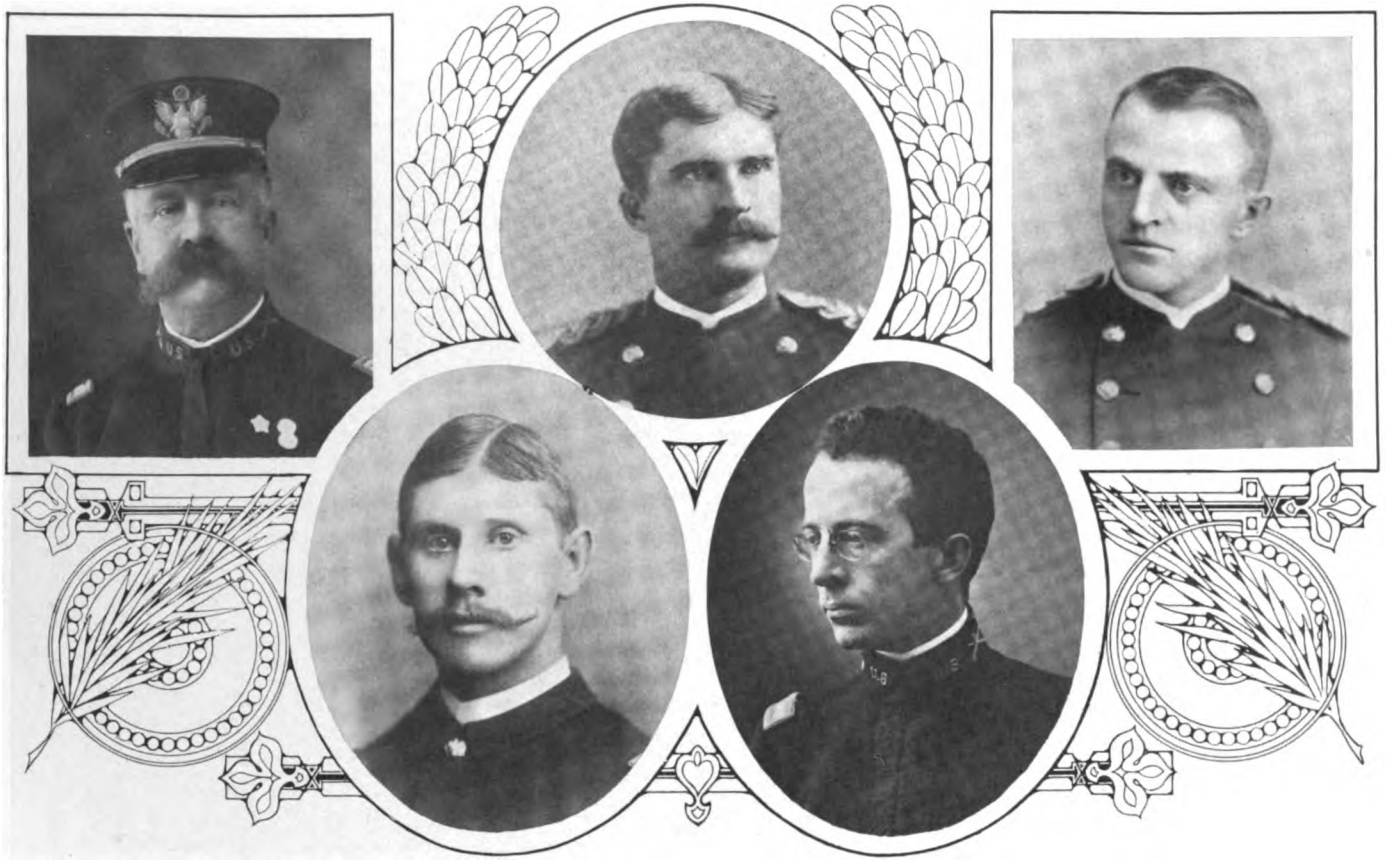
WILLIAM H. WALDRON

Born in West Virginia. Quartermaster-Sergeant and First Sergeant, Company E, Second West Virginia Infantry, June 30, 1898, to April 10, 1899; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; accepted May 28, 1899; First Lieutenant, Twenty-ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant, Signal Corps (by detail act, March 2, 1903,), September 17, 1907; Captain, Twenty-third Infantry, April 23, 1908.

EDWARD D. WAITE

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, December 2, 1861; Second Lieutenant March 9, 1863; regimental Adjutant May 1, 1864, to July 1, 1865; lost at sea July 30, 1865.

Digitized by Google



Charles A. Coolidge,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Lawrence D. Tyson,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Walter D. Stoll,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Albert S. McMutt,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Robert D. Clark,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

GEORGE W. WALKER

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Iowa; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 19, 1862; First Lieutenant July 25, 1863; Captain February 7, 1867; died September 10, 1867.

HENRY L. WEBB

Born in New York. Appointed from Illinois; Captain, Second Illinois Volunteers, June 30, 1846; resigned November 13, 1846; Lieutenant-Colonel of infantry March 3, 1847; assigned to Sixteenth Infantry April 9, 1847; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, May 23, 1848; honorably mustered out August 8, 1848.

NATHANIEL WICKLIFFE

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 30, 1855; First Lieutenant March 15, 1861; resigned May 17, 1861; Lieutenant-Colonel, Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65.

HENRY W. WHARTON

Born in District of Columbia. Appointed from Alabama; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, October 2, 1837; First Lieutenant August 11, 1838; Captain February 16, 1847; Major, Ninth Infantry, September 9, 1861; resigned from volunteer service October 6, 1862; Colonel, Second Delaware Infantry, July 13, 1861; retired December 1, 1863; died March 23, 1868.

DESHLER WHITING

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, September 23, 1902; accepted September 26, 1902; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 24, 1904; First Lieutenant, Fifth Infantry, March 14, 1908; Private, Company G, Sixty-fifth New York Infantry, May 17, 1898, to November 19, 1898; private and Corporal, Company M, Forty-second Volunteer Infantry, October 14, 1899, to September 18, 1900.

CLEVELAND WILLCOXON

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Georgia; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; accepted August 10, 1901; Captain, Second Georgia Infantry, May 11, 1898; honorably mustered out November 30, 1898; Captain, Twenty-ninth Volunteer Infantry, July 5, 1899; honorably mustered out May 10, 1901; died September 16, 1905.

Digitized by Google

CHARLES S. WINDERS

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Maryland; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1846; Brevet Second Lieutenant, Fourth Artillery, July 1, 1850; Second Lieutenant, Third Artillery, July 21, 1851; First Lieutenant April 5, 1854; regimental Adjutant April 4, 1854, to March 3, 1855. Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; resigned April 1, 1861; Brigadier-General, Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65; killed August 9, 1862, at the battle of Cedar Mountain, Virginia.

EDMUND WITTENMEYER

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1883; Additional Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1887; Second Lieutenant June 15, 1887; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, November 27, 1894; Captain, Tenth Infantry, March 2, 1899; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry July 3, 1899; paymaster (by detail act, February 2, 1901,) December 17, 1901; assigned to Fifth Infantry December 17, 1905.

JONES M. WITHERS

Born in Alabama. Appointed from Alabama; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1831; Brevet Second Lieutenant, First Dragoons, July 1, 1835; resigned December 5, 1835; Lieutenant-Colonel of Infantry March 3, 1847; assigned to Thirteenth Infantry April 9, 1847; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, September 13, 1847; resigned May 23, 1848; Major-General Confederate States of America, war of 1861–65; died March 13, 1890.

JENNINGS C. WISE

Born in Virginia. Appointed from New York; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 28, 1902; accepted October 31, 1902; resigned January 1, 1905.

CHARLES R. WOODS

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1848; Brevet Second Lieutenant, First Infantry, July 1, 1852; Second Lieutenant July 31, 1852; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; First Lieutenant October 16, 1855; Captain April 1, 1861; Colonel, Seventy-sixth Ohio Infantry, October 17, 1861; Brigadier-General of volunteers August 4, 1863; honorably mustered out of volunteer service September 1, 1866; Major, Eighteenth Infantry, April 20, 1864; transferred to Twenty-seventh Infantry September 21, 1866; Lieutenant-Colonel, Thirty-third Infantry, July 28, 1866; unassigned March 15, 1869; assigned to Fifth Infantry March 24, 1869; Colonel,

Digitized by Google

Second Infantry, February 18, 1874; retired December 15, 1874; Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel July 4, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the capture of Vicksburg, Mississippi; Colonel, November 24, 1863, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Chattanooga, Tennessee; Brigadier-General March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battles before Atlanta, Georgia; Major-General of volunteers, November 22, 1864, for long continued service and for special gallantry at Griswoldville, Georgia, and Major-General, United States Army, March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious service in the battle of Bentonville, North Carolina; died February 26, 1885.

Charles O. Wood

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1861; First Lieutenant May 14, 1861; Captain May 30, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, Eighth California Infantry, February 1, 1865; honorably mustered out of volunteer service October 24, 1865; unassigned April 30, 1870; Brevet Major, March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service, and Colonel of volunteers March 13, 1865, for faithful and meritorious service; honorably discharged August 13, 1870, at his own request.

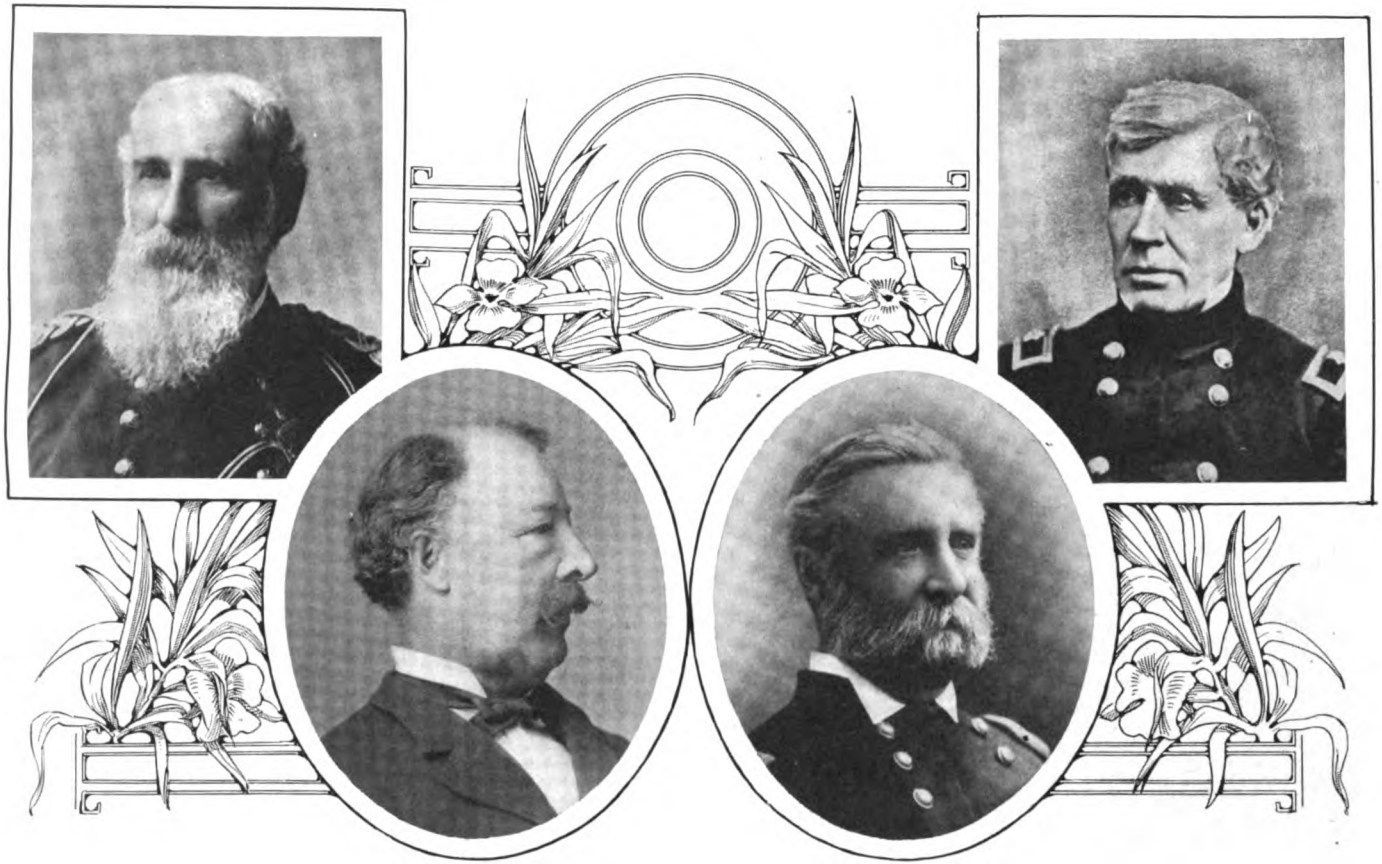
Dickinson Woodruff

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New Jersery; Lieutenant-Colonel, Battalion New Jersey Infantry, September 4, 1847; honorably mustered out July 20, 1848; Captain, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Major, Twelfth Infantry, May 30, 1863; transferred to Twenty-first Infantry September 21, 1866; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, March 26, 1868; unassigned March 15, 1869; retired December 15, 1870.

George Wright

Born in Vermont. Appointed from Vermont; Cadet Military Academy September 14, 1818; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, July 1, 1822; First Lieutenant September 23, 1827; regimental Adjutant February 1, 1831, to October 30, 1836; Captain October 30, 1836; transferred to Eighth Infantry July 27, 1838; Major, Fourth Infantry, January 1, 1848; Lieutenant-Colonel February 3, 1855; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1855; Brigadier-General of volunteers September 28, 1861; Brevet Major, March 15, 1842, for meritorious conduct, zeal, energy and perseverance in the war against the Florida Indians; Lieutenant-Colonel, August 20, 1847, for gallant and meritorious conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco, Mexico; Colonel, September 8, 1847, for

Digitized by Google



John S. Mason,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

James VanVoast,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Colonel,
Ninth Infantry.

John H. King,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

George Wright,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google



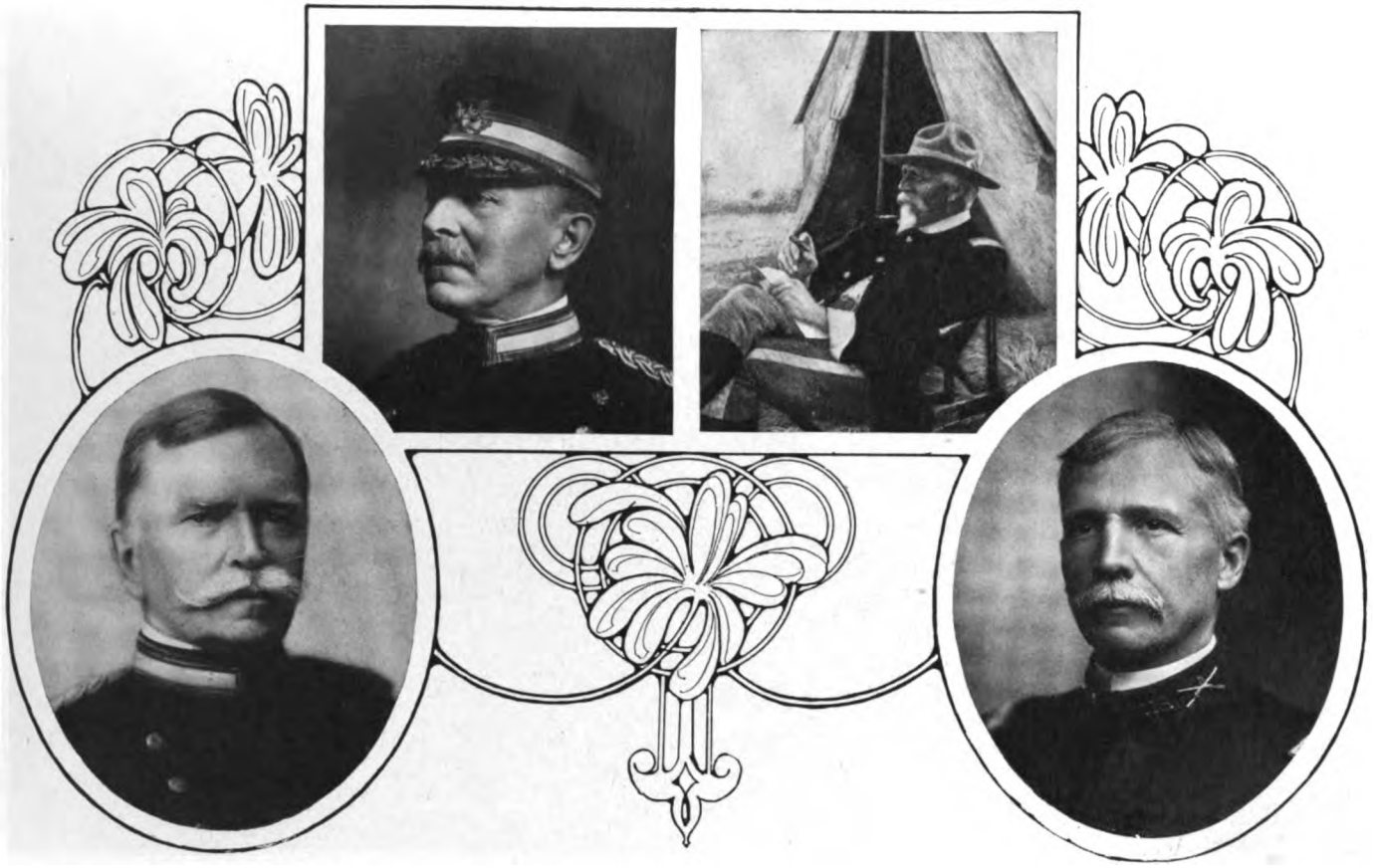
Alfred L. Hough,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Charles G. Bartlett,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

William J. Lyster,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

William H. Powell,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google



Edgar B. Robertson,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Major, Lieutenant-Colonel,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Emerson H. Liscum,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Charles F. Robe,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Charles J. Crane,
Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

gallant and meritorious conduct in the battle of Molino del Rey, Mexico, and Brigadier-General, December 19, 1864, for long, faithful and meritorious service; drowned July 30, 1865.

WALTER S. WYATT

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Private, Battery L, Fourth New York Artillery, September 21, 1864 to June 4, 1865; Cadet Military Academy July 1, 1867; second Lieutenant, Third Cavalry, June 12, 1871; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 8, 1872; First Lieutenant June 22, 1879; resigned August 28, 1887.

JOHN E. YARD

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from California; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, November 12, 1861; First Lieutenant May 1, 1863; Captain July 28, 1866; Major March 10, 1867; unassigned December 15, 1870; assigned to Twentieth Infantry December 31, 1870; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-fourth Infantry, March 24, 1879; Colonel, Eighteenth Infantry, April 19, 1886; died February 17, 1889.

ARTHUR W. YATES

Born in Wisconsin. Appointed from Wisconsin; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 1, 1891; accepted August 1, 1891; First Lieutenant April 26, 1898; transferred to Fourth Infantry July 28, 1900; Captain and Assistant Quartermaster January 3, 1901; accepted January 14, 1901; Major and Quartermaster March 31, 1906.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI

RECORDS AND PHOTOGRAPHS OF OFFICERS NOW IN THE NINTH INFANTRY.

COLONEL CHARLES J. CRANE

Born in Mississippi. Appointed from Texas; Cadet Military Academy, September 1, 1872; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, June 15, 1877; First Lieutenant, Twenty-fourth Infantry, March 20, 1879; Captain, Twenty-fourth Infantry, July 4, 1892; Colonel, Ninth United States Volunteer Infantry, May 31, 1898, to May 25, 1899; Lieutenant-Colonel, Thirty-eighth United States Volunteer Infantry, August 17, 1899, to June 30, 1901; Major, Sixteenth Infantry, February 2, 1901; Adjutant-General February 28, 1901; Lieutenant-Colonel, Eighth Infantry, August 21, 1903; military secretary August 8, 1905; assigned Seventeenth Infantry September 16, 1907; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, October 25, 1907.

General Mackenzie's expedition into Mexico June, 1878. Cuba, August, 1898, to April, 1899. In Philippine Islands August, 1899, to August, 1902. Southern expedition, Cavite, Laguna and Batangas Provinces, Philippine Islands. Pacification Panay Campaign, and Campaigns in Samar and Cebu, 1901–1902. Commanding Porto Rican Provisional Regiment September, 1903, to September, 1905. Military secretary, Northern Division, St. Louis, Missouri, and Chicago, Illinois, September, 1905, to December, 1906; to Department of Texas, San Antonio, 1907. (Photo. on p. 751.)

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WILLIAM C. BUTTLER

Born in New Jersey. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy, July 1, 1872; Second Lieutenant, Third Infantry, June 15, 1876; First Lieutenant April 16, 1885; Captain, Third Infantry, April 25, 1895; Major, Twenty-fifth Infantry, March 5, 1901; transferred to Twenty-second Infantry May 17, 1904; transferred to Twenty-ninth Infantry August 22, 1906; Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, October 6, 1906.

Duty suppressing riots in Indiana and Pennsylvania, fall of 1877; in the field, Missouri River, 1878; Crow Campaign 1887; Acting Assistant Quartermaster, Lieutenant-Colonel E. W. Sumner's command against

Digitized by Google

Sioux Indians, on Cheyenne River, October, 1890, to February, 1891; in Philippine Islands March 23, 1899, to September, 1902, and from December, 1906, to July, 1907; Campaign against Malolos and San Miguel. General Lawton's advance April to May, 1899. Engagements at San Roque, Angat, Baliuag, Maasin, San Ildefonso, San Miguel and Baliuag. Commanded expedition against San Rafael September 6, 1899.

Major Charles R. Noyes

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy, September 1, 1875; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 13, 1879; First Lieutenant August 28, 1887; Captain April 26, 1898; Major August 12, 1903; Assistant Adjutant-General, by detail April 7, 1904; assigned to Ninth Infantry April 7, 1908.

Ute Campaign, Colorado, November, 1879, to July, 1880. Spanish Campaign, Santiago de Cuba, June, July, and August, 1898; in Philippine Islands from April, 1899, to June, 1900; from June, 1901, to May, 1902; in battle of San Juan Hill, Santiago de Cuba, July 1–3, 1898, and engagements July 10, 11, 1898; in engagements at San Fernando, Calulut, Porac, Angeles, and Bamban, in Northern Luzon, 1899; China Campaign (Boxer outbreak), July, 1900; in battle at Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900; twice wounded at Tien-tsin. Recommended for brevet in Philippines; recommended for Medal of Honor at battle of Tien-tsin for conspicuous gallantry for continuing on until twice wounded, while serving as Captain and Adjutant, Ninth Infantry. Recommended for Brevet Major for constant coolness and gallantry under a deadly fire, until disabled by a second wound, at battle of Tien-tsin, July 13, 1900.

Major John Cotter

Born in Ireland. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant and First Sergeant, Battery A, Second Artillery, March 27, 1877, to April 20, 1882; Second Lieutenant Fifteenth Infantry, March 27, 1882; First Lieutenant, Second Infantry, January 6, 1891; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry July 20, 1891; Captain April 26, 1898; Major, Ninth Infantry, March 3, 1906; graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1887.

Cuba December 11, 1898, to January, 1900; campaigns and engagements at Pangil, San Antonio, Martique, Siniloan and Donsol, Philippine Islands. In Philippine Islands September 4, 1900, to August, 1902, and from December 3, 1905, to July 15, 1907.

Digitized by Google



Waldo E. Ayer,
Major, Ninth Infantry.

John Cotter,
Major, Ninth Infantry

Charles R. Noyes,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain, Major, Ninth Infantry.

William C. Buttler,
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Major Waldo E. Ayer

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from Massachusetts; Cadet Military Academy, July 1, 1880; Second Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, June 15, 1884; First Lieutenant, Twentieth Infantry, May 19, 1891; transferred to Eleventh Infantry July 20, 1891; transferred to Twelfth Infantry April 16, 1894; Captain of Infantry October 5, 1898; assigned to Twelfth Infantry January 1, 1899; transferred to Thirtieth Infantry October 15, 1903; Major, First Infantry, October 1, 1907; transferred to Ninth Infantry November 11, 1907.

Cuba, 1898. Adjutant-General separate brigade, Eleventh and Nineteenth Infantries, July 6, 1898. In Philippine Islands April, 1899. Participated in General MacArthur's northern advance from San Fernando to Angeles. Engagements at San Fernando, Calulut, Porac, and Angeles. Guerrilla warfare work in Tarlac Province, September, 1901; Adjutant-General Sixth Separate Brigade under General Jacob Smith, in Samar Campaign, from September, 1901, to June, 1902.

Chaplain Albert J. Bader

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Chaplain Twelfth New York Volunteer Infantry, August, 1898, to March 20, 1899; Chaplain, United States Army, February 2, 1901. Assigned to Eighth Cavalry July 26, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry September 4, 1907; in Cuba September, 1901, to February, 1902; in Philippine Islands May, 1905, to April, 1907.

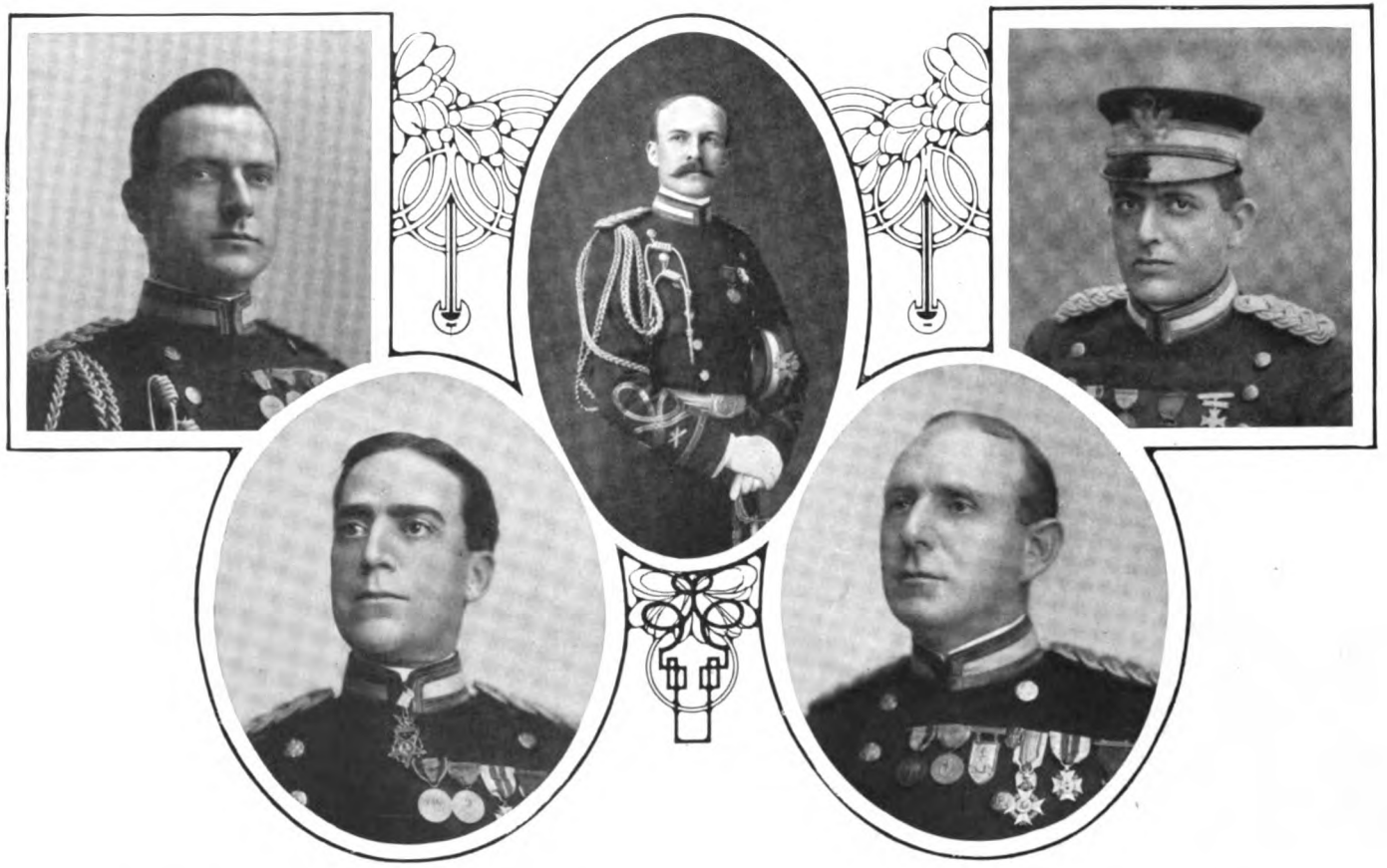
CAPTAINS

Edwin V. Bookmiller

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy, June 14, 1885; Second Lieutenant, Second Infantry, June 12, 1889; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 10, 1896; Captain, Sixteenth Infantry, July 8, 1899; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 29, 1899.

Expedition against Sioux Indians in Dakota November, 1890, to January, 1891; Engagement at Pine Ridge Agency December 29, 1890; expedition to Cuba June, 1898; battle of San Juan Hill July, 1898; engagements of July 2, 3, 10, 11, 1898, before Santiago, Cuba; Campaign on Luzon Island, Philippine Islands, March 14, 1900, to June 26, 1900. Expedition to China June 1900; battle of Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900; severely wounded in action. Campaign on Samar Island, Philippine Islands, June 18, 1901, to January 20, 1902. Engagements at San Antonio September, 1901; at Barrio of Loog October 15, 1901; at Balangiga September 29, 1901. Recommended for Brevet Captain,

Digitized by Google



Fred R. Brown,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Edwin V. Bookmiller,
First Lieutenant, Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Reuben Smith
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

George W. Wallace,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

Benjamin P. Nicklin,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

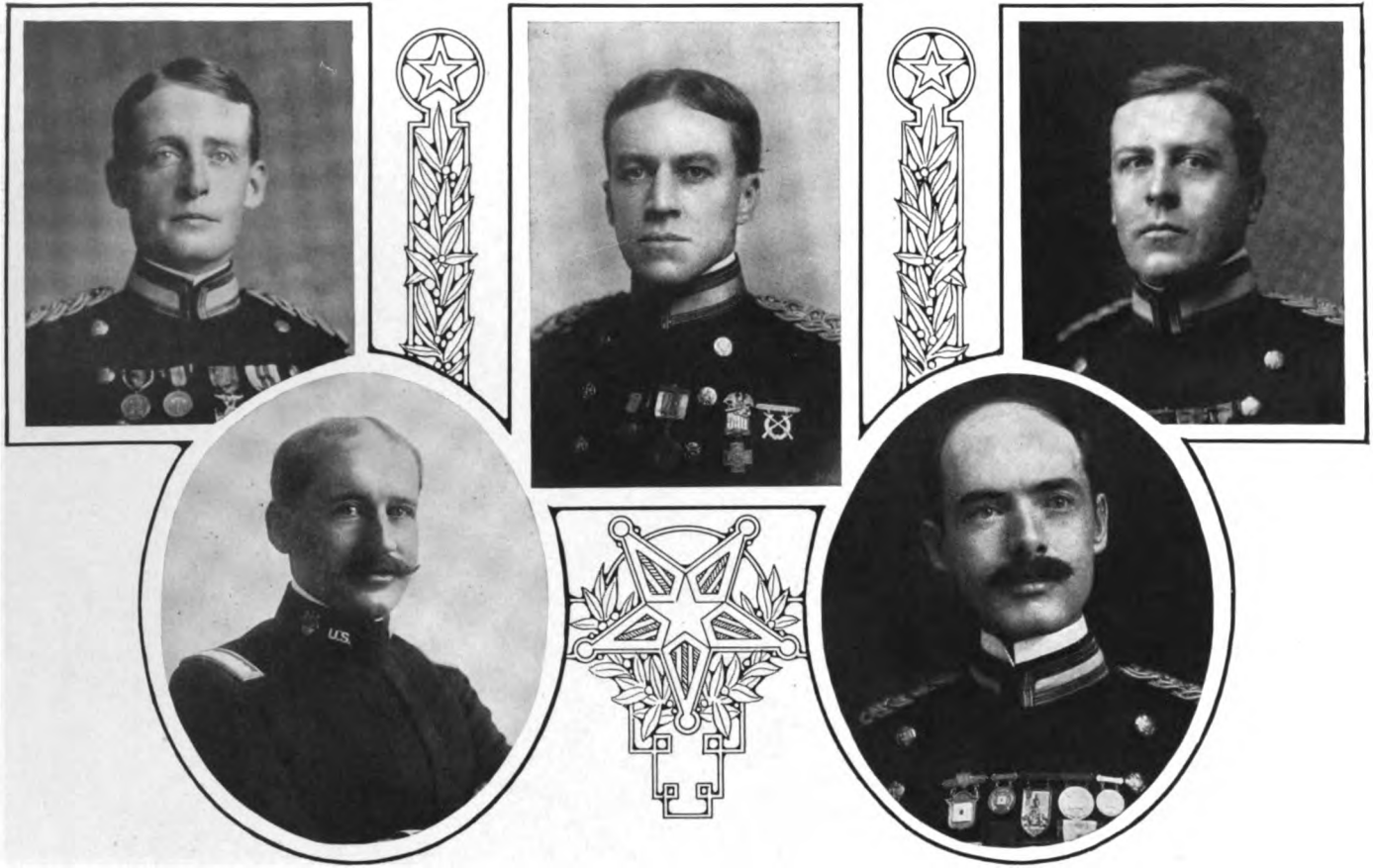
for gallant and meritorious action in battle of San Juan, Cuba, and siege of Santiago, Cuba, in report of Major Boyle, Ninth Infantry, September 24, 1898. Recommended for Medal of Honor and Brevet Major, for bravery in battle of Tien-tsin, China, by Lieutenant-Colonel Coolidge and by Major Lee; for Brevet Major for conspicuous coolness under a deadly fire, leading his company until he fell, twice wounded. Thanked in telegram of September 30, 1901, by Commanding General, Department Visayas, for prompt and energetic action against savages at Balangiga. In Philippine Islands from March, 1900, to June, 1900, and from June 1901, to February, 1902; also from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

Hugh D. Wise

Born in Virginia. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy, September 1, 1889; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1894; First Lieutenant April 26, 1898; Captain, Assistant Adjutant-General, September 12, 1898; honorably discharged May 12, 1899; Major, Forty-seventh United States Volunteer Infantry, August 17, 1899; honorably discharged June 30, 1901; Captain, Twenty-sixth Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 4, 1901; commanding Eighth Battalion, Philippine Scouts, November 29, 1906, to May 29, 1907.

Expedition to Cuba, and campaign against Santiago, June and July, 1898. Battle San Juan Hill; siege Santiago. Engagements before Santiago July 2, 3, 10, and 11, 1898. General Lawton's Expedition June 2, 1899. Engagements Maraquina and Taytay. General MacArthur's campaign in Pampanga Province and Tarlac, Philippine Islands, 1899. Engagements San Fernando, Calulut, Sindalon, Santa Rita, Porac, Angeles, Bamban. General Wheeler's reconnoissance to San Miguel de Camiling and Moriones. General Kobbe's southern expedition January, 1900. Capture of Donsol, Philippine Islands, January 21, 1900. Campaigns in Island of Samar, 1901–02–05–06–07. Operations in provinces of Albay and Sorsogon, 1900–01. Recommended for Brevet Captain, for gallant and meritorious service at battle of San Juan Hill, Cuba, in report of Major Boyle, Ninth Infantry. Recommended for Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers, for gallant conduct and soldierly fortitude while in command of Donsol, Luzon, Philippine Islands. Thanks from Navy Department for services on United States Gunboat Petrel in fire of March 31, 1901. Recommended for Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers, for distinguished gallantry in action on Donsol River, May, 1900, by Brigadier-General

Digitized by Google



Hugh D. Wise,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Harry F. Rethers,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

Reynolds J. Burt,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Marion M. Weeks,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Fred L. Munson,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Kobbe. In Philippine Islands from May, 1899, to June, 1901, and from October, 1901, to May, 1902; also from May, 1905, to November, 1905; also from April, 1906, to July, 1907.

HARRY F. RETHERS

Born in California. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Company A, First Infantry, June, 1893, to April, 1896; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, March 23, 1896; First Lieutenant of Infantry September 8, 1898; assigned Second Infantry January 1, 1899; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 23, 1899; Captain, Third Infantry, April 19, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 21, 1902; aide-de-camp to Major-General John F. Weston since April 27, 1907.

Expedition to Santiago, Cuba, 1898; engagements July 2nd, 3rd, 10th and 11th, before Santiago. Battle of Guadaloupe Ridge, Las Pinas, June, 1899. Battle of Zapote River June 13, 1899. Expedition to China June 27, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin July 13, 1900. Advance from Tien-tsin to Pekin August, 1900, with China Relief Expedition. Engagement at Pietsang August 5, 1900; Yang-tsun August 6, 1900. In the attack and capture of the Imperial City of Pekin, China, August 14, 15, 1900. Recommended for brevet for gallantry in action in battle of San Juan Hill, Cuba, and siege of Santiago, Cuba, in report of Major Boyle, Ninth Infantry. Recommended for brevet commission as Captain for conspicuous gallantry, coolness and heroism, being with the extreme advance and inspiring his men by example throughout the day, in report of Major Jesse M. Lee, Ninth Infantry, at the battle of Tien-tsin, July 13, 1900. In Philippine Islands April, 1899, to June, 1900; June, 1905, to December, 1908.

REYNOLDS J. BURT

Born in Nebraska. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy, June 15, 1892; Additional Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Infantry, June 12, 1896; Second Lieutenant, Tenth Infantry, November 4, 1896; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry February 4, 1897; First Lieutenant of Infantry December 20, 1898; assigned to Twenty-fifth Infantry January 1, 1899; Captain, Ninth Infantry, July 23, 1901.

Graduate Army School of the Line, July 1, 1908. Graduate Army Staff College, 1909. In expedition Zambales Province, Philippine Islands. Engagement at San Fernando December, 1899; Botolan December 8, 1899, and Iba December 9, 1899. In Philippine Islands 1899 to May, 1902; June 1, 1905, to July, 1907.

Digitized by Google

FRED L. MUNSON

Born in Indiana. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Company A, Sixth Infantry, January 11, 1893, to June 21, 1897; Second Lieutenant Ninth Infantry, June 22, 1897; First Lieutenant March 2, 1899; Captain, Twenty-fourth Infantry, January 2, 1902; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 19, 1902.

Expedition to Cuba, 1898. Battle of Guadaloupe Ridge, and Las Pinas, June 10, 1899. Battle of Zapote River June 13, 1899. Advance from San Fernando, and battle of Calulut, August 9, 1899. Battle of Porac September 28, 1899. Angeles October 11–16, 1899. Expedition to China, 1900. Battle of Tientsin July 13, 1900. Advance from Tien-tsin to Pekin August, 1900. Engagements at Pietsang August 5, 1900. Battles of Yang-tsun August 6, 1900, and Pekin August 14, 15, 1900. Recommended for Brevet Captain, for gallantry in action at Zapote River and Guadaloupe Ridge and Las Pinas, in report of Captain Baldwin, Ninth Infantry. In Philippine Islands April, 1899, to June, 1900; June, 1901, to March, 6, 1902; June 1, 1905, to May, 1906; August, 1906, to May, 1907.

IRA C. WELBORN

Born in Mississippi. Appointed from Mississippi; Cadet Military Academy, September 1, 1894; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 26, 1898; First Lieutenant March 2, 1899; Captain, Sixteenth Infantry December 29, 1902; transferred to Ninth Infantry December 22, 1903.

Expedition to Cuba June, 1898. Battle of San Juan Hill July 1, 1899. Engagements before Santiago, Cuba, July 2, 3, 10, 11, 1898. Campaign on Luzon Island April 24, 1899, to June 26, 1900. Battles of Guadaloupe Ridge and Las Pinas, Zapote River, San Fernando. Advance from San Fernando; battle of Calulut. Engagement at Sindalon; battles of Porac, Angeles, Bamban. Expedition to China June, 1900. Battles of Tien-tsin, Pietsang, Yang-tsun, Pekin. Expedition to Temples of Pa-Ta-Chow, under General James H. Wilson, 1900. Recommended for Brevet First Lieutenant, for gallant and meritorious service in battle of San Juan Hill, Cuba, and the siege of Santiago, Cuba, in report of Major Boyle, Ninth Infantry. Granted Medal of Honor for distinguished bravery in battle of Santiago, Cuba, July 2, 1898, "Voluntarily leaving his shelter and going under fire to the aid of a private of his company who was wounded," per General Order No. 15, Adjutant-General's office, February 13, 1900. Recommended for two brevet commissions for gallant service in action, Santiago, Cuba, July 1 and 2, 1898, by the first Board convened at Washington. Recommended for brevet

Digitized by Google

commission for gallantry in action at Guadaloupe Ridge, Philippine Islands, and ford near Las Pinas, June 10, 1899, and at Zapote River, Philippine Islands, June 13, 1899, in letter from Headquarters, First Division, Eighth Army Corps, dated December 18, 1899. In Philippine Islands from April, 1899, to June, 1900.

BENJAMIN P. NICKLIN

Born in Tennessee. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Troop I, First Cavalry, January 22, 1895, to July 6,1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 22, 1898; First Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, March 2, 1899; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 28, 1900; Captain July 29, 1903.

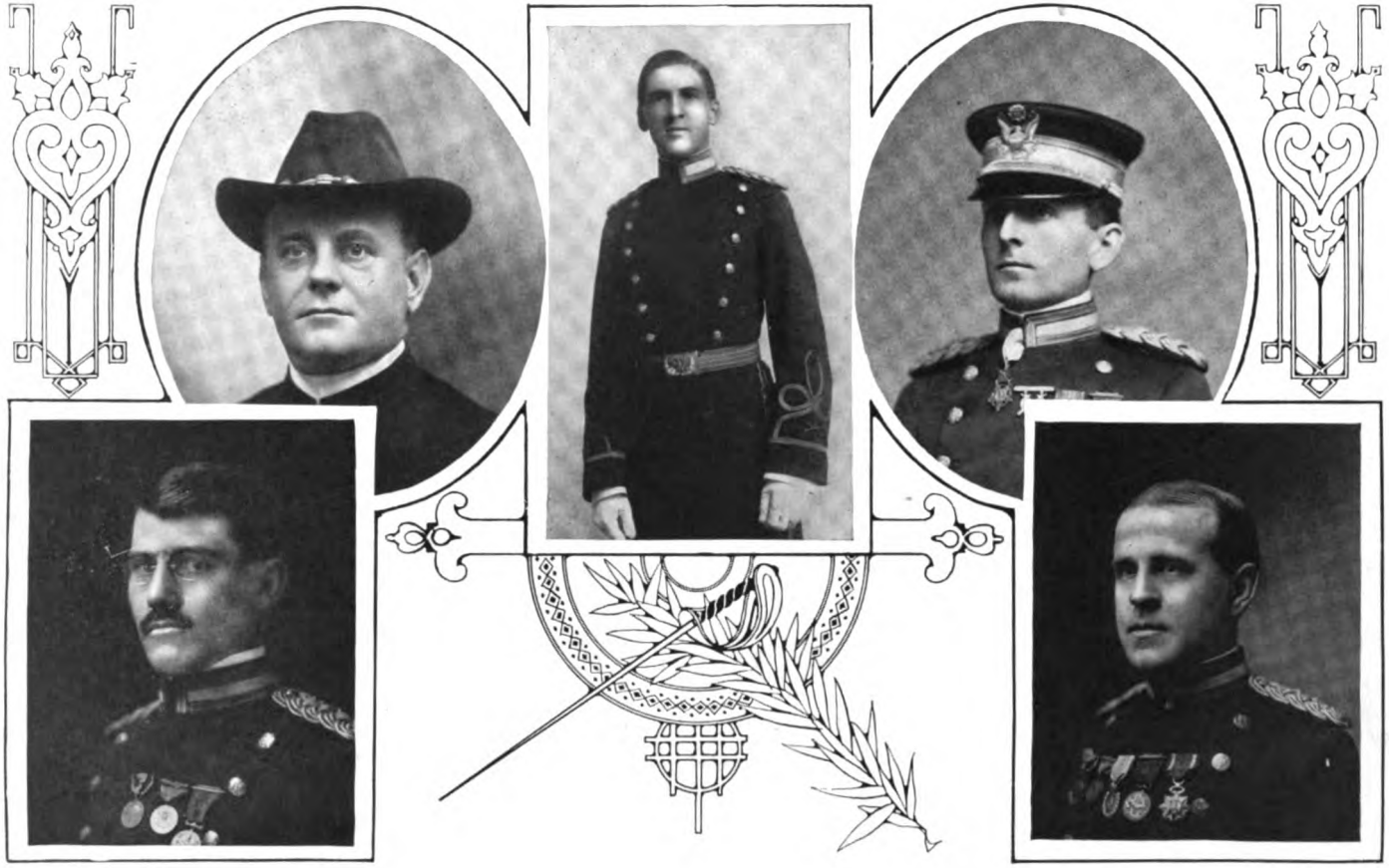
Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1903. General Kobbe's expedition on Pampanga River, 1899. Expedition to Morong June 1–11, 1899, under General Hall. Engagements at Dasmarinas June 19, 20, 1899; Putol Bridge August 11, 1899. Imus and Salinas September 30, 1899, and August 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6, 1899. Puente Julian November, 1899, and Imus, Cavite Province, Philippine Islands, November 25, 1899. Big Bend, Imus River, November 1, 1899; Expedition to Temples of Pa-Ta-Chow, China, under General James H. Wilson, September 16–18, 1900. Expedition to Mings Tombs at Colgan, China, and Great Walls, China, March 28–31, 1901. Recommended for Brevet Captain, for gallantry in action at Dasmarinas, Philippine Islands, by General H. W. Lawton. Campaign in Samar Island August, 1901, to May, 1902. In Philippine Islands April, 1899, to August, 1900; May, 1901, to May, 1902; from May, 1905 to March, 1907.

WILLIAM K. NAYLOR

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Minnesota; Second Lieutenant, Fourteenth Minnesota Infantry,May 8, 1898, to July 24, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1898; First Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, March 2, 1899; transferred to Ninth Infantry August 29, 1899; Captain, Eleventh Infantry, August 14, 1903; transferred to Ninth Infantry December 7, 1903.

Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1904. Graduate Staff College, 1905. Campaign on Luzon and Panay Islands, Philippine Islands, April 24, 1899, to June 26, 1900. Engagements at Mariquina, Taytay and Morong, Philippine Islands, June, 1899. Battle of Bamban, Engagement at Tinuba, Philippine Islands, March 4, 1900. Expedition to China, June, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin. Engagement at Pietsang; battle of Yang-tsun; battle and capture of Pekin. Expedition

Digitized by Google



Albert J. Bader,
Chaplain, Ninth Infantry.

Ira C. Welborn,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Clifton C. Kinney,
First Lieutenant, Captain,
Ninth Infantry.

William T. Merry,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

William K. Naylor,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Captain, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

to Temples of Pa-Ta-Chow. Recommended for Brevet Captain for conspicuous gallantry, coolness, and heroism, being with the extreme advance and inspiring his men by example throughout the day, in battle of Tien-tsin, China, in report of Major Jesse M. Lee, dated July 22, 1900. In Philippine Islands April 1899, to June, 1900; from December, 1905, to July, 1907.

MARION M. WEEKS

Born in Washington. Appointed from District of Columbia; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-first Infantry, September 9, 1898; First Lieutenant, Eleventh Infantry, October 2, 1899; transferred to Twenty-first Infantry August 7, 1900; Captain, Fifth Infantry, August 15, 1905; transferred to Ninth Infantry April 15, 1907.

Skirmish near San Pedro Macati, June 10, 1899. Battle of Zapote Bridge June 13, 1899. Capture of San Mateo August 12, 1899. Wounded in action same date. Expedition to China June, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin. Engagements at Pietsang; battle of Yang-tsun; battle and capture of Pekin. Expedition to Temple of Pa-Ta-Chow, China. Service with Army of Cuban Pacification, 1906, to June, 1907. In Philippine Islands from April, 1899, to June, 1900; from April, 1901, to 1902; from March, 1905, to September, 1905.

CLIFTON C. KINNEY

Born in Texas. Appointed from Texas; Second Lieutenant, Thirteenth Infantry, July 9, 1898; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 18, 1900; Captain, Twenty-fifth Infantry, July 17, 1906; transferred to Ninth Infantry January 24, 1908.

Campaign on Luzon Island, Philippine Islands, December, 1899, to September, 1900. China Relief Expedition November, 1900, to May, 1901; in China from March to September, 1905. Campaign on Samar, Philippine Islands, June, 1901, to April, 1902. Engagements at Matuguinao, and in mountains west of Pambujan River, 1901, and in foothills near Pagsanjan February, 1902, Island of Samar. In Philippine Islands from December, 1899, to September, 1900; from May, 1901, to May, 1902; from September, 1905, to August, 1906.

FRED R. BROWN

Born in Illinois. Appointed from Illinois; Cadet Military Academy, June 19, 1895; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 15, 1899; First Lieutenant, Seventh Infantry, December 11, 1900; transferred to Ninth Infantry July 20, 1901; Captain, Twelfth Infantry, December 4,

Digitized by Google

1906; transferred to Ninth Infantry January 22, 1907. Regimental Adjutant since August 17, 1907.

Campaign Philippine Islands, 1899. Battle Guadaloupe Ridge and ford near Las Pinas June 10, 1899. Battle of Zapote River. Engagement near Bacoor June 13, 1899. San Fernando June, July and August, 1899. Advance from San Fernando, Philippine Islands, and battle Calulut. Engagements at Sindalon, and Santa Rita. Battle of Porac; engagement at Bamban November, 1899. Night attacks at Angeles October 11 to 16, 1899. Expedition to China, 1900. Battle of Tientsin; engagement at Pietsang, battle of Yang-tsun, China. Campaign in Samar Island August 22, 1901, to May 13, 1902. Recommended for Brevet Second Lieutenant, for gallantry in action at Guadaloupe Ridge, ford near Las Pinas and Zapote River, Philippine Islands, in report of General Lawton. In Philippine Islands from April, 1899, to June, 1900; from June, 1901, to May, 1902; from May, 1905, to March, 1907.

William T. Merry

Born in New York. Appointed from New York; Cadet Military Academy, June 15, 1895; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-third Infantry, February 15, 1899; First Lieutenant, First Infantry, December 11, 1900; transferred to Twenty-third Infantry July 30, 1901; Captain, Ninth Infantry, December 15, 1906.

Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1906. Graduate Army Staff College, 1907. Engaged in skirmishes against Filipino insurgents at Boljoon, Cebu, Philippine Islands, and vicinity, from May 1, 1900, to May 10, 1900. With Twenty-third Provisional Company in skirmishes and expeditions against hostile Moros under Datto Ali, in Rio Grande Valley, from July, 1904, to December, 1904. In Second Sulu and Lake Lanao Expedition against hostile Moros during November, 1903. In skirmish against Lanao Moros, at Canyan, in March, 1905. In skirmish against hostile Moros at Taraca, Mindanao, Philippine Islands, in January, 1905. In skirmish against hostile Moros, at Muney, Mindanao, Philippine Islands, in March, 1905. In skirmish against hostile Moros at Bacolod, Mindanao, Philippine Islands, in March, 1905.

Reuben Smith

Born in Minnesota. Appointed from Minnesota; Second Lieutenant, Fourteenth Minnesota Infantry, May 18, 1898, to November 18, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; First Lieutenant, Twenty-eighth Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to

Digitized by Google

Ninth Infantry February 4, 1903; transferred to Eighteenth Infantry October 6, 1907; Captain, Sixteenth Infantry, March 5, 1908; transferred to Ninth Infantry, April 13, 1908.

Advance from San Fernando, Philippine Islands; battle of Calulut and engagement at Sindalon, Philippine Islands, August, 1899. Night attacks at Angeles, Philippine Islands, October 11–16, 1899. Expedition to China June, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin July 13, 1900. Expedition against insurgents at Batangas Province, Philippine Islands, March 30, to April 22, 1902. In Philippine Islands from July, 1899, to June, 1900; from June, 1901, to July, 1901; from February, 1902, to March, 1903; from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

George W. Wallace

Born in Kansas. Appointed from Colorado; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; First Lieutenant February 2, 1901; Captain, Sixth Infantry, October 28, 1908; transferred to Ninth Infantry January 5, 1909.

Battle of Porac, Philippine Islands. Night attacks on Angeles, 1899. Expedition to China, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin; engagement at Pietsang; battles of Yang-tsun and Pekin. Expedition to Temples of Pa-Ta-Chow. Campaign on Samar, Philippine Islands, June 7, 1901, to April, 1902. Engagement at Catanagan, Samar, November 11, 1901. Granted Medal of Honor for most distinguished gallantry in action at Tinuba, Luzon, Philippine Islands, March 4, 1900, in putting to rout about a dozen Filipinos, who, from ambush, had shot at and wounded through the body a brother officer, Lieutenant Koehler, who accompanied him (while Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry), per General Order 86, Headquarters Army, Adjutant General's office, July 24, 1902. In Philippine Islands from September, 1899, to June, 1900; from June, 1901, to May, 1902; from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

FIRST LIEUTENANTS

Willis P. Coleman

Born in Louisiana. Appointed from Louisiana; Captain, Ninth United States Volunteer Infantry, June 29, 1898; honorably mustered out May 20, 1899; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 10, 1899; First Lieutenant February 2, 1901.

In Cuba August 22, 1898, to April 20, 1899. Campaign in Luzon, Philippine Islands, November, 1899, to June, 1900. Engagement at

Digitized by Google



F. A. Awl,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

William A. Castle,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

William R. Leonard,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Robert L. Meador,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Bamban. Expedition to China June, 1900. Engagement at Pietsang; In Philippine Islands from November, 1899, to June, 1900; from June, 1901, to March, 1903; from June, 1905, to September, 1905.

ABRAHAM U. LOEB

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Private and Corporal, Company C, One Hundred and Sixtieth Indiana Infantry, May 12, 1898, to April 25, 1899; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, December 1, 1899; First Lieutenant, Fourteenth Infantry, July 23, 1901; transferred to Ninth Infantry, December 2, 1902.

Expedition to China June, 1900. Battle of Tien-tsin. Engagement at Pietsang; battle of Yang-tsun; battle and capture of Pekin. Expedition to Temple of Pa-Ta-Chow, under General James H. Wilson. Campaign on Island of Samar, Philippine Islands, August, 1901, to May, 1902. Recommended for Brevet First Lieutenant, for conspicuous gallantry, coolness, and courage throughout the battle of Tien-tsin, China, in report of Major Lee, Ninth Infantry, July 21, 1900. In Philippine Islands in June, 1900; and from June, 1901, to June, 1902; and from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

FRANK A. AWL

Born in Pennsylvania. Appointed from Pennsylvania; Private Governor's Troop, Pennsylvania Cavalry, May 13, 1898, to November 21, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Sixth Infantry, December 1, 1899; First Lieutenant September 24, 1901; transferred to Fifteenth Infantry October 24, 1902; transferred to Ninth Infantry June 21, 1907.

General Miles' Expedition to Porto Rico, 1898. Campaign Philippine Islands, Island of Negros, 1899. Pacification Island of Panay 1900 to 1902. Campaign, Island of Mindanao, Malaiag River Expedition, February and March, 1906. In Philippine Islands from June, 1900, to May, 1902; from December, 1905, to July, 1907.

WILLIAM A. CASTLE

Born in West Virginia. Appointed from Ohio; Captain, Seventh Ohio Infantry, May 13, 1898, to November 5, 1898; First Lieutenant, Thirty-first United States Volunteer Infantry, July 5, 1899, to June 18, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, September 18, 1901; First Lieutenant May 5, 1902; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 15, 1906.

Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1904. Graduate Staff Col-

Digitized by Google

lege 1905. In first engagement between American troops and Moros, on Island Mindanao at Malabang, April 26, 1900; In Philippine Islands from 1899 to 1901; from October, 1905, to July, 1907.

KAOLIN L. WHITSON

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Maryland; Sergeant and First Sergeant, Company A, First Maryland Infantry, May 16, 1898, to February 28, 1899; First Lieutenant, Thirtieth United States Volunteer Infantry, July 5, 1899, to April 3, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-second Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 21, 1902.

Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1903. With General Schwan's Expedition, through Southern Luzon, January 4 to 28, 1900. With Major Hartigan's Expedition to Atimonan and Lopez, March and April, 1900. Engagements and skirmishes at Muntinlupa, Magallanes, Sariaya, January, 1900, and San Poloc Bridge March, 1900. In General Baldwin's Lake Lanao Expedition against Moros in Mindanao June and July, 1902. In Philippine Islands from 1899 to 1901; from February, 1902, to July, 1902; from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

HERBERT L. EVANS

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Private and Corporal, Company F, Sixth Ohio Infantry, May 12, 1898, to December 15, 1898; First Lieutenant, Forty-fourth United States Volunteer Infantry, August 17, 1899, to June 30, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant May 25, 1903.

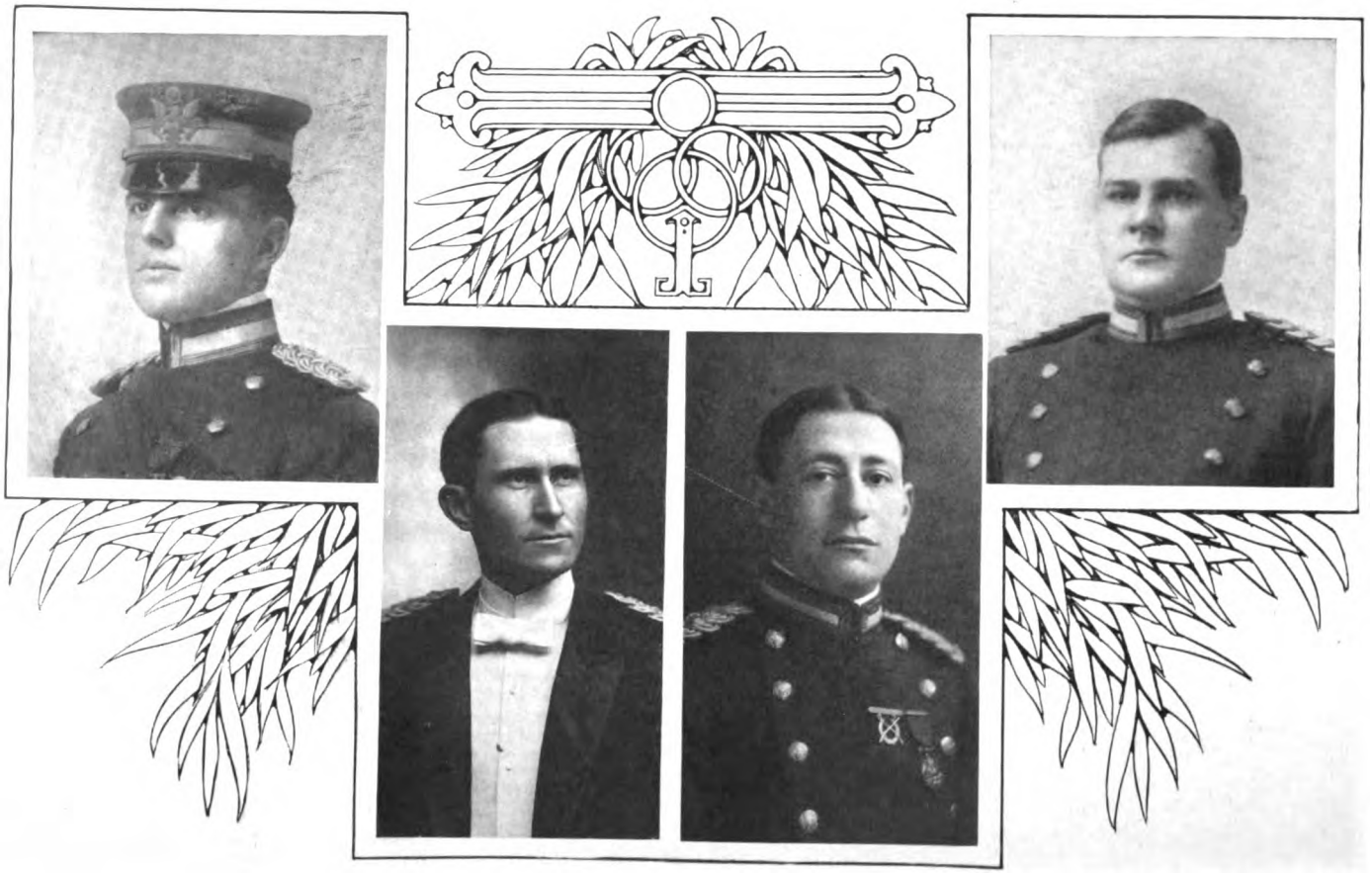
In Philippine Islands December, 1899, to May, 1901; from April to May, 1902; from June, 1905, to July, 1907. Expedition against insurgents in Antique Province, Panay, Philippine Islands, March 9–11, 1900. Occupation of the Island of Bohol, Philippine Islands, March 17, 1900. Skirmishes at Carmen, Batúan, Panogsagan, Punta Garda, Island of Bohol. Skirmish near Guadaloupe, Cebu, Philippine Islands, May, 1901.

PAUL M. GOODRICH

Born in Massachusetts. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, First Sergeant, Company M, Fourteenth Infantry, June 17, 1898, to August, 18, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, July 25, 1900; First Lieutenant August 13, 1903.

Engagements about Manila February, 1899. Expedition to Cavite Province June, 1899. Engagement Guadaloupe Ridge and Zapote River June, 1899. China Relief Expedition, 1900. Battle of Pietsang;

Digitized by Google



Willis P. Coleman,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Herbert L. Evans,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Robert W. Adams,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Abraham U. Loeb,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Yang-tsun; assault and capture of Pekin. Expedition to Temple of Pa-Ta-Chow, under General James H. Wilson, September, 1900. Campaign on Island of Samar, Philippine Islands, June, 1901, to May, 1902; In Philippine Islands from August, 1898, to July, 1900; from June, 1901, to May, 1902; from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

ROSCOE H. HEARN

Born in Texas. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, First Sergeant, Troop M, Fourth Cavalry, June 1, 1898, to September 12, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Sixteenth Infantry, July 25, 1900; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 17, 1903.

Skirmish at Santa Ana, Philippine Islands, October, 1899. Skirmish at San Augustin, Philippine Islands, October, 1899. Skirmish near Aliago and engagement at Aliago, November, 1899. On General Lawton's Northern Luzon Expedition October, November, December, 1899. Expedition against insurgents in Cagayán Valley, November, 1900; In Philippine Islands July, 1899, to June, 1902.

EMERY T. SMITH

Born in Nevada. Appointed from California; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Company I, Fourteenth Infantry, May, 30, 1898, to August 15, 1899; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 15, 1900; First Lieutenant, Thirtieth Infantry, December 30, 1904; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 14, 1905.

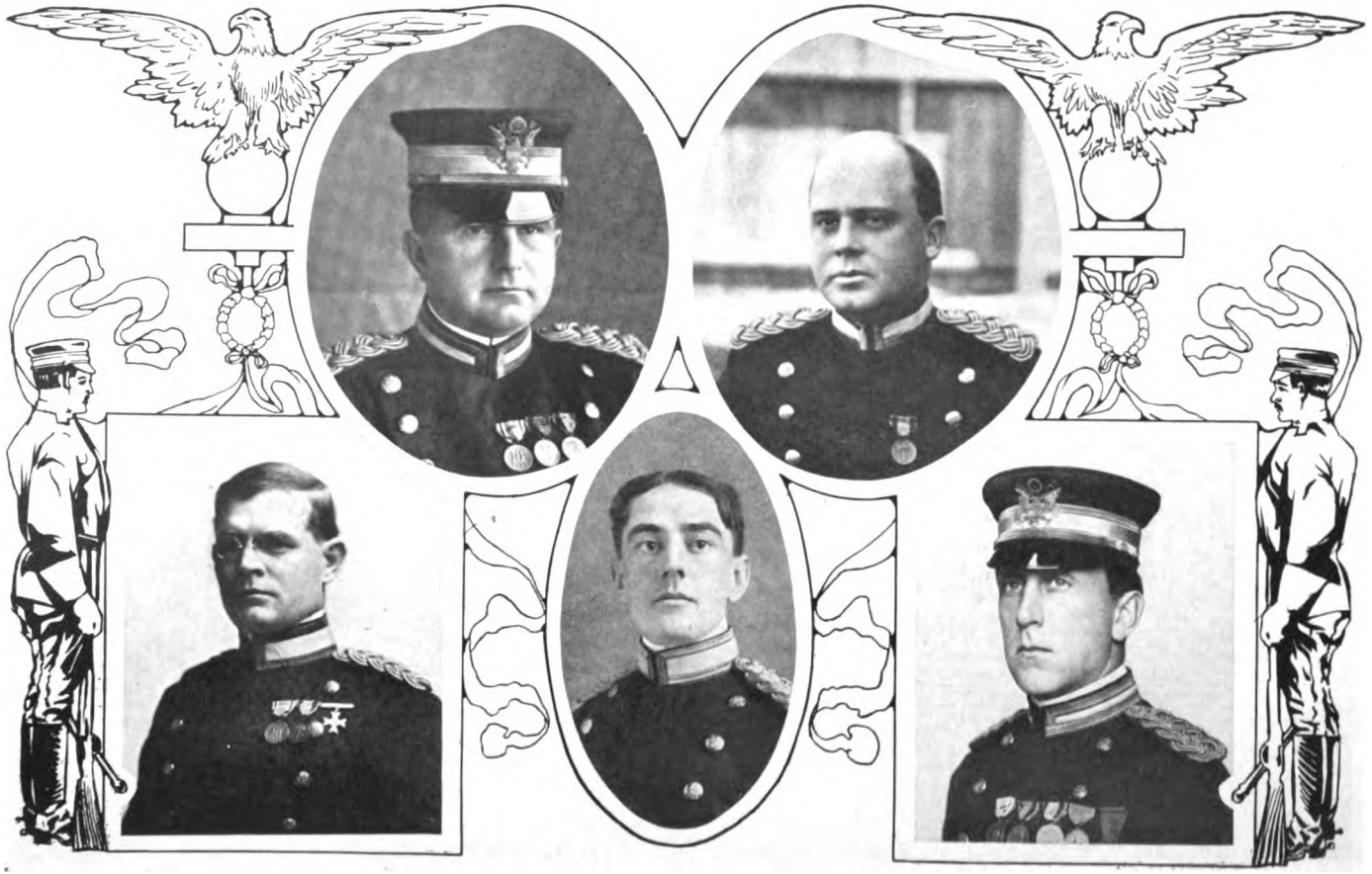
Engagement February 4–5, 1899, taking of Santa Cruz de Laguna, Pagsanjan and Malibag April, 1899; Zapote River June, 1899; China Relief Expedition February to May, 1901. Campaign in Samar Island, Philippine Islands, June, 1901, to April, 1902. In Philippine Islands August, 1898, to August, 1899; from June, 1901, to May, 1902; from June, 1905, to March, 1907.

HORATIO I. LAWRANCE

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from army; Cadet Military Academy June 18, 1892, to April 17, 1894; Sergeant, Company E, First Colorado Infantry, May 1, 1898, to July 14, 1899; Second Lieutenant, First Colorado Infantry, July 15, 1899, to September 8, 1899; Private, Corporal, Company L, Eighth Infantry, April 30, 1900, to June 30, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Twentieth Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, April 11, 1905.

Graduate Infantry and Cavalry School, 1904. Participated in all engagements leading up to, and in the assault and capture of Manila,

Digitized by Google



Horatio I. Lawrance,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Hunter Harris,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Roscoe H. Hearn,
First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry

Charles G. Sturtevant,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Paul M. Goodrich,
Second Lieutenant, First Lieutenant,
Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

Philippine Islands, during war with Spain, 1898. Assault and capture of blockhouses Nos. 5 and 6, upon outbreak of Philippine Insurrection, 1899. Participated in expeditions against, and engagements and skirmishes with, insurgents in the field, in the Philippine Islands, 1899–00–01–02. In Philippine Islands from July, 1898, to July, 1899; from October, 1900, to February 15, 1902; from October, 1904, to July, 1907.

ROBERT W. ADAMS

Born in Texas. Appointed from army; Private, Company I, Twenty-first Infantry, second-class private, Company B, First Battalion and Company E, Second Battalion Engineers, September 23, 1899, to November 19, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Thirteenth Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to Eighth Infantry April 9, 1902; transferred to Second Infantry October 5, 1904; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, August 8, 1905. In Philippine Islands from December, 1899, to July, 1902, and December, 1905 to July, 1907.

WILLIAM R. LEONARD

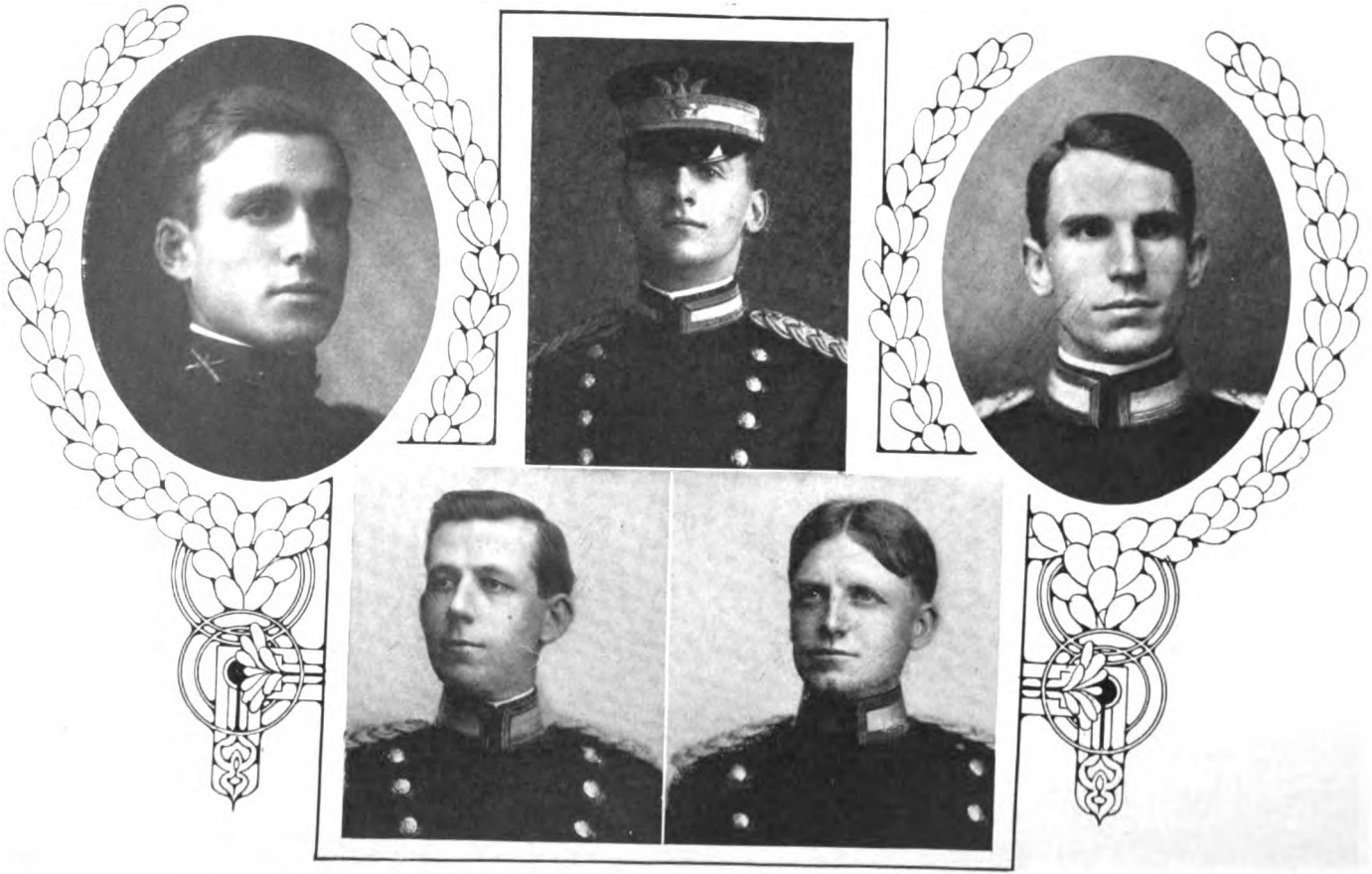
Born in Texas. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Companies H and I, Twenty-third Infantry, private and Corporal, Battery D, First Artillery, Fourth Company, C. A. C., and private and Corporal, Ninty-first Company, C. A. C., November 29, 1897, to July 2, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; transferred to Twentieth Infantry August 18, 1902; transferred to First Infantry September 9, 1903; First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 29, 1906.

Second Philippine Island Expedition, war with Spain, 1898. Engagement with Spanish forces and assault and capture of Manila, August 1898; Defense of Manila in Philippine Islands Insurrection February, 1899. Expedition to and relief of Spanish forces, in Island of Jolo, May, 1899. Expedition against Moros and capture of Balimbin, Tawi Tawi Island, Philippine Islands, June, 1900. In Philippine Islands July, 1898 to July, 1900; May, 1902 to December, 1902; April, 1905 to July, 1907.

ROBERT L. MEADOR

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Georgia; Private, Company F, First Georgia Infantry; Private and Sergeant, Company A, Third Georgia Infantry, May 14, to October 29, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant, Fifteenth Infantry, October 26, 1907; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 13, 1908; In Philippine Islands from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

Digitized by Google



James G. McIlroy,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

George Robbins Simpson,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

James E. Chaney,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

John F. Harris,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

William F. Pearson,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

HUNTER HARRIS

Born in Georgia. Appointed from Georgia; Private, Company F, First Georgia Infantry, June 12, 1898, to September 13, 1898; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 2, 1901; First Lieutenant, Eighteenth Infantry, April 23, 1907; transferred to Ninth Infantry October 26, 1907. In Philippine Islands March, 1902, to May, 1902; and from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

CHARLES G. STURTEVANT

Born in Ohio. Appointed from army; Private, acting hospital steward and hospital steward, Hospital Corps, December 22, 1898, to October 22, 1902; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, October 17, 1902; First Lieutenant, Twentieth Infantry, June 5, 1908; transferred to Ninth Infantry September 30, 1908. In Philippine Islands from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

SECOND LIEUTENANTS

HENRY S. BRINKERHOFF, JR.

Born in District of Columbia. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Sixty-sixth Company Coast Artillery, August 1, 1901, to October 9, 1903; Second Lieutenant, Fourth Infantry, October 9, 1903; transferred to Ninth Infantry March 20, 1905. In Philippine Islands from January, 1904, to——; from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

JAMES G. MCILROY

Born in Ohio. Appointed from Ohio; Cadet Military Academy, August 1, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 15, 1904. In China from November, 1904, to September, 1905.

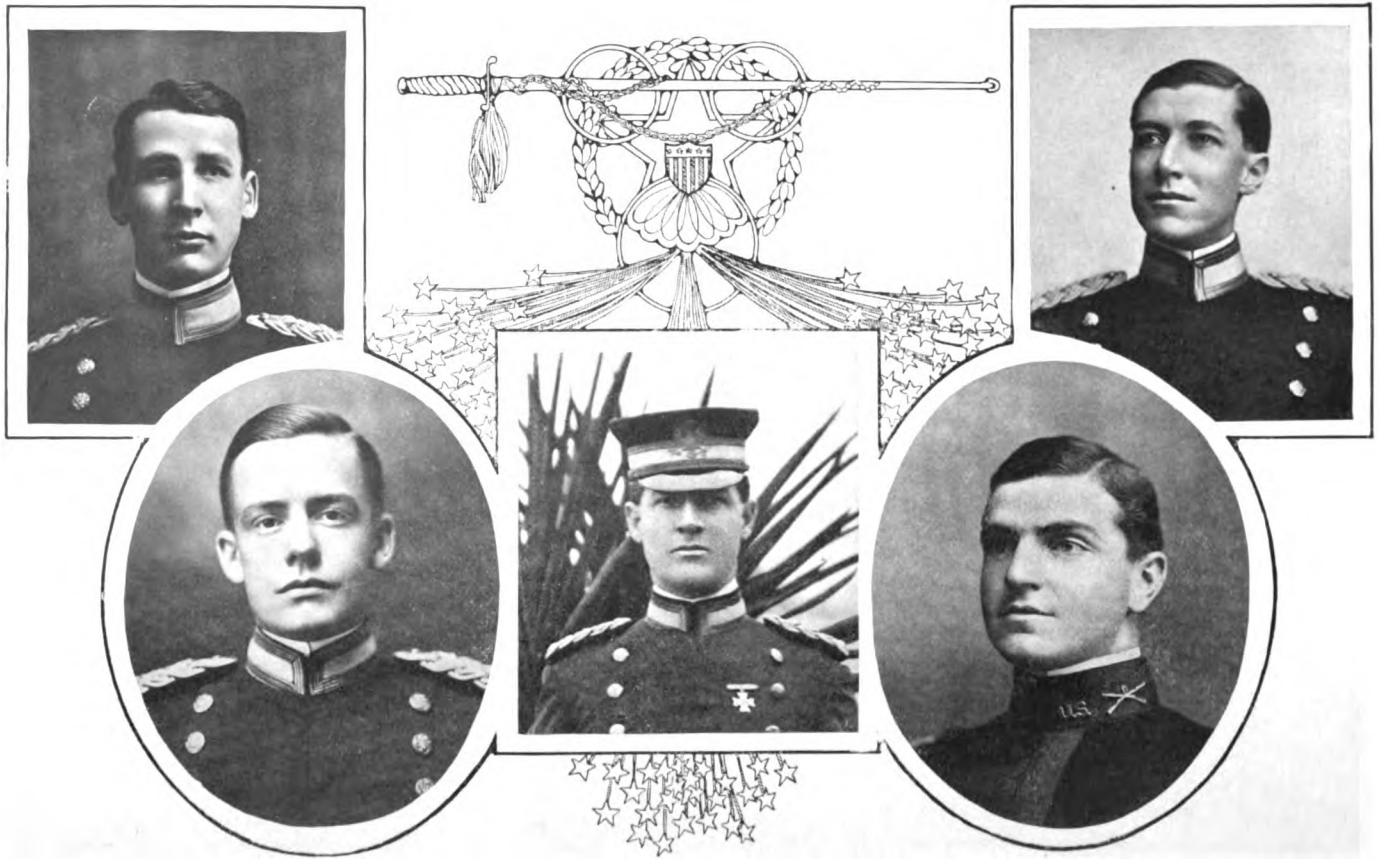
ERLE M. WILSON

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy, June 19, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 15, 1904. In Philippine Islands from June, 1905, to July, 1907.

WILLIAM F. PEARSON

Born in Ohio. Appointed from army; Private, Corporal and Sergeant, Twenty-eighth Battery, Field Artillery, February 22, 1902, to October 19, 1904; Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Infantry, October

Digitized by Google



Albert S. J. Tucker,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Charles P. Hollingsworth,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

John L. Jenkins,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Henry S. Brinkerhoff, Jr.,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Simon B. Buckner, Jr.,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

20, 1904; transferred to Ninth Infantry May 5, 1905. In Philippine Islands from July 1902 to September 1902; July, 1905, to January, 1906; from April, 1906, to July, 1907.

CHARLES A. LEWIS

Born in Indiana. Appointed from Indiana; Cadet Military Academy, July 29, 1901; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 12, 1906. In Philippine Islands from November, 1906, to July, 1907.

JOHN L. JENKINS

Born in West Virginia. Appointed from West Virginia; Cadet Military Academy, August 1, 1903; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, June 14, 1907.

CHARLES P. HOLLINGSWORTH

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Maryland; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, January 4, 1908; in Philippine Islands, about three years (dates unknown).

JAMES E. CHANEY

Born in Maryland. Appointed from Maryland; Cadet Military Academy, June, 1904, to February, 1908; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 14, 1908.

SIMON B. BUCKNER, JR.

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy, June, 1904, to February, 1908; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 14, 1908.

THOMAS J. JOHNSON

Born in Kentucky. Appointed from Kentucky; Cadet Military Academy, June, 1904, to February, 1908; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, February 14, 1908.

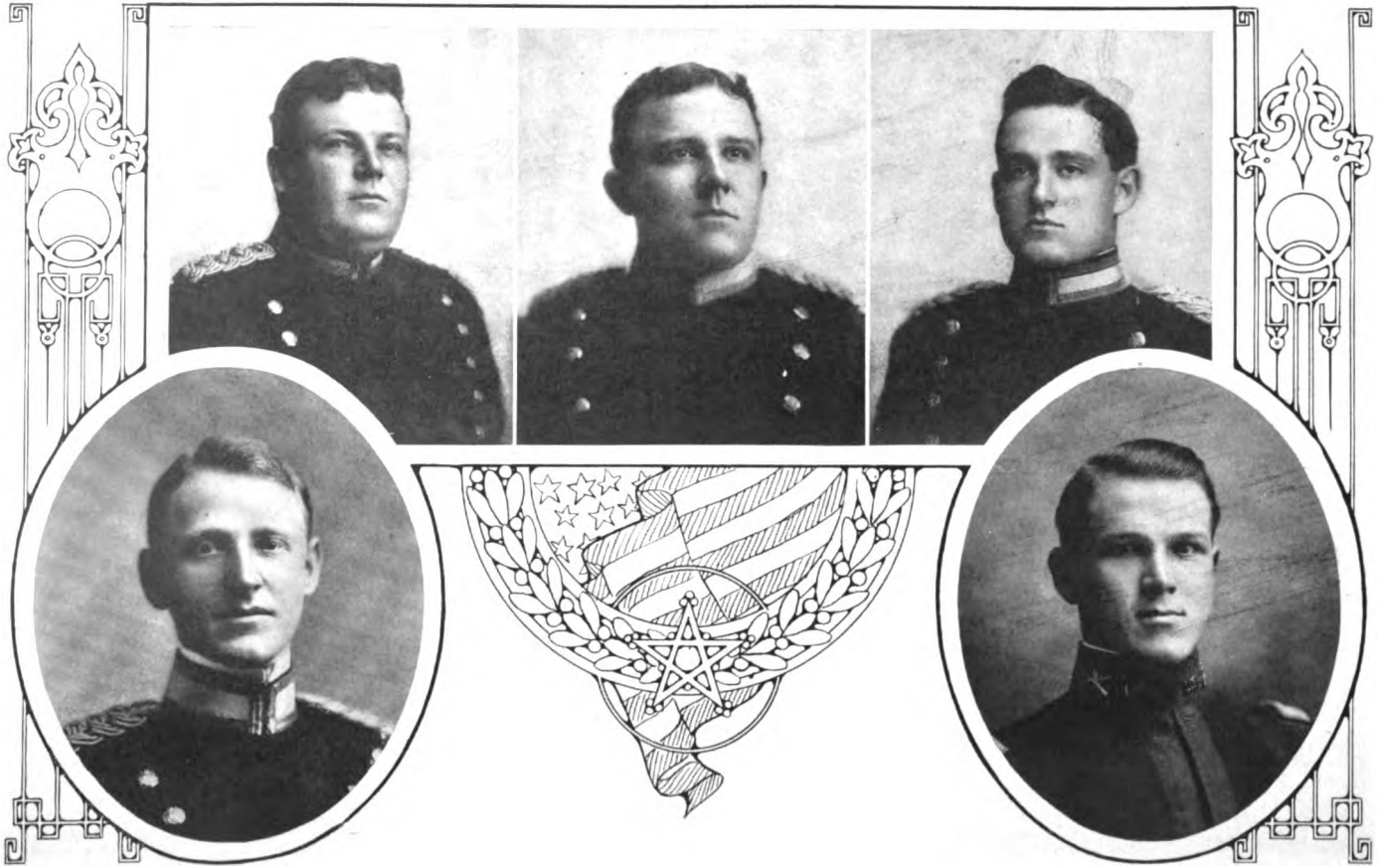
JOHN T. HARRIS

Born in West Virginia. Appointed from West Virginia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 25, 1908.

ALBERT S. J. TUCKER

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 25, 1908.

Digitized by Google



Charles A. Lewis,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Cary I. Crockett,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Erle M. Wilson.
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

John C. Walker,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

T. J. Johnson,
Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry.

Digitized by Google

GEORGE R. SIMPSON

Born in Virginia. Appointed from Virginia; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, September 25, 1908.

JOHN C. WALKER, JR.

Born in Texas. Appointed from Texas; Cadet Military Academy, June, 1906, to December, 1906; Second Lieutenant, Third Cavalry, October 3, 1908; transferred to Ninth Infantry February 5, 1909.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII

ROSTERS OF FIELD AND STAFF, NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF AND BAND AND ALL COMPANIES — FULL PAGE PICTURE OF EACH COMPANY.

FIELD AND STAFF

Colonel
Charles J. Crane

Lieutenant-Colonel
William C. Buttler

Majors.
Charles R. Noyes — John Cotter — Waldo E. Ayer

Captain and Adjutant
Fred R. Brown

Captain and Quartermaster
Hugh D. Wise

Captain and Commissary
William K. Naylor

Captain and Chaplain
Albert J. Bader

First Lieutenant and Battalion Adjutant
Frank A. Awl — Paul M. Goodrich
Horatio I. Lawrance

Second Lieutenant, Battalion Quartermaster and Commissary
Charles A. Lewis — William F. Pearson
Henry S. Brinkerhoff, Jr.

NON-COMMISSIONED STAFF

Sergeant-Major

	Years' Service
John J. Lynch	17

Commissary-Sergeant

Harry Blum	13

Quartermaster-Sergeant

John Maguth	20

Color-Sergeants

William J. Harris	20	Michael O'Brien	12

Battalion Sergeant-Majors

Luther Joralemon	18	Garrett A. Harwood	7
Harry Pforzheimer	7		

BAND

Chief Musician
Wilfred O. Thompson

Principal Musician

Lambert Plowman	1

Drum-Major

Otto Gaebel	17

Digitized by Google



Non-commissioned Staff, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google



Band, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

Sergeants

	Years' Service		Years' Service
Domingo Scott	4	Ralph G. Ford	3
Frederick W. Euchner	7	William H. Lemay	6

Corporals

George A. Reifke 5	George H. Strobel 4	Guy R. Bickel 1
Thomas Crimmins 25	Herbert I. Goodwater 4	Charles H. Bernheim 12
William F. Van Scotter 7	Fred C. Wilson 1	

Privates

Allen, James B. 4	Klevenhagen, Frank J 1	Nielson, Anton 1
Gardiner, Robert W. 1	Koller, Hans 2	Patrick, Albert H 1
Hales, Arthur 1	Lammons, Franklin B. 4	Trejo, Joseph C. 1
Horgan, Matthew A. 4	Martin, John S. 1	Voss, William E. 6

Cook

Nicholas Nauer

COMPANY A

Captain Edwin V. Bookmiller

First Lieutenant Hunter Harris — Second Lieutenant Albert S. J. Tucker

First Sergeant

Charles E. Cannon 9

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Charles Reiching 8

Sergeants

Walter Reichardt 11	Wilber H. Showalter 10
James Payne 8	Elwood I. Ifill 2

Corporals

Clifford Alka 2	John C. Glynn 4
Joseph I. Horan 2	Lewis P. Swanger 1
Michael McCullough 7	

Cooks

Max Glaser 4	John Doyle 20

Musicians

Glenn M. Robinson 2	Sandy M. Simonson 7

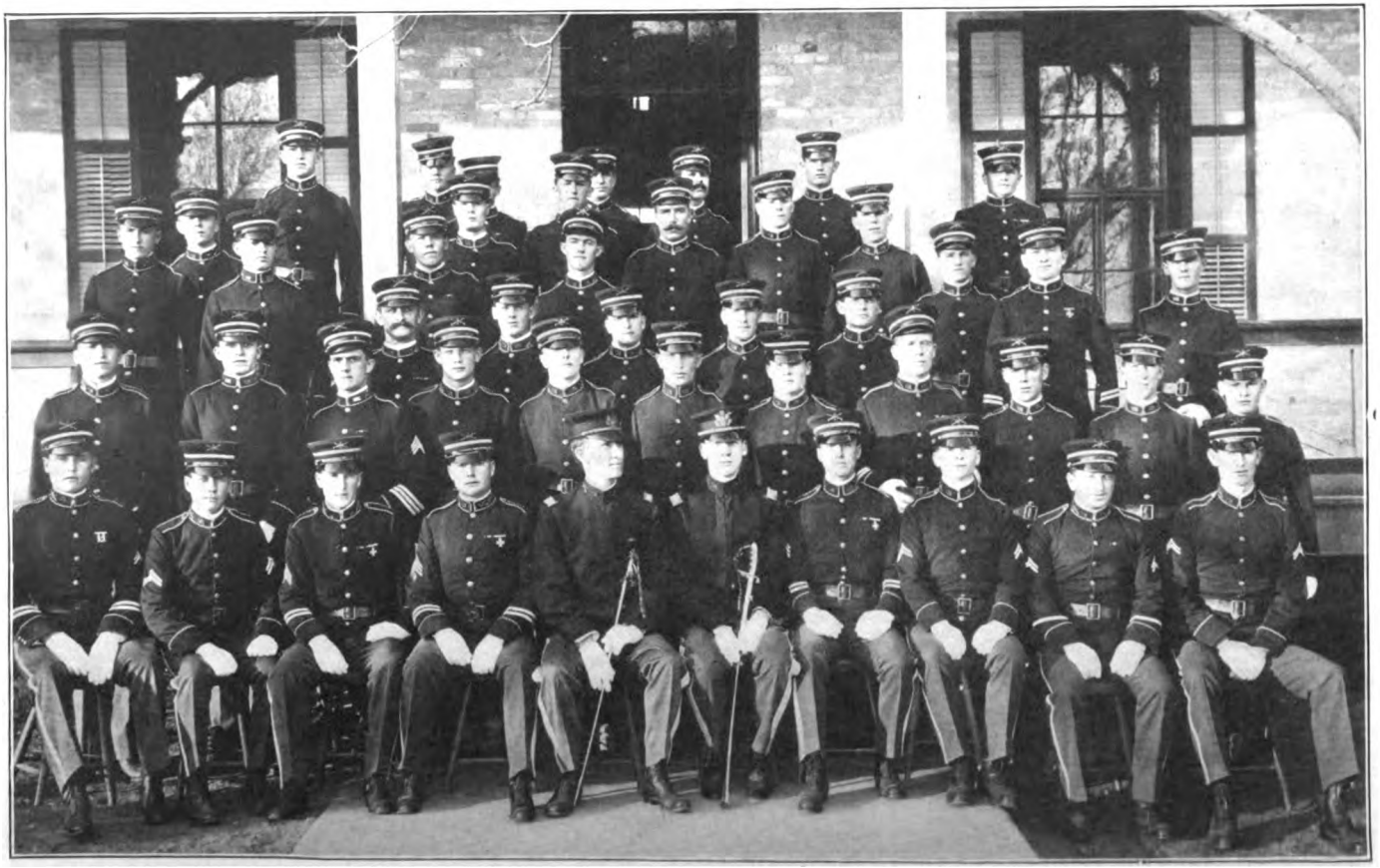
Artificer

Fred M. Laschky 15

Privates

Andersen, Tobias 1	Ferguson, Louis 1	Jones, Oliver 7
Bankston, Zack A. 1	Fett, Cal 1	Kay, Newbern O. 2
Barrett, Thomas A. 1	Ford, Andrew P. 10	Kilburn, Bert F. 8
Beson, Herchel A. 1	Gibbs, John 1	King, Rufus L. 3
Black, William E. 1	Gore, Aldine 2	Lamb, Robert E. 9
Blair, Oscar 1	Hall, Daniel 1	Littrell, Moses 1
Blair, Ray C. 1	Hammett, Walter R. 2	Lott, Percy V. 1
Casey, Thomas 7	Hansen, Has A. 1	Mahan, George T. 1
Cristerno, Aurelio 1	Harris, James K. 1	McInnis, Neil 2
Dills, William H. 1	Holladay, Clarence 2	McGuire, Terrence 8
Doran, Michael J. 10	Hooper, James J. 4	McKnabb, Joe J. 2
Eldridge, Guy 5	Jaymes, Harry 1	Newcomer, Emmet J. 1

Digitized by Google



Company A, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google



Company B, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY A — *continued*

Privates

Years' Service		Years' Service		Years' Service	
Niemann, Charles	5	Russell, Covalar	1	Taylor, Creed	1
O'Brien, John J	10	Shaw, Glaris L	1	Ward, Smith	1
Price, Ernest C	1	Smith, James B	1	Wasserman, Herman	1
Riley, K. Lulu	5	Stumbaugh, Cloyd	1	Young, Jesse M	11
Rowland, Richard R	4				

COMPANY B

Captain

Fred L. Munson

First Lieutenant

Willis P. Coleman

Second Lieutenant

John C. Walker, Jr.

First Sergeant

Thomas H. J. Bentley, 13 years

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Lewis McGlasson, 14 years

Sergeants

Harry Headley	9	Frank Williamston	21
Edwin A. Dobson	8	Alfred G. French	7

Corporals

Homer H. Hampton	8	Warren W. Winship	7	John Smith	7
Austin Vance	8	George Lowder	9	Felix Zimmerman	16

Musicians

William C. McAbee	9	James Lowe	8

Cooks

Bryan O'Hara	23	Frederick Arnt	9

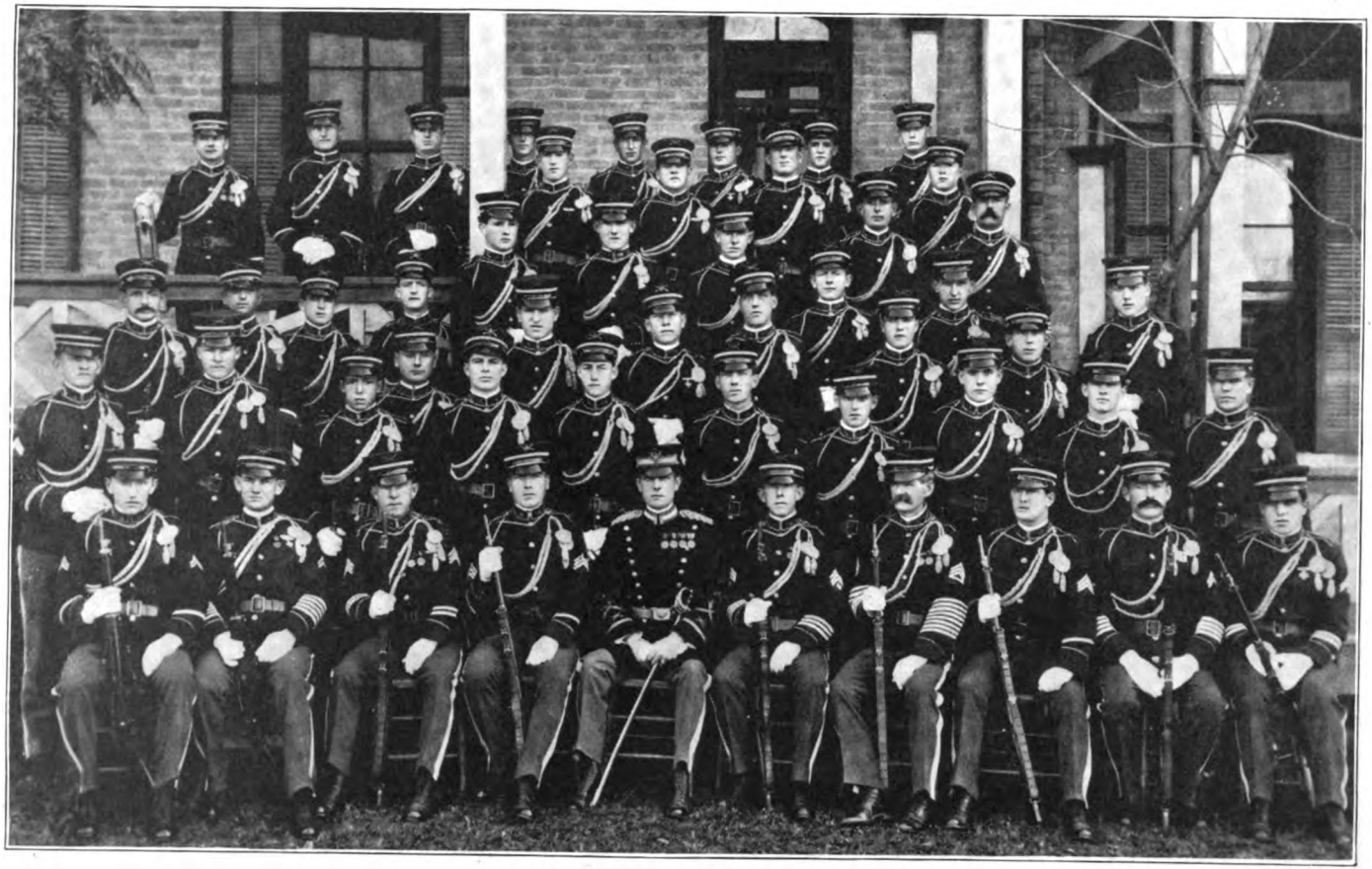
Artificer

Henri Duhamel 16

Privates

Anderson, Wesley J	4 months	Fechet, Eugene M	4 years
August, Albert	20 years	Fritz, Albert G	7 years
Barnes, Davis N	2 years	Frye, Raymond	3 years
Bones, William J	22 years	Gasser, Albert	11 years
Bradan, Carl D	10 months	Gaston, Robert	16 years
Bradley, Dennis	13 years	Gavin Patrick	10 months
Brown, Archie L	7 years	Gay, Francis M	1 years
Brown, Frank T	8 years	Guest, Ira D	4 years
Bryant, Joe	2 years	Hail, Edward	3 years
Buck, John E	1 year	Johnson, James	5 years
Budd, Otto W. Jr	2 years	Jones, Robert L	10 months
Carson, W	1 year	Jorn, August J	5 years
Crane, William T	4 months	Kaufmann, Andrew	8 years
Cushen, William	5 years	Leonard, Frank M	25 years
Daley, John	10 months	Marsh, John W	10 years
Daniels, Bernie	10 months	Matthews, Willis C	2 years
Davis, Harry	10 months	Molander, Alexander	10 years
Doty, Harry	10 years	Patterson, Robert	3 years
Duggan, Thomas P	23 years	Price, Hugh W	8 years
Dunn, Thomas	7 years	Price, John	10 months

Digitized by Google



Company C, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY B — *continued*

Privates

	Years' Service		Years' Service
Price, Oliver	6 months	Scouten, Lucius T.	23 years
Reed, John C.	10 years	Sprouse, Robert	8 years
Richard, Oda	5 years	Thompson, Edward	7 years
Schneider, Arthur	7 months	Ward, James	1 year
Schuster, Lee N.	10 months	Wood, Harry F.	10 months

COMPANY C

Captain

Harry F. Rethers

First Lieutenant

Emery T. Smith

Second Lieutenant

Charles P. Hollingsworth

First Sergeant

Thomas J. McCullough 11

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Patrick F. Quain 25

Sergeants

Henry W. McDonnell	5	Percy A. Moreton-Dyer	14		
Edward J. Hudson	5	Patrick Cox	14		

Corporals

Joseph W. Kwiatkoski	5	Conrad G. Melby	5	John Thomas	8
William Kniggie	18	George B. Adams	5	Gideon Dostie	8

Musicians

John J. Martina	11	Verne R. Longstreet	2

Cooks

Walter A. Giltner	9	George N. Reed	2

Artificer

Henry Klusmeier 14

Privates

Allen, Wesley	2	Forbes, Luther G.	1	Martin, James M.	1
Atkinson, James A.	5	Fowler, John P.	2	McShane, Oliver H.	1
Banik, Julius M.	8	Gagnon, Edmond	1	Miller, John	2
Bishop, Charles F.	1	Gunter, Edward R.	4	Powers, John W.	1
Bowling, Leonard	1	Harrell, Earnest C.	1	Railey, James	1
Carson, William B.	8	Harris, Homer D.	10	Rieth, August	2
Carter, Ira E.	1	Haynes, Arthur	2	Sampson, James C.	1
Crosley, Jake H.	1	Hendricks, Cecil E.	2	Self, Roscoe R.	2
Curran, James	1	Hogan, Joseph	4	Singer, David C.	1
Davis, Harry W.	1	Hopkins, Edward	2	Steers, Matthew M.	2
Darling, Kendall R.	2	Kaminski, Edward A.	5	Surrett, Burton	2
Donald, Byron	4	Kienly, Joseph C.	1	Toomey, John A.	4
Dulaney, Harrison H.	1	Landers, Michael J.	1	Walker, Carl H.	1
Elliott, Clifton L.	2	LeSueur, Clarence	2	West, Robert C.	6
Everingham, George H	1	Logsdon, Hubert B.	1	Whalen, John	2
Forbes, Jesse H.	1	Marshall, Earl	10	White, Roy L.	2

Digitized by Google



Company D, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY D

Captain
Joseph W. Beacham, Jr.

First Lieutenant
William A. Castle

Second Lieutenant
Cary I. Crockett

First Sergeant

	Years' Service
Edward Lytle	10

Quartermaster-Sergeant

	Years' Service
Samuel W. Cassell	6

Sergeants

Samuel P. Cooper	11	Christian Schlenker	13
Harry F. Burns	10	Daniel W. O'Neil	11

Corporals

James M. White	7	Robert L. Bolding	8	Thomas F. Galvin	9
Ora E. Todd	4	William Baron	17	James McLaughlin	8

Musicians

Wallace, Huber	1	Lewis, Toon	10

Cooks

Bruton, Samuel L	1	Towle, Warren H	9

Artificer

Kline, Julius A	1

Privates

Ash, Thomas A	1	Ezell, Lewis	1	Palmer, James M	1
Asplund, Fred O	10	Fautherree, William C	1	Porter, Thomas J	4
Baker, Wellbern H	9	Fisher, Benjamin L	1	Proue, Edward T	1
Barnhart, Herbert W	1	Fitzpatrick, Rufus J	1	Runnels, Garland D	2
Black, Roy	4	Friedlander, Davis	1	Shaughnessy, Thomas	10
Barker, Homer H	1	Hatchett, William E	1	Skalicky, Joseph C	1
Bodok, Joseph	1	Heintz, Fred	1	Smith, Decker	2
Brady, Hugh	20	Jackman, Fred	1	Smith, George	1
Brown, Charles M	3	Jones, John F	1	Smith, Joseph J	1
Bryant, Zee M	1	Kay, Wendell H	4	Solomon, Louis	1
Buckmiller, Edward	4	Leonard, George W	4	Steiner James	1
Burton, George C	11	McCord, Labe R	1	Stewart, Elzie	5
Carr, Walter F	1	Mitzkie, Paul J	11	Svata, Vencec	1
Clark, Elzie	4	Neal, Frank L	1	Tupa, Frank I	1
Corning, Frederick	7	Neshyba, Peter	1	Watson, Joseph W	4
Cox, Charles L	1	Oliver, Frank D	10	Williams, Oliver S	4
Epstein, Morris	1	Osborne, George	1		

COMPANY E

Captain
Marion M. Weeks

First Lieutenant
Robert L. Meador

Second Lieutenant
James G. McIlroy

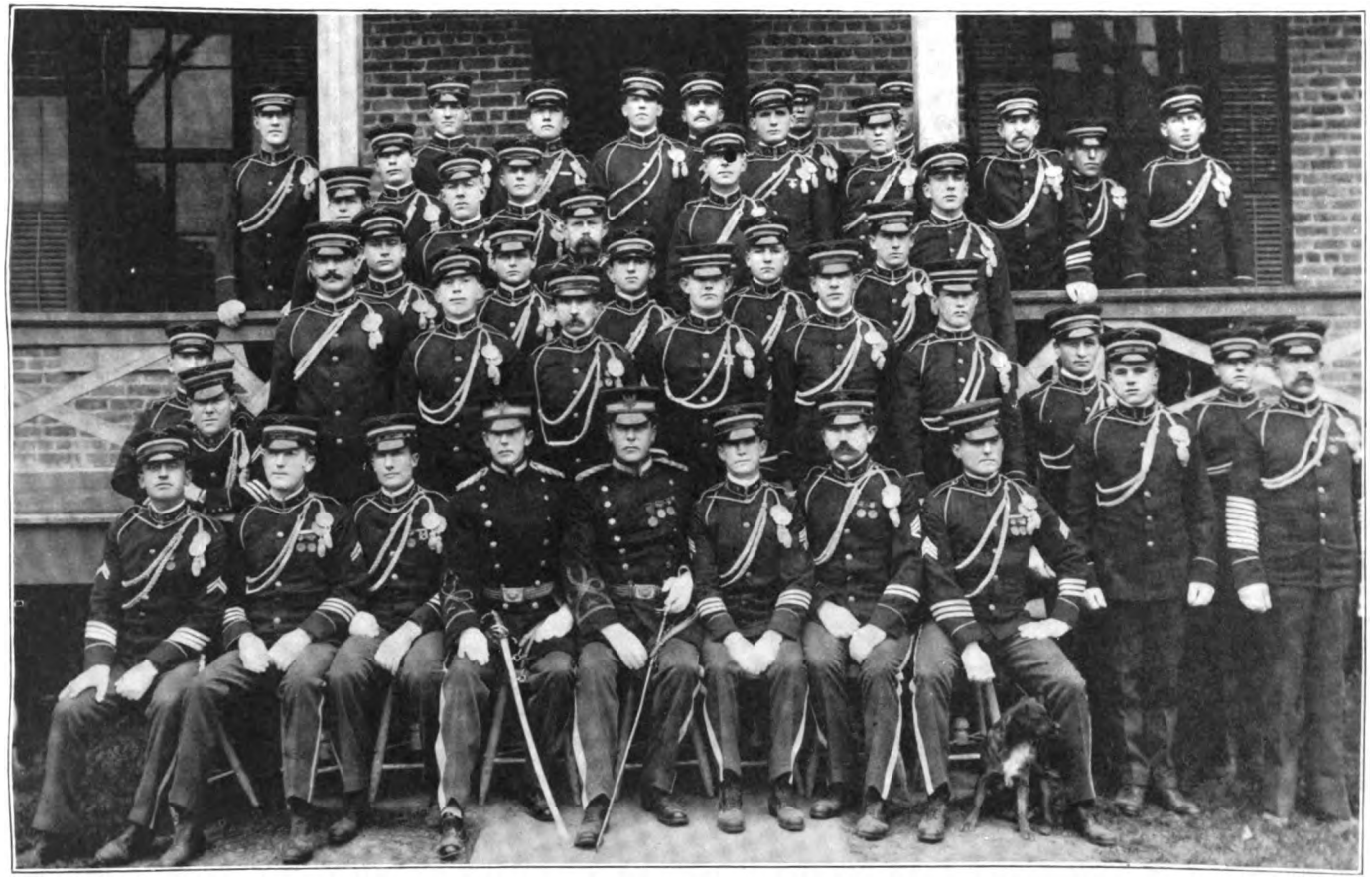
First Sergeant

	Years' Service
Kivlen, William T	11

Quartermaster-Sergeant

	Years' Service
Tully, Michael	11

Digitized by Google



Company E, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY E — *continued*

Sergeants

	Years' Service		Years' Service
Cuningham, Alexander	11	Cripps, Charles W.	10
Clough, Edward N.	10		

Corporals

Fisher, Theodore H. 11	McKee, Patrick J. 6	Kimball, Niles L. 10
McKenna, John T. 8	Toland, Joe E. 7	Kingman, Clarence A 7

Musicians

Cook, William A. 8	Turock, Frank. 9

Cooks

Clark, Albert L. 6	Bradshaw, James W. 1

Artificer

Cornehl Gustav 27

Privates

Abraham, Joseph J. 1	Harkness, John. 28	Platt, Harry V. 2
Allen, Glenn. 3	Harris, Harvey L. 1	Powell, James E. 1
Arbuckle, Frank L. 10	Hawk, Hollie. 1	Rapp, Joseph. 1
Baker, Thomas. 1	Heneghan, Thomas 1	Severance, Melvin. 1
Beck, Almus E. 1	Howard, Arthur F. 2	Starye, Joseph. 1
Blair, Robert M. 5	Hudson, William B. 1	Stewart, John R. 1
Boswell, Ernest H 1	Hull, William H. H. 4	Tobey, Herbert A. 9
Boyle, John. 1	Irby, Thomas C. 1	Wade, Levi. 2
Buckley, Florence. 6	Jarmus, Julius. 1	Walseth, Emil N. 1
Cordray, Christopher M 7	Jaten, Gilbert H. 2	Warner, Forbes H. 11
Cornell, Omer D 1	Jones, Ernest L. 1	Wassum, Leonard. 1
Dowd, Patrick J. 16	Lohman, Lewis. 1	Watson, James T. 7
Draeger, Frank. 2	McKee, James J. 1	Weir, Raymond C. 1
Evans, Robert. 1	Newman, Warren E. 5	Widman, Charles. 3
Gancsu, Joseph. 1	O'Connor, Daniel J. 11	Wilkerson, Scott C. 2
Grassman, Frank. 4	Padgett, Ebb. 2	Wynn, Samuel D. 1
Gregory, Edward. 1		

COMPANY F

Captain

Ira C. Welborn

First Lieutenant

Kaolin L. Whitson

Second Lieutenant

Simon B. Buckner, Jr.

First Sergeant

Benjamin Smith. 7

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Daniel Reagan. 11

Sergeants

Charles R. Swanstrom. 10	William Milne. 7
Frank A. Styert. 10	Earl Logan. 4

Corporals

James W. F. Allen. 10	Walter Butler. 7	Turner F. Meadows. 4
Wilber Brown. 5	Homer Brooks. 6	Ray H. Allen. 4

Musicians

Frank R. Ward. 1	John W. McDonald. 5

Digitized by Google



Company F, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY F — *continued*

Cooks

	Years' Service		Years' Service
David Reiou	10	James F. Nagle	8

Artificer

William J. Haltigan 1

Privates

Avant, Leon	7	Hendry, Isaac W	1	Nagle, Aloysius	6
Bergue, Montgomery	1	Hill, Fred C	5	O'Donnell, Neil	7
Brannan, John C	4	Hope, William C	1	Ort, William K	5
Brennan, Matthew L	1	Jones, William T	2	Ploiser, Jacob	25
Campbell, Anderson D	5	Keenan, Joseph C	1	Schiwetz, Jacob W	4
Clark, James F	15	Kersey, William	1	Schubert, Albert	2
Davis, Abe	2	Kiestinec, Joseph	1	Smith, James E	1
Doyle, Earl P	1	Maul, William F	1	Sublett, Carl L	2
Frank, Harry	1	Meyer, Charles	1	Trout, Clayton H	1
Franks, Elic H	2	Mills, Charles T	2	Underhill, John	1
Franks, Lonnie A	2	Morse, John E	1	Vanderbilt, Edwin F	4
Gilbert, Joseph A	9	Moss, William	8	White, Clinton S	5
Gray, Charley A	2	Mulresdy, Thomas M	1	White, George E	1
Grettner, Edward	4	Myers, George R	4	Woolf, Clark W	1
Havard, John	2	McDonald, Angus	1	Wright, Barnie	4
Hendry, Alva D	3				

COMPANY G

Captain

Benjamin P. Nicklin

First Lieutenant

Abraham W. Loeb

Second Lieutenant

Erle M. Wilson

First Sergeant

James M. Zortman 8

Quartermaster Sergeant

Charles W. Stine 10

Sergeants

Charles W. Long 4
Charles Heinz 9
Frank L. Dullaghan 9
George R. White 9

Corporals

Clifford Campbell	10	Dee McCarter 1
William A. MacDonnell	7	Lyman L. Lortz 4
James C. MacGregor	4	
James M. West	6	

Musicians

Joseph Hanger 20
Hugh Chrisman 3

Cooks

Phillip G. Betterton 9
James M. Black 4

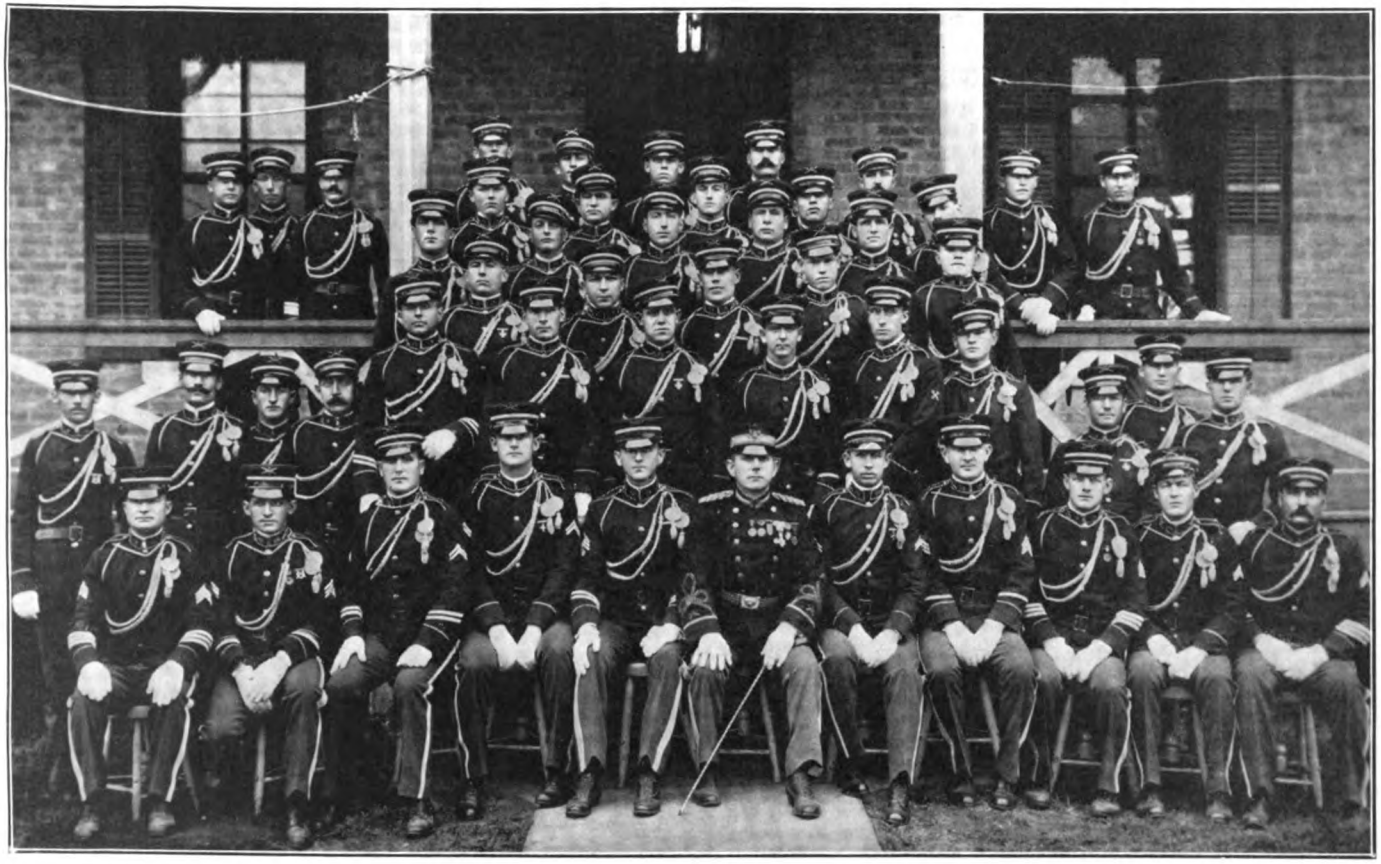
Artificer

James C. Orr 1

Privates

Barron, X	10	Brown, William H	8	Conley, William P	1
Barry, James H	1	Burke, James E	7	Crews, Jacob T	5
Beabout, Jesse	4	Cecconi, Frank	1	Dietzel, George	1
Berry, John M	5	Clausen, Chester	1	Donovan, Henry	6
Brown, Harrison F	4	Collins, John J	1	Drashkovitch, John	1

Digitized by Google



Company G, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY G — *continued*

Privates

	Years' Service		Years' Service		Years' Service
Ferry, Joseph	1	Lowenthal, Samuel	1	Reeves, Harry B	3
Gendron, Michel	1	Mahony, Denis	1	Samplowski, John	1
Gilson, Charles H	7	Martin, Hugh	10	Shanks, Frank	1
Halliburton, William M	1	McSoley, Joseph	1	Sump, William K	6
Hix, Clyde J	1	Moffit, John P	1	Swim, William S	4
Horne, Hildred	6	Moose, John M	4	Thacker, Rudolph E	1
Jacobson, William J	5	Murray, Griffin S	1	Vaughan, Marvin C	1
Josephson, Oscar W	1	Nahles, John T	1	Ward, Thoma	1
Keener, Charley R	1	Narinian, Garabed	1	Welch, Robert A	8
Langenberg, Peter V.D.	1	Nichols, James W	7	White, James H	1
Love, Jefferson D	1	Pulver, Arthur J	5	Woodward, Wiley C	5

COMPANY H

Captain

William T. Merry

First Lieutenant

Robert W. Adams.

Second Lieutenant

Thomas J. Johnson

First Sergeant

Robert F. Marsh 10

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Francis Christian 15

Sergeants

Walter L. German 17
John J. McCarthy 7
Otto Heiss 15
Charles G. Wilks 7

Corporals

Sidney E. Josey 7	Willis E. Remington 1	Henry L. Thompson 4
James E. Gray 10	John Ledford 7	Royal L. Greene 7

Musicians

David L. Perrin 4
James J. Brown 1

Cooks

James E. Griffen 7
Adolph E. Anlauf 5

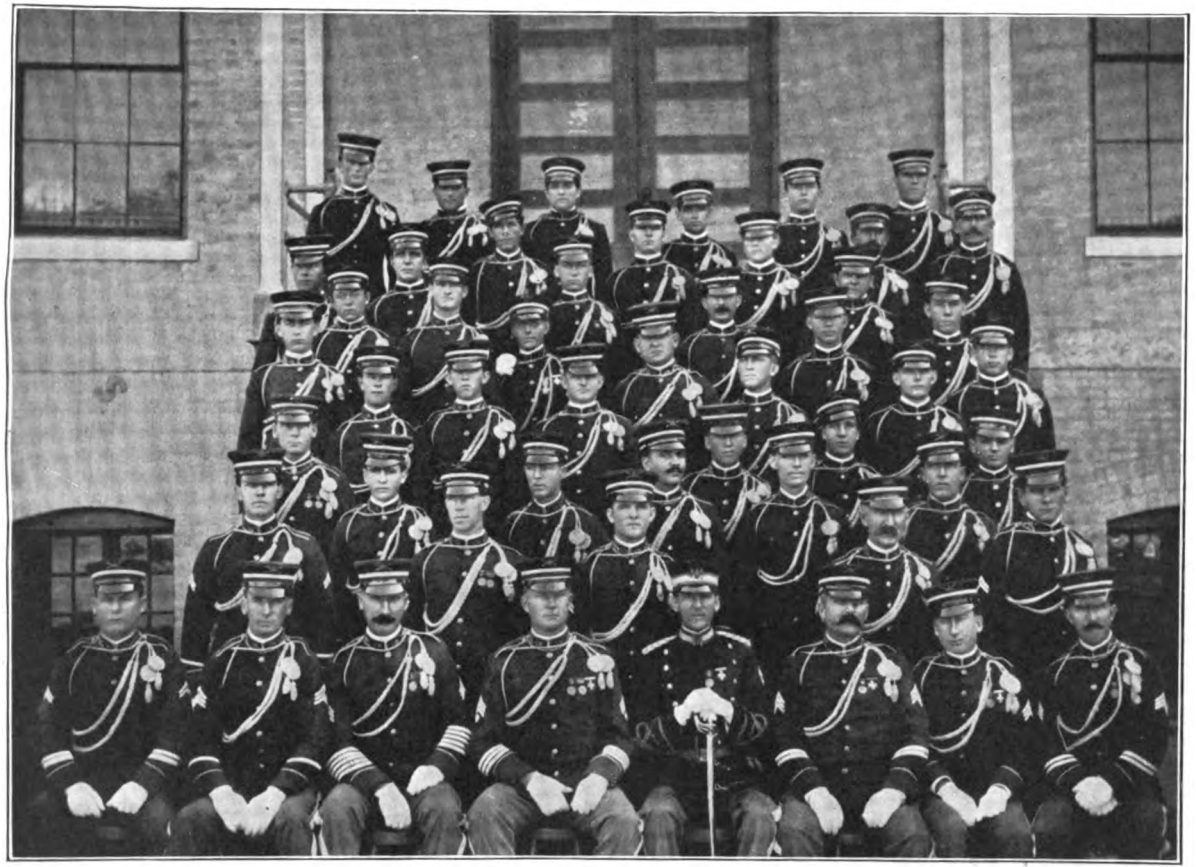
Artificer

Ernest B. Herdener, 4

Privates

Adolphe Hermann 7	Farien, Ova 4	Kostrikin Michael 2
Arathoon, Arathoon A 2	Flynn, Martin J 1	Lindley, George A 1
Bell, Norman W 4	Gelineau, Oscar 1	Lucas, George E 1
Berkey, Charles M 1	Glass, Aron 1	Lyons, Thomas J 7
Billings, Gordon H 1	Godkin, Benjamin 1	Mays, Porter R 1
Blount, James P 4	Hardee, Eugene B 4	McCallum Bruce 1
Bottom, Earl M 1	Hardiman, Marnell J 4	McClister, William 7
Bruez, Frank I 9	Harper, Roy 1	McDermott, Patrick 13
Crawford, Joseph H 7	Harris, George W 2	McDonald, Frank 3
Davis, Wood 1	Hawkins, Charles L 4	Morrow, Andrew J 1
Eighmy, James W 1	Hay, Marvin E 4	Peabody, Carl T 1
Endon, Walter H 1	Hayes, Leslie F 3	Pickett, George E 4

Digitized by Google



Company H, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY H—*continued*

Privates

Years' Service		Years' Service		Years' Service	
Reese, John C	1	Vassar, Calvin F	1	Willis, Collie	4
Roberts, James H	1	Waite, Walter E	10	Witt, Wesley W	1
Sanders, Henry H	1	Waldie, Norman	1	Wymore, Robert S	10
Scobee, Albert B	1	Waller, William W	1	Yost, Harry	1
Toler, Lewis K	1				

COMPANY I

Captain
George W. Wallace

First Lieutenant
Charles G. Sturtevant

Second Lieutenant
John T. Harris

First Sergeant

Richard A. McDonald 17

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Patrick Cassidy 15

Sergeants

Albert J. Duxbury 9	Louis Herskind 11	George Geiger 15
Michael Rooney 6	Peter Hamilton 11	

Corporals

Samuel R. Hughson .. 7	Robert W. McFarland 7	John L. Thompson ... 1
Francis J. Donovan ... 5	James A. McGrath 7	

Musicians

Edward L. Fidler ..... 1 John Frey 1

Cooks

William G. Post ..... 18 James G. Drew 2

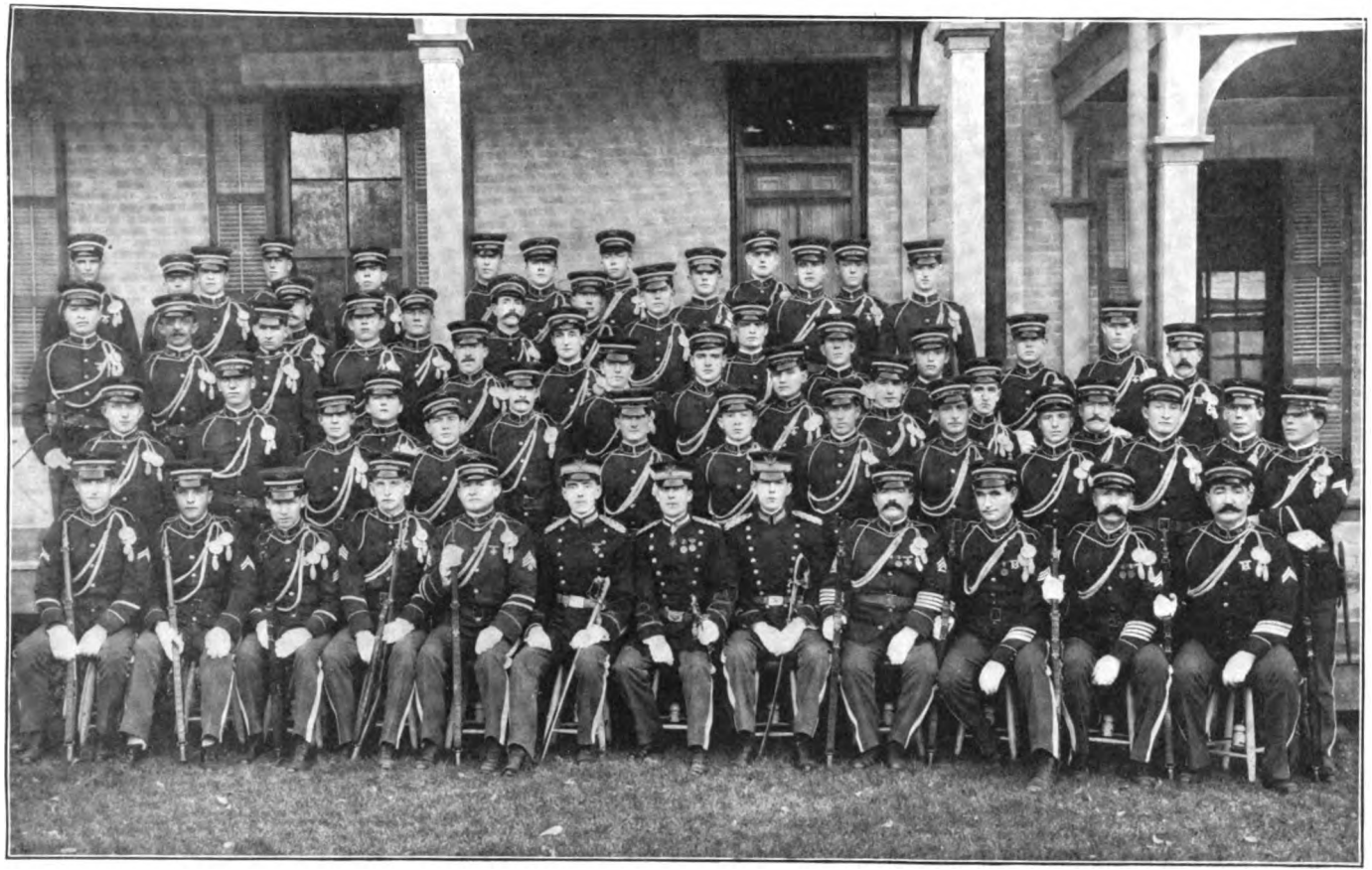
Artificer

Moses K. Rains 3

Privates

Ader, Frank W 1	Gladstein, Meyer 1	Miller, Benjamin H ... 1
Atkins, Jack 1	Greenberg, Isidor 1	Nash, George 4
Barker, William 24	Graham, Grover C 1	Neville, Clair H 2
Beck, Edward P 5	Hasenmeier, Christ ... 2	O'Brien, Columb 4
Bell, Charles H 1	Hensley, Arbrey L 1	Persat, Louis 5
Boyne, William J 1	Herman, Joseph H ... 1	Pinc, Frank 7
Brown, Herbert E 5	Hicklin, Frank M 1	Pitts, Robert C 5
Brown, John P 1	Hurt, William T 7	Ratliff, Larkin 4
Candido, Louis 1	Jordan, Michael J 4	Rourke, Thomas W ... 9
Chandley, Banner 1	Lambert, Charles A ... 2	Seering, Albert A 1
Davis, Fred 4	Laugius, Joseph 4	Selman, Forrest B 2
Deskau, Arthur E 3	Lynch, William 5	Shapar, Ossip 1
Dorsch, Joseph 25	Mark, Harry 1	Solomon, Ethel 2
Duff, Henry J 2	Maynard, John W 2	Tabb, Carl R 2
Elton, Stephen R 1	McLanahan, Clarence C 2	Thurman, Charles W .. 2
Everson, Frank R 2	McQuillen, John T 10	Tylenda, Paul 1
Firth, Charles E 4	Meskill, James J 4	Wood, Wilmot I 1
Flanagan, John A 1	Mihaly, Emanuel 2	

Digitized by Google



Company I, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY K

Captain
Clifton C. Kinney

First Lieutenant
William R. Leonard

Second Lieutenant
George R. Simpson

First Sergeant

	Years' Service
Albert A. Riedinger	11

Quartermaster-Sergeant

	Years' Service
Leonoreon D. Harvey	3

Sergeants

Daniel McGowan	13	Arthur Brockmann	9
Leon J. Nickerson	10	Frank Rabke	10

Corporals

Doty T. Jeter 5	John Brown 2	Robert J. Shewman 6
Harrison Brandenburg 10	William N. Wright 2	John L. Copas 1
Frank Webb 10		

Cooks

James F. Sargent	7	John B. Kinder	8

Musicians

Frederick Miller	2	John Broska	5

Artificer

Charles F. Thrane	1

Privates

Allen, James 1	Graves, Roy 1	McReynolds, George 1
Armistead, Charles H. 1	Harries, Sam 1	Mitchell, William M 1
Beauchea, Adelard J. 1	Hawkins, Stuart 2	Morris, George 1
Berry, Quincy L. 2	Heerndon, Dillard 4	Morris, Raymond C. 1
Blickter, Maximillian. 1	Hessler, Louis 1	Mount, Robert F 1
Boggs, John. 1	Hidalgo, Ernesto 4	Ober, August 1
Bolton, John W 1	Jackson, Jack W 1	Peterson, James 1
Bromley, Tolbert F. 4	Jasper, Chalmer P. 2	Pope, Sam W. 4
Burnett, Samuel 1	King, Joseph H. 1	Ray, Horace R. 1
Carney, John M 10	King, Joseph H. 1	Raynes, Graves B. 1
Carter, Ray W 1	Kremer, William M. 1	Salter, Clippard L. 5
Clark, Charles H 7	Lynch, Timothy 26	Shaw, Oscar L. 1
Crepeau, Joseph 1	Macduff, Daniel S. 5	Smith, David M 2
Cronkhite, Levi C. 1	Mapp, John J. 1	Surratt, Aytch V 1
Eliasz, John. 2	Marshall, Henry 1	Thewlis, Thomas J 4
Fisher, Eagleton 1	Massing, Peter 25	Thompson, Jesse C. 4
Gee, Eddie. 1	McCabery, Robert. 1	Thornburgh, Wayman 1
Goad, Thomas H. 7	McGrath, John P. 11	Whitaker, Thomas J. 1

COMPANY L

Captain
Reynolds J. Burt

First Lieutenant
Roscoe H. Hearn

Second Lieutenant
James E. Chaney

First Sergeant

August Scholle	26

Quartermaster-Sergeant

Collis T. Baxter	6

Digitized by Google



Company K, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY L—*continued*

Sergeants

	Years' Service		Years' Service
Alfred A. DeGroot	11	Edward J. Harbison	17
Philip Barrett	25	John Hubble	7

Corporals

John J. Heffert 9	Fred J. Thomas 1	Daniel I. Bridges 9
Willis Vrooman 17	Joseph Brown 11	
Louis G. Laberdie 4	Charles W. Henry 5	

Musicians

Herman C. Shay 5	Joe Haegely 1

Cooks

Edward B. Wells 11	George Vickery 1

Artificer

Samuel Birney 1

Privates

Abbott, Fred J 1	Glover, William B 2	Normand, Louis 4
Amend, Homer J 1	Graves, William L 2	Norris, John B 2
Blanshan, Matthew 1	Gustafson, Charles J 7	Nusbaum, Harry R 2
Brown, Thomas L 1	Hart, William H 1	Powell, Columbus L 1
Butler, George 2	Hill, Edward S 10	Pugh, Jacob E 2
Cain, William F 1	Holtry, David F 2	Reed, Fred 9
Caldwell, Harry E 1	Hummer, Albert K 1	Rinkel, William 1
Clark, Lionel M 1	Jackson, Walter G 2	Ryan, John A 1
Cobb, Brice H 2	Jones, Henry H 1	Sackrider, Ira 13
Cole, William F 1	Kaplan, Morris 1	Shafner, Harley M 7
Coughlin, William 6	Keith, Francis A 1	Spencer, Herbert 4
Cunliff, Mark W 2	Kendall, Rollie W 2	Spoonhour, Christia 2
Dawkins, William E 4	Klein, Harry 1	Stepp, James M 4
Derrington, George G. 2	Lambert, Louis 9	Stone, Herman C 1
Dyer, Elijah C 1	Lawrence, James D 1	Walpole, Edward 2
Eye, Otto C 1	Ledger, Joseph 1	White, Ralph 1
Fahnestock, Harry A. 2	Mahoney, John J 1	White, James J 2
Gady, Frank 5	Marshall, Alfred J 4	

COMPANY M

Captain

Reuben Smith

First Lieutenant

Herbert L. Evans

Second Lieutenant

John L. Jenkins

First Sergeant

Alexander J. McKenzie 10

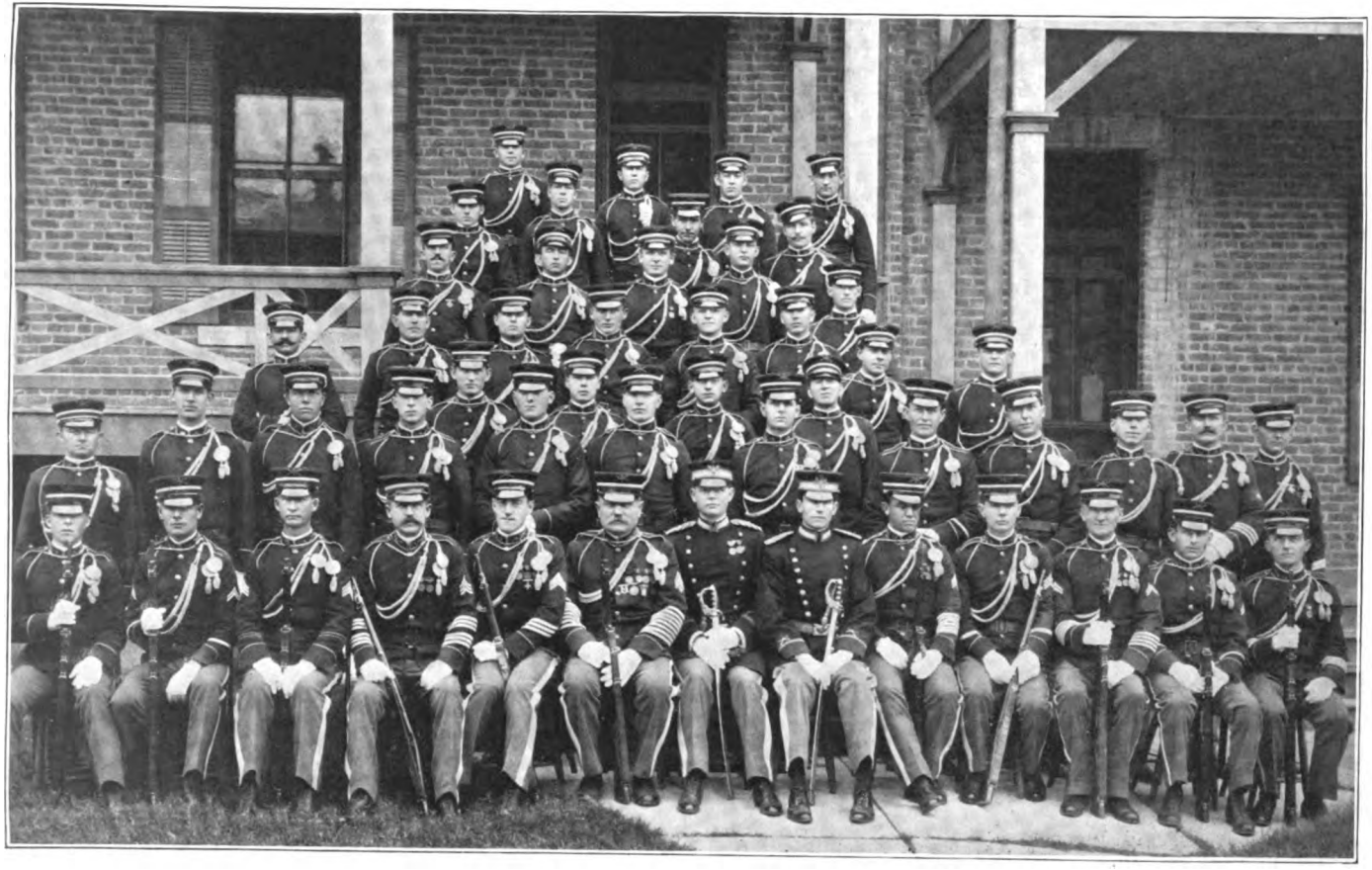
Quartermaster-Sergeant

George Howard 9

Sergeants

Patrick J. Meehan 8	Peter Kavanaugh 15
Lewis A. Powless 6	Gilbert W. Brown 9

Digitized by Google



Company L, Ninth Infantry, 1909.

Digitized by Google



Company M, Ninth Infantry, 1900.

Digitized by Google

COMPANY M — *continued*

Corporals

	Years' Service		Years' Service
Joseph W. Bentley	4	Elmer A. Roberts	4
Thomas W. Wilkes	4	John Mulryan	4
Grant V. Vickery	7	John J. Canapke	7

Musicians

Francis H. Ivers	1	Ray Hubbell	1

Cooks

William Benzin	4	Edward B. Grant	7

Artificer

Robert Stamm	1

Privates

Alexander Hosea	4	Eveans, Arthur	1	Peters, Ben	1
Allen, Benjamin F	1	Finney, Norman J	1	Pierce, Edd	1
App, John H	1	Fritch, William	4	Porter, Grant	10
Arisohn, Emil	1	Gailbreath, Robert B.	1	Powers, Charlie H	1
Arnold, George	1	Gawlas, William E	1	Reilly, Henry A	1
Barnell, Joseph	1	Gewalt, Richard W	1	Sampson, George H	1
Bingham, Frank U	1	Goodman, Charles W.	5	Shore, Jesse P	5
Bloomenfeld, Max	1	Hall, Clement C	1	Simmons, Fred	9
Boodry, Frank	1	Hanly, John	23	Stewart, Woodson	3
Boylan, Patrick M	1	Johnson, Wilmer R	1	Tignor, George D	1
Burns, Charles J	1	Jones, Walter J	1	Thomas, Ben	1
Buzby, John M	1	Lavacchia, Michael R.	1	Vines, John H	1
Caldwell, Percy G	2	Lynch, Noah E	1	Walkonen, Otto	1
Carson, George	4	McGrew, Charles	4	Wason, Charles H	1
Davis, James P	1	Newman, Otto	29	Webb, James W	4
Edmonds, Bert	1	Patrick, John L	2	Wershing, George	20

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX A

The following extract from the *Buffalo Express* describing the reburial of nine soldiers of the Ninth Infantry is reported by Captain P. C. Harris, Ninth Infantry, as being an accurate account of this notable ceremony:

One summer evening 87 years ago a column of American soldiers, under Colonel Winfield Scott, and a force of British soldiers, under General Drummond, met in deadly conflict on and about a hill back from Niagara River and about one and one half miles from the falls. American histories differ from the British histories as to the strength of the respective forces, their positions, and as to the ultimate outcome, but the annals on both sides agree that the Battle of Lundy's Lane was one of the bloodiest contests fought in the war of 1812. The roar of cannon, the shriek of grapeshot, the rattle of rifle volleys and the clash of sabres and bayonets lasted until darkness set in. Next morning when the sun rose, its deepest crimson could not vie with the trails of red that ran down from the eminence now known as Drummond Hill, and through Lundy's Lane. American history gives the American loss in killed and wounded as 743, and the British loss as 878. Histories on both sides agree that the loss amounted to fully one fourth of the number of men engaged.

Now mark the change. October 19, 1901, 100 American soldiers, armed as if for battle, marched across the big steel-arch bridge near Niagara Falls, invaded Canadian territory, passed through Lundy's Lane and mounted to the very eminence where the battle of July 25, 1814, had been fought. No enemy opposed them. It was on a mission of peace they went. They were met at the middle of the bridge by their friends, the former enemy, unarmed save for the sabres of the officers, and united by the ties of international friendship, the two bodies marched together to the Drummond Hill Cemetery, and there, jointly, laid to rest, in reburial, the bones of nine American soldiers who had fought and been slain in that terrible battle.

It was a beautiful ceremony, a beautiful token of the amity that now exists between nations that less than a century ago were bitter enemies. In the assemblage of civilians gathered there were citizens of the United States and subjects of the King of Great Britain. The tribute showed by Britain in admitting armed soldiers into Canada, for the first time since the days of strife, local historians say, and in assisting in the ceremonies in honor of American soldiers, was returned in another ceremony that immediately followed the first. The United States soldiers assisted in the function of the unveiling of a fountain erected in Niagara Falls, South, Ontario, to the memory of the late Queen Victoria.

This was another beautiful and imposing ceremony, in which a British speaker paid high tribute to the President of the United States and an American speaker did honor to the British nation and its departed Queen. No words can describe the stirring of emotions in that crowd of Canadians and Americans when, at the conclusion of the ceremony, three hearty cheers were given for the King of England and then for the President of the United States. And no more fitting, more joyful

Digitized by Google

ending to a glad day than what was beheld when the soldiers in red, taking leave of the soldiers in blue, at the Canadian end of the bridge, cheered them home.

The bones of the nine soldiers were unearthed in Drummond Hill Cemetery a few months ago, when a new grave was being dug, about November, 1900. It was at first thought that they were British soldiers. The bones of many redcoats had been found in that vicinity from time to time, and six years ago there was a general reburial of them, and the building of a tall monument to their memory near the center of the pretty little cemetery on the hill. According to Canadian tradition, the British, left victors on the field of battle, buried their own dead, but burned the bodies of the Yankees. The finding of the bones of the nine Yankee soldiers, unmistakably identified as such by the buttons on the remnants of their once blue uniforms, has convinced some Canadians that the old tradition is erroneous to some extent. The discovery of the bodies in a grave leads to the conclusion that either the victors, according to the Canadian viewpoint, buried at least some of the Yankees, or that there were at least enough Yankees left after the battle to do that ceremony themselves.

Only one other body of an American has been dug up on the battle-field of Lundy's Lane. It was that of Captain Abraham F. Hull of the Ninth Infantry, to which regiment the nine other Yankees, as their buttons showed, belonged. The bones of Captain Hull, unearthed several years ago, were reburied in an isolated spot at the south end of Drummond Hill Cemetery. The grave into which the remains of his nine comrades were laid yesterday is close beside it.

When the discovery of the nine soldiers was reported to Harlan W. Brush, United States consul at Niagara Falls, Ontario, he transmitted the information to the State Department at Washington. In doing so he suggested that the bones be taken either to Fort Niagara or Fort Porter, on the American side, for reinterment. But later, at the request of Canadian officials and members of the Lundy's Lane Historical Society, Consul Brush recommended that the reburial take place at Lundy's Lane battle-field. This recommendation was approved by the State Department and the War Department, and then the arrangements for ceremonies were made.

It was a happy thought that suggested the unveiling of the Queen Victoria drinking fountain, in the village near-by, at the same time, and it was by a happy coincidence (not by pre-arrangement, the inhabitants say,) that both events took place on the birthday of George W. Ellis, reeve (which means president) of the village.

Among those who were especially invited to take part in the exercises were Colonel William H. Michael, representing the State Department; Captain P. C. Harris, representing the War Department and also the Ninth Infantry; Captain R. P. Hobson, representing the Navy Department; the Honorable Peter A. Porter, president of the Niagara Frontier Historical Society; Andrew Langdon, president of the Buffalo Historical Society; the Reverend Canon Bull, president of the Lundy's Lane Historical Society; President John N. Thompson of the Thorold and Beaverdam's Historical Society; Major W. A. Mann, in command at Fort Porter; Captain L. S. Sorley, in command at Fort Niagara; Colonel Cruikshank of Fort Erie, of the Forty-fourth Infantry, Canadian Militia; Doctor W. W. Thompson of Niagara Falls, South, Ontario, Captain of the army medical staff; Reeve R. P. Slater of Niagara Falls, Ontario, Reeve Ellis of Niagara Falls, South, and Reeve Greer of Niagara Falls, Center, Ontario.

Digitized by Google

To the strain of martial music the boys in blue and the American guests, escorted by the boys in red, marched over one and one-half miles of road that lies between Niagara Falls Center and Niagara Falls South. On Main Street, just east of the street known as Lundy's Lane, is Morse's undertaking establishment, where the remains of the soldiers to be honored reposed in a casket awaiting reburial. Thither the troops went direct, followed by the guests in carriages from the American side and met there by the guests from the Canadian side.

The troops halted in front of the undertaking establishment, and formed a long line facing it. The remains of the nine men lay in one casket of ordinary size. Each of the nine skulls was within a small glass case of its own and the other bones were heaped at the lower end of the coffin. The casket was covered with black cloth and lined with white satin. Its handles were of brass and on a silver plate on top was this inscription: "Remains of nine soldiers from the Ninth Regiment, United States Infantry, killed at Lundy's Lane July 25, 1814. Reinterred October 19, 1901." Suspended from the ceiling, and forming a background for the casket, were a British flag and an American flag, drooping in graceful festoons across each other. On the casket was a large wreath of galax leaves and cream and white roses, sent by Consul Brush, and several other floral pieces sent by local officials

At four o'clock the six privates emerged slowly, with bared heads, bearing the casket on their shoulders. Its appearance was now changed. It was entirely concealed by a large American flag, and upon the flag, the full length of the coffin, were piled the floral tributes from Canadians, to which those brought by the boys in blue had been added.

The pall-bearers halted at the curb while the band played a funeral march and the American escort stood at attention and presented arms, the Canadian escort also standing at attention. When the music ceased the troops formed in marching order, and, preceded by the band, playing another funeral march, and, followed by the guests on foot, marched up the hill to the cemetery. Entering a gate to the south of the Drummond Hill Presbyterian Church, which stands beside the cemetery on the south, the procession passed around the church to a side entrance to the cemetery, thence back along the south side of the cemetery, where was an open grave beside that of Captain Hull. The American soldiers lined up on one side of the grave, the Canadian soldiers on the other. Between them the pall-bearers set down their flower-decked burden. The Reverend Canon Bull stood near the foot of the grave, with Archdeacon Houston on one side of him and the Reverend Canon McKenzie on the other. While the casket was being lowered into the grave, the Reverend Canon Bull began the reading of the regular Church of England burial service. When he came to the Lord's Prayer the other clergymen recited it with him. In addition to the regular service, the Reverend Canon Bull said two extra prayers for the occasion. The first was: "Grant, O Lord, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by Thy governance that Thy church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Amen." The other was: "Forasmuch as it hath pleased Almighty God of His infinite wisdom to charge his faithful people here on earth to fulfill offices of piety with reverence in His sight, and with becoming respect to the living and the dead, we, therefore, commit these mortal remains of nine soldiers of the United States, of 1814 to the grave on the field where they fell in action,

Digitized by Google

earth to earth, dust to dust, ashes to ashes, looking for the general resurrection at the last day, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Amen."

At the words, "earth to earth, dust to dust, ashes to ashes," Captain Harris, the living representative of the regiment to which the dead soldiers had belonged, standing close to the foot of the grave, sprinkled dirt thrice upon the box, which was now resting in the grave, bared of the flag and the flowers.

A bugler stepped forward from the ranks of the boys in blue, sounded taps in slow, clear, sad tones that echoed far over the hill; then the boys in blue dropped back and fired a salute of three volleys, after which the band played "Nearer, My God, to Thee."

That concluded the reburial services.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX B

"A FEW CLIPPINGS"

THE YELLOW PERIL

By William F. Mannix

Respectfully dedicated to the memory of Colonel Liscum, and to his gallant regiment, the Ninth United States Infantry, whose crowning laurel wreath was their charge at Tientsin, China, during the assault upon the "Walled City," July 13, 1900, by the author.

At Tien-tsin on that July day,
Barbaric thousands in array,
Flanked every road and every way,
And black wall standing grimly.

Frantic horde of Boxers there —
Imperial banners high in air
Flung loud a taunt in yellow glare
To God and man insulting.

Gathered imps of hell were they,
Trampling under foot, in clay,
Brave doctrines of Christianity
And all that is uplifting.

Madly laughed that fiendish horde,
Before whose fiery brand and sword,
Men and women, with but a word
Died — for mercy pleading.

* * *

What mercy for such as them?
Helpless women, children, men?
Foreign devils! Clear the glen!
Bow ye Christians, kneel ye!

Yeild now ye devils of the West!
Bow low ye down at this behest
Lest from thy bosoms proud we wrest
Thy Christian heart most fiercely!

* * *

Brave men, of many nations, were
Arrayed in solid phalancs there —
Ready ever to do and dare
For God and country, bravely.

The clarion sounds "Now is the hour!"
Men of freedom in your power!
With your leaden bullets shower
The fiends of darkness, falling!

Across the open plain they go,
Crusaders, not of long ago,
But warriors — aye, for weal or woe —
The Warriors of the Nations!

Plunged they into fires of hell,
Midst the crackling shot and shell;
Then it was brave Liscum fell,
Glad to die on duty!

Briton, Russian, Frank and Hun,
Braves from 'neath Italia's sun,
Austria's bayonet and Japan's gun,
Entered combat proudly!

But first and foremost in the fight,
Used to battling in the right,
Silver stars, and stripes so bright,
Led the allies onward!

Stormed the trenches and the wall,
Colonel, Captain, Private fall,
Answering nobly one God's own call
In Tientsin's fierce encounter.

All through the day, and in the night,
Fought bravely on in Christian might,
These men of freedom — sons of right,
Columbia's own defenders.

And now the Yellow Peril's past;
The cross is on the wall at last!
Loud is the army trumpet blast;
"God and Country ever!"

Pekin, China.

Digitized by Google

THE "NINTH" U. S. A.

Written for the *Troy Daily Times* by D. C. Woodcock

There's a regiment in China with the letters U. S. A.
Plainly stamped upon its buckles in the common army way;
On its caps the figure Nine denotes the "Ninth" United States;
When this regiment "gets busy" then it's time to put on skates.

From Manila 'cross the bay,
Where it tanned the brown Malay,
It has gone to give the Mongol
Just a touch of Judgment Day.

It chased old Kicking Horse across the arid desert plains,
It did what it went out to do and planted his remains;
It made the Lava Beds too hot for Sitting Bull, Poor Lo!
It sent cold chills along the spine of old Geronimo.

O, it has a winning way
When it comes to fight or play —
Bet your life the Orientals hope
It has not come to stay.

Now it's camping with the Russians and the English and the Japs,
Playing poker, drinking whisky, raising Cain and shooting craps;
Just a careless lot of youngsters clad in military blue,
But when it comes to scrapping they are scrappers through and through.

When Li Hung, that ancient jay,
Thought the Powers he could play,
He little dreamed the "Ninth" would come
Clear from the U. S. A.

It was organized in January, seventeen ninety-nine;
Since then, in every scrap, these boys have found the firing line.
At Pekin, now just watch 'em, for when the bullets whiz
You'll see the "Ninth" United States just strictly 'tend to biz.

O, how they will sachay
Into where the missiles play;
Every mother's son among 'em
Will be full of fight that day.

Since the lines above were written the "Pig Tails" have come down:
The "Ninth" had its full share of fun in bossing Pekin town;
But soon it was transported to the islands 'cross the bay,
Where the Bolomen needed just a little more of U. S. A.

Have they got it? I should say!
Salutary every way.
For the "Ninth" goes out a-gunning
When the heathen gets too gay.

But its ranks are torn and ragged, they are but a gallant few —
Killed in ambush, fever-stricken, wasted by the deadly dew,
They have dropped like leaves in autumn, yet around the world its fame
Is carven, marking deeply an imperishable name.

So gladly we will lay
A trifling Christmas spray
On the glory of that regiment
So far from home to-day.

Digitized by Google

THE NINTH REGULARS

From *The Anaconda Standard*, Montana, Tuesday, June 24, 1902.

There came back to the United States last week a regiment of the regular army which, in its career of less than half a century, has had a remarkably varied experience in different parts of the world. In these times, when some portions of the American army appear to have departed from the traditions of that service, when some officers seem to have proven truer to politicians in office than to patriotism, it is not amiss to pay a tribute to one of the most gallant regiments in an army which Field Marshal Viscount Wolseley recently characterized as "the best army in the world."

The Ninth United States Infantry was organized in 1855. Before the Civil War called it into a struggle with a civilized foe it had smelled gunpowder many a time, and oft in combat with Indians in the West. Its Civil War record at Winchester and elsewhere was excellent. Then it returned to the West again. When, in 1867, the United States purchased Alaska from the Russians, the duty of taking over the territory was delegated to the Ninth. It was a detachment of the Ninth that saluted the Russian ensign as it fluttered down from its staff on Baronoff castle, obedient to the command of the Russian prince and governor, and it was a sergeant of the Ninth who pulled the halyards that sent the stars and stripes up in the place of that lowered flag. And then it was the Ninth which fired the salute that announced to the world the fact that Russia no longer had a foothold on this continent.

Thereafter the service of the Ninth led it to many quarters of the United States. When the Spanish war began it was early in the field. In the Cuban campaign it won new laurels. Following the peace it was hurried to the Philippines, and later to China. The memory of the work of the Ninth on the march to Pekin is too fresh in the minds of the public to need review here. When the task in China was done the Ninth went back to the Philippines, there to be plunged into the thick of the strife in Samar. It was a company of the Ninth which suffered that terrible massacre wherein so many of its men lost their lives.

In the campaigns since May, 1898, the loss in killed and wounded have been greater in this regiment that in any other regiment of the army. It is an organization that is deserving of more gratitude and more praise than it is likely to receive.

THE FIGHTING NINTH

The following was published in the *Boonville Herald* September 4, 1902:

The presence at the Boonville Fair yesterday and to-day of the famous regiment of regulars from Sacketts Harbor, known as the "Fighting Ninth," has attracted thousands of persons eager to look upon the men of valor whose records have been full of military glory and whose arms have lent additional lustre to the later-day history of the United States. The decimated ranks tell the story of heavy losses in engagements with the enemy, losses made still greater by disease and the climates in which their campaigns have been made. One company of the regiment, which made so fine a reputation for American soldiery in China at the siege of Pekin, is reduced to but twenty-six men, and steps are to be at once taken to recruit the entire regiment to its full quota. The men who filled the

Digitized by Google

public mind yesterday and to-day at the annual exhibition of the Boonville Fair Association, stood in China for all that was best in military achievement. When the troops of other nations pillaged and burned and outraged, the American troops bore themselves with honor and dignity, protected women and children and property, and earned the gratitude of the Chinese Government for their splendid and gallant behavior. No other soldiers made so enviable a record, and the acts of these members of the "Fighting Ninth," in all their perilous situations, have endeared each and very one of this glorious regular regiment to the people. Their conduct added new lustre to flag and country and made the troops of the United States the marvel of the inhabitants of the Celestial empire. Was it any wonder that after their long absence from Madison Barracks the people welcomed them with joy and with praise and with acknowledgment of their valiant services? They have borne arms with honor to their flag and country, and the outing which they have enjoyed at the local exhibition ought to be pleasing to them as it has been to the thousands who have witnessed their drill and evolutions. They followed the flag through unusual perils and across wide waters and broad stretches of jungle and in mountain fastnesses. They acquitted themselves as the people of this country would have had them, and as the guests of the local fair association, have been a brilliant educational feature.

CAPT. CONNELL SET RIGHT

E. C. Bumpus Says that American Commander at Balangiga did not Misconduct Himself.

To the Editor of The Herald:

Your editorial upon Senator Lodge's speech at the Home Market Club contains one serious misstatement, in that it is intimated that the cause of the massacre at Balangiga was due to the brutal conduct of Captain Connell, then in command. As my son was killed at this time, I have naturally felt an intense interest to learn all the facts, and have sought during the 18 months since that massacre by making every examination possible of document and of people who have known anything about it, by direction or indirection, to ascertain the truth, without prejudice, I am sure, as the reputation of my son is not in the slightest sense involved. Therefore, you will, of course, permit me to state the outcome of this investigation, in order that a gallant soldier and gentleman, now dead, may be relieved from so serious a charge as that of brutality.

General Smith, commanding at Samar, made the serious mistake of dividing his forces into small detachments and sending them to localities too distant from each other for mutual support, leaving them in this condition in the midst of a hostile population largely made up of the most courageous and ferocious people that can be found upon these islands. Captain Connell, who was considered so good a soldier that he had acted as Adjutant with the Ninth Infantry a large part of the time while that corps was in China, and who was known by every one as a genial, highminded and confiding man, had 70 men under him at this post. He was a Roman Catholic, and that brought him in close contact with the local priest, and through him, the presidente and chief of police and other local officials. He sought to cultivate friendship with the natives, and thought that he had succeeded. So much so was he persuaded that when a week before the massacre an officer

Digitized by Google

from a distant post came to him and warned him that a friendly priest had told them that a plot was on foot to attack his post and kill his people, he could not believe it, and so strongly persuaded was he, and overconfident, that he took no precaution against the same, with the result that the very people that he trusted killed him.

Balangiga was at this time filled with an idle population. Its port had been closed and its industries stopped, owing to the exigencies of war, with the result that among the thousands that came and went there were many lawless natives who were a constant menace to the peace and good order of this community.

Weeks before the massacre two or more officers in the Filipino army had concerted this scheme to attack this post and other places held by but a few soldiers. Into this entered willingly the officials at Balangiga, including the chief of police, who, aided by his police and by the soldiers, arrested and held as prisoners of the lawless part of the population, some 75, who were taken charge of and put to work cutting out the rank vegetation and doing other things necessary to prevent sickness, or building barracks, etc. These prisoners were quartered near the soldiers' barracks. The chief of police, who participated in the massacre, had ready access to them, and at the time the alarm was sounded aided in killing the sentries having them in charge, and the prisoners rushed for their working bolos and joined with the forces that came from in and out of the town, participating in the attack and the massacre.

The only criticism upon Captain Connell was made by one of the survivors of Company C, in the *Springfield Republican*, to the effect that the prisoners had not been properly housed and should have had more room. Subsequent to this published interview, this man called upon me and I urged him upon every account to tell me the actual cause of the trouble and whether the officers, or any of them there, had in the slightest degree contributed to the same by any brutality upon their part, telling him that he had exonerated my son, I knew, but had made what might be deemed to be some criticism upon Captain Connell. He informed me in answer that the only complaint that he had to make was that Captain Connell had been overconfident with the natives, and made no pretence of any kind whatever that he had mistreated the prisoners, by direction or indirection. As against any statement made by him outside of this, I put the absolute facts, determined from the statement of at least 100 people, and based upon authenticated documents, that the attack upon Balangiga and the massacre of the soldiers was deliberately entered into and that the presence of the prisoners (whom the chief of police had largely gathered together) upon that day was a part of the scheme which worked successfully for the Filipinos and that there is not the slightest cause to impute any misconduct or brutality on the part of Captain Connell.

E. C. BUMPUS.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX C

Roster of Company C, Ninth United States Infantry, at the Massacre of Balangiga, Samar, Philippine Islands, on September 28, 1901:

No.	Name	Rank	Remarks
1.	Allen, George	Private	Wounded.
2.	Armani, John D.	Private.	Killed.
3.	Armani, Litto.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
4.	Aydelotte, John W.	Private.	Killed.
5.	Baird, Thomas E.	Corporal.	Wounded, died later.
6.	Bertholf, Walter J.	Private.	Not wounded.
7.	Betron, Frank	Sergeant.	Wounded.
8.	Bony, George.	Private.	Killed.
9.	Booth, Robert.	Private.	Killed.
10.	Burhrer, John D.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
11.	Bumpus, Edgar A.	First Lieutenant.	Killed.
12.	Burke, Sylvester.	Corporal.	Wounded.
13.	Cain, James L.	Private.	Killed.
14.	Claas, Henry.	Private.	Wounded.
15.	Clark, Roland T.	Private.	Not wounded.
16.	Closson, John D.	Sergeant.	Wounded.
17.	Connell, Thomas.	Captain.	Killed.
18.	Considine, Richard.	Private.	Wounded.
19.	Covington, John L.	Musician.	Killed.
20.	Davis, Charles E.	Private.	Killed.
21.	DeGraffenreid, Albert B.	Private.	Wounded.
22.	Dennis, Guy C.	Private.	Killed.
23.	Dent, Byron A.	Private.	Killed.
24.	Dobbins, Patrick J.	Private.	Killed.
25.	Donahue, Cornelius F.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
26.	Driscoll, Jerry J.	Private.	Wounded, missing.
27.	Fitzgerald, Eli.	Private.	Killed.
28.	Gamlin, Adolph.	Private.	Wounded.
29.	Gibbs, William J.	Private.	Wounded.
30.	Godon, Joseph I.	Private.	Killed.
31.	Hickman, Taylor B.	Corporal.	Not wounded.
32.	Irish, Arnold.	Corporal.	Wounded.
33.	Keller, Albert B.	Private.	Wounded.
34.	Kleinhample, Joe.	Private.	Killed.
35.	Long, Richard.	Private.	Killed.
36.	Manire, Henry W.	Private.	Wounded.
37.	Marak, Charles F.	Private.	Wounded.
38.	Markley, George F.	Sergeant.	Wounded.
39.	Marr, Joseph R.	Artificer.	Killed.

Digitized by Google

No.	Name	Rank	Remarks
40.	Martin, James.	Private.	Killed.
41.	Martin, John F.	Sergeant.	Killed.
42.	McCormack, Frank.	Corporal.	Killed.
43.	McDermott, Thomas.	Private.	Killed.
44.	Meyers, George E.	Private.	Wounded.
45.	Miller, John H.	Private.	Killed.
46.	Mullins, Daniel S.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
47.	Mumby, Clifford M.	Private.	Wounded.
48.	Peters, Proal.	Corporal.	Killed.
49.	Pickett, James.	Corporal.	Wounded.
50.	Powers, Charles.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
51.	Porczeng, August F.	Private.	Missing.
52.	Qula, Thermistocles.	Private.	Wounded.
53.	Ralston, Ernest U.	Private.	Wounded.
54.	Randles, James M.	Quartermaster-Sergeant.	Killed.
55.	Recard, Chris F.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
56.	Scharar, Henry J.	Sergeant.	Killed.
57.	Schley, Leonard B.	Corporal.	Killed.
58.	Schnitzler, Gustaf F.	Cook.	Killed.
59.	Shoemaker, Floyd J.	Private.	Wounded, died later.
60.	South, Evans.	Private.	Missing.
61.	Sproull, Robert.	Private.	Killed.
62.	Sterling, Charles E.	Private.	Killed.
63.	Stier, Anthony.	Private.	Not wounded.
64.	Swanson, Carl E.	Private.	Wounded.
65.	Turner, Joseph.	Private.	Killed.
66.	Uhtof, John.	Private.	Wounded.
67.	Vobayda, Frank.	Private.	Killed.
68.	Walls, Melvin M.	Cook.	Wounded.
69.	Wannebo, John.	Private.	Killed.
70.	Williams, Christian S.	Private.	Killed.
71.	Wingo, Claude C.	Private.	Missing.
72.	Wood, Harry M.	Private.	Killed.
		Attached	
73.	Griswold, R. S.	Major, Surgeon.	Killed.
74.	Wright, Harry.	Private, Hospital Corps.	Killed.

Recapitulation

Killed during massacre	36
Wounded, died later	8
Wounded	22
Missing	4
Not wounded	4
Total present during massacre	74

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX D

List of officers of the Ninth Infantry, who were killed or wounded in action, or taken prisoners, with date and place:

Jesse K. Allen, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed, Yakima River, Washington, August 15, 1858.

Thomas Aspinwall, Lieutenant-Colonel, Ninth Infantry, wounded at Fort Erie, Canada, September 17, 1814.

Edwin V. Bookmiller, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Tientsin, China, July 13, 1900.

Elisha Brimhall, Third Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Chippewa, Canada, July 5, 1814.

Adolphus Burghardt, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Edward A. Bumpus, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed, Balangiga, Philippine Islands, September 28, 1901.

William Browning, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Eben Childs, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Fort Erie, Canada, August 20, 1814, wounded at Fort Erie, Canada, September 17, 1814.

Thomas W. Connell, Ninth Infantry, Captain, killed, Balangiga, Philippine Islands, September 28, 1901.

Daniel H. Cram, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Churubusco, Mexico, August 20, 1847.

Caleb Cushman, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Hayden De Laney, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Warner Valley, Oregon, May 1, 1868.

Otis Fisher, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Edmund Foster, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, at Chrystler's Fields, Canada, November 11, 1813.

William L. Foster, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

John Fowle, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Abraham F. Hull, Ninth Infantry (Captain, Twenty-third Infantry), taken prisoner at Detroit, Michigan, August 16, 1812; Captain, Ninth Infantry, killed at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Jared Ingersoll, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Fort Erie, Canada, September 17, 1814.

George W. Jacobs, Third Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Joseph J. Jacobs, Ensign, Ninth Infantry, wounded at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Digitized by Google

Lorenzo Johnson, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Churubusco, Mexico, August 20, 1847.

Edgar F. Koehler, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed at Barrio Tinuba, Philippine Islands, March 14, 1900.

Folliot T. Lally, Major, Ninth Infantry, wounded at Jalapa, Mexico, August 19, 1847.

Frank R. Lang, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded Tien-tsin, China, July, 13, 1900; Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Yang-tsun, China, August 6, 1900.

Louis B. Lawton, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900.

Henry Leavenworth, Major, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Louis H. Lewis, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed, San Juan, Cuba, July 1, 1898.

Emerson H. Liscum, First Lieutenant, Twelfth Infantry, wounded at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863; Lieutenant-Colonel, Twenty-fourth Infantry, wounded, San Juan, Cuba, July 1, 1898; Colonel, Ninth Infantry, killed, Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900.

William A. Newman, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Churubusco, Mexico, August 20, 1847.

Charles R. Noyes, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900.

Alpheus T. Palmer, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Churubusco, Mexico, August 20, 1847.

Loring Palmer, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Chippewa, Canada, July 5, 1814.

David Perry, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, taken prisoner at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

Truman B. Ransom, Colonel, Ninth Infantry, killed at Chapultepec, Mexico, September 13, 1847.

James Regan, Major, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Tien-tsin, China, July 13, 1900.

Charles M. Rockefeller, Captain, Ninth Infantry, taken prisoner and supposed to have been killed near Caloocan, Philippine Islands, April 28, 1899.

Francis H. Schoeffel, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded near Dapido, Philippine Islands, December 24, 1901.

Charles J. Sprague, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Chapultepec, Mexico, September 13, 1847.

David S. Townsend, Captain, Ninth Infantry, wounded and taken prisoner at Chrystler's Fields, Canada, November 11, 1813.

Stephen Turner, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, killed at Lundy's Lane, Canada, July 25, 1814.

William H. Waldron, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, wounded, Ho-si-wu, China, August 24, 1900.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX E

Officers of the Ninth Infantry, who left the service of the United States after November 1, 1860, and joined the Confederate Army:

Robert H. Anderson, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, resigned May 17, 1861.
James J. Archer, Captain, Ninth Infantry, resigned May 14, 1861.
George W. Carr, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, resigned February 20, 1861.
John W. Frazer, Captain, Ninth Infantry, resigned March 15, 1861.
Robert S. Garnett, Major, Ninth Infantry, resigned April 30, 1861.
Edwin J. Harvie, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, resigned March 15, 1861.
George E. Pickett, Captain, Ninth Infantry, resigned June 25, 1861.
Paul J. Quattlebaum, Second Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, resigned June 29, 1861.
Nathaniel Wickliffe, First Lieutenant, Ninth Infantry, resigned May 17, 1861.
Charles S. Winder, Captain, Ninth Infantry, resigned April 1, 1861.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX F

Chronological list of battles, actions, etc., in which the Ninth Infantry has participated:

DATE	PLACE	TROOPS ENGAGED
May 29, 1813.	Stony Point and Sackett's Harbor, New York.	Detachment.
Nov. 11, 1813.	Chrystler's Fields, Williamsburg, Upper Canada.	Entire Regiment.
July 3, 1814.	Fort Erie, Upper Canada.	Entire Regiment.
July 5, 1814.	Chippewa, Upper Canada.	Entire Regiment.
July 25, 1814.	Lundy's Lane, and Bridgewater, Upper Canada (Falls of Niagara River, near the intersection of Lundy's Lane with the road to Queenstown).	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 1, to 31, 1814.	Fort Erie, Upper Canada, siege and assault on —	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 13–15, 1814.	Fort Erie, Upper Canada.	Entire Regiment.
Sept. 16, 1814.	Fort Erie, Upper Canada (during September, exclusive of the sortie and action of Sept. 17).	Entire Regiment.
Sept. 17, 1814.	Fort Erie, Upper Canada.	Entire Regiment.
June 11, 12, 1847.	National Bridge, Mexico.	Co. A.
June 19, 1847.	Near Jalapa, Mexico.	Co. A.
Aug. 18–20, 1847	San Antonio, Contreras, and Churubusco, Mexico.	Cos. A, C, D, E, F, G, H, I and K.
Sept. 12–14, 1847.	Chapultepec, and City of Mexico, Mexico.	Entire Regiment.
March 1, 1856.	White River, near Muckleshoot Prairie, Washington Ter.	Cos. D and H.
March 27, 28, 1856.	Cascades of Columbia River, Washington Ter.	Cos. A, E, F and I.
April 25, 1856.	Cedar Creek, Washington Ter.	Co. K.
May 1–9, 1856.	Head of the Nisqually River, Washington Ter.	Det. Co. H.
May 17, 1858.	To-ho-to-nim-me, near Spokane Lake, Washington Ter.	Det. Co. E.
Aug. 15, 1858.	Yakima River, Wash. Ter.	Cos. C, G and I.
Sept. 1–5, 1858.	Four Lakes and Spokane Plains, Washington Ter.	Cos. D and E.

Digitized by Google

Date	Place	Troops Engaged
Sept. 10, 1858.	Okanogan River, Wash. Ter.	Cos. C, G and I.
July 29, 1866.	Near Camp Cady, Cal.	Det. Co. D.
Feb. 16, 1867.	Surprise Valley, Cal.	Det. Co. C.
April 26, 1867.	Near Fort Reno, Dakota.	Det. Co. I, 27th Infantry.
May 1, 1868.	Hoag's Bluff, Warner Valley, Or.	Co. C.
June 9, 1876.	Tongue River, Wyo.	Cos. C, G, and H.
June 17, 1876.	Rosebud River, Mont.	Cos. C, G, and H.
Sept. 9, 1876.	Slim Buttes (Surprise of American Horse), Dakota.	Cos. C, G, and H.
July 1–3, 1898.	San Juan Hill, Cuba.	Entire Regiment.
May 17, 1899.	San Luis, P. I.	Cos. A, D, H and I.
June 3, 1899.	Cainta, P. I.	Cos. E and G.
June 3, 1899.	Morong, P. I.	Cos. A, F, G and H.
June 3, 1899.	Tay-tay, P. I.	Cos. A, F, G and H.
June 4, 1899.	Antipolo, P. I.	Cos. A, F, G and H.
June 4, 1899.	Morong, P. I.	Cos. A, F, G and H.
June 10, 1899.	Guadeloupe, P. I.	Cos. B, C, D, E, I, K, L and M.
June 10, 1899.	Las Pinas, P. I.	Cos. B, C, D, E, I, K, L and M, 9th Inf.
June 13, 1899.	Zapote River, P. I.	Cos. B, C, D, E, I, K, L and M.
June 20, 1899.	Dasmarinas, P. I.	Det. 9th Inf.
June 22, 1899.	San Fernando, P. I.	Cos. A, B, C, E, F, G, H and K.
June 30, 1899.	San Fernando, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
July 4, 1899.	San Fernando, P. I.	Cos. A, F, G, D, H, K, L and M.
July 19, 1899.	Near San Luis, P. I.	Det. 9th Inf.
Aug. 9, 1899.	Sindalon, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 12, 1899.	Near Porac, P. I.	Cos. B, C, E, and I.
Sept. 9, 1899.	Santa Rita, P. I.	Cos. A, B, C, D, E, H, I and K.
Sept. 9, 1899.	Guagua, P. I.	Cos. G and L.
Sept. 16, 1899.	Santa Rita, P. I.	Cos. A, B, C, D, E, H, I and K.
Sept. 28, 1899.	Porac, P. I.	Cos. A, B, C, D, E, H, I and K.
Oct. 3, 1899.	Guagua, P. I.	Cos. G and L.
Oct. 11, 1899.	Angeles, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
Oct. 13, 1899.	Angeles, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
Oct. 16, 1899.	Angeles, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
Oct 25, 1899.	Sudlon Mountain, P. I.	Cos. H, I and K.
Nov. 11, 1899.	Bamban, P. I.	Entire Regiment.
Nov, 27, 1899.	Near Tarlac, P. I.	Det. Co. G.
Feb. 2, 1900.	Murcia, P. I.	Co. I.
Feb. 9, 1900.	Sapong Maragul, P. I.	Co. G.
Feb. 14, 1900.	Tinuba, P. I.	Co. G.

Digitized by Google

Date	Place	Troops Engaged
March 4, 1900.	Barrio Tinuba, P. I.	Cos. H and K.
March 28, 1900.	Mabalacat, P. I.	Co. K.
March 13, 1900.	Near Mabalacat, P. I.	Det. Co. K.
July 13, 14, 1900.	Tien-tsin, China.	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 5, 1900.	Pietsang, China.	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 6, 1900.	Yang-tsun, China.	Entire Regiment.
Aug. 14, 15, 1900.	Pekin, China.	Entire Regiment, less Cos. C. & G.
Aug. 17, 1900.	Seven Temples, near Pekin, China.	Det. 9th Infantry.
Aug. 24, 1900.	Near Ho-si-wu, China.	Det. Co. C.
June 30, 1901.	Near Oras, P. I.	Co. H.
Aug. 3. 1901.	Near Hinolason, P. I.	Det. Co. H.
Aug. 4, 1901.	Near Hinolason, P. I.	Det. Co. H.
Aug. 4, 1901.	Near Matuguinao, P. I.	Det. Co. F.
Aug. 22, 1901.	Dolores, P. I.	Det. Co. H.
Aug. 30, 1901.	Near Tarangnan, P. I.	Det. Co. E.
Sept. 1, 1901.	Near Basey, P. I.	Co. G.
Sept. 13, 1901.	Near Patsogan, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Sept. 22, 1901.	Yabo, P. I.	Det. Co. H.
Sept. 27, 1901.	Near Mutiong, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Sept. 28, 1901.	Balangiga, P. I.	Co. C.
Sept. 28, 1901.	Gandara River.	Det. Co. I.
Sept. 29, 1901.	Agsum, P. I.	Det. Co. H.
Oct. 15, 1901.	Loog, P. I.	Det. Co. G.
Oct. 16, 1901.	Gandara River, P. I.	Co. E.
Oct. 28, 1901.	Near Mutiong, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Nov. 7, 1901.	At Matuguinao, P. I.	Co. F.
Nov. 7, 1901.	Mugbug, P. I.	Det. Co. L.
Nov. 11, 1901.	Parang, P. I.	Det. Co. E.
Nov. 14, 1901.	Near Matuguinao, P. I.	Det. Co. F.
Nov. 22, 1901.	Near San Fernando, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Nov. 23, 1901.	Near Agsum, P. I.	Det. Co. K.
Nov. 26, 1901.	Near Mutiong, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Nov. 27, 1901.	Near Mutiong, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Nov. 29, 1901.	Near Bonga, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Dec. 7, 1901.	Near Dapdap, P. I.	Det. Co. E.
Dec. 10, 1901.	Near San Fernando, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Dec. 24, 1901.	Dapdap, P. I.	Co. E.
Dec. 26. 1901.	Near Dapdap, P. I.	Det. Co. L.
Jan. 17, 1902.	Near Oras, P. I.	Det. Co D.
Feb. 11, 1902.	Near Pagsanjan, P. I.	Det. Co. F.
Feb. 12, 1902.	Gandara River, P. I.	Det. Co. M.
Feb. 14, 1902.	Near Saint Louis, P. I.	Det. Co. F.
Feb. 16, 1902.	Near Saint Louis, P. I.	Det. Co. F.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX G

COMPLETE ROSTER OF FIELD AND STAFF OFFICERS OF THE NINTH REGIMENT OF INFANTRY

JULY 16, 1798, TO JUNE 15, 1800.

Organized under the act of July 16, 1798, and discharged June 15, 1800, under the act of May 14, 1800.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL COMMANDANT

Josiah C. Hall, January 8, 1799, to June 15, 1800.

MAJORS

W. D. Beall, January 8, 1799, to June 15, 1800.
David Hopkins, January 8, 1799, to June 15, 1800.

JANUARY 11, 1812, TO MAY 17, 1815.

Organized under the acts of January 11, and June 26, 1812. The regiment was consolidated May 17, 1815, under the act of March 3, 1815, with the Fourth, Thirteenth, Twenty-first, Fortieth, and Forty-sixth regiments of Infantry, to form the Fifth Regiment of Infantry.

COLONEL

Simon Learned, March 12, 1812, to May 17, 1815.

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS

J. L. Tuttle, March 12, 1812, to July 22, 1813.
Robert Carr, August 15, to September 29, 1813.
Thomas Aspinwall, September 29, 1813, to May 17, 1815.

MAJORS

Thomas Aspinwall, March 12, 1812, to March 12, 1813.
Chester Lyman, June 26, 1813, to July 6, 1814.
Henry Leavenworth, August 15, 1813, to May 17, 1815.
Turner Crooker, September 1, 1814, to May 17, 1815.

FEBRUARY 11, 1847, TO AUGUST 26, 1848.

Organized under the act of February 11, 1847, for and during the war with Mexico.

COLONELS

T. B. Ransom, April 9, to September 13, 1847.
J. M. Withers, September 13, 1847, to May 23, 1848.
H. L. Webb, May 23, to August 8, 1848.

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS

A. B. Thompson, April 9, to July 16, 1847.
Jeremiah Clemens, July 16, 1847, to July 20, 1848.

MAJORS

T. H. Seymour, April 9, to August 12, 1847.
F. T. Lally, April 9, 1847, to August 26, 1848.
W. B. Talliaferro, August 12, 1847, to August 26, 1848.

ADJUTANTS

T. J. Whipple, April 20, to June 15, 1847.
C. J. Sprague, June 15, to September 21, 1847.
John McNab, January 1, to August 26, 1848.

QUARTERMASTERS

Justin Hodge, April 9, 1847, to April 1, 1848.
Charles Simmons, April 1, to August 26, 1848.

Organized under the act of March 3, 1855. On June 14, 1869, under the act of March 3, 1869, the Twenty-seventh Infantry was consolidated with this regiment.

COLONELS

George Wright, March 3, 1855, to July 30, 1865.
J. H. King, July 30, 1865, to February 20, 1882.
James Van Voast, February 20, 1882, to April 2, 1883 (never joined).
J. S. Mason, April 2, 1883, to August 21, 1888.
A. L. Hough, August 21, 1888, to April 23, 1890.
C. G. Bartlett, April 23, 1890, to May 1, 1896.
W. J. Lyster, May 1, 1896, to June 27, 1897.
W. H. Powell, June 27, 1897, to April 25, 1899.
E. H. Liscum, April 25, 1899, to July 13, 1900.
C. F. Robe, July 13, 1900, to July 29, 1903.
James Regan, July 29, 1903, to June 25, 1906.
H. S. Foster, June 25, 1906, to October 6, 1906 (never joined).
E. B. Robertson, October 6, 1906, to October 25, 1907.
Charles J. Crane October 25, 1907 to

LIEUTENANT-COLONELS

Silas Casey, March 3, 1855, to October 9, 1861.
C. C. Sibley, October 9, 1861, to April 20, 1864.
Frederick Townsend, April 20, 1864, to March 26, 1868.
Dickinson Woodruff, March 26, 1868, to March 15, 1869.
L. P. Bradley, March 16, 1869, to March 20, 1879.
T. M. Anderson, March 20, 1879, to September 6, 1886.
G. M. Brayton, September 6, 1886, to March 23, 1892.
Jacob Kline, March 23, 1892, to April 30, 1897.
E. P. Ewers, April 30, 1897, to May 16, 1899.
C. A. Coolidge, May 16, 1899, to March 2, 1901.
M. C. Foote, February 2, 1901, to April 11, 1902.
James Regan, April 11, 1902, to July 28, 1903.
E. B. Robertson, July 31, 1903, to October 6, 1906.
William C. Buttler, October 6, 1906, to

Digitized by Google

MAJORS

E. J. Steptoe, March 3, 1855, to September 9, 1861.
R. S. Garnett, March 27, 1855, to April 30, 1861.
G. W. Patten, April 30, 1861, to June 7, 1862.
H. W. Wharton, September 9, 1861, to December 1, 1863.
A. W. Bowman, June 7, 1862, to June 6, 1867.
Joseph Updegraff, December 1, 1863, to June 19, 1866.
O. A. Mack, June 19, 1866, to March 15, 1869.
E. F. Townsend, March 15, 1869, to March 20, 1879.
W. T. Gentry, March 20, 1879, to April 14, 1884.
Daingerfield Parker, April 14, 1884, to May 15, 1889.
Richard Comba, May 15, 1889, to March 7, 1893.
E. P. Ewers, March 7, 1893, to April 30, 1897.
E. C. Gilbreath, April 30, to May 29, 1897.
G. W. Davis, May 29, 1897, to March 25, 1898.
W. H. Boyle, March 25, to September 26, 1898.
J. M. Lee, April 26, 1898, to August 7, 1900.
M. C. Foote, September 26, 1898, to February 2, 1901.
James Regan, March 2, 1899, to July 26, 1901.
E. B. Robertson, August 7, 1900, to July 30, 1903.
R. J. C. Irvine, February 28, 1901, to March 2, 1906.
F. B. Jones, July 26, 1901, to October 3, 1907.
C. R. Noyes, August 12, 1903, to April 6, 1904.
W. P. Richardson, April 7, 1904, to April 6, 1908.
John Cotter, March 3, 1906, to
R. H. Noble, October 4, 1907, to November 10, 1907.
W. E. Ayer, November 11, 1907, to
C. R. Noyes, April 7, 1908, to

ADJUTANTS

T. C. English, April 18, 1855, to May 31, 1856.
P. A. Owen, July 15, 1856, to June 25, 1861.
C. D. Emory, July 21, 1862, to May 1, 1864.
E. D. Waite, May 1, 1864, to July 1, 1865.
Leonard Hay, July 1, 1865, to March 11, 1878.
J. M. Lee, March 11, 1878, to May 1, 1879.
M. C. Foote, June 22, 1879, to January 26, 1883.
W. B. Pease, March 4 to April 2, 1883.
E. B. Robertson, June 15, 1883, to July 1, 1887.
J. MacB. Stembel, July 1 to November 4, 1890.
T. S. McCaleb, November 28, 1890, to April 22, 1892.
C. R. Noyes, June 18, 1892, to June 17, 1896.
W. L. Simpson, July 1, 1896, to September 15, 1898.
E. F. Koehler, September 22, 1898, to March 18, 1899.
C. R. Noyes, May 19, 1899, to May 18, 1903.
E. V. Bookmiller, May 26, 1903, to May 25, 1907.
F. R. Brown, August 19, 1907, to

Digitized by Google

QUARTERMASTERS

James Van Voast, July 4, 1855, to June 11, 1858.
Lyman Bissell, September 1, 1858, to March 15, 1861.
Clayton McMichael, January 1, 1862, to September 1, 1863.
Edwin Pollock, September 1, 1863, to May 9, 1864.
Samuel Munson, May 9, 1864, to July 7, 1865.
Alfred Morton, June 1, 1866, to March 20, 1879.
James Regan, June 22, 1879, to October, 1886.
J. McB. Stembel, November 28, 1886, to July 1, 1887.
George Palmer, July 1, 1887, to June 30, 1891.
John Baxter, Jr., June 30, 1891, to July 1, 1892.
F. L. Dodds, July 1, 1892, to May 19, 1896.
J. P. Finley, July 22, 1896, to November 1, 1898.
F. DeW. Ramsey, January 7, to March 18, 1899.
J. P. Finley, March 24 to September 6, 1899.
P. C. Harris, September 6, 1899, to April 22, 1900.
F. DeW. Ramsey, April 22, 1900, to September 10, 1901.
H. D. Wise, November 1, 1901, to September 1, 1905.
H. F. Rethers, September 2, 1905, to May 1, 1907.
H. D. Wise, September 3, 1907, to

COMMISSARIES

J. M. Sigworth, March 18 to June 2, 1899.
F. L. Munson, October 5, 1899, to April 29, 1901.
F. H. Schoeffel, November 4, 1901, to June 30, 1902.
F. H. Schoeffel, September 19, 1903, to December 21, 1903.
F. L. Munson, December 25, 1903, to December 24, 1907.
D. J. Baker, Jr., December 26, 1907, to November 3, 1908.
W. K. Naylor, November 4, 1908, to

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX H

Wednesday,
April 20th., 1904.

THE NINTH UNITED STATES INFANTRY,

PRESENTS

The INVESTIGATORS,

AN ORIGINAL, SATIRICAL MUSICAL COMEDY.

Book and Lyrics
by
James P. Drouillard,
1st. Lieutenant, 9th. U. S. Infantry,

Music Orchestrated
by
Charles J. Nash,
Band Master, 9th. U. S. Infantry.

Digitized by Google

GENERAL ORDERS,
No. 600.

Commanding Officers of all posts will send out recruiting parties from their respective posts to secure young men to fight for their country. The detail should be composed of handsome men with pleasing manners; we need the good will of the ladies. To secure the hearty sympathy of the fair sex and to further fan the spark of patriotism in the breasts of all young men, the Adjutant of each post will have posted pictures of himself in conspicuous places in all the adjacent towns.

By Order of Colonel BUMGARTER
TOM WISE,
Adjutant General.

J. W. JONES. H. L. EVANS.

JONES & COMPANY,
General Fleecers,

We fleece the most fastidious.
Prices commensurate with your income and upward.
Just received a stock of "loop the loops," "shoot the shoots," and other skin games.

Cut short in his career——Our George.

(Never) goes without saying——Wise.

Munce Muncen
Swedish Delicatessen.

Apples and geese always in stock.

Hash in season.

Captain Munson, (in barber's chair) "Hair cut, please."
Barber— "Which one?"

NOTICE TO LIEUTS.

Read "Millbooker's Manual of the Finger Exercise."

For Sale at Post Exchange, with blank forms for explanations.

1c per cent. off for Cash.

H. L. EVANS.
Local Agent

Cast of Characters.

Colonel Bombastius Bumgarter:—who has ingrowing nerves and is jumping at noises ..... Captain BENJAMIN P. NICKLIN.
Senator Hezekia Skinem Skinner:—an army reformer on tour of investigation ..... Captain REYNOLDS J. BURT
Abigail Skinner:—his spinster sister, a Philippinephobe and other things ..... Captain FREDERICK L. MUNSON.
Asinino Gordo Tauro:—Little Philippino Mascot—improvised ..... Lieutenant HERBERT L. EVANS.
Willie Lush:—the orderly ..... Captain HUGH D. WISE.
First Pajama ..... Lieutenant W. P. COLEMAN.
Second Pajama ..... Lieutenant ROSCOE HEARN.
Third Pajama ..... Lieutenant HUNTER HARRIS.
and
Kitty:—Senator Skinner's niece ..... Mrs. IRA C. WELBORN.
Other Pale and Pampered Pink Pajama Pets.
Lieutenants
Fred R. Brown, George W. Wallace,
Willis P. Coleman, Kaolin L. Whitson,
Roscoe H. Hearn, Emery T. Smith,
George W. Harris, Girard L. McEntee, jr.,
Robert L. Meador. Hunter Harris,
Charles G. Sturtevant, Jennings C. Wise.

Places—Any Army Post—!! Periods—Now!!
Time—The Morning After!!

Scenes—Interior of Bachelors' Quarters.

Peasants, Flower Girls, Gypsies, Cavaliers, Milk Maids, Vivandieres, Village Maidens, Rustic Swains, Bucolic Yokels, etc., were ordered through M. John Pendergast, but not arriving on time the Management substitutes "A Chorus of Bachelors".

Wanted.

Bright intelligent young officers to write good musical Comedies.

Wanted.

Lieutenant to fill vacancy to occur in the Ninth Infantry. The New York public are clamoring for a play-wright and theatrical manager. We must satisfy them.

(Instructor in Military Engineering)—"Mr. Drouillard, what kind of rocks make the best road material?"

(Mr. Drouillard, after careful deliberation) — "Metaphorical rocks, sir!"

Notice!

A short talk on Hugh D. Wise and his service in the Volunteers will be delivered in the Club to-morrow evening.

The Orator will be announced later.

JUST RECEIVED

A new and complete lot of poses for Regimental Adjutants.

HUESTED.
Photographer.

Evans' feet always remind us,
All things great are not sublime;
What a fiend he'd be at making
Footprints on the sands of time.

Digitized by Google

Concluded from page 3

He is probably intelligent, in spite of many actions which would lead us to believe otherwise, for he has absolutely refused to act in his own play.

While most literary in his tastes, he delights in practice marches, automobiles, French phrases with a Piccadilly accent, loves Japan, Madison Barracks, and claims great distinction as a Topographer; also refuses in the future to have his clothes made in London.

Is it strange that such a versatile man should wish to be known as a librettist in disguise?

Madison Barracks, N. Y.,
April 20th., 1904

The Adjutant,
9th. Infantry,
Sir:—

In reply to your letter of this date in regard to my absence from Signal Drill and in explanation of said absence I have the honor to inform you that about half an hour before drill I left my quarters to go to the drill and met Captain Palmer. He was telling me a story when your letter was received.

G. L. McEntee, jr.,
2nd Lieutenant, 9th. Infantry.

WANTED.

Permission to live.

Willisee.

WANTED.

Immediately for the approaching examinations— AN IDEA!

H. Harris.

WANTED.

New code of cuss words. Entirely out and find the old ones no longer have effect.

Adjutant.

LOST.

All Interest.

Captain Nicklin's Creditors.

LOST.

My Facial Expression.

Bucker.

Extract from "H" Company Sick Book.

"Mark, Captain ..... Lint on lungs, acute — not in line of duty. Rag chewing. Club."

ARGUMENT.

The Scene opens in the Bachelors' Quarters of a gasping Army Post.

The cunning little Bachelors are discovered studying their next day's lesson for the "Officers' School."

Far, far from the mad'ning herd— and woman! Gentle woman!°°- These soulful young Soldiers ne'er deign to raise their purple eyes from the dust of the sad, weary routine to which a paternal Government has, in its wisdom, seen fit to subject them.

All is sweet quietude. Peace! Peace! And snow settle o'er all, when suddenly Colonel BUMGARTER, the Commandant, makes a metaphorical Egg-omelet of the situation by stirring things up.

Senator SKINNER, Washington, D. C., U. S. A., running round loose, writes the Colonel he's coming to put the inmates of the Post in a trance of joy by the magic of his presence.

He also writes he's going to investigate things — Colonel BUMGARTER ties himself up in a human Psyche-knot in consequence — and after taking a mild treatment of the old familiar juice, tries to pacify the Senator by writing ghost stories of a sultry hue to the Senator's Spinster Sister, Abigail, (who loves the gentle little Philippines) He writes he is the proprietor of one of the most ferocious Mascots ever captured alive in the Island of Samar.

The Senator is about to arrive. The Colonel's nerves are doing the Coochee-Coochee; he orders one of his Lieutenants to make himself up as a Mascot immediately. The Lieutenant doesn't even know what a Mascot is.

The Senator hits the Post all sprawled out in a cloud of spray and the Colonel can hardly be distinguished for the dust. The Senator begins investigating — Colonel begins to go into rapid contortions — ABIGAIL and KITTY plunge in — ABIGAIL claims the Colonel as her affinity — Colonel wilts a wee bit more,— about this time Colonel might easily be daubed up with a little piece of blotting paper. More investigating — Colonel jumping sideways. ABIGAIL cries for her little Mascot — Colonel is shy on Mascots. Colonel coos fairy tales. No Hans Andersons for the Senator. Colonel's Cup of Misery is beginning to slop over. Colonel hopelessly leads them off through the Post on still hunt for wonderful Mascot — KITTY has fun with Bachelors in their absence, especially a roly poly one. Mascot not to be found. Colonel gets deeper in difficulties. Sky blue ruin for him. He says it would take more than a little tissue paper and candles to make him look like a Merry Xmas. His only hope of escaping the Senate Committee is connubial bliss with ABIGAIL. In a painfully natural scene ABIGAIL has almost lured Bumgarter to her lair – when – Hist! Hark! Also Harken! The voice of the Mascot breaks upon the deathy stillness — Saved! Saved! The Colonel's saved! only he isn't — The made-up Lieutenant's idea of a Mascot is a weird one. Closer and closer draw large Globules of Gloom around the Colonel's haggard countenance. In a soul-destroying, heart-reading climax the orderly accidentally (?) points a seltzer bottle at the fake Philippino — which SKINNER believes is a preliminary to a tender Administration of aqua pura a la Philippines. Senator takes long running jump for Senate Committee. Lost! Lost is the Colonel! But oh! Wait! Wait! ABIGAIL — buxom, babbling ABIGAIL throws her sprite-like form into the deadly breach with a stock of conjugal felicity she has never used. In a nerve-destroying, emotional passage of tremendous force — she saves her first Love — The Colonel! Senator having lost ABIGAIL becomes reconciled —

HAPPINESS.

Chorus:—Tra-la-la Tra-la-la.

Finale:

Curtain.

Notice.

I have made arrangements with the Italian Government to procure the instruments used in the Venetian Torture Chamber. The Harvard treatment is not a success. Two of my men have recovered.

MARKELL

It has been learned that Lieutenant McEntee's excuse for absence from Signal Drill was the only one approved during the season.

TAPS.

Fades the light and afar, goeth day, cometh night and a star,
Leadeth all, speedeth all to their rest.

Love good-night, must thou go,
When the day and the night leave me so?

Fare thee well, day is done, night is on.

Digitized by Google

O. D. — Sentinel! What are your general orders?

Sentinel — Sir, me orders are to obey all orders I am instructed to inforce.

O. D. — Good! Now how would you salute an officer on officers' row?

Sentinel — Sir, I salutes all officers not cased with the rifle salute, exceipt Cap'n Bookey, and I gives him de prisint.

O. D. — Excellent Sentinel! Very Good! Now what are the limits of your post?

Sentinel — Sir, me post extends from the windy water tower to the frozen creek, through the big snow bank to the ice house where I yells "Corporal of the Guard! FIRE!"'

WANTED.

A New Face.

Burt.

WANTED.

Some member of the Second Year Class who can tell a Contour from Mike.

Personals.

Lieutenant EVANS intends to cultivate his voice. He is seen irrigating it often.

Lieutenant SMITH was seen in the garrison on Sunday recently.

ABIGAIL has been engaged to pitch on the base-ball team this season. She has *such* marked curves.

We are glad to find that BOOKEY has promptly complied with G. O. 600.

We have heard it intimated that Captain WISE will probably receive two months extra pay for service in the Volunteers.

MUSICAL NUMBERS.

1. Opening Chorus, *"A Most Hilarious Life,"*
   Chorus of Bachelors.
2. Song and Introduction, *"The Ninth! Ninth! Ninth!"*
   First Pajama and Chorus.
3. Ensemble, *"Study Hard Boys. Ho! Ho!"*
   Chorus of Bachelors.
4. Song and Introduction, *"I was Born in a Rage."*
   Colonel Bumgarter and Chorus.
5. Song, *"I'm going to reform the Army."*
   Senator Skinner.
6. Trio, *"In a Beautiful, Dreary Old Post."*
   Kitty, Abigail and Skinner.
7. Duet, *"Army Ways."*
   Colonel Bumgarter, Abigail, and Chorus.
8. Song, *"I'm a Simple Little Girlie."*
   Kitty and Chorus.
9. Song, *"The Mascot's Moan!"*
   Bumgarter, Abigail, and Mascot.
10. Duet, *"When!"*
    Kitty and Third Pajama.
11. Song, *"A Story's Told."*
    Bumgarter, Skinner, and Chorus.
12. Finale, *"We are the Old Ninth Infantry."*

Oh! We are the Old Ninth Infantry,
And we'll stick to the Old Command,
We'll follow its Flag o'er every sea,
Far, far from our native land;
So here's a cheer for the Regiment
Each pledges his heart and hand,
And under its Flag where'er it's sent
We will silently take our stand.

Personals.

Lieutenant DROUILLARD wore his own hat away from the Club last night.

Last Monday Lieutenant LANG came to the Club. We hear that domestic differences caused his act.

A full compliment of Officers----"L" Company at Schoeffel's reception.

PARADISE LOST.

(Signed)

"K" Company.

Apology for the Playwright.

James Joll Jock Pierre Drouillard, of honest though French extraction, was born at a very young age way down in Sunny Tennessee.

Of his early days little is known, but we are informed by some of his teachers that he ever displayed a fancy for such witty literature as Pilgrim's Progress, The Old Testament and other comical volumes.

Scientists who have observed his habits and habitations say that for years he has labored under the delusion that he could write an opera, and now the "sad reality is about to dawn" upon him.

His first appearance to members of the regiment was a most dramatic one. We don't know who saw him first. Issuing forth from his mountain fastness, a volcanic crater in Negros, where he had spent much time composing, reposing, and posing, all as an army officer, he was hailed with gusto by the 9th. as being the only man in the jungle with a silk hat.

(Continued on last page.)

Digitized by Google

LYRICS

of the

INVESTIGATORS

AN ORIGINAL SATIRICAL
MUSICAL COMEDY



BOOK and LYRICS by
JAMES PIERRE DROUILLARD
First Lieutenant, Ninth Regiment of Infantry
United States Army : : : : : : :

MUSIC ORCHESTRATED BY
CHARLES J. NASH
Bandmaster Ninth U. S. Infantry

PRODUCED BY OFFICERS
OF THE REGIMENT, MADISON
BARRACKS, APRIL 20TH, 1904

831

Digitized by Google

PROGRAMME

1. Opening Chorus . . . . . *Chorus of Pajamas*
2. Song, "The Ninth! Ninth! Ninth!" . . *First Pajama and Chorus*
3. Ensemble, "Study Hard Boys, Ho! Ho!" . . . *Chorus of Pajamas*
4. Song and Introduction, "I was born in a Rage" *Colonel Bumgarter and Chorus*
5. Song, "I'm Going to Reform the Army" . . . *Senator Skinner*
6. Trio, "A Beautiful, Dreary Old Post," *Senator Skinner, Abigail and Kitty*
7. Duet, "Army Ways" . . . . *Colonel Bumgarter and Abigail*
8. Song, "I'm a Simple Little Girlie" . . . *Kitty and Chorus*
9. Trio, "Mascot's Song" . . *Col. Bumgarter, Abigail and Mascot*
10. Duet, "When" . . . . . *Kitty and Third Pajama*
11. Song, "A Story's Told" . . . *Skinner and Colonel Bumgarter*
12. Finale, "We Are the Old Ninth Infantry."

CURTAIN.

Digitized by Google

Grand

Minstrel Carnival

by

The Third Battalion 9th Infantry

Minstrel Club

at

Camp Daraga, Albay, P. I.

December 24th, 1906

833

Digitized by Google

OLIO OF HIGH CLASS SPECIALTIES

1. SCOTTISH AND IRISH SONGS AND DANCES - - *Sergeant McKenzie*

2. THE DARAGA FOUR

Sergeant McGowan *Musician Anderson*
Musician Kelley *Private Gessler*

Club Swinging, Baton Spinning, Bag Punching, Horizontal Bar Work, Tumbling

3. THE MANDOLIN VIRTUOSO - - - - - - - *Private Lindley*
Mandolin solos with piano accompaniment

4. GRAND DIXIE CARNIVAL
Pastimes of the Sunny South or Fun on the Levee, Introducing:
THE MAYON QUARTETTE
Purt, Wilson, Dupont, Bergeron—in harmony

A bunch of buck and wing dancers that will melt the nails out of the floor
Clark, Cassidy, McGowan, Gardner

5. MONOLOGUE
Jack Giblin will tell you all about how it happened

6. WILSON AND STURTEVANT
The Harmony Duo
in a brand new musical act entitled:
"Wait a Minute"

Selections on Standard and Novelty
Musical Instruments Seasoned With a Little Comedy Now and Then

Digitized by Google

PROGRAM

Selection **Constabulary Band**

1. GRAND OPENING CHORUS - - *featuring the new minstrel success:*
"My Dixie Land"

Interlocutor, Capt. R. J. Burt
1st Edition of End Men

Bones: Pvt. Cassidy *Tambo: Pvt. Carrol*

Vocalists

Corporal Buckner	*Private Mulryan*	*Private Garno*	*Lt. Lawrance*
Mr. Moris Purt	*Corporal Clark*	*Corporal Duncan*	*Private King*
Private Dupont	*Corporal Ziegler*	*Private Baker*	*Private Bergeron*

2. ENSEMBLE - - - - - - - - - - *First Edition of End Men*

3. BALLAD - "When the Lilies of the Valley Bloom Again" - *Mr. Moris Purt*

4. SONG - - - - - "Sympathy" - - - *Private Cassidy*

5. BALLAD - - - "Gathering the Hay" - - *Private Mulryan*

6. SONG - - "Have You Seen My Henry Brown" - *Private Carroll*

7. Ensemble introducing the two Emperors of Minstrelsy:
Lieut. Wilson and Private Giblin

8. SONG - - - "Turkey in the Straw" - - - *Lt. Wilson*

9. Eruption of that Volcano of Mirth - - - - - - - *Private Giblin*

10. BALLAD - - "Dreaming, Love, of You" - - *Private Dupont*

11. Grand finale of first part introducing Geo. M. Cohan's latest and best:
"The Yankee Doodle Boy"
Lt. Sturtevant
with Grand Chorus in Patriotic Finale

INTERMISSION

Digitized by Google

EXECUTIVE STAFF



Musical Director - - - - - - *Mr. Burtis Little*

Vocal Director - - - - - - - *Lt. E. M. Wilson*

Stage Manager - - - - - - - *Lt. C. G. Sturtevant*

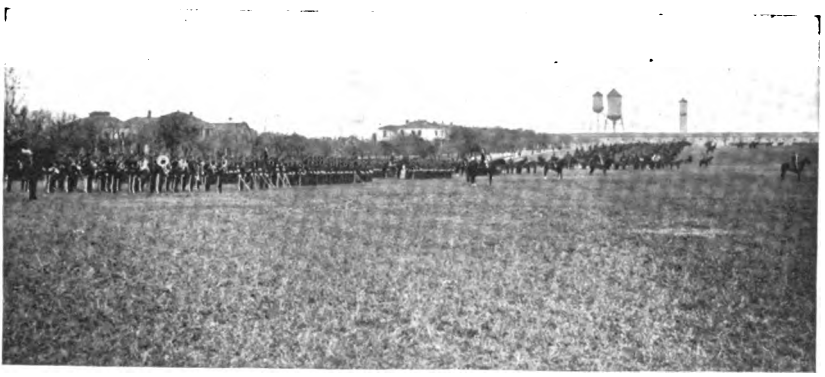
Master of Property - - - - - *Private J. C. Lucier*

Costumes by Post Exchange

Programs by E. C. McCullough & Co., Manila

Digitized by Google

GRAND MILITARY MINSTREL CARNIVAL



GIVEN UNDER THE AUSPICES OF THE

NINTH U.S. INFANTRY DRAMATIC ASSOCIATION

COVER DESIGNED BY MILLS ENG. CO.

Digitized by Google

PROGRAM

March 22-23, 1909

Introductory Overture "REMINISCENCES OF DIXIE"

Interlocutor: L. D. HARVEY

Vocalists

Chas. H. Boehmer	H. I. Lawrance	John Mulryan	R. H. Carlyle
Francis H. Ivers	Bert Dunbar	P. L. Young	A. L. Stevens
John H. Rose	Joe F. McGrath	J. H. Barry	A. T. Cross

Comedians

Robt. C. West	Alfred G. French
Jas. E. Chaney	Frank A Awl
Erle M. Wilson	Benj. P. Nicklin

Purveyors of Fun

Frankie Awl Bob West Jimmie Chaney Al. French

"Don't Argufy"	FRANKIE AWL
"There Never Was a Girl Like You"	JOHN MULRYAN
"Good-bye, Mr. Ragtime"	AL. FRENCH
"Meet Me in Rose Time, Rosie"	JOS. F. McGRATH

Introduction of the Two Emperors of Minstrelsy

BENNY NICKLIN and EARLY WILSON

"Willyum Wilson"	EARLY WILSON
"The Heart You Lost in Maryland You'll Find in Tennessee"	BERT DUNBAR
Finale: – "Kiss Your Minstrel Boy Good-bye	BENNY NICKLIN

Intermission

OLIO OF HIGH CLASS SPECIALTIES

WILSON and STURTEVANT
in their comedy musical offering
"STRANDED'

GUNTHER and GARRETT
Premier Vocalists and Dancers

The Novel Military Spectacle, "A Day in Camp"
depicting a soldier's life in camp, and featuring the song success
"My Dream of the U. S. A."

That Quaint Monologue Comedian
BENNY NICKLIN
Dispenser of Fun Checks

Digitized by Google

THE FIVE McGOWAN'S

McGOWAN — HEISS — MAYER — COUGHLIN — AVANSINO

Peerless Gymnasts, Introducing Skill and Fun on Horizontal Bars

Those Two Wise Talkers

McCULLOUGH and FRENCH

in sundry remarks on "Married Life" and other topics

The performance will conclude with

"THE PULLMAN PORTER'S PICNIC"

A laughable farce by C. G. STURTEVANT

Presented by the following cast:

Abner Green, from New Orleans, a sure enough sport	AL. G. FRENCH
Henry Beesom, floor-manager of the dance	ERLE M. WILSON
Johnson, doorkeeper	J. E. CHANEY
Bill Simmons, a bad coon	H. I. LAWRANCE
Carolina Brown, Simmon's affinity	C. H. BOEHMER
Oscar Wellington, from Mobile	C. DECKER
Kid Jones, from Atlanta	GEO. WIDMAN
Joe Blivins, from Birmingham	W. F. VAN SCOTTER
Miss Mazie Spivins } BUDS	W. F. PEARSON
Miss Lucy Mahtin } BUDS	E. HUDSON
Miss Birdie Snow } BUDS	C. H. CLARK
Miss Bell Hopkins } BUDS	J. H. BARRY
Mr. Perry Pincus, a society leader	F. A. AWL
Mr. Lonzo Williams, also IT	T. J. McCULLOUGH
Mr. Geo. Lippincott, Well I guess so	JOE F. McGRATH
Mr. Wilbur Davidson, I should say so	R. C. WEST

Musical Numbers:—"Good Evening, Caroline" "Mandy Lane"

BUCK AND WING CONTEST

Production originated and staged by C. G. STURTEVANT

Business Manager	H. PFORZHEIMER
Treasurer	A. A. RIEDINGER
Stage Manager	E. HUDSON
Electrician	J. P. MITCHELL
Carpenter	WM. KNIGGIE
Master of Properties	WM. R. JOHNSON

NINTH U. S. INFANTRY ORCHESTRA

CHAS. H. BERNHEIM	ARTHUR HALES	LAMBERT PLOWMAN
FRED. W. EUCHNER	M. A. HORGAN	DOMINGO SCOTT
OTTO GAEBEL	WM. H. LEMAY	WM. E. VOSS
ROBT. GARDINER	ANTON NIELSON	FRED C. WILSON

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX I

LISCUM BOWL

This bowl was made to the order of the Ninth Infantry Officers' Mess, by Arthur & Bond, of Yokohama, Japan, and was completed November 2, 1902, and placed in their show-window that evening for display on the Mikado's birthday, November 3rd.

The bowl, ladle and separate cups for each officer, makes the most beautiful set known to exist, and is valued at $15,000.00.

The first ladle made was stolen from the window of Arthur & Bond and had to be replaced. However, the thief was caught and still had in his possession a part of the silver of the ladle handle, he having cut the ladle into small pieces, and spent, as money, the greater portion.

He was duly convicted and sent to prison for seven years.

The following item which appeared in a Yokohama paper will prove of interest:

A MAGNIFICENT BOWL

SPLENDID PIECE OF SILVERWARE MADE BY MESSRS. ARTHUR AND BOND

Residents of and visitors to Japan will be repaid by a visit to the show-rooms of Messrs. Arthur & Bond, if only to view the latest piece of Japanese silverware which, as it lies on a ruby-plush ground, in one of the windows, is attracting the admiration of all passers-by. The piece is a large silver Dragon Bowl, tray and ladle, which the firm has had made by Japanese artists and craftsmen, at the order of the Ninth Infantry Regiment, U. S. Army. These Japanese artificers took seven months to complete this Gargantuan punch-bowl, which would certainly hold enough liquid for the ordinary regimental celebration, and looks as big as the average font. The chasing and repoussé work in intertwined dragons, the same forming the four handles, on the outside of the big bowl (the inside is smooth, burnished silver), on the immense, heavy ladle (holding nearly a pint) and on the appropriate tray afford an excellent example of the best work of this kind in Japan. We are given the following particulars of this *chef dœ'uvre:*

Complete weight, 12,098 *momme* (one *momme* = one-sixteenth of an ounce, avoirdupois).

Measurements: Diameter, 2 feet, 4 inches; from handle to handle, 3 feet, 3 inches; height from base to top of bowl, 1 foot, 9 inches; height from base to top of dragon handle, 2 feet, 1 inch.

Tray: Diameter of tray, 2 feet, 4 ¼ inches; from handle to handle, 2 feet 6 inches.

Ladle: Length, 2 feet, 1½ inches.

Weight: Punch bowl, 9, 180 *momme;* tray, 3, 572 *momme;* ladle, 346 *momme.*

Messrs. Arthur & Bond think this is the largest single piece of silverware ever made in Japan, and it is assuredly something of which they, the artist-workmen and the recipient regiment should be proud.

Digitized by Google



Ninth Infantry Punch Bowl. Value $15,000.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX J

LISCUM MONUMENT

Erected by personal contributions from the following officers:

General J. M. Lee, Colonel Robe, Colonel Coolidge, Colonel Foote, Major Robertson, Major Irvine, Major George Palmer, Major Dodds, Captains F. L. Palmer, Sigworth, Wise, Langdon, Noyes, Bookmiller, Rethers, Munson, Harris, Hersey, Ramsey, F. H. Schoeffel, L. B. Lawton, Yates, Frazier, Finley, Ahern, Brewster, and Welborn; Leutenants Kinney, Evans, G. W. Harris, Gibson, Brown, Wallace, Hammond, J. B. Schoeffel, R. Smith, Nicklin, Lang, Loeb, Coleman, Drouillard, and Chaplain Newsom.

The monument was erected in Tien-tsin, China, in 1903, near the exact spot where Colonel Liscum fell.

The base of the monument is 5 feet square and 1½ feet thick; the second part 3½ feet square and 1 foot thick; the shaft is 1½ feet square at bottom and 1 foot square at top; height 11 feet; cost $200.00.

The surrounding ground has since been filled in and made into a park by the Japanese in whose concession the monument is located.

The foreign buildings shown in the picture of the monument did not exist at the time of the battle but the regiment received a heavy fire from where the buildings now stand.

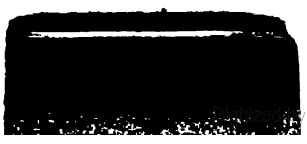
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google


Digitized by Google